

*Geo. W. Parry*

# SUPERNATURAL RELIGION:

38736

AN INQUIRY

INTO

## THE REALITY OF DIVINE REVELATION.

*Cassell's Catalogue, 1824-1877*

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

THIRD EDITION.

LONDON:  
LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.,  
1874.

*[The Right of Translation is Reserved.]*

BL  
2775  
C34  
1874

LONDON:  
BRADBURY, AGNEW & CO., PRINTERS, WHITEFRIARS.





## PREFACE.

(For 12<sup>th</sup> Edition)

THE present work is the result of many years of earnest and serious investigation, undertaken in the first instance for the regulation of personal belief, and now published as a contribution towards the establishment of Truth in the minds of others who are seeking for it. The author's main object has been conscientiously and fully to state the facts of the case, to make no assertions the grounds for which are not clearly given, and as far as possible to place before the reader the materials from which a judgment may be intelligently formed regarding the important subject discussed.

The great Teacher is reported to have said: "Be ye approved money-changers," wisely discerning the gold of Truth, and no man need hesitate honestly to test its reality, and unflinchingly to reject base counterfeits. It is obvious that the most indispensable requisite in regard to Religion is that it should be true. No specious hopes or flattering promises can have the slightest value unless they be genuine and based upon substantial realities.

Fear of the results of investigation, therefore, should deter no man, for the issue in any case is gain : emancipation from delusion, or increase of assurance. It is poor honour to sequester a creed from healthy handling, or to shrink from the serious examination of its doctrines.

| That which is true in Religion cannot be shaken ; that  
| which is false no one can desire to preserve.

# CONTENTS

OF

## THE FIRST VOLUME.

---

### INTRODUCTION.

	PAGE
THE DUTY OF ADEQUATE INQUIRY ADMITTED AND NEGLECTED . . .	xiii
DIFFICULTY OF INVESTIGATING RELIGIOUS TRUTH . . . . .	xiii
PREVALENT CHARACTERISTIC OF POPULAR THEOLOGY IN ENGLAND . . .	xiv
ILLOGICAL TREATMENT . . . . .	xiv
IMPORTANCE OF THE QUESTION : IS CHRISTIANITY A SUPERNATURAL DIVINE REVELATION OR NOT ? . . . . .	xv
ITS PRESENT URGENCY . . . . .	xv
CHARACTER OF THE INVESTIGATION REQUIRED . . . . .	xvi
THE TWO CLASSES OF ORTHODOX CHRISTIANS . . . . .	xvii
THEIR CONFLICTING VIEWS ENFORCE THE NECESSITY OF INQUIRY . . .	xviii
THE SPIRIT IN WHICH THIS INQUIRY SHOULD BE UNDERTAKEN . . .	xix

---

## PART I.

### MIRACLES.

---

#### CHAPTER I.

##### MIRACLES IN RELATION TO CHRISTIANITY.

CHRISTIANITY PROFFESSES TO BE SUPERNATURAL IN FORM AND ESSENCE	1
CLAIM TO BE A DIVINE REVELATION COMMON TO OTHER RELIGIONS .	2
NECESSITY OF MIRACULOUS EVIDENCE . . . . .	3
MIRACLES INSEPARABLE FROM CHRISTIANITY . . . . .	7
THE REALITY OF MIRACLES THE VITAL QUESTION . . . . .	8
REPRESENTATION OF MIRACLES IN THE BIBLE . . . . .	10
MIRACLES DIVINE AND SATANIC . . . . .	11
THE ORIGIN OF MIRACLES AVOWEDLY DOUBTFUL . . . . .	13
DILEMMA ARISING FROM THEIR DUAL CHARACTER . . . . .	15

	PAGE
MUTUAL DEPENDENCE OF DOCTRINE AND MIRACLES . . . . .	16
DOCTRINE MADE THE CRITERION OF MIRACLES . . . . .	20
THE DOCTRINES ARE BEYOND THE CRITERION OF REASON . . . . .	22
MIRACLES INCOMPETENT TO PERFORM THEIR EVIDENTIAL FUNCTION . . . . .	24

## CHAPTER II.

### MIRACLES IN RELATION TO THE ORDER OF NATURE.

ENGLISH AND GERMAN CRITICS . . . . .	27
ANALYSIS OF MIRACLES . . . . .	29
UNKNOWN LAW . . . . .	33
HIGHER LAW . . . . .	35
INSTANCE OF AN EFFICIENT CAUSE . . . . .	37
PROGRESSIVE SUCCESSION OF LAWS . . . . .	39
THE EFFICIENT CAUSE SUBJECT TO LAWS . . . . .	40
ANTECEDENT INCREDIBILITY . . . . .	43
INVARIABILITY OF LAW . . . . .	44
THE DIVINE DESIGN OF REVELATION . . . . .	45
SUCH A DESIGN EXCLUDED BY THE ORDER OF NATURE . . . . .	48
THE LAW OF PROGRESS . . . . .	49
MIRACULOUS AND INCREDIBLE ARE CONVERTIBLE TERMS . . . . .	53

## CHAPTER III.

### REASON IN RELATION TO THE ORDER OF NATURE.

THE ARGUMENT FROM EXPERIENCE . . . . .	55
ASSUMPTION OF A PERSONAL DEITY . . . . .	63
ANTHROPOMORPHIC DIVINITY . . . . .	63
ANTECEDENT INCREDIBILITY OF MIRACLES . . . . .	78
DR. FARRAR'S MISCONCEPTION OF THE ARGUMENT . . . . .	79
MILL'S CRITICISM ON HUME . . . . .	80
PALEY'S ARGUMENT AGAINST HUME . . . . .	88
NATURE OF THE EVIDENCE FOR MIRACLES WHICH IS REQUISITE . . . . .	93

## CHAPTER IV.

### THE AGE OF MIRACLES.

THE MIRACLES OF BRIEF PERIODS ALONE BELIEVED TO BE GENUINE . . . . .	95
COMPETENCY OF THE WITNESSES . . . . .	96
SUPERSTITIOUS CHARACTER OF THE JEWS . . . . .	97
THE SEPTUAGINT VERSION . . . . .	101
THE BOOK OF TOBIT . . . . .	102

CONTENTS.

xi

	PAGE
THE BOOK OF ENOCH . . . . .	103
ANGELOLOGY OF THE JEWS . . . . .	106
DEMONOLOGY OF THE JEWS . . . . .	111
SORCERY AND MAGIC . . . . .	115
EXORCISM OF DEMONS . . . . .	119
PRETERNATURAL PORTENTS . . . . .	120
COSMICAL THEORIES OF THE FATHERS . . . . .	121

CHAPTER V.

THE PERMANENT STREAM OF MIRACULOUS PRETENSION.

THE WITNESSES OF MIRACLES INCOMPETENT . . . . .	140
THE WRITERS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT SHARED THE POPULAR SUPERSTITIONS OF THE JEWS . . . . .	141
DEMONIACAL POSSESSION . . . . .	142
WITCHCRAFT DENOUNCED IN THE BIBLE . . . . .	145
WITCHCRAFT PROSCRIBED BY CHURCH AND STATE . . . . .	147
BELIEF IN WITCHCRAFT DISPELLED . . . . .	149
APPLICATION OF THE ARGUMENT TO MIRACLES . . . . .	150
CHRISTIAN AND PAGAN MIRACLES . . . . .	152
THE CLAIM OF SPECIALITY FOR CHRISTIAN MIRACLES . . . . .	155
THE CONTINUANCE OF MIRACULOUS POWER . . . . .	157
ECCLESIASTICAL MIRACLES . . . . .	158
MIRACLES RECORDED BY ST. AUGUSTINE . . . . .	170
THE COMPARATIVE EVIDENCE FOR THESE AND SCRIPTURE MIRACLES .	176
THE MIRACLES OF THE SAINTS . . . . .	187

CHAPTER VI.

MIRACLES IN RELATION TO IGNORANCE AND SUPERSTITION.

THE CLASSIFICATION OF MIRACLES . . . . .	188
ABSENCE OF DISTINCTIVE CHARACTER IN GOSPEL MIRACLES . . . . .	191
COMPARISON OF EVIDENCE . . . . .	192
THE TESTIMONY OF MARTYRDOM . . . . .	195
GOSPEL MIRACLES SINK IN THE STREAM OF MIRACULOUS PRETENSION	197
THE EARLY AND LATER CHRISTIAN AGES . . . . .	198
THE TEST OF KNOWLEDGE . . . . .	201
THE CESSATION OF MIRACLES . . . . .	202
HEREDITARY BELIEF . . . . .	205
THE NARRATIVE OF MIRACLES THE POINT REALLY DISCUSSED . . . . .	207
NATURE OF THE EVIDENCE REQUIRED . . . . .	209

**PART II.**  
**THE SYNOPTIC GOSPELS.**

—♦—  
**INTRODUCTION.**

	PAGE
NATURE OF THE EXAMINATION TO BE UNDERTAKEN . . . . .	212

**CHAPTER I.**

CLEMENT OF ROME . . . . .	215
THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS . . . . .	232
THE PASTOR OF HERMAS . . . . .	256

**CHAPTER II.**

THE EPISTLES OF IGNATIUS . . . . .	258
THE EPISTLE OF POLYCARP . . . . .	274

**CHAPTER III.**

JUSTIN MARTYR . . . . .	283
-------------------------	-----

**CHAPTER IV.**

HEGESIPPUS . . . . .	429
PAPIAS OF HIERAPOLIS . . . . .	444

# AN INQUIRY

INTO THE

## REALITY OF DIVINE REVELATION.

---

---

### INTRODUCTION.

—♦—

(THEORETICALLY, the duty of adequate inquiry into the truth of any statement of serious importance before believing it is universally admitted. Practically, no duty is more universally neglected. This is more especially the case in regard to Religion, in which our concern is so great, yet whose credentials so few personally examine.) The difficulty of such an investigation and the inability of most men to pursue it, whether from want of opportunity or want of knowledge, are no doubt the chief reasons for this neglect; but another, and scarcely less potent, obstacle has probably been the odium which has been attached to any doubt regarding the dominant religion, as well as the serious, though covert, discouragement of the Church to all critical examination of the title-deeds of Christianity. The spirit of doubt, if not of intelligent inquiry, has, however, of late years become too strong for repression, and, at the present day, the pertinency of the question of a German writer: "Are we still Christians?" receives unconscious

illustration from many a popular pulpit, and many a social discussion.

The prevalent characteristic of popular theology in England, at this time, may be said to be a tendency to eliminate from Christianity, with thoughtless dexterity, every supernatural element which does not quite accord with current opinion, and yet to ignore the fact that, in so doing, ecclesiastical Christianity has practically been altogether abandoned. This tendency is fostered with profoundly illogical zeal by many distinguished men within the Church itself, who endeavour to arrest for a moment the pursuing wolves of doubt and unbelief which press upon it, by practically throwing to them, scrap by scrap, the very doctrines which constitute the claims of Christianity to be regarded as a Divine Revelation at all. The moral Christianity which they hope to preserve, noble though it be, has not one feature left to distinguish it as a miraculously communicated religion.

Christianity itself distinctly pretends to be a direct Divine Revelation of truths beyond the natural attainment of the human intellect. To submit the doctrines thus revealed, therefore, to criticism, and to clip and prune them down to the standard of human reason, whilst at the same time their supernatural character is maintained, is an obvious absurdity. Christianity must either be recognized to be a Divine Revelation beyond man's criticism, and in that case its doctrines must be received even though Reason cannot be satisfied, or the claims of Christianity to be such a Divine Revelation must be disallowed, in which case it becomes the legitimate subject of criticism like every other human system. One or other of these alternatives must be adopted, but to

cos m v Rev.

assert that Christianity is Divine, and yet to deal with it as human, is illogical and wrong.

When we consider the vast importance of the interests involved, therefore, it must be apparent that there can be no more urgent problem for humanity to solve than the question: Is Christianity a supernatural Divine Revelation or not? To this we may demand a clear and decisive answer. The evidence must be of no uncertain character which can warrant our abandoning the guidance of Reason, and blindly accepting doctrines which, if not supernatural truths, must be rejected by the human intellect as monstrous delusions. We propose in this work to seek a conclusive answer to this momentous question.



y

It appears to us that at no time has such an investigation been more requisite. ( The results of scientific inquiry and of Biblical criticism have created wide-spread doubt regarding the most material part of Christianity considered as a Divine Revelation. The mass of intelligent men in England are halting between two opinions, and standing in what seems to us the most unsatisfactory position conceivable: they abandon, before a kind of vague and indefinite, if irresistible, conviction, some of the most central supernatural doctrines of Christianity; they try to spiritualize or dilute the rest into a form which does not shock their reason; and yet they cling to the delusion, that they still retain the consolation and the hope of truths which, if not divinely revealed, are mere human speculation regarding matters beyond reason. They have, in fact, as little warrant to abandon the one part as they have to retain the other. They build their house upon the sand, and the waves which have already carried away so much may any day engulf the rest. At the same time, amid this general eclipse of faith, many

an earnest mind, eagerly seeking for truth, endures much bitter pain,—unable to believe—unable freely to reject—and yet without the means of securing any clear and intelligent reply to the inquiry: “What is truth?” Any distinct assurance, whatever its nature, based upon solid grounds, would be preferable to such a state of doubt and hesitation. Once persuaded that we have attained truth, there can be no permanent regret for vanished illusions.

We must, however, by careful and impartial investigation, acquire the right to our belief, whatever it may be, and not float like a mere waif into the nearest haven. Flippant unbelief is much worse than earnest credulity. The time is ripe for arriving at a definite conviction as to the character of Christianity. There is no lack of materials for a final decision, although hitherto they have been beyond the reach of most English readers, and a careful and honest examination of the subject, even if it be not final, cannot fail to contribute towards a result more satisfactory than the generally vague and illogical religious opinion of the present day. Even true conclusions which are arrived at either accidentally or by wrong methods are dangerous. The current which by good fortune led to-day to truth may to-morrow waft us to falsehood. That such an investigation cannot, even at the present time, be carried on in England without incurring much enmity and opposition need scarcely be remarked, however loudly the duty and liberty of inquiry be theoretically proclaimed, and the reason is obvious.

If we look at the singular diversity of views entertained, not only with regard to the doctrines, but also to the evidences, of Christianity, we cannot but be struck by the helpless position in which Divine Revelation is now placed.

Orthodox Christians at the present day may be divided into two broad classes, one of which professes to base the Church upon the Bible, and the other the Bible upon the Church.) The one party assert that the Bible is fully and absolutely inspired, that it contains God's revelation to man, and that it is the only and sufficient ground for all religious belief; and they maintain that its authenticity is proved by the most ample and irrefragable external as well as internal evidence. What then must be the feeling of any ordinary mind on hearing, on the other hand, that men of undoubted piety and learning, as well as unquestioned orthodoxy, within the Church of England, admit that the Bible is totally without literary or historical evidence, and cannot for a moment be upheld upon any such grounds as the revealed word of God; that none of the great doctrines of ecclesiastical Christianity can be deduced from the Bible alone;<sup>1</sup> and that, "if it be impossible to accept the literary method of dealing with Holy Scripture, the usual mode of arguing the truth of Revelation, *ab extra*, merely from what are called 'Evidences'—whether of MIRACLES done or PROPHECIES uttered thousands of years ago,—must also be insufficient."<sup>2</sup> It cannot be much comfort to be assured by them that, notwithstanding this absence of external and internal evidence, this Revelation stands upon the sure basis of the inspiration of a Church, which has so little ground in history for any claim to infallibility. The unsupported testimony of a Church which in every age has vehemently maintained errors and denounced truths which are now universally recognized is no

Dissent  
 ες + 2.

<sup>1</sup> *W. J. Irons, D.D. The Bible and its Interpreters, 1865; cf. Tracts for the Times, No. lxxxv.*

<sup>2</sup> *W. J. Irons, D.D., on Miracles and Prophecy, vii.*

sufficient guarantee of Divine Revelation. Obviously, there is no ground for accepting from a fallible Church and fallacious tradition doctrines which, avowedly, are beyond the criterion of reason, and therefore require miraculous evidence.

With belief based upon such uncertain grounds, and with such vital difference of views regarding evidence, it is not surprising that ecclesiastical Christianity has felt its own weakness, and entrenched itself against the assaults of investigation. It is not strange that intellectual vigour in any direction should, almost unconsciously, have been regarded as dangerous to the repose and authority of the Church, and that, instead of being welcomed as a virtue, religious inquiry has almost been repelled as a crime. Such inquiry, however, cannot be suppressed. Mere scientific questions may be regarded with apathy by those who do not feel their personal bearing. It may possibly seem to some a matter of little practical importance to them to determine whether the earth revolves round the sun, or the sun round the earth; but no earnest mind can fail to perceive the immense personal importance of Truth in regard to Religion—the necessity of investigating, before accepting, dogmas, the right interpretation of which is represented as necessary to salvation,—and the clear duty, before abandoning reason for faith, to exercise reason, in order that faith may not be mere credulity. As Bacon remarked, the injunction: “Hold fast that which is good,” must always be preceded by the maxim: “Prove all things.” Even Archbishop Trench has said: “Credulity is as real, if not so great, a sin as unbelief,” applying the observation to the duty of demanding a “sign” from any one professing to be the utterer of a revelation: “Else might he lightly

be persuaded to receive that as from God, which, indeed, was only the word of man.”<sup>1</sup> The acceptance of any revelation or dogma, however apparently true in itself, without “sign”—without evidence satisfying the reason, is absolute credulity. Even the most thorough advocate of Faith must recognise that reason must be its basis, and that faith can only legitimately commence where reason fails. The appeal is first to reason if afterwards to faith, and no man pretending to intellectual conscience can overlook the primary claim of reason. If it is to be more than a mere question of priority of presentation whether we are to accept Buddhism, Christianity, or Mahometanism, we must strictly and fearlessly examine the evidence upon which they profess to stand. The neglect of examination can never advance truth, as the severest scrutiny can never retard it, but belief without discrimination can only foster ignorance and superstition.

It was in this conviction that the following inquiry into the reality of Divine Revelation was originally undertaken, and that others should enter upon it. An able writer, who will not be suspected of exaggeration on this subject, has said: “The majority of mankind, perhaps, owe their belief rather to the outward influence of custom and education, than to any strong principle of faith within; and it is to be feared that many if they came to perceive how wonderful what they believed was, would not find their belief so easy, and so matter-of-course a thing as they appear to find it.”<sup>2</sup> To no earnest mind can such inquiry be otherwise than a serious and often a

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, 8th edition, 1866, p. 27.

<sup>2</sup> J. B. Mozley, B.D., on Miracles; Bampton Lectures, 1865, 2nd ed. p. 4.

painful task, but, dismissing preconceived ideas and preferences derived from habit and education, and seeking only the Truth, holding it, whatever it may be, to be the only object worthy of desire, or capable of satisfying a rational mind, the quest cannot but end in peace and satisfaction. In such an investigation, however, to quote words of Archbishop Whately: "It makes all the difference in the world whether we place Truth in the first place or in the second place,"—for if Truth acquired do not compensate for every pet illusion dispelled, the path is thorny indeed, although it must still be faithfully trodden.

AN INQUIRY  
INTO THE  
REALITY OF DIVINE REVELATION.

---

PART I.

---

CHAPTER I.

MIRACLES IN RELATION TO CHRISTIANITY.

AT the very outset of inquiry into the origin and true character of Christianity we are brought face to face with the Supernatural. Christianity professes to be a Divine Revelation of truths which the human intellect could not otherwise have discovered. It is not a form of religion developed by the wisdom of man and appealing to his reason, but a system miraculously communicated to the human race, the central doctrines of which are either superhuman or untenable. If the truths said to be revealed were either of an ordinary character or naturally attainable they would at once discredit the claim to a Divine origin. No one could maintain that a system discoverable by Reason would be supernaturally communicated. The whole argument for Christianity turns upon the necessity of such a Revelation and the consequent probability that it would be made.

There is nothing singular, it may be remarked, in the claim of Christianity to be a direct Revelation from God. With the exception of the religions of Greece and Rome, which, however, also had their subsidiary supposition of divine inspiration, there has scarcely been any system of Religion in the world proclaimed otherwise than as a direct divine communication. Long before Christianity claimed this character, the religions of India had anticipated the idea. To quote the words of an accomplished scholar:—"According to the orthodox views of Indian theologians, not a single line of the Veda was the work of human authors. The whole Veda is in some way or other the work of the Deity; and even those who received it were not supposed to be ordinary mortals, but beings raised above the level of common humanity, and less liable, therefore, to error in the reception of revealed truth."<sup>1</sup> The same origin is claimed for the religion of Zoroaster, whose doctrines, beyond doubt, exercised great influence at least upon later Jewish theology, and whose Magian followers are appropriately introduced beside the cradle of Jesus, as the first to do honour to the birth of Christianity. In the same way Mahomet announced his religion as directly communicated from heaven.

Christianity, however, as a religion professing to be divinely revealed is not only supernatural in origin and doctrine, but its claim to acceptance is necessarily based upon supernatural evidence; for it is obvious that truths which require to be miraculously communicated do not come within the range of our intellect, and cannot, therefore, be intelligently received upon internal testimony. "And, certainly," says a recent able Bampton Lecturer, "if it was the will of God to give a revelation, there are

<sup>1</sup> *M. Müller*, *Chips from a German Workshop*, 1867, vol. i. p. 18.

plain and obvious reasons for asserting that miracles are necessary as the guarantee and voucher for that revelation. A revelation is, properly speaking, such only by virtue of telling us something which we could not know without it. But how do we know that that communication of what is undiscoverable by human reason is true? Our reason cannot prove the truth of it, for it is by the very supposition beyond our reason. There must be, then, some note or sign to certify to it and distinguish it as a true communication from God, which note can be nothing else than a miracle."<sup>1</sup> In another place the same Lecturer stigmatizes the belief of the Mahometan "as in its very principle irrational," because he accepts the account which Mahomet gave of himself, without supernatural evidence.<sup>2</sup> The belief of the Christian is contrasted with it as rational, "because the Christian believes in a supernatural dispensation upon the proper evidence of such a dispensation, viz., the miraculous."<sup>3</sup> Mahomet is reproached with having "an utterly barbarous idea of evidence, and a total miscalculation of the claims of reason," because he did not consider miraculous evidence necessary to attest a supernatural dispensation; "whereas the Gospel is adapted to perpetuity for this cause especially, with others, that it was founded upon a true calculation, and a foresight of the permanent need of evidence; our Lord admitting the inadequacy of His own mere word, and the necessity of a rational guarantee to His revelation of His own nature and commission."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> J. B. Mozley, B.D., *Bampton Lecturer in 1865, on Miracles*, 2nd ed., 1867, p. 6 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 30, cf. *Butler, Analogy of Religion*, Pt. ii. ch. vii. § 3; *Paley, A View of the Evidences of Christianity*, ed. Whately, 1859, p. 324 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 31.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 32.

The spontaneous offer of miraculous evidence, indeed, has always been advanced as a special characteristic of Christianity, logically entitling it to acceptance in contradistinction to all other religions. "It is an acknowledged historical fact," says Bishop Butler, "that Christianity offered itself to the world, and demanded to be received, upon the allegation, *i. e.*, as unbelievers would speak, upon the pretence, of miracles, publicly wrought to attest the truth of it in such an age; . . . and Christianity, including the dispensation of the Old Testament, seems distinguished by this from all other religions."<sup>1</sup>

Most of the great English divines have clearly recognized and asserted the necessity of supernatural evidence to establish the reality of a supernatural revelation. Bishop Butler affirms miracles and the completion of prophecy to be the "direct and fundamental proofs" of Christianity.<sup>2</sup> Elsewhere he says: "The notion of a miracle, considered as a proof of a divine mission, has been stated with great exactness by divines, and is, I think, sufficiently understood by every one. There are also invisible miracles, the Incarnation of Christ, for instance, which, being secret, cannot be alleged as a proof of such a mission; but require themselves to be proved by visible miracles. Revelation itself, too, is miraculous; and miracles are the proof of it."<sup>3</sup> Paley states the case with equal clearness: "In what way can a revelation be made but by miracles? In none which we are able to conceive."<sup>4</sup> His argument in fact is founded upon the principle that: "nothing but miracles

<sup>1</sup> The Analogy of Religion, Pt. ii. ch. vii. § 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, Pt. ii., ch. vii.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, Pt. ii., ch. ii. § 1.

<sup>4</sup> A View of the Evidences of Christianity. Preparatory Considerations, p. 12.

could decide the authority” of Christianity.<sup>1</sup> In another work he asserts that no man can prove a future retribution, but the teacher “who testifies by miracles that his doctrine comes from God.”<sup>2</sup> Bishop Atterbury, again, referring to the principal doctrines of ecclesiastical Christianity, says: “It is this kind of Truth that God is properly said to reveal; Truths, of which, unless revealed, we should have always continued ignorant; and 'tis in order only to prove these Truths to have been really revealed, that we affirm Miracles to be Necessary.”<sup>3</sup>

Dr. Heurtley, the Margaret Professor of Divinity in the University of Oxford, after pointing out that the doctrines taught as the Christian Revelation are such as could not by any possibility have been attained by the unassisted human reason, and that, consequently, it is reasonable that they should be attested by miracles, continues: “Indeed, it seems inconceivable how without miracles—including prophecy in the notion of a miracle,—it could sufficiently have commended itself to men’s belief? Who would believe, or would be justified in believing, the great facts which constitute its substance on the *ipse dixit* of an unaccredited teacher? and how, except by miracles, could the first teacher be accredited? Paley, then, was fully warranted in the assertion . . . that ‘we cannot conceive a revelation’—such a revelation of course as Christianity professes to be, a revelation of truths which transcend man’s ability to discover,—‘to be

<sup>1</sup> A View of the Evidences of Christianity. Preparatory Considerations, p. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Moral Philosophy, Book v. Speaking of Christianity, in another place, he calls miracles and prophecy, “that splendid apparatus with which its mission was introduced and attested.” Book iv.

<sup>3</sup> Sermons, &c., Sermon viii., Miracles the most proper way of proving any Religion. Vol. iii., 1766, p. 199.

substantiated without miracles.' Other credentials, it is true, might be exhibited *in addition* to miracles,—and such it would be natural to look for,—but it seems impossible that miracles could be dispensed with.”<sup>1</sup> Dr. Mansel, the late Dean of St. Paul’s, bears similar testimony: “A teacher who proclaims himself to be specially sent by God, and whose teaching is to be received on the authority of that mission, must, from the nature of the case, establish his claim by proofs of another kind than those which merely evince his human wisdom or goodness. A superhuman authority needs to be substantiated by superhuman evidence; and what is superhuman is miraculous.”<sup>2</sup>

Dr. J. H. Newman, in discussing the idea and scope of miracles, says: “A Revelation, that is, a direct message from God to man, itself bears in some degree a miraculous character; . . . And as a Revelation itself, so again the evidences of a Revelation may all more or less be considered miraculous. . . . It might even be said that, strictly speaking, no evidence of a Revelation is conceivable which does not partake of the character of a Miracle; since nothing but a display of power over the existing system of things can attest the immediate presence of Him by whom it was originally established.”<sup>3</sup>

Dr. Mozley has stated in still stronger terms the necessity that Christianity should be authenticated by the evidence of miracles. He supposes the case that a person of evident integrity and loftiness of character had appeared, eighteen centuries ago, announcing himself as pre-existent from all eternity, the Son of God, Maker

<sup>1</sup> Replies to Essays and Reviews, 1862, p. 151.

<sup>2</sup> Aids to Faith, 4th ed., 1863, p. 35.

<sup>3</sup> Two Essays on Scripture Miracles and on Ecclesiastical, by John H. Newman, 2nd ed., 1870, p. 6 f.

of the world, who had come down from heaven and assumed the form and nature of man in order to be the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world, and so on, enumerating other doctrines of Christianity. Dr. Mozley then asks: "What would be the inevitable conclusion of sober reason respecting that person? The necessary conclusion of sober reason respecting that person would be that he was disordered in his understanding . . . By no rational being could a just and benevolent life be accepted as proof of such astonishing announcements. Miracles are the necessary complement, then, of the truth of such announcements, which, without them, are purposeless and abortive, the unfinished fragments of a design which is nothing unless it is the whole. They are necessary to the justification of such announcements, which indeed, unless they are supernatural truths, are the wildest delusions."<sup>1</sup> He, therefore, concludes that: "Christianity cannot be maintained as a revelation undiscoverable by human reason, a revelation of a supernatural scheme for man's salvation, without the evidence of miracles."<sup>2</sup>

✓ In all points, Christianity is emphatically a Supernatural Religion claiming to be divine in its origin, superhuman in its essence and miraculous in its evidence. It cannot be accepted without an absolute belief in Miracles, and those who profess to hold the religion whilst they discredit its supernatural elements—and they are many at the present day—have widely seceded from ecclesiastical Christianity. Miracles, it is true, are external to Christianity in so far as they are evidential, but inasmuch as it is admitted that miracles alone can attest the reality of Divine Revelation they are still inseparable

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures for 1865, p. 14.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 23.

✓ This only relates to the supernatural elements of Christianity and is strictly in accordance with the view that Christianity is inseparable from miracles.

from it ; and as the contents of the Revelation are so to say more miraculous than its attesting miracles, the supernatural enters into the very substance of Christianity and cannot be eliminated. It is obvious, therefore, that the reality of miracles is the vital point in the investigation which we have undertaken. If the reality of miracles cannot be established, Christianity loses the only evidence by which its truth can be sufficiently attested. If miracles be incredible the supernatural Revelation and its miraculous evidence must together be rejected.

This fact is thoroughly recognized by the ablest Christian divines. Dean Mansel, speaking of the position of miracles in regard to Christianity, says : "The question, however, assumes a very different character when it relates, not to the comparative importance of miracles as evidences, but to their reality as facts, and as facts of a supernatural kind. For if this is denied, the denial does not merely remove one of the supports of a faith which may yet rest securely on other grounds. On the contrary, the whole system of Christian belief with its evidences . . . all Christianity in short, so far as it has any title to that name, so far as it has any special relation to the person or the teaching of Christ, is overthrown at the same time."<sup>1</sup> A little further on he says : "If there be one fact recorded in Scripture which is entitled, in the fullest sense of the word, to the name of a Miracle, the RESURRECTION OF CHRIST is that fact. Here, at least, is an instance in which the entire Christian faith must stand or fall with our belief in the supernatural."<sup>2</sup> He, therefore, properly repudiates the view, "which represents the question of the possi-

<sup>1</sup> Aids to Faith, 1863, p. 3.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 4.

bility of miracles as one which merely affects the *external accessories* of Christianity, leaving the *essential doctrines* untouched."<sup>1</sup> Dr. Mozley in a similar manner argues the inseparable union of miracles with the Christian faith. "Indeed not only are miracles *conjoined* with doctrine in Christianity, but miracles are inserted *in* the doctrine and are part of its contents. A man cannot state his belief as a Christian in the terms of the Apostles' Creed without asserting them. Can the doctrine of our Lord's Incarnation be disjoined from one physical miracle? Can the doctrine of His justification of us and intercession for us, be disjoined from another? . . . If a miracle is incorporated as an article in a creed, that article of the creed, the miracle, and the proof of it by a miracle, are all one thing. The great miracles, therefore, upon the evidence of which the Christian scheme rested, being thus inserted in the Christian Creed, the belief in the Creed was of itself the belief in the miraculous evidence of it. . . . (Thus miracles and the supernatural contents of Christianity must stand or fall together.)"<sup>2</sup>

Dr. Heurtley, referring to the discussion of the reality of miracles, exclaims: "It is not too much to say, therefore, that the question is vital as regards Christianity."<sup>3</sup> Canon Westcott not less emphatically makes the same statement. "It is evident," he says, "that if the claim to be a miraculous religion is essentially incredible apostolic Christianity is simply false. . . . (The essence of Christianity lies in a miracle) and if it can be shown that a miracle is either impossible or incredible, all further inquiry into the details of its history is superfluous

<sup>1</sup> *Aids to Faith*, p. 5.

<sup>2</sup> *Bampton Lectures for 1865*, p. 21 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Replies to "Essays and Reviews," 1862*, p. 143.

in a religious point of view.”<sup>1</sup> Similarly, a recent Hulsean lecturer, Dr. Farrar, has said: “However skilfully the modern ingenuity of semi-belief may have tampered with supernatural interpositions, it is clear to every honest and unsophisticated mind that, if miracles be incredible, Christianity is false. If Christ wrought no miracles, then the Gospels are untrustworthy; . . . If the Resurrection be merely a spiritual idea, or a mythicized hallucination, then our religion has been founded on an error . . . .”<sup>2</sup>

It has been necessary clearly to point out this indissoluble connection between ecclesiastical Christianity and the supernatural, in order that the paramount importance of the question as to the credibility of miracles should be duly appreciated. Our inquiry into the reality of Divine Revelation, then, whether we consider its contents or its evidence, practically reduces itself to the very simple issue: Are miracles antecedently credible? Did they ever really take place? We do not intend to confine ourselves merely to a discussion of the abstract question, but shall also endeavour to form a correct estimate of the value of the specific allegations which are advanced.

## 2.

Having then ascertained that miracles are absolutely necessary to attest the reality of Divine Revelation we may proceed to examine them more closely, and for the present we shall confine ourselves to the representations of these phenomena which are given in the Bible. Throughout the Old Testament the doctrine is inculcated

<sup>1</sup> The Gospel of the Resurrection, 3rd ed., 1874, p. 34.

<sup>2</sup> The Witness of History to Christ, Hulsean Lectures for 1870, 2nd ed., 1872, p. 25.

that supernatural communications must have supernatural attestation. God is described as arming his servants with power to perform wonders, in order that they may thus be accredited as his special messengers. The Patriarchs and the people of Israel generally are represented as demanding "a sign" of the reality of communications said to come from God, without which, we are led to suppose, they not only would not have believed, but would have been justified in disbelieving, that the message actually came from him. Thus Gideon<sup>1</sup> asks for a sign that the Lord talked with him, and Hezekiah<sup>2</sup> demands proof of the truth of Isaiah's prophecy that he should be restored to health. It is, however, unnecessary to refer to instances, for it may be affirmed that upon all occasions miraculous evidence of an alleged divine mission is stated to have been required and accorded.

The startling information is at the same time given, however, that miracles may be wrought to attest what is false as well as to accredit what is true. In one place,<sup>3</sup> it is declared that if a prophet actually gives a sign or wonder and it comes to pass, but teaches the people, on the strength of it, to follow other gods, they are not to hearken to him, and the prophet is to be put to death. The false miracle is, here,<sup>4</sup> attributed to God himself: "For the Lord your God proveth you, to know whether ye love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul." In the book of the Prophet Ezekiel, the case is stated in a still stronger way, and God is represented as directly deceiving the prophet: "And if the prophet be deceived when he hath spoken a thing, I the Lord have deceived that prophet, and I will

<sup>1</sup> Judges vi. 17.

<sup>3</sup> Deut. xiii. 1 ff.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Kings xx. 8 f.

<sup>4</sup> Deut. xiii. 3.

stretch out my hand upon him, and will destroy him from the midst of my people Israel.”<sup>1</sup> God, in fact, is represented as exerting his almighty power to deceive a man and then as destroying him for being deceived. In the same spirit is the passage<sup>2</sup> in which Micaiah describes the Lord as putting a lying spirit into the mouths of the prophets who incited Ahab to go to Ramoth-Gilead. Elsewhere,<sup>3</sup> and notably in the New Testament, we find an ascription of real signs and wonders to another power than God. Jesus himself is represented as warning his disciples against false prophets, who work signs and wonders: “Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?” of whom he should say: “I never knew you; depart from me, ye that work iniquity.”<sup>4</sup> And again in another place: “For false prophets shall arise, and shall work signs and wonders (*σημεία καὶ τέρατα*) to seduce, if it were possible, the elect.”<sup>5</sup> Also, when the Pharisees accuse him of casting out devils by Beelzebub the prince of the devils, Jesus asks: “By whom do your children cast them out?”<sup>6</sup> a reply which would lose all its point if they were not admitted to be able to cast out devils. In another passage John is described as saying: “Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, who followeth not us, and we forbid him.”<sup>7</sup> Without multiplying instances, however, there can be no doubt of the fact

<sup>1</sup> Deut. xiv. 9. The narrative of God's hardening the heart of Pharaoh in order to bring other plagues upon the land of Egypt is in this vein.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Kings xxii. 14-23.

<sup>3</sup> The counter miracles of the Egyptian sorcerers need not be referred to as instances. Ex. vii. 11, 12, 22.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. vii. 22, 23.

<sup>5</sup> Mark xiii. 22.

<sup>6</sup> Matt. xii. 27.

<sup>7</sup> Mark ix. 38.

that the reality of false miracles and lying wonders is admitted in the Bible.<sup>1</sup>

The obvious deduction from this representation of miracles is that the source and purpose of such supernatural phenomena must always be exceedingly uncertain.<sup>1</sup> Their evidential value is, therefore, profoundly affected, "it being," as Dr. Newman has said of ambiguous miracles, "antecedently improbable that the Almighty should rest the credit of His Revelation upon events which but obscurely implied His immediate presence."<sup>2</sup> As it is affirmed that other supernatural beings exist, as well as an assumed Personal God, by whose agency miracles are performed, it is impossible to argue with reason that such phenomena are at any time specially due to the intervention of the Deity. Dr. Newman recognizes this, but passes over the difficulty with masterly lightness of touch. After advancing the singular argument that our knowledge of spirits is only derived from Scripture, and that their existence cannot be deduced from nature, whilst he asserts that the being of a God—a Personal God be it remembered—can be so discovered, and that, therefore, miracles can only properly be attributed to him, he proceeds: "Still it may be necessary to show that on our own principles we are not open to inconsistency. That is, it has been questioned whether, in admitting the existence and power of Spirits on the authority of Revelation, we are not in danger of

<sup>1</sup> Tertullian saw this difficulty, and in his work against Marcion he argues that miracles alone, without prophecy, could not sufficiently prove Christ to be the Son of God; for he points out that Jesus himself forewarned his disciples that false Christs would come with signs and wonders, like the miracles which he himself had worked, whom he enjoined them beforehand not to believe. *Adv. Marc.* iii. 3.

<sup>2</sup> Two Essays on Miracles, p. 31.

invalidating the evidence upon which that authority rests. For the cogency of the argument for Miracles depends on the assumption, that interruptions in the course of nature must ultimately proceed from God; which is not true, if they may be effected by other beings without His sanction. And it must be conceded, that, explicit as Scripture is in considering Miracles as signs of divine agency, it still does seem to give created Spirits some power of working them; and even, in its most literal sense, intimates the possibility of their working them in opposition to the true doctrine. (Deut. xiii. 1—3; Matt. xxiv. 24; 2 Thess. ii. 9—11.)”<sup>1</sup> Dr. Newman repudiates the attempts of various writers to overcome this difficulty by making a distinction between great miracles and small, many miracles and few, or by referring to the nature of the doctrine attested in order to determine the author of the miracle, or by denying the power of spirits altogether, and explaining away Scripture statements of demoniacal possession and the narrative of the Lord’s Temptation. “Without having recourse to any of these dangerous modes of answering the objection,” he says, “it may be sufficient to reply, that, since, agreeably to the antecedent sentiment of reason, God has adopted miracles as the seal of a divine message, we believe He will never suffer them to be so counterfeited as to deceive the humble inquirer.”<sup>2</sup> This is the only reply which even so powerful a reasoner as Dr. Newman can give to an objection based on distinct statements of Scripture itself. He cannot deny the validity of the objection, he can only hope or believe in spite of it. Personal belief independent of evidence is the most common and the weakest of arguments; at the

<sup>1</sup> Two Essays on Scripture Miracles, &c., p. 50 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 51 f.

best it is prejudice masked in the garb of Reason.) It is perfectly clear that miracles being thus acknowledged to be common both to God and to other spirits they cannot be considered a distinctive attestation of divine intervention; and, as (Spinoza) finely argued, not even the mere existence of God can be inferred from them; for as a miracle is a limited act, and never expresses more than a certain and limited power, it is certain that we cannot from such an effect, conclude even the existence of a cause whose power is infinite.<sup>1</sup>

This dual character obviously leads to many difficulties in defining the evidential function and force of miracles, and we may best appreciate the dilemma which is involved by continuing to follow the statements and arguments of divines themselves. To the question whether miracles are absolutely to command the obedience of those in whose sight they are performed, and whether, upon their attestation, the doer and his doctrine are to be accepted as of God, Archbishop Trench unhesitatingly replies: "It cannot be so, for side by side with the miracles which serve for the furthering of the kingdom of God runs another line of wonders, the counter-workings of him who is ever the ape of the Most High"<sup>2</sup> The deduction is absolutely logical and cannot be denied. "This fact," he says, "that the kingdom of lies has its wonders no less than the kingdom of truth, is itself sufficient evidence that miracles cannot be ap-

<sup>1</sup> Porro quamvis ex miraculis aliquid concludere possemus, nullo tamen modo Dei existentia inde posset concludi. Nam quum miraculum opus limitatum sit, nec unquam nisi certam et limitatam potentiam exprimat, certum est, nos ex tali effectu non posse concludere existentiam causæ, cujus potentia sit infinita, &c. Opera, ed. Tauchnitz, vol. iii., cap. vi. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Notes on the Miracles of our Lord, 8th ed., 1866, p. 22.

pealed to absolutely and finally, in proof of the doctrine which the worker of them proclaims." This being the case, it is important to discover how miracles perform their function as the indispensable evidence for a Divine Revelation, for with this disability they do not seem to possess much potentiality. Archbishop Trench, then, offers the following definition of the function of miracles: "A miracle does not prove the truth of a doctrine, or the divine mission of him that brings it to pass. That which alone it claims for him at the first is a right to be listened to: it puts him in the alternative of being from heaven or from hell. The doctrine must first commend itself to the conscience as being *good*, and only then can the miracle seal it as *divine*. But the first appeal is from the doctrine to the conscience, to the moral nature of man."<sup>1</sup> Under certain circumstances, he maintains, their evidence is utterly to be rejected. "But the purpose of the miracle," he says, "being, as we have seen, to confirm that which is good, so, upon the other hand, where the mind and conscience witness against the doctrine, not all the miracles in the world have a right to demand submission to the word which they seal. On the contrary, the great act of faith

<sup>1</sup> Notes, &c., p. 25. Dr. Trench's views are of considerable eccentricity, and he seems to reproduce in some degree the Platonic theory of Reminiscence. He continues:—"For all revelation presupposes in man a power of recognising the truth when it is shown him,—that it will find an answer in him,—that he will trace in it the lineaments of a friend, though of a friend from whom he has been long estranged, and whom he has well-nigh forgotten. It is the finding of a treasure, but of a treasure which he himself and no other had lost. The denial of this, that there is in man any organ by which truth may be recognised, opens the door to the most boundless scepticism, is indeed the denial of all that is god-like in man." Notes on Miracles, p. 25. This is choice! The archbishop would probably be shocked if we suggested that the god-like organ of which he speaks is Reason.

is to believe, against, and in despite of them all, in what God has revealed to, and implanted in the soul of the holy and the true; not to believe another Gospel, though an Angel from heaven, or one transformed into such, should bring it (Deut. xiii. 3; Gal. i. 8); and instead of compelling assent, miracles are then rather warnings to us that we keep aloof, for they tell us that not merely lies are here, for to that the conscience bore witness already, but that he who utters them is more than a common deceiver, is eminently 'a liar and an Anti-christ,' a false prophet, —standing in more immediate connection than other deceived and evil men to the kingdom of darkness, so that Satan has given him his power (Rev. xiii. 2), is using him to be an especial organ of his, and to do a special work for him."<sup>1</sup> And he lays down the distinct principle that: "The miracle must witness for itself, and the doctrine must witness for itself, and then, and then only, the first is capable of witnessing for the second."<sup>2</sup> +

These opinions are not peculiar to the Archbishop of Dublin, but are generally held by divines, although Dr. Trench expresses them with unusual absence of reserve. Dr. Mozley emphatically affirms the same doctrine when he says: "A miracle cannot oblige us to accept any doctrine which is contrary to our moral nature, or to a fundamental principle of religion."<sup>3</sup> Dr. Mansel speaks to the same effect: "If a teacher claiming to work miracles proclaims doctrines contradictory to previously established truths, whether to the conclusions of natural religion or to the teaching of a former revelation, such a contradiction is allowed even by the most zealous defenders of the evidential value of miracles, to

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles of our Lord, 8th ed., 1866, p. 27 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 33.

<sup>3</sup> Bampton Lectures for 1865, p. 25.

invalidate the authority of the teacher. But the right conclusion from this admission is not that true miracles are invalid as evidences, but that the supposed miracles in this case are not true miracles at all ; *i. e.*, are not the effects of Divine power, but of human deception or of some other agency.”<sup>1</sup> A passage from a letter written by Dr. Arnold which is quoted by Dr. Trench in support of his views, both illustrates the doctrine and the necessity which has led to its adoption : “ You complain ” says Dr. Arnold, writing to Dr. Hawkins, “ of those persons who judge of a revelation not by its evidence, but by its substance. It has always seemed to me that its substance is a most essential part of its evidence ; and that miracles wrought in favour of what was foolish or wicked would only prove Manicheism. We are so perfectly ignorant of the unseen world, that the character of any supernatural power can only be judged by the moral character of the statements which it sanctions. Thus only can we tell whether it be a revelation from God or from the Devil.”<sup>2</sup> In another place Dr. Arnold declares : “ Miracles must not be allowed to overrule the Gospel ; for it is only through our belief in the Gospel that we accord our belief to them.”<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Aids to Faith, p. 32.

<sup>2</sup> Life of Arnold, ii., p. 226.

<sup>3</sup> Lectures on Modern History, p. 137. Those who hold such views forget that the greatest miracles of ecclesiastical Christianity are not external to it, but are the essence of its principal dogmas. If the “ signs ” and “ wonders ” which form what may be called the collateral miracles of Christianity, are only believed in consequence of belief in the Gospel, upon what basis does belief in the miraculous birth, the Incarnation, the Resurrection, Ascension, and other leading dogmas rest ? These are themselves the Gospel. Dr. J. H. Newman, the character of whose mind leads him to believe every miracle the evidence against which does not absolutely prohibit his doing so, rather than only those the evidence for which constrains him to belief, supports Ecclesiastical Miracles somewhat at the expense of those of the Gospels. He

It is obvious that the mutual dependence which is thus established between miracles and the doctrines in connection with which they are wrought destroys the evidential force of miracles, and that the first and the final appeal is made to reason. The doctrine in fact proves the miracle instead of the miracle attesting the doctrine. Divines of course attempt to deny this, but no other deduction from their own statements is logically possible. Miracles, according to Scripture itself, are producible by various supernatural beings and may be Satanic as well as Divine ; man, on the other hand, is so ignorant of the unseen world that avowedly he cannot, from the miracle itself, determine the agent by whom it was performed ;<sup>1</sup> the miracle, therefore, has no intrinsic evidential value. How, then, according to divines, does it attain any potentiality ? Only through a favourable decision on the part of Reason or the "moral nature in man" regarding the

points out that only a few of the latter now fulfil the purpose of evidence for a Divine Revelation, and the rest are sustained and authenticated by those few ; that : "The many never have been evidence except to those who saw them, and have but held the place of doctrine ever since ; like the truths revealed to us about the unseen world, which are matters of faith, not means of conviction. They have no existence, as it were, out of the record in which they are found." He then proceeds to refer to the criterion of a miracle suggested by Bishop Douglas : "We may suspect miracles to be false, the account of which was not published at the time or place of their alleged occurrence, or if so published, yet without careful attention being called to them." Dr. Newman then adds : "Yet St. Mark is said to have written at Rome, St. Luke in Rome or Greece, and St. John, at Ephesus ; and the earliest of the Evangelists wrote some years after the events recorded, while the latest did not write for sixty years ; and moreover, true though it be that attention was called to Christianity from the first, yet it is true also that it did not succeed at the spot where it arose, but principally at a distance from it." *Two Essays on Miracles, &c.*, 2nd ed., 1870, p. 232 f. How much these remarks might have been extended and strengthened by one more critical and less ecclesiastical than Dr. Newman need not here be stated.

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Newman says of a miracle : "Considered by itself, it is at most but the token of a superhuman being." *Two Essays*, p. 10.

character of the doctrine. The result of the appeal to Reason respecting the morality and credibility of the doctrine determines the evidential status of the miracle. The doctrine, therefore, is the real criterion of the miracle which, without it, is necessarily an object of doubt and suspicion.

We have already casually referred to Dr. Newman's view of such a relation between Miracle and doctrine, but may here more fully quote his suggestive remarks. "Others by referring to the nature of the doctrine attested," he says, "in order to determine the author of the miracle, have exposed themselves to the plausible charge of adducing, first the miracle to attest the divinity of the doctrine, and then the doctrine to prove the divinity of the Miracle."<sup>1</sup> This argument he characterizes as one of the "dangerous modes" of removing a difficulty, although he does not himself point out a safer, and, in a note, he adds: "There is an appearance of doing honour to the Christian doctrines in representing them as *intrinsically* credible, which leads many into supporting opinions which, carried to their full extent, supersede the need of Miracles altogether. It must be recollected, too, that they who are allowed to praise have the privilege of finding fault, and may reject, according to their *a priori* notions, as well as receive. Doubtless the divinity of a clearly immoral doctrine could not be evidenced by Miracles; for our belief in the moral attributes of God is much stronger than our conviction of the negative proposition, that none but He can interfere with the system of nature."<sup>2</sup> But there is always

<sup>1</sup> Two Essays, &c., p. 51.

<sup>2</sup> In another place, however, Dr. Newman, contrasting the "rationalistic" and "Catholic" tempers, and condemning the former, says: "Rationalism is a certain abuse of Reason; that is, a use of it for

the danger of extending this admission beyond its proper limits, of supposing ourselves adequate judges of the *tendency* of doctrines; and, because unassisted Reason informs us what is moral and immoral in our own case, of attempting to decide on the abstract morality of actions; . . . These remarks are in nowise inconsistent with using (as was done in a former section) our actual knowledge of God's attributes, obtained from a survey of nature and human affairs, in determining the probability of certain professed Miracles having proceeded from Him.

(It is one thing to infer from the experience of life, another to imagine the character of God from the gratuitous conceptions of our own minds."<sup>1</sup> Although Dr. Newman apparently fails to perceive that he himself thus makes reason the criterion of miracles and therefore incurs the condemnation with which our quotation opens, the very indecision of his argument illustrates the dilemma in which divines are placed. Dr. Mozley, however, still more directly condemns the principle which we are discussing—that the doctrine must be the criterion of the miracle—although he also, as we have

purposes for which it never was intended, and is unfitted. To rationalise in matters of Revelation is to make our reason the standard and measure of the doctrines revealed; to stipulate that those doctrines should be such as to carry with them their own justification; to reject them, if they come in collision with our existing opinions or habits of thought, or are with difficulty harmonised with our existing stock of knowledge" (Essays, Crit. and Hist., 1872, vol. i. p. 31); and a little further on: "A like desire of judging for one's self is discernible in the original fall of man. Eve did not believe the Tempter any more than God's word, till she perceived 'the fruit was good for food'" (*Ib.*, p. 33). Dr. Newman, of course, wishes to limit his principle precisely to suit his own convenience, but in permitting the rejection of a supposed Revelation in spite of miracles, on the ground of our disapproval of its morality, it is obvious that the doctrine is substantially made the final criterion of the miracle.

<sup>1</sup> Two Essays, &c., p. 51 f., not

seen, elsewhere substantially affirms it. He says: "The position that the revelation proves the miracles, and not the miracles the revelation, admits of a good qualified meaning; but taken literally, it is a double offence against the rule, that things are properly proved by the proper proof of them; for a supernatural fact is the proper proof of a supernatural doctrine; while a supernatural doctrine, on the other hand, is certainly *not* the proper proof of a supernatural fact."<sup>1</sup>

This statement is obviously true, but it is equally undeniable that, their origin being uncertain, miracles have no distinctive evidential force. How far, then, we may inquire in order thoroughly to understand the position, can doctrines prove the reality of miracles or determine the agency by which they are performed? (In the case of moral truths within the limits of reason, it is evident that doctrines which are in accordance with our ideas of what is good and right do not require miraculous evidence at all. They can secure acceptance by their own merits alone. At the same time it is universally admitted that the truth or goodness of a doctrine is in itself no proof that it emanates directly from God, and consequently the most obvious wisdom and beauty in the doctrine could not attest the divine origin of a miracle.) Such truths, however, have no proper connection with revelation at all. "*These truths*," to quote the words of Bishop Atterbury, "were of themselves sufficiently obvious and plain, and needed not a Divine Testimony to make them plainer. But the Truths which are necessary in this Manner to be attested, are those which are of Positive Institution; those, which if God had not pleased to reveal them, Human Reason could not

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures for 1865, p. 19.

have discovered ; and those, which, even now they are revealed, Human Reason cannot fully account for, and perfectly comprehend.”<sup>1</sup> How is it possible then that Reason or “the moral nature in man” can approve as good, or appreciate the fitness of, doctrines which in their very nature are beyond the criterion of reason ?<sup>2</sup> What reply, for instance, can reason give to any appeal to it regarding the doctrine of the Trinity or of the Incarnation ? If doctrines the truth and goodness of which are apparent do not afford any evidence of Divine Revelation, how can doctrines which Reason can neither discover nor comprehend attest the Divine origin of miracles ? Dr. Mozley clearly recognizes that they cannot do so. (“The proof of a revelation,) he says, (and we may add, (the proof of a miracle)—itself a species of revelation—“which is contained in the substance of a revelation has this inherent check or limit in it : viz. (that it cannot reach to what is undiscoverable by reason.) Internal evidence is itself an appeal to reason, because at every step the test is our own appreciation of such and such an idea or doctrine, our own perception of its fitness ; but human reason cannot in the nature of the case prove that which, by the very hypothesis, lies beyond human reason.”<sup>3</sup> ‘It naturally follows that no doctrine which lies beyond reason, and therefore requires the attestation of miracles, can possibly afford that indication of the source and reality of miracles which is necessary to endow them with evidential value, and the supernatural doctrine must, therefore, be rejected in the absence of miraculous evidence of a decisive character.)

<sup>1</sup> Sermons, 8th ed., 1766, vol. iii., p. 198.

<sup>2</sup> Bishop Butler says : “Christianity is a scheme, quite beyond our comprehension.” Analogy of Religion, Part II., ch. iv., § 1.

<sup>3</sup> Bampton Lectures for 1865, p. 15.

Canon Mozley labours earnestly, but unsuccessfully, to restore to Miracles as evidence some part of that potentiality of which these unfortunate limitations have deprived them. Whilst on the one hand he says: "We must admit, indeed, an inherent modification in the function of a miracle as an instrument of proof,"<sup>1</sup> he argues that this is only a limitation, and no disproof of it, and he contends that: "The evidence of miracles is not negatived because it has conditions."<sup>2</sup> His reasoning, however, is purely apologetic, and attempts by the unreal analogy of supposed limitations of natural principles and evidence to excuse the disqualifying limitation of the supernatural. He is quite conscious of the serious difficulty of the position: "The question," he says, "may at first sight create a dilemma—If a miracle is nugatory on the side of one doctrine, what cogency has it on the side of another? Is it legitimate to accept its evidence when we please, and reject it when we please?" The only reply he seems able to give to these very pertinent questions is the remark which immediately follows them: "But in truth a miracle is never without an argumentative force, although that force may be counter-balanced."<sup>3</sup> In other words a miracle is always an argument although it is often a bad one. It is scarcely necessary to go to the supernatural for bad arguments.

It might naturally be expected that the miraculous evidence selected to accredit a Divine Revelation should possess certain unique and marked characteristics. It must, at least, be clearly distinctive of Divine power, and exclusively associated with Divine truth. It is inconceivable that the Deity, deigning thus to attest

<sup>1</sup> Dampton Lectures for 1865, p. 25.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 25.

*Ib.*, p. 25.

the reality of a communication from himself of truths beyond the criterion of reason, should not make the evidence simple and complete, because, the doctrines proper to such a revelation not being appreciable from internal evidence, it is obvious that the external testimony for them—if it is to be of any use—must be unmistakable and decisive. The evidence which is actually produced, however, so far from satisfying these legitimate anticipations, lacks every one of the qualifications which reason antecedently declares to be necessary. Miracles are not distinctive of Divine power but are common to Satan, and they are admitted to be performed in support of falsehood as well as in the service of truth. They bear, indeed, so little upon them the impress of their origin and true character, that they are dependent for their recognition upon our judgment of the very doctrines to attest which they are said to have been designed.

Even taking the representation of miracles, therefore, which divines themselves give, they are utterly incompetent to perform their contemplated functions. If they are superhuman they are not super-satanic, and there is no sense in which they can be considered miraculously evidential of anything. To argue, as theologians do, that the ambiguity of their testimony is deliberately intended as a trial of our faith is absurd, for Reason being unable to judge of the nature either of supernatural fact or supernatural doctrine, it would be mere folly and injustice to subject to such a test beings avowedly incapable of sustaining it. Whilst it is absolutely necessary, then, that a Divine Revelation should be attested by miraculous evidence to justify our believing it, the testimony so called seems in all respects

unworthy of the name, and presents anomalies much more suggestive of human invention than Divine originality. We are, in fact, prepared even by the Scriptural account of miracles to expect that further examination will supply an explanation of such phenomena which will wholly remove them from the region of the supernatural.

## CHAPTER II.

### MIRACLES IN RELATION TO THE ORDER OF NATURE.

WITHOUT at present touching the question as to their reality, it may be well to ascertain what miracles are considered to be, and how far, and in what sense it is asserted that they are supernatural. We have, hitherto, almost entirely confined our attention to the arguments of English divines, and we must for the present continue chiefly to deal with them, for it may broadly be said, that they alone, at the present day, maintain the reality and supernatural character of such phenomena. No thoughtful mind can fail to see that, considering the function of miracles, this is the only logical and consistent course.<sup>1</sup> The insuperable difficulties in the way of admitting the reality of miracles, however, have driven the great majority of continental, as well as very many English, theologians who still pretend to a certain orthodoxy, either to explain the miracles of the Gospel naturally, or to suppress them altogether. Since Schleiermacher denounced the idea of Divine interruptions of the order of nature, and explained away the supernatural character

<sup>1</sup> Dr. J. H. Newman writes: "Nay, if we only go so far as to realize what Christianity is, when considered merely as a creed, and what stupendous overpowering facts are involved in the doctrine of a Divine Incarnation, we shall feel that no miracle can be great after it, nothing strange or marvellous, nothing beyond expectation." *Two Essays on Scripture Miracles, &c.*, 1870, p. 185.

of miracles, by defining them as merely relative : miracles to us, but in reality mere anticipations of human knowledge and power, his example has been more or less followed throughout Germany, and almost every expedient has been adopted, by would-be orthodox writers, to reduce or altogether eliminate the miraculous elements. The attempts which have been made to do this, and yet to maintain the semblance of unshaken belief in the main points of ecclesiastical Christianity, have lamentably failed, from the hopeless nature of the task and the fundamental error of the conception. The endeavour of Paulus and his school to get rid of the supernatural by a bold naturalistic interpretation of the language of the Gospel narratives, whilst the credibility of the record was represented as intact, was too glaring an outrage upon common sense to be successful, but it was scarcely more illogical than subsequent efforts to suppress the miraculous, yet retain the creed. The great majority of modern German critics, however, reject the miraculous altogether, and consider the question as no longer worthy of discussion, and most of those who have not distinctly expressed this view either resort to every linguistic device to evade the difficulty, or betray, by their hesitation, the feebleness of their belief.<sup>1</sup> In dealing with the

<sup>1</sup> It may be well to refer more particularly to the views of Ewald, one of the most profound scholars, but, at the same time, arbitrary critics, of this time. In his great work, "Geschichte des Volkes Israel," he rejects the supernatural from all the "miracles" of the Old Testament (Cf. III. Ausg. 1864, Band i., p. 385 ff., ii., p. 88 f., 101 ff., 353 ff.), and in the fifth volume, "Christus u. s. Zeit," he does not belie his previous opinions. He deliberately repudiates the miraculous birth of Jesus (v. p. 236), rejects the supernatural from the birth of John the Baptist, and denies the relationship (Luke i. 36) between him and Jesus (p. 239 ff.). The miraculous events at the Crucifixion are mere poetical imaginations (p. 581). The Resurrection is the creation of the pious longing and excited feeling of the disciples (Band vi. Gesch. des Apost. Zeitalters,

question of miracles, therefore, it is not to Germany we must turn, but to England, where their reality is still maintained.

Archbishop Trench rejects with disdain the attempts of Schleiermacher and others to get rid of the miraculous elements of miracles, by making them relative, which he rightly considers to be merely "a decently veiled denial of the miracle altogether;"<sup>1</sup> and he will not accept any reconciliation which sacrifices the miracle, "which," he logically affirms, "is, in fact, no miracle, if it lay in nature already, if it was only the evoking of forces latent therein, not a new thing, not the bringing in of the novel powers of a higher world; if the mysterious processes and powers by which those works were brought about had been only undiscovered hitherto, and not undiscoverable, by the efforts of human inquiry."<sup>2</sup> When Dr. Trench tries to define what he considers the real character of miracles, however, he becomes, as might be expected,

1858, p. 71 f.), and the Ascension, its natural sequel (vi. p. 95 f.). In regard to the miracles of Jesus, his treatment of disease was principally mental and by the exercise of moral influence on the mind of the sick, but he also employed external means, inquired into the symptoms of disease, and his action was subject to the laws of Divine order (v. pp. 291—299). Ewald spiritualizes the greater miracles until the physical basis is almost completely lost. In the miracle at the marriage of Cana, "water itself, under the influence of his spirit, becomes the best wine," as it still does wherever his spirit is working in full power (v. p. 329). The miraculous feeding of 5000 is a narrative based on some tradition of an occasion in which Jesus, "with the smallest external means, but infinitely more through his spirit and word and prayer, satisfied all who came to him,"—an allegory in fact of the higher satisfying power of the bread of life—which in course of time grew to the consistency of a physical miracle (v. p. 442). The raising of the son of the widow of Nain is represented as a case of suspended animation (v. p. 424). In his latest work, "Die Lehre der Bibel von Gott," Ewald eliminates all the miraculous elements from Revelation, which he extends to all historical religions (with the exception of Mahometanism) as well as to the religion of the Bible (i. p. 18, § 8).

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 74.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 75.

voluminous and obscure. He says: "An extraordinary Divine casualty, and not that ordinary which we acknowledge everywhere, and in everything, belongs, then, to the essence of the miracle; powers of God other than those which have always been working; such, indeed, as most seldom or never have been working before. The unresting activity of God, which at other times hides and conceals itself behind the veil of what we term natural laws, does in the miracle unveil itself; it steps out from its concealment, and the hand which works is laid bare. Beside and beyond the ordinary operation of nature, higher powers (higher, not as coming from a higher source, but as bearing upon higher ends) intrude and make themselves felt even at the very springs and sources of her power."<sup>1</sup> "Not, as we shall see the greatest theologians have always earnestly contended, *contra naturam*, but *præter naturam*, and *supra naturam*."<sup>2</sup> Further on he adds: "*Beyond nature, beyond and above the nature which we know, they are, but not contrary to it.*"<sup>3</sup> Newman, in a similar strain, though with greater directness, says: "The miracles of Scripture are undeniably beyond nature;" and he explains them as "wrought by persons consciously exercising, under Divine guidance, a power committed to them for definite ends, professing to be immediate messengers from heaven, and to be evidencing their mission by their miracles."<sup>4</sup>

Miracles are here described as "beside," and "beyond," and "above" nature, but a moment's consideration must show that, in so far as these terms have any meaning at all, they are simply evasions, not solutions, of a difficulty. Dr. Trench is quite sensible of the danger in which the definition

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 12.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 12, note 2.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 14.

<sup>4</sup> Two Essays on Scripture Miracles, &c., p. 116.

of miracles places them, and how fatal to his argument it would be to admit that they are contrary to the order of nature. "The miracle," he protests, "is not thus *unnatural*; nor could it be such, since the unnatural, the contrary to order, is of itself the ungodly, and can in no way, therefore, be affirmed of a Divine work, such as that with which we have to do."<sup>1</sup> The archbishop in this, however, is clearly arguing from nature to miracles, and not from miracles to nature. He does not, of course, know what miracles really are, but as he recognizes that the order of nature must be maintained, he is forced to assert that miracles are not contrary to nature. He repudiates the idea of their being natural phenomena, and yet attempts to deny that they are unnatural. They must either be the one or the other. If they be not unnatural occurrences they must be natural, and therefore not miraculous; if they are miraculous, they are not natural, and consequently contrary to the order of nature, and for that reason, as Dr. Trench admits, not Divine work. The archbishop, besides, forgets that he ascribes miracles to Satan as well as to God. The whole argument is a mere quibble of words to evade a palpable dilemma. Dr. Newman does not fall into this error, and more boldly faces the difficulty. He admits that the Scripture miracles "innovate upon the impressions which are made upon us by the order and the laws of the natural world;"<sup>2</sup> and that "walking on the sea, or the resurrection of the dead, is a plain reversal of its laws."<sup>3</sup> Indeed, that his distinction is purely imaginary, and inconsistent with the alleged

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Two Essays on Scripture Miracles, &c., p. 151.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 158.

facts of Scriptural miracles, is apparent from Dr. Trench's own illustrations.

Take, for instance, the multiplication of loaves and fishes. Five thousand people are fed upon five barley loaves and two small fishes: "and they took up of the fragments which remained twelve baskets full."<sup>1</sup> Dr. Trench is forced to renounce all help in explaining this miracle from natural analogies, and he admits: "We must simply behold in the multiplying of the bread" (and fishes?) "an act of Divine omnipotence on His part who was the Word of God,—not, indeed, now as at the first, of absolute creation out of nothing, since there was a substratum to work on in the original loaves and fishes, but an act of creative accretion."<sup>2</sup> It will scarcely be argued by any one that such an "act of Divine omnipotence" and "creative accretion" as this multiplication of five baked loaves and two small fishes is not contrary to the order of nature.<sup>3</sup> For Dr. Trench has himself pointed out that there must be interposition of man's art here, and that "a grain of wheat could never by itself, and according to the laws of natural development, issue in a loaf of bread."<sup>4</sup>

Undaunted by, or rather unconscious of, such contradictions, the archbishop proceeds with his argument, and with new definitions of the miraculous. So far from being disorder of nature, he continues with audacious precision: "the true miracle is a higher and a purer

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xiv. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 274 f.

<sup>3</sup> Newman referring to this amongst other miracles as "a far greater innovation upon the economy of nature than the miracles of the Church upon the economy of Scripture," says: "There is nothing, for instance, in nature at all to parallel and mitigate the wonderful history of the multiplication of an artificially prepared substance, such as bread." Two Essays, p. 157 f.

<sup>4</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 274.

nature coming down out of the world of untroubled harmonies into this world of ours, which so many discords have jarred and disturbed, and bringing this back again, though it be but for one mysterious prophetic moment, into harmony with that higher."<sup>1</sup> In that "higher and purer nature" can a grain of wheat issue in a loaf of bread? We have only to apply this theory to the miraculous multiplication of loaves and fishes to perceive how completely it is the creation of Dr. Trench's poetical fancy.

These passages fairly illustrate the purely imaginary and arbitrary nature of the definitions which those who maintain the reality and supernatural character of miracles give of them. That explanation is generally adopted which seems most convenient at the moment, and none ever passes, or, indeed, ever can pass, beyond the limits of assumption. The favourite hypothesis is that which ascribes miracles to the action of unknown law. Archbishop Trench naturally adopts it: "We should see in the miracle," he says, "not the infraction of a law, but the neutralizing of a lower law, the suspension of it for a time by a higher;" and he asks with indignation, whence we dare conclude that, because we know of no powers sufficient to produce miracles, none exist. "They exceed the laws of *our* nature; but it does not therefore follow that they exceed the laws of *all* nature."<sup>2</sup> It is not easy

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 16. Canon Liddon writes on the evidential purpose of miracles and their nature, as follows: "But how is man enabled to identify the Author of this law within him" (which the highest instincts of the human conscience derive from the Christian Revelation and the life of Christ), "perfectly reflected as it is, in the Christ, with the Author of the law of the Universe without him? The answer is, by miracle. Miracle is an innovation upon physical law,—or at least a suspension of some lower physical law by the intervention of a higher one,

to follow the distinction here between "*our* nature" and "*all* nature," since the order of nature, by which miracles are judged, is, so far as knowledge goes, universal, and we have no grounds for assuming that there is any other.

The same hypothesis is elaborated by Dr. Mozley. Assuming the facts of miracles, he proceeds to discuss the question of their "referribleness to unknown law," in which expression he includes both "*unknown law*, or unknown connexion with *known law*."<sup>1</sup>

Taking first the supposition of *unknown* connection with known law, Dr. Mozley fairly argues that, as a law of nature, in the scientific sense, cannot possibly produce single or isolated facts, it follows that no isolated or exceptional event can come under a law of nature *by direct observation*, but, if it comes under it at all, it can only do so by some *explanation*, which takes it out of its isolation and joins it to a class of facts, whose recurrence indeed constitutes the law. Now Dr. Mozley admits that no explanation can be given by which miracles can have an unknown connexion with known law. Taking the largest class of miracles, bodily cures, the correspondence between a simple command or prophetic notification and the cure is the chief characteristic of miracles, and distinguishes them from mere marvels.

—in the interests of moral law. The historical fact that Jesus Christ rose from the dead identifies the Lord of physical life and death with the Legislator of the Sermon on the Mount. Miracle is the certificate of identity between the Lord of Nature and the Lord of Conscience,—the proof that He is really a Moral Being who subordinates physical to moral interests. Miracle is the meeting-point between intellect and the moral sense, because it announces the answer to the efforts and yearnings alike of the moral sense and the intellect; because it announces revelation." Some Elements of Religion, Lent Lectures, 1870. II. P. Liddon, D.D., Canon of St. Paul's, 1872, p. 74 f.

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 145.

No violation of any law of nature takes place in either the cure or the prophetic announcement taken separately, but the two, taken together, are the proof of superhuman agency. Dr. Mozley confesses that no physical hypothesis can be framed accounting for the superhuman knowledge and power involved in this class of miracles, supposing the miracles to stand as they are recorded in Scripture.<sup>1</sup>

Being obliged, therefore, to abandon the attempt to explain the Gospel miracles upon the theory of unknown connexion with known law, Dr. Mozley shifts the inquiry to the other and different question, whether miracles may not be instances of laws which are as yet wholly unknown.<sup>2</sup> This is generally called a question of "higher law,"—that is to say, a law which comprehends under itself two or more lower or less wide laws. And the principle would be applicable to miracles by supposing the existence of an unknown law, hereafter to be discovered, under which miracles would come, and then considering whether this new law of miracles, and the old law of common facts, might not both be reducible to a still more general law which comprehended them both. Now a law of nature, in the scientific sense, cannot exist without a class of facts which comes under it, and in reality constitutes the law; but Dr. Mozley of course recognizes that the discovery of such a law of miracles would necessarily involve the discovery of fresh miracles, for to talk of a law of miracles without miracles would be an absurdity.<sup>3</sup> The supposition of the discovery of such a law of miracles, however, would be tantamount to the supposition of a future new order of nature, from which

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, pp. 145—153.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, pp. 153—159.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 154 f.

it immediately follows that the whole supposition is irrelevant and futile as regards the present question. For no new order of things could make the present order different, and a miracle, could we suppose it becoming the ordinary fact of another different order of nature, would not be less a violation of the laws of nature in the present one.<sup>2</sup> Dr. Mozley is, therefore, constrained to abandon also this explanation. We are bound to say, and we do so with sincere pleasure and respect, that Dr. Mozley conducts his argument with great fairness and ability, and displays his own love of truth by the impartiality with which he discusses and relinquishes many a favourite, but untenable, hypothesis.

We pause here to remark that, throughout the whole inquiry into the question of miracles, we meet with nothing from theologians but mere assumptions, against which the invariability of the known order of nature steadily opposes itself. (The facts of the narrative of the miracle are first assumed, and so are the theories by which it is explained.) Known law refuses to recognize such astounding statements as those affirming the resurrection of an absolutely dead man, a bodily ascension, or the miraculous multiplication of loaves and fishes ; unknown law is equally obdurate, so other assumptions of an even more daring description are the only resource of those who maintain and desire to account for them. Narrative and assumption are crushed beneath the weight of the alleged facts. Now, with regard to every theory which seeks to explain miracles by assumption, we may quote words applied by one of the ablest defenders of miracles to some conclusion of straw, which he placed in the mouth of an imaginary antagonist in order that he might refute

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 156.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 157.

it: "But the question is," said the late Dean of St. Paul's, "not whether such a conclusion has been asserted, as many other absurdities have been asserted, by the advocates of a theory, but whether it has been established on such scientific grounds as to be entitled to the assent of all duly cultivated minds, whatever their own consciences may say to the contrary."<sup>1</sup> Divines are very strict in demanding absolute demonstrations from men of science and others, but we do not find them at all ready to furnish conclusions of similar accuracy regarding dogmatic theology. ✓

Immediately after his indignant demand for scientific accuracy of demonstration, Dr. Mansel proceeds to argue as follows: In the will of man we have the solitary instance of an efficient cause, in the highest sense of the term, acting among the physical causes of the material world, and producing results which could not have been brought about by any mere sequence of physical causes. If a man of his own will throw a stone into the air, its motion, as soon as it has left his hand, is determined by a combination of purely material laws; but by what *law* came it to be thrown at all? The law of gravitation, no doubt, remains constant and unbroken, whether the stone is lying on the ground, or moving through the air, but all the laws of matter could not have brought about the particular result without the interposition of the free will of the man who throws the stone. Substitute the will of God for the will of man, and the argument becomes applicable to the whole extent of Creation and to all the phenomena which it embraces.<sup>2</sup> ✕

It is evident that Dr. Mansel's argument merely tends

<sup>1</sup> Mansel, *Aids to Faith*, p. 19.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 20.

to prove that every effect must have a cause, a proposition too hackneyed to require any argument at all. If a man had not thrown the stone, the stone would have remained lying on the ground. No one doubts this. We have here, however, this "solitary instance of an efficient cause acting among the physical causes of the material world," producing results which are wholly determined by material laws,<sup>1</sup> and incapable of producing any opposed to them. If, therefore, we substitute, as Dr. Mansel desires, "the will of God" for "the will of man," we arrive at no results which are not in harmony with the order of nature. We have no ground whatever for assuming any efficient cause acting in any other way than in accordance with the laws of nature. It is, however, one of the gross fallacies of this argument, as applied to miracles, to pass from the efficient cause producing results which are strictly in accordance with natural laws, and determined by them, to an assumed efficient cause producing effects which are opposed to natural law. As an argument from analogy it is totally false, and it is moreover based upon mere assumption. The restoration to life of a decomposed human body and the multiplication of loaves and fishes are opposed to natural laws, and no assumed efficient cause conceivable to which they may be referred can harmonize them.

Dr. Mozley continues his argument in a similar way. He inquires: "Is the suspension of physical and material laws by a Spiritual Being inconceivable? We reply that, however inconceivable this kind of suspension of physical law is, it is a fact. Physical laws are suspended any time an animate being moves any part of its

<sup>1</sup> Throughout this argument we use the term "law" in its popular sense as representing the series of phenomena to which reference is made.

body ; the laws of matter are suspended by the laws of life.”<sup>1</sup> He goes on to maintain that, although it is true that his spirit is united with the matter in which it moves in a way in which the Great Spirit who acts on matter in the miracle is not, yet the action of God’s Spirit in the miracle of walking on the water is no more inconceivable than the action of his own spirit in holding up his own hand. “Antecedently, one step on the ground and an ascent to heaven are alike incredible. But this appearance of incredibility is answered in one case literally *ambulando*. How can I place any reliance upon it in the other?”<sup>2</sup> From this illustration, Dr. Mozley, with a haste very unlike his previous careful procedure, jumps at the following conclusions : “The constitution of nature, then, disproves the incredibility of the Divine suspension of physical law ; but more than this, it creates a presumption for it.”<sup>3</sup> The laws of life of which we have experience, he argues, are themselves in an ascending scale. First come the laws which regulate unorganized matter ; next the laws of vegetation ; then the laws of animal life, with its voluntary motion ; and above these again, the laws of moral being. A supposed intelligent being whose experience was limited to one or more classes in this ascending scale of laws would be totally incapable of conceiving the action of the higher classes. The progressive succession of laws is perfectly conceivable backward, but an absolute mystery forward. “Analogy,” therefore, when in this ascending series we arrive at man, leads us to expect that there is a higher sphere of law as much above him as he is above the lower natures in the scale, and

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 164.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 164.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 164.

“supplies a presumption in favour of such a belief.”<sup>1</sup> And so we arrive at the question whether there is or is not a God, a Personal Head in nature, whose free will penetrates the universal frame invisibly to us, and is an omnipresent agent. If there be, Dr. Mozley concludes, then, every miracle in Scripture is as natural an event in the universe as any chemical experiment in the physical world.<sup>2</sup>

This is precisely the argument of Dr. Mansel, regarding the “Efficient Cause,” somewhat elaborated, but, however ingeniously devised, it is equally based upon assumption and defective in analogy. We may observe, in the first place, that it is a fundamental error to speak in such a sense of an ascending scale of laws. There is no standard by which we have any right thus to graduate phenomena. The “classes of law” to which the Bampton Lecturer refers work harmoniously side by side, regulating the matter to which they apply. Unorganized matter, vegetation, and animal life, may each have special conditions modifying phenomena, but they are all equally subject to the same general laws. Man is as much under the influence of gravitation as a stone is. The special operation of physical laws is less a modification of law than that law acting under different conditions. The law of gravitation suffers no alteration, whether it cause the fall of an apple or shape the orbit of a planet. The reproduction of the plant and of the animal is regulated by the same fundamental principle acting through different organisms. The harmonious action of physical laws, and their adaptability to an infinite variety of forms, constitutes the perfection of that

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 165.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 165.

code which produces the order of nature.<sup>1</sup> The mere superiority of man over lower forms of organic and inorganic matter does not lift him above physical laws, and the analogy of every grade in nature forbids the presumption that higher forms may exist which are exempt from their control.

If in animated beings we have the solitary instance of an "efficient cause" acting among the forces of nature, and possessing the power of initiation, this efficient cause produces no disturbance of physical law. Its existence is as much a recognized part of the infinite variety of form within the order of nature as the existence of a crystal or a plant; and although the character of the force exercised by it may not be clearly understood, its effects are regulated by the same laws as govern all other forces in nature. If "the laws of matter are suspended by the laws of life" each time an animated being moves any part of its body, one physical law is suspended in precisely the same manner, and to an equivalent degree, each time another physical law is called into action. The law of gravitation, for instance, is equally overcome by the law of magnetism each time a magnet suspends a weight in the air. In each case, a law is successfully resisted precisely to the extent of the force employed. The arm that is raised by the animated being falls again, in obedience to law, as soon as the force which raised it is exhausted, quite as certainly as the weight descends when the magnetic current fails. The only anomaly is our ignorance of the nature of the vital force; but do we know much more of the physical?

<sup>1</sup> We pass over at present Dr. Mozley's reference to "the laws of moral being," as involving questions too intricate for treatment here, and as apart from the argument.

The introduction of life in no way changes the relation between cause and effect, which constitutes the order of nature, and proceeds according to its law. No exercise of will can overcome the laws of gravitation, or any other law, to a greater extent than the actual force exerted, any more than the magnetic current can do so beyond the force of the battery. Will has no power against exhaustion. Even a Moses, in the sublimest moments of faith, could not hold up his arms to heaven after his physical force was consumed. Life favours no presumption for the suspension of law, but, on the contrary, whilst acting in nature, universally exhibits the prevalence and invariability of law. The "laws of life" may be subtle, but they are but an integral portion of the great order of nature, working harmoniously with the laws of matter, and not one whit more independent of them than any one natural law is of another.

The "Efficient Cause," if it have a moment of initiative will to set the forces of life in motion—as the force of magnetism, for instance, is rendered active when a touch connects the coil with the battery—is singularly circumscribed by law. It is brought into existence by the operation of immutable physical laws, and from the cradle to the grave it is subject to those laws. So inseparably is it connected with matter, and consequently with the laws which regulate matter, that it cannot even become conscious of its own existence without the intervention of matter. The whole process of life is dependent on obedience to natural laws, and so powerless is this efficient cause to resist their jurisdiction, that, in spite of its highest efforts, it pines or ceases to exist in consequence of the mere natural operation of law upon the matter with which it is united, and without

which it is impotent. It cannot receive an impression from without that is not conveyed in accordance with law, and perceived by an exquisitely ordered organism, in every part of which law reigns supreme; nor can it communicate from within except through channels equally ordered by law. A slight injury may derange the delicate mechanical contrivances of eye, ear, and vocal chords, and may further destroy the reason and paralyze the body, reducing the animated being, by the derangement of those channels to which physical law limits its action, to a mere smouldering spark of life, without consciousness and without expression. The "laws of life" act amongst the laws of matter, but are not independent of them, and after the initiatory impulse the action of both classes of law is regulated by precisely the same principles.

\* Dr. Mozley's affirmation, that *antecedently* one step on the ground and an ascent to heaven are alike incredible, does not help him. In that sense it follows that there is nothing that is not antecedently incredible, nothing credible until it has happened. This argument, however, while it limits us to actual experience, prohibits presumptions with regard to that which is beyond experience. To argue that, because a step on the ground and an ascent to heaven are antecedently alike incredible, yet we subsequently make that step, therefore the ascent to heaven, which we cannot make, from incredible becomes credible, although it has not happened, is a contradiction in terms. If the ascent be antecedently incredible, it cannot at the same time be antecedently credible. That which is incredible cannot become credible because something else quite different becomes credible. It is apparent that such an argument is vicious.

The proposition simply amounts to an assertion that everything before it has happened is incredible, and that because one thing antecedently considered incredible has happened, therefore everything else becomes credible. Experience comes with its sober wisdom to check such reasoning. We believe in our power to walk because we can exercise it, and have been able to exercise it antecedently to our power to reason about the step, but everything prohibits belief in bodily ascensions. The step is part of the recognized order of nature, and has none of the elements in it of the miraculous. An automaton can make the same step as a man. The only difference is in the character of the force employed and exhausted in each. But if, in the exercise of our power of voluntary motion, we leap into the air on the brink of a precipice, belief in an ascent to heaven is shattered to pieces at the bottom to which the law of gravitation infallibly drags us.

There is absolutely nothing in the constitution of nature, we may say, reversing Dr. Mozley's assertion, which does not prove the incredibility of a Divine suspension of physical laws, and does not create a presumption against it. The solitary instance of an efficient cause, if it be distinguished from the other forces of nature by the possession of the power of an initiatory impulse, is, from the moment that power is exerted, subject to physical laws like all other forces, and there is no instance producible, or even logically conceivable, of any power whose effects are opposed to the ultimate ruling of the laws of nature. The occurrence of anything opposed to those laws is incredible. Dr. Mozley has himself shown that miracles cannot be explained either by unknown connection with known law, or by

reference to unknown law ; and he renounces the explanation of "higher law." His distinction between the laws of nature and the "laws of the universe,"<sup>1</sup> by which he nevertheless endeavours to make a miracle credible, is one which is purely imaginary. We know of no laws of the universe differing from the laws of nature. So far as the human intellect can range, the laws of nature alone prevail. But, even adopting for a moment Dr. Mozley's distinction, it would still be inconceivable that any "laws of the universe" could so modify the laws of nature as to explain, for instance, the miracle of the multiplication of an artificial product like loaves of bread. A consideration of the solitary instance known of an efficient cause acting among the forces of nature, so far from favouring the presumption of a still higher efficient cause unknown producing such results, presents, on the contrary, the strongest presumption against it. No exertion of force in any way analogous to that exercised by animated beings, however great, could furnish the requisite explanation of such complex miracles. On the other hand, our highest attainable conception of infinite wisdom and power is based upon the universality and invariability of law, and inexorably excludes, as unworthy and anthropomorphic, any idea of its fitful suspension.

## 2.

THE proposition with which Dr. Mozley commences these Bampton Lectures, and for which he contends to their close, is this : "That miracles, or visible suspensions

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 163.

of the order of nature for a providential purpose, are not in contradiction to reason.”<sup>1</sup> He shows that the purpose of miracles is to attest a supernatural revelation, which, without them, we could not be justified in believing. “Christianity,” he distinctly states, “cannot be maintained as a revelation undiscoverable by human reason—a revelation of a supernatural scheme for man’s salvation without the evidence of miracles.”<sup>2</sup> Out of this very admission he attempts to construct an argument in support of miracles: “Hence it follows,” he continues, “that upon the supposition of the Divine design of a revelation, a miracle is not an anomaly or irregularity, but part of the system of the universe; because, though an irregularity and an anomaly in relation to either part, it has a complete adaptation to the whole. There being two worlds, a visible and invisible, and a communication between the two being wanted, a miracle is the instrument of that communication.”<sup>3</sup>

Here, again, the argument is based upon mere assumption. The supposition of the Divine design of a revelation is the result of a foregone conclusion in its favour, and not suggested by antecedent probability. Divines assume that a communication of this nature is in accordance with reason, and was necessary for the salvation of the human race, simply because they believe that it took place, and no evidence worthy of the name is ever offered in support of the assumption. A revelation having, it is supposed, been made, that revelation is consequently supposed to have been contemplated, and to have justified any suspension of the order of nature. The proposition for which evidence is demanded is viciously employed as

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 23.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 23.

evidence for itself. The considerations involved in an assumption of the necessity and reasonableness of such a revelation, however, are antecedently incredible, and contrary to reason. ( We are asked to believe that God made man in his own image, pure and sinless, and intended him to continue so, but that scarcely had this, his noblest work, left the hands of the Creator, than man was tempted into sin by Satan, an all-powerful and persistent enemy of God, whose existence and antagonism to a Being in whose eyes sin is abomination are not accounted for and are incredible.<sup>1</sup> ) Adam's fall brought a curse upon the earth, and incurred the penalty of death for himself and for the whole of his posterity. The human race, although created perfect and without sin, thus disappointed the expectations of the Creator, and became daily more wicked, the Evil Spirit having succeeded in frustrating the designs of the Almighty, so that God repented that he had made man, and at length destroyed by a deluge all the inhabitants of the earth, with the exception of eight persons who feared him. This sweeping purification, however, was as futile as the original design, and the race of men soon became more wicked than ever. The final and only adequate remedy devised by God for the salvation of his creatures, become so desperately and hopelessly evil, was the incarnation of himself in the person of "the Son," the second person in a mysterious Trinity of which the Godhead is said to be composed, (who was conceived by the Holy Ghost, and born of the Virgin Mary,) and his death upon the cross as a vicarious expiation of the sins of the world, without

<sup>1</sup> The history of the gradual development of the idea of the existence and personality of the Devil is full of instruction, and throws no small light upon the question of Revelation.

which supposed satisfaction of the justice of God his mercy could not possibly have been extended to the frail and sinful work of his own hands. The crucifixion of the incarnate God was the crowning guilt of a nation whom God himself had selected as his own peculiar people, and whom he had condescended to guide by constant direct revelations of his will, but who, from the first, had displayed the most persistent and remarkable proclivity to sin against him, and, in spite of the wonderful miracles wrought on their behalf, to forsake his service for the worship of other gods. We are asked to believe, therefore, in the frustration of the Divine design of creation, and in the fall of man into a state of wickedness hateful to God, requiring and justifying the Divine design of a revelation, and such a revelation as this, as a preliminary to the further proposition that, on the supposition of such a design, miracles would not be contrary to reason.

Antecedently, nothing could be more absolutely incredible or contrary to reason than these statements, or the supposition of such a design. Dr. Mozley himself admits that, as human announcements, the doctrines of Christianity would be the "wildest delusions," which we could not be justified in believing, and that such a scheme could not be maintained without miraculous evidence. The supposition of the Divine design of the revelation is solely derived from the doctrines supposed to have been revealed, and, indeed, that design forms part of them. Until they are proved to be Divine truths, these statements must obviously be considered human announcements, and consequently they are antecedently incredible, and the "wildest delusions." As Dr. Mozley does not pretend that there is anything antecedently credible upon which he can base an assertion that there was actually

any "Divine design of a revelation," or that any "communication between the two worlds" was requisite, it is therefore clear that his argument consists merely of assumptions admitted to be antecedently incredible. It advances a supposition of that which is contrary to reason to justify supposed visible suspensions of the order of nature, which are also contrary to reason. Incredible assumptions cannot give probability to incredible evidence. Tertullian's audacious paradox: "Credo quia impossibile," of which such reasoning is illustrative, is but the cry of enthusiastic credulity.

✓ The whole theory of this abortive design of creation, with such impotent efforts to amend it, is emphatically contradicted by the glorious perfection and invariability of the order of nature. It is difficult to say whether the details of the scheme, or the circumstances which are supposed to have led to its adoption, are more shocking to reason or to moral sense. The imperfection ascribed to the Divine work is scarcely more derogatory to the power and wisdom of the Creator, than the supposed satisfaction of his justice in the death of himself incarnate, the innocent for the guilty, is degrading to the idea of his moral perfection. The supposed necessity for repeated interference to correct the imperfection of the original creation, the nature of the means employed, and the triumphant opposition of Satan, are anthropomorphic conceptions totally incompatible with the idea of an Infinitely Wise and Almighty Being. The constitution of nature, so far from favouring any hypothesis of original perfection and subsequent deterioration, bears everywhere the record of systematic upward progression. Not only is the assumption, that any revelation of the nature of ecclesiastical Christianity was necessary, excluded upon

*And hence the necessity of the revelation of the nature of Christianity was necessary, excluded upon*

philosophical grounds, but it is contradicted by the whole operation of natural laws, which contain in themselves inexorable penalties against natural retrogression, or even unprogressiveness, and furnish the only requisite stimulus to improvement.<sup>1</sup> (The survival only of the fittest is the

<sup>1</sup> We venture to add a passage from Mr. Herbert Spencer's "Social Statics" which we have met with for the first time since this work was published in illustration of this assertion. Mr. Spencer affirms "the evanescence of evil" and the perfectibility of man, upon the ground that: "All evil results from the non-adaptation of constitution to conditions." After an elaborate demonstration of this, he resumes as follows: "If there be any conclusiveness in the foregoing arguments, such a faith is well founded. As commonly supported by evidence drawn from history, it cannot be considered indisputable. The inference that as advancement has been hitherto the rule, it will be the rule henceforth, may be called a plausible speculation. But when it is shown that this advancement is due to the working of a universal law; and that in virtue of that law it must continue until the state we call perfection is reached, then the advent of such a state is removed out of the region of probability into that of certainty. If any one demurs to this let him point out the error. Here are the several steps of the argument.

All imperfection is unfitness to the conditions of existence.

This unfitness must consist either in having a faculty or faculties in excess; or in having a faculty or faculties deficient; or in both.

A faculty in excess is one which the conditions of existence do not afford full exercise to; and a faculty that is deficient is one from which the conditions of existence demand more than it can perform.

But it is an essential principle of life that a faculty to which circumstances do not allow full exercise diminishes; and that a faculty on which circumstances make excessive demands increases.

And so long as this excess and this deficiency continue, there must continue decrease on the one hand, and growth on the other.

Finally all excess and all deficiency must disappear, that is, all unfitness must disappear; that is, all imperfection must disappear.

Thus the ultimate development of the ideal man is logically certain—as certain as any conclusion in which we place the most implicit faith; for instance, that all men will die. For why do we infer that all men will die? Simply because, in an immense number of past experiences, death has uniformly occurred. Similarly then as the experiences of all people in all times—experiences that are embodied in maxims, proverbs, and moral precepts, and that are illustrated in biographies and histories, go to prove that organs, faculties, powers, capacities, or whatever else we call them grow by use and diminish from disuse, it is inferred that they will continue to do so. And if this inference is un-

stern decree of nature. The invariable action of law of itself eliminates the unfit. Progress is necessary to existence; extinction is the doom of retrogression. The highest effect contemplated by the supposed Revelation is to bring man into perfect harmony with law, and this is ensured by law itself acting upon intelligence. Only in obedience to law is there life and safety. Knowledge of law is imperatively demanded by nature. Ignorance of it is a capital offence. If we ignore the law of gravitation we are dashed to pieces at the foot of a precipice, or are crushed by a falling rock; if we neglect sanitary law, we are destroyed by a pestilence; if we disregard chemical laws, we are poisoned by a vapour. There is not, in reality, a gradation of breach of law that is not

questionable, then is the one above deduced from it—that humanity must in the end become completely adapted to its conditions—unquestionable also.

Progress, therefore, is not an accident, but a necessity. Instead of civilization being artificial, it is a part of nature; all of a piece with the development of the embryo or the unfolding of a flower. The modifications mankind have undergone, and are still undergoing, result from a law underlying the whole organic creation; and provided the human race continues, and the constitution of things remains the same, those modifications must end in completeness. As surely as the tree becomes bulky when it stands alone, and slender if one of a group; as surely as the same creature assumes the different forms of cart-horse and race-horse, according as its habits demand strength or speed; as surely as a blacksmith's arm grows large, and the skin of a labourer's hand thick; as surely as the eye tends to become long-sighted in the sailor, and short-sighted in the student; as surely as the blind attain a more delicate sense of touch; as surely as a clerk acquires rapidity in writing and calculation; as surely as the musician learns to detect an error of a semitone amidst what seems to others a very babel of sounds; as surely as a passion grows by indulgence and diminishes when restrained; as surely as a disregarded conscience becomes inert, and one that is obeyed active; as surely as there is any efficacy in educational culture, or any meaning in such terms as habit, custom, practice; so surely must the human faculties be moulded into complete fitness for the social state; so surely must the things we call evil and immorality disappear; so surely must man become perfect." Social Statics, stereotyped ed. 1868, p. 78 f.

( followed by an equivalent gradation of punishment. Civilization is nothing but the knowledge and observance of natural laws. The savage must learn them or be extinguished ; the cultivated must observe them or die. The balance of moral and physical development cannot be deranged with impunity. In the spiritual as well as the physical sense only the fittest eventually can survive in the struggle for existence. There is, in fact, an absolute upward impulse to the whole human race supplied by the invariable operation of the laws of nature acting upon the common instinct of self-preservation. As, on the one hand, the highest human conception of infinite wisdom and power is derived from the universality and invariability of law, so that universality and invariability, on the other hand, exclude the idea of interruption or occasional suspension of law for any purpose whatever, and more especially for the correction of supposed original errors of design which cannot have existed, or for the attainment of objects already provided for in the order of nature.)

Upon the first groundless assumption of a Divine design of such a revelation follows the hypothetical inference that, for the purpose of making the communication from the unseen world, a miracle or visible suspension of the order or nature is no irregularity, but part of the system of the universe. This, however, is a mere assertion, and no argument. An avowed assumption which is contrary to reason is followed by another which is contrary to experience. It is simply absurd to speak of a visible suspension of the order of nature being part of the system of the universe. Such a statement has no meaning whatever within the range of human conception. Moreover, it

must be remembered that miracles—or “visible suspensions of the order of nature”—are ascribed indifferently to Divine and to Satanic agency. ( If miracles are not an anomaly or irregularity on the supposition of the Divine design of a revelation, upon what supposition do Satanic miracles cease to be irregularities? Is the order of nature, which it is asserted is under the personal control of God, at the same time at the mercy of the Devil? ) *eh!* }

Archbishop Trench has, as usual, a singular way of overcoming the difficulty. He says:—“So long as we abide in the region of nature, miraculous and improbable, miraculous and incredible may be admitted as convertible terms. But once lift up the whole discussion into a higher region, once acknowledge something higher than nature, a kingdom of God, and men the intended denizens of it, and the whole argument loses its strength and the force of its conclusions. . . . He who already counts it likely that God will interfere for the higher welfare of men, who believes that there is a nobler world-order than that in which we live and move, and that it would be the blessing of blessings for that nobler to intrude into and to make itself felt in the region of this lower, who has found that here in this world we are bound by heavy laws of nature, of sin, of death, which no powers that we now possess can break, yet which must be broken if we are truly to live,—he will not find it hard to believe the great miracle, the coming of the Son of God in the flesh, &c. . . . And as he believes that greatest miracle, so will he believe all other miracles, &c.”<sup>1</sup> In other words, if we already believe the premisses we shall not find it difficult

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 71 f. Archbishop Trench believes that exemp-

to adopt the conclusions—if we already believe the greatest miracle we shall not hesitate to believe the less—if we already believe the dogmas we shall not find it hard to believe the evidence by which they are supposed to be authenticated. As we necessarily do abide in the region of nature, in which Dr. Trench admits that miraculous and incredible are convertible terms, it would seem rather difficult to lift the discussion into the higher region here described without having already abandoned it altogether.

tion from the control of the law of gravitation, &c., is a "lost prerogative" of our race, which we may one day recover. It would be difficult to produce a parallel to his reasoning in modern times. He says: "It has been already observed that the miracle, according to its true idea, is not a violation, nor yet suspension of law, but the incoming of a higher law, as of a spiritual in the midst of natural laws, and the momentary assertion, for that higher law, of the predominance which it was intended to have, and but for man's fall it would always have had, over the lower; and with this a prophetic anticipation of the abiding prevalence which it shall one day recover. Exactly thus was there here" (in the miracle of the Walking on the Sea) "a sign of the lordship of man's will, when that will is in absolute harmony with God's will, over external nature. In regard to this very law of gravitation, a feeble, and for the most part unconsciously possessed, remnant of his power survives to man in the well-attested fact that his body is lighter when he is awake than sleeping; a fact which every nurse who has carried a child can attest. From this we conclude that the human consciousness, as an inner centre, works as an opposing force to the attraction of the earth and the centripetal force of gravity, however unable now to overbear it" (!). Notes on Miracles, p. 292.

*✓ I cannot find the miracle, but I think  
it is a sign of man's will, and the  
power of the will.*

## CHAPTER III.

### REASON IN RELATION TO THE ORDER OF NATURE.

THE argument of those who assert the possibility and reality of miracles generally takes the shape of an attack upon our knowledge of the order of nature. To establish an exception they deny the rule. "Whatever difficulty there is in believing in miracles in general," says Dr. Mozley, who conducts such an attack with unusual force and ability, "arises from the circumstance that they are in contradiction to or unlike the order of nature. To estimate the force of this difficulty, then, we must first understand what kind of belief it is which we have in the order of nature; for the weight of the objection to the miraculous must depend on the nature of the belief to which the miraculous is opposed."<sup>1</sup> Dr. Mozley defines the meaning of the phrase, "order of nature" as the *connection* of that part of the order of nature of which we are ignorant with that part of it which we know, the former being expected to be such and such, *because* the latter is. But how do we justify this expectation of *likeness*?<sup>2</sup> We cannot do so, and all our arguments are mere statements of the belief itself, he affirms, and not reasons to account for it. It may be said, *e.g.*, that when a fact of nature has gone on repeating itself a certain time, such repetition shows that there is a permanent

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 33.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 34.

cause at work, and that a permanent cause produces permanently recurring effects. But what is there to show the existence of a permanent cause? Nothing. The effects which have taken place show a cause at work to the extent of these effects, but not further. That this cause is of a more permanent nature we have no evidence. Why then do we expect the further continuance of these effects.<sup>1</sup> We can only say: because we believe the future will be like the past. After a physical phenomenon has even occurred every day for years we have nothing but the past repetition to justify our certain expectation of its future repetition.<sup>2</sup> Do we think it giving a reason for our confidence in the future to say that, though no man has had experience of what *is* future, every man has had experience of what *was* future? It is true that what *is* future becomes at every step of our advance what *was* future, but that which is now *still* future is not the least altered by that circumstance; it is as invisible, as unknown, and as unexplored as if it were the very beginning and the very starting-point of nature. At this starting-point of nature what would a man know of its future course? Nothing. At this moment he *knows* no more.<sup>3</sup> What ground of reason, then, can we assign for our expectation that any part of the course of nature will the *next* moment be like what it has been up to *this* moment, *i.e.*, for our belief in the uniformity of nature? None. It is without a reason. It rests upon no rational ground, and can be traced to no rational principle.<sup>4</sup> The belief in the order of nature being thus an "unintelligent impulse" of which we cannot give any rational account, Dr. Mozley con-

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 36.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 37.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 38.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 39.

cludes, the ground is gone upon which it could be maintained that miracles, as opposed to the order of nature, were opposed to reason. A miracle in being opposed to our experience is not only not opposed to necessary reasoning, but to any reasoning.<sup>1</sup> We need not further follow the Bampton Lecturer, as with clearness and ability he applies this reasoning to the argument of "Experience," until he pauses triumphantly to exclaim: "Thus step by step has philosophy loosened the connection of the order of nature with the ground of reason, befriending, in exact proportion as it has done this, the principle of miracles."<sup>2</sup>

Dr. Mozley, however, acknowledges that the principle of argument from experience is that "which makes human life practicable; which utilizes all our knowledge; which makes the past anything more than an irrelevant picture to us; for of what use is the experience of the past to us unless we believe the future will be like it?"<sup>3</sup> Our knowledge in all things is relative, and there are sharp and narrow limits to human thought. It is therefore evident that, in the absence of absolute knowledge, our belief must be accorded to that of which we have more full cognizance rather than to that which is contradicted by all that we do know. It may be "irrational" to feel entire confidence that the sun will "rise" to-morrow, or that the moon will continue to wax and wane as in the past, but we shall without doubt retain this belief, and reject any assertion, however positive, that the earth will stand still to-morrow, or that it did so some thousands of years ago. Evidence must take its relative place in the finite scale of knowledge and thought,

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 48.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 49.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 58.

and if we do not absolutely know anything whatever, so long as one thing is more fully established than another, we must hold to that which rests upon the more certain basis. Our belief in the invariability of the order of nature, therefore, being based upon more certain grounds than any other human opinion, we must of necessity refuse credence to a statement supported by infinitely less complete testimony, and contradicted by universal experience, that phenomena subversive of that order occurred many years ago, or we must cease to believe anything at all. If belief based upon unvarying experience be irrational, how much more irrational must belief be which is opposed to that experience. According to Dr. Mozley, it is quite irrational to believe that a stone dropped from the hand, for instance, will fall to the ground. It is true that all the stones we ourselves have ever dropped, or seen dropped, have so fallen, and equally true that all stones so dropped as far back as historic records, and those still more authentic and ancient records of earth's crust itself go, have done the same, but that does not justify our belief, upon any grounds of reason, that the next stone we drop will do so. If we be told, however, that upon one occasion a stone so dropped, instead of falling to the ground, rose up into the air and continued there, we have only two courses open to us: either to disbelieve the fact, and attribute the statement to error of observation, or to reduce the past to a mere irrelevant picture, and the mind to a blank page equally devoid of all belief and of all intelligent reasoning. It is impossible to do the latter, and it is equally impossible not to do the former.

Dr. Mozley's argument, however, is fatal to his own cause. It is admitted that miracles, "or visible suspen-

The fact is that it is not the future experience that is contradicted by miracles but the past.

X

sions of the order of nature,"<sup>1</sup> cannot have any evidential force unless they be supernatural, and out of the natural sequence of ordinary phenomena. Now, unless there be an actual order of nature, how can there be any exception to it? If our belief in it be not based upon any ground of reason,—as Dr. Mozley maintains, in order to assert that miracles or visible suspensions of that order are not contrary to reason,—how can it be asserted that miracles are supernatural? If we have no rational ground for believing that the future will be like the past, what rational ground can we have for thinking that anything which happens is exceptional, and out of the common course of nature? Because it has not happened before? That is no reason whatever; because the fact that a thing has happened ten millions of times is no rational justification of our expectation that it will happen again. If the reverse of that which had happened previously took place on the ten million and first time we should have no rational ground for surprise, and no reason for affirming that it did not occur in the most natural manner. Because we cannot explain its cause? We cannot explain the cause of anything. Our belief that there is any permanent cause is a mere unintelligent impulse. We can only say that there is a cause sufficient to produce an isolated effect, but we do not know the nature of that cause, and it is a mere irrational instinct to suppose that any cause produces continuous effects, or is more than momentary. A miracle, consequently, becomes a mere isolated effect from an unknown cause, in the midst of other merely isolated phenomena from unknown causes, and it is as irrational to wonder at the occurrence of what is new, as to expect the recur-

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 6.

rence of what is old. In fact, an order of nature is at  
 once necessary, and fatal, to miracles. If there be no  
 order of nature, miracles cannot be considered super-  
 natural occurrences, and have no evidential value; if  
 there be an order of nature, the evidence for its immu-  
 tability must consequently exceed the evidence for these  
 isolated deviations from it. If we are unable rationally  
 to form expectations of the future from unvarying expe-  
 rience in the past, it is still more irrational to call that  
 supernatural which is merely different from our past  
 experience. Take, for instance, the case of supposed  
 exemption from the action of the law of gravitation,  
 which Archbishop Trench calls "a lost prerogative of  
 our race:"<sup>1</sup> we cannot rationally affirm that next week  
 we may not be able to walk on the sea, or ascend bodily  
 into the air. To deny this because we have not hitherto  
 been able to do so is unreasonable; for, as Dr. Mozley  
 maintains, it is a mere irrational impulse which expects  
 that which has hitherto happened, when we have made  
 such attempts, to happen again next week. If we  
 cannot rationally deny the possibility, however, that we  
 may be able at some future time to walk on the sea or  
 ascend into the air, the statement that these phenomena  
 have already occurred loses all its force, and such occur-  
 rences cease to be in any way supernatural. If, on the  
 other hand, it would be irrational to affirm that we may  
 next week become exempt from the operation of the  
 law of gravitation, it can only be so by the admission  
 that unvarying experience forbids the entertainment of  
 such a hypothesis, and in that case it equally forbids  
 belief in the statement that such acts ever actually took  
 place. If we deny the future possibility on any ground

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 32 f., p. 291 f.

of reason, we admit that we have grounds of reason for expecting the future to be like the past, and therefore contradict Dr. Mozley's conclusion ; and if we cannot deny it upon any ground of reason, we extinguish the claim of such occurrences in the past to any supernatural character. Any argument which could destroy faith in the order of nature would be equally destructive to miracles. If we have no right to believe in a rule, there can be no right to speak of exceptions. The result in any case is this, that whether the principle of the order of nature be established or refuted, the supernatural pretensions of miracles are disallowed.

## 2.

THROUGHOUT the whole of his argument against the rationality of belief in the order of nature, the rigorous precision which Dr. Mozley unrelentingly demands from his antagonists is remarkable. They are not permitted to deviate by a hair's breadth from the line of strict logic, and the most absolute exactness of demonstration is required. Anything like an assumption or argument from analogy is excluded ; induction is allowed to add no reason to bare and isolated facts ; and the belief that the sun will rise to-morrow morning is, with pitiless severity, written down as mere unintelligent impulse. Belief in the return of day, based upon the unvarying experience of all past time, is declared to be without any ground of reason. We find anything but fault with strictness of argument ; but it is fair that equal precision should be observed by those who assert miracles, and that assumption and inaccuracy should be excluded.

Hitherto, as we have frequently pointed out, we have met with very little or nothing but assumption in support of miracles; but, encouraged by the inflexible spirit of Dr. Mozley's attack upon the argument from experience, we may look for similar precision from himself.

Proceeding, however, from his argument against the rationality of belief in the order of nature to his more direct argument for miracles, we are astonished to find a total abandonment of the rigorous exactness imposed upon his antagonists; and a complete relapse into assumptions. Dr. Mozley does not conceal the fact. "The peculiarity of the argument of miracles," he frankly admits, "is, that it begins and ends with an assumption; I mean relatively to that argument."<sup>1</sup> Such an argument is no argument at all; it is a mere *petitio principii*, incapable of proving anything. The nature of the assumptions obviously does not in the slightest degree affect this conclusion. It is true that the statement of the particular assumptions may constitute

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 94. In a lecture on the Miraculous Testimony to Christianity, one of a course delivered at the request of the Christian Evidence Society, and published under the title of "Modern Scepticism," Dr. Stoughton, with a happy unconsciousness of the nature of the arguments he is using, after describing the reasoning which he puts into the mouths of those who deny miracles as mere assumption, then triumphantly puts his own case: "But when all assumptions are denied, the whole question presents another aspect. (Given the fundamental distinction between things physical and things moral; given the higher nature of man, the personal existence of God, a moral element in the Divine rule, the immortality of the human soul, and the present vicinity of invisible spiritual realms; and immediately, miracles wrought by the Divine will for men's moral welfare are completely removed out of the sphere of the impossible,)" p. 193 (6th edition). Dr. Stoughton does not appear to have the slightest suspicion that there is any assumption at all amongst his points; but the whole lecture betrays the most astonishing confusion of ideas regarding the subject with which he is dealing.

an appeal to belief otherwise derived, and evolve feelings which may render the calm exercise of judgment more difficult, but the fact remains absolute, that an argument which "begins and ends with an assumption" is totally impotent. It remains an assumption, and is not an argument at all.

Notwithstanding this unfortunate and disqualifying "peculiarity" we may examine the argument. It is as follows: "We assume the existence of a Personal Deity prior to the proof of miracles in the religious sense; but with this assumption the question of miracles is at an end; because such a Being has necessarily the power to suspend those laws of nature which He has Himself enacted."<sup>1</sup> The "question of miracles," which Dr. Mozley here asserts to be at an end on the assumption of a "Personal Deity," is of course merely that of the *possibility* of miracles; but it is obvious that, even with the precise definition of Deity which is assumed, instead of the real "question" being at an end, it only commences. The power to suspend the laws of nature being assumed, the will to suspend them has to be demonstrated, and the actual occurrence of any such suspension, which, it has already been shown, is contrary to reason. It is absurd to assume what is beyond reason to account for what is opposed to reason. The subject is, moreover, complicated by the occurrence of Satanic as well as Divine suspensions of the order of nature, and by the necessity of assuming a Personal Devil as well as a Personal Deity, and his power to usurp that control over the laws of nature, which is assumed as the prerogative of the Deity, and to suspend them in direct opposition to God. The express ascription of miracles to the

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 94.

special intervention of a Personal God is also, as we have seen, excluded by the Scriptural admission that there are other supernatural beings capable of performing them. Even Dr. Newman has recognized this, and, in a passage already quoted, he says : "For the cogency of the argument from Miracles depends on the assumption, that interruptions in the course of nature must ultimately proceed from God ; which is not true, if they may be effected by other beings without His sanction."<sup>1</sup> The first assumption, in fact, leads to nothing but assumptions connected with the unseen, unknown and supernatural, which are beyond the limits of reason.

Dr. Mozley is well aware that his assumption of a "Personal" Deity is not susceptible of proof ;<sup>2</sup> indeed, this is admitted in the statement that the definition is an "assumption." He quotes the obvious reply which must be made regarding this assumption :—"Everybody must collect from the harmony of the physical universe the existence of a God, but in acknowledging a God, we do not thereby acknowledge this peculiar doctrinal conception of a God. We see in the structure of nature a mind—a universal mind—but still a mind which only operates and expresses itself by law. Nature only does and only can inform us of mind *in* nature, the partner and correlative of organized matter. Nature, therefore, can speak to the existence of a God in this sense, and

<sup>1</sup> Two Essays, &c., p. 50.

<sup>2</sup> Canon Westcott frankly admits this. ("Christianity, therefore," he says, "as the absolute religion of man assumes as its foundation the existence of an Infinite Personal God and a finite human will. This antithesis is assumed and not proved. No arguments can establish it. It is a primary intuition and not a deduction. It is capable of illustration from what we observe around us ; but if either term is denied no reasoning can establish its truth.") The Gospel of the Resurrection, 3rd ed., 1874, p. 19 f.

Law an inevitable sequence so far as observed

can speak to the omnipotence of God in a sense coinciding with the actual facts of nature; but in no other sense does nature witness to the existence of an Omnipotent Supreme Being. Of a universal Mind out of nature, nature says nothing, and of an Omnipotence which does not possess an inherent limit in nature, she says nothing either. And, therefore, that conception of a Supreme Being which represents him as a Spirit independent of the physical universe, and able from a standing-place external to nature to interrupt its order, is a conception of God for which we must go elsewhere. That conception is obtained from revelation which is asserted to be proved by miracles. But that being the case, this doctrine of Theism rests itself upon miracles, and, therefore, miracles cannot rest upon this doctrine of Theism."<sup>1</sup> With his usual fairness, Dr. Mozley, while questioning the correctness of the premiss of this argument, admits that, if established, the consequence stated would follow, "and more, for miracles being thrown back upon the same ground on which Theism is, the whole evidence of revelation becomes a vicious circle, and the fabric is left suspended in space, revelation resting on miracles and miracles resting on revelation."<sup>2</sup> He not only recognizes, however, that the conception of a "Personal" Deity cannot be proved, but he distinctly confesses that it was obtained from revelation,<sup>3</sup> and from nowhere else, and these necessary admissions obviously establish the correctness of the premiss, and involve the consequence pointed out, that the evidence of revelation is a mere vicious circle. Dr. Mozley attempts to argue that, although the idea

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures for 1865, p. 95 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 96.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 97 f.

was first obtained through this channel, "the truth once possessed is seen to rest upon grounds of natural reason."<sup>1</sup> Why, then, does he call it an assumption? The argument by which he seeks to show that the conception is seen to rest upon grounds of natural reason is: "We naturally attribute to the design of a Personal Being a contrivance which is directed to the existence of a Personal Being . . . From personality at one end I infer personality at the other." Dr. Mozley's own sense of the weakness of his argument, however, and his natural honesty of mind oblige him continually to confess the absence of evidence. A few paragraphs further on he admits:—"Not, however, that the existence of a God is so clearly seen by reason as to dispense with faith;"<sup>2</sup> but he endeavours to convince us that faith is reason, only reason acting under peculiar circumstances: when reason draws conclusions which are not backed by experience, reason is then called faith.<sup>3</sup> The issue of the argument, he contends, is so amazing, that if we do not tremble for its safety it must be on account of a practical principle, which makes us confide and trust in reasons, and that principle is faith. We are not aware that conviction can be arrived at regarding any matter otherwise than by confidence in the correctness of the reasons, and what Dr. Mozley really means by faith, here, is confidence and trust in a conclusion for which there are no reasons.

It is almost incredible that the same person who had just been denying grounds of reason to conclusions from unvarying experience, and excluding from them the results of inductive reasoning—who had denounced as

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 99.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 100.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 101.

unintelligent impulse and irrational instinct the faith that the sun, which has risen without fail every morning since time began, will rise again to-morrow, could thus argue. In fact, from the very commencement of the direct plea for miracles, calm logical reasoning is abandoned, and the argument becomes entirely *ad hominem*. Mere feeling is substituted for thought, and in the inability to be precise and logical, the lecturer appeals <sup>x</sup> to the generally prevailing inaccuracy of thought.<sup>1</sup> "Faith, then," he concludes, "is unverified reason; reason which has not yet received the verification of the final test, but is still expectant." In science this, at the best, would be called mere "hypothesis," but accuracy can scarcely be expected where the argument continues: "Indeed, does not our heart bear witness to the fact that to believe in a God"—*i. e.*, a Personal God—"is an exercise of faith?" &c.<sup>2</sup> \

It does not help Dr. Mozley that Butler, Paley, and all other divines have equally been obliged to commence with the same assumption; and, indeed, as we have already remarked, Dr. Mozley honestly admits the difficulty of the case, and while naturally making the most of his own views, he does not disguise the insecurity of the position. He deprecates that school which maintains that any average man, taken out of a crowd, who has sufficient common sense to manage his own affairs, is a fit judge, and such a judge as was originally contemplated, of the Christian evidences;<sup>3</sup> and he says: "It is not, indeed, consistent with truth, nor would it conduce to the real defence of Christianity, to underrate the difficulties of the Christian evidence; <sup>↑</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 101 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 104.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 140.

or to disguise this characteristic of it, that the very facts which constitute the evidence of revelation have to be accepted by an act of faith themselves, before they can operate as a proof of that further truth.”<sup>1</sup> Such evidence is manifestly worthless. After all his assumptions, Dr. Mozley is reduced to the necessity of pleading: “A probable fact is a probable evidence. I may, therefore, use a miracle as evidence of a revelation, though I have only probable evidence for the miracle.”<sup>2</sup> The probability of the miracle, however, is precisely what is denied, as opposed to reason and experience, and incompatible with the order of nature. A cause is, indeed, weak when so able an advocate is reduced to such reasoning.

The deduction which is drawn from the assumption of a “Personal” Deity is, as we have seen, merely the possibility of miracles. “Paley’s criticism,” said the late Dean of St. Paul’s, “is, after all, the true one—‘once believe that there is a God, and miracles are not incredible.’”<sup>3</sup> The assumption, therefore, although of vital importance in the event of its rejection, does not very materially advance the cause of miracles if established. We have already seen that the assumption is avowedly incapable of proof, but it may be well to examine it a little more closely in connection with the inferences supposed to be derivable from it. We must, however, in doing so carefully avoid being led into a metaphysical argument, which would be foreign to the purpose of this inquiry.

In his Bampton Lectures on “The Limit of Religious

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 138 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 138.

<sup>3</sup> *Mansel, Aids to Faith*, p. 30.

Thought," delivered in 1858, Dr. Mansel, the very able editor and disciple of Sir William Hamilton, discussed this subject with great minuteness, and although we cannot pretend here to follow him through the whole of his singular argument—a theological application of Sir William Hamilton's philosophy—we must sufficiently represent it. Dr. Mansel argues: We are absolutely incapable of conceiving or proving the existence of God as he is; and so far is human reason from being able to construct a theology independent of revelation that it cannot even read the alphabet out of which that theology must be formed.<sup>1</sup> We are compelled, by the constitution of our minds, to believe in the existence of an Absolute and Infinite Being; but the instant we attempt to analyse, we are involved in inextricable confusion.<sup>2</sup> Our moral consciousness demands that we should conceive him as a Personality, but personality, as we conceive it, is essentially a limitation; to speak of an Absolute and Infinite Person is simply to use language to which no mode of human thought can possibly attach itself.<sup>3</sup> This amounts simply to an admission that our knowledge of God does not satisfy the conditions of speculative

<sup>1</sup> *Mansel*, Bampton Lectures, 1858 (Murray, 4th ed., 1859), p. 40.

<sup>2</sup> We do not interrupt the course of Dr. Mansel's argument to contradict anything.

<sup>3</sup> *Mansel*, Bampton Lectures, 1858 (Murray, 4th ed., 1859), p. 56. Canon Westcott says upon this point: "But though we appeal to the individual consciousness for the recognition of the truth of the assumptions which have been made, the language in which one term of the antithesis is expressed requires explanation. We speak of God as Infinite and Personal. The epithets involve a contradiction, and yet they are both necessary. / In fact the only approximately adequate conception which we can form of a Divine Being is under the form of a contradiction.) For us personality is only the name for special limitation exerting itself through will; and will itself implies the idea of resistance. But as applied to GOD the notions of limitation and resistance are excluded by the antithetic term infinite." *The Gospel of the Resurrection*, 1874, p. 21.

philosophy, and is incapable of reduction to an ultimate and absolute truth.<sup>1</sup> It is, therefore, reasonable that we should expect to find that the revealed manifestation of the Divine nature and attributes should likewise carry the marks of subordination to some higher truth, of which it indicates the existence, but does not make known the substance ; and that our apprehension of the revealed Deity should involve mysteries inscrutable, and doubts insoluble by our present faculties, while at the same time it inculcates the true spirit in which doubt should be dealt with by warning us that our knowledge of God, though revealed by himself, is revealed in relation to human faculties, and subject to the limitations and imperfections inseparable from the constitution of the human mind.<sup>2</sup> We need not, of course, point out that the reality of revelation is here assumed. Elsewhere, Dr. Mansel maintains that philosophy, by its own incongruities, has no claim to be accepted as a competent witness ; and, on the other hand, human personality cannot be assumed as an exact copy of the Divine, but only as that which is most nearly analogous to it among finite things.<sup>3</sup> As we are, therefore, incapable on the one hand of a clear conception of the Divine Being, and have only analogy to guide us in conceiving his attributes, we have no criterion of religious truth or falsehood, enabling us to judge of the ways of God, represented by revelation,<sup>4</sup> and have no right to judge of his

<sup>1</sup> *Mansel*, Bampton Lectures, 1858 (Murray, 4th ed., 1859), p. 94 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.* p. 95.

<sup>3</sup> *Mansel*, *The Philosophy of the Conditioned* (Strahan, 1866), p. 143 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 144 f. In another place Dean Mansel says : " Ideas and images which do not represent God as He is may nevertheless represent Him as it is our duty to regard Him. They are not in themselves true ; but we must nevertheless believe and act as if they were true. / A finite mind can form no conception of an Infinite Being which shall be specu-

justice, or mercy, or goodness, by the standard of human morality.

It is impossible to conceive an argument more vicious, or more obviously warped to favour already accepted conclusions of revelation:—As finite beings we are not only incapable of proving the existence of God, but even of conceiving him as he is; therefore we may conceive him as he is not. To attribute personality to him is a limitation totally incompatible with the idea of an Absolute and Infinite Being, in which “we are compelled by the constitution of our minds to believe;”, and to speak of him as a personality is “to use language to which no mode of human thought can possibly attach itself;” but, nevertheless, to satisfy supposed demands of our moral consciousness, we are to conceive him as a personality. Although we must define the Supreme Being as a personality to satisfy our moral consciousness, we must not, we are told, make the same moral consciousness the criterion of the attributes of that personality. We must not suppose him to be endowed, for instance, with the perfection of morality according to our ideas of it; but, on the contrary, we must hold that his moral perfections are at best only analogous, and often contradictory, to our standard of morality.<sup>1</sup> As soon as we conceive a Personal Deity to satisfy our moral consciousness, we have to abandon the personality which

*latirely* true, for it must represent the Infinite under finite forms; nevertheless a conception which is *speculatively* untrue may be *regulatively* true. A regulative truth is thus designed not to satisfy our reason, but to guide our practice; not to tell us what God is, but how He wills that we should think of Him.” Man’s conception of Eternity; an examination of Mr. Maurice’s Theory of a Fixed State out of Time, in a letter to the Rev. L. T. Bernays, by Rev. H. I. Mansel, B.D., p. 9 f.

<sup>1</sup> *Mansel, Philosophy of the Conditioned*, p. 143 f.; *Bampton Lectures*, 1858, pp. 131—175, pp. 91—130.

satisfies that consciousness, in order to accept the characteristics of a supposed Revelation, to reconcile certain statements of which we must admit that we have no criterion of truth or falsehood enabling us to judge of the ways of God.

Now, in reference to the assumption of a Personal Deity as a preliminary to the proof of miracles, it must be clearly remembered that the peculiarities of the revelation which miracles are to authenticate cannot have any weight. Antecedently, then, it is admitted that personality is a limitation which is absolutely excluded by the ideas of the Deity, which, it is asserted, the constitution of our minds compels us to form. It cannot, therefore, be rationally assumed. To admit that such a conception is false, and then to base conclusions upon it, as though it were true, is absurd. It is child's play to satisfy our feeling and imagination by the conscious sacrifice of our reason. Moreover, Dr. Mansel admits that the conception of a Personal Deity is really derived from the revelation, which has to be rendered credible by miracles; therefore the consequence already pointed out ensues, that the assumption cannot be used to prove miracles. "It must be allowed that it is not through reasoning that men obtain the first intimation of their relation to the Deity; and that, had they been left to the guidance of their intellectual faculties alone, it is possible that no such intimation might have taken place; or at best, that it would have been but as one guess, out of many equally plausible and equally natural."<sup>1</sup> The vicious circle of the argument is here again apparent, and the singular reasoning by which the late Dean of St. Paul's seeks to drive us into an

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1858, p. 68.

acceptance of Revelation is really the strongest argument against it. The impossibility of conceiving God as he is, which is rightly insisted upon, instead of being a reason for assuming his personality, or for accepting Jewish conceptions of him, totally excludes such an assumption.

As we are avowedly incapable of adequately conceiving the nature of the Supreme Being,<sup>1</sup> and too naturally fall into anthropomorphic modes of representing him to ourselves, surely we should carefully avoid forming views of God, from foregone conclusions, which are opposed to our highest moral sense, and contradictory to the teaching of the universe and its laws.<sup>2</sup> The instant we abandon the only true guides we have—Reason and Moral Consciousness—we must inevitably go astray, and frame for ourselves a God out of mere fancy, of whom it can neither be said that we are made in his image nor even he in ours. Putting aside, then, as we must do, all foregone conclusions, it is perfectly certain that in our admitted incompetency to form any conception of the Supreme Being as he is, we have only two alternatives: 1. To renounce all attempts to gain fuller knowledge of him, and to rest in the mere belief that there is a Supreme Being of whose nature we cannot know anything,—and this would exclude the pos-

<sup>1</sup> Sir William Hamilton says: "True therefore are the declarations of a pious philosophy. 'A God understood would be no God at all.' 'To think that God is as we can think Him to be is blasphemy.' The Divinity, in a certain sense, is revealed; in a certain sense is concealed: He is at once known and unknown. But the last and highest consecration of all true religion must be an altar—'Ἀγνώστῳ Θεῷ—'To the unknown and unknowable God.'" *Discussions on Philosophy*, 3rd ed., Blackwood and Sons, 1866, p. 15, note.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Kant*, Religion innerhalb der Grenzen der blossen Vernunft. *Sämmtl. Werke*, ed. Hartenstein, 1867, vi. p. 267 ff.

sibility of the assumption which the argument for miracles requires ; or, 2. To gain such knowledge of the Supreme Being as we may from study of the order of nature, aided by our highest perceptions of morality,—and this would equally destroy the argument. It is obvious that either alternative is fatal to miracles. In order, however, to account for certain occurrences which are reported to have taken place, but which they do not understand and are unable to explain, theologians adopt an assumption, which dwarfs the Supreme Being, of whom they admit that we cannot even form a conception, into an arbitrary Personal God constantly interfering with the order of nature.<sup>1</sup>

This “great religious assumption” is not suggested by any antecedent considerations, but is required to account for miracles, and is derived from the very Revelation which miracles are to attest. “In nature and from nature,” to quote words of Professor Baden Powell, “by science and by reason, we neither have nor can possibly have any evidence of a *Deity working* miracles ;—for that we must go out of nature and beyond science. If we could have any such evidence *from nature*, it could only prove extraordinary *natural* effects, which would

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Mozley, however, does not overlook the peculiarities of the case, and he condemns the class of writers who speak of miracles as though they stood on a par with other events as matters of credit, and were accepted upon the same testimony as ordinary facts of history. Against such a theory he says : “ But this is to forget the important point that a miracle is on one side of it not a fact of this world, but of the invisible world ; the Divine interposition in it being a supernatural and mysterious act : that therefore the evidence for a miracle does not stand exactly on the same ground as the evidence of the witness box, which only appeals to our common sense as men of the world and actors in ordinary life ; but that it requires a great religious assumption in our minds to begin with, without which no testimony in the case can avail.” Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 128.

not be *miracles* in the old theological sense, as isolated, unrelated, and uncaused ; whereas no *physical* fact can be conceived as unique, or without analogy and relation to others, and to the whole system of natural causes.”<sup>1</sup> Being, therefore, limited to Reason for any feeble conception of the Divine Being of which we may be capable, and Reason being totally opposed to the idea of an order of nature so imperfect as to require or permit repeated interference, and rejecting the supposition of arbitrary suspensions of Law, such a conception of the Deity as is proposed by theologians must be pronounced irrational and derogatory to the wisdom and perfection which we recognize in the invariable order of nature. It is impossible for us to conceive the Supreme Being acting otherwise than we actually see in nature, and if we recognize in the universe the operation of his infinite wisdom and power, it is in the immutable order and regularity of all phenomena, and in the eternal prevalence of Law, that we see their highest manifestation. This is no conception based merely upon observation of law and order in the material world, as Dr. Mansel insinuates,<sup>2</sup> but it is likewise the result of the highest exercise of mind. Dr. Mansel “does not hesitate” to affirm with Sir William Hamilton “that the class of phenomena which requires that kind of cause we denominate a Deity is exclusively given in the phenomena of mind ; that the phenomena of matter, taken by themselves, do not warrant any inference to the existence of a God.”<sup>3</sup> After declaring the Supreme Being, from every point of view, incon-

<sup>1</sup> Study of the Evidences of Christianity, “Essays and Reviews,” 9th ed. p. 141 f.

<sup>2</sup> Aids to Faith, p. 25.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 25. Cf. Hamilton, Lectures on Metaphysics, vol. i. p. 26.

ceivable by our finite minds, it is singular to find him thrusting upon us, in consequence, a conception of that Being which almost makes us exclaim with Bacon: "It were better to have no opinion of God at all than such an opinion as is unworthy of him; for the one is unbelief, the other is contumely."<sup>1</sup> Dr. Mansel asks: "Is matter or mind the truer image of God?"<sup>2</sup> But both matter and mind unite in repudiating so unworthy a conception of him, and in rejecting the idea of suspensions of Law. In the words of Spinoza: "From miracles we can neither infer the nature, the existence, nor the providence of God, but, on the contrary, these may be much better comprehended from the fixed and immutable order of nature;"<sup>3</sup> indeed, as he adds, miracles, as contrary to the order of nature, would rather lead us to doubt the existence of God.<sup>4</sup>

Six centuries before our era, a noble thinker, Xenophanes of Colophon, whose pure mind soared far above the base anthropomorphic mythologies of Homer and Hesiod, and anticipated some of the highest results of the Platonic philosophy, finely said:—

"There is one God supreme over all gods, diviner than mortals,  
Whose form is not like unto man's, and as unlike his nature;

But vain mortals imagine that gods like themselves are begotten,  
With human sensations, and voice, and corporeal members;"<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Bacon's *Essays*, xvii. ed. Whately, p. 183.

<sup>2</sup> *Aids to Faith*, p. 25.

<sup>3</sup> "Nos ex miraculis nec Dei essentiam nec existentiam, nec providentiam posse intelligere, sed contra hæc longe melius percipi ex fixo atque immutabili naturæ ordine." *Tract. Theolog. Polit. c. vi. § 16*, ed. Tauchnitz.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, vi. § 19.

<sup>5</sup> Clement of Alexandria, who quotes the whole of this passage from Xenophanes, makes a separation here from the succeeding lines, by καὶ

( So if oxen or lions had hands and could work in man's fashion,  
And trace out with chisel or brush their conception of Godhead,  
Then would horses depict gods like horses, and oxen like oxen,  
Each kind the Divine with its own form and nature endowing." <sup>1</sup>

He illustrates this profound observation by pointing out that the Ethiopians represent their deities as black with flat noses, while the Thracians make them blue-eyed with ruddy complexions, and, similarly, the Medes and the Persians and Egyptians portray their gods like themselves.<sup>2</sup> The Jewish idea of God was equally anthropomorphic; but their highest conception was certainly that which the least resembled themselves, and which described the Almighty as "without variableness or shadow of turning," and as giving a law to the universe which shall not be broken.<sup>3</sup>

πάλω; but the sense is evidently continuous, and the fragments are generally united. Cf. *Clem. Al. Strom.*, v. 14, § 110.

<sup>1</sup> Εἰς θεὸς ἔν τε θεοῖσι καὶ ἀνθρώποισι μέγιστος,  
Οὐ τι δέμας θνητοῖσιν ὁμοῖος οὐδὲ νόημα.

Ἄλλὰ βροτοὶ δοκέουσι θεοὺς γεννᾶσθαι·  
τὴν σφετέρην δ' ἐσθῆτα ἔχειν, φωνὴν τε δέμας τε.\*  
Ἄλλ' εἶποι χεῖρας εἶχον, βόες, ἢ λέοντες,  
Ἡ γράψαι χεῖρεςσι, καὶ ἔργα τελεῖν ἄπερ ἄνδρες·  
Ἴπποι μὲν θ' ἵπποισι, βόες δὲ τε βουσὶν ὁμοῖοι,  
καὶ κε θεῶν ἰδέας ἔγραφον, καὶ σώματ' ἐποίουν  
τοιαῦθ' οἷον περ καὶ τοὶ δέμας εἶχον ὁμοῖον.

<sup>2</sup> Τοὺς μὲν γὰρ Αἰθίοπας, μέλανας καὶ σιμούς γράφειν ἔφησε τοὺς οἰκείους θεοὺς, ὅποιοι δὲ καὶ αὐτοὶ πεφύκασιν· τοὺς δὲ γε Θρᾶκας, γλανκοὺς τε καὶ ἐρυθροὺς καὶ μὲν τοὶ καὶ Μήδους, καὶ Πέρσας σφίσιν αὐτοῖς εἰκότας· καὶ Αἰγυπτίους ὡσαύτως αὐτοῖς διαμορφοῦν πρὸς τὴν οἰκείαν μορφήν.

<sup>3</sup> Ps. cxlviii.

\* Theodoret gives a different version of these two lines, not unsupported by others.

Ἄλλ' οἱ βροτοὶ δοκοῦσι γεννᾶσθαι θεοὺς,  
καὶ ἴσῃν αἴσθησιν τ' ἔχειν, φωνὴν τε δέμας τε.

We have preferred the reading of the latter line, and have translated accordingly, instead of adopting *ἐσθῆτα*.



## 3.

NONE of the arguments with which we have yet met have succeeded in making miracles in the least degree antecedently credible. On the contrary they have been based upon mere assumptions incapable of proof and devoid of probability. On the other hand there are the strongest reasons for affirming that such phenomena are antecedently incredible. Dr. Mozley's attack on the argument from experience which we discussed in the first part of this chapter, and which of course was chiefly directed against Hume's celebrated essay, never seriously grappled the doctrine at all. The principle which opposes itself to belief in miracles is very simple. (Whatever is contradictory to universal and invariable experience is antecedently incredible, and as that sequence of phenomena which is called the order of nature is established and in accordance with universal experience, miracles or alleged violations of that order are antecedently incredible. The preponderance of evidence for the invariability of the order of nature, in fact, is so enormous that it is impossible to credit the reality of such variations from it, and reason and experience concur in attributing the ascription of a miraculous character to any actual occurrences which may have been witnessed to imperfect observation, mistaken inference or some other of the numerous sources of error.) (Any allegation of the interference of a new and supernatural agent, upon such an occasion, to account for results, in contradiction of the known sequence of cause and effect, is excluded by the very same principle, for invariable experience being as opposed to the assertion that such interference ever takes

place as it is to the occurrence of miraculous phenomena, the allegation is necessarily disbelieved.)

Apologists find it much more convenient to evade the simple but effective arguments of Hume than to answer them, and where it is possible they dismiss them with a sneer, and hasten on to less dangerous ground. For instance, a recent Hulsean Lecturer, arguing the antecedent credibility of the miraculous, makes the following remarks: "Now, as regards the inadequacy of testimony to establish a miracle, modern scepticism has not advanced one single step beyond the blank assertion. And it is astonishing that this assertion should still be considered cogent, when its logical consistency has been shattered to pieces by a host of writers as well sceptical as Christian (Mill's *Logic*, ii., 157—160). For, as the greatest of our living logicians has remarked, the supposed recondite and dangerous formula of Hume—that it is more probable that testimony should be mistaken than that miracles should be true—reduces itself to the very harmless proposition that anything is incredible which is contrary to a complete induction. It is in fact a flagrant *petitio principii*, used to support a wholly unphilosophical assertion."<sup>1</sup> It is much more astonishing that so able a man as Dr. Farrar could so misunderstand Hume's argument and so misinterpret and mis-state Mr. Mill's remarks upon it. So far from shattering to pieces the logical consistency of Hume's reasoning, Mr. Mill substantially confirms it, and pertinently remarks that "it speaks ill for the state of philosophical speculation on such subjects" that so simple and evident a doctrine should have been accounted a dangerous heresy.

<sup>1</sup> "The Witness of History to Christ," Hulsean Lectures, 1870, by the Rev. F. W. Farrar, M.A., F.B.S., &c., &c., 2nd ed., 1872. p. 26 f.

Mr. Mill states the evident principle, that—"If an alleged fact be in contradiction, not to any number of approximate generalizations, but to a completed generalization grounded on a rigorous induction, it is said to be impossible, and is to be disbelieved totally." Mr. Mill continues: "This last principle, simple and evident as it appears, is the doctrine which, on the occasion of an attempt to apply it to the question of the credibility of miracles, excited so violent a controversy. Hume's celebrated doctrine, that nothing is credible which is contradictory to experience or at variance with laws of nature, is merely this very plain and harmless proposition, that whatever is contradictory to a complete induction is incredible."<sup>1</sup> He then proceeds to meet possible objections: "But does not (it may be asked) the very statement of the proposition imply a contradiction? An alleged fact according to this theory is not to be believed if it contradict a complete induction. But it is essential to the completeness of an induction that it should not contradict any known fact. Is it not, then, a *petitio principii* to say, that the fact ought to be disbelieved because the induction to it is complete? How can we have a right to declare the induction complete, while facts, supported by credible evidence, present themselves in opposition to it? I answer, we have that right whenever the scientific canons of induction give it to us; that is, whenever the induction can be complete. We have it, for example, in a case of causation in which there has been an *experimentum crucis*." It will be remarked that Dr. Farrar adopts Mr. Mill's phraseology in one of the above questions to affirm the reverse of his opinion. Mr. Mill decides that

<sup>1</sup> A System of Logic, by John Stuart Mill, 8th ed., 1872, ii. p. 165.

the proposition is not a *petitio principii*; Dr. Farrar says, as in continuation of his reference to Mr. Mill, that it is a flagrant *petitio principii*. Mr. Mill proceeds to prove his statement, and he naturally argues that, if observations or experiments have been repeated so often, and by so many persons, as to exclude all supposition of error in the observer, a law of nature is established; and so long as this law is received as such, the assertion that on any particular occasion the cause A took place and yet the effect B did not follow, *without any counteracting cause*, must be disbelieved. In fact, as he winds up this part of the argument by saying: "We cannot admit a proposition as a law of nature, and yet believe a fact in real contradiction to it. We must disbelieve the alleged fact, or believe that we were mistaken in admitting the supposed law."<sup>1</sup> Mr. Mill points out however, that, in order that any alleged fact should be contradictory to a law of causation, the allegation must be not simply that the cause existed without being followed by the effect, but that this happened in the absence of any adequate counteracting cause. "Now, in the case of an alleged miracle, the assertion is the exact opposite of this. It is, that the effect was defeated, not in the absence, but in consequence of a counteracting cause, namely, a direct interposition of an act of the will of some being who has power over nature; and in particular of a Being, whose will being assumed to have endowed all the causes with the powers by which they produce their effects, may well be supposed able to counteract them."<sup>2</sup> A miracle, then, is no contradiction to the law of cause and effect; it is merely a new effect supposed to be introduced by the introduction of a new

<sup>1</sup> *Mill, Logic, ii. p. 166 f.*

<sup>2</sup> *Ib., ii. p. 167.*

cause ; “ of the adequacy of that cause *if present*,<sup>1</sup> there can be no doubt ; and the only antecedent improbability which can be ascribed to the miracle is the improbability that any such cause existed.” Mr. Mill then continues, resuming his criticism on Hume’s argument : “ All, therefore, which Hume has made out, and this he must be considered to have made out, is that (at least in the imperfect state of our knowledge of natural agencies, which leaves it always possible that some of the physical antecedents may have been hidden from us,) no evidence can prove a miracle to any one who did not previously believe the existence of a being or beings with supernatural power ; or who believes himself to have full proof that the character of the Being whom he recognizes is inconsistent with his having seen fit to interfere on the occasion in question.” Mr. Mill proceeds to enlarge on this conclusion. “ If we do not already believe in supernatural agencies, no miracle can prove to us their existence. The miracle itself, considered merely as an extraordinary fact, may be satisfactorily certified by our senses or by testimony ; but nothing can ever prove that it is a miracle : there is still another possible hypothesis, that of its being the result of some unknown natural cause : and this possibility cannot be so completely shut out as to leave no alternative but that of admitting the existence and intervention of a being superior to nature. Those, however, who already believe in such a being have two hypotheses to choose from, a supernatural, and an unknown natural agency ; and they have to judge which of the two is the most probable in the particular case. In forming this judgment, an important element of the question will be the

<sup>1</sup> The italics are ours.

conformity of the result to the laws of the supposed agent; that is, to the character of the Deity as they conceive it. But, with the knowledge which we now possess of the general uniformity of the course of nature, religion, following in the wake of science, has been compelled to acknowledge the government of the universe as being on the whole carried on by general laws, and not by special interpositions. To whoever holds this belief, there is a general presumption against any supposition of divine agency not operating through general laws, or, in other words, there is an antecedent improbability in every miracle, which, in order to outweigh it, requires an extraordinary strength of antecedent probability derived from the special circumstances of the case.”<sup>1</sup> Mr. Mill rightly considers that it is not more difficult to estimate this than in the case of other probabilities. “We are seldom, therefore, without the means (when the circumstances of the case are at all known to us) of judging how far it is likely that such a cause should have existed at that time and place without manifesting its presence by some other marks, and (in the case of an unknown cause) without having hitherto manifested its existence in any other instance. According as this circumstance, or the falsity of the testimony, appears more improbable, that is, conflicts with an approximate generalization of a higher order, we believe the testimony, or disbelieve it; with a stronger or weaker degree of conviction, according to the preponderance: at least until we have sifted the matter further.”<sup>2</sup> This is precisely Hume’s argument weakened by the introduction of reservations which have no cogency.

We have wished to avoid interrupting Mr. Mill’s train

<sup>1</sup> *Mill, Logic*, ii. p. 168 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, ii. p. 169.

of reasoning by any remarks of our own, and have, therefore, deferred till now the following observations regarding his criticism on Hume's argument.

In reducing Hume's celebrated doctrine to the very plain proposition that whatever is contradictory to a complete induction is incredible, Mr. Mill in no way diminishes its potency against miracles; and he does not call that proposition "harmless" in reference to its bearing on miracles, as Dr. Farrar evidently supposes, but merely in opposition to the character of a recondite and "dangerous heresy" assigned by dismayed theologians to so obvious and simple a principle. The proposition, however, whilst it reduces Hume's doctrine in the abstract to more technical terms, does not altogether represent his argument. Without asserting that experience is an absolutely infallible guide, Hume maintains that—"A wise man proportions his belief to the evidence. In such conclusions as are founded on an infallible experience, he expects the event with the last degree of assurance, and regards his past experience as a full *proof* of the future existence of that event. In other cases he proceeds with more caution, he weighs the opposite experiments: he considers which side is supported by the greater number of experiments: to that side he inclines with doubt and hesitation; and when at last he fixes his judgment, the evidence exceeds not what we properly call *probability*. All probability, then, supposes an opposition of experiments and observations, where the one side is found to overbalance the other, and to produce a degree of evidence proportioned to the superiority."<sup>1</sup> After elaborating this proposition, Hume

<sup>1</sup> *David Hume, Philosophical Works, Boston and Edinburgh, 1854, iv. p. 126.*

continues : " A miracle is a violation of the laws of nature ; and as a firm and unalterable experience has established these laws, the proof against a miracle, from the very nature of the fact, is as entire as any argument from experience can possibly be imagined. Why is it more than probable that all men must die ; that lead cannot, of itself, remain suspended in the air ; that fire consumes wood, and is extinguished by water ; unless it be that these events are found agreeable to the laws of nature, and there is required a violation of these laws, or, in other words, a miracle, to prevent them ? Nothing is esteemed a miracle if it ever happen in the common course of nature. It is no miracle that a man seemingly in good health should die on a sudden ; because such a kind of death, though more unusual than any other, has yet been frequently observed to happen. But it is a miracle that a dead man should come to life ; because that has never been observed in any age or country. There must, therefore, be an uniform experience against every miraculous event, otherwise the event would not merit that appellation. And as an uniform experience amounts to a proof, there is here a direct and full *proof*, from the nature of the fact, against the existence of any miracle ; nor can such a proof be destroyed, or the miracle rendered credible, but by an opposite proof which is superior. The plain consequence is, (and it is a general maxim worthy of our attention), ' That no testimony is sufficient to establish a miracle, unless the testimony be of such a kind, that its falsehood would be more miraculous than the fact which it endeavours to establish : and even in that case there is a mutual destruction of arguments, and the superior only gives us an assurance suitable to that degree of force which

remains after deducting the inferior.' When any one tells me that he saw a dead man restored to life, I immediately consider with myself whether it be more probable that this person should either deceive or be deceived, or that the fact which he relates should really have happened. I weigh the one miracle against the other; and according to the superiority which I discover, I pronounce my decision, and always reject the greater miracle. If the falsehood of his testimony would be more miraculous than the event which he relates, then, and not till then, can he pretend to command my belief or opinion."<sup>1</sup>

The ground upon which Mr. Mill admits that a miracle may not be contradictory to complete induction is that it is not an assertion that a certain cause was not followed by a certain effect, but an allegation of the interference of an adequate counteracting cause. This does not, however, by his own showing, remove a miracle from the action of Hume's principle, but simply modifies the nature of the antecedent improbability. Mr. Mill qualifies his admission regarding the effect of the alleged counteracting clause, by the all-important words "if present;" for, in order to be valid, the reality of the alleged counteracting cause must be established, which is impossible, therefore the allegations fall to the ground. No one knows better than Mr. Mill that the assertion of a Personal Deity working miracles, upon which a miracle is allowed for a moment to come into court, cannot be proved, and, therefore, that it cannot stand in opposition to complete induction which Hume takes as his standard.

In admitting that Hume has made out, that no evi-

<sup>1</sup> *Hume, Philos. Works, iv. p. 130 ff.*

dence can prove a miracle to any one who does not previously believe in a being of supernatural power willing to work miracles, Mr. Mill concedes everything to Hume, for his only limitation is based upon a supposition of mere personal belief in something which is not capable of proof, and which belief, therefore, is not more valid than any other purely imaginary hypothesis. The belief may seem substantial to the individual entertaining it, but, not being capable of proof, it cannot have weight with others, or in any way affect the value of evidence in the abstract. That mere individual belief, apart from proof, should thus be advanced in limitation of a logical principle, seems to us most unwarranted, and at the most it can only be received as a statement of what practically takes place amongst illogical reasoners.

The assumption of a Personal Deity working miracles is, in fact, excluded by Hume's argument, and, although Mr. Mill apparently overlooks the fact, Hume has not only anticipated but refuted the reasoning which is based upon it. In the succeeding chapter on a Particular Providence and a Future State, he directly disposes of such an assumption, but he does so with equal effect also in the Essay which we are discussing. Taking an imaginary miracle as an illustration, he argues: "Though the being to whom the miracle is ascribed be in this case Almighty, it does not, upon that account, become a whit more probable; since it is impossible for us to know the attributes or actions of such a Being, otherwise than from the experience which we have of his productions in the usual course of nature. This still reduces us to past observation, and obliges us to compare the instances of the violation of truth in the testimony of men, with

\* We can only learn of the existence of a being in the world, we do not know of his existence -  
 or, at least, we can only learn of his existence in the world.

those of the violation of the laws of nature by miracles, in order to judge which of them is most likely and probable. As the violations of truth are more common in the testimony concerning religious miracles than in that concerning any other matter of fact, this must diminish very much the authority of the former testimony, and make us form a general resolution never to lend any attention to it, with whatever specious pretence it may be covered."<sup>1</sup> A person who believes anything contradictory to a complete induction merely on the strength of an assumption which is incapable of proof is simply credulous, but such an assumption cannot affect the real evidence for that thing.

The argument of Paley against Hume is an illustration of the reasoning suggested by Mr. Mill. Paley alleges the interposition of a Personal Deity in explanation of miracles, but he protests that he does not assume the attributes of the Deity or the existence of a future state in order to *prove* their reality. "That reality," he admits, "always must be proved by evidence. We assert only that in miracles adduced in support of revelation there is not such antecedent improbability as no testimony can surmount." His argument culminates in the short statement: "In a word, once believe that there is a God" (*i.e.*, a Personal God working miracles), "and miracles are not incredible."<sup>2</sup> We have already quoted Hume's refutation of this reasoning, and we may at once proceed to the final argument by which Paley endeavours to overthrow Hume's doctrine, and upon which he mainly rests his case.

<sup>1</sup> *Hume*, Philos. Works, iv. p. 148.

<sup>2</sup> *Paley*. A View of the Evidences of Christianity. Preparatory Considerations.

“But the short consideration,” he says, “which, independently of every other, convinces me that there is no solid foundation in Mr. Hume’s conclusion, is the following: When a theorem is proposed to a mathematician, the first thing he does with it is to try it upon a simple case, and if it produces a false result, he is sure that there must be some mistake in the demonstration. Now, to proceed in this way with what may be called Mr. Hume’s theorem. If twelve men, whose probity and good sense I had long known, should seriously and circumstantially relate to me an account of a miracle wrought before their eyes, and in which it was impossible that they should be deceived; if the governor of the country, hearing a rumour of this account, should call these men into his presence, and offer them a short proposal, either to confess the imposture or submit to be tied up to a gibbet; if they should refuse with one voice to acknowledge that there existed any falsehood or imposture in the case; if this threat was communicated to them separately, yet with no different effect; if it was at last executed; if I myself saw them, one after another, consenting to be racked, burned, or strangled, rather than give up the truth of their account,—still, if Mr. Hume’s rule be my guide, I am not to believe them. Now I undertake to say that there exists not a sceptic in the world who would not believe them, or who would defend such incredulity.”<sup>1</sup>

It is obvious that this reasoning, besides being purely hypothetical, is utterly without cogency against Hume’s doctrine. In the first place, it is clear that no assertion of any twelve men would be sufficient to overthrow a law of nature, which is the result of a complete

<sup>1</sup> *Paley, l’c.*

induction, and in order to establish the reality of a miracle or the occurrence on one occasion of an unprecedented effect, from any cause, not in accordance with natural law, no smaller amount of evidence would suffice than would serve to refute the complete induction. The allegation of such an intervening cause as a Personal Deity working miracles is excluded as opposed to a complete induction. So long as we maintain the law, we are necessarily compelled to reject any evidence which contradicts it. We cannot at the same time believe the contradictory evidence, and yet assert the truth of the law. The specific allegation, moreover, is completely prohibited by the Scriptural admission that miracles are also performed by other supernatural beings in opposition to the Deity. The evidence of the twelve men, however, simply amounts to a statement that they saw, or fancied that they saw, a certain occurrence in contradiction to the law, but that which they actually saw was only an external phenomenon, the real nature of which is a mere inference, and an inference which, from the necessarily isolated position of the miraculous phenomenon, is neither supported by other instances capable of forming a complete counter induction, nor by analogies within the order of nature.<sup>1</sup> The bare inference from an occurrence supposed to have been witnessed by twelve men is all that is opposed to the law of nature, which is based upon a complete induction, and it is, therefore, incredible.

If we proceed to examine Paley's "simple case" a little more closely, however, we find that not only is it utterly inadmissible as a hypothesis, but that as an illustration of the case of Gospel miracles it is completely

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Mill, System of Logic*, ii. p. 166 f.

devoid of relevancy and argumentative force. The only point which gives a momentary value to the supposed instance is the condition attached to the account of the miracle related by the twelve men, that not only was it wrought before their eyes, but that it was one "in which it was impossible that they should be deceived." Now this qualification of infallibility on the part of the twelve witnesses is as incredible as the miracle which they are supposed to attest. The existence of twelve men incapable of error or mistake is as opposed to experience as the hypothesis of a miracle in which it is impossible for the twelve men to be deceived is contradictory to reason. The exclusion of all error in the observation of the actual occurrence and its antecedents and consequences, whose united sum constitutes the miracle, is an assumption which deprives the argument of all potency. It cannot be entertained. On the other hand, the moment the possibility of error is admitted, the reasoning breaks down, for the probability of error on the part of the observers, either as regards the external phenomena, or the inferences drawn from them, being so infinitely greater than the probability of mistake in the complete induction, we must unquestionably hold by the law and reject the testimony of the twelve men. )

It need scarcely be said that the assertion of liability to error on the part of the observers by no means involves any insinuation of wilful "falsehood or imposture in the case." It is quite intelligible that twelve men might witness an occurrence which might seem to them and others miraculous,—but which was susceptible of a perfectly natural explanation,—and truthfully relate what they believed to have seen, and that they might, therefore, refuse "with one voice to acknowledge that

there existed any falsehood or imposture in the case," even although the alternative might be death on a gibbet. This, however, would in no way affect the character of the actual occurrence. It would not convert a natural, though by them inexplicable, phenomenon into a miracle. Their constancy in adhering to the account they had given would merely bear upon the truth of their own statements, and the fact of seeing them "one after another consenting to be racked, burned, or strangled, rather than give up the truth of their account," would not in the least justify our believing in a miracle. / Even martyrdom cannot transform imaginations into facts. The truth of a narrative is no guarantee for the correctness of an inference. ) It seems almost incredible that arguments like these should for so many years have been tolerated in the text-book of a University.

As regards the applicability of Paley's illustration to the Gospel miracles, the failure of his analogy is complete. We shall presently see the condition of the people amongst whom these miracles are supposed to have occurred, and that, so far from the nature of the phenomena, and the character of the witnesses, supporting the inference that it was impossible that the observers could have been deceived, there is every reason for concluding with certainty that their ignorance of natural laws, their proneness to superstition, their love of the marvellous, and their extreme religious excitement, rendered them peculiarly liable to incorrectness in the observation of the phenomena, and to error in the inferences drawn from them. We shall likewise see that we have no serious and circumstantial accounts of those miracles from eye-witnesses of whose probity and good sense we have any knowledge, but that, on

the contrary, the narratives of them which we possess were composed by unknown persons, who were not eye-witnesses at all, but wrote very long after the events related, and in that mythic period "in which reality melted into fable, and invention unconsciously trespassed on the province of history." The proposition: "That there is satisfactory evidence that many, professing to be original witnesses of the Christian miracles, passed their lives in labours, dangers, and sufferings, voluntarily undergone in attestation of the accounts which they delivered, and solely in consequence of their belief of these accounts; and that they also submitted, from the same motives, to new rules of conduct," is made by Paley the argument of the first nine chapters of his work, as the converse of the proposition, that similar attestation of other miracles cannot be produced, is of the following two, This shows the importance which he attaches to the point; but, notwithstanding, even if he could substantiate this statement, the cause of miracles would not be one whit advanced.

We have freely quoted these arguments in order to illustrate the real position of miracles; and no one who has seriously considered the matter can doubt the necessity for very extraordinary evidence, even to render the report of such phenomena worthy of a moment's attention. The argument for miracles, however, has hitherto proceeded upon the merest assumption, and, as we shall further see, the utmost that they can do who support miracles, under the fatal disadvantage of being contradictory to uniform experience, is to refer to the alleged contemporaneous nature of the evidence for their occurrence, and to the character of the supposed witnesses. Mr. Mill has ably shown the serious misappre-

hension of so many writers against Hume's "Essay on Miracles," which has led them to what he calls "the extraordinary conclusion, that nothing supported by credible testimony ought ever to be disbelieved."<sup>1</sup> In regard to historical facts, not contradictory to all experience, simple and impartial testimony may be sufficient to warrant belief, but even such qualities as these can go but a very small way towards establishing the reality of an occurrence which is opposed to complete induction.<sup>2</sup> It is admitted that the evidence requisite to establish the reality of a supernatural Divine Revelation of doctrines beyond human reason, and comprising in its very essence such stupendous miracles as the Incarnation, Resurrection, and Ascension, must be miraculous.

(The evidence for the miraculous evidence, which is scarcely less astounding than the contents of the Revelation itself, must, logically, be miraculous also, for it is not a whit more easy to prove the reality of an evidential miracle than of a dogmatic miracle.) It is evident that the resurrection of Lazarus, for instance, is as contradictory to complete induction as the resurrection of Jesus. Both the Supernatural Religion, therefore, and its supernatural evidence labour under the fatal disability of being antecedently incredible.

<sup>1</sup> *Mill, Logic, ii. pp. 173, 175.*

<sup>2</sup> *Cf. ib., ii. p. 168.*

## CHAPTER IV.

### THE AGE OF MIRACLES.

LET us now, however, proceed to examine the evidence for the reality of miracles, and to inquire whether they are supported by such an amount of testimony as can in any degree outweigh the reasons which, antecedently, seem to render them incredible. It is undeniable that belief in the miraculous has gradually been dispelled, and that, as a general rule, the only miracles which are now maintained are limited to brief and distant periods of time. Faith in their reality, once so comprehensive, does not, except amongst a certain class, extend beyond the miracles of the New Testament and a few of those of the Old,<sup>1</sup> and the countless myriads of ecclesiastical

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Irons, a Prebendary of St. Paul's, in his work "On Miracles and Prophecy," lays down the rule that we are not bound to believe in any miracle narrated in the Old Testament which has not been confirmed by the direct reference to it of Jesus. By this means he quietly gets rid of the difficulties involved in such miracles, for instance, as the sun and moon standing still at the order of Joshua, and that of Balaam, p. 30 ff. The whole argument of Dr. Irons is an amazing one. In the "Bible and its Interpreters," he abandons altogether the popular theory that the Bible and the doctrines supposed to be derived from it can be established by literary evidence; and after thus cutting away all solid ground, he attempts to stand upon nothing, in the shape of the vague *feeling* that the records are supernatural. His admissions as to the insufficiency of the evidence are creditable to his honesty as a scholar, but his conclusion is simply lame and impotent. (Dr. Irons repudiates the insinuation—none was made in the preceding note, which is reprinted without alteration,—that his book is "of the nature of an admission to which his

and other miracles, for centuries devoutly and implicitly believed, are now commonly repudiated, and have sunk into discredit and contempt. The question is inevitably suggested how so much can be abandoned and the remnant still be upheld.

As an essential part of our inquiry into the value of the evidence for miracles, we must endeavour to ascertain whether those who are said to have witnessed the supposed miraculous occurrences were either competent to appreciate them aright, or likely to report them without exaggeration. For this purpose, we must consider what was known of the order of nature in the age in which miracles are said to have taken place, and what was the intellectual character of the people amongst whom they are reported to have been performed. Nothing is more rare, even amongst intelligent and cultivated men, than accuracy of observation and correctness of report, even in matters of sufficient importance to attract vivid attention, and in which there is no special interest unconsciously to bias the observer. It will scarcely be denied, however, that in persons of fervid imagination, and with a strong natural love of the marvellous, whose minds are not only unrestrained by specific knowledge, but predisposed by superstition towards false conclusions, the probability of inaccuracy and exaggeration is enormously

candour was reluctantly driven," and explains that "it is a vindication of the only possible grounds on which Revelation could rest," for "the only 'Revelation' he can ever imagine is that which has possessed the mind and conscience of the advanced portion of our race these 1800 years—the Church of the Saints of all Christendom." The admission to which we refer, whether willingly or unwillingly, is, nevertheless, fully made, and after showing Revelation to be totally unsupported by anything worthy of the name of evidence, he affirms the Religion and the Book to be Supernatural because he *feels*—Dr. Irons generally italicizes the word as the main prop of his theory—that they are so. No one who does not feel as he does receives much help from the theory of Dr. Irons.)

increased. If we add to this such a disturbing element as religious excitement, inaccuracy, exaggeration, and extravagance are certain to occur. The effect of even one of these influences, religious feeling, in warping the judgment, is admitted by one of the most uncompromising supporters of miracles. ( "It is doubtless the tendency of religious minds," says Dr. Newman, "to imagine mysteries and wonders where there are none ; and much more, where causes of awe really exist, will they unintentionally mis-state, exaggerate, and embellish, when they set themselves to relate what they have witnessed or have heard ;" and he adds : "and further, the imagination, as is well known, is a fruitful cause of apparent miracles."<sup>1</sup> / We need not offer any evidence that the miracles which we have to examine were witnessed and reported by persons exposed to the effects of the strongest possible religious feeling and excitement, and our attention may, therefore, be more freely directed to the inquiry how far this influence was modified by other circumstances. Did the Jews at the time of Jesus possess such calmness of judgment and sobriety of imagination as to inspire us with any confidence in accounts of marvellous occurrences, unwitnessed except by them, and limited to their time, which contradict all knowledge and all experience? Were their minds sufficiently enlightened and free from superstition to warrant our attaching weight to their report of events of such an astounding nature? and were they themselves sufficiently impressed with the exceptional character of

<sup>1</sup> *J. H. Newman, Two Essays on Scripture Miracles and on Ecclesiastical, 1870, p. 171.* This passage occurs in a reply to the argument against admitting Ecclesiastical Miracles as a whole, or against admitting certain of them, that certain others are rejected on all hands as fictitious or pretended.

any apparent supernatural and miraculous interference with the order of nature ?

Let an English historian and divine, who will be acknowledged as no prejudiced witness, bear testimony upon some of these points. "Nor is it less important," says the late Dean Milman, "throughout the early history of Christianity, to seize the spirit of the times. Events which appear to us so extraordinary, that we can scarcely conceive that they should either fail in exciting a powerful sensation, or ever be obliterated from the popular remembrance, in their own day might pass off as of little more than ordinary occurrence. During the whole life of Christ, and the early propagation of the religion, it must be borne in mind that they took place in an age, and among a people, which superstition had made so familiar with what were supposed to be preternatural events, that wonders awakened no emotion, or were speedily superseded by some new demand on the ever-ready belief. The Jews of that period not only believed that the Supreme Being had the power of controlling the course of nature, but that the same influence was possessed by multitudes of subordinate spirits, both good and evil. Where the pious Christian of the present day would behold the direct agency of the Almighty, the Jews would invariably have interposed an angel as the author or ministerial agent in the wonderful transaction. Where the Christian moralist would condemn the fierce passion, the ungovernable lust, or the inhuman temper, the Jew discerned the workings of diabolical possession. Scarcely a malady was endured, or crime committed, but it was traced to the operation of one of these myriad dæmons, who watched every opportunity

of exercising their malice in the sufferings and the sins of men.”<sup>1</sup>

Another English divine, of certainly not less orthodoxy, but of much greater knowledge of Hebrew literature, bears similar testimony regarding the Jewish nation at the same period. “Not to be more tedious, therefore, in this matter,” (regarding the Bath Kol, a Jewish superstition,) “let two things only be observed: I. That the nation, under the second Temple, was given to magical arts beyond measure; and, II. That it was given to an easiness of believing all manner of delusions beyond measure.”<sup>2</sup> And in another place: “It is a disputable case, whether the Jewish nation were more mad with superstition in matters of religion, or with superstition in curious arts:—I. There was not a people upon earth that studied or attributed more to dreams than they. II. There was hardly any people in the whole world that more used, or were more fond of, amulets, charms, mutterings, exorcisms, and all kinds of enchantments. We might here produce innumerable instances.”<sup>3</sup> We shall presently see that these statements are far from being exaggerated.

No reader of the Old Testament can fail to have been struck by the singularly credulous fickleness of the Jewish mind. Although claiming the title of the specially selected people of Jehovah, the Israelites exhibited a constant and inveterate tendency to forsake his service for the worship of other gods. The mighty “signs and

<sup>1</sup> History of Christianity, by H. H. Milman, D.D., Dean of St. Paul's. Murray, 1867, i. p. 84 f.

<sup>2</sup> John Lightfoot, D.D., Master of Catherine Hall, Cambridge. *Horæ Hebraicæ et Talmudicæ*, Works (ed. Pitman), xi. p. 81, cf. p. 170.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, xi. p. 299 f. Cf. Schoettgen, *Horæ Hebraicæ et Talmudicæ*, 1733, p. 474.

wonders" which God is represented as incessantly working on their behalf, and in their sight, had apparently no effect upon them. The miraculous even then had, as it would seem, already lost all novelty, and ceased, according to the records, to excite more than mere passing astonishment. The leaders and prophets of Israel had a perpetual struggle to restrain the people from "following after" heathen deities, and whilst the burden of the Prophets is one grand denunciation of the idolatry into which the nation was incessantly falling, the verdict of the historical books upon the several kings and rulers of Israel proves how common was the practice, and how rare even the nominal service of Jehovah. At the best the mind of the Jewish nation rarely, if ever, attained the idea of a perfect monotheism, but added to the belief in Jehovah the recognition of a host of other gods, over whom it merely gave him supremacy.<sup>1</sup> This is apparent even in the first commandment: "Thou shalt have no other gods before me;" and the necessity for such a law received its illustration from a people who were actually worshipping the golden calf, made for them by the complaisant Aaron, during the very time that the great Decalogue was being written on the Mount by his colleague Moses.<sup>2</sup> It is not, therefore, to be wondered at that, at a later period, and throughout patristic days, the gods of the Greeks and other heathen nations were so far gently treated, that, although repudiated as Deities,

<sup>1</sup> This is unconsciously expressed throughout the Bible in such passages as Deuter. x. 17—"For the Lord your God is God of gods, and Lord of lords, a great God, a mighty and a terrible," &c. Cf. Joshua xxii. 22, Deut. xi. 28, xii. 2 ff., Ps. lxxxix. 6, 7, and a host of other passages.

<sup>2</sup> An admirable inquiry into the religion of the Jewish nation is to be found in Dr. A. Kuenen's very able work, "De Godsdienst van Israël," Haarlem. Eerste deel, 1869; tweede deel, 1870.



they were recognized as Demons. In the Septuagint version of the Old Testament, where "idols" are spoken of in the Hebrew, the word is sometimes translated "demons;" as, for instance, Psalm xcvi. 5 is rendered: "For all the gods of the nations are demons."<sup>1</sup> The national superstition betrays itself in this and many other passages of this version, which so well represented the views of the first ages of the Church that the Fathers regarded it as miraculous. Irenæus relates how Ptolemy, the son of Lagus, brought seventy of the elders of the Jews together to Alexandria in order to translate the Hebrew Scriptures into Greek, but fearing that they might agree amongst themselves to conceal the real meaning of the Hebrew, he separated them, and commanded each to make a translation. When the seventy translations of the Bible were completed and compared, it was found that, by the inspiration of God, the very same words and the very same names from beginning to end had been used by them all.<sup>2</sup> The same superstition is quite as clearly expressed in the New Testament. The Apostle Paul, for instance, speaking of things sacrificed to idols, says: "But (I say) that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to demons, and not to God; and I would not that ye should be partakers with

<sup>1</sup> Ὅτι πάντες οἱ θεοὶ τῶν ἐθνῶν δαιμόνια (Ps. xcvi. 5, Sept.). This is not to be wondered at, when in so many other passages the Israelites are represented in the Hebrew as sacrificing to Devils when they worshipped other gods: cf. Levit. xvii. 7; Deut. xxxii. 17; Ps. cvi. (Sept. cv.) 37. In Isaiah lxxv. 11, the words translated in the English version "that prepare a table for that troop" are referred to demons in the Septuagint: καὶ ἐτοιμάζοντες τῷ δαιμονίῳ τράπεζαν. In Ps. xcvi. 7, the word translated "gods" in the English version becomes ἄγγελοι αὐτοῦ in the Sept. (xcvi. 7).

<sup>2</sup> Irenæus, Adv. Hæc. iii. 21, § 2, 3. Eusebius, Hist. Eccles., ed. Burton, Oxon. v. 8, cf. Philo Julius, De Vita Mosis, lib. ii. §§ 5, 6, 7. The author of the Hortatory Address to the Greeks gives the same account as Irenæus, with additional details. Cohort. ad Græcos, § 13.

demons. Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of demons ; ye cannot partake of the Lord's table, and of the table of demons." <sup>1</sup>

The apocryphal Book of Tobit affords some illustration of the opinions of the more enlightened Jews during the last century before the commencement of the Christian era.<sup>2</sup> The angel Raphael prescribes, as an infallible means of driving a demon out of man or woman so effectually that it should never more come back, fumigation with the heart and liver of a fish.<sup>3</sup> By this exorcism the demon Asmodeus, who from love of Sara, the daughter of Raguel, has strangled seven husbands who attempted to marry her,<sup>4</sup> is overcome, and flies into "the uttermost parts of Egypt," where the angel binds him.<sup>5</sup> The belief in demons, and in the necessity of exorcism, is so complete that the author sees no incongruity in describing the angel Raphael, who has been sent, in answer to prayer, specially to help him, as instructing Tobias to adopt such means of subjecting demons. Raphael is described in this book as the angel of healing,<sup>6</sup> the office generally assigned to him by the Fathers. He is also represented as saying of himself that he is one of the seven holy angels which present the prayers of the saints to God.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. x. 20: ἀλλ' ὅτι ἃ θύουσιν τὰ ἔθνη, δαιμονίοις καὶ οὐ θεῶν θύουσιν· οὐ θέλω δὲ ὑμᾶς κοινωνοὺς τῶν δαιμονίων γίνεσθαι. 21. οὐ δύνασθε ποτήριον κυρίου πίνειν καὶ ποτήριον δαιμονίων· οὐ δύνασθε τραπέζης κυρίου μετέχειν καὶ τραπέζης δαιμονίων.

<sup>2</sup> There is much discussion as to the date of this book. It is variously ascribed to periods ranging from two centuries B.C., and even earlier, to one century after Christ. Cf. *Bertholdt*, Einl. A. und N. Bundes, 1816, vi. p. 2499 f.; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, 1869, vii. p. 59 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. O. T., 1863, iii. p. 371 f.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. Apoc. Schr. A. T., p. 408, Anm. i.; *Ewald*, Gesch. des Volkes Isr., 1864, iv. p. 269 ff.; *Fabricius*, Liber Tobie, &c., p. 4; *De Wette*, Einl. A. T. 7te Ausg. § 311, p. 412.

<sup>3</sup> Tobit, vi. 7. <sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 7 f.; vi. 14. <sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, viii. 2 f. <sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 17. <sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, xii. 15. *Origen* also states that the archangel Michael pre-

There are many curious particulars regarding angels and demons in the Book of Enoch.<sup>1</sup> This work, which is quoted by the author of the Epistle of Jude,<sup>2</sup> and by some of the Fathers, as inspired Scripture,<sup>3</sup> was supposed by Tertullian to have survived the universal deluge, or to have been afterwards transmitted by means of Noah, the great-grandson of the author Enoch.<sup>4</sup> It may be assigned to about a century before Christ, but additions were made to the text, and more especially to its angelology, extending probably to after the commencement of our era.<sup>5</sup> It undoubtedly represents views popularly prevailing about the epoch in which we are interested. The author not only relates the fall of the angels through love for the daughters of men, but gives the names of twenty-one of them and of their leaders; of whom Jejun was he who seduced the holy angels, and Ashbeël it was who gave them evil counsel and corrupted them.<sup>6</sup> A third, Gadreël,<sup>7</sup> was he who seduced Eve. He also taught to the children of men the use and manufacture of all murderous weapons, of coats of mail, shields,

sents the prayers of the saints to God. Hom. xiv. in Num., Opp. ii. p. 323.

<sup>1</sup> *Dillmann*, Das Buch Henoch; *Fabricius*, Cod. Vet. Test., i. p. 179 ff.

<sup>2</sup> v. 14 f.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Fabricius*, Cod. Vet. Test., i. p. 160 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Tertullian*, De Cultu fem., i. 3.

<sup>5</sup> *Dillmann*, Das Buch Henoch, 1853, p. x. ff., xliii. ff.; *Ewald*, Ueber d. äth. Buch Henoch, 1854, Gesch. d. Volkes Isr., iv. p. 451 ff.; *Gfrörer*, Das Jahrh. des Heils, 1838, i. p. 93 ff.; *Hilgenfeldt*, Die jüd. Apokalyptik, 1857, p. 93 ff.; *Hoffmann*, Zeitschr. deutsch. Morgenland. Gesellsch. 1852, vi. p. 87; *Köstlin*, Theol. Jahrb. 1856, pp. 240—279, 370—386; *Lücke*, Einl. Offenb. Johannes, 2te Aufl. p. 142f.; *Weisse*, Die Evangelienfrage, 1856, p. 215 ff.

<sup>6</sup> Cap. lxix. i. ff., cf. vi.

<sup>7</sup> In the extract preserved by *George Syncellus* in his Chronography (p. 11), the angel who taught the use of weapons of war, &c., is called Azael or Azazel.

swords, and of all the implements of death. Another evil angel, named Pênêmuê, taught them many mysteries of wisdom. He instructed men in the art of writing with paper (χάρτης) and ink, by means of which, the author remarks, many fall into sin even to the present day. Kaodejâ, another evil angel, taught the human race all the wicked practices of spirits and demons,<sup>1</sup> and also magic and exorcism.<sup>2</sup> The offspring of the fallen angels and of the daughters of men were giants, whose height was 3000 ells;<sup>3</sup> of these are the demons working evil upon earth.<sup>4</sup> Azazel taught men various arts: the making of bracelets and ornaments; the use of cosmetics, the way to beautify the eyebrows; precious stones, and all dye-stuffs and metals; whilst other wicked angels instructed them in all kinds of pernicious knowledge.<sup>5</sup> The elements and all the phenomena of nature are controlled and produced by the agency of angels. Uriel is the angel of thunder and earthquakes; Raphael, of the spirits of men; Raguel is the angel who executes vengeance on the world and the stars; Michael is set over the best of mankind, *i.e.*, over the people of Israel;<sup>6</sup> Saraqâel, over the souls of the children of men, who are misled by the spirits of sin; and Gabriel is over serpents and over Paradise, and over the Cherubim.<sup>7</sup> Enoch is shown the mystery of all the operations of nature, and the action of the elements, and he describes the spirits which guide them, and control the thunder and lightning and the winds; the spirit of the seas, who curbs them with his might, or tosses them forth and scatters them through the mountains of the earth; the

<sup>1</sup> Enoch, c. lxix.<sup>2</sup> c. vii.<sup>3</sup> c. vii. 2. One MS. has 300. *Dillmann*, p. 3, cf. c. ix. xv.<sup>4</sup> c. xv., of. *Gfrörer*, *Das Jahrh. des Heils*, i. p. 380 f.<sup>5</sup> c. viii.<sup>6</sup> cf. Daniel x. 13, 21; xii. 1.<sup>7</sup> c. xx.

spirit of hoar frost, and the spirit of hail, and the spirit of snow. There are, in fact, special spirits set over every phenomenon of nature—frost, thaw, mist, rain, light, and so on.<sup>1</sup> The heavens and the earth are filled with spirits. Raphael is the angel set over all the diseases and wounds of mankind, Gabriel over all powers, and Fanuel over the penitence and the hope of those who inherit eternal life.<sup>2</sup> The decree for the destruction of the human race goes forth from the presence of the Lord, because men know all the mysteries of the angels, all the evil works of Satan, and all the secret might and power of those who practise the art of magic, and the power of conjuring, and such arts.<sup>3</sup> The stars are represented as animated beings.<sup>4</sup> Enoch sees seven stars bound together in space like great mountains, and flaming as with fire; and he inquires of the angel who leads him, on account of what sin they are so bound? Uriel informs him that they are stars which have transgressed the commands of the Highest God, and they are thus bound until ten thousand worlds, the number of the days of their transgression, shall be accomplished.<sup>5</sup> The belief that sun, moon, and stars were living entities possessed of souls was generally held by the Jews at the beginning of our era, along with Greek philosophers, and we shall presently see it expressed by the Fathers. Philo Judæus considers the stars spiritual beings full of virtue and perfection,<sup>6</sup> and that to them is granted lordship over other heavenly bodies, not absolute, but as viceroys under the Supreme

<sup>1</sup> Enoch, c. lx. 12 ff., cf. xli. xxxiv.

<sup>2</sup> c. xl., 9 f., cf. xxxix.

<sup>3</sup> c. lxv. 6 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Die jüd. Apok.*, p. 108, Anm. 2; *Gfrörer*, *Das Jahrh. des Heils*, i. p. 362 f., cf. p. 394 f., p. 406.

<sup>5</sup> c. xxi., cf. xviii. 13 f.

<sup>6</sup> *De Mundo officio*, § 48; *De Gigantibus*, § 2, cf. *De Somniis*, i. § 4 f., § 22.

Being.<sup>1</sup> We find a similar view regarding the nature of the stars expressed in the Apocalypse,<sup>2</sup> and it constantly appears in the Talmud and Targums.<sup>3</sup> An angel of the sun and moon is described in the Ascensio Isaiaë.<sup>4</sup>

We are able to obtain a full and minute conception of the belief regarding angels and demons and their influence over cosmical phenomena, as well as of other superstitions current amongst the Jews at the time of Jesus,<sup>5</sup> from the Talmud, Targums, and other Rabbinical sources. We cannot, however, do more, here, than merely glance at these voluminous materials. The angels are perfectly pure spirits, without sin, and not visible to mortal eyes. When they come down to earth on any mission, they are clad in light and veiled in air. If, however, they remain longer than seven days on earth, they become so clogged with the earthly matter in which they have been immersed that they cannot again ascend to the upper heavens.<sup>6</sup> Their multitude is innumerable,<sup>7</sup> and new angels are every day created, who in succession praise

<sup>1</sup> De Monarchia, i. § 1.      <sup>2</sup> Rev. i. 20, iii. 1, iv. 5, ix. 1, &c.

<sup>3</sup> Targum Hieros. Deut. ii. 25, Gen. i. 16; Tract. Beracoth, 32, 1; Chollin, 60, 2; Schefuoth, 9, 1. Pirke Elieser, vi., cf. Eisenmenger, Entdecktes Judenthum, 1700, i. p. 811 f.; ii. p. 384 f. Gfrörer, Das Jahrb. d. Heils, i. p. 362 f., p. 394 f.

<sup>4</sup> c. iv. 18. This work referred to by Origen (Ep. ad Africanum), Epiphanius (Hær. xl. 2, lxxvii. 3), Jerome (in Esaiaë, lxiv. 4), and others (cf. Fabricius, Cod. Vet. Test., i. p. 1086 ff.), as Ἀναβατικόν Ἡσαίου, is dated variously from the middle of the 1st to the beginning of the 3rd century. The work, long lost, was discovered and published by Lawrence, in 1819.

<sup>5</sup> Lightfoot, Horæ Heb. et Talm., Works, xi., Dedication; Schoettgen, Horæ Hebr. et Talm. Præfatio; Gfrörer, Das Jahrb. d. Heils, i. p. 5 ff.; Bretschneider, Hist. Dogm. Ausl. des N. T., 1806, p. 110 ff., 141 ff.

Sohar, Genesis, p. 124, p. 266; Pirke Elieser, xlvi.; Eisenmenger, Entd. Jud. ii. p. 387 f.; Gfrörer, Das Jahrb. d. Heils, i. p. 356.

<sup>7</sup> Hieros. Targ. Exod., xii. 12, xxxiii. 23; Deut. xxxiv. 5, &c., &c.

God and make way for others.<sup>1</sup> The expression, "host of heaven," is a common one in the Old Testament, and the idea was developed into a heavenly army. The first Gospel represents Jesus as speaking of "more than twelve legions of angels."<sup>2</sup> Every angel has one particular duty to perform, and no more; thus of the three angels who appeared to Abraham, one was sent to announce that Sarah should have a son, the second to rescue Lot, and the third to destroy Sodom and Gomorrah.<sup>3</sup> The angels serve God in the administration of the universe, and to special angels are assigned the different parts of nature. "There is not a thing in the world, not even a little herb, over which there is not an angel set, and everything happens according to the command of these appointed angels."<sup>4</sup> It will be remembered that the agency of angels is frequently introduced in the Old Testament, and still more so in the Septuagint version, by alterations of the text. One notable case of such agency may be referred to, where the pestilence which is sent to punish David for numbering the people is said to be caused by an angel, whom David even sees. The Lord is represented as repenting of the evil, when the angel was stretching forth his hand against Jerusalem, and bidding him stay his hand after the angel had destroyed seventy thousand men by the pestilence.<sup>5</sup> This theory of disease has prevailed until comparatively recent times. The names of many of the superintending angels are given, as, for instance: Jehuel

<sup>1</sup> Chagigah Bab., p. 14, 1, 2; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 371 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xxvi. 53.

<sup>3</sup> Hieros. Targ. Genes. xvii. 2; *Afrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 363 f.

<sup>4</sup> Jalkut Chadash, p. 147, 3; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 376 ff.; *Afrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 369.

<sup>5</sup> 2 Sam. xxiv. 15 f.

is set over fire, Michael over water, Jechiel over wild beasts, and Anpiel over birds. Over cattle Hariel is appointed, and Samniel over created things moving in the waters, and over the face of the earth; Messannahel over reptiles, Deliel over fish. Ruchiel is set over the winds, Gabriel over thunder and also over fire, and over the ripening of fruit, Nuriel over hail, Makturiel over rocks, Alpiel over fruit-bearing trees, Saroel over those which do not bear fruit, and Sandalfon over the human race; and under each of these there are subordinate angels.<sup>1</sup> It was believed that there were two angels of Death, one for those who died out of the land of Israel, who was an evil angel, called Samaël (and at other times Satan, Asmodeus, &c.), and the other, who presided over the dead of the land of Israel, the holy angel Gabriel; and under these there was a host of evil spirits and angels.<sup>2</sup> The Jews were unanimous in asserting that angels superintend the various operations of nature, although there is some difference in the names assigned to these angels.<sup>3</sup> The Sohar on Numbers states that "Michael, Gabriel, Nuriel, Raphael are set over the four elements, water, fire, air, earth."<sup>4</sup> We shall presently see how general this belief regarding angels was amongst the Fathers, but it is also expressed in the New Testament. In the Apocalypse there appears an angel

<sup>1</sup> Berith Minucha, p. 37, 1; cf. Tract. Pesachim, p. 118, 1, 2; Sanhedrin, 95, 2; Eisenmenger, *ib.* ii. p. 378 ff.; Gfrörer, *ib.* i. p. 369. The Targum upon 1 Kings, xix. 11, 12, reads: "A host of the angels of the wind, a host of the angels of commotion, a host of the angels of fire; and after the host of the angels of fire, the voice of the silent singers." Lightfoot, *Horæ Heb. et Talm. Works*, xii. p. 35.

<sup>2</sup> Bava Mezia, 36, 1; Succah, 53, 1; Bava Bathra, 16, 1; Eisenmenger, *ib.* i. p. 821 f., p. 854 ff.; Lightfoot, *ib.* xii. p. 428, p. 507 f.; Schoettgen, *Horæ Heb. et Talm.*, p. 935.

<sup>3</sup> Gfrörer, *ib.* i. p. 369.

<sup>4</sup> p. 417; Gfrörer, *ib.* i. p. 370.

who has power over fire,<sup>1</sup> and in another place four angels have power to hurt the earth and the sea.<sup>2</sup> The angels were likewise the instructors of men, and communicated knowledge to the Patriarchs. The angel Gabriel taught Joseph the seventy languages of the earth.<sup>3</sup> It appears, however, that there was one language—the Syriac—which the angels do not understand, and for this reason men were not permitted to pray for things needful, in that tongue.<sup>4</sup> Angels are appointed as princes over the seventy nations of the world; but the Jews consider the angels set over Gentile nations merely demons.<sup>5</sup> The Septuagint translation of Deuteronomy xxxii. 8 introduces the statement into the Old Testament. Instead of the Most High, when he divided to the nations their inheritance, setting the bounds of the people “according to the number of the children of Israel,” the passage becomes, “according to the number of the angels of God” (*κατὰ ἀριθμὸν ἀγγέλων θεοῦ*). The number of the nations was fixed at seventy, the number of the souls who went down into Egypt.<sup>6</sup> The Jerusalem Targum on Genesis xi. 7, 8, reads as follows: “God spake to the seventy angels which stand before him: Come, let us go down and confound their language that they may not understand each other. And the Word of the Lord appeared there (at Babel), with the seventy angels, according to the seventy nations, and

<sup>1</sup> c. xiv. 18.

<sup>2</sup> c. vii. 2, cf. ix. 11, xix. 17.

<sup>3</sup> Tract. Sotah, 33, 1; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 366 ff; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 365, p. 374 f.

<sup>4</sup> Beracoth, c. 2; Bab. Schabbath, 12, 2; Sotah, 33, 1; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 22; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* i. p. 675 f.; ii. p. 392 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* i. p. 805 ff., p. 816 ff.

<sup>6</sup> Gen. xlvi. 27, Exod. i. 5, Deut. x. 22. Seventy disciples were therefore chosen to preach the Gospel, Luke x. 1 f. Of course we need not here speak of the import of this number.

each had the language of the people which was allotted to him, and the record of the writing in his hand, and scattered the nations from thence over the whole earth, in seventy languages, so that the one did not understand what the other said.”<sup>1</sup> Michael was the angel of the people of Israel,<sup>2</sup> and he is always set in the highest place amongst the angels, and often called the High Priest of Heaven.<sup>3</sup> It was believed that the angels of the nations fought in heaven when their allotted peoples made war on earth. We see an allusion to this in the Book of Daniel,<sup>4</sup> and in the Apocalypse there is “war in heaven; Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought, and his angels.”<sup>5</sup> The Jews of the time of Jesus not only held that there were angels set over the nations, but also that each individual had a guardian angel.<sup>6</sup> This belief appears in several places in the New Testament. For instance, Jesus is represented as saying of the children: “For I say unto you that their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.”<sup>7</sup> Again, in the Acts of the Apostles, when Peter is delivered from prison by an angel, and comes to the house of his friend, they will not believe the maid who had opened the gate and seen him, but say: “It is his angel” (ὁ ἄγγελος αὐτοῦ ἐστίν).<sup>8</sup> The passage in the Epistle to the Hebrews will likewise be remembered, where it is said of the angels: “Are they not all ministering spirits sent forth for ministry on

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Pirke Elieser, xxiv.; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 370 f.; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* i. p. 810.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Daniel, x. 21.

<sup>3</sup> Bab. Menachoth, 110, 1; Beracoth, 4, 2; Sohar, Genes., fol. 17, col. 66; Thosaphtah Chollin, ii. 6; Jalkut Rubeni, 80, 1, 92, 4; Sevachim, 62, 1; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 371 f.; *Schoettgen*, *ib.* p. 1219 ff.

<sup>4</sup> x. 10 ff., and more especially verse 13.

<sup>5</sup> c. xii. 7.

<sup>6</sup> Hieros. Targ. Genes. xxxiii. 10, xlvi. 16.

<sup>7</sup> Matt. xviii. 10.

<sup>8</sup> Acts xii. 15.

account of them who shall be heirs of salvation.”<sup>1</sup> There was at the same time a singular belief that when any person went into the private closet, the guardian angel remained at the door till he came out again, and in the Talmud a prayer is given for strength and help under the circumstances, and that the guardian angel may wait while the person is there. The reason why the angel does not enter is that such places are haunted by demons.<sup>2</sup> Z

The belief in demons at the time of Jesus was equally emphatic and comprehensive, and we need scarcely mention that the New Testament is full of references to them.<sup>3</sup> They are in the air, on earth, in the bodies of men and animals, and even at the bottom of the sea.<sup>4</sup> They are the offspring of the fallen angels who loved the daughters of men.<sup>5</sup> They have wings like the angels, and can fly from one end of heaven to another; they obtain a knowledge of the future, like the angels, by listening behind the veil of the Temple of God in Heaven.<sup>6</sup> Their number is infinite. The earth is so full of them that if man had power to see he could not exist, on account of them; there are more demons than men, and they are about as close as the earth thrown up out of a newly-made grave.<sup>7</sup> It is stated that each man has

<sup>1</sup> Heb. i. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Hieros. Beracoth, ix. 5; Bab. Beracoth, 60, 1; Gittin, 70, 1; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 449 f.; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 374 f.; *Moise Schwab*, *Traité des Berakthoth*, 1871, p. 169.

<sup>3</sup> Passing over the synoptic Gospels, in which references to demons abound, cf. 1 Cor. x. 20, 21; James ii. 19; 1 Tim. iv. 1; Eph. ii. 2, cf. iv. 12; Rev. ix. 20, xvi. 14, xviii. 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 437 f.

<sup>5</sup> *ib.* i. p. 380 f.

<sup>6</sup> Bab. Chagigah, 16, 1; *Schoettgen*, *ib.* p. 1049; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 415.

<sup>7</sup> Beracoth, 6. 1; Sohar, Genes. p. 171; *ib.* Numbers, p. 291; *Eisen-*

10,000 demons at his right hand, and 1,000 on his left, and the passage continues: "The crush on the Sabbath in the Synagogue arises from them, also the dresses of the Rabbins become so soon old and torn through their rubbing; in like manner they cause the tottering of the feet. He who wishes to discover these spirits must take sifted ashes and strew them about his bed, and in the morning he will perceive their footprints upon them like a cock's tread. If any one wish to see them, he must take the afterbirth of a black cat, which has been littered by a first-born black cat, whose mother was also a first-birth, burn and reduce it to powder, and put some of it in his eyes, and he will see them."<sup>1</sup> Sometimes demons assume the form of a goat. Evil spirits fly chiefly during the darkness, for they are children of night.<sup>2</sup> For this reason the Talmud states that men are forbidden to greet any one by night, lest it might be a devil,<sup>3</sup> or to go out alone even by day, but much more by night, into solitary places.<sup>4</sup> It was likewise forbidden for any man to sleep alone in a house, because any one so doing would be seized by the she-devil Lilit, and die.<sup>5</sup> Further, no man should drink water by night on account of the demon Schafrirri, the angel of blindness.<sup>6</sup>

*menger*, *ib.* ii. p. 446, p. 461 f.; *Möise Schwab*, *Traité des Berakthoth*, 1871, p. 239.

<sup>1</sup> Bab. Beracoth, 6, 1. In the Tract. Gittin (68, 2) of the Talmud, Asmodeus is represented as coming to Solomon's wives by night, with slippers on to conceal his cock's feet. *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* i. p. 356, p. 424 f.; ii. p. 445; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. pp. 407, 409; *Möise Schwab*, *Traité des Berakthoth*, 1871, p. 239 f.

<sup>2</sup> Sohar, Exod., f. 67, col. 267; *Schoettgen*, *ib.* p. 316; cf. Ephes. vi. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Sanhedrin, 44, 1; Megillah, 3, 1; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 408; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 452.

<sup>4</sup> Sohar, Genes. 387; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 451 f.

<sup>5</sup> Schabbath, 151, 2.

<sup>6</sup> Pesachim, 112, 1; Avoda Sarah, 12, 2; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* i. p. 426 f.; ii. p. 452.

An evil spirit descended on any one going into a cemetery by night.<sup>1</sup> A necromancer is defined as one who fasts and lodges at night amongst tombs in order that the evil spirit may come upon him.<sup>2</sup> Demons, however, take more especial delight in foul and offensive places, and an evil spirit inhabits every private closet in the world.<sup>3</sup> Demons haunt deserted places, ruins, graves, and certain kinds of trees.<sup>4</sup> We find indications of these superstitions throughout the Gospels. The possessed are represented as dwelling among the tombs, and being driven by the unclean spirits into the wilderness, and the demons can find no rest in clean places.<sup>5</sup> Demons also frequented springs and fountains.<sup>6</sup> The episode of the angel who was said to descend at certain seasons and trouble the water of the pool of Bethesda, so that he who first stepped in was cured of whatever disease he had, may be mentioned here in passing, although the passage is not found in the older MSS. of the fourth Gospel,<sup>7</sup> and it was probably a later interpolation. There were demons who hurt those who did not wash their hands before meat. "Shibta is an evil spirit which sits upon men's hands in the night; and if any touch his food with unwashed hands, that spirit sits upon that food, and there is danger from it."<sup>8</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Chagigah, 3, 2; Trumoth, 40, 2; Bava Bathra, 100, 2; Bab. Sanhedrin, 65, 2; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. pp. 160, 170, xii. pp. 134, 349; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 408.

<sup>2</sup> Bab. Sanhedrin, 65, 2; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 170, xii. p. 134 f.

<sup>3</sup> Bab. Schabbath, 67, 1; Bab. Beracoth, 62, 1; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 449 f.; *Schwab*, *Traité des Berakhoth*, p. 495 f.

<sup>4</sup> Bab. Beracoth, 3, 1; Pesachim, iii. 2; Targ. Hieros. Deut. xxx. 10; *Schwab*, *ib.* p. 227.

<sup>5</sup> Matt. viii. 28, xii. 43; Mark v. 3, 5; Luke viii. 27, 29, xi. 24 f.

<sup>6</sup> Vajicra Rabba, § 24; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xii. p. 282.

<sup>7</sup> John v. 3, 4.

<sup>8</sup> Bab. Taanith, 20, 2; Sohar, Bereschith; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 215.

The demon Asmodeus is frequently called the king of the devils,<sup>1</sup> and it was believed that he tempted people to apostatize; he it was who enticed Noah into his drunkenness, and led Solomon into sin.<sup>2</sup> He is represented as alternately ascending to study in the School of the heavenly Jerusalem, and descending to study in the school of the earth.<sup>3</sup> The injury of the human race in every possible way was believed to be the chief delight of evil spirits. The Talmud and other Rabbinical writings are full of references to demoniacal possession, but we need not enter into details upon this point, as the New Testament itself presents sufficient evidence regarding it. Not only one evil spirit could enter into a body, but many took possession of the same individual. There are many instances mentioned in the Gospels, such as Mary Magdalene, "out of whom went seven demons (*δαιμόνια ἑπτὰ*),<sup>4</sup> and the man whose name was Legion, because "many demons" (*δαιμόνια πολλὰ*) were entered into him.<sup>5</sup> Demons likewise entered into the bodies of animals, and in the narrative to which we have just referred, the demons, on being expelled from the man, request to be allowed to enter into the herd of swine, which, being permitted, "the demons went out of

<sup>1</sup> Gittin, 68, 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Lightfoot, ib. xii. p. 111.*

<sup>3</sup> Gittin, 68, 1; *Eisenmenger, ib. i. p. 351. Schoettgen, ib. p. 1233, § iv.* Schoettgen gives minute details from the Talmud, &c., regarding the "Academia Celesti," its constitution, and the questions discussed in it, pp: 1230—1236. The representation of Satan, in the book of Job, will not be forgotten.

<sup>4</sup> Luke viii. 2; cf. Mark xvi. 9.

<sup>5</sup> Luke viii. 30 ff. The name Legion does not only express a great number, but to the word was attached the idea of an unclean company, for a Legion passing from place to place and entering a house rendered it "unclean." The reason was: "For there is no legion which hath not some carcapholion" (*καρρακεφαλῆ*), that is to say, the skin of the head pulled off from a dead person, and used for enchantments. Cf. Chollin, 123, 1; *Lightfoot, ib. xi. p. 394.*

the man into the swine, and the herd ran violently down the cliff into the lake, and were drowned,"<sup>1</sup> the evil spirits, as usual, taking pleasure only in the destruction and injury of man and beast. Besides "possession," all the diseases of men and animals were ascribed to the action of the devil and of demons.<sup>2</sup> In the Gospels, for instance, the woman with a spirit of infirmity, who was bowed together and could not lift herself up, is described as "bound by Satan," although the case was not one of demoniacal possession.<sup>3</sup>

As might be expected from the universality of the belief in demons and their influence over the human race, the Jews at the time of Jesus occupied themselves much with the means of conjuring them. "There was hardly any people in the whole world," we have already heard from a great Hebrew scholar, "that more used, or were more fond of, amulets, charms, mutterings, exorcisms, and all kinds of enchantments."<sup>4</sup> Schoettgen bears similar testimony: "Cæterum judæos magicis artibus admodum deditos esse, notissimum est."<sup>5</sup> All competent scholars are agreed upon this point, and the Talmud and Rabbinical writings are full of it. The exceeding prevalence of such arts alone proves the existence of the grossest ignorance and superstition.

<sup>1</sup> Luke viii. 33.

<sup>2</sup> Bab. Joma, 83, 2; Bab. Gittin, 67, 2; Hieros. Schabbath, 14, 3; Mischna, Gittin, vii. 1; Gemara, 67, 2; Sohar, Genes. 42; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 411 f.; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* ii. p. 454; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 237, f., xii. p. 134 f. Shibta, whom we have already met with, was said to take hold of the necks of infants, and to dry up and contract their nerves. *Aruch*, in Shibta; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 237.

<sup>3</sup> Luke xiii. 11 ff.; cf. Mark ix. 25; Matt. xii. 22, ix. 32; Luke xi. 14.

<sup>4</sup> *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 208.

<sup>5</sup> Horæ Hebr. et Talm. p. 474; cf. *Edzard*, *Avoda Sarah*, ii. pp. 311—356; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 413.

There are elaborate rules in the Talmud with regard to dreams, both as to how they are to be obtained and how interpreted.<sup>1</sup> Fasts were enjoined in order to secure good dreams, and these fasts were not only observed by the ignorant, but also by the principal Rabbins, and they were permitted even on the Sabbath, which was unlawful in other cases.<sup>2</sup> Indeed, the interpretation of dreams became a public profession.<sup>3</sup> It would be impossible within our limits to convey an adequate idea of the general superstition prevalent amongst the Jews regarding things and actions lucky and unlucky, or the minute particulars in regard to every common act prescribed for safety against demons and evil influences of all kinds. Nothing was considered indifferent or too trifling, and the danger from the most trivial movements or omissions to which men were supposed to be exposed from the malignity of evil spirits was believed to be great.<sup>4</sup> Amulets, consisting of roots, or pieces of paper with charms written upon them, were hung round the neck of the sick, and considered efficacious for their cure. Charms, mutterings, and spells were commonly said over wounds, against unlucky meetings, to make people sleep, to heal diseases, and to avert enchantments.<sup>5</sup> The Talmud gives forms of enchantments against mad dogs, for instance, against the demon of blindness, and the like, as well as formulæ for averting the evil eye, and

<sup>1</sup> Bab. Beracoth, 56 ff.; *Schwab, Traité des Berakhoth*, p. 457 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Bab. Schabbath, 11, 1; Beracoth, 14, 1; *Lightfoot, ib. xi.* p. 299 f., p. 163.

<sup>3</sup> Bab. Beracoth, 55, 2, 56, 1; Maasar Sheni, 52, 2, 3; *Lightfoot, ib. xi.* p. 300; *Schwab, Traité des Berakhoth*, p. 457 ff.

<sup>4</sup> See, for instance, Bab. Beracoth, 51, 1; *Schwab, Traité des Berakhoth*, p. 433 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Lightfoot, ib. xi.* p. 301 f.

mutterings over diseases.<sup>1</sup> So common was the practice of sorcery and magic that the Talmud enjoins "that the senior who is chosen into the Council ought to be skilled in the arts of astrologers, jugglers, diviners, sorcerers, &c., that he may be able to judge of those who are guilty of the same."<sup>2</sup> Numerous cases are recorded of persons destroyed by means of sorcery.<sup>3</sup> The Jewish women were particularly addicted to sorcery, and indeed the Talmud declares that they had generally fallen into it.<sup>4</sup> The New Testament bears abundant testimony to the prevalence of magic and exorcism at the time at which its books were written. In the Gospels, Jesus is represented as arguing with the Pharisees, who accuse him of casting out devils by Beelzebub, the prince of the devils. "If I by Beelzebub cast out the demons (τὰ δαιμόνια) by whom do your sons cast them out? Therefore let them be your judges."<sup>5</sup>

The thoroughness and universality of the Jewish popular belief in demons and evil spirits, and in the power of magic, is exhibited in the ascription to Solomon, the monarch in whom the greatness and glory of the nation attained its culminating point, of the character of a powerful magician. The most effectual forms of invocation and exorcism, and the most potent spells of magic, were said to have been composed by him, and thus the grossest superstition of the nation acquired the sanction of their wisest king. Rabbinical writings are

<sup>1</sup> See references, *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 301; Bab. Beracoth, 57, 2, &c.; *Schwab*, *ib.* p. 302, p. 456 f., &c. &c.

<sup>2</sup> *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 301.

<sup>3</sup> Hieros. Schab., 14, 3; Sanhedr., 18, 3; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 301 f.

<sup>4</sup> Hieros. Sanhedr., 23, 3; Bab. Sanhedr., 44, 2; Bab. Beracoth, 53, 1; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 302; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 413; *Schwab*, *ib.* p. 444.

<sup>5</sup> Matt. xii. 27; cf. Luke xi. 19, ix. 49; Mark viii. 38; Acts xix. 13 ff.

never weary of enlarging upon the magical power and knowledge of Solomon. He was represented as not only king of the whole earth, but also as reigning over devils and evil spirits, and having the power of expelling them from the bodies of men and animals, and also of delivering people to them.<sup>1</sup> It was indeed believed that the two demons Asa and Asael taught Solomon all wisdom and all arts.<sup>2</sup> The Talmud relates many instances of his power over evil spirits, and amongst others how he made them assist in building the Temple. Solomon desired to have the help of the worm Schamir in preparing the stones for the sacred building, and he conjured up a devil and a she-devil to inform him where Schamir was to be found. They referred him to Asmodeus, whom the King craftily captured, and by whom he was informed that Schamir is under the jurisdiction of the Prince of the Seas, and Asmodeus further told him how he might be secured. By his means the Temple was built, but, from the moment it was destroyed, Schamir for ever disappeared.<sup>3</sup> It was likewise believed that one of the Chambers of the second Temple was built by a magician called Parvah, by means of magic.<sup>4</sup> The Talmud narrates many stories of miracles performed by various Rabbins.<sup>5</sup>

The Jewish historian, Josephus, informs us that, amongst

<sup>1</sup> Gittin, 68, 1, 2; Succah, 53, 1; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* i. pp. 355, 358; ii. pp. 416, 440; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xii. p. 428.

<sup>2</sup> *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* i. p. 361 f.

<sup>3</sup> Gittin, 68, 1, 2; Sotah, 48, 2; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* i. p. 350 ff.; *Gfrörer*, *ib.* i. p. 414 f.; *Buxtorf*, *Lexic. Talmud*, p. 24, 53. Moses is also said to have made use of Schamir. *Fabricius*, *Cod. Vet. Test.*, ii. p. 119.

<sup>4</sup> Gloss on Middoth, cap. 5, hal. 3; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 301.

<sup>5</sup> Bava Mezia, 59, 1, 2; Bab. Beracoth, 33, 34, 54, 1; Hieros. Sanhedr., 25, 4; Bab. Taanith, 24; Juchas., 20, 1; 56, 2; *Lightfoot*, *ib.* xi. p. 301 f.; *Eisenmenger*, *ib.* i. 14 f.; *Schwab*, *ib.* p. 358 ff., p. 448 f.

other gifts, God bestowed upon King Solomon knowledge of the way to expel demons, an art which is useful and salutary for mankind. He composed incantations by which diseases are cured, and he left behind him forms of exorcism by which demons may be so effectually expelled that they never return, a method of cure, Josephus adds, which is of great efficacy to his own day. He himself had seen a countryman of his own, named Eliezer, release people possessed of devils in the presence of the Emperor Vespasian and his sons, and of his army. He put a ring containing one of the roots prescribed by Solomon to the nose of the demoniac, and drew the demon out by his nostrils, and, in the name of Solomon, and reciting one of his incantations, he adjured it to return no more. In order to demonstrate to the spectators that he had the power to cast out devils, Eliezer was accustomed to set a vessel full of water a little way off, and he commanded the demon as he left the body of the man to overturn it, by which means, says Josephus, the skill and wisdom of Solomon were made very manifest.<sup>1</sup> Jewish Rabbins generally were known as powerful exorcisers, practising the art according to the formulæ of their great monarch. Justin Martyr reproaches his Jewish opponent, Tryphon, with the fact that his countrymen use the same art as the Gentiles, and exorcise with fumigations and charms (*κατάδεσμοι*), and he shows the common belief in demoniacal influence when he asserts that, while Jewish exorcists cannot overcome demons by such means, or even by exorcising them in the name of their Kings, Prophets, or Patriarchs, though he admits that they might do so if they adjured them in the name of the God of Abraham, Isaac, and

<sup>1</sup> Antiq., viii. 2, § 5.

Jacob, yet Christians at once subdued demons by exorcising them in the name of the Son of God.<sup>1</sup> The Jew and the Christian were quite agreed that demons were to be exorcised, and merely differed as to the formula of exorcism. Josephus gives an account of a root potent against evil spirits. It is called Baaras, and is flame-coloured, and in the evening sends out flashes like lightning. It is certain death to touch it, except under peculiar conditions. One mode of securing it is to dig down till the smaller part of the root is exposed, and then to attach the root to a dog's tail. When the dog tries to follow its master from the place, and pulls violently, the root is plucked up, and may then be safely handled, but the dog instantly dies, as the man would have done had he plucked it up himself. When the root is brought to sick people, it at once expels demons.<sup>2</sup> According to Josephus, demons are the spirits of the wicked dead; they enter into the bodies of the living, who die, unless succour be speedily obtained.<sup>3</sup> This theory, however, was not general, demons being commonly considered the offspring of the fallen angels and of the daughters of men.

The Jewish historian gives a serious account of the preternatural portents which warned the Jews of the approaching fall of Jerusalem, and he laments the infatuation of the people, who disregarded these Divine denunciations. A star in the shape of a sword, and also a comet, stood over the doomed city for the space of a whole year. Then, at the feast of unleavened bread, before the rebellion of the Jews which preceded the war, at the ninth hour of the night a

<sup>1</sup> Dial. c. Tryph., 85; cf. Apol., ii. 6; Acts xix. 13 ff.

<sup>2</sup> De Bello Jud., vii. 6, § 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.* vii. 6, § 3.

great light shone round the altar and the Temple, so that for half an hour it seemed as though it were brilliant daylight. At the same festival other supernatural warnings were given. A heifer, as she was led by the high-priest to be sacrificed, brought forth a lamb in the Temple ; moreover, the eastern gate of the inner court of the Temple, which was of brass, and so ponderous that twenty men had much difficulty in closing it, and which was fastened by heavy bolts descending deep into the solid stone floor, was seen to open of its own accord, about the sixth hour of the night. The ignorant considered some of these events good omens, but the priests interpreted them as portents of evil. Another prodigious phenomenon occurred, which Josephus supposes would be considered incredible were it not reported by those who saw it, and were the subsequent events not of sufficient importance to merit such portents : before sunset, chariots and troops of soldiers in armour were seen among the clouds, moving about, and surrounding cities. / And further, at the feast of Pentecost, as the priests were entering the inner court of the Temple to perform their sacred duties, they felt an earthquake, and heard a great noise, and then the sound as of a great multitude saying : " Let us remove hence." <sup>1</sup> There is not a shadow of doubt in the mind of Josephus as to the reality of any of these wonders.

:/ If we turn to patristic literature, we find, everywhere, the same superstitions and the same theories of angelic agency and demoniacal interference in cosmical phenomena. / According to Justin Martyr, after God had made the world and duly regulated the elements and the rotation of the seasons, he committed man and all

<sup>1</sup> De Bello Jud. vi. 5, § 3.

things under heaven to the care of angels. Some of these angels, however, proved unworthy of this charge, and, led away by love of the daughters of men, begat children, who are the demons who have corrupted the human race, partly by magical writings (*διὰ μαγικῶν γραφῶν*) and partly by fears and punishments, and who have introduced wars, murders, and other evils amongst them, which are ignorantly ascribed by poets to God himself.<sup>1</sup> He considers that demoniacs are possessed and tortured by the souls of the wicked dead,<sup>2</sup> and he represents evil spirits as watching to seize the soul at death.<sup>3</sup> The food of the angels is manna.<sup>4</sup> The angels, says Clement of Alexandria, serve God in the administration of earthly affairs.<sup>5</sup> The host of angels and of gods (*θεῶν*) is placed under subjection to the Logos.<sup>6</sup> Presiding angels are distributed over nations and cities, and perhaps are also deputed to individuals,<sup>7</sup> and it is by their agency, either visible or invisible, that God gives all good things.<sup>8</sup> He accuses the Greeks of plagiarizing their miracles from the Bible, and he argues that if certain powers do move the winds and distribute showers, they are agents subject to God.<sup>9</sup> Clement affirms that the Son gave philosophy to the Greeks by means of the inferior angels,<sup>10</sup> and argues that it is absurd to attribute it to the devil.<sup>11</sup> Theophilus of Antioch, on the other hand, says that the Greek poets were inspired by demons.<sup>12</sup> Athenagoras states, as one of the principal

<sup>1</sup> Apol. ii. 5 ; cf. Apol. i. 5, 14.

<sup>2</sup> Dial. c. Tryph., 105.

<sup>3</sup> Stromata, vii. 1, § 3.

<sup>7</sup> Strom., vii. 2, § 6, vi. 17, § 157.

<sup>9</sup> Strom., vi. 3, § 30.

<sup>11</sup> Strom., vi. 17, § 159.

<sup>12</sup> Ad Autolyicum, ii. 8. Theophilus sees the punishment of the serpent

<sup>2</sup> Apol., i. 18.

<sup>4</sup> Dial., 57, cf. 131.

<sup>6</sup> Strom., vii. 2, § 5.

<sup>8</sup> Strom., vi. 17, § 161.

<sup>10</sup> Strom., vii. 2, § 6.

points of belief among Christians, that a multitude of angels and ministers are distributed and appointed by the Logos to occupy themselves about the elements, and the heavens, and the universe and the things in it, and the regulating of the whole.<sup>1</sup> For it is the duty of the angels to exercise providence over all that God has created ; so that God may have the universal care of the whole, but the several parts be ministered to by the angels appointed over them. There is freedom of will amongst the angels as among human beings, and some of the angels abused their trust, and fell through love of the daughters of men, of whom were begotten those who are called Giants.<sup>2</sup> These angels who have fallen from heaven busy themselves about the air and the earth ; and the souls of the Giants,<sup>3</sup> which are the demons that roam about the world, work evil according to their respective natures.<sup>4</sup> There are powers which exercise dominion over matter, and by means of it, and more especially one, who is opposed to God. This Prince of matter exerts authority and control in opposition to the good designed by God.<sup>5</sup> Demons are greedy for sacrificial odours and the blood of the victims, which they lick ; and they influence the multitude to idolatry by inspiring thoughts and visions which seem to come from idols and statues.<sup>6</sup> According to Tatian, God made everything which is good, but the wickedness of demons perverts

in the repulsive way in which he crawls on his belly and eats the dust. This and the pains of women in childbirth are proofs of the truth of the account of the fall in Genesis. Ad Autol., ii. 23.

<sup>1</sup> Legatio pro Christ., x.; cf. xxiv.      <sup>2</sup> Legatio pro Christ., xxiv.

<sup>3</sup> It is said in the Clementine Recognitions that the giants were born in the ninth generation of the human race, and that their bones are still preserved in some places ; i. 29. Cf. *Clement*, Hom., viii. 15.

<sup>4</sup> Leg. p. Christ., xxv.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, xxiv., xxv.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, xxvi., xxvii.

the productions of nature for bad purposes, and the evil in these is due to demons and not to God.<sup>1</sup> None of the demons have bodies; they are spiritual, like fire or air, and can only be seen by those in whom the Spirit of God dwells. They attack men by means of lower forms of matter, and come to them whenever they are diseased, and sometimes they cause disorders of the body, but when they are struck by the power of the word of God, they flee in terror, and the sick person is healed.<sup>2</sup> Various kinds of roots, and the relations of bones and sinews, are the material elements through which demons work.<sup>3</sup> Some of those who are called gods by the Greeks, but are in reality demons, possess the bodies of certain men, and then by publicly leaving them they destroy the disease they themselves had created, and the sick are restored to health.<sup>4</sup> Demons, says Cyprian of Carthage, lurk under consecrated statues, and inspire false oracles, and control the lots and omens.<sup>5</sup> They enter into human bodies and feign various maladies in order to induce men to offer sacrifices for their recovery that they may gorge themselves with the fumes, and then they heal them. They are really the authors of the miracles attributed to heathen deities.<sup>6</sup>

Tertullian enters into minute details regarding angels and demons. Demons are the offspring of the fallen angels, and their work is the destruction of the human race. They inflict diseases and other painful calamities upon our bodies, and lead astray our souls. From their

<sup>1</sup> Orat. ad Græcos, 12.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 16.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 17.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, 18; cf. *Tertullian*, *Apol.*, § 22; *Origen*, *Contra Cels.*, viii. 31 f.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. *Tertullian*, *De Spectaculis*, § 12, 13; *Clem. Recog.* iv. 19 ff.

<sup>6</sup> *Cyprian*, *De Idol. Vanitate*, § 7; cf. *Minutius Felix*, *Octavius*, § 27; *Tertullian*, *Apol.*, 22; *Eusebius*, *Præp. Evang.*, vii. 16.

wonderful subtleness and tenuity they find their way into both parts of our composition. Their spirituality enables them to do much harm to men, for being invisible and impalpable they appear rather in their effects than in their action. They blight the apples and the grain while in the flower, as by some mysterious poison in the breeze, and kill them in the bud, or nip them before they are ripe, as though in some inexpressible way the tainted air poured forth its pestilential breath. In the same way demons and angels breathe into the soul and excite its corruptions, and especially mislead men by inducing them to sacrifice to false deities in order that they may thus obtain their peculiar food of fumes of flesh and blood. Every spirit, whether angel or demon, has wings; therefore they are everywhere in a moment. The whole world is but one place to them, and all that takes place anywhere they can know and report with equal facility. Their swiftness is believed to be divine because their substance is unknown, and thus they seek to be considered the authors of effects which they merely report, as, indeed, they sometimes are of the evil, but never of the good. They gather intimations of the future from hearing the Prophets read aloud, and set themselves up as rivals of the true God by stealing His divinations. From inhabiting the air, and from their proximity to the stars and commerce with the clouds, they know the preparation of celestial phenomena, and promise beforehand the rains which they already feel coming. They are very kind in reference to the cure of diseases, Tertullian ironically says, for they first make people ill, and then, by way of performing a miracle, they prescribe remedies either novel or contrary to common experience, and then, removing the cause, they are

believed to have healed the sick.<sup>1</sup> If any one possessed by a demon be brought before a tribunal, Tertullian affirms that the evil spirit, when ordered by a Christian, will at once confess that he is a demon.<sup>2</sup> The fallen angels were the discoverers of astrology and magic.<sup>3</sup> Unclean spirits hover over waters in imitation of the brooding (*gestatio*) of the Holy Spirit in the beginning, as, for instance, over dark fountains and solitary streams, and cisterns in baths and dwelling-houses, and similar places, which are said to carry one off (*raptare*), that is to say, by the force of the evil spirit.<sup>4</sup> The fallen angels disclosed to the world unknown material substances, and various arts, such as metallurgy, the properties of herbs, incantations, and interpretation of the stars; and to women specially they revealed all the secrets of personal adornment.<sup>5</sup> There is scarcely any man who is not attended by a demon; and it is well known that untimely and violent deaths, which are attributed to accidents, are really caused by demons.<sup>6</sup> Those who go to theatres may become specially accessible to demons. There is the instance, the Lord is witness (*domino teste*), of the woman who went to a theatre and came back possessed by a demon; and, on being cast out, the evil spirit replied that he had a right to act as he did, having found her within his limits. There was another case, also well known, of a woman who, at night, after having been to a theatre, had a vision of a

<sup>1</sup> *Tertullian, Apologeticus*, § 22; cf. 23, ad Scapulam, § 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Apol.*, § 23.

<sup>3</sup> *De Idolatria*, § 9; *De Cultu Fem.*, i. § 2.

<sup>4</sup> *De Baptismo*, § 5.

<sup>5</sup> *De Cultu Fem.*, i. § 2, 10. Cf. *Commodianus, Institut.*, § 3; *Lactantius, Institut. Div.*, ii. 16; *Clem. Hom.*, viii. 14.

<sup>6</sup> *De Anima*, § 57.

winding sheet (*lintheum*), and heard the name of the tragedian whom she had seen mentioned with reprobation and, five days after, the woman was dead.<sup>1</sup> Origen attributes augury and divination through animals to demons. In his opinion certain demons, offspring of the Titans or Giants, who haunt the grosser parts of bodies and the unclean places of the earth, and who, from not having earthly bodies, have some power of divining the future, occupy themselves with this. They secretly enter the bodies of the more brutal and savage animals, and force them to make flights or indications of divination to lead men away from God. They have a special leaning to birds and serpents, and even to foxes and wolves, because the demons act better through these in consequence of an apparent "analogy" in wickedness between them.<sup>2</sup> It is for this reason that Moses, who had either been taught by God what was similar in the nature of animals and their kindred demons, or had discovered it himself, prohibited as unclean the particular birds and animals most used for divination. Therefore each kind of demon seems to have an affinity with a certain kind of animal. They are so wicked that demons even assume the bodies of weasels to foretell the future.<sup>3</sup> They feed on the blood and odour of the victims sacrificed in idol temples.<sup>4</sup> The spirits of the wicked dead wander about sepulchres and sometimes for ages haunt particular houses, and other places.<sup>5</sup> The prayers of Christians drive demons out of men, and from places where they have

<sup>1</sup> *De Spectaculis*, § 26.

<sup>2</sup> *Contra Cels.*, iv. 92; cf. viii. 11.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 93; cf. iii. 29, 35, 36, v. 5; *Barnabas*, Epist., x.; *Clemens Al.*, *Pædagog.*, ii. 10.

<sup>4</sup> *Contra Cels.*, vii. 35, cf. 5, viii. 61, cf. 60.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, vii. 5.

taken up their abode, and even sometimes from the bodies of animals, which are frequently injured by them.<sup>1</sup> In reply to a statement of Celsus that we cannot eat bread or fruit, or drink wine or even water without eating and drinking with demons, and that the very air we breathe is received from demons, and that, consequently, we cannot inhale without receiving air from the demons who are set over the air,<sup>2</sup> Origen maintains, on the contrary, that the angels of God, and not demons, have the superintendence of such natural phenomena, and have been appointed to communicate all these blessings. Not demons, but angels, have been set over the fruits of the earth, and over the birth of animals, and over all things necessary for our race.<sup>3</sup> Scripture forbids the eating of things strangled because the blood is still in them, and blood, and more especially the fumes of it, is said to be the food of demons. If we ate strangled animals, we might have demons feeding with us,<sup>4</sup> but in Origen's opinion a man only eats and drinks with demons when he eats the flesh of idol sacrifices, and drinks the wine poured out in honour of demons.<sup>5</sup> Jerome states the common opinion that the air is filled with demons.<sup>6</sup> Chrysostom says that angels are everywhere in the atmosphere.<sup>7</sup>

Not content, however, with peopling earth and air with angels and demons, the Fathers also shared the opinion common to Jews<sup>8</sup> and heathen philosophers, that the heavenly bodies were animated beings. After fully discussing the question, with much reference to Scripture,

<sup>1</sup> *Contra Cels.*, vii. 67.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, viii. 57, 31, f.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, viii. 31, cf. 57.

<sup>4</sup> *In Ascens.* J. C.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, viii. 28, 31.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, viii. 30.

<sup>7</sup> *Hieron. Epist. ad Ephes.*, iii. 6.

<sup>8</sup> Cf. *Philo, De Somniis*, i. § 22.

Origen determines that sun, moon, and stars are living and rational beings, illuminated with the light of knowledge by the wisdom which is the reflection (*ἀπαύγασμα*) of eternal light. They have free will, and as it would appear from a passage in Job (xxv. 5) they are not only liable to sin, but actually not pure from the uncleanness of it. Origen is careful to explain that this has not reference merely to their physical part, but to the spiritual; and he proceeds to discuss whether their souls came into existence at the same time with their bodies or existed previously, and whether, at the end of the world, they will be released from their bodies or will cease from giving light to the world. He argues that they are rational beings because their motions could not take place without a soul. "The stars move with so much order and so much intelligence," he says, "that in no degree is their onward course at any time seen to be impeded, so that is it not the extreme of all absurdity to say that so much order and the observance of such great discipline and method could be demanded or fulfilled by irrational things?"<sup>1</sup> They possess life and reason, he decides, and he proves from Scripture that their souls were given to them not at the creation of their bodily substance, but like those of men implanted strictly from without after they were made.<sup>2</sup> They are "subject to vanity" with the rest of the creatures, and "wait for the manifestation of the sons of God."<sup>3</sup> Origen is persuaded

<sup>1</sup> "Stellæ cum tanto ordine ac tanta ratione moveantur, ut in nullo prorsus cursus earum aliquando visus sit impeditus, quomodo non est ultra omnem stoliditatem tantum ordinem tantumque disciplinæ ac rationis observantiam dicere ab irrationalibus exigî vel expleri?" *De Principiis*, i. 7, § 3; cf. *Contra Cels.*, v. 10, 11.

<sup>2</sup> *De Principiis*, i. 7, § 4.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, i. 7, § 5; cf. iii. 5, § 4. Origen applies to sun, moon, and stars, the wish of Paul, *Phil.* i. 23. *Tatian* likewise ascribes spirituality to stars, plants, and waters, but although one and the same with the soul

that sun, moon, and stars pray to the Supreme Being through His only begotten Son.<sup>1</sup> To return to angels, however, Origen states that the angels are not only of various orders of rank, but have apportioned to them specific offices and duties. To Raphael, for instance, is assigned the task of curing and healing; to Gabriel the management of wars; to Michael the duty of receiving the prayers and the supplications of men. Angels are set over the different churches, and have charge even of the least of their members. These offices were assigned to the angels by God agreeably to the qualities displayed by each.<sup>2</sup> Elsewhere, Origen explains that it is necessary for this world that there should be angels set over beasts and over terrestrial operations, and also angels presiding over the birth of animals, and over the propagation and growth of shrubs, and, again, angels over holy works, who eternally teach men the perception of the hidden ways of God, and knowledge of divine things; and he warns us not to bring upon ourselves those angels who are set over beasts by leading an animal life, nor those which preside over terrestrial works by taking delight in fleshly and mundane things, but rather to study how we may approximate to the companionship of the Archangel Michael, to whose duty of presenting the prayers of the saints to God he here adds the office of presiding over medicine.<sup>3</sup> It is through the ministry of angels that the water-springs in fountains and running streams refresh the earth, and that the air we breathe is

in angels and animals, there are certain differences. *Orat. ad Græcos*, 12; cf. *Eusebius*, *Præp. Evang.*, vii. 15.

<sup>1</sup> *Contra Cels.*, v. 11.

<sup>2</sup> *De Principiis*, i. 8, § 1, cf. § 4; *Contra Cels.*, v. 4, 5. Cf. *Hermas*, *Pastor*, ii. *Mand.* vi. § 1, 2; *Tertullian*, *De Orat.*, § 12; *De Anima*, § 37; *Clemens Al.*, *Strom.*, v. 14, § 92, vii. 13, § 81.

<sup>3</sup> *Hom.* xiv. in *Num.*, *Opp.* ii. p. 323.

kept pure.<sup>1</sup> In the "Pastor" of Hermas, a work quoted by the Fathers as inspired Scripture, which was publicly read in the churches, which almost secured a permanent place in the New Testament canon, and which appears after the canonical books in the Codex Sinaiticus, the oldest extant MS. of the New Testament, mention is made of an angel who has rule over beasts, and whose name is Hegrin.<sup>2</sup> Jerome also quotes an apocryphal work in which an angel of similar name is said to be set over reptiles, and in which fishes, trees, and beasts are assigned to the care of particular angels.<sup>3</sup>

Clement of Alexandria mentions without dissent the prevailing belief that hail-storms, tempests, and similar phenomena do not occur merely from material disturbance, but also are caused by the anger of demons and evil angels.<sup>4</sup> Origen states that while angels superintend all the phenomena of nature, and control what is appointed for our good, famine, the blighting of vines and fruit trees, and the destruction of beasts and of men, are, on the other hand, the personal works<sup>5</sup> of demons, they, as public executioners, receiving at certain times authority to carry into effect divine decrees.<sup>6</sup> We have already quoted similar views expressed by Tertullian,<sup>7</sup> and the universality and permanence of such opinions may be illustrated by the fact that, after the lapse of many centuries, we find St. Thomas Aquinas as solemnly affirming that disease and tempests are the direct work of the devil;<sup>8</sup> indeed, this belief prevailed

<sup>1</sup> *Contra Cels.*, viii. 57, 31.

<sup>2</sup> *i. Visio*, iv. 2; *Cotelerius*, in the Greek version, gives the name, Ἁγριον.

<sup>3</sup> *Hieron.*, in Habacuc, i. 1, 14.

<sup>4</sup> *Stromata*, vi. 3, § 31.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. *Matth.* viii. 31 ff.

<sup>6</sup> *Contra Cels.*, viii. 31.

<sup>7</sup> *Apolog.* § 22 f.

<sup>8</sup> *Summæ Theolog.*, 1, quæst. 80, § 2.

throughout the middle ages until very recent times. The Apostle Peter, in the *Recognitions of Clement*, informs Clement that when God made the world He appointed chiefs over the various creatures, even over the trees and the mountains and springs and rivers, and over everything in the universe. An angel was set over the angels, a spirit over spirits, a star over the stars, a demon over the demons, and so on.<sup>1</sup> He provided different offices for all His creatures, whether good or bad,<sup>2</sup> but certain angels having left the course of their proper order, led men into sin and taught them that demons could, by magical invocations, be made to obey man.<sup>3</sup> Ham was the discoverer of the art of magic.<sup>4</sup> Astrologers suppose that evils happen in consequence of the motions of the heavenly bodies, and represent certain climacteric periods as dangerous, not knowing that it is not the course of the stars, but the action of demons that regulates these things.<sup>5</sup> God has committed the superintendence of the seventy-two nations into which He has divided the earth to as many angels.<sup>6</sup> Demons insinuate themselves into the bodies of men, and force them to fulfil their desires;<sup>7</sup> they sometimes appear visibly to men, and by threats or promises endeavour to lead them into error; they can transform themselves into whatever forms they please.<sup>8</sup> The distinction between what is spoken by the true God through the prophets or by visions, and that which is delivered by demons, is this: that what proceeds from the former is always true, whereas that which is foretold by demons is not always true.<sup>9</sup> Lactantius says that when the

<sup>1</sup> *Clem.*, *Recog.* i. 45.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 27.

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 15 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 25.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, ix. 12.

<sup>8</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 19.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 26.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 42.

<sup>9</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 21.

number of men began to increase, fearing that the Devil should corrupt or destroy them, God sent angels to protect and instruct the human race, but the angels themselves fell beneath his wiles, and from being angels they became the satellites and ministers of Satan. The offspring of these fallen angels are unclean spirits, authors of all the evils which are done, and the Devil is their chief. They are acquainted with the future, but not completely. The art of the magi is altogether supported by these demons, and at their invocation they receive men with lying tricks, making men think they see things which do not exist. These contaminated spirits wander over all the earth, and console themselves by the destruction of men. They fill every place with frauds and deceits, for they adhere to individuals, and occupy whole houses, and assume the name of genii, as demons are called in the Latin language, and make men worship them. On account of their tenuity and impalpability they insinuate themselves into the bodies of men, and through their *viscera* injure their health, excite diseases, terrify their souls with dreams, agitate their minds with phrensies, so that they may by these evils drive men to seek their aid.<sup>1</sup> Being adjured in the name of God, however, they leave the bodies of the possessed, uttering the greatest howling, and crying out that they are beaten, or are on fire.<sup>2</sup> These demons are the inventors of astrology, divination, oracles, necromancy, and the art of magic.<sup>3</sup> The universe is governed by God through the medium of angels. The demons have a fore-knowledge of the purposes of God, from having been His

<sup>1</sup> Instit. Div. ii. 14; cf. Inst. Epit. ad Pentad., 27 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 15; cf. iv. 27, v. 21; cf. *Arnobius*, Adv. Gentes, i. 46.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 16.

ministers, and interposing in what is being done, they ascribe the credit to themselves.<sup>1</sup> The sign of the cross is a terror to demons, and at the sight of it they flee from the bodies of men. When sacrifices are being offered to the gods, if one be present who bears on his forehead the sign of the cross, the sacred rites are not propitious (*sacra nullo modo litant*), and the oracle gives no reply.<sup>2</sup>

Eusebius, like all the Fathers, represents the gods of the Greeks and other heathen nations as merely wicked demons. Demons, he says, whether they circulate in the dark and heavy atmosphere which encircles our sphere, or inhabit the cavernous dwellings which exist within it, find charms only in tombs and in the sepulchres of the dead, and in impure and unclean places. They delight in the blood of animals, and in the putrid exhalations which rise from their bodies, as well as in earthly vapours. Their leaders, whether as inhabitants of the upper regions of the atmosphere, or plunged in the abyss of hell, having discovered that the human race had deified and offered sacrifices to men who were dead, promoted the delusion in order to savour the blood which flowed and the fumes of the burning flesh. They deceived men by the motions conveyed to idols and statues, by the oracles they delivered, and by healing diseases, with which, by the power inherent in their nature, they had before invisibly smitten bodies, and which they removed by ceasing to torture them. These demons first introduced magic amongst men.<sup>3</sup> We may here refer to the account of a miracle which Eusebius seriously quotes, as exemplifying another occasional

<sup>1</sup> *Instit. Div.*, ii. 16.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 27; cf. *Arnobius*, *Adv. Gentes*, i. 46.

<sup>3</sup> *Præp. Evang.*, v. 2 f.

function of the angels. The heretical Bishop Natalius having in vain been admonished by God in dreams, was at last lashed through the whole of a night by holy angels, till he was brought to repentance, and, clad in sackcloth and covered with ashes, he at length threw himself at the feet of Zephyrinus, then Bishop of Rome, pointing to the marks of the scourges which he had received from the angels, and implored to be again received into communion with the Church.<sup>1</sup> Augustine says that demons inhabit the atmosphere as in a prison, and deceive men, persuading them by their wonderful and false signs, or doings, or predictions, that they are gods.<sup>2</sup> He considers the origin of their name in the sacred Scriptures worthy of notice: they are called *Δαίμονες* in Greek on account of their knowledge.<sup>3</sup> By their experience of certain signs which are hidden from us, they can read much more of the future, and sometimes even announce beforehand what they intend to do. Speaking of his own time, and with strong expressions of assurance, Augustine says that not only Scripture testifies that angels have appeared to men with bodies which could not only be seen, but felt, but what is more, it is a general report, and many have personal experience of it, or have learned it from those who have knowledge of the fact, and of whose truth there is no doubt, that satyrs and fauns, generally called "Incubi," have frequently perpetrated their peculiar wickedness;<sup>4</sup> and also that certain demons called by the Gauls *Dusii* every day attempt and effect the same uncleanness, as

<sup>1</sup> H. E., v. 28.

<sup>2</sup> De Civitate Dei, viii. 22.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Lactantius*, Instit. Div., ii. 14.

<sup>4</sup> "Improbos sæpe exstitisse mulieribus, et earum appetisse ac percussisse concubitum."

witnesses equally numerous and trustworthy assert, so that it would be impertinence to deny it.<sup>1</sup>

Lactantius, again, ridicules the idea that there can be antipodes, and he can scarcely credit that there can be any one so silly as to believe that there are men whose feet are higher than their heads, or that grain and trees grow downwards, and rain, snow, and hail fall upwards to the earth. After jesting at those who hold such ridiculous views, he points out that their blunders arise from supposing that the heaven is round, and the world, consequently, round like a ball, and enclosed within it. But if that were the case, it must present the same appearance to all parts of heaven, with mountains, plains, and seas, and consequently there would be no part of the earth uninhabited by men and animals. Lactantius does not know what to say to those who, having fallen into such an error, persevere in their folly (*stultitia*), and defend one vain thing by another, but sometimes he supposes that they philosophize in jest, or knowingly defend falsehoods to display their ingenuity. Space alone prevents his proving that it is impossible for heaven to be below the earth.<sup>2</sup> St. Augustine, with equal boldness, declares that the stories told about the antipodes, that is to say, that there are men whose feet are against our footsteps, and upon whom the sun rises when it sets to us, are not to be believed. Such an assertion is not supported by any historical evidence,

<sup>1</sup> De Civ. Dei, xv. 23. So undeniable was the existence of these evil spirits, *Incubi* and *Succubi*, considered, and so real their wicked practices, that Pope Innocent VIII. denounced them in a Papal Bull in 1484. Burton most seriously believed in them, as he shows in his *Anatomy of Melancholy* (iii. 2). Similar demons are frequently mentioned in the Talmudic literature. Cf. *Eisenmenger*, Entd. Judenthum, i. p. 374; ii. p. 421 ff., 426 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Instit. Div., iii. 24.

but rests upon mere conjecture based on the rotundity of the earth. But those who maintain such a theory do not consider that even if the earth be round, it does not follow that the opposite side is not covered with water. Besides, if it be not, why should it be inhabited, seeing that on the one hand it is in no way possible that the Scriptures can lie, and on the other, it is too absurd (*nimisque absurdum est*) to affirm that any men can have traversed such an immensity of ocean to establish the human race there from that one first man Adam.<sup>1</sup>

Clement of Rome had no doubt of the truth of the story of the Phoenix,<sup>2</sup> that wonderful bird of Arabia and the adjoining countries, which lives 500 years; at the end of which time, its dissolution being at hand, it builds a nest of spices, in which it dies. From the decaying flesh, however, a worm is generated, which being strengthened by the juices of the bird, produces feathers and is transformed into a Phoenix. Clement adds that it then flies away with the nest containing the bones of its defunct parent to the city of Heliopolis in Egypt, and in full daylight, and in the sight of all men, it lays them on the altar of the sun. On examining their registers, the priests find that the bird has returned

<sup>1</sup> De Civ. Dei, xvi. 9. The Roman Clement, in an eloquent passage on the harmony of the universe, speaks of "the unsearchable and indescribable abysses of the lower world," and of "the ocean, impassable to man, and the worlds beyond it." Ep. ad Corinth., xx. Origen refers to this passage in the following terms: "Clement, indeed a disciple of the Apostles, makes mention also of those whom the Greeks call *Ἀντίθρονες*, and of those parts of the orb of the earth to which neither can any of our people approximate, nor can any of those who are there cross over to us, which he called 'worlds,' saying," &c. De Principiis, ii. 3, § 6. Such views, however, were general.

<sup>2</sup> The Talmud speaks frequently of the Phoenix. It is not subject to the angel of death, but is immortal, because when Eve offered it, together with all other created things, the forbidden fruit to eat, it alone refused. See authorities: Eisenmenger, Entd. Jud., i. p. 371, p. 867 ff.

precisely at the completion of the 500 years. This bird, Clement considers, is an emblem of the Resurrection.<sup>1</sup> So does Tertullian, who repeats the story with equal confidence.<sup>2</sup> It is likewise referred to in the Apostolic Constitutions.<sup>3</sup> Celsus quotes the narrative in his work against Christianity as an instance of the piety of irrational creatures, and although Origen, in reply, while admitting that the story is indeed recorded, puts in a cautious "if it be true," he proceeds to account for the phenomenon on the ground that God may have made this isolated creature, in order that men might admire, not the bird, but its creator.<sup>4</sup> Cyril of Jerusalem, likewise, quotes the story from Clement.<sup>5</sup> The author of the almost canonical Epistle of Barnabas, explaining the typical meaning of the code of Moses regarding clean and unclean animals which were or were not to be eaten, states as a fact that the hare annually increases the number of its *foramina*, for it has as many as the years it lives.<sup>6</sup> He also mentions that the hyena changes its sex every year, being alternately male and female.<sup>7</sup> Tertullian also points out as a recognized fact the annual change of sex of the hyena, and he adds: "I do not mention the stag, since itself is the witness of its own age; feeding on the serpent it languishes into youth from the working of the poison."<sup>8</sup> The geocentric

<sup>1</sup> Ep. ad Corinth., xxix.

<sup>2</sup> De Resurr., § 13.

<sup>3</sup> v. 7.

<sup>4</sup> Contra Cels., iv. 98. The same fable is referred to by *Herodotus* (ii. 73), and also by *Pliny* (Nat. Hist., x. 2).

<sup>5</sup> Catech., xviii. 8.

<sup>6</sup> "Ὅσα γὰρ ἔτη ζῆ, τοσαύτας ἔχει τρίπτας. c. x.

<sup>7</sup> c. x. He also says of the weasel: Τὸ γὰρ ζῶον τοῦτο τῷ στοματι κύει. Cf. *Origen*, Contra Cels., iv. 93; *Clement of Alex.* refers to the common belief regarding these animals. *Pædag.*, ii. 10.

<sup>8</sup> "Hyæna, si observet, sexus annalis est, marem et feminam alternat.

theory of the Church, which elevated man into the supreme place in the universe, and considered creation in general to be solely for his use, naturally led to the misinterpretation of all cosmical phenomena. Such spectacles as eclipses and comets were universally regarded as awful portents of impending evil, signs of God's anger, and forerunners of national calamities.<sup>1</sup> We have already referred to the account given by Josephus of the portents which were supposed to announce the coming destruction of the Holy City, amongst which were a star shaped like a sword, a comet, and other celestial phenomena. Volcanoes were considered openings into hell, and not only does Tertullian hold them to be so, but he asks who will not deem these punishments sometimes inflicted upon mountains as examples of the judgments which menace the wicked.<sup>2</sup>

Taceo cervum quod et ipso ætatis suæ arbiter, serpente pastus, veneno languescit in juventutem." De Pallio, § 3.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Tertullian*, *Ad. Scap.*, § 3; *Sozomen*, II. E., viii. 4, iv. 5.

<sup>2</sup> De Penitentia, § 12. Gregory the Great gives a singular account (*Dial.* iv. 30), which he had heard of a hermit who had seen Theodoric, and one of the Popes, John, in chains, cast into the crater of one of the Lipari volcanoes, which were believed to be entrances into hell.

## CHAPTER V.

### THE PERMANENT STREAM OF MIRACULOUS PRETENSION.

WE have given a most imperfect sketch of some of the opinions and superstitions prevalent at the time of Jesus, and when the books of the New Testament were written. These, as we have seen, continued with little or no modification throughout the first centuries of our era. It must, however, be remembered that the few details we have given, omitting most of the grosser particulars, are the views deliberately expressed by the most educated and intelligent part of the community, and that it would have required infinitely darker colours adequately to have portrayed the dense ignorance and superstition of the mass of the Jews. (It is impossible to receive the report of supposed marvellous occurrences from an age and people like this without the gravest suspicion.) Even so thorough a defender of miracles as Dr. Newman admits that: "Witnesses must be not only honest, but competent also; that is, such as have ascertained the facts which they attest, or who report after examination;"<sup>1</sup> and although the necessities of his case oblige him to assert that "the testimony of men of science and general knowledge" must not be required, he admits, under the head of "deficiency of examination," that—"Enthusiasm, ignorance, and habitual credulity

<sup>1</sup> Two Essays, &c., p. 78.

are defects which no number of witnesses removes."<sup>1</sup> /  
 We have shown how rank were these "defects" at the commencement of the Christian era, and among the chief witnesses for Christianity. Miracles which spring from such a hot-bed of superstition are too natural in such a soil to be objects of surprise, and, in losing their exceptional character, their claims upon attention are proportionately weakened if not altogether destroyed. Preternatural interference with the affairs of life and the phenomena of nature was the rule in those days, not the exception, and miracles, in fact, had lost all novelty, and through familiarity had become degraded into mere commonplace. The Gospel miracles were not original in their character, but were substantially mere repetitions of similar wonders well known amongst the Jews, or commonly supposed to be of daily occurrence even at that time. In fact the idea of such miracles in such an age, and performed amongst such a people, as the attestation of a supernatural Revelation may with singular propriety be ascribed to the mind of that period, but can scarcely be said to bear any traces of the divine. Indeed, anticipating for a moment a part of our subject regarding which we shall have more to say hereafter, we may remark that, so far from being original either in its evidence or form, almost every religion which has been taught in the world has claimed the same divine character as Christianity, and has surrounded the person and origin of its central figure with the same supernatural mystery. (Even the great heroes of history, long before our era, had their immaculate conception and miraculous birth. /

There can be no doubt that the writers of the New Testament shared the popular superstitions of the Jews.

<sup>1</sup> Two Essays, &c., p. 81.

We have already given more than one instance of this, and now we have only to refer for a moment to one class of these superstitions, the belief in demoniacal possession and origin of disease, involving clearly both the existence of demons and their power over the human race. It would be an insult to the understanding of those who are considering this question to pause here to prove that the historical books of the New Testament speak in the clearest and most unmistakable terms of actual demoniacal possession. Now, what has become of this theory of disease? The Archbishop of Dublin is probably the only one who asserts the reality of demoniacal possession formerly and at the present day,<sup>1</sup> and in this we must say that he is consistent. Dean Milman, on the other hand, who spoke with the enlightenment of the 19th century, "has no scruple in avowing *his* opinion on the subject of demoniacs to be that of Joseph Mede, Lardner, Dr. Mead, Paley, and all the learned modern writers. It was a kind of insanity . . . and nothing was more probable than that lunacy should take the turn and speak the language of the prevailing superstition of the times."<sup>2</sup> The Dean, as well as "all the learned modern writers" to whom he refers, felt the difficulty, but in seeking to evade it they sacrifice the Gospels. They overlook the fact that the writers of these narratives not only themselves adopt "the prevailing superstition of the times," but represent Jesus as doing so with equal completeness. There is no possibility, for instance, of evading such statements as those in the miracle of the country of the Gadarenes, where the objectivity of the demons is so fully recognized that,

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 164 f.

<sup>2</sup> Hist. of Christianity, i. p. 217, note (e).

on being cast out of the man, they are represented as requesting to be allowed to go into the herd of swine, and being permitted by Jesus to do so, the entry of the demons into the swine is at once signalized by the herd running violently down the cliff into the lake, and being drowned.<sup>1</sup> Archbishop Trench adopts no such ineffectual evasion, but rightly objects: "Our Lord Himself uses language which is not reconcilable with any such explanation. He everywhere speaks of demoniacs not as persons of disordered intellects, but as subjects and thralls of an alien spiritual might; He addresses the evil spirit as distinct from the man: 'Hold thy peace and come out of him;'" and he concludes that "our idea of Christ's absolute veracity, apart from the value of the truth which He communicated, forbids us to suppose that He could have spoken as He did, being perfectly aware all the while that there was no corresponding reality to justify the language which He used."<sup>2</sup> The Dean, on the other hand, finds "a very strong reason," which he does not remember to have seen urged with sufficient force, "which may have contributed to induce our Lord to adopt the current language on the point. The disbelief in these spiritual influences was one of the characteristics of the unpopular sect of the Sadducees. A departure from the common language, or the endeavour to correct this inveterate error, would have raised an immediate outcry against Him from His watchful and malignant adversaries as an unbelieving Sadducee."<sup>3</sup> Such ascription of politic

<sup>1</sup> Luke viii. 26, 33; Mark v. 12, 13; cf. Matt. viii. 28, 34. In the latter Gospel the miracle is said to be performed in the country of the Gergesenes, and there are two demoniacs instead of one.

<sup>2</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 152 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Milman*, Hist. of Christianity, i. p. 218, note.

{deception for the sake of popularity might be intelligible in an ordinary case, but when referred to the central personage of a Divine Revelation, who is said to be God incarnate, it is perfectly astounding. The Archbishop, however, rightly deems that if Jesus knew that the Jewish belief in demoniacal possession was baseless, and that Satan did not exercise such power over the bodies or spirits of men, there would be in such language "that absence of agreement between thoughts and words in which the essence of a lie consists."<sup>1</sup> It is difficult to say whether the dilemma of the Dean or of the Archbishop is the greater,—the one obliged to sacrifice the moral character of Jesus, in order to escape the admission for Christianity of untenable superstition, the other obliged to adopt the superstition in order to support the veracity of the language. At least the course of the Archbishop is consistent and worthy of respect. The attempt to eliminate the superstitious diagnosis of the disease, and yet to preserve intact the miraculous cure, is quite ineffectual.

Dr. Trench anticipates the natural question, why there are no demoniacs now, if there were so many in those days,<sup>2</sup> and he is logically compelled to maintain that there may still be persons possessed. "It may well be a question, moreover," he says, "if an apostle or one with apostolic discernment of spirits were to enter into a mad-house now, how many of the sufferers there he might not recognize as possessed?"<sup>3</sup> There can scarcely be a question upon the point at all, for such a person issuing direct

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 154.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 163.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 165. In a note the Archbishop says that "he understands that Esquirol recognizes demoniacs now, and that there could not be a higher authority."

from that period, without subsequent scientific enlightenment, would most certainly pronounce them all, "possessed." It did not, however, require an apostle, nor even one with apostolic discernment of spirits, to recognize the possessed in that time. All those who are represented as being brought to Jesus to be healed are described by their friends as having a devil or being possessed, and there was no form of disease more general or more commonly recognized by the Jews. For what reason has the recognition of, and belief in, demoniacal possession passed away with the ignorance and superstition which were then prevalent ?

It is important to remember that the theory of demoniacal possession, and its supposed cure by means of exorcism and invocations, was most common among the Jews long before the commencement of the Christian era. As casting out devils was the most common type of Christian miracles, so it was the commonest belief and practice of the Jewish nation. Christianity merely shared the national superstition, and changed nothing but the form of exorcism. Christianity did not through a "clearer perception of spirits," therefore, originate the belief in demoniacal possession, nor first recognize its victims ; nor did such superior enlightenment accompany the superior morality of Christianity as to detect the ignorant fallacy. In the Old Testament we find the most serious evidence of the belief in demonology and witchcraft. The laws against them set the example of that unrelenting severity with which sorcery was treated for so many centuries. We read in Exodus xxii. 18 : "Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live." Levit. xix. 31 : "Regard not them which have familiar spirits, neither

seek after wizards, to be defiled by them." Levit. xx. 6 : "And the soul that turneth after such as have familiar spirits, and after wizards to go a-whoring after them, I will even set my face against that soul, and cut him off from among his people ;" and verse 27 : "A man also or a woman that hath a familiar spirit, or that is a wizard, shall surely be put to death ; they shall stone them with stones ; their blood shall be upon them." Deut. xviii. 10 : "There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or an enchanter, or a witch ; 11. Or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer ; 12. For all that do these things are an abomination unto the Lord," &c. The passages which assert the reality of demonology and witchcraft, however, are much too numerous to permit their citation here. But not only did Christianity thus inherit the long-prevalent superstition, but it transmitted it intact to succeeding ages ; and there can be no doubt that this demonology, with its consequent and inevitable belief in witchcraft, sorcery, and magic, continued so long to prevail throughout Christendom, as much through the authority of the sacred writings and the teaching of the Church as through the superstitious ignorance of Europe.

It would be impossible to select for illustration any type of the Gospel miracles, whose fundamental principle,—belief in the reality, malignant action, and power of demons, and in the power of man to control them,—has received fuller or more permanent living acceptance from posterity, down to very recent times, than the cure of disease ascribed to demoniacal influence. The writings of the Fathers are full of the belief ; the social

history of Europe teems with it. The more pious the people, the more firm was their conviction of its reality. From times antecedent to Christianity, until medical science slowly came into existence and displaced miracle cures by the relics of saints, every form of disease was ascribed to demons. Madness, idiotcy, epilepsy, and every shape of hysteria were the commonest forms of their malignity; and the blind, the dumb, and the deformed were regarded as unquestionable victims of their malice. Every domestic calamity, from the convulsions of a child to the death of a cow, was unhesitatingly attributed to their agency. The more ignorant the community, the greater the number of its possessed. Belief in the power of sorcery, witchcraft, and magic was inherent in the superstition, and the universal prevalence shows how catholic was the belief in demoniacal influence. The practice of these arts is solemnly denounced as sin in the New Testament and throughout Patristic literature, and the church has in all ages fulminated against it. No accusation was more common than that of practising sorcery, and no class escaped from the fatal suspicion. Popes were charged with the crime, and bishops were found guilty of it. St. Cyprian was said to have been a magician before he became a Christian and a Father of the Church.<sup>1</sup> Athanasius was accused of sorcery before the Synod of Tyre.<sup>2</sup> Not only the illiterate but even the learned, in the estimation of their age, believed in it. No heresy was ever persecuted with more unrelenting hatred. Popes have issued bulls vehemently anathematising witches and sorcerers, councils have proscribed them, ecclesiastical

<sup>1</sup> *Greg. Nazianz., Orat. xviii.*

<sup>2</sup> *Theodoret, H. E., i. 30; cf. Milman, Hist. of Christianity, ii. p. 378.*

courts have consigned tens of thousands of persons suspected of being such to the stake, monarchs have written treatises against them and invented tortures for their conviction, and every nation in Europe and almost every generation have passed the most stringent laws against them. Upon no point has there ever been greater unanimity of belief. Church and State have vied with each other for the suppression of the abominable crime. Every phenomenon of nature, every unwelcome occurrence of social life, as well as every natural disease, has been ascribed to magic and demons. The historical records of Europe are filled with the deliberate trial and conviction, upon what was deemed evidence, of thousands of sorcerers and witches. Hundreds have been found guilty of exercising demoniacal influence over the elements, from Sopater the philosopher, executed under Constantine for preventing, by adverse winds, the arrival of corn ships at Constantinople, to Dr. Fian and other witches horribly tortured and burnt for causing a stormy passage on the return of James I. from Denmark.<sup>1</sup> Thousands of men and tens of thousands of women have been done to death by every conceivable torment for causing sickness or calamity by sorcery, or for flying through the air to attend the witches' sabbath. When scepticism as to the reality of the demoniacal powers of sorcery tardily began to arise, it was fiercely reprobated by the Church as infidelity. Even so late as the 17th century, a man like Sir Thomas Browne not only did not include the belief amongst the vulgar errors which he endeavoured to expose, but on the contrary wrote: "For my part, I have ever believed, and do now know that there are

<sup>1</sup> Pitcairn's Criminal Trials of Scotland, i. pp. 213, 223.

witches. They that doubt of them, do not only deny them, but spirits; and are obliquely, and upon consequence, a sort not of infidels, but atheists.”<sup>1</sup> In 1664 Sir Thomas Hale, in passing sentence of death against two women convicted of being witches, declared that the reality of witchcraft was undeniable, because “first, the Scriptures had affirmed so much; and secondly, the wisdom of all nations had provided laws against such persons, which is an argument of their confidence of such a crime.”<sup>2</sup> Even the 18th century was stained with the blood of persons tortured and executed for sorcery.

Notwithstanding all this persistent and unanimous confirmation, we ask again: What has now become of the belief in demoniacal possession and sorcery? (It has utterly disappeared.) “Joseph Mede, Lardner, Dr. Mead, Paley, and all the learned modern writers” with Dean Milman, as we have seen, explain it away, and  
 2 { such a theory of disease and elemental disturbance is  
 { universally recognized to have been a groundless superstition. The countless number of persons tormented and put to death for the supposed crime of witchcraft and sorcery were mere innocent victims to ignorance and credulity. Mr. Buckle has collected a mass of evidence to show that “there is in every part of the world an intimate relation between ignorance respecting the nature and proper treating of a disease, and

<sup>1</sup> *Religio Medici*, Works (Bohn), ii. p. 43 f.

<sup>2</sup> Collection of Rare and curious tracts relating to Witchcraft, London, 1838. Cf. *Lecky*, *Hist. of the Rise and Influence of the Spirit of Rationalism in Europe*, 3rd ed., 1866, i. p. 120. The reader is referred to this able work as well as to Buckle's *Hist. of Civilization*, for much interesting information regarding Magic and Witchcraft, as well as religious superstition and miraculous pretensions generally.

the belief that such disease is caused by supernatural power, and is to be cured by it." <sup>1</sup> At the commencement of our era every disease was ascribed to the agency of demons simply because the nature of disease was not understood, and the writers of the Gospels were not, in this respect, one whit more enlightened than the Jews. The progress of science, however, has not only dispelled the superstitious theory as regards disease in our time ; its effects are retrospective. Science not only declares the ascription of disease to demoniacal possession or malignity to be an idle superstition now, but it equally repudiates the assumption of such a cause at any time. The diseases referred by the Gospels, and by the Jews of that time, to the action of devils, exist now, but they are known to proceed from natural physical causes. The same superstition and medical ignorance would enunciate the same diagnosis at the present day. The superstition and ignorance, however, have passed away, and with them the demoniacal theory. In that day the theory was as baseless as in this. This is the logical conclusion of every educated man.

It is obvious that, with the necessary abandonment of the theory of "possession" and demoniacal origin of disease, the largest class of miracles recorded in the Gospels is at once exploded. The asserted cause of the diseases said to have been miraculously healed in this class must be recognized to be a mere vulgar superstition, and the narratives of such miracles, ascribing as they do in perfect simplicity distinct objectivity to the supposed "possessing" demons, and reporting their very words and actions, at once assume the character of mere imaginative and fabulous writings based upon supersti-

<sup>1</sup> Hist. of Civilization, Longmans, 1867, i. p. 204, note.

tious tradition, and cannot for a moment be accepted as the sober and intelligent report of eye-witnesses. We shall presently see how far this inference is supported by the literary evidence regarding the date and composition of the Gospels.

The deduction, however, does not end here. It is clear that, this large class of Gospel miracles being due to the superstition of an ignorant and credulous age, the insufficiency of the evidence for any of the other supposed miraculous occurrences narrated in the same documents becomes at once apparent. Nothing but the most irrefragable testimony could possibly warrant belief in statements of supernatural events which contradict all experience, and are opposed to all science. When these statements, however, are not only rendered, *à priori*, suspicious by their proceeding from a period of the grossest superstition and credulity, but it becomes evident that a considerable part of them is due solely to that superstition and credulity, by which, moreover, the rest may likewise be most naturally explained, it is obvious that they cannot stand against the opposing conviction of invariable experience. The force of the testimony is gone. We are far from using this language in an offensive sense concerning the Gospel narratives, which, by the simple faith of the writers, present the most noble aspect of the occurrences of which superstition is capable. Indeed, viewed as compositions gradually rising out of pious tradition, and representing the best spirit of their times, the Gospels, even in ascribing such miracles to Jesus, are a touching illustration of the veneration excited by his elevated character. Devout enthusiasm surrounded his memory with the tradition of the highest exhibitions of power within the range of Jewish imagina-

tion, and that these conceptions represent merely an idealized form of prevalent superstition was not only natural but inevitable. We shall hereafter fully examine the character of the Gospels, but it will be sufficient here to point out that none of these writings lays claim to any special inspiration, or in the slightest degree pretends to be more than a human composition,<sup>1</sup> and subject to the errors of human history.

## 2.

WE have seen how incompetent those who lived at the time when the Gospel miracles are supposed to have taken place were to furnish reliable testimony regarding such phenomena; and the gross mistake committed in regard to the largest class of these miracles, connected with demoniacal possession, seems altogether to destroy the value of the evidence for the rest, and to connect the whole, as might have been expected, with the general superstition and ignorance of the period. It may be well to inquire further, whether there is any valid reason for excepting any of the miracles of Scripture from the fate of the rest, and whether, in fact, there was any special "Age of Miracles" at all, round which a privileged line can be drawn on any reasonable ground.

We have already pointed out that the kind of evidence which is supposed to attest the Divine revelation of Christianity, so far from being invented for the purpose, was so hackneyed, so to speak, as scarcely to attract the

<sup>1</sup> See for instance the reasons for the composition of the third Gospel stated in the first four verses. It was clearly intended in the first instance to be a private document for the use of Theophilus/

notice of the nation to which the revelation was, in the first instance, addressed. Not only did the old Testament contain accounts of miracles of every one of the types related in the New, but most of them were believed to be commonly performed both before and after the commencement of the Christian era. That demons were successfully exorcised, and diseases cured, by means of spells and incantations, was never doubted by the Jewish nation. Satanic miracles, moreover, are not only recognized throughout the Old and New Testament, but formed a leading feature of the Patristic creed. The early Christians were not more ready than the heathen to ascribe every inexplicable occurrence to supernatural agency, and the only difference between them was as to the nature of that agency. The Jews and their heathen neighbours were too accustomed to supposed preternatural occurrences to feel much surprise or incredulity at the account of Christian miracles; and it is characteristic of the universal superstition of the period that the Fathers did not dream of denying the reality of Pagan miracles, but merely attributed them to demons, whilst they asserted the Divine origin of their own. The reality of the powers of sorcery was never questioned. Every marvel and every narrative of supernatural interference with human affairs seemed matter of course to the superstitious credulity of the age. (However much miracles are exceptions to the order of nature, they have always been the rule in the history of ignorance. In fact, the excess of belief in them throughout many centuries of darkness is almost fatal to their claims to credence now. The Christian miracles are rendered almost as suspicious from their place in a long sequence of similar occurrences, as they are by being exceptions

to the sequence of natural phenomena. It would indeed be extraordinary if whole cycles of miracles occurring before and since those of the Gospels, and in connection with every religion, could be repudiated as fables, and those alone maintained as genuine.

No attempt is made to deny the fact that miracles are common to all times and to all religious creeds. Dr. Newman states amongst the conclusions of his essay on the miracles of early ecclesiastical history: "That there was no Age of Miracles; after which miracles ceased; that there have been at all times true miracles and false miracles, true accounts and false accounts; that no authoritative guide is supplied to us for drawing the line between the two."<sup>1</sup> Dr. Mozley also admits that morbid love of the marvellous in the human race "has produced a constant stream of miraculous pretension in the world, which accompanies man wherever he is found, and is a part of his mental and physical history."<sup>2</sup> Ignorance and its invariable attendant, superstition, have done more than mere love of the marvellous to produce and perpetuate belief in miracles, and there cannot be any doubt that the removal of ignorance always leads to the cessation of miracles.<sup>3</sup> The Bampton lecturer proceeds: "Heathenism had its running stream of supernatural pretensions in the shape of prophecy, exorcism, and the miraculous cures of diseases, which the temples of Esculapius recorded with pompous display."<sup>4</sup> So far from the Gospel miracles being original, and a presentation, for the first time, of phenomena until then unknown

<sup>1</sup> *Two Essays on Scripture Miracles, &c.*, 1870, p. 100.

<sup>2</sup> *Bampton Lectures*, p. 206.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Buckle, Hist. of Civilization*, i. p. 373 ff.; cf. p. 122 ff.; iii., p. 35.

<sup>4</sup> *Bampton Lectures*, p. 206.

and unlikely to suggest themselves to the mind, "Jewish supernaturalism was indeed going on side by side with our Lord's miracles."<sup>1</sup> Dr. Mozley, however, rebuts the inference which has been drawn from this: "That His miracles could not, in the very nature of the case, be evidences of His distinctive teaching and mission, inasmuch as miracles were common to Himself and His opponents," by the assertion that a very marked distinction exists between the Gospel miracles and all others.<sup>2</sup> He perfectly recognizes the consequence if such a distinction cannot be clearly demonstrated. "The criticism, therefore, which *evidential* miracles, or miracles which serve as evidence of a revelation, must come up to, if they are to accomplish the object for which they are designed, involves at the outset this condition,—that the evidence of such miracles must be distinguishable from the evidences of this permanent stream of miraculous pretension in the world; that such miracles must be separated by an interval not only from the facts of the order of nature, but also from the common running miraculous, which is the simple offshoot of human nature. Can evidential miracles be inserted in this promiscuous mass, so as not to be confounded with it, but to assert their own truth and distinctive source? If they cannot there is an end to the proof of a revelation by miracles: if they can, it remains to see whether the Christian miracles are thus distinguishable, and whether their nature, their object, and their evidence vindicate their claim to this distinctive truth and Divine source."<sup>3</sup>

Now, regarding this distinction between Gospel and

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, p. 209.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 209.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 208.

other miracles, it must be observed that the religious feeling which influenced the composition of the Scripture narratives of miracles naturally led to the exclusion of all that was puerile or ignoble in the traditions preserved regarding the Great Master. The elevated character of Jesus afforded no basis for what was petty, and the devotion with which he was regarded when the Gospels were written insured the noblest treatment of his history within certain limits. We must, therefore, consider the bare facts composing the miracles rather than the narrative of the manner in which they are said to have been produced, in order rightly to judge of the comparative features of different miracles. If we take the case of a person raised from the dead, literary skill may invest the account with more or less of dramatic interest and dignity, but whether the main fact be surrounded with pathetic and picturesque details, as in the account of the raising of Lazarus in the fourth Gospel, or the person be simply restored to life without them, it is the fact of the resurrection which constitutes the miracle, and it is in the facts alone that we must seek distinction, disregarding and distrusting the accessories. In the one case the effect may be much more impressive, but in the other the bare raising of the dead is not a whit less miraculous. We have been accustomed to read the Gospel narratives of miracles with so much special veneration, that it is now difficult to recognize how much of the distinction of these miracles is due to the composition, and to their place in the history of Jesus. No other miracles, or account of miracles, ever had such collateral advantages. As works attributed to our sublimest Teacher, described with simple eloquence and, especially in the case of those in

the fourth Gospel, with artistic perfection, and read generally with reverential wonder untempered by a thought of criticism, these miracles have seemed to be surrounded by a mystic halo certainly not emanating from themselves. It must not be forgotten, therefore, that the miracle lies in the bare act, and not in its dramatic arrangement. The restoration of life to a dead man is the very same miracle whether it be effected by the relics of a saint or by the word of an apostle. A miracle is not antecedently more credible because of the outstretched arm and word of command, than it is in the silence of the shrine. Being supernatural, the real agency is not seen in either case, although the human mind is more satisfied by the presentation of an apparent cause in the one case, which seems to be absent in the other. In preferring the former type, we are not only influenced by a more dramatic narrative, but we select for belief the miracle from which we can unconsciously eliminate more of the miraculous elements, by tracing it to a visible natural cause which cannot be seen in the latter. The antecedent incredibility of miracles, however, is not affected by literary skill, and is independent of scenic effect.

The Archbishop of Dublin says: "Few points present greater difficulties than the attempt to fix accurately the moment when these miraculous powers were withdrawn from the Church;" and he argues that they were withdrawn when it entered into what he calls its permanent state, and no longer required "these props and strengthenings of the infant plant."<sup>1</sup> That their retrocession was gradual, he considers natural, and he imagines the fulness of Divine power as gradually waning as it was

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 54.

subdivided, first among the Apostles, and then amongst the ever-multiplying members of the Church, until by sub-division it became virtually extinct, leaving as a substitute "the standing wonder of a Church."<sup>1</sup> This, of course, is not argument, but merely the Archbishop's fanciful explanation of a serious difficulty. The fact is, however, that the Gospel miracles were preceded and accompanied by others of the same type, and we may here merely mention exorcism of demons, and the miraculous cure of disease, as popular instances; they were also followed by a long succession of others, quite as well authenticated, whose occurrence only became less frequent in proportion as the diffusion of knowledge dispelled popular credulity. Even at the present day a stray miracle is from time to time reported in outlying districts, where the ignorance and superstition which formerly produced so abundant a growth of them are not yet entirely dispelled.

Papias of Hierapolis narrates a wonderful story, according to Eusebius, which he had heard from the daughters of the Apostle Philip, who lived at the same time in Hierapolis: "For he relates that a dead man was restored to life in his day."<sup>2</sup> Justin Martyr, speaking of his own time, frequently asserts that Christians still receive the gift of healing, of foreknowledge, and of prophecy,<sup>3</sup> and he points out to the Roman Senate as a fact happening under their own observation, that many demoniacs throughout all the world (*Δαιμονιολήπτους πολλοὺς κατὰ πάντα τὸν κόσμον*) and in their own city have

<sup>1</sup> Notes on Miracles, p. 55.

<sup>2</sup> Ὡς δὲ κατὰ τοὺς αὐτοὺς ὁ Παπίας γενόμενος διήγησιν παρεληφμένα θυμασίαν ἰπὸ τῶν τοῦ Φιλίππου θυγατέρων μνημονεύει, τὰ νῦν σημειωτέον. Νεκροῦ γὰρ ἀνάστασιν κατ' αὐτὸν γεγονυίαν ἱστορεῖ, κ. τ. λ. *Eusebius*, H. E. iii., 39.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Dial. c. Tryph., xxxix., lxxxii., lxxxviii., &c., &c., &c.

been healed and are healed, many of the Christian men (*πολλοὶ τῶν ἡμετέρων ἀνθρώπων τῶν Χριστιανῶν*) exorcising them in the name of Jesus Christ, subduing and expelling the possessing demons out of the man, although all the other exorcists with incantations and spells had failed to do so.<sup>1</sup> Theophilus of Antioch likewise states that to his day demons are exorcised.<sup>2</sup> Irenæus in the clearest manner claims for the Church of his time the continued possession of the Divine *χαρίσματα*. He contrasts the miracles of the followers of Simon and Carpocrates, which he ascribes to magical illusions, with those of Christians. "For they can neither give sight to the blind," he continues, "nor to the deaf hearing, nor cast out all demons, except those introduced by themselves, if they can even do that; nor heal the sick, the lame, the paralytic, or other diseases afflicting other parts of the body, as has been often done in regard to bodily infirmity. . . . But so far are they from raising the dead, as the Lord raised them and the Apostles by prayer, and as has frequently been done in the brotherhood where it was needful,—the whole Church of the place entreating it with much fasting and prayer, the spirit of the dead has returned, and the man has been restored in answer to the prayers of the saints—that they do not believe this can possibly be done."<sup>3</sup> Canon

<sup>1</sup> Apol., ii. 6, cf. Dial. c. Tryphon., xxx., lxxvi., lxxxv., &c., &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Ad Autolyicum. ii. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Nec enim cæcis possunt donare visum, neque surdis auditum, neque omnes dæmones effugare, præter eos qui ab ipsis immittuntur, si tamen et hoc faciunt; neque debiles, aut claudos aut paralyticos curare, vel alia quadam parte corporis vexatos: quemadmodum sæpe evenit fieri secundum corporalem infirmitatem, &c., . . . Τοσοῦτον δὲ ἀποδέουσι τοῦ νεκρὸν ἐγείρειν, καθὼς ὁ Κύριος ἤγειρε, καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι διὰ προσευχῆς, καὶ ἐν τῇ ἀιδελφύτῃ πολλὰκις, διὰ τὸ ἀναγκαῖον τῆς κατὰ τόπον ἐκκλησίας πάσης αἰτησαμένῃς μετὰ νηστείας καὶ λιτανείας πολλῆς, ἐπέστρεψε τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ τετελευτηκίτου, καὶ

Mozley, who desires for the purpose of his argument to weaken the evidence of patristic belief in the continuance of miracles, says regarding this last passage on raising the dead :—“ But the reference is so vague that it possesses but little weight as testimony.”<sup>1</sup> We should be sorry to think that the vice, which seems at present to characterize the Church to which Dr. Mozley belongs, of making simple language mean anything or nothing just as any one happens to wish, should be introduced into critical or historical studies. The language of Irenæus is vague only in so far as specific detailed instances are not given of the miracles referred to ; but no language could be more definite or explicit to express the meaning of Irenæus, namely, the assertion that the prayers of Christian communities had frequently restored the dead to life. Eusebius, who quotes the passage, and who has preserved to us the original Greek, clearly recognized this. He says, when making the quotations : “ In the second book of the same work he (Irenæus) testifies that up to his time tokens of Divine and miraculous power remained in some Churches.”<sup>2</sup> In the next chapter Irenæus further says :—“ On which account, also, his true disciples receiving grace from him, work (miracles) in his name for the benefit of the rest of mankind, according to the gifts received from him by each of them. For some do certainly and truly (*βεβαίως καὶ ἀληθῶς*) cast out demons, so that frequently those who have thus been cleansed from the evil spirits both

ἐχαρίσθη ὁ ἄνθρωπος ταῖς εὐχαῖς τῶν ἁγίων. *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., ii. 31, § 2; *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 7.

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, Note i. on Lecture viii. (p. 210), p. 371.

<sup>2</sup> ἐν δευτέρῃ τῆς αὐτῆς ὑποθέσεως, ὅτι δὴ καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν ὑποδείγματα τῆς θείας καὶ παραδόξου δυνάμεως ἐν ἐκκλησίαις τισὶν ὑπολείπτο, διὰ τούτων ἐπισημαίνεται λέγων' κ. τ. λ. H. E. v. 7.

believe and are added to the church. And some have foreknowledge of future occurrences, and visions, and prophetic utterances. Others heal the sick by the imposition of hands and make them whole. Indeed, as we have already stated, even the dead have been raised up, and have remained with us for many years. And what more shall I say? It is not possible to state the number of the gifts which the Church throughout the world has received from God in the name of Jesus Christ, crucified under Pontius Pilate, and which she each day employs for the benefit of the heathen," &c.<sup>1</sup>

Tertullian speaks with the most perfect assurance of miracles occurring in his day, and of the power of healing and of casting out devils still possessed by Christians. In one place, for instance, after asserting the power which they have generally over demons, so that if a person possessed by a devil be brought before one of the Roman tribunals, a follower of Christ can at once compel the wicked spirit within him to confess that he is a demon, even if he had before asserted himself to be a God, he proceeds to say: "So at our touch and breathing, violently affected by the contemplation and representation of those fires (of hell) they (demons) also depart at our command out of bodies, reluctant and complaining, and put to shame

<sup>1</sup> Διὸ καὶ ἐν τῷ ἐκείνου ὀνόματι οἱ ἀληθῶς αὐτοῦ μαθηταί, παρ' αὐτοῦ λαβόντες τὴν χάριν, ἐπιτελοῦσιν ἐπ' εὐεργεσίᾳ τῇ τῶν λοιπῶν ἀνθρώπων, καθὼς εἰς ἕκαστος τὴν δωρεὰν εἴληφε παρ' αὐτοῦ. Οἱ μὲν γὰρ δαίμονας ἐκαύουσι βεβαίως καὶ ἀληθῶς, ὥστε πολλάκις καὶ πιστεύειν αὐτοὺς ἐκείνους καθαρισθέντας ἀπὸ τῶν πονηρῶν πνευμάτων, καὶ εἶναι ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ· οἱ δὲ καὶ πρόγνωσιν ἔχουσι τῶν μελλόντων, καὶ ὄπτασις καὶ ῥήσεις προφητικῆς· ἄλλοι δὲ τοὺς κάμνοντας διὰ τῆς τῶν χειρῶν ἐπιθέσεως ἰῶνται, καὶ ὑγιεῖς ἀποκαθιστᾶσιν. "Ἢδη δὲ, καθὼς ἔφασκεν, καὶ νεκροὶ ἠγέρθησαν, καὶ παρέμειναν σὺν ἡμῖν ἔτεσιν ἰκανοῖς. Καὶ τί γάρ; οὐκ ἔστιν ἀριθμὸν εἰπεῖν τῶν χαρισμάτων, ὧν κατὰ παντὸς τοῦ κόσμου ἡ ἐκκλησία παρὰ Θεοῦ λαβοῦσα, ἐν τῷ ὀνόματι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ τοῦ σταυρωθέντος ἐπὶ Π. Π. ἐκάστης ἡμέρας ἐπ' εὐεργεσίᾳ τῇ τῶν ἐθνῶν ἐπιτελεῖ, κ. τ. λ. Eusebius, H. E. v. 7; Adv. Hær., ii. 32, § 4; cf. v. 6, § i.; cf. Theophilus, Ad Autol., i. 13.

in your presence.”<sup>1</sup> He declares that although dreams are chiefly inflicted upon us by demons, yet they are also sent by God, and indeed “almost the greater part of mankind derive their knowledge concerning God from visions.”<sup>2</sup> He, elsewhere, states that he himself knows that a brother was severely castigated by a vision the same night on which his slaves had, without his knowledge, done something reprehensible.<sup>3</sup> He narrates as an instance of the continued possession of spiritual *charismata* by Christians: “There is at this day among us a sister who has the gift of revelations, which she receives in church amidst the solemnities of the Lord’s day by ecstasy in the spirit: she has conversed with angels, and sometimes also with the Lord, and she both hears and sees sacred things (*sacramenta*), and she reads the hearts of some men, and prescribes medicines to those who are in need.”<sup>4</sup> Tertullian goes on to say that, after the people were dismissed from the Church, this sister was in the regular habit of reporting what she had seen, “for most diligent inquiries are made in order that the truth might be arrived at,”<sup>5</sup> and after narrating a vision of a disembodied soul vouchsafed to her, he

<sup>1</sup> Ita de contactu deque afflatu nostro, contemplatione et representatione ignis illius correpti, etiam de corporibus nostro imperio excedunt inviti et dolentes, et vobis presentibus erubescentes. Apologeticus, § 23; cf. De Idol., § 11; De Spectac., § 29; De Exhort. Castit., § 10; Ad Scapulam, § 4; De Anima, § 57.

<sup>2</sup> Et major pæne vis hominum ex visionibus deum discunt. De Anima, § 47; De Idol., § 15.

<sup>3</sup> De Idol., § 15.

<sup>4</sup> Est hodie soror apud nos revelationum charismata sortita, quas in ecclesia inter dominica sollempnia per exstasin in spiritu patitur; conversatur cum angelis, aliquando etiam cum domino, et videt et audit sacramenta, et quorundam corda dignoscit, et medicinas desiderantibus submittit. De Anima, § 9.

<sup>5</sup> Nam et diligentissime digeruntur, ut etiam probentur, *ib.*

states : "This is the vision, God being witness, and the Apostle<sup>1</sup> having foretold that such spiritual gifts should be in the Church."<sup>2</sup> Further on Tertullian relates another story within his own knowledge : "I know a woman, a member of the Church, who in perfect youth and beauty, after a short married life, died. As she slept in peace, and while they prepared to lay her in the grave during the prayer of the presbyter, at the first breath of the prayer she removed her hands from her sides, folded them in the attitude of supplication, and at the close again peacefully restored them to their former position."<sup>3</sup> He then mentions another story known amongst them : that a dead body in a cemetery moved itself in order to make room beside it for another body ;<sup>4</sup> and then he remarks : "If similar cases are also reported amongst the heathen, as is the case, we conclude that God displays signs of his power for the consolation of his own people, and as a testimony to others."<sup>5</sup> Again, he mentions cases where Christians had cured persons of demoniacal possession, and adds : "And how many men of position (for we do not speak of the vulgar) have been delivered either from devils or from diseases."<sup>6</sup> Tertullian

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xii. 1 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Hæc visio est. Deus testis et apostolus charismatum in ecclesia futurorum idoneus sponsor; &c. De Anima, § 9.*

<sup>3</sup> *Scio feminam quandam vernaculam ecclesie, forma et ætate integra functam, post unicum et breve matrimonium, cum in pace dormisset et morante adhuc sepultura interim oratione presbyteri componeretur, ad primum halitum orationis manus a lateribus dimotas in habitum supplicem conformasse rursumquæ condita pace situi suo reddidisse. De Anima, § 51.*

<sup>4</sup> *Est et alia relatio apud nostros, in cœmeterio corpus corpori juxta collocando spatium recessu communicasse. De Anima, § 51.*

<sup>5</sup> *Si et apud ethnics tale quid traditur, utique deus potestatis sue signa proponit, suis in solatium, extraneis in testimonium. De Anima, § 51.*

<sup>6</sup> *Et quanti honesti viri (de vulgaribus enim non dicimus) aut a dæmoniis aut valetudinibus remediati sunt? Ad Scapulam, § 4.*

in the same place refers to the miracle of the "Thundering Legion,"<sup>1</sup> and he exclaims: "When indeed have not droughts been removed by our prayers and fastings?"<sup>2</sup> Minucius Felix speaks of the casting out of devils from sick persons by Christians in his own day, as a matter of public notoriety even among Pagans.<sup>3</sup> St. Cyprian echoes the same assertions.<sup>4</sup> He likewise mentions cases of miraculous punishment inflicted upon persons who had lapsed from the Christian faith. One of these, who ascended the Capitol to make denial of Christ, suddenly became dumb after he had spoken the words.<sup>5</sup> Another, a woman, was seized by an unclean spirit even at the baths, and bit with her own teeth the impious tongue which had eaten the idolatrous food, or spoken the words, and she shortly expired in great agony.<sup>6</sup> He likewise maintains that Christians are admonished by God in dreams and by visions, of which he mentions instances.<sup>7</sup> Origen claims for Christians the power still to expel demons, and to heal diseases in the name of Jesus,<sup>8</sup> and he states that he had seen many persons so cured of madness and countless other evils, which could not be otherwise cured by men or devils.<sup>9</sup> Lactantius repeatedly asserts the power of Christians over demons; they make them flee from bodies when they adjure them in the name of God.<sup>10</sup>

Passing over the numerous apocryphal writings of the early centuries of our era, in which many miracles are

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Eusebius*, H. E. v. 5.

<sup>2</sup> Ad Scapulam, § 4.

<sup>3</sup> Octavius, § 27.

<sup>4</sup> Tract. ii., De Idol. Vanitate, § 7, Ad Demetrianum, § 15.

<sup>5</sup> De Lapsis, § 24.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, § 24, cf. §§ 25, 26.

<sup>7</sup> Ep., liii. §§ 1—5, lxii. § 17, lxxviii. §§ 9, 10 (ed. Migne), De Mortalitate, § 19.

<sup>8</sup> Contra Cels., i. 67, 2, 6, 46; ii. 33; ii. 24, 28, 36.

<sup>9</sup> Contra Cels., iii. 24.

<sup>10</sup> Instit. Div., ii. 16, iv. 27, v. 22.

recorded, we find in the pages of Eusebius narratives of many miraculous occurrences. Many miracles are ascribed to Narcissus, Bishop of Jerusalem, of which Eusebius relates several. Whilst the vigils of the great watch of the Passover were being kept the oil failed them, whereupon Narcissus commanded that water from the neighbouring well should be poured into the lamps. Having prayed over the water, it was changed into oil, of which a specimen had been preserved until that time.<sup>1</sup> On another occasion, three men having spread some vile slanders against Narcissus, which they confirmed by an oath, and with imprecations upon themselves of death by a miserable disease, of death by fire, and of blindness, respectively, if their statements were not true, omnipotent justice in each case inflicted upon the wretches the curse which each had invoked.<sup>2</sup> The election of Fabianus to the Episcopal chair of Rome was marked by the descent of a dove from on high, which rested upon his head, as the Holy Ghost had descended upon our Saviour.<sup>3</sup> At Cæsarea Philippi there is a statue of Jesus Christ which Eusebius states that he himself had seen, said to have been erected by the woman healed of the bloody issue, and on the pedestal grows a strange plant as high as the hem of the brazen garment, which is an antidote to all diseases.<sup>4</sup> Great miracles are recorded as taking place during the persecutions in Cæsarea.<sup>5</sup>

Gregory of Nyssa gives an account of many wonderful works performed by his namesake Gregory of Neo-Cæsarea, who was called *Thaumaturgus* from the miraculous power which he possessed and very freely

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., vi. 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, vi. 9.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, vi. 29.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, H. E., vii. 18; cf. *Sozomen*, H. E., v. 21.

<sup>5</sup> *Eusebius*, De Martyr. Palæst., iv., ix.; cf. *Theodoret*, H. E., iv. 22.

exercised. The Virgin Mary and the Apostle John appeared to him, on one occasion, when he was in doubt as to the doctrine which he ought to preach, and, at the request of Mary, the Apostle gave him all needful instructions.<sup>1</sup> If his faith did not move mountains, it moved a huge rock to convert a pagan priest.<sup>2</sup> He drove a demon out of a heathen temple in which he had taken refuge, and the evil spirit could not re-enter until he gave permission.<sup>3</sup> Nyssen relates how St. Gregory averted an armed contest of two brothers who quarrelled about the possession of a lake on their father's property. The saint passed the night in prayer beside the lake, and in the morning it was found dried up.<sup>4</sup> On another occasion he rescued the country from the devastation of a mountain stream, which periodically burst the dykes by which it was restrained and inundated the plain. He went on foot to the place, and invoking the name of Christ, fixed his staff in the earth at the place where the torrent had broken through. The staff took root and became a tree, and the stream never again burst its bounds. The inhabitants of the district were converted to Christianity by this miracle. The tree was still living in Nyssen's time, and he had seen the bed of the lake covered with trees, pastures, and cottages.<sup>5</sup> Two vagabond Jews once attempted to deceive him. One of them lay down and pretended to be dead, while the other begged money from the saint wherewith to buy him a shroud. St. Gregory quietly took off his cloak and laid it on the man, and

<sup>1</sup> *Greg. Nyss. de Vit. Greg. Thaum.* Tom. iii., p. 545, f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 550.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 548 f. Cf. *Socrates*, H. E., iv. 27. He gave this permission in writing: "Gregory to Satan: Enter."—Γρηγόριος τῷ Σατανᾷ Εἰσελθε.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 555 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, p. 558 ff.

walked away. His companion found that he was really dead.<sup>1</sup> St. Gregory expelled demons from persons possessed, healed the sick and performed many other miracles;<sup>2</sup> and his signs and wonders are not only attested by Gregory of Nyssa, but by St. Basil,<sup>3</sup> whose grandmother, St. Macrina, was brought up at Neo-Cæsarea by the immediate followers of the saint.

Athanasius, in his memoir of St. Anthony, who began to lead the life of a recluse about A.D. 270, gives particulars of many miracles performed by the saint. Although he possessed great power over demons, and delivered many persons possessed by them, Satan tormented him sadly, and he was constantly beset by legions of devils. One night Satan with a troop of evil spirits so belaboured the saint that he lay on the ground speechless and almost dead from their blows.<sup>4</sup> We have already referred to the case of Natalius, who was scourged by angels during a whole night, till he was brought to repentance.<sup>5</sup> Upon one occasion when St. Anthony had retired to his cell resolved to pass a time in perfect solitude, a certain soldier came to his door and remained long there knocking and supplicating the saint to come and deliver his daughter, who was tormented by a demon. At length St. Anthony addressed the man and told him to go, and if he believed in Jesus Christ and prayed to God, his prayer should

<sup>1</sup> *Greg. Nyss. de Vit. Greg. Thaum.*, iii. p. 561 f. The same story is related of St. Epiphanius of Cyprus, and Sozomen sees no ground for doubting the veracity of either account. He states that St. Epiphanius also performed many other miracles, H. E., vii. 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, pp. 541, 551, 552, 553, 566, 567, 577.

<sup>3</sup> *De Spir. Sancto*, c. 29, tom. iii., pp. 62, 63; *Bened.*, cf. Ep. 204, p. 306.

<sup>4</sup> *S. Athanasii, Vita et Convers. S. Antonii*, §§ 8, *Opp.* tom. i., pars. ii., p. 802 ff., *Bened.*

<sup>5</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 28; see p. 135 f.

be fulfilled. The man believed, invoked Jesus Christ, and his daughter was delivered from the demon.<sup>1</sup> As Anthony was once travelling across the desert to visit another monastery, the water of the caravan failed them, and his companions in despair threw themselves on the ground. St. Anthony, however, retired a little apart, and in answer to his prayer a spring of water issued at the place where he was kneeling.<sup>2</sup> A man named Fronto, who was afflicted with leprosy, begged his prayers, and was ordered by the saint to go into Egypt, where he should be healed. Fronto at first refused, but being told that he could not be healed if he remained, the sick man went believing, and as soon as he came in sight of Egypt he was made whole.<sup>3</sup> Another miracle was performed by Anthony in Alexandria in the presence of St. Athanasius. As they were leaving the city a woman cried after him, "Man of God, stay; my daughter is cruelly troubled by a demon;" and she entreated him to stop lest she herself should die in running after him. At the request of Athanasius and the rest, the saint paused, and as the woman came up her daughter fell on the ground convulsed. St. Anthony prayed in the name of Jesus Christ, and immediately the girl rose perfectly restored to health, and delivered from the evil spirit.<sup>4</sup> He astonished a number of pagan philosophers, who had come to dispute with him, by delivering several demoniacs by making the sign of the cross over them three times, invoking the name of Jesus Christ.<sup>5</sup> It is unnecessary, however, to multiply instances of his miraculous power to drive out demons and heal diseases,<sup>6</sup> and to perform other

<sup>1</sup> Vita, § 48, p. 832.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, § 54, p. 836 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, § 57, p. 839.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, § 71, p. 849.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, § 72, p. 849.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. *Ib.*, §§ 55, 58, 61, 62, 63, 64, 70, &c., &c.

wonderful works. St. Athanasius, who was himself for a long time a personal follower of St. Anthony, protests in his preface to the biography his general accuracy, he having everywhere been mindful of the truth.<sup>1</sup>

+ Hilarion, again, a disciple of St. Anthony, performed many miracles, an account of some of which is given by St. Jerome. He restored sight to a woman who had been blind for no less than ten years; he cast out devils, and miraculously cured many diseases. Rain fell in answer to his prayers; and he further exhibited his power over the elements by calming a stormy sea. When he was buried, ten months after his death, not only was his body as perfect as though he had been alive, but it emitted a delightful perfume. He was so favoured of God that, long after, diseases were healed and demons expelled at his tomb.<sup>2</sup> St. Macarius, the Egyptian, is said to have restored a dead man to life in order to convince an unbeliever of the truth of the resurrection.<sup>3</sup> St. Martin, of Tours, restored to life a certain catechumen who had died of a fever, and Sulpicius, his disciple, states that the man, who lived for many years after, was known to himself, although not until after the miracle. He also restored to life a servant who had hung himself.<sup>4</sup> He performed a multitude of other miracles, to which we need not here more minutely refer. The relics of the two martyrs Protavious and Gervasius, whose bones, with much fresh blood, the miraculous evidence of their martyrdom and identity, were discovered by St. Ambrose, worked a

<sup>1</sup> πανταχοῦ τῆς ἀληθείας φροντίσας, *ib.*, p. 797.

<sup>2</sup> *Sozomen*, H. E., iii. 14.

<sup>3</sup> *ib.*, H. E., iii. 14.

<sup>4</sup> *Sulpicius*, Vita S. Mart. Cf. *Sozomen*, H. E., iii. 14.

number of miracles. A man suffering from demoniacal possession indicated the proximity of the relics by his convulsions. St. Augustine states that he himself was in Milan when a blind man, who merely touched the cloth which covered the two bodies as they were being moved to a neighbouring church, regained his sight.<sup>1</sup> Paulinus relates many miracles performed by his master, St. Ambrose, himself. He not only cast out many demons and healed the sick,<sup>2</sup> but he also raised the dead. Whilst the saint was staying in the house of a distinguished Christian friend, his child, who, a few days before, had been delivered from an unclean spirit, suddenly expired. The mother, an exceedingly religious woman, full of faith and the fear of God, carried the dead boy down and laid him on the saint's bed during his absence. When St. Ambrose returned, filled with compassion for the mother and struck by her faith, he stretched himself, like Elisha, on the body of the child, praying, and he restored him living to his mother. Paulinus relates this miracle with minute particulars of name and address.<sup>3</sup>

St. Augustine asserts that miracles are still performed in his day in the name of Jesus Christ, either by means of his sacraments or by the prayers or relics of his saints, although they are not so well-known as those of old, and he gives an account of many miracles which had recently taken place.<sup>4</sup> After referring to the miracle performed by the relics of the two martyrs upon the blind man in Milan, which occurred when he was there, he goes on to narrate the miraculous cure of a friend of

<sup>1</sup> *Ambrose*, Epist. Class. i. 22; *August.*, De Civ. Dei, xxii. 8; *Paulinus*, Vita S. Ambrosii, § 14 f.

<sup>2</sup> Vita S. Ambr., §§ 21, 43, 44.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, § 28.

<sup>4</sup> De Civ. Dei, xxii. 8.

his own named Innocent, formerly advocate of the prefecture, in Carthage, where Augustine was, and beheld it with his own eyes (*ubi nos interfuimus et oculis aspeximus nostris*). A lady of rank in the same city was miraculously healed of an incurable cancer, and St. Augustine is indignant at the apathy of her friends, which allowed so great a miracle to be so little known.<sup>1</sup> An inhabitant of the neighbouring town of Curubis was cured of paralysis and other ills by being baptized. When Augustine heard of this, although it was reported on very good authority, the man himself was brought to Carthage by order of the holy bishop Aurelius, in order that the truth might be ascertained. Augustine states that, on one occasion during his absence, a tribunitian man amongst them named Hesperius, who had a farm close by, called Zubedi, in the Fussalian district, begged one of the Christian presbyters to go and drive away some evil spirits whose malice sorely afflicted his servants and cattle. One of the presbyters accordingly went, and offered the sacrifice of the body of Christ with earnest prayer, and by the mercy of God, the evil was removed. Now Hesperius happened to have received from one of his friends a piece of the sacred earth of Jerusalem, where Jesus Christ was buried and rose again the third day, and he had hung it up in his room to protect himself from the evil spirits. When his house had been freed from them, however, he begged St. Augustine and his colleague Maximinus, who happened to be in that neighbourhood, to come to him, and after telling them all

<sup>1</sup> Hoc ego cum audissem, et vehementer stomacharer, in illa civitate atque in illa persona, non utique obscura, factum tam ingens miraculum sic latere, hinc eam et admonendam et pene objurgandam putavi, &c., &c. De Civ. Dei, xxii. 8.

that had happened, he prayed them to bury the piece of earth in some place where Christians could assemble for the worship of God. They consented, and did as he desired. A young peasant of the neighbourhood, who was paralytic, hearing of this, begged to be carried without delay to the holy spot, where he offered up prayer, and rose up and went away on his feet perfectly cured. About thirty miles from Hippo, at a farm called Victoriana, there was a memorial to the two martyrs Protavius and Gervasius. To this, Augustine relates, was brought a young man who, having gone one summer day at noon to water his horse in the river, was possessed by a demon. The lady to whom the place belonged came, according to her custom in the evening, with her servants and some holy women to sing hymns and pray. On hearing them the demoniac started up and seized the altar with a terrible shudder, without daring to move it, and as if bound to it, and the demon praying with a loud voice for mercy confessed where and when he had entered into the young man. At last the demon named all the members of his body, with threats to cut them off as he made his exit, and, saying these words, came out of him. In doing so, however, the eye of the youth fell from its socket on to his cheek, retained only by a small vein as by a root, whilst the pupil became altogether white. Well pleased, however, that the young man had been freed from the evil spirit, they returned the eye to its place as well as they could, and bound it up with a handkerchief, praying fervently, and one of his relatives said: "God who drove out the demon at the prayer of his saints can also restore the sight." On removing the bandage seven days after, the eye was found perfectly whole. St. Augustine knew a girl of

Hippo who was delivered from a demon by the application of oil with which had mingled the tears of the presbyter who was praying for her. He also knew a bishop who prayed for a youth possessed by a demon, although he had not even seen him, and the young man was at once cured.

Augustine further gives particulars of many miracles performed by the relics of the most glorious martyr Stephen.<sup>1</sup> By their virtue the blind receive their sight, the sick are healed, the impenitent converted, and the dead are restored to life. "Andurus is the name of an estate," Augustine says, "where there is a church and in it a shrine dedicated to the martyr Stephen. A certain little boy was playing in the court, when unruly bullocks drawing a waggon crushed him with the wheel, whereupon he immediately struggled in the agonies of death. Then his mother raised him up, and placed him at the shrine, and he not only came to life again, but also appeared without any injury."<sup>2</sup> A certain religious woman, who lived in a neighbouring property called Caspalianus, being dangerously ill and her life despaired of, her tunic was carried to the same shrine, but before it was brought back she had expired. Nevertheless, her relatives covered the body with this tunic, and she received back the spirit and was made whole.<sup>3</sup> At Hippo, a certain man named

<sup>1</sup> De Civ. Dei, xxii. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Andurus nomen est fundi, ubi ecclesia est, et in ea memoria Stephani martyris. Puerum quemdam parvulum, cum in area luderet, exorbitantes boves qui vehiculum trahebant, rota obriverunt, et confestim palpavit exspirans. Hunc mater arreptum ad eandem memoriam posuit; et non solum revixit, verum etiam illæsus apparuit.

<sup>3</sup> Sanctimonialis quædam in vicina possessione, quæ Caspaliana dicitur, cum ægitudine laboraret, ac desperaretur, ad eandem memoriam tunica ejus allata est: quæ antequam revocaretur, illa defuncta est. Hac tamen tunica operuerunt cadaver ejus parentes, et recepto spiritu salva facta est.

Bassus, a Syrian, was praying at the shrine of the same martyr for his daughter who was sick and in great peril, and he had brought her dress with him; when lo! some of his household came running to announce to him that she was dead. But as he was engaged in prayer they were stopped by his friends, who prevented their telling him, lest he should give way to his grief in public. When he returned to his house, which already resounded with the wailing of his household, he cast over the body of his daughter her mantle which he had with him, and immediately she was restored to life.<sup>1</sup> Again, in the same city, the son of a certain man among us named Irenæus, a collector of taxes, became sick and died. As the dead body lay, and they were preparing with wailing and lamentation to bury it, one of his friends consoling him suggested that the body should be anointed with oil from the same martyr. This was done, and the child came to life again.<sup>2</sup> In the same way a man amongst us named Eleusinus, formerly a tribune, laid the body of his child, who had died from sickness, on a memorial of the martyr which is in his villa in the suburbs, and after he had prayed, with many tears, he took up the child living."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Apud Hipponem Bassus quidam Syrus ad memoriam ejusdem martyris orabat pro ægrotante et periclitante filia, eoque secum vestem ejus attulerat; cum ecce pueri de domo cucurrerunt, qui ei mortuam nuntiarent. Sed cum, orante illo, ab amicis ejus exciperentur, prohibuerunt eos illi dicere, ne per publicum plangeret. Qui cum domum redisset jam suorum ejulatibus personantem, et vestem filiæ quam ferebat, super eam projecisset, reddita est vitæ.

<sup>2</sup> Rursus ibidem apud nos Irenæi, cujusdam collectarii filius, ægitudine extinctus est. Cumque corpus jaceret exanime, atque a lugentibus et lamentantibus exsequiæ pararentur, amicorum ejus quidam inter aliorum consolantium verba suggessit, ut ejusdem martyris oleo corpus perungeretur. Factum est, et revixit.

<sup>3</sup> Itemque apud nos vir tribunicius Eleusinus super memoriam Martyris,

We shall meet with more of these miracles in considering the arguments of Dr. Mozley. In a note he says: "Augustine again, long after, alludes in his list of miracles (*De Civ. Dei*, xxii. 8,) to some cases in which persons had been raised to life again by prayer and the intercession of martyrs, whose relics were applied. But though Augustine relates with great particularity and length of detail some cases of recoveries from complaints in answer to prayer, his notices of the cases in which persons had been raised to life again, are so short, bare, and summary, that they evidently represent no more than mere report, and report of a very vague kind. Indeed, with the preface which he prefixes to his list, he cannot be said even to profess to guarantee the truth or accuracy of the different instances contained in it. 'Hæc autem, ubicunque fiunt, ibi sciuntur vix a tota ipsa civitate vel quocumque commanentium loco. Nam plerumque etiam ibi paucissimi sciunt, ignorantibus cæteris, maxime si magna sit civitas; et quando alibi aliisque narrantur, non tantum ea commendat auctoritas, ut sine difficultate vel dubitatione credantur, quamvis Christianis fidelibus a fidelibus indicentur.' He puts down the cases as he received them, then, without pledging himself to their authenticity. 'Eucharius presbyter . . . mortuus sic jacebat ut ei jam pollices ligarentur: opitulatione memorati martyris, cum de memoria ejus reportata fuisset et supra jacentis corpus missa ipsius presbyteri tunica, suscitatus est . . . Andurus nomen est,' &c.",<sup>1</sup> and then Dr. Mozley gives the passage already quoted by us. Before continuing, quæ in suburbano ejus est, ægritudine exanimatum posuit infantulum filium: et post orationem, quam multis cum lacrymis ibi fudit, viventem levavit. *De Civ. Dei*, xxii. 8.

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, 1865, p. 372 f.

we must remark with regard to the passages just quoted, that, in the miracle of Eucharis, Dr. Mozley, without explanation, omits details. The whole passage is as follows: "Eucharis, a presbyter from Spain, resided at Calama, who had for a long time suffered from stone. By the relics of the same martyr, which the Bishop Possidius brought to him, he was made whole. The same presbyter, afterwards succumbing to another disease, lay dead, so that they were already binding his hands. Succour came from the relics of the martyr, for the tunic of the presbyter being brought back from the relics and placed upon his body he revived."<sup>1</sup> A writer who complains of the bareness of narratives, should certainly not curtail their statements. Dr. Mozley continues: "There are three other cases of the same kind, in which there is nothing to verify the death from which the return to life is said to take place, as being more than mere suspension of the vital powers; but the writer does not go into particulars of description or proof, but simply inserts them in his list as they have been reported to him."<sup>2</sup>

Dr. Mozley is anxious to detract from the miracles described by Augustine, and we regret to be obliged to maintain that in order to do so he misrepresents, no doubt unintentionally, Augustine's statements, and, as we think, also unduly depreciates the comparative value of the evidence. We shall briefly refer to the two points in question. I. That "his notices of the cases in which persons had been raised to life again are so short,

<sup>1</sup> Eucharis est presbyter ex Hispania, Calamæ habitat, veteri morbo calculi laborabat; per memoriam supradicti martyris, quam Possidius illo advexit episcopus, salvus factus est. Idem ipse postea morbo alio prævalente, &c., &c. De Civ. Dei, xxii. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Bampton Lectures, p. 372 f.

bare, and summary that they evidently represent no more than mere report, and report of a very vague kind. II. "That with the preface which Augustine prefixes to his list, he cannot be said even to profess to guarantee the truth or accuracy of the different instances contained in it."

It is true that in several cases Augustine gives the account of miraculous cures at greater length than those of restoration to life. It seems to us that this is almost inevitable at all times, and that the reason is obvious. Where the miracle consists merely of the cure of disease, details are naturally given to show the nature and intensity of the sickness, and they are necessary not only for the comprehension of the cure but to show its importance. In the case of restoration to life, the mere statement of the death and assertion of the subsequent resurrection exclude all need of details. The pithy *reddita est vita*, or *factum est et revixit* is more striking than any more prolix narrative. In fact, the greater the miracle the more natural is conciseness and simplicity; and practically, we find that Augustine gives a more lengthy and verbose report of trifling cures, whilst he relates the more important with greater brevity and force. He narrates many of his cases of miraculous cure, however, as briefly as those in which the dead are raised. We have quoted the latter, and the reader must judge whether they are unduly curt. One thing may be affirmed, that nothing of importance is omitted, and in regard to essential details they are as explicit as the mass of other cases reported. In every instance names and addresses are stated, and it will have been observed that all these miracles occurred in, or close to, Hippo, and in his own diocese. It is very certain that in

every case the fact of the miracle is asserted in the most direct and positive terms. There can be no mistake either as to the meaning or intention of the narrative, and there is no symptom whatever of a thought on the part of Augustine to avoid the responsibility of his statements, or to give them as mere vague report. If we compare these accounts with those of the Gospels, we do not find them deficient in any essential detail common to the latter. There is in the synoptic Gospels only one case in which Jesus is said to have raised the dead. The raising of Jairus' daughter<sup>1</sup> has long been abandoned, as a case of restoration to life, by all critics and theologians, except the few who still persist in ignoring the distinct and positive declaration of Jesus, "The damsel is not dead but sleepeth." The only case, therefore, in the Synoptics is the account in the third Gospel of the raising of the widow's son,<sup>2</sup> of which, strange to say, the other Gospels know nothing. Now, although, as might have been expected, this narrative is much more highly coloured and picturesque, the difference is chiefly literary, and, indeed, there are really fewer important details given than in the account by Augustine, for instance, of the restoration to life of the daughter of Bassus the Syrian, which took place at Hippo, of which he was bishop, and where he actually resided. Augustine's object in giving his list of miracles did not require him to write picturesque narratives. He merely desired to state bare facts, whilst the authors of the Gospels composed the Life of their Master, in which interesting details were everything. For many reasons we refrain here from alluding to the artistic narrative of the raising

<sup>1</sup> Matt. ix. 18, 19, 23—26; Mark v. 22, 24, 35—43; Luke viii. 41, 42, 49—56.

<sup>2</sup> Luke vii. 11—16.

of Lazarus, the greatest miracle ascribed to Jesus, yet so singularly unknown to the other three Evangelists, who, so readily repeating the accounts of trifling cures, would most certainly not have neglected this had they ever heard of it.

Dr. Mozley complains of the absence of verification and proof of actual death in these cases, or that they were more than mere suspension of the vital powers. We cordially agree with him in the desire for such evidence, not only in these, but in all miracles. We would ask, however, what verification of the death have we in the case of the widow's son which we have not here? If we apply such a test to the miracles of the Gospels, we must reject them as certainly as those of St. Augustine. In neither case have we more than a mere statement that the subjects of these miracles were dead or diseased. So far are we from having any competent medical evidence of the reality of the death, or of the disease, or of the permanence of the supposed cures in the Gospels, that we have little more than the barest reports of these miracles by writers who, even if their identity were established, were not, and do not pretend to have been, eye-witnesses of the occurrences which they relate. Take, for instance, this very raising of the widow's son in the third Gospel, which is unknown to the other Evangelists, and the narrative of which is given only in a Gospel which is not attributed to a personal follower of Jesus.

Now we turn to the second statement of Dr. Mozley, "that with the preface which Augustine prefixes to his list, he cannot be said even to profess to guarantee the truth or accuracy of the different instances contained in it." This extraordinary assertion is supported by a quota-

tion given above, which Dr. Mozley has separated from what precedes and follows it, so that its real meaning is scarcely apparent. We shall as briefly as possible state what is actually the "preface" of St. Augustine to his list of miracles, and his avowed object for giving it. In the preceding chapter, Augustine has been arguing that the world believed in Christ by virtue of divine influence and not by human persuasion. He contends that it is ridiculous to speak of the false divinity of Romulus when Christians speak of Christ. If, in the time of Romulus, some 600 years before Cicero, people were so enlightened that they refused to believe anything of which they had not experience, how much more, in the still more enlightened days of Cicero himself, and notably in the reigns of Augustus and Tiberius, would they have rejected belief in the resurrection and ascension of Christ, if divine truth and the testimony of miracles had not proved not only that such things could take place, but that they had actually done so. When the evidence of prophecy joined with that of miracles, and showed that the new doctrines were only contrary to experience and not contrary to reason, the world embraced the faith.<sup>1</sup> "Why, then, say they, do these miracles which you declare to have taken place formerly, not occur now-a-days?" Augustine, in replying, adopts a common rhetorical device: "I might, indeed, answer," he says, "that miracles were necessary before the world believed, in order that the world might believe. Any one who now requires miracles in order that he may believe, is himself a great miracle in not believing what all the world believes. But, really, they say this in order that even those miracles should not be believed either."

<sup>1</sup> De Civ. Dei, xxii. 7.

And he reduces what he considers to be the position of the world in regard to miracles and to the supernatural dogmas of Christianity to the following dilemma : “ Either things incredible which nevertheless occurred, and were seen, led to belief in something else incredible, which was not seen ; or that thing was in itself so credible that no miracles were required to establish it, and so much more is the unbelief of those who deny confuted. This might I say to these most frivolous objectors.” He then proceeds to affirm that it cannot be denied that many miracles attest the great miracle of the ascension in the flesh of the risen Christ, and he points out that the actual occurrence of all these things is not only recorded in the most truthful books, but the reasons also given why they took place. These things have become known that they might create belief ; these things by the belief they have created have become much more clearly known. They are read to the people, indeed, that they may believe ; yet, nevertheless, they would not be read to the people if they had not been believed. After thus stating the answer which he might give, Augustine now returns to answer the question directly :—“ But, furthermore,” he continues, “ miracles are performed now in his name, either by means of his sacraments, or by the prayers or relics of his saints, but they are not rendered illustrious by the same renown as caused the former to be noised abroad with so much glory ; inasmuch as the canon of sacred scriptures, which must be definite, causes those miracles to be everywhere proclaimed, and become firmly fixed in the memory of all peoples ;”<sup>1</sup> and then follows Dr. Mozley’s

<sup>1</sup> *Nam etiam nunc fiunt miracula in ejus nomine, sive per sacramenta ejus, sive per orationes vel memorias sanctorum ejus, sed non eadem*

quotation : "but these are scarcely known to the whole of a city itself in which they are performed, or to its neighbourhood. Indeed, for the most part, even there very few knew of them, and the rest are ignorant more especially if the city be large ; and when they are related elsewhere and to others, the authority does not so commend them as to make them be believed without difficulty or doubt, albeit they are reported by faithful Christians to the faithful." He illustrates this by pointing out in immediate continuation, that the miracle in Milan by the bodies of the two martyrs, which took place when he himself was there, might reach the knowledge of many, because the city is large, and the Emperor and an immense crowd of people witnessed it, but who knows of the miracle performed at Carthage upon his friend Innocent, when he was there also, and saw it with his own eyes ? Who knows of the miraculous cure of cancer, he continues, in a lady of rank in the same city ? at the silence regarding which he is so indignant. Who knows of the next case he mentions in his list ? the cure of a medical man of the same town, to which he adds : "We, nevertheless, do know it, and a few brethren to whose knowledge it may have come."<sup>1</sup> Who out of Curubus, besides the very few who may have heard of it, knows of the miraculous cure of the paralytic man, whose case Augustine personally investigated ? and so on. Observe that there is merely a question of the comparative notoriety of the Gospel

*claritate illustrantur, ut tanta quanta illa gloria diffamentur. Canon quippe sacrarum Literarum, quem definitum esse oportebat, illa facit ubique recitari, et memoriæ cunctorum inhaerere populorum : &c. De Civ. Dei, xxii. 8.*

<sup>1</sup> *Nos tamen novimus, et paucissimi fratres ad quos id potuit pervenire. Ib., xxii. 8.*

miracles and those of his own time, not a doubt as to the reality of the latter. Again, towards the end of his long list, immediately after the narrative of the restoration to life of the child of Eleusinus, which we have quoted, Augustine says :—“What can I do? The promise of the completion of this work is pressing, so that I cannot here recount all (the miracles) that I know; and without doubt many of our brethren when they read this work will be grieved that I have omitted so very much, which they know as well as I do. This I even now beg that they will pardon, and consider how long would be the task of doing that which, for the completion of the work, it is thought necessary not to do. For if I desired to record merely miracles of healing, without speaking of others, which have been performed by this martyr, that is to say, the most glorious Stephen, in the district of Calama, and in ours of Hippo, many volumes would be required, yet nevertheless not all of these could be comprised, but only such as are consigned to writing, which are read to the people. For we have ordered this to be done, that we might see repeated in our time signs of divine power similar to those of old, and they ought not to be lost to the knowledge of the multitude. Now it is not yet two years since this relic has been at Hippo-Regius, and accounts of many of the miracles performed by it have not been written, as is most certainly known to us, yet the number of those which have been given, up to the time this is written, amounts to about seventy. At Calama, however, where these relics have been longer, and more of the miracles were recorded, they amount to an incomparable multitude.”

<sup>1</sup> *Quid faciam? Urget hujus operis implendi promissio, ut non hic*

Augustine goes on to say that, to his knowledge, many very remarkable miracles were performed by the relics of the same martyr also at Uzali, a district near to Utica, and of one of these, which had recently taken place when he himself was there, he gives an account. Then, before closing his list with the narrative of a miracle which took place at Hippo, in his own church, in his own presence, and in the sight of the whole congregation, he resumes his reply to the opening question:—"Many miracles, therefore," he says, "are also performed now, the same God who worked those of which we read, performing these by whom he wills and as he wills; but these miracles neither become similarly known, nor, that they may not slip out of mind, are they stamped in, as it were like the gravel of memory, by frequent reading. For even in places where care is taken, as is now the case amongst us, that accounts of those who receive benefit should be publicly read, those who are present hear them only once, and many are not present at all, so that those who were present do not, after a few days, remember

*possim omnia commemorare quæ scio: et procul dubio plerique nostrorum, cum hæc legent, dolebunt me tam multa prætermisisse, quæ utique mecum sciunt. Quos jam nunc, ut ignoscant, rogo; et cogitent quam prolixi laboris sit facere, quod me hic non facere suscepti operis necessitas cogit. Si enim miracula sanitarum, ut alia taceam ea tantummodo velim scribere, quæ per hunc martyrem, id est, gloriosissimum Stephanum, facta sunt in colonia Calamensi, et in nostra, plurimi conficiendi sunt libri: nec tamen omnia colligi poterunt, sed tantum de quibus libelli dati sunt, qui recitarentur in populis. Id namque fieri volumus; cum videremus antiquis similia divinarum signa virtutum etiam nostris temporibus frequentari; et ea non debere multorum notitiæ deperire. Nondum est autem biennium, ex quo apud Hipponem-Regium copit esse ista memoria, et multis, quod nobis certissimum est, non datis libellis, de iis quæ mirabiliter facta sunt, illi ipsi qui dati sunt ad septuaginta ferme numerum pervenerant, quando ista conscripsi. Calamæ vero, ubi et ipsa memoria prius esse copit et crebrius dantur, incomparabili multitudine superant. De Civ. Dei, xxii. 8.*

what they heard, and scarcely a single person is met with who repeats what he hears to one whom he may have known to have been absent.”<sup>1</sup>

So far from casting doubt upon the miracles which he narrates, the “Preface” of Augustine is clearly intended to establish them. These “signs of divine power similar to those of old,” are not less real and important, but merely less known, because the eyes of the world are not directed to them, and they have not the advantage of being everywhere published abroad by means of canonical scriptures constantly read to the people and acknowledged as authoritative. Dr. Mozley’s statement is quite unwarranted, and it seems to us gratuitously injurious to St. Augustine. This Father of the Church and Bishop must have had as little good faith as good sense, if he did what such a statement implies. In order to demonstrate the truth of his assertion that miracles were still performed in his day, Dr. Mozley represents Augustine as deliberately producing a long list of instances of which “he cannot even be said to guarantee the truth,” and the more important cases in which “evidently represent no more than mere report, and report of a very vague kind.” We have furnished the reader with the materials for forming an opinion on these points. The judgment of Dr. Mozley may with equal justice be applied to

<sup>1</sup> *Fiunt ergo etiam nunc multa miracula, eodem Deo faciente per quos vult, et quemadmodum vult, qui et illa quæ legimus fecit: sed ista nec similiter innotescent, neque, ut non excidant animo, quasi glarea memoriæ, crebra lectione tunduntur. Nam et ubi diligentia est, quæ nunc apud nos esse cœpit, ut libelli eorum qui beneficia percipiunt, recitentur in populo, semel hoc audiunt qui adsunt, pluresque non adsunt ut nec illi qui adfuerunt, post aliquot dies, quod audierunt, mente retineant, et vix quisquam reperiat illorum, qui ei quem non adfuisse cognoverit, indicet quod audivit. De Civ. Dei, xxii. 8.*

the authors of the synoptic Gospels. They certainly do not guarantee the truth of the miracles they relate in any more precise way than Augustine. Like him, they merely narrate them as facts, and he as evidently believes what he states as they do. Indeed, as regards comparative fulness of testimony, the advantage is altogether on the side of the miracles reported by St. Augustine. These miracles occurred within two years of the time at which he wrote, and were at once recorded with the names of the subjects and of the places at which they occurred; most of them were performed in his own diocese, and several of them in his own presence; some, of which he apparently did not feel sure, he personally investigated; he states his knowledge of others, and he narrates the whole of them with the most direct and simple affirmation of the facts, without a single word indicating hesitation, or directly or indirectly attributing the narrative to mere report. Moreover, he not only advances these miracles deliberately and in writing, in support of his positive assertion that miracles were still performed, but these accounts of them had in the first instance been written that they might be publicly read in his own church for the edification of Christians, almost on the very spot where they are stated to have occurred. We need scarcely say that we do not advance these reasons in order to argue the reality of the miracles themselves, but simply to maintain that, so far from his giving the account of them as mere report, or not even professing to vouch for their truth, St. Augustine both believed them himself, and asked others to believe them as facts, and that they are as unhesitatingly affirmed as any related in the Gospels.

We shall not attempt any further detailed reference to the myriads of miracles with which the annals of the Church teem up to very recent times. The fact is too well known to require evidence. The saints in the Calendar are legion. It has been computed that the number of those whose lives are given in the Bollandist Collection<sup>1</sup> amounts to upwards of 25,000, although, the saints being arranged according to the Calendar, the unfinished work only reaches the twenty-fourth of October. When it is considered that all those upon whom the honour of canonization is conferred have worked miracles, many of them, indeed, almost daily performing such wonders, some idea may be formed of the number of miracles which have occurred in unbroken succession from Apostolic days, and have been believed and recognized by the Church. Vast numbers of these miracles are in all respects similar to those narrated in the Gospels, and they comprise hundreds of cases of restoration of the dead to life. If it be necessary to point out instances in comparatively recent times, we may mention the miracles of this kind liberally ascribed to St. Francis of Assisi, in the 13th century, and to his namesake St. Francis Xavier, in the 16th, as pretty well known to all, although we might refer to much more recent miracles authenticated by the Church. At the present day such phenomena have almost disappeared, and, indeed, with the exception of an occasional winking picture, periodical liquefaction of blood, or apparition of the Virgin, confined to the still ignorant and benighted corners of the earth, miracles are extinct.

<sup>1</sup> *Acta Sanctorum quotquot toto orbe coluntur; collegit, &c., Joannes Bollandus, cum contin. Henschenii, 54 vol. fol. Venetiis, 1734—1801.*

## CHAPTER VI.

λ

### MIRACLES IN RELATION TO IGNORANCE AND SUPERSTITION.

WE have maintained that the miracles which are reported after apostolic days, instead of presenting the enormous distinction which Dr. Mozley asserts, are precisely of the same types in all material points as the earlier miracles. Setting aside miracles of a trivial and unworthy character, there remains a countless number cast in the same mould as those of the Gospels,—miraculous cure of diseases, expulsion of demons, transformation of elements, supernatural nourishment, resurrection of dead—of many of which we have quoted instances. Dr. Mozley anticipates an objection and says: “It will be urged, perhaps, that a large portion even of the Gospel miracles are of the class here mentioned as ambiguous; cures, visions, expulsions of evil spirits; but this observation does not affect the character of the Gospel miracles as a body, because we judge of the body or whole from its highest specimen, not from its lowest.” He takes his stand upon, “*e.g.* our Lord’s Resurrection and Ascension.”<sup>1</sup> Now, without discussing the principle laid down here, it is evident that the great distinction between the Gospel and other miracles is thus narrowed to a very small compass. It is admitted that the mass of the Gospel miracles are of a class characterized as ambiguous, because “the current

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, p. 214.

miracles of human history" are also chiefly of the same type, and the distinctive character is derived avowedly only from a few high specimens, such as the Resurrection. We have already referred to the fact that in the synoptic Gospels there is only one case, reported by the third Gospel alone, in which Jesus is said to have raised the dead. St. Augustine alone, however, chronicles several cases in which life was restored to the dead. Post-apostolic miracles, therefore, are far from lacking this ennobling type. Observe that Dr. Mozley is here not so much discussing the reality of the subsequent miracles of the Church, as contrasting them and other reputed miracles with those of the Gospel, and from this point of view it is impossible to maintain that the Gospels have a monopoly of the highest class of miracles. Such miracles are met with long before the dawn of Christianity, and continued to occur long after apostolic times.

Much stress is laid upon the form of the Gospel miracles ; but as we have already shown, it is the actual resurrection of the dead, for instance, which is the miracle, and this is not affected by the more or less dramatic manner in which it is said to have been effected, or in which the narrative of the event is composed. Literary skill, and the judicious management of details, may make or mar the form of any miracle. The narrative of the restoration of the dead child to life by Elisha might have been more impressive, had the writer omitted the circumstance that the child sneezed seven times before opening his eyes, and Dr. Mozley would probably have considered the miracle greater had the prophet merely said to the child, " Arise ?" instead of stretching himself on the body ; but setting aside human cravings

for the picturesque and artistic, the essence of the miracle would have remained the same. There is one point, however, regarding which it may be well to make a few remarks. Whilst a vast number of miracles are ascribed to direct personal action of saints, many more are attributed to their relics. Now this is no exclusive characteristic of later miracles, but Christianity itself shares it with still earlier times. The case in which a dead body which touched the bones of Elisha was restored to life will occur to every one. "And it came to pass, as they were burying a man, that, behold, they spied a band of Moabites; and they cast the man into the sepulchre of Elisha: and when the man was let down, and touched the bones of Elisha, he revived, and stood up on his feet."<sup>1</sup> The mantle of Elijah smiting asunder the waters before Elisha may be cited as another instance.<sup>2</sup> The woman who touches the hem of the garment of Jesus in the crowd is made whole,<sup>3</sup> and all the sick and "possessed" of the country are represented as being healed by touching Jesus, or even the mere hem of his garment.<sup>4</sup> It was supposed that the shadow of Peter falling on the sick as he passed had a curative effect,<sup>5</sup> and it is very positively stated: "And God wrought miracles of no common kind by the hands of Paul; so that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them."<sup>6</sup>

The argument which assumes an enormous distinction

<sup>1</sup> 2 Kings xiii. 21.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Kings ii. 14, cf. 8. In raising the dead child, Elisha sends his staff to be laid on the child.

<sup>3</sup> Mark v. 27 ff.; cf. Luke viii. 44 ff.; Matt. ix. 20 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. xiv. 36; cf. Luke vi. 19; Mark iii. 10.

<sup>5</sup> Acts v. 15.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, xix. 11, 12.

between Gospel and other miracles betrays the prevalent scepticism, even in the Church, of all miracles except those which it is considered an article of faith to maintain. If we inquire how those think who are more logical and thorough in their belief in the supernatural, we find the distinction denied. "The question," says Dr. Newman, "has hitherto been argued on the admission, that a distinct line can be drawn in point of character and circumstances, between the miracles of Scripture and those of Church history; but this is by no means the case. It is true, indeed, that the miracles of Scripture, viewed as a whole, recommend themselves to our reason, and claim our veneration beyond all others, by a peculiar dignity and beauty; but still it is only as a whole that they make this impression upon us. Some of them, on the contrary, fall short of the attributes which attach to them in general; nay, are inferior in these respects to certain ecclesiastical miracles, and are received only on the credit of the system of which they form part. Again, specimens are not wanting in the history of the Church, of miracles as awful in their character, and as momentous in their effects, as those which are recorded in Scripture."<sup>1</sup> Now here is one able and thorough supporter of miracles denying the enormous distinction between those of the Gospel and those of human history, which another admits to be essential to the former as evidence of a revelation.

Dr. Mozley, however, meets such a difficulty by asserting that there would be no disadvantage to the Gospel miracles, and no doubt regarding them involved, if for some later miracles there was evidence as strong as for those of the Gospel. "All the result would be," he says,

<sup>1</sup> *J. H. Newman, Two Essays on Miracles, p. 160 f.*

“that we should admit these miracles over and above the Gospel ones.”<sup>1</sup> He denies the equality of the evidence, however, in any case. “Between the evidence, then, upon which the Gospel miracles stand, and that for later miracles we see a broad distinction arising, not to mention again the nature and type of the Gospel miracles themselves—from the contemporaneous date of the testimony to them, the character of the witnesses, the probation of the testimony; especially when we contrast with these points the false doctrine and audacious fraud which rose up in later ages, and in connection with which so large a portion of the later miracles of Christianity made their appearance.”<sup>2</sup> We consider the point touching the type of the Gospel miracles disposed of, and we may, therefore, confine ourselves to the rest of this argument. If we look for any external evidence of the miracles of Jesus in any marked effect produced by them at the time they are said to have occurred, we find anything but confirmation of the statements of the Gospels.

It is a notorious fact that, in spite of these miracles, very few of the Jews amongst whom they were performed believed in Jesus, and that Christianity made its chief converts not where the supposed miracles took place, but where an account of them was alone given by enthusiastic missionaries. Such astounding exhibitions of power as raising the dead, giving sight to the blind, walking on the sea, changing water into wine, and indefinitely multiplying a few loaves and fishes, not only did not make any impression on the Jews themselves, but were never heard of out of Palestine until long after the events are said to have occurred, when the narrative of them was slowly disseminated by Christian teachers and writers.

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, p. 231.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 220 f.

Dr. Mozley refers to the contemporary testimony "for certain great and cardinal Gospel miracles which, if granted, clear away all antecedent objection to the reception of the rest," and he says: "That the first promulgators of Christianity asserted, as a fact which had come under the cognizance of their senses, the Resurrection of our Lord from the dead, is as certain as anything in history."<sup>1</sup> What they really did assert, so far from being so certain as Dr. Mozley states, must, as we shall hereafter see, be considered matter of the greatest doubt. But if the general statement be taken that the Resurrection, for instance, was promulgated as a fact which the early preachers of Christianity themselves believed to have taken place, the evidence does not in that case present the broad distinction he asserts. The miracles recounted by St. Athanasius and St. Augustine, for example, were likewise proclaimed with equal clearness, and even greater promptitude and publicity at the very spot where many of them were said to have been performed, and the details were much more immediately reduced to writing. The mere assertion in neither case goes for much as evidence, but the fact is that we have absolutely no contemporaneous testimony at all as to what the first promulgators of Christianity actually asserted, or as to the real grounds upon which they made such assertions. We shall presently enter upon a thorough examination of the testimony for the Gospel narratives, their age and authenticity, but we may here be permitted, so far to anticipate, as to remark that, applied to documentary evidence, Dr. Mozley's reasoning from the contemporaneous date of the testimony, and the character of

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, p. 219.

the witnesses, is contradicted by the whole history of New Testament literature. Whilst the most uncritically zealous assertors of the antiquity of the Gospels never venture to date the earliest of them within a quarter of a century from the death of Jesus, every tyro is aware that there is not a particle of evidence of the existence of our Gospels until very long after that interval,—hereafter we shall show how long;—that two of our synoptic Gospels at least were not, in any case, composed in their present form by the writers to whom they are attributed; that there is, indeed, nothing worthy of the name of evidence that any one of these Gospels was written at all by the persons whose names they bear; that the second Gospel is attributed to one who was not an eye-witness, and of whose identity there is the greatest doubt even amongst those who assert the authorship of Mark; that the third Gospel is an avowed later compilation,<sup>1</sup> and likewise ascribed to one who was not a follower of Jesus himself; and that the authorship of the fourth Gospel and its historical character are amongst the most unsettled questions of criticism, not to use here any more definite terms. This being the state of the case it is absurd to lay such emphasis on the contemporaneous date of the testimony, and on the character of the witnesses, since it has not even been determined who those witnesses are, and two even of the supposed evangelists were not personal eye-witnesses at all.<sup>2</sup> Surely the testimony of Athanasius regarding the miracles of St. Anthony, and that of Augustine regard-

<sup>1</sup> Luke i. 1—4.

<sup>2</sup> We need scarcely point out that Paul, to whom so many of the writings of the New Testament are ascribed, and who practically is the author of ecclesiastical Christianity, not only was not an eye-witness of the Gospel miracles but never even saw Jesus.

ing his list of miracles occurring in or close to his own diocese within two years of the time at which he writes, or, to refer to more recent times, the evidence of Pascal for the Port-Royal miracles, must be admitted not only not to present the broad distinction of evidence of which Dr. Mozley speaks, but on the contrary to be even more unassailable than that of the Gospel miracles. The Church, which is the authority for those miracles, is also the authority for the long succession of such works wrought by the saints. The identity of the writers we have instanced has never been doubted; their trustworthiness, in so far as stating what they believe to be true is concerned, has never been impugned; the same could be affirmed of writers in every age who record such miracles. The broad distinction of evidence for which Dr. Mozley contends, does not exist; it does not lie within the scope of his lectures either to define or prove it, and he does not of course commit the error of assuming the inspiration of the records. The fact is that theologians demand evidence for later miracles which they have not for those of the Gospels, and which transmitted reverence forbids their requiring. They strain out a gnat and swallow a camel.

Dr. Mozley points to the life of sacrifice and suffering of the Apostles as a remarkable and peculiar testimony to the truth of the Gospel miracles, and notably of the Resurrection and Ascension.<sup>1</sup> Without examining, here, how much we really know of those lives and sufferings, one thing is perfectly evident: that sacrifice, suffering, and martyrdom itself are evidence of nothing except of the personal belief of the person enduring them; they do not prove the truth of the doctrines believed. No

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, p. 225.

one doubts the high religious enthusiasm of the early Christians, or the earnest and fanatical zeal with which they courted martyrdom, but this is no exclusive characteristic of Christianity. Every religion has had its martyrs, every error its devoted victims. Does the marvellous endurance of the Hindoo, whose limbs wither after years of painful persistence in vows to his Deity, prove the truth of Brahmanism? or do the fanatical believers who cast themselves under the wheels of the car of Jagganath establish the soundness of their creed? Do the Jews, who for centuries bore the fiercest contumelies of the world, and were persecuted, hunted, and done to death by every conceivable torture for persisting in their denial of the truth of the Incarnation, Resurrection, and Ascension, and in their rejection of Jesus Christ, do they thus furnish a convincing argument for the truth of their belief and the falsity of Christianity? Or have the thousands who have been consigned to the stake by the Christian Church herself for persisting in asserting what she has denounced as damnable heresy, proved the correctness of their views by their sufferings and death? History is full of the records of men who have honestly believed every kind of error and heresy, and have been steadfast to the death, through persecution and torture, in their mistaken belief. There is nothing so inflexible as superstitious fanaticism, and persecution, instead of extinguishing it, has invariably been the most certain means of its propagation. The sufferings of the Apostles, therefore, cannot prove anything beyond their own belief, and the question what it was they really did believe and suffered for is by no means so simple as it appears.

Now the long succession of ecclesiastical and other

miracles has an important bearing upon those of the New Testament, whether we believe or deny their reality. If we regard the miracles of Church history to be in the main real, the whole force of the Gospel miracles, as exceptional supernatural evidence of a Divine Revelation, is annihilated. The "miraculous credentials of Christianity" assume a very different aspect when they are considered from such a point of view. Admitted to be scarcely recognizable from miracles wrought by Satanic agency, they are seen to be a continuation of wonders recorded in the Old Testament, to be preceded and accompanied by pretension to similar power on the part of the Jews and other nations, and to be succeeded by cycles of miracles, in all essential respects the same, performed subsequently for upwards of fifteen hundred years. Supernatural evidence of so common and prodigal a nature certainly betrays a great want of force and divine speciality. How could that be considered as express evidence for a new Divine Revelation which was already so well known to the world, and which is scattered broad-cast over so many centuries, as well as successfully simulated by Satan?

If, on the other hand, we dismiss the miracles of later ages as false, and as merely the creations of superstition or pious imagination, how can the miracles of the Gospel, which are precisely the same in type, and not better established as facts, remain unshaken? The Apostles and Evangelists were men of like passions, and also of like superstitions with others of their time, and must be measured by the same standard. Dr. Mozley will not admit that, even in such a case, the difficulty of distinguishing the true miracles amongst the mass of

spurious justifies the rejection of all, and he demands a judicial process in each case, and settlement according to the evidence in that case.<sup>1</sup> We might reply that if the great mass of asserted miracles be determined to be spurious, there is no reason shown for entering upon a more minute consideration of pretensions, which knowledge and experience force us *a priori* to regard as incredible, and which examination, in so many cases, has proved to be delusion. Even if the plea, that "the evidence of the Gospel miracles is a special case which must be decided on its own grounds," be admitted, it must be apparent that the rejection of the mass of other miracles is serious presumptive evidence also against them.

## 2.

It must be confessed that the argument for the reality of miracles receives very little strength from the character of either the early or the later ages of Christianity. "It is but too plain," says Dr. Mozley, "in discussing ecclesiastical miracles, that in later ages, as the Church advanced in worldly power and position, besides the mistakes of imagination and impression, a temper of deliberate and audacious fraud set itself in action for the spread of certain doctrines, as well as for the great object of the concentration of Church power in one absolute monarchy."<sup>2</sup> We have already quoted words of Dean Milman regarding the frame of mind of the early Church, and it may not be out of place to add a few lines from the same writer. Speaking of the writings of the first ages of Christianity, he says: "That some of the Christian legends were deliberate forgeries

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, p. 234 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 228.

can scarcely be questioned ; the principle of pious fraud appeared to justify this mode of working on the popular mind ; it was admitted and avowed. To deceive into Christianity was so valuable a service as to hallow deceit itself. But the largest portion was probably the natural birth of that imaginative excitement which quickens its day-dreams and nightly visions into reality. The Christian lived in a supernatural world ; the notion of the divine power, the perpetual interference of the Deity, the agency of the countless invisible beings which hovered over mankind, was so strongly impressed upon the belief, that every extraordinary, and almost every ordinary incident became a miracle, every inward emotion a suggestion either of a good or an evil spirit. A mythic period was thus gradually formed, in which reality melted into fable, and invention unconsciously trespassed on the province of history.”<sup>1</sup> Whether we look upon this picture or on that, the result is equally unfavourable to miracles, and a ready explanation both of the earlier and later instances is suggested. We must, however, again recall the fact that, setting aside for the present the effect of pious fraud, this vivid and superstitious imagination, which so freely created for itself the miraculous, was not merely developed by Christianity, but was equally rampant before it, and was a marked characteristic of the Jews. The same writer, in a passage already quoted, says : “ During the whole life of Christ, and the early propagation of the religion, it must be borne in mind that they took place in an age, and among a people which superstition had made so familiar with what were supposed to be preternatural events, that wonders awakened no emotion, or were

<sup>1</sup> *Milman, History of Christianity, iii. p. 358.*

speedily superseded by some new demand on the ever ready belief. The Jews of that period not only believed that the Supreme Being had the power of controlling the course of nature, but that the same influence was possessed by multitudes of subordinate spirits, both good and evil."<sup>1</sup> Between the "superstition," "imaginative excitement," and "pious fraud" of the early Church, and the "deliberate and audacious fraud" of the later, we have abundant material for the natural explanation of all supposed miracles, without going to such an extreme hypothesis as exceptions to the order of Nature, or supposing that a few miracles can be accepted as supernatural facts, whilst all the rest must be discarded as human fables.

It is certain that throughout the whole period during which miracles are said to have been performed, gross ignorance and superstition prevailed, and nowhere more so than amongst the Jews where those miracles occurred. Almost every operation of nature was inexplicable, and everything which was inexplicable was considered supernatural. Miracles seemed as credible to the mind of that age as deviations from the order of nature seem incredible in ours. It is a suggestive fact that miracles are limited to periods when almost every common incident was readily ascribed to supernatural agency. ( There is, however, one remarkable circumstance which casts some light upon the origin of narratives of miracles. Throughout the New Testament, patristic literature, and the records of ecclesiastical miracles, although we have narratives of countless wonderful works performed by others than the writers, and abundant assertion of the possession of miraculous power by the Church, there is

<sup>1</sup> *Milman, History of Christianity*, iii. p. 85.

no instance whatever, that we can remember, in which a writer claims to have himself performed a miracle. Wherever there has existed even the comparatively accurate means of information which a person who himself performed a miracle might possess, the miraculous entirely fails, and it is found only where faith or credulity usurps the place of knowledge. Pious men were perfectly ready to believe the supposed miracles of others, and to report them as facts, who were too veracious to imagine any of their own.) Even if Apostles and Saints had chronicled their own miraculous deeds, the argument for their reality would not have been much advanced; but the uniform absence of such personal pretension enables us more clearly to trace such narratives to pious credulity or superstition.

If we consider the particular part which miracles have played in human history, we find precisely the phenomena which might have been expected if miracles, instead of being considered as real occurrences, were recognized as the mistakes or creations of ignorance and superstition during that period in which "reality melted into fable, and invention unconsciously trespassed on the province of history." Their occurrence is limited to ages which were totally ignorant of physical laws, and they have been numerous or rare precisely in proportion to the degree of imagination and love of the marvellous characterizing the people amongst whom they are said to have occurred. Instead of a few evidential miracles taking place at one epoch of history, and filling the world with surprise at such novel and exceptional phenomena, we find miracles represented as taking place in all ages and in all countries. The Gospel miracles are set in the midst of a series of similar wonders, which commenced

many centuries before the dawn of Christianity and continued, without interruption, for fifteen hundred years after it. They did not in the most remote degree originate the belief in miracles, or give the first suggestion of spurious imitation. It may, on the contrary, be much more truly said that the already existing belief created these miracles. No divine originality characterized the evidence selected to accredit the Divine Revelation. The miracles with which the history of the world is full occurred in ages of darkness and superstition, and they gradually ceased when enlightenment became more generally diffused. At the very time when knowledge of the laws of nature began to render men capable of judging of the reality of miracles, these wonders entirely failed. This extraordinary cessation of miracles, precisely at the time when their evidence might have acquired value by an appeal to persons capable of appreciating them, is perfectly unintelligible if they be viewed as the supernatural credentials of a Divine revelation. If, on the other hand, they be regarded as the mistakes of imaginative excitement and ignorance, nothing is more natural than their extinction at the time when the superstition which created them gave place to knowledge.

As a historical fact there is nothing more certain than that miracles, and the belief in them, disappeared exactly when education and knowledge of the operation of natural laws became diffused throughout Europe, and that the last traces of belief in supernatural interference with the order of nature are only to be found in localities where ignorance and superstition still prevail, and render delusion or pious fraud of that description possible. Miracles are now denied to places more enlightened

than Naples or La Salette. The inevitable inference from this fact is fatal to the mass of miracles, and it is not possible to protect them from it. Miracle cures by the relics of saints, upheld for fifteen centuries by all the power of the Church, utterly failed when medical science, increasing in spite of persecution, demonstrated the natural action of physiological laws. / The theory of the demoniacal origin of disease has been entirely and for ever dispelled, and the host of miracles in connection with it retrospectively exploded by the progress of science. ) Witchcraft and sorcery, the belief in which reigned supreme for so many centuries, are known to have been nothing but the delusions of ignorant superstition. “À l'époque où les faits merveilleux qui s'y (dans les légendes) trouvent consignés étaient rapportés,” asks an able French writer, “possédait-on les lumières suffisantes pour exercer une critique véritable et sérieuse sur des témoignages que venaient affirmer des faits en contradiction avec nos connaissances? Or, on peut assurer hardiment que non. Au moyen-âge, l'intime conviction que la nature voit très fréquemment ses lois interverties par la volonté divine régnait dans les esprits, en sorte que pour peu qu'un fait se présentât avec des apparences extraordinaires, on se hâtait de le regarder comme un miracle, comme l'œuvre directe de la divinité. Aujourd'hui on cherche au contraire à tout rapporter à la loi commune; on est tellement sobre de faits miraculeux, que ceux qui paraissent tels sont écartés comme des fables ou tenus pour des faits ordinaires mal expliqués. La foi aux miracles a disparu. En outre, au moyen-âge le cercle des connaissances qu'on possédait sur la nature était fort restreint, et tout ce qui n'y rentrait pas était regardé comme surnaturel. Actuelle-

ment ce cercle s'agrandit sans cesse ; et loin d'en avoir arrêté définitivement la limite, on le déclare infini." In a note the writer adds : " On voit par là que le nombre des miracles doit être en raison inverse du nombre des lois connues de la nature, et, qu'à mesure que celles-ci nous sont révélées, les faits merveilleux ou miraculeux s'évanouissent."<sup>1</sup> These remarks are equally applicable to the commencement of the Christian era. On the one hand, we have no other testimony for the reality of miracles than that of ages in which not only the grossest superstition and credulity prevailed, but in which there was such total ignorance of natural laws that men were incapable of judging of that reality, even if they desired impartially to investigate such occurrences, which they did not ; on the other hand, we have the sober testimony of science declaring such phenomena violations of the invariable laws of nature, and experience teaching us a perfectly simple and natural interpretation of the legends regarding them. Are we to believe ignorance and superstition or science and unvarying experience ? Science has already demonstrated the delusion involved in the largest class of miracles, and has so far established the superiority of her testimony.

In an early part of his discussion Dr. Mozley argues : " Christianity is the religion of the civilized world, and

<sup>1</sup> *L. F. Alfred Maury. Essai sur les Légendes pieuses du Moyen-âge, 1843, p. 234 f., and p. 235, note (1).*

The same arguments are employed by the late Mr. Buckle. " Hence it is that, supposing other things equal, the superstition of a nation must always bear an exact proportion to the extent of its physical knowledge. This may be in some degree verified by the ordinary experience of mankind. For if we compare the different classes of society, we shall find that they are superstitious in proportion as the phenomena with which they are brought in contact have or have not been explained by natural laws." *Hist. of Civilization, 1867, i. p. 375.*

it is believed upon its miraculous evidence. Now, for a set of miracles to be accepted in a rude age, and to retain their authority throughout a succession of such ages, and over the ignorant and superstitious part of mankind, may be no such great result for the miracle to accomplish, because it is easy to satisfy those who do not inquire. But this is not the state of the case which we have to meet on the subject of the Christian miracles. The Christian being the most intelligent, the civilized portion of the world, these miracles are accepted by the Christian body as a whole, by the thinking and educated as well as the uneducated part of it, and the Gospel is believed upon that evidence."<sup>1</sup> The picture of Christendom here suggested is purely imaginary. We are asked to believe that succeeding generations of thinking and educated as well as uneducated men, since the commencement of the period in which the adequate inquiry into the reality of miracles became possible, have made that adequate inquiry, and have intelligently and individually accepted miracles and believed the Gospel in consequence of their attestation. The fact, however, is that Christianity became the religion of Europe before men either possessed the knowledge requisite to appreciate the difficulties involved in the acceptance of miracles, or minds sufficiently freed from ignorant superstition to question the reality of the supposed supernatural interference with the order of nature, and belief had become so much a matter of habit that, in this nineteenth century, the great majority of men have professed belief for no better reason than that their fathers believed before them. Belief is now little more than a transmitted quality or hereditary custom. Few men, even

<sup>1</sup> Bampton Lectures, p. 27.

now, have either the knowledge or the leisure requisite to enable them to enter upon such an examination of miracles as can entitle Dr. Mozley to affirm that they intelligently accept miracles for themselves. We have shown, moreover, that so loose are the ideas even of the clergy upon the subject, that dignitaries of the church fail to see either the evidential purpose of miracles or the need for evidence at all, and the first intelligent step towards inquiry—doubt—has generally been stigmatized almost as a crime.

So far from Dr. Mozley's statement being correct, it is notorious that the great mass of those who are competent to examine, and who have done so, altogether reject miracles. Instead of the "thinking and educated" men of science accepting miracles, they, as a body, distinctly deny them, and hence the antagonism between science and ecclesiastical Christianity, and Dr. Mozley surely does not require to be told how many of the profoundest critics and scholars of Germany, and of all other countries in Europe, who have turned their attention to Biblical subjects, have long ago rejected the miraculous elements of the Christian religion. Such being the case we necessarily revert to the first part of Dr. Mozley's representation, and find with him, that it is no great result for miracles to accomplish merely to be accepted by, and retain authority over, a succession of ignorant and superstitious ages, "because it is easy to satisfy those who do not inquire."

It is necessary that we should now refer to the circumstance that all the arguments which we have hitherto considered in support of miracles, whether to explain or account for them, have proceeded upon an assumption of the reality of the alleged phenomena.

Had it been first requisite to establish the truth of facts of such an astounding nature, the necessity of accounting for them might never have arisen. It is clear, therefore, that an assumption which permits the argument to attain any such position begs almost the whole question. Facts, however astounding, which, it is admitted, did actually occur, claim a latitude of explanation, which a mere narrative of those alleged facts, written by an unknown person some eighteen centuries ago, could not obtain. If, for instance, it be once established as an absolute fact that a man actually dead, and some days buried, upon whose body decomposition had already made some progress,<sup>1</sup> had been restored to life, the fact of his death and of his subsequent resuscitation being so absolutely proved that the possibility of deception or of mistake on the part of the witnesses was totally excluded—if such conclusive evidence be supposed possible in such a case—it is clear that an argument as to whether such an occurrence were to be ascribed to known or unknown laws would assume a very different character indeed from that which it would have borne if the argument merely sought to account for so astounding a phenomenon of whose actual occurrence there was no reliable evidence.

It must not be forgotten, therefore, that, as the late Professor Baden Powell pointed out: “At the present day it is not *a miracle*, but the *narrative of a miracle*, to which any argument can refer, or to which faith is accorded.”<sup>2</sup> The discussion of miracles, then, is not one regarding miracles actually performed within our own knowledge, but merely regarding miracles said to have been performed eighteen hundred years ago, the reality of

<sup>1</sup> Cf. John xi. 39.

<sup>2</sup> Order of Nature, p. 285.

which was not verified at the time by any scientific examination, and whose occurrence is merely reported in the Gospels. Now, although Dr. Mozley rightly and logically maintains that Christianity requires, and should be believed only upon, its miraculous evidence, the fact is that popular Christianity is not believed because of miracles, but miracles are accepted because they are related in the Gospels which are supposed to contain the doctrines of Christianity. The Gospels have for many generations been given to the child as inspired records, and doubt of miracles has, therefore, either never arisen or been instantly suppressed, simply because miracles are recorded in the sacred volume. It could scarcely be otherwise, for in point of fact the Gospel miracles stand upon no other testimony. We are therefore in this position : We are asked to believe astounding announcements beyond the limits of human reason, which, as Dr. Mozley admits, we could only be justified in believing upon miraculous evidence, upon the testimony of miracles which are only reported by the records which also alone convey the announcements which those miracles were intended to accredit. There is no other contemporary evidence whatever. The importance of the Gospels, therefore, as the almost solitary testimony to the occurrence of miracles can scarcely be exaggerated.<sup>1</sup> We have already

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Farrar, winding up the antecedent discussion, says: “. . . we arrive at this point—that the credibility of miracles is in each instance simply and solely a question of evidence, and consequently that our belief or rejection of the Christian miracles must mainly depend on the character of the Gospels in which they are recorded.” *The Witness of History to Christ*, 1872, p. 51. It is somewhat singular that after such a declaration he considers it unnecessary to enter into the question of the genuineness and authenticity of the Gospels, deeming it sufficient for his purpose, that Strauss and Renan admit that some portion of these documents existed at the beginning of the second century, or earlier, in the country where the events narrated took place.

made an anticipatory remark regarding the nature of these documents, to which we may add that they are not the work of perfectly independent historians, but of men who were engaged in disseminating the new doctrines, and in saying this we have no intention of accusing the writers of conscious deception; it is, however, necessary to state the fact in order that the value of the testimony may be fairly estimated. The narratives of miracles were written by ardent partizans, with minds inflamed by religious zeal and enthusiasm, in an age of ignorance and superstition, a considerable time after the supposed miraculous occurrences had taken place. All history shows how rapidly pious memory exaggerates and idealizes the traditions of the past, and simple actions might readily be transformed into miracles, as the narratives circulated, in a period so prone to superstition and so characterized by love of the marvellous. Religious excitement and reverence for the noblest of Teachers could not, under such circumstances and in such an age, have escaped this exaggeration. How few men in more enlightened times have been able soberly to appreciate, and accurately to record exciting experiences, where feeling and religious emotion have been concerned. Prosaic accuracy of observation and of language, at all times rare, are the last qualities we could expect to find in the early ages of Christianity. In the certain fact that disputes arose among the Apostles themselves so shortly after the death of their great Master, we have one proof that even amongst them there was no accurate appreciation of the teaching of Jesus,<sup>1</sup> and the frequent instances of their misunderstanding of very simple matters, and of their want of enlightenment, which occur throughout the

<sup>1</sup> e.g., Gal. ii. 11 ff.

Gospels are certainly not calculated to inspire much confidence in their intelligence and accuracy of observation.

Now it is apparent that the evidence for Miracles requires to embrace two distinct points: the reality of the alleged facts, and the accuracy of the inference that the phenomena were produced by Supernatural Agency. The task would even then remain of demonstrating the particular Supernatural Being by whom the miracles were performed, which is admitted to be impossible. We have hitherto chiefly confined ourselves to a consideration of the antecedent credibility of such events, and of the fitness of those who are supposed to have witnessed them to draw accurate inferences from the alleged phenomena. Those who have formed any adequate conception of the amount of testimony which would be requisite in order to establish the reality of occurrences in violation of an order of Nature, which is based upon universal and invariable experience, must recognize that, even if the earliest asserted origin of our four Gospels could be established upon the most irrefragable grounds, the testimony of the writers—men of like ignorance with their contemporaries, men of like passions with ourselves—would be utterly incompetent to prove the reality of Miracles. We have already sufficiently discussed this point, more especially in connection with Hume's argument, and need not here resume it. Every consideration, historical and philosophical, has hitherto discredited the whole theory of miracles, and further inquiry might be abandoned as unnecessary. In order, however, to render our conclusion complete, it remains for us to see whether, as affirmed, there be any special evidence regarding the alleged facts entitling the Gospel Miracles to exceptional attention. If, instead of being

... they on a story which you find  
... more by the way to overan G...  
... not ... 185

clear, direct, the undoubted testimony of known eye-witnesses free from superstition, and capable, through adequate knowledge, rightly to estimate the alleged phenomena, we find that the actual accounts have none of these qualifications, the final decision with regard to Miracles and the reality of Divine Revelation will be easy and conclusive. We shall now, therefore, carefully examine the evidence as to the date, authorship, and character of the four Gospels.

No man is competent to testify  
 (Sub judice) in Court, that a single  
 apparent transaction is mirac-  
 ulous, unless he swears upon  
 his (i. e.) he declares that he  
 understands all the facts of the  
 whole cases, together with all  
 the phenomena & resultant from  
 their separate and combined  
 actions, and that no other  
 evidence is before the  
 Court. This would be most  
 absurd. Miracles must die  
 with their witnesses.

would improve the main argument, word  
 or tracking; or make the judgment  
 can jump higher and go further  
 that one idea, be clearly expressed  
 Richard, Sturge, C. C. R.

## PART II.

### THE SYNOPTIC GOSPELS.

---

#### INTRODUCTION.

BEFORE commencing our examination of the evidence as to the date, authorship, and character of the Gospels, it may be well to make a few preliminary remarks. We propose to examine all the writings of the early Church for traces of the Gospels. It is very important, however, that the silence of early writers should receive as much attention as any supposed allusions to the Gospels. When such writers, quoting largely from the Old Testament and other sources, deal with subjects which would naturally be assisted by reference to our Gospels, and still more so by quoting such works as authoritative,—and yet we find that not only they do not show any knowledge of those Gospels, but actually quote passages from unknown sources, or sayings of Jesus derived from tradition,—the inference must be that our Gospels were either unknown, or not recognized as works of any authority at the time.

It is still more important that we should constantly bear in mind, that a great number of Gospels existed in

the early Church which are no longer extant, and of most of which even the names are lost. We need not here do more than refer, in corroboration of this fact, to the preliminary statement of the author of the third Gospel: "Forasmuch as many (πολλοὶ) have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are surely believed among us," &c.<sup>1</sup> It is therefore evident that before our third Synoptic was written many similar works were already in circulation. Looking at the close similarity of large portions of the three Synoptics, it is almost certain that many of the πολλοὶ here mentioned bore a close analogy to each other and to our Gospels, and this is known to have been the case, for instance, amongst the various forms of the "Gospel according to the Hebrews," distinct mention of which we meet with long before we hear anything of our Gospels. When, therefore, in early writings, we meet with quotations closely resembling, or we may add, even identical with passages which are found in our Gospels, the source of which, however, is not mentioned, nor is any author's name indicated, the similarity or even identity cannot by any means be admitted as evidence that the quotation is necessarily from our Gospels, and not from some other similar work now no longer extant, and more especially not when in the same writings there are other quotations from apocryphal sources different from our Gospels. Whether regarded as historical records or as writings embodying the mere tradition of the early Christians, our Gospels cannot for a moment be recognized as the exclusive depositaries of the genuine sayings and doings of Jesus; and so far from the common possession by many works, in early times, of such words of Jesus in

<sup>1</sup> Luke i. 1.

closely similar form being either strange or improbable, the really remarkable phenomenon is that such material variation in the report of the more important historical teaching should exist amongst them. But whilst similarity to our Gospels in passages quoted by early writers from unnamed sources cannot prove the use of our Gospels, variation from them would suggest or prove a different origin, and at least it is obvious that quotations which do not agree with our Gospels cannot in any case indicate their existence. We shall in the course of the following pages more fully illustrate this, but such a statement is necessary at the very outset from the too general practice of referring every quotation of historical sayings of Jesus exclusively to our Gospels, as though they were the only sources of such matter which had ever existed.

It is unnecessary to add that, in proportion as we remove from apostolic times without positive evidence of the existence and authenticity of our Gospels, so does the value of their testimony dwindle away. Indeed, requiring as we do clear, direct, and irrefragable evidence of their integrity, authenticity, and historical character, any doubt or obscurity on these points must inevitably be fatal to them as sufficient testimony,—if they could, under any circumstances be considered sufficient testimony,—for miracles and a direct Divine Revelation like ecclesiastical Christianity.

We propose to examine first the evidence for the three Synoptics, and, then, separately, the testimony regarding the fourth Gospel.

## CHAPTER I.

### CLEMENT OF ROME—THE EPISTLE OF BARNABAS— THE PASTOR OF HERMAS.

THE first work which presents itself for examination is the so-called first Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians, which, together with a second Epistle to the same community likewise attributed to Clement, is preserved to us in the Codex Alexandrinus, a MS. assigned by the most competent judges to the second half of the fifth, or beginning of the sixth century, in which these Epistles follow the books of the New Testament. The second Epistle, which is evidently not epistolary, but really the fragment of a Homily,<sup>1</sup> although it thus shares with the first the honour of a canonical position in one of the most ancient codices of the New Testament, is not mentioned at all by the earlier fathers who refer to the first;<sup>2</sup> and Eusebius,<sup>3</sup> who is the first writer who mentions it,

<sup>1</sup> *Anger*, Synopsis Evang., 1852, p. xx. f.; *Daur*, Vorles. chr. Dogmengesch., 1865, I. i. p. 249; *Dodwell*, Dissert. i. in Irenæum, § 29; *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., 1798, i. p. 268; *Guericke*, II'buch Kirchengesch., 1869, i. p. 145; *Hagenbach*, Kirchengesch., 1869, i. p. 107; *Hilgenfeld*, Die apost. Väter, 1853, p. 111 f.; *Lange*, Das apost. Zeitalter, 1854, ii. p. 478; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. in d. petr. Schriften, 1835, p. 195; *Westcott*, On the Canon of the N. T., 1866, p. 155 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Dionysius*, Cor. in Euseb., H. E., iv. 23; *Clemens Al.*, Stromata, iv. 17, § 107, i. 7, § 38, v. 12, § 81, vi. 8, § 65; *Origen*, De Princ., ii. 3, 6, in Ezech. 8; *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 3; cf. *Cyril*, Hieros., Catech., xviii. 8; *Epiphanius*, Hær., xxvii. 6.

<sup>3</sup> H. E., iii. 38, cf. iii. 16.

expresses doubt regarding it, while Jerome<sup>1</sup> and Photius<sup>2</sup> state that it was rejected by the ancients. It is now universally regarded as spurious,<sup>3</sup> and dated about the end of the second century,<sup>4</sup> or later.<sup>5</sup> We shall hereafter see that many other pseudographs were circulated in the name of Clement, to which, however, we need not further allude at present.

There has been much controversy as to the identity of the Clement to whom the first Epistle is attributed. In early days he was supposed to be the Clement mentioned in the Epistle to the Philippians (iv. 3)<sup>6</sup>, but this

<sup>1</sup> De Vir. Illustr., § 15.

<sup>2</sup> Cod., 113.

<sup>3</sup> *Anger*, Synopsis Ev., p. xx. f.; *Baur*, Vorles. chr. Dogmengesch., I. i. p. 249; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., 1866, p. 681; *Bunsen*, Ignatius v. Ant. u. s. Zeit, 1847, p. 95; *Credner*, Beiträge Einl. in d. bibl. Schr., 1832, i. p. 13 f.; *Donaldson*, Crit. Hist. of Chr. Lit. and Doctr., 1866, i. p. 99 f.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., 1820, i. p. 129, p. 133 ff.; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. Volkes Isr., 1868, vii. p. 330, anm. 3, p. 355 f.; *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., i. p. 266 ff.; *Gfrörer*, Allg. Kirchengesch., 1841, i. p. 302; *Guericke*, Gesammtgesch. d. N. T., 1854, p. 221; *Hefele*, Patr. Ap., p. xxx. f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 111 f.; *Hagenbach*, K. G., i. p. 107; *Horne*, Intr. N. T., ed. Tregelles, 1869, iv. p. 332; *Lange*, Das Apost. Zeitalter, 1854, ii. p. 478; *Lardner*, Credibility, &c., Works, 1788, ii. p. 28 f.; *Lechler*, Das apost. u. nachap. Zeitalter, 1857, pp. 442, 476; *Lightfoot*, St. Clement of Rome, 1869, p. 14 f.; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 195; *Réville*, Essais de Critiques religieuses, 1860, p. 62; *Ritschl*, Entst. altkath. Kirche, 1857, p. 286; *Schott*, Isagoge Hist. Crit., 1830, p. 25, 3, 27, 3; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse betreff. d. Schr. N. T. übers. v. C. Manchot, 1867, p. 4; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, 1846, i. p. 448 ff.; *Thiersch*, Versuch z. Herstell. d. hist. Standp. Krit. d. neuest. Schr., 1845, p. 440; Die Kirche im ap. Zeit., 1858, p. 347, p. 365; *Volkmar*, Das Evang. Marcions, 1852, p. 177; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 21 f.; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgeschichte, 1854, p. 9.

<sup>4</sup> *Anger*, Synopsis Evang., p. xx. f.; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. Volkes Isr., vii. p. 330, anm. 3, p. 357 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 115 ff.; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 286 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 4; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 449; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 156.

<sup>5</sup> *Grabe* assigns it to the middle of the third century. Spicil. Patr., i. p. 269; and *Lardner* thinks that date probable, Works, ii. p. 29.

<sup>6</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 15, 16; *Hieron.*, de Vir. Ill., 15; *Photius*, Bibl. Cod., 113.

is now generally doubted or abandoned,<sup>1</sup> and the authenticity of the Epistle has, indeed, been called in question both by earlier and later critics.<sup>2</sup> It is unnecessary for us to detail the various traditions regarding the supposed writer, but we must point out that the Epistle itself makes no mention of the author's name. It merely purports to be addressed by "The Church of God which sojourns at Rome to the Church of God sojourning at Corinth;" but in the Codex Alexandrinus, the title of "The first Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians," is added at the end. Clement of Alexandria calls the supposed writer the "Apostle Clement:"<sup>3</sup> Origen reports that many also ascribed to him the authorship of the Epistle to the Hebrews;<sup>4</sup> and Photius mentions that he was likewise said to be the writer of the Acts of the Apostles.<sup>5</sup> We know that until a comparatively late date this Epistle was quoted as Holy Scripture,<sup>6</sup> and was publicly read in the churches at the Sunday meetings of Christians.<sup>7</sup> It has, as we have seen, a place amongst the canonical books of the New Testament in the Codex

<sup>1</sup> *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., 1868, i. p. 201; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 98 f.; *Reuss*, Gesch. d. heil. Schr. N. T., 1864, § 235, p. 234; *Schliemann*, Die Clementinen, 1844, p. 109; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, ii. p. 125 ff.; cf. *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Ammon*, Leben Jesu, i. p. 33; *Semler*, Einl. Baumgarten's Unters. Theol. Streit., ii. p. 15; *Michaelis*, Einl. göttl. Schr. N. B., i. p. 34 f.; *Baur*, Paulus, 1866, ii. p. 66 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, ii. p. 125 ff.; *Volkmar*, Theol. Jahrb., 1856, Der Ursprung u. s. w., p. 64.

<sup>3</sup> *Ναὶ μὴν ἐν τῇ πρὸς Κορινθίους ἐπιστολῇ ὁ ἀπόστολος Κλήμης*, κ. τ. λ. Strom., iv. 17, § 107.

<sup>4</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., vi. 25; cf. *Bertholdt*, Einl. Schr. A. u. N. T., 1819, vi. p. 2957 ff.

<sup>5</sup> *Quæst. Amphil. Gallandi*, Bibl. Patr., 1765, xiii. p. 722; *Credner*, Einl. N. T., 1836, i. p. 271.

<sup>6</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iv. 3; *Clemens Al.*, Strom., l. c.

<sup>7</sup> *Dion.*, Cor. in *Euseb.* H. E., iv. 23, iii. 16; *Epiphanius*, Hær., xxx. 15; *Hieron.*, de Vir. Ill., 15.

Alexandrinus, but it did not long retain that position in the canon, for although in the "Apostolic Canons"<sup>1</sup> of the sixth or seventh century both Epistles appear, yet in the Stichometry of Nicephorus, a work of the ninth century, derived, however, as Credner<sup>2</sup> has demonstrated, from a Syrian catalogue of the fifth century, both Epistles are classed among the Apocrypha.<sup>3</sup>

Great uncertainty prevails as to the date at which the Epistle was written. Reference is supposed to be made to it by the so-called Epistle of Polycarp,<sup>4</sup> but, owing to the probable inauthenticity of that work itself, no weight can be attached to this circumstance. The first certain reference to it is by Hegesippus, in the second half of the eleventh century, mentioned by Eusebius.<sup>5</sup> Dionysius of Corinth, in a letter ascribed to him addressed to Soter, Bishop of Rome, is the first who distinctly mentions the name of Clement as the author of the Epistle.<sup>6</sup> There is some difference of opinion as to the order of his succession to the Bishopric of Rome. Irenæus<sup>7</sup> and Eusebius<sup>8</sup> say that he followed Anacletus, and the latter adds the date of the twelfth year of the reign of Domitian (A.D. 91-92), and that he died nine years after, in the third year of Trajan's reign (A.D. 100).<sup>9</sup> Internal evidence<sup>10</sup> shows that the Epistle was written after some persecution of the Roman Church, and the selection lies

<sup>1</sup> Can. 76 (85); *Bunsen*, Anal. Ante-Nic., ii. p. 30; *Gieseler*, K. G., I. i. p. 337.

<sup>2</sup> Zur Gesch. des Kanons, 1847, p. 97 ff. <sup>3</sup> *Credner*, *ib.*, p. 122.

<sup>4</sup> *Gallandi*, Bibl. Patr., i. § xiii.; *Hefele*, Patr. Apost., p. xxii.; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 296, ann. 3; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 292; *Lumper*, Hist. Theol. Crit. de Vita Scriptis, &c., SS. Patrum, 1783, cap. ii. § 1.

<sup>5</sup> H. E., iii. 16, iv. 22.

<sup>6</sup> *Euseb.*, H. E., iv. 23.

<sup>7</sup> Adv. Hæres., iii. 3, § 3; *Euseb.*, H. E., v. 6.

<sup>8</sup> H. E., iii. 15, cf. 4.

<sup>9</sup> H. E., iii. 15, 34.

<sup>10</sup> Ch. i.

between the persecution under Nero, which would suggest the date A.D. 64-70, or that under Domitian, which would assign the letter to the end of the first century, or to the beginning of the second. Those who adhere to the view that the Clement mentioned in the Epistle to the Philippians is the author, maintain that the Epistle was written under Nero.<sup>1</sup> One of their principal arguments for this conclusion is a remark occurring in Chapter xli.: "Not everywhere, brethren, are the daily sacrifices offered up, or the votive offerings, or the sin-offerings and the trespass-offerings, but only in Jerusalem. But even there they are not offered in every place, but only at the altar before the temple, examination of the sacrifice offered being first made by the High Priest and the Priests already mentioned."<sup>2</sup> From this it is concluded that the Epistle was written before the destruction of the Temple. It has, however, been shown that Josephus,<sup>3</sup> the author of the "Epistle to Diognetus" (c. 3), and others, long after the Jewish worship of the Temple was at an end, continually speak in the present tense of the Temple worship in Jerusalem; and it is evident, as Cotelier long ago remarked, that this may be done with propriety even in the present day. The argument is therefore recognized to be

<sup>1</sup> *Le Clerc*, Hist. Ecclés., A.D. 69, N. vi.; *Dodwell*, Dissert. de Rom. Pont. Success., p. 153; *Pearson*, Dissert. de Serie et Success. Prim. Romæ Episc. Opera post., p. 172; *Grube*, Spicil. Patr., i. p. 254 ff.; *Pagi*, In Crit. Baronii ad Ann. 78 § 3; *Gallandi*, Bibl. Patr., i. p. 19, § ix.; *Hefele*, Patr. Ap., xviii. f.; *Schenkel*, De Eccles. Corinth., 1838, p. 105 f.; *Uhlhorn*, in *Niedner's Zeitschr. f. Hist. Theol.*, 1851, p. 322; *Wieseler*, Unters. üb. d. Hebräerbrief, i. 1861, p. 3 f.

<sup>2</sup> Οὐ πανταχοῦ, ἀδελφοί, προσφέρονται θυσίαι ἐνδελειχισμού, ἢ εὐχῶν, ἢ περὶ ἁμαρτίας καὶ πλημμελείας, ἀλλ' ἢ ἐν Ἱερουσαλὴμ μόνῃ. κακεῖ δὲ οὐκ ἐν παντὶ τόπῳ προσφέρεται, ἀλλ' ἐμφροσθεν τοῦ ναοῦ πρὸς τὸ θυσιαστήριον, μωμοσκοπηθέν τὸ προσφερόμενον διὰ τοῦ ἀρχιερέως καὶ τῶν προειρημένων λειτουργῶν. Cap. xli.

<sup>3</sup> *Antiq.*, iii. 6, 12; *Contra Apion.*, i. 7, ii. 23.

without value.<sup>1</sup> Tischendorf, who systematically adopts the earliest possible or impossible dates for all the writings of the first two centuries, decides, without stating his reasons, that the grounds for the earlier date, about A.D. 69, as well as for the episcopate of Clement from A.D. 68-77<sup>2</sup> are conclusive; but he betrays his more correct impression by classing Clement, in his index, along with Ignatius and Polycarp, as representatives of the period: "First and second quarters of the second century:"<sup>3</sup> and in the Prolegomena to his New Testament he dates the episcopate of Clement "ab anno 92 usque 102."<sup>4</sup> The earlier episcopate assigned to him by Hefele upon most insufficient grounds is contradicted by the direct statements of Irenæus, Eusebius, Jerome, and others who give the earliest lists of Roman Bishops,<sup>5</sup> as well as by the internal evidence of the Epistle itself. In Chapter xlv. the writer speaks of those appointed by the apostles to the oversight of the Church, "or afterwards by other notable men, the whole Church consenting . . . who have for a long time been commended by all, &c.,"<sup>6</sup> which indicates successions of Bishops since apostolic days. In another

<sup>1</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 84 f., Nov. Test. extra Can. recept., 1866, p. 87 f.; *Cottelier*, Patr. Ap., i. p. 140 f.; *Wieseler*, Hebräerbr., i. p. 6; *Ekker*, Disq. Crit. et Hist. de Clementis Rom. prioro ad Cor. ep., 1854, p. 95; *Lipsius*, de Clementis Rom. epist., &c., 1855, p. 144 f.; *Lardner*, Credibility &c., Works, ii. p. 24 f.; *Schliemann*, Die Clementinen, p. 409, 1.

<sup>2</sup> He refers in a note particularly to *Hefele*, Patr. Ap., 1855, p. 33 ff.

<sup>3</sup> "Erstes und zweites Viertel des 2. Jahrh. Clemens v. Rom. Ignatius und Polycarp." Wann wurden uns. Evangelien verfasst? 4th Aufl. 1866, p. 20, cf. Uebersicht des Inhalts.

<sup>4</sup> Nov. Test. Græce, Lips. Sumpt. Ad. Winter, Ed. septima Crit. min. Proleg., p. cxxix.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. *Lipsius*, Chronologie der röm. Bischöfe, 1869.

<sup>6</sup> Τοὺς οὖν κατασταθέντας ἰπ' ἐκείνων, ἢ μεταξὺ ἰφ' ἐτέρων ἐλλογίμων ἀνδρῶν, συνευδοκησάσης τῆς ἐκκλησίας πάσης. . . . μεμαρτυρημένους τε πολλοῖς χρόνοις ὑπὸ πάντων, κ. τ. λ. C. xlv.

place (Chap. xlvii.) he refers the Corinthians to the Epistle addressed to them by Paul "in the beginning of the Gospel" (ἐν ἀρχῇ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου), and speaks of "the most stedfast and ancient Church of the Corinthians" (τὴν βεβαιοτάτην, καὶ ἀρχαίαν Κορινθίων ἐκκλησίαν), which would be absurd in an Epistle written about A.D. 69. Moreover, an advanced episcopal form of Church Government is indicated throughout the letter, which is quite inconsistent with such a date. The great mass of critics, therefore, have decided against the earlier date of the episcopate of Clement, and assign the composition of the Epistle to the end of the first century (A.D. 95-100).<sup>1</sup> Others, however, date it still later. There is no doubt that the great number of Epistles and other writings falsely circulated in the name of Clement may well excite suspicion as to the authenticity of this

<sup>1</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xx. f.; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 513, Hebräerbr. i. 91 f., 433; *Bunsen*, Ignatius u. s. Zeit, p. 95 f., 103; *Cotelier*, Patr. Ap., i. p. 141; *Dressel*, Patr. Ap., p. xix.; *Davidson* (A.D. 100—125), Introd. N. T., ii. p. 508; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., 1864, i. p. 110; *Ekker*, Disq. de Clem. Rom., &c., p. 99 f.; *Ewald* (A.D. 90—100) Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 297; *Gieseler*, K. G., I. i. p. 123; *Guericke*, H'buch. K. G., i. p. 144 f.; *Gundert*, Zeitschr. f. d. luth. Theol. 1853, h. 4, 1854, h. 1, 3; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 84; *Jacobson*, Patr. Apost., 1863, i. p. xii. f.; *Köstlin*, Theol. Jahrb., 1850, p. 243 f.; *Lardner*, Credibility &c., Works, ii. p. 24 ff.; *Lange*, Das apost. Zeit., ii. p. 478; *Lechler*, Das apost. u. d. nachapost. Zeitalter, p. 476, p. 387; *Lipsius*, de Clementis Rom., &c., 1855, p. 137 ff., Chronologie d. röm. Bischöfe, p. 149; *Lumper*, Hist. Theol. Crit. de Vita, &c., SS. Patr., 1783, e. i. ii. §§ 1, 3; *Lightfoot*, St. Clement of Rome, 1869, p. 5; *J. C. M. Laurent*, Clementis Rom. ad Corinth., 1870; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., 1835, p. 77; *Neander*, Kirch. Gesch., 1843, ii. p. 1136; *Reuss*, Gesch. d. heil. Schr. N. T., 1864, § 235, p. 233 f.; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. K., p. 274; *Révillie*, Essais de Critiques Rel., 1860, p. 62 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 4; *Schliemann*, Die Clementinen, 409 f.; *Tholuck*, Hebräerbrief, 3 aufl., p. 2 ff.; *Thiersch*, Die Kirche im ap. Zeit. p. 338 ff.; *Tillemont*, Mémoires pour servir à l'Hist. Ecclés., 1701, ii. p. 557 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 22, note 2; *Zeller* (beginning of 2nd century), Die Apostelgeschichte, 1854, p. 7.

Epistle also, which is far from unsupported by internal reasons. Of these, however, we shall only mention one. We have already incidentally remarked that the writer mentions the Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians, the only instance in which any New Testament writing is referred to by name; but along with the Epistle of the "blessed Paul" (τοῦ μακαρίου Παύλου) the author also speaks of the "blessed Judith" (Ἰουδιθ ἡ μαχαρία),<sup>1</sup> and this leads to the inquiry: When was the Book of Judith written? Hitzig, Volkmar, and others contend that it must be dated A.D. 117-118,<sup>2</sup> and if this be admitted, it follows of course that an Epistle which already shows acquaintance with the Book of Judith cannot have been written before A.D. 120-125 at the earliest, which many for this and other reasons affirm to be the case with the Epistle of pseudo-Clement.<sup>3</sup> Whatever date be assigned to it, however, there can be no doubt that the Epistle is much interpolated.<sup>4</sup>

It is important to ascertain whether or not this ancient christian Epistle affords any evidence of the existence of our Synoptic Gospels at the time when it was written. Tischendorf, who is ever ready to claim the slightest

<sup>1</sup> c. lv.

<sup>2</sup> *Hitzig*, Zur Kritik d. apokr. Bücher d. A. T., Zeitschr. f. wiss. Theol., 1860, p. 240 ff.; *Volkmar*, Theol. Jahrb., 1856, p. 362 ff., 1857, p. 441 ff. II'buch. Einl. in d. Apokr., 1860, i. p. 278; *Gratz*, Gesch. d. Juden vom Unterg. d. jüd. Staates u. s. w., 1866, p. 132 ff.; *Baur*, Lehrb. chr. Dogmengeschichte, 1858, p. 82 anm.

<sup>3</sup> *Volkmar*, Theol. Jahrb., 1856, p. 287 ff., Die Religion Jesu, 1857, p. 391 f., Der Ursprung, p. 64; *Baur*, Lehrb. chr. Dogmengesch., p. 82, Vorles. chr. Dogmengesch., I. i. p. 249; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 4; *Stap*, Etudes sur les origines du Christianisme, 1866, p. 232; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, ii. p. 125 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Neander*, K. G., 1843, ii. p. 1136; *Anger*, Synops. Evang., p. xx.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, ii. p. 127; *Mosheim*, Instit. Hist. Chr., p. 212 ff.; *Clericus*, in notis edit. Patr. Apost.; *Cotelier*, 1724; *Ittig*, Bibl. Patr., 1699.

resemblance in language as a reference to New Testament writings, admits that although this Epistle is rich in quotations from the Old Testament, and here and there that Clement also makes use of passages from Pauline Epistles, he nowhere refers to the Gospels.<sup>1</sup> This is perfectly true, but several passages occur in this Epistle which are either quotations from Evangelical works different from ours, or derived from tradition,<sup>2</sup> and in either case they have a very important bearing upon our inquiry.

The first of these passages occurs in Ch. xiii., and for greater facility of comparison, we shall at once place it both in the Greek and in translation in juxtaposition with the nearest parallel readings in our Synoptic Gospels; and, as far as may be, we shall in the English version indicate differences existing in the original texts. The passage is introduced thus: "Especially remembering the words of the Lord Jesus, which he spake teaching gentleness and long-suffering. For thus he said :"<sup>3</sup>—

EPISTLE, XIII.	MATTHEW.	LUKE.
(a) Be pitiful, that ye may be pitied;	v. 7. Blessed are the pitiful, for they shall obtain pity.	vi. 36. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.
(β) forgive, that it may be forgiven to you;	vi. 14. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, &c.	vi. 37. . . . pardon <sup>4</sup> and ye shall be pardoned.

<sup>1</sup> "Aber nirgends auf die Evangelien." Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 20 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 27; *Davidson*, Int. N. T., ii. p. 19; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., 1864, i. p. 148 ff.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 129 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Vater, p. 104; *Jacobson*, Patr. Ap., i. p. 55, p. 175; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 162, Hist. du Canon des S. Ecritures, 1863, p. 26 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 5; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 20 f.; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 8; cf. *Lardner*, Works, ii. p. 31 f., p. 47.

<sup>3</sup> . . . μάλιστα μεμνημένοι τῶν λόγων τοῦ Κυρίου Ἰησοῦ, οὓς ἐλάλησεν διδάσκων ἐπιείκειαν καὶ μακροθυμίαν· οὕτως γὰρ εἶπεν.

<sup>4</sup> We use this word not as the best equivalent of ἀπολύετε, but merely to indicate to readers unacquainted with Greek, the use of a different word from the ἀφήτε of the first Gospel, and from the ἀφίετε of the Epistle, and this system we shall adopt as much as possible throughout.

## EPISTLE, XIII.

(γ) as ye do, so shall it be done to you ;

(δ) as ye give, so shall it be given to you ;

(ε) as ye judge, so shall it be judged to you ;

(ζ) as ye show kindness shall kindness be shown to you ;

(η) with what measure ye mete, with the same shall it be measured to you.

## EPISTLE, XIII.

(α) Ἐλεεῖτε, ἵνα ἐλεηθῆτε .

(β) ἀφίετε, ἵνα ἀφεθῆ ὑμῖν .

(γ) ὡς ποιεῖτε, οὕτως ποιηθήσεται ὑμῖν .

(δ) ὡς δίδετε, οὕτως δοθήσεται ὑμῖν .

(ε) ὡς κρίνετε, οὕτως κριθήσεται ὑμῖν .

(ζ) ὡς χρηστεύεσθε, οὕτως χρηστευθήσεται ὑμῖν .

(η) ὃ μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε, ἐν αὐτῷ μετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν.<sup>1</sup>

## MATTHEW.

vii. 12. Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them.

vii. 2. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged,

and

with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you.

## MATTHEW.

v. 7 Μακάριοι οἱ ἐλεήμονες ὅτι αὐτοὶ ἐλεηθήσονται .

vi. 14 Ἐὰν γὰρ ἀφῆτε τοῖς ἀνθρώποις τὰ παραπτώματα αὐτῶν, κ.τ.λ.

vii. 12 Πάντα οὖν ὅσα ἂν θέλητε ἵνα ποιῶσιν ὑμῖν οἱ ἄνθρωποι, οὕτως καὶ ὑμεῖς ποιεῖτε αὐτοῖς .

vii. 2 ἐν ᾧ γὰρ κρίματι κρίνετε κριθήσεσθε,

καὶ ἐν ᾧ μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε μετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν .

## LUKE.

vi. 31. And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.

vi. 38. . . . give, and it shall be given to you.

vi. 37. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged.

vi. 38. For with the same measure that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again.

## LUKE.

vi. 36 γίνεσθε οὖν οἰκτίρμονες, κ.τ.λ.

vi. 37 ἀπολύετε, καὶ ἀπολυθήσεσθε .

vi. 31 καὶ καθὼς θέλετε ἵνα ποιῶσιν ὑμῖν οἱ ἄνθρωποι, καὶ ὑμεῖς ποιεῖτε αὐτοῖς ὁμοίως .

vi. 38 δίδετε, καὶ δοθήσεται ὑμῖν .

vi. 37 καὶ μὴ κρίνετε καὶ οὐ μὴ κριθῆτε .

vi. 38 τῷ γὰρ αὐτῷ μέτρῳ ᾧ μετρεῖτε ἀντιμετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν .

Of course it is understood that, although for convenience of comparison we have broken up this quotation into

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Mark iv. 24. Cf. Hom. Clem. xviii. 16.

these phrases, it is quite continuous in the Epistle. It must be evident to any one who carefully examines the parallel passages, that "the words of the Lord Jesus" in the Epistle cannot have been derived from our Gospels. Not only is there no similar consecutive discourse in them, but the scattered phrases which are pointed out as presenting superficial similarity with the quotation are markedly different both in thought and language. In it, as in the "beatitudes" of the "Sermon on the Mount" in the first Gospel, the construction is peculiar and continuous: "Do this . . . . in order that (*ἵνα*) . . . ."; or, "As (*ὡς*) ye do . . . . so (*οὕτως*) . . . ." The theory of a combination of passages from memory, which is usually advanced to explain such quotations, cannot serve here, for thoughts and expressions occur in the passage in the Epistle which have no parallel at all in our Gospels, and such dismembered phrases as can be collected from our first and third Synoptics, for comparison with it, follow the course of the quotation in the ensuing order: Matt. v. 7, vi. 14, part of vii. 12, phrase without parallel, first part of vii. 2, phrase without parallel, last part of vii. 2; or, Luke vi. 36, last phrase of vi. 37, vi. 31, first phrase of vi. 38, first phrase of vi. 37, phrase without parallel, last phrase of vi. 38.

The only question with regard to this passage, therefore, is whether the writer quotes from an unknown written source or from tradition. He certainly merely professes to repeat "words of the Lord Jesus," and does not definitely indicate a written record, but it is much more probable, from the context, that he quotes from a gospel now no longer extant than that he derives this teaching from oral tradition. He introduces the quotation not only with a remark implying a well-known record:

“Remembering the words of the Lord Jesus which he spake, teaching, &c.” but he reiterates: “For *thus* he said,” in a way suggesting careful and precise quotation of the very words; and he adds at the end: “By this injunction and by these instructions let us establish ourselves, that we may walk in obedience to his holy words, thinking humbly of ourselves.”<sup>1</sup> It seems impossible that the writer should so markedly have indicated a precise quotation of words of Jesus, and should so emphatically have commended them as the rule of life to the Corinthians, had these precepts been mere floating tradition, until then unstamped with written permanence. The phrase: “As ye show kindness (*χρηστεύεσθε*),” &c. which is nowhere found in our Gospels, recalls an expression quoted by Justin Martyr from a Gospel different from ours, and frequently repeated by him in the same form: “Be ye kind and merciful (*χρηστοὶ καὶ οἰκτίρμονες*) as your Father also is kind (*χρηστός*) and merciful.”<sup>2</sup> In the very next chapter of the Epistle a similar reference again occurs: “Let us be kind to each other (*χρηστευσώμεθα αὐτοῖς*) according to the mercy and benignity of our Creator.”<sup>3</sup> Without, however, going more minutely into this question, it is certain from its essential variations in language, thought and order, that the passage in the Epistle was not compiled from our Gospels, and we shall presently see that this conclusion is confirmed by the fact, that some of the expressions which are foreign to our Gospels are elsewhere quoted by other Fathers, and there is reason to believe that these “words of the Lord Jesus” were not derived from tradition but

<sup>1</sup> Ταύτη τῇ ἐντολῇ καὶ τοῖς παραγγέλμασι τούτοις στηρίζωμεν ἑαυτοὺς πρὸς τὸ πορεύεσθαι ἡμᾶς τοῖς ἀγιοπρεπέσι λόγοις αὐτοῦ, ταπεινοφρονοῦντες. c. xiii.      <sup>2</sup> Apol., i. 15, and again twice in Dial. 96.      <sup>3</sup> c. xiv.

from a written source different from our Gospels.<sup>1</sup> When the great difference which exists between the parallel passages in the first and third Synoptics, and still more between these and the second, is considered, it is easy to understand that other Gospels may have contained a version differing as much from them as they do from each other.

We likewise subjoin the next passage to which we must refer, with the nearest parallels in our Synoptics. We may explain that the writer of the Epistle is rebuking the Corinthians for strifes and divisions amongst them, and for forgetting that they "are members one of another," and he continues: "Remember the words of our Lord Jesus; for he said:"<sup>2</sup>

EPISTLE, XLVI.

Woe to that man;

(it were) well for him if he had not been born than that he should offend one of my elect;

(it were) better for him (that) a millstone should be attached (to him) and he should be drowned in the sea, than that he should offend one of my little ones.

MATTHEW.

xxvi. 24. Woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is delivered up; (it were) well for him if that man had not been born.

xviii. 6. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were profitable for him that a great millstone were suspended upon his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

LUKE.

xvii. 1 . . but woe . . through whom they (offences) come.

xvii. 2. It were advantageous for him that a great millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast in the sea, than that he offend one of these little ones.

<sup>1</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 103 f.; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 8 f., Theol. Jahrb., 1848, p. 530; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 27, anm. 1; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T. i., p. 129 ff.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 5; *Ekker*, Disq. de Clem. R., p. 60; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., i. p. 148 f.; *Jacobson*, Patr. Ap., i. p. 55, l. c., &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Μνήσθητε τῶν λόγων Ἰησοῦ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν, εἶπε γάρ. C. xlvi.

Mark xiv. 21. . . . but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is delivered up, (it were) well for him if that man had not been born. . . . ix. 42. And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it is well for him rather that a great millstone were hanged about his neck, and he thrown in the sea.

## EPISTLE, XLVI.

Οὐαὶ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ  
ἐκείνῳ·

καλὸν ἦν αὐτῷ εἰ οὐκ  
ἐγεννήθη

ἢ ἓνα τῶν ἐκλεκτῶν  
μου σκανδαλίσαι·

κρεῖττον ἦν αὐτῷ περι-  
τεῖναι μύλον,

καὶ καταποντισθῆναι

εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν,  
ἢ ἓνα τῶν μικρῶν μου  
σκανδαλίσαι.

## MATTHEW.

XXVI. 24 οὐαὶ δὲ τῷ  
ἀνθρώπῳ ἐκείνῳ δι' οὗ ὁ  
υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου παρα-  
δίδοται·

καλὸν ἦν αὐτῷ εἰ οὐκ  
ἐγεννήθη ὁ ἄνθρωπος  
ἐκεῖνος. XVIII. 6 ὅς δ' ἂν  
σκανδαλίση ἓνα τῶν  
μικρῶν τούτων τῶν  
πιστευόντων εἰς ἐμέ,  
συμφέρει αὐτῷ ἵνα  
κρεμασθῇ μύλος ὄνικος  
περὶ τὸν τρίχηλον αὐτοῦ  
καὶ καταποντισθῇ  
ἐν τῷ πελάγει  
τῆς θαλάσσης.

## LUKE.

XVII. 1 οὐαὶ δὲ δι' οὗ  
ἔρχεται· (τὰ σκάνδαλα)<sup>1</sup>

## XVII. 2

λυσιτελεῖ αὐτῷ εἰ  
μύλος ὄνικος<sup>2</sup> περικείται  
περὶ τὸν τρίχηλον αὐτοῦ  
καὶ ἔρριπται

εἰς τὴν θάλασσαν,  
ἢ ἵνα σκανδαλίση ἓνα<sup>3</sup>  
τῶν μικρῶν τούτων.

This quotation is clearly not from our Gospels, but is derived from a different written source. The writer would scarcely refer the Corinthians to such words of Jesus if they were merely traditional. The slightest comparison of the passage with our Gospels is sufficient to convince any unprejudiced mind that it is neither a combination of texts, nor a quotation from memory. The language throughout is markedly different, and to present even a superficial parallel, it is necessary to take a fragment of the discourse of Jesus at the Last Supper regarding the traitor who should deliver him up (Matth. xxvi. 24), and join it to a fragment of his remarks in

<sup>1</sup> The Cod. Sin. and Cod. D. (Bezae), insert πλὴν before οὐαὶ.

<sup>2</sup> Cod. Sin. and D. read λίθος μυλικός instead of μύλος.

<sup>3</sup> The Vatican (B.) and Sinaitic, as well as most of the other, Codices put ἓνα at the end of the phrase.

connection with the little child whom he set in the midst (xviii. 6). The parallel passage in Luke has not the opening words of the passage in the Epistle at all, and the portion which it contains (xvii. 2), is separated from the context in which it stands in the first Gospel, and which explains its meaning. If we contrast the parallel passages in the three Synoptics, their differences of context are very suggestive, and without referring to their numerous and important variations in detail, the confusion amongst them is evidence of very varying tradition.<sup>1</sup> This alone would make the existence of another form like that quoted in the Epistle before us more than probable. We are not, however, without other indications of such a reading as that of our quotation. Tertullian states that Marcion's Gospel read the parallel passage to the opening of Luke xvii. as follows: "Conversus ibidem ad discipulos, væ dicit auctori scandalorum, *expedisse ei, si natus non fuisset, aut si molino saxo ad collum deligato præcipitatus esset in profundum,*" &c.<sup>2</sup> This gives the phrase, "it were better for him if he had not been born," (*λυσιτελεῖ αὐτῷ εἰ οὐκ ἐγεννήθη ἢ μύλος οὐκὸς περικείται περὶ τὸν τράχηλον αὐτοῦ, κ.τ.λ.*) in the same connection as in the Epistle, with some variation only of language, and this reading is met with in several codices.<sup>3</sup>

Tischendorf in a note to his statement that Clement nowhere refers to the Gospels, quotes the passage we are now considering, the only one to which he alludes, and

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Mat. xviii. 1—8; Mark ix. 33—43; Luke ix. 46—48, 49—50, xvii. 1—3.

<sup>2</sup> *Tertullian, Adv. Marc., iv. 35.*

<sup>3</sup> *Hilgenfeld, Die ap. Väter, p. 106, Die Evv. Justins, u. s. w., 1850, p. 423; Hahn, Das Evang. Marcion's, u. s. w., 1823, p. 188; Thilo, Cod. Apocr. Novi Test., 1832, i. p. 456; Volkmar, Das. Ev. Marcion's, 1862, p. 109; Ritschl, Das. Ev. Marcion's, 1846, p. 72.*

says: "These words are expressly cited as 'words of Jesus our Lord;' but they denote much more oral apostolic tradition than a use of the parallel passages in Matthew (xxvi. 24, xviii. 6) and Luke (xvii. 2)."<sup>1</sup> It is now, of course, impossible to determine finally whether the passage was actually derived from tradition or from a written source different from our Gospels, but in either case the fact is, that the Epistle not only does not afford the slightest evidence for the existence of any of our Gospels, but from only making use of tradition or an apocryphal work as the source of information regarding words of Jesus, it is decidedly opposed to the pretensions made on behalf of the Synoptics.

Before passing on we may in the briefest way possible refer to one or two other passages, with the view of further illustrating the character of the quotations in this Epistle. There are many passages cited which are not found in the Old Testament, and others which have no parallels in the New. At the beginning of the very chapter in which the words which we have just been considering occur, there is the following quotation: "It is written: Cleave to the holy, for they who cleave to them shall be made holy,"<sup>2</sup> the source of which is unknown. In a previous chapter the writer says: "And our Apostles knew, through our Lord Jesus Christ, that there would be contention regarding the name, (*ὀνόματος*,

<sup>1</sup> Diese Worte werden ausdrücklich als "Worte Jesu unsers Herrn," angeführt; aber sie verrathen weit mehr die mündliche apostolische Ueberlieferung als einen Gebrauch von den vergleichbaren Stellen bei Matthäus (26, 24; 18, 6), und Lukas (17, 2)." Wann wurden, u. s. w. p. 21, anm. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Γέγραπται γάρ· "Κολλάσθε τοῖς ἁγίοις, ὅτι οἱ κολλώμενοι αὐτοῖς ἁγιασθήσονται. c. xlvi., cf. c. xxx. A similar expression occurs in Clement of Alexandria. Strom. v. 8, § 53.

office, dignity?) of the episcopate.”<sup>1</sup> What was the writer’s authority for this statement? We find Justin Martyr quoting, as an express prediction of Jesus: “There shall be schisms and heresies,”<sup>2</sup> which is not contained in our gospels, but evidently derived from an uncanonical source,<sup>3</sup> a fact rendered more apparent by the occurrence of a similar passage in the Clementine Homilies, still more closely bearing upon our Epistle: “For there shall be, as the Lord said, false apostles, false prophets, heresies, desires for supremacy.”<sup>4</sup> Hege-sippus also speaks in a similar way: “From these came the false Christs, false prophets, false apostles who divided the unity of the Church.”<sup>5</sup> As Hege-sippus, Justin Martyr, and the author of the Clementines made use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, or to Peter, it is almost certain that these Gospels contained passages to which the words of the Epistle may refer.<sup>6</sup> It may be well to point out that the author also cites a passage from the Fourth Book of Ezra, ii. 16 :<sup>7</sup> “And I shall remember the good day, and I shall raise you from your tombs.”<sup>8</sup> Ezra reads: “Et resuscitabo mortuos de locis suis et de monumentis educam illos,” &c.

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι ἡμῶν ἔγνωσαν διὰ τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὅτι ἔρις ἔσται ἐπὶ τοῦ ὀνόματος τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς. C. xliv. cf. xlv., xlvi.

<sup>2</sup> Ἔσονται σχίσματα καὶ αἵρέσεις. Dial. c. Tryph. 35, cf. 51.

<sup>3</sup> Semisch, Die apost. Denkwürdigk. d. Märtyr. Justinus, 1848, p. 390 f.; Hilgenfeld, Die Evng. Justins, p. 232 f., Die ap. Väter, p. 106; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 246, p. 318 f.

<sup>4</sup> Ἔσονται γὰρ, ὡς ὁ κύριος εἶπεν, ψευδαπόστολοι, ψευδεῖς προφήται, αἵρέσεις, φιλαρχίαι. Clem. Hom., xvi. 21; cf. Constit. Apost., vi. 13; Clem. Recog. iv. 34.

<sup>5</sup> Ἀπὸ τούτων ψευδύχριστοι, ψευδοπροφῆται, ψευδαπίστολοι, οἵτινες ἐμέρισαν τὴν ἔνωσιν τῆς ἐκκλησίας, κ. τ. λ. Eusebius, H. E., iv. 22.

<sup>6</sup> See other instances in Chapters xvii., xxiii., xxvi., xxvii., xxx., xlii., xlvii., &c.

<sup>7</sup> II. Esdras of the English authorised Apocrypha.

<sup>8</sup> καὶ μνησθήσομαι ἡμέρας ἀγαθῆς, καὶ ἀναστήσω ὑμᾶς ἐκ τῶν θηκῶν ἱμῶν. c. I.

The first part of the quotation in the Epistle, of which we have only given the latter clause above, is taken from Isaiah xxvi. 20; but there can be no doubt that the above is from this apocryphal book,<sup>1</sup> which, as we shall see, was much used in the early Church.

## 2.

WE now turn to the so-called "Epistle of Barnabas," another interesting relic of the early Church, many points in whose history have considerable analogy with that of the Epistle of pseudo-Clement. The letter itself bears no author's name, is not dated from any place, and is not addressed to any special community. Towards the end of the second century, however, tradition began to ascribe it to Barnabas the companion of Paul.<sup>2</sup> The first writer who mentions it is Clement of Alexandria, who calls its author several times the "Apostle Barnabas;"<sup>3</sup> and Eusebius says that he gave an account of it in one of his works now no longer extant.<sup>4</sup> Origen also refers to it, calling it a "Catholic Epistle," and quoting it as Scripture.<sup>5</sup> We have already seen in the case of the Epistles ascribed to Clement of Rome, and, as we proceed, we shall become only too familiar with the fact, the singular facility with which, in the total absence of critical discrimination, spurious writings were ascribed

<sup>1</sup> *Jacobson*, Patr. Ap., i. p. 189; *Cotelier*, Patr. Ap. l. c.; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., i. p. 147.

<sup>2</sup> Acts iv. 36, xi. 22 f., 30, xii. 25, &c.

<sup>3</sup> *Stromata* ii., 6, § 31, 7, § 35, 20, § 116, v. 10, § 64, cf. 15, § 67, 18, § 84, v. § 52.

<sup>4</sup> H. E., vi. 14, cf. 13.

<sup>5</sup> γέγραπται δὲ ἐν τῇ Βαρνάβα καθολικῇ ἐπιστολῇ, κ. τ. λ. *Contra Cels.*, i. 63, cf. *De Princip.*, iii. 2, § 4.

by the Fathers to Apostles and their followers. In many cases such writings were deliberately inscribed with names well known in the Church, but both in the case of the two Epistles to the Corinthians, and the letter we are now considering, no such pious fraud was attempted, nor was it necessary. Credulous piety, which attributed writings to every Apostle, and even to Jesus himself, soon found authors for each anonymous work of an edifying character. To Barnabas, the friend of Paul, not only this Epistle was referred, but he was also reported by Tertullian and others to be the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews;<sup>1</sup> and an apocryphal "Gospel according to Barnabas," said to have had close affinity with our first Synoptic, is condemned along with many others in the decretal of Gelasius.<sup>2</sup> Eusebius, however, classes the so-called "Epistle of Barnabas" amongst the spurious books (ἐν τοῖς νόθοις),<sup>3</sup> and elsewhere also speaks of it as uncanonical.<sup>4</sup> Jerome mentions it as read amongst apocryphal writings.<sup>5</sup> Had the Epistle been seriously regarded as a work of the "Apostle" Barnabas, it could scarcely have failed to attain canonical rank. That it was highly valued by the early Church is shown by the fact that it stands, along with the Pastor of Hermas, after the Canonical books of the New Testament in the Codex Sinaiticus, which is probably the most ancient

<sup>1</sup> De Pudic. § 20; *Hieron*, De vir. ill. 5. Many Modern writers have supported the tradition. Cf. *Credner*, Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 175 ff.; *Ritschl*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1865, p. 89; *Thiersch*, Die Kirche im ap. Zeit., p. 199 ff.; *Ullmann*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1828, p. 377 ff.; *Wiesler*, Unters. üb. d. Hebräerbrief, 1861, i. p. 32 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Decretum de libris recipiendis et non recipiendis, in *Credner*, Zur Gesch. des Kanons, 1847, p. 215; cf. *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 341; *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., i. p. 303.

<sup>3</sup> H. E., iii. 25.

<sup>4</sup> H. E., vi. 14 cf. 13.

<sup>5</sup> *Hieron*, De vir. ill. 6, Comment. in Ezsch., xliii. 19.

MS. of them now known. In the earlier days of criticism, some writers, without much question, adopted the traditional view as to the authorship of the Epistle,<sup>1</sup> but the great mass of critics are now agreed in asserting that the composition, which itself is perfectly anonymous, cannot be attributed to Barnabas the friend and fellow-worker of Paul.<sup>2</sup> Those who maintain the former opinion date the Epistle about A.D. 70—73, or even earlier, but this is scarcely the view of any living critic. There are many indications in the Epistle which render such a date impossible, but we do not propose to go into the argument minutely, for it is generally admitted that, whilst

<sup>1</sup> *Henke*, De Epist. quæ Barnab. tribuitur, authenticia, 1827; *Gallandi*, Vet. Patr. Biblioth., 1765, i. p. xxix. f.; *Lardner*, Credibility, &c., Works, ii. p. 13; *Du Pin*, Bibl. des auteurs, &c. i.; *Schenkel* considered parts to be by Barnabas, with much added by others, Theol. Stud. u. knit., 1837, p. 652 ff.; *Pearson*, *Cave*, and others, maintained the authenticity.

<sup>2</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xx.; *Basnage*, Ann. Pol. Eccles., A.D. 50, n. 52 f.; *Baur*, Lehrb. Dogmengesch. p. 80 f., anm. Vorles. chr. Dogmengesch., 1, i. p. 248 f.; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., 1866, pp. 520, 681; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, 1866, viii. p. 520; *Credner*, Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 119; *Cotelier*, Patr. Ap., 1724, i. p. 5 f.; *R. Ceillier*, Hist. gén. des auteurs sacrés et Ecclés., i. p. 498 ff.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 218; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., i. p. 204 ff.; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 156 ff.; *Gfrörer*, Allg. K. G., i. p. 302; *Guericke*, H'buch. K. G., i. p. 143; *Hase*, Lehrb. K. G., 1848, p. 36 ff.; *Hagenbach*, K. G., i. p. 106, an. i.; *Hefele*, Das Sendschreiben des Ap. Barnabas, 1840, Patr. Ap. p. vii. ff.; *Horne*, Introd. N. T. ed. *Tregelles*, 1869, iv. p. 333; *Ittig*, Select. Cap. Hist. Eccles., Sec. I. i. p. 20; *Lechler*, Das ap. u. nachap. Zeitalter, p. 482 f.; *Lumpfer*, Hist. theol. crit. de vita, &c., SS. Patr., 1783, i. p. 149 f.; *Le Moyne*, Varia Sacra, i. proleg. *Mosheim*, Institut. hist. Christ., p. 161, *Ménard*, Præf. ad Epist. S. Barnab. cur. *L. Dacherio*, 1645, *Clericus*, Patr. Ap. 1724, i. p. 8 ff.; *Müller*, Erkl. d. Barnabasbr., p. 16 ff.; *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 1398 ff.; *Mynter*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1829, ii. p. 323; *Neander*, K. G., 1843, ii. p. 1136; *Natalis*, Hist. Eccles., Sec. 1., c. 12, § 8; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 254, p. 294; *Semler*, Hist. Einl. in Baumgarten's Unters. theol. Streitigk., 1763, ii. p. 2 ff.; *Tillemont*, Mémoires, &c., i. p. 414; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 91; *Ullmann*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., i. p. 381; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 37 f.; *Winer*, Bibl. Realwörterb. s. v. Barnabas, &c., &c., &c.

there is a clear limit further back than which the Epistle cannot be set,<sup>1</sup> there is little or no certainty how far into the second century its composition may not reasonably be advanced. Critics are divided upon the point; a few are disposed to date the Epistle about the end of the first century;<sup>2</sup> others at the beginning of the second century;<sup>3</sup> while a still greater number assign it to the reign of Adrian (A.D. 117—138);<sup>4</sup> and others, not without reason, consider that it exhibits marks of a still later period.<sup>5</sup> There can be no doubt that it is more or less interpolated.<sup>6</sup> Until the discovery of the Sinaitic

<sup>1</sup> Chap. xvi.

<sup>2</sup> *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 129; *Reuss*, Gesch. h. Schr. N. T. § 234, p. 232 f., cf. *Hist. de la Théol. Chrétienne au Siècle Apost.*, 1864, ii. p. 306; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 76; *Riggenbuch*, Die Zeugn. f. d. Ev. Joh., 1866, p. 89; *Weizsäcker*, Zur Krit. d. Barnabasbr.

<sup>3</sup> *Ewald*, Die Johan. Schriften, 1862, ii. p. 394, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 156 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 36 f.; *Lechler*, Das ap. u. nachap. Zeit., p. 482; *Lücke*, Einl. in. d. Offenb. Johan., 1852, i. p. 318; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 55, p. 294; *Thiersch*, Die Kirche im ap. Zeit., p. 334; *Tischendorf* (A.D. 90—110), Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 92; *Ullmann*, Stud. u. Krit., i. p. 381; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 38; *Winer*, Bibl. Realwörterb. s. v. Barnabas; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 7.

<sup>4</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xx.; *Baur*, Lehrb. Dogmengesch., p. 80 f., anm.; *Vorles. chr. Dogmengesch.*, I. i. p. 248 f.; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 522; *Cotelier*, Patr. Ap., p. 5 ff.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. pp. 268, 513; *Hefele*, Patr. Ap. Proleg., p. vii. ff.; *Sendschr. d. Ap. Barn.*, p. 141 f.; *Horne* (first quarter of second century), Introd. N. T. ed. *Tregelles*, 1869, iv. p. 333; *Köstlin*, Der Ursprung synopt. Evv., p. 121; *Keim* (A.D. 120—130), Jesu v. Nazara, 1867, i. p. 143; *Lipsius*, in *Schenkel's Bibel-Lexicon*, s. v. Barnabas, 1869, i. p. 372; *Müller*, Erkl. d. Barnabasbr., 1869, pp. 18, 109; *Neander*, K. G., 1843, p. 1133 ff.; *Schneckenburger*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1859, p. 294; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter., ii. p. 240 f.; *Volkmar*, Die Religion Jesu, 1857, p. 392 ff., H'buch Einl. in. d. Apocr., 1863, ii. pp. 290, 376 f., Der Ursprung, p. 143 ff., Die Evangelien, 1870, p. 631; *Wieseler*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1870, p. 289.

<sup>5</sup> *Donaldson* (later than first quarter, but before end of second century), *Hist. of Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, i. p. 220 ff.

<sup>6</sup> *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, i. p. 221 ff.; *Schenkel*, *Theol. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1837, p. 652 ff.

MS., a portion of the "Epistle of Barnabas" was only known through an ancient Latin version, the first four and a half chapters of the Greek having been lost. The Greek text, however, is now complete, although often very corrupt. The author quotes largely from the Old Testament, and also from apocryphal works.<sup>1</sup> He nowhere mentions any book or writer of the New Testament, and with one asserted exception, which we shall presently examine, he quotes no passage agreeing with our Gospels. We shall refer to these, commencing at once with the most important.

In the ancient Latin translation of the Epistle, the only form, as we have just said, in which until the discovery of the Codex Sinaiticus the first four and a half chapters were extant, the following passage occurs: "Adtendamus ergo, ne forte, sicut scriptum est, multi vocati pauci electi inveniamur."<sup>2</sup> "Let us, therefore, beware lest we should be found, as it is written: "Many are called, few are chosen." These words are found in our first Gospel (xxii. 14), and as the formula by which they are here introduced—"it is written," is generally understood to indicate a quotation from Holy Scripture, it was and is argued by some that here we have a passage from one of our Gospels quoted in a manner which shows that, at the time the Epistle of Barnabas was written, the "Gospel according to Matthew was already considered Holy Scripture."<sup>3</sup> Whilst this portion of the text existed only in the Latin version, it was argued that the "sicut scriptum est," at least, must be an interpolation, and in any case that it could not be deliberately applied, at that

<sup>1</sup> Cf. chaps. ii., iv., vi., ix., xii., xvi., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Ch. iv.

<sup>3</sup> *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 92 ff.

date, to a passage in any writings of the New Testament. On the discovery of the Sinaitic MS., however, the words were found in the Greek text in that Codex: *προσέχωμεν, μήποτε, ὡς γέγραπται, πολλοὶ κλητοί, ὀλίγοι δέ ἐκλεκτοὶ εὐρεθῶμεν.* The question, therefore, is so far modified that, however much we may suspect the Greek text of interpolation, it must be accepted as the basis of discussion that this passage, whatever its value, exists in the oldest, and indeed only (and this point must not be forgotten) complete MS. of the Greek Epistle.

Now with regard to the value of the expression "it is written," it may be remarked that in no case could its use in the Epistle of Barnabas indicate more than individual opinion, and it could not, for reasons to be presently given, be considered to represent the decision of the Church. In the very same chapter in which the formula is used in connection with the passage we are considering, it is also employed to introduce a quotation from the Book of Enoch,<sup>1</sup> *περὶ οὗ γέγραπται, ὡς Ἐνώχ λέγει,* and elsewhere (c. xii.) he quotes from another apocryphal book<sup>2</sup> as one of the prophets.<sup>3</sup> Again, he refers to the Cross of Christ in another prophet saying: "And when shall these things come to pass? and the Lord

<sup>1</sup> Enoch, lxxxix. 61 f., xc. 17. This book is again quoted in ch. xvi.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. IV Ezra iv. 33, v. 5.

<sup>3</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Nov. Test. extra Can. receptum, Fasc. ii. p. 75, Die Proph. Ezra und Daniel, 1863, p. 70, Die ap. Väter, p. 47; *Wiesler*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1870, p. 290; *Müller*, Erkl. d. Barnabasbriefes, p. 272; *Le Moyne*, *Varia Sacra*, ii. p. 836; *Hefele*, *Sendschr. d. Barnab.*, p. 225; *Cotelier*, *Patr. Ap.*, p. 38; *Volkmar*, II'buch in d. Apocr., ii. p. 24; *Holtzmann*, *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1871, p. 340; *Ewald*, *Gesch. d. V. Isr.*, vii. p. 159, anm. 1; *Riggenbach*, *Zeugn. Ev. Joh.*, p. 87; *Lücke*, *Einl. Offenb. Joh.*, p. 151 f.; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, i. p. 244 f. Those of the above critics who do not admit that the quotation is absolutely taken from IV. Ezra, at least fully recognize it to be from an apocryphal source, which is sufficient for our present argument.

saith: When, &c. . . . ἐν ἄλλῳ προφήτῃ λέγοντι . . . . λέγει Κύριος· κ.τ.λ.” He also quotes (ch. vi.) the apocryphal “Book of Wisdom” as Holy Scripture, and in like manner several other unknown works. When it is remembered that the Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians, the Pastor of Hermas, the Epistle of Barnabas itself, and many other apocryphal works have been quoted by the Fathers as Holy Scripture, the distinctive value of such an expression may be understood. With this passing remark, however, we proceed to say that this supposed quotation from Matthew as Holy Scripture by proving too much absolutely destroys its value as evidence. The generality of competent and impartial critics are agreed, that it is impossible to entertain the idea that one of our Gospels could have held the rank of Holy Scripture at the date of this Epistle, seeing that, for more than half a century after, the sharpest line was drawn between the writings of the Old Testament and of the New, and the former alone quoted as, or accorded the consideration of, Holy Scripture.<sup>1</sup> If this were actually a quotation from our first Gospel, already in the position of Holy Scripture, it would indeed be astonishing that the Epistle, putting out of the question other Christian writings for half a century after it, teeming as it does with extracts from the Old Testament, and from known, and unknown, apocryphal works, should thus limit its use of the Gospel

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 28; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 513; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., i. p. 246; *Dressel*, Patr. Ap., p. 7; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 127; *Orelli*, Selecta Patr., 1820, p. 5 f.; *Rumpf*, N. Rev. de Théologie, 1867, p. 364; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 10 ff.; *Weiss*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1864, p. 145; *Weizsäcker*, Zur Kr. d. Barnabasbr., p. 34 f.; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 119, H'buch Einl. Apocr., ii. p. 290 f.

to a few words, totally neglecting the rich store which it contains, and quoting, on the other hand, words of Jesus not recorded at all in any of our Synoptics. It is impossible that, if the author of the "Epistle of Barnabas" was acquainted with any one of our Gospels, and considered it an inspired and canonical work, he could have neglected it in such a manner. The peculiarity of the quotation which he is supposed to make, which we shall presently point out, renders such limitation to it doubly singular upon any such hypothesis. The absurdity of the assertion, however, will become more apparent as we proceed with our examination, and perceive that all the early writers avoid our Gospels, if they knew them at all, and systematically make use of other works, and that the inference that Matthew was considered Holy Scripture, therefore, rests solely upon this quotation of half a dozen words.

The application of such a formula to a supposed quotation from one of our Gospels, in so isolated an instance, led to the belief that, even if the passage were taken from our first Synoptic, the author of the Epistle in quoting it laboured under the impression that it was derived from some prophetic book.<sup>1</sup> We daily see how difficult it is to trace the source even of the most familiar quotations. Instances of such confusion of memory are frequent in the writings of the Fathers, and many can be pointed out in the New Testament itself. For instance, in Matt. xxvii. 9 f. the passage from Zechariah xi. 12-13 is attributed to Jeremiah; in Mark i. 1, a quotation

<sup>1</sup> *Orelli*, *Selecta Patr.*, p. 5; *Weizsäcker*, *Zur Kr. Barnabasbr.*, p. 34 f.; *Schotten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 10 f.; *Weiss*, *Theol. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1864, p. 145; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Proph. Ezra u. Daniel*, p. 70; *Volkmar*, *H'buch Einl. Apocr.*, ii., p. 290 f.

from Malachi iii. 1 is ascribed to Isaiah. In 1 Corinthians ii. 9, a passage is quoted as Holy Scripture which is not found in the Old Testament at all, but which is taken, as Origen and Jerome state, from an apocryphal work, "The Révelation of Elias,"<sup>1</sup> and the passage is similarly quoted by the so-called Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians (xxxiv). Then in what prophet did the author of the first Gospel find the words (xiii. 35): "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet,<sup>2</sup> saying: I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world" ?

Orelli,<sup>3</sup> afterwards followed by many others,<sup>4</sup> suggested that the quotation was probably intended for one in IV Ezra viii. 3: "Nam multi creati sunt, pauci autem salvabuntur."<sup>5</sup> "For many are created, but few shall be saved." Bretschneider proposed as an emendation of the passage in Ezra the substitution of "*vocati*" for "*creati*," but, however plausible, his argument did not meet with much favour.<sup>6</sup> Along with this passage was also suggested a similar expression in IV Ezra ix. 15: "Plures sunt qui pereunt, quam qui salvabuntur." "There

<sup>1</sup> Origen, Tract. xxxv., § 17 in Matth.; Hieron. ad Isaiaë, lxiv., Epist. ci.; cf. Fabricius, Cod. Apocr., N. T., i. p. 342\*; Hilgenfeld, Die ap. Väter, p. 102; Jacobson, Patr. Ap., i. p. 126 f.; Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 11.

<sup>2</sup> In the Cod. Sinaiticus a later hand has here inserted "Isaiah."

<sup>3</sup> Selecta Patr., p. 5.

<sup>4</sup> Hilgenfeld, Die Proph. Ezra u. Dan., p. 62 f., cf. Zeitschr. wiss. Theol. 1868, p. 32; Strauss, Das Leben Jesu, Aufl. 5, p. 55; Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 11; cf. Volkmar, Der Ursprung, p. 116, H'buch Einl. Apocr., ii. p. 105; Weizsäcker, Zur Kr. Barnabasbr., p. 34.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Volkmar, H'buch Einl. Apocr. ii. p. 105.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Müller, Erkl. d. Barnabasbr., p. 127; Lücke, Einl. Offenb. Joh., 1852, p. 153 f.

are more who perish than who shall be saved."<sup>1</sup> The Greek of the three passages may read as follows:—

Mt. xxii. 14.	Πολλοὶ γάρ εἰσιν κλητοί, ὀλίγοι δὲ ἐκλεκτοί.
Ep. Bar. iv.	Πολλοὶ κλητοί, ὀλίγοι δὲ ἐκλεκτοί.
IV Ezra, viii. 3	Πολλοὶ γὰρ ἐγεννήθησαν, ὀλίγοι δὲ σωθήσονται.

There can be no doubt that the sense of the reading in IV Ezra is exactly that of the Epistle, and for the rest, we must not forget that the original Greek<sup>2</sup> is lost, and that we are wholly dependent on the translations and versions extant, regarding whose numerous variations and great corruption there are no differences of opinion. We have, therefore, no certainty as to the Greek text which the author of the Epistle and of the first Gospel may have had before them, and the sense of the passage with its context must, therefore, have all the greater weight.

On examining the passage as it occurs in our first Synoptic, we are at the very outset struck by the singular fact, that this short saying appears twice in that Gospel with a different context, and in each case without any propriety of application to what precedes it, whilst it is not found at all in either of the other two Synoptics. The first time we meet with it is at the close of the parable of the labourers in the vineyard.<sup>3</sup> The householder engages the labourers at different hours of the day, and pays those who had worked but one hour the same wages as those who had borne the burden and heat of the day, and the reflection at the close is, xx. 16 :

<sup>1</sup> We might also point to the verse x. 97, "For thou art blessed above many, and art called near to the Most High, and so are but few." "Tu enim beatus es præ multis, et vocatus es apud Altissimum, sicut et pauci."

<sup>2</sup> *Volkmann*, H'buch Einl. Apocr., ii. p. 279, p. 317 ff.; *Fritzsche*, Exeg. H'buch, i. p. 10 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Proph. Ezra u. Dan., p. 8 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Matt.* xx. 1—16.

“Thus the last shall be first and the first last ; for many are called but few chosen.” It is perfectly evident that neither of these sayings, but especially not that with which we are concerned, has any connection with the parable at all. There is no question of many or few, or of selection or rejection ; all the labourers are engaged and paid alike. If there be a moral at all to the parable, it is the justification of the master : “Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own ?” It is impossible to imagine a saying more irrelevant to its context than “many are called but few chosen,” in such a place. The passage occurs again (xxii. 14) in connection with the parable of the king who made a marriage for his son. The guests who are at first invited refuse to come, and are destroyed by the king’s armies ; but the wedding is nevertheless “furnished with guests” by gathering together as many as are found in the highways. A new episode commences when the king comes in to see the guests (v. 11). He observes a man there who has not on a wedding garment, and he desires the servants to (v. 13) “Bind him hand and foot, and cast him into the darkness without,” where “there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth ;”<sup>1</sup> and then comes our passage (v. 14) : “For many are called but few chosen.” Now, whether applied to the first or to the latter part of the parable, the saying is irrelevant. The guests first called were in fact chosen as much as the last, but themselves refused to come, and of all those who, being “called” from the highways and byways, ultimately furnished the wedding with guests

<sup>1</sup> This is not the place to criticize the expectation of finding a wedding garment on a guest hurried in from highways and byways, or the punishment inflicted for such an offence, as questions affecting the character of the parable.

in their stead, only one was rejected. It is clear that the facts here distinctly contradict the moral that "few are chosen." In both places the saying is, as it were, "dragged in by the hair." On examination, however, we find that the oldest MSS. of the New Testament omit the sentence from Matthew xx. 16. It is neither found in the Sinaitic nor Vatican codices, and whilst it has not the support of the Codex Alexandrinus, which is defective at the part, nor of the Dublin rescript (z), which omits it, many other MSS. are also without it. The total irrelevancy of the saying to its context, its omission by the oldest authorities from Matth. xx. 16, where it appears in later MSS., and its total absence from both of the other Gospels, must at once strike every one as peculiar, and as very unfortunate, to say the least of it, for those who make extreme assertions with regard to its supposed quotation by the Epistle of Barnabas. Weizäcker, with great probability, suggests that in this passage we have merely a well-known proverb, which the author of the first gospel has introduced into his work from some uncanonical or other source, and placed in the mouth of Jesus.<sup>1</sup> Certainly under the circumstances it can scarcely be maintained in its present context as a historical saying of Jesus. Ewald, who naturally omits it from Matthew xx. 16, ascribes the parable xx. 1—16 as well as that xxii. 1—14, in which it stands, originally to the *Spruchsammlung*<sup>2</sup> or collection of discourses, out of which, with intermediate works, he considers that our first Gospel was composed.<sup>3</sup> However this may be, there is, it seems to us, every reason for believing that it was not originally a part of these

<sup>1</sup> Zur Kr. des Barnabasbr., p. 34 f.

<sup>2</sup> Die drei ersten Evv., 1850. <sup>3</sup> Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., ii. 1849, p. 191 ff.

parables, and that it is not in that sense historical ; and there is, therefore, no ground for asserting that it may not either have been derived from the original text of IV Ezra by the Gospel, or by both from some older work, from which also it may have come into the " Epistle of Barnabas."

In the IV Book of Ezra the saying is perfectly in keeping with its context, and, as we shall see, with the context of the Epistle. In IV Ezra vii. the angel discourses with Ezra of God's dealings with man, and more especially with Israel, and of the difficulty of securing salvation. He speaks in parables (v. 3—5). The sea is wide and deep, but if the entrance to it be narrow like a river, a man must go through the narrow to the wide (v. 6—9). A city built in a broad plain is full of good things, but can only be approached by one narrow path, by which only one man can pass at a time, beset by dangers on either hand. If this city be given to a man for his inheritance, must he not pass the danger set before it in order to obtain the inheritance ? v. 10, " And I said : It is so Lord." Then said he unto me : " Even so is Israel's portion." And then he goes on to say that God made the world for Israel, and to describe the consequences of Adam's fall, laying down in various forms the maxim that man must *labour* to enter into the inheritance. v. 20, " For there be many that perish in this life, because they despise the law of God that is set before them," and deny his covenants. Then Ezra points out that (v. 36 ff) Abraham and Moses, Samuel, David, Elias, and Ezechias, prayed for others at various times, " and the righteous have prayed for the ungodly ; wherefore," he asks, " shall it not be so now also ?" The angel answers at much length, and after

describing the final judgment of God, the punishment of the wicked, and the blessedness of the just, he winds up with the statement regarding the future life (v. 59): "For this is the life whereof Moses spake unto the people while he lived, saying, Choose thee life, that thou mayest live. (v. 63) Nevertheless they believed not him, nor yet the prophets after him, no nor me, which have spoken unto them," &c. Ezra replies that he knows God is gracious and merciful, for if he did not forgive (v. 70), "There should be very few left peradventure in an innumerable multitude (ch. viii. 1). And he answered me, saying, the Most High hath made this world for many, but the world to come for few (v. 2). I will tell thee a similitude, Esdras; As when thou askest the earth, it shall say unto thee, that it giveth much mould whereof earthen vessels are made, but little dust that gold cometh of: even so is the course of this present world (v. 3). There be many created, but few shall be saved." In the Epistle of Barnabas (ch. iv.) the author commences by an exhortation to flee from iniquity and set our affection on the world to come, seeing that the final judgment is at hand; and he quotes the book of Enoch: "For on account of this the Lord has cut short the times and the days, that his Beloved may hasten; and He will come to his inheritance." After some other passages on the latter times, he warns those whom he addresses not to deceive themselves, saying that "the covenant was both theirs (Israel's) and ours," for they finally lost it after Moses had already received it. After enlarging on this, and on the conduct which should be adopted in view of the last days, the writer winds up: "The Lord will judge the world without respect of persons. Each will receive as he has done, &c., &c. But give heed to this, my brethren,

the more, when ye perceive that after such great signs and wonders wrought in Israel they were thus abandoned. Let us, therefore, beware lest we should be found as it is written : Many are called but few are chosen." Now the saying here is not employed in any connection similar to the parables with which it is associated in our Gospel, but on the other hand it is decidedly and markedly employed in the same spirit as in IV Ezra, and with similar context. It is almost impossible, in view of all the circumstances, to avoid the conclusion that the Epistle either quotes from a form of Ezra, or from an original work from which the author of that apocalyptic writing derived it, and that not only it was not quoted from our Synoptic, but that the saying is not rightfully part of that Gospel at all, but has been introduced thither without reason or propriety from some other work.

This conclusion is strengthened by the fact that the author of the Epistle quotes other passages from IV Ezra, and that the work was much used by the early Christians. We have already mentioned that it is quoted in the so-called Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians. In ch. xii. of the Epistle of Barnabas, the following passage, to which we have partially referred, occurs : " In like manner he refers to the cross in another prophet, saying : ' And when shall these things come to pass ? ' And the Lord saith, ' When a tree shall be bent and arise, and when blood shall flow out of wood.'"<sup>1</sup> In IV Ezra we find : (ch. iv. 33) And when shall these things come to pass? (ch.v.5.) "And blood shall drop out of wood,

<sup>1</sup> Ὁμοίως πάλιν περὶ τοῦ σταυροῦ ὀρίζει ἐν ἄλλῳ προφήτῃ λέγοντι· Καὶ πότε ταῦτα συντελεσθήσεται; Λέγει κύριος· Ὄταν ξύλον κλιθῆ καὶ ἀναστῆ, καὶ ὅταν ἐκ ξύλου αἶμα στάξῃ· c. xii.

&c.”<sup>1</sup> It is to be regretted that we no longer have the original of IV Ezra, but the quotation so far corresponds perfectly with the passage above, and was evidently derived from it. Although there is no similar phrase to : “When a tree shall be bent and arise,” in our text, it may have originally existed, or have been added from some other apocryphal book no longer extant.<sup>2</sup> There is, however, another passage which deserves to be mentioned. The Epistle has the following quotation : “Again, I will show thee how, in regard to us, the Lord saith, He maketh a new creation in the last times. The Lord saith : Behold I make the first as the last.”<sup>3</sup> Now even Tischendorf does not pretend that this is a quotation of Matth. xx. 16,<sup>4</sup> “Thus the last shall be first and the first last,” (οὕτως ἔσονται οἱ ἔσχατοι πρῶτοι καὶ οἱ πρῶτοι ἔσχατοι) the sense of which is quite different. The application of the saying in this place in the first Synoptic Gospel is evidently quite false, and depends merely on the ring of words and not of ideas. Strange to say it is not found in either of the other gospels, but, like the famous phrase which we have been considering, it nevertheless appears twice, quite irrelevantly, in two places of the first Gospel. In xix. 30 it is quoted again with slight variation : “But many first shall be last and last first”

<sup>1</sup> Quando hæc ? . . . et de ligno sanguis stillabit. *Volkmar*, II'buch Einl. Apocr., ii. p. 18, p. 24; cf. *Habbakuk*, ii. 11.

<sup>2</sup> *Müller*, Erkl. d. Barabasbr., p. 272, cf. 271; *Volkmar*, II'buch Einl. Apocr., ii. p. 24; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., i. p. 229; *Hilgenfeldt*, N. T. extra can. recept. Fasc., ii. p. 75, Die Proph. Ezra u. Dan., p. 70; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 28; *Holtzmann*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1871, p. 340; *Hefele*, Sonderschr. d. Barn., p. 225; *Wieseler*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1870, p. 290; cf. *Ewald*, Gesch. d. Velkes Isr., vii. p. 159, ann. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Πάλιν σοι ἐπιδείξω πῶς πρὸς ἡμᾶς λέγει κύριος· δευτέραν πλάσιν ἐπ' ἑσχάτων ἐποίησεν· λέγει κύριος· Ἴδοῦ, ποιῶ τὰ ἔσχατα ὡς τὰ πρῶτα. c. vi.

<sup>4</sup> Canon Westcott does not make any reference to it either.

(πολλοὶ δὲ ἔσονται πρῶτοι ἔσχατοι καὶ ἔσχατοι πρῶτοι), but without relevancy to the context. Now it will be remembered that at xx. 16 it occurs in several MSS. in connection with "Many are called but few are chosen," although the oldest codices omit the latter passage, and the separate quotation of these two passages by the author of the Epistle, with so marked a variation in the second, renders it almost certain that he found both in the source from which he quotes. The irrelevant use made of both in the Gospel seems clearly to indicate that they were introduced into it from some other work, without perfect understanding of their connection. The passage in the Epistle is referred by many also to IV Ezra, v. 42, but we quote the verse preceding and following, for the sake of showing context: (v. 41) "And I said, Behold, Lord, yet art thou nigh unto them that be reserved till the end: and what shall they do that have been before me, or we that be now, or they that shall come after us?" (v. 42) "And he said unto me, I will liken my judgment unto a ring; like as there is no slackness of the last, even so there is no swiftness of the first: (v. 43) So I answered and said: Coudest thou not make those that have been made, and be now, and that are to come, at once, &c., &c." Without dwelling on this, the passage clearly is not referable to our first Gospel. We have, however, more than sufficiently considered, the famous "Many are called, &c." We believe that the passage was most certainly not quoted from our Synoptic. Supposing, however, for the sake of argument, that it might have been derived from the Gospel, what would that do towards proving its authenticity or veracity? No Gospel is named, and no author indicated; and even assuming it to have been derived from the first Gospel,

nothing but its mere existence could thence be inferred, But even this inference would be unwarrantable from such evidence, for supposing the saying to be historical, which those who quote the Gospel as evidence for miracles must maintain, the mere quotation of a historical saying without indication of source, which might equally have been found in a dozen other works then extant, could not form proof even of the existence of any one special Gospel.

There can be no doubt that many Scriptural texts have crept into early Christian writings which originally had no place there; and where attendant circumstances are suspicious, it is always well to remember the fact. An instance of the interpolation of which we speak is found in the "Epistle of Barnabas." In one place the phrase: "Give to every one that asketh of thee" (*παντὶ τῷ αἰτοῦντί σε δίδου*)<sup>1</sup> occurs, not as a quotation, but merely woven into the Greek text as it existed before the discovery of the Sinaitic MS. This phrase is the same as the precept in Luke vi. 30, although it was argued by some that, as no other trace of the third Gospel existed in the Epistle, it was more probably an alteration of the text of Matth. v. 42. Omitting the phrase from the passage in the Epistle, the text read as follows: "Thou shalt not hesitate to give, neither shalt thou murmur when thou givest . . . so shalt thou know who is the good Recompenser of the reward." The supposed quotation, inserted where we have left a blank, really interrupted the sense and repeated the previous injunction. The oldest MS., the "Codex Sinaiticus," omits the quotation, and so ends the question, but it is afterwards inserted by another hand. Some pious scribe, in fact, seeing the

<sup>1</sup> Ch. xix.

relation of the passage to the Gospel, had added the words in the margin as a gloss, and they afterwards found their way into the text. In this manner very many similar glosses have crept into the text which they were originally intended to illustrate.

Tischendorf, who does not allude to this, lays much stress upon the following passage: "But when he selected His own apostles, who should preach His Gospel, who were sinners above all sin, in order that he might show that He came not to call the righteous but sinners, then He manifested Himself to be the Son of God."<sup>1</sup> We may remark that, in the common Greek text, the words "to repentance" were inserted after "sinners," but they are not found in the Sinaitic MS. In like manner many Codices insert them in Matth. ix. 13 and Mark ii. 17, but they are not found in some of the oldest MSS., and are generally rejected. Tischendorf considers them a later addition both to the text of the Gospel and of the Epistle.<sup>2</sup> But this very fact is suggestive. It is clear that a supposed quotation has been deliberately adjusted to what was considered to be the text of the Gospel. Why should the whole phrase not be equally an interpolation? We shall presently see that there is reason to think that it is so. Although there is no quotation in the passage, who, asks Tischendorf,<sup>3</sup> could mistake the words as they stand in Matthew, ix. 13, "For I came not to call the righteous but sinners"? Now this passage is referred to by Origen in his work against Celsus, in a way which indicates that the supposed quotation did not exist

<sup>1</sup> Ὅτε δὲ τοὺς ἰδίους ἀποστόλους τοὺς μέλλοντας κηρύσσειν τὸ εὐαγγέλιον αὐτοῦ ἐξελέξατο, ὄντας ὑπὲρ πάντων ἁμαρτιῶν ἀνομωτέρους, ἵνα δείξῃ, ὅτι οὐκ ἦλθεν καλέσαι δικαίους, ἀλλὰ ἁμαρτωλοὺς, τότε ἐφανερώσων ἑαυτὸν εἶναι υἱὸν θεοῦ.  
c. v.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 96, anm. 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.* p. 96.

in his copy. Origen says: "And as Celsus has called the Apostles of Jesus infamous men, saying that they were tax-gatherers and worthless sailors, we have to remark on this, that, &c. . . . Now in the Catholic Epistle of Barnabas from which, perhaps, Celsus derived the statement that the Apostles were infamous and wicked men, it is written that 'Jesus selected his own Apostles who were sinners above all sin,'"<sup>1</sup>—and then he goes on to quote the expression of Peter to Jesus (Luke v. 8), and then I Timothy, i. 15, but he nowhere refers to the supposed quotation in the Epistle. Now, if we read the passage without the quotation, we have: "But when he selected his own Apostles who should preach his Gospel, who were sinners above all sin . . . then he manifested himself to be the Son of God." Here a pious scribe very probably added in the margin the gloss: "in order that he might show that he came not to call the righteous but sinners," to explain the passage, and as in the case of the phrase: "Give to every one that asketh of thee," the gloss became subsequently incorporated with the text. The Epistle, however, goes on to give the only explanation which the author intended, and which clashes with that of the scribe. "For if he had not come in the flesh, how could men have been saved by beholding him? Seeing that looking on the sun that is not to be in the future, the work of his hands, they have not even power to endure his rays. Accordingly, the Son of Man came in the flesh for this, that he might bring to a head the number of their sins who had persecuted to death his prophets."<sup>2</sup> The argument of Origen bears out this

<sup>1</sup> *Contra Cels.*, i. 63.

<sup>2</sup> *Εἰ γὰρ μὴ ἦλθεν ἐν σαρκί, πῶς ἂν ἐσώθησαν οἱ ἄνθρωποι βλέποντες αὐτόν;*

view, for he does not at all take the explanation of the gloss as to why Jesus chose his disciples from such a class, but he reasons: "What is there strange, therefore, that Jesus being minded to manifest to the race of men his power to heal souls; should have selected infamous and wicked men, and should have elevated them so far, that they became patterns of the purest virtue to those who were brought by their persuasion to the Gospel of Christ."<sup>1</sup> The argument, both of the author of the Epistle and of Origen, is different from that suggested by the phrase under examination, and we consider it a mere gloss introduced into the text; which, as the *εἰς μετάνοιαν* shows, has, in the estimation of Tischendorf himself, been deliberately altered. If, however, it originally formed part of the text, it is absurd to affirm that it is any proof of the use or existence of the first Gospel. The words of Jesus in Matt. ix. 12—14, evidently belong to the oldest tradition of the Gospel, and, in fact, Ewald ascribes them, apart from the remainder of the chapter, originally to the Spruchsammlung, from which, with two intermediate books, he considers that our present Matthew was composed.<sup>2</sup> Nothing can be more certain than that such sayings, if they be admitted to be historical at all, must have existed in many other works, and the mere fact of their happening to be also in one of the

*ὅτι τὸν μέλλοντα μὴ εἶναι ἥλιον, ἔργον τῶν χειρῶν αὐτοῦ ὑπάρχοντα, ἐμβλέποντες οὐκ ἰσχύουσιν εἰς τὰς ἀκτίνας αὐτοῦ ἀποφθαλμῆσαι; οὐκὸν ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ εἰς τοῦτο ἦλθεν ἐν σαρκί, ἵνα τὸ τέλειον τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν ἀνακεφαλαιώσῃ τοῖς διώξασιν ἐν θανάτῳ τοὺς προσήτας αὐτοῦ. c. v.*

<sup>1</sup> Τί οὖν ἄπορον, βουλούμενον παριστήσῃαι τῷ γένει τῶν ἀνθρώπων τὸν Ἰησοῦν, ὀπηλίην ἔχει ψυχῶν ἰατρικὴν, τοὺς ἐπιρρήτους καὶ πονηροτάτους ἐπιλέξασθαι, καὶ τούτους προαγαγεῖν ἐπὶ τοσοῦτον, ὥστ' αὐτοὺς παράδειγμα εἶναι ἢθους καθαρωτάτου τοῖς δι' αὐτῶν προσαγομένοις τῷ Χριστῷ εὐαγγελίῳ; Contra Col., i. 63.

<sup>2</sup> Die drei ersten Evng., p. 15, p. 1.

Gospels which has survived, cannot prove its use, or even its existence at the time the Epistle of Barnabas was written, more especially as the phrase does not occur as a quotation, and there is no indication of the source from which it was derived.

Tischendorf, however, finds a further analogy between the Epistle and the Gospel of Matthew, in ch. xii. "Since, therefore, in the future, they were to say that Christ was the son of David, fearing and perceiving clearly the error of the wicked," David himself prophesied—"The Lord said unto my Lord, sit at my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool."<sup>1</sup> Tischendorf upon this inquires: "Could Barnabas so write without the supposition, that his readers had Matthew, xxii. 41. ff, before them, and does not such a supposition likewise infer the actual authority of Matthew's Gospel?"<sup>2</sup> Such rapid argument and extreme conclusions are startling indeed, but, in his haste, our critic has forgotten to state the whole case. The author of the Epistle has been elaborately showing that the Cross of Christ is repeatedly typified in the Old Testament, and at the commencement of the chapter, after quoting the passage from IV Ezra, iv. 33, v. 5, he points to the case of Moses, to whose heart "the spirit speaks that he should make a form of the cross," by stretching forth his arms in supplication, and so long as he did so Israel prevailed over their enemies; and again he typified the cross, when he set up the brazen serpent upon which the people might look and be healed. Then that which Moses, as a prophet, said to

<sup>1</sup> Ἐπεὶ οὖν μέλλουσιν λέγειν, ὅτι Χριστὸς υἱὸς Δαυὶδ ἐστίν, αὐτὸς προφητεῖει Δαυὶδ, φοβούμενος καὶ συνίων τὴν πλάνην τῶν ἀμαρτωλῶν· Εἶπεν ὁ κύριος τῷ κυρίῳ μου· κάθου ἐκ δεξιῶν μου, ἕως ἂν θῶ τοὺς ἐχθρούς σου ὑποπόδιον τῶν ποδῶν σου· c. xii.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 96.

Joshua (Jesus) the son of Nave, when he gave him that name, was solely for the purpose that all the people might hear that the Father would reveal all things to his Son. This name being given to him when he was sent to spy out the land, Moses said: "Take a book in thy hands, and write what the Lord saith, that the Son of God will in the last days cut off by the roots all the house of Amalek." This, of course, is a falsification of the passage, Exodus, xvii. 14, for the purpose of making it declare Jesus to be the "Son of God." Then proceeding in the same strain, he says: "Behold again Jesus is not the son of Man, but the Son of God, manifested in the type and in the flesh. Since, therefore, in the future, they were to say that Christ was the son of David," (and here follows the passage we are discussing) "fearing and perceiving clearly the error of the wicked, David himself prophesied: 'The Lord said unto my Lord, sit at my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool.' And again, thus speaks Isaiah: 'The Lord said to Christ my Lord, whose right hand I have held, that the nations may obey Him, and I will break in pieces the strength of kings.' Behold how David calleth Him Lord, and the Son of God." And here ends the chapter and the subject. Now it is quite clear that the passage occurs, not as a reference to any such dilemma as that in Matthew, xxii. 41 ff., but simply as one of many passages which, at the commencement of our era, were considered prophetic declarations of the divinity of Christ, in opposition to the expectation of the Jews that the Messiah was to be the son of David,<sup>1</sup> and, as we have seen, in order to prove his point the author alters the text. To argue that such a passage of a Psalm, quoted in such a manner in this

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Gfrörer*, *Das Jahrh. des Heils*, ii. p. 219 ff., 258 ff., 292 ff.

epistle, proves the use of our first Synoptic, is simply preposterous.

We have already pointed out that the author quotes apocryphal works as Holy Scripture; and we may now add that he likewise cites words of Jesus which are nowhere found in our Gospels. For instance, in ch. vii. we meet with the following expressions directly attributed to Jesus. Thus he says: "Those who desire to behold me, and to enter into my kingdom, must through tribulation and suffering lay hold on me."<sup>1</sup> Hilgenfeld<sup>2</sup> compares this with another passage, similar in sense, in IV Ezra, vii. 14; but in any case it is not a quotation from our Gospels;<sup>3</sup> and with so many passages in them suitable to his purpose, it would be amazing, if he knew and held Matthew in the consideration which Tischendorf asserts, that he should neglect their stores, and go elsewhere for such quotations. There is, however, nothing in this epistle worthy of the name of evidence even of the existence of our Gospels, and, on the contrary, Reuss<sup>4</sup> has pointed out a passage at the end of ch. xv., which is in contradiction with Matthew, the Gospel which the author is supposed to know, and with Mark, although it agrees with the third Synoptic, which, however, is itself in apparent contradiction with the Acts of the Apostles, generally ascribed to the same author. The epistle says: "We keep the eighth day with joy, in which Jesus rose again from the dead, and when he had

<sup>1</sup> Οὕτω, φησίν, οἱ θέλοντές με ἰδεῖν καὶ ἄψασθαί μου τῆς βασιλείας, ὑφείλουσιν θλιβέντες καὶ παθόντες λαβεῖν με. c. vii.

<sup>2</sup> Die Proph. Ezra u. Daniel, p. 70.

<sup>3</sup> Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 27 anm. 1; Eichhorn, Einl. N. T., i. p. 128; Hilgenfeld, Nov. Test. ex can. receptum, Fasc., ii. p. 70; Fabricius, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 331\*; cf. Lardner, Credibility, &c., Works, ii. p. 15.

<sup>4</sup> Gesch, h. Schr. N. T., p. 233.

manifested himself, ascended into the heavens." In making the resurrection, appearances to the disciples, and the Ascension take place in one day, the author is in agreement with Justin Martyr,<sup>1</sup> who made use of a Gospel different from ours.

## 3.

THE Pastor of Hermas is another work which very nearly secured permanent canonical rank with the writings of the New Testament. It was quoted as Holy Scripture by the Fathers and held to be divinely inspired, and it was publicly read in the Churches.<sup>2</sup> It has a place, with the "Epistle of Barnabas," in the Sinaitic Codex, after the canonical books. In early times it was attributed to the Hermas who is mentioned in the Epistle to the Romans, xiv. 14, in consequence of a mere conjecture to that effect by Origen;<sup>3</sup> but the Canon of Muratori<sup>4</sup> confidently ascribes it to a brother of Pius, Bishop of Rome, and at least there does not seem any ground for the statement of Origen.<sup>5</sup> It may have

<sup>1</sup> Apol., i. 67, 50.

<sup>2</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iv. 20, § 2; *Clemens Al.*, Strom., i. 29, § 181, ii. 1, § 3, vi. 15, § 131; *Tertullian*, De Orat., 12. He rejected it later. De Pudic., 10; *Origen*, Comm. in Rom., lib. x. 31, Hom., viii. in Num., Hom. i. in Psalm 37, De Princip., ii. 1, § 3, iii. 2, § 4; cf. *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 3, v. 8; iii. 25; *Cotelier*, Patr. Ap., i. 68.

<sup>3</sup> Puto autem quod Hermas iste sit scriptor libelli illius qui Pastor appellatur, quæ scriptura valde mihi utilis videtur, et ut puto divinitus inspirata. In Rom. lib. x. 31.

<sup>4</sup> *Routh*, Reliq. Sacre, i. p. 396; *Tregelles*, Canon Murat., p. 20.

<sup>5</sup> *Credner*, Zur Gesch. d. Kan., p. 90 f.; *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xxiv.; *Bunsen*, Hippolytus, i. p. 428; *Gratz*, Disq. in Past. Hermæ, 1820, part. i. p. 8 f.; *Hefele*, Patr. Ap., p. lxii. f.; *Reuss*, Gesch. heil. Schr. N. T., p. 272; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 297; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 173.

been written about the middle of the second century or a little earlier.<sup>1</sup>

Tischendorf dismisses this important memorial of the early Christian Church with a note of two lines, for it has no quotations either from the Old or New Testament.<sup>2</sup> He does not even venture to insinuate that it contains any indications of acquaintance with our Gospels. The only direct quotation in the "Pastor" is from an apocryphal work which is cited as Holy Scripture: "The Lord is nigh unto them who return to him, as it is written in Eldad and Modat, who prophesied to the people in the wilderness."<sup>3</sup> This work, which appears in the Stichometry of Nicephorus amongst the apocrypha of the Old Testament, is no longer extant.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Anger*, Synopsis Ev., p. xxiv.; *Reuss*, Gesch. h. Schr. N. T., p. 271 f.; *Credner*, Zur Gesch. d. Kan., p. 90 f., Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 37; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 282 ff., 297 ff.; *Bunsen*, Hippolytus, i. p. 428; *Baur*, Vorles. Dogmengesch. I. i. p. 251; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 173; *Treyelles*, Canon Murat., p. 64; *Lücke*, Einl. Offenb. Joh. 1852, p. 337 f.; *Lipsius*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1865, p. 283; *Keim*, Jesu von Nazara, i. p. 143; *Hofstede de Groot*, Basilides, 1868; *Gratz*, Disq. in Past. Hermæ, p. 1; *Hefele*, Patr. Ap., p. lxii ff.; *Ewald* (A.D. 110—120), Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 340; *Zeller* (first 10 years 2nd century), Die Apostelgesch., p. 7; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. pp. 328 ff.; *Hilgenfeld* (A.D. 117—138), Die ap. Väter, p. 160 f., cf. p. 127; *Volkmar* (A.D. 130), Der Ursprung, p. 64; Einl. Apocr., ii. p. 297; *Schotten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 6; *Lechler*, Das ap. u. nachap. Zeitalter, p. 489.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 182; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 175; *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, p. 48 f.

<sup>3</sup> Ἐγγὺς κύριος τοῖς ἐπιστρεφομένοις, ὡς γέγραπται ἐν τῷ Ἐλδάδ καὶ Μωδάτ, τοῖς προφητεύσασιν ἐν τῇ ἐρήμῳ τῷ λαῷ. Vis. ii. 3; cf. Numbers xi. 26 f., Sept. Vers.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Zur Gesch. d. Kan., p. 119 ff., 145.

## CHAPTER II.

### THE EPISTLES OF IGNATIUS—THE EPISTLE OF POLYCARP.

ALTHOUGH, in reality, appertaining to a very much later period, we shall here refer to the so-called "Epistles of Ignatius," and examine any testimony which they afford regarding the date and authenticity of our Gospels. There are in all fifteen epistles bearing the name of Ignatius. Three of these, addressed to the Virgin Mary and the Apostle John (2), exist only in a Latin version, and these, together with five others directed to Mary of Cassobelæ, to the Tarsians, to the Antiochans, to Hero of Antioch, and to the Philippians, of which there are versions both in Greek and Latin, are universally admitted to be spurious, and may, so far as their contents are concerned, be at once dismissed from all consideration.<sup>1</sup> They are not mentioned by Eusebius, nor does any early writer refer to them. Of the remaining seven epistles, addressed to the Ephesians, Magnesians, Tralians, Romans, Philadelphians, Smyrnæans, and to Polycarp, there are two distinct versions extant, one long version, of which there are both Greek and Latin texts, and another much shorter, and presenting considerable

<sup>1</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xxi.; *Guericke*, H'buch K. G., i. p. 148; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml. N. T., p. 486; *Lardner*, Works, ii. p. 68; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 50 f.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 21; *Jacobson*, Patr. Ap., i. p. xxv. ff.; *Hefele*, Patr. Ap., p. xxxvi.; *Dressel*, Patr. Apost., 1863, p. xxiv.

variations, of which there are also both Greek and Latin texts. After a couple of centuries of discussion, critics almost without exception have finally agreed that the longer version is nothing more than an interpolated version of the shorter and more ancient form of the Epistles. The question regarding the authenticity of the Ignatian Epistles, however, was re-opened and complicated by the publication, in 1845, by Dr. Cureton, of a Syriac version of three epistles only—to Polycarp, to the Ephesians, and to the Romans—in a still shorter form, discovered amongst a large number of MSS. purchased by Dr. Tattam from the monks of the Desert of Nitria. These three Syriac epistles have been subjected to the severest scrutiny, and many of the ablest critics have pronounced them to be the only authentic Epistles of Ignatius, whilst others, who do not admit that even these are genuine letters emanating from Ignatius, still prefer them to the version of seven Greek epistles, and consider them the most ancient form of the letters which we possess.<sup>1</sup> As early as the sixteenth century, however, the strongest doubts were expressed regarding the authenticity of any of the epistles ascribed to Ignatius. The Magdeburg Centuriators first attacked them, and Calvin declared

<sup>1</sup> *Bunsen*, Ignatius v. Ant. u. s. Zeit, 1847; Die drei ächt. u. d. vier unächt. Br. des Ignat., 1847; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 145; *Böhringer*, K. G. in *Biograph.*, 2 Aufl., p. 16; *Cureton*, The Ancient Syriac Version of Eps. of St. Ignatius, &c., 1845; *Vindiciæ Ignat.*, 1846, Corpus Ignatianum, 1849; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 313; *Lipsius*, Aechtheit d. Syr. Recens. Ign. Br. in *Illgen's Zeitschr. f. hist. Theol.*, 1856, H. i., 1857, *Abhandl. d. deutsche-morgenl. Gesellschaft*, i. 5, 1859, p. 7; *Milman*, *Hist. of Chr.*, ii. p. 102; *Ritschl*, *Entst. altk. Kirche*, p. 403, anm.; *Weiss*, *Reuter's Repertorium*, Sept. 1852. It must be remembered that many critics, who had previously declared themselves in favour of the shorter Greek version of the seven Epistles, have not re-examined the subject since the discovery of the three Syriac Epistles, or have not expressed any further opinion, while many others had previously died.

them to be spurious,<sup>1</sup> an opinion fully shared by Chemnitz, Dallæus, and others, and similar doubts, more or less definite, were expressed throughout the seventeenth century,<sup>2</sup> and onward to comparatively recent times,<sup>3</sup> although the means of forming a judgment were not then so complete as now. That the epistles were interpolated there was no doubt. Fuller examination and more comprehensive knowledge of the subject have confirmed earlier doubts, and a large mass of critics recognize that the authenticity of none of these epistles can be established, and that they can only be considered later and spurious compositions.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Nihil ænienis illis, quæ sub Ignatii nomine editæ sunt, putidius. Quo minus tolerabilis est eorum impudentia qui talibus larvis ad fallendum se instruunt." *Instit. lib.*, i. 3.

<sup>2</sup> By Bochartus, Aubertin, Blondel, Basnago, Casaubon, Cocus, Humfroy, Rivetus, Salmasius, Socinus (Faustus), Parker, Petau, &c., &c.; cf. *Jacobson, Patr. Apost.*, i. p. xxv.; *Curetton, Vindicie Ignatianæ*, 1846, appendix.

<sup>3</sup> *Wotton, Præf. Clem. R. Epp.*, 1718; *J. Owen, Enquiry into original nature, &c., Evang. Church: Works*, ed. Russel, 1826, vol. xx. p. 147; *Oudin, Comm. de Script. Eccles. &c.*, 1722, p. 88; *Lampe, Comm. analyt. ex Evang. Joan.*, 1724, i. p. 184; *Lardner, Credibility, &c., Works*, ii. p. 68 f.; *Beausobre, Hist. Crit. de Manichée, &c.*, 1734, i. p. 378, note 3; *Ernesti, N. Theol. Biblioth.*, 1761, ii. p. 489; *Mosheim, de Rebus Christ.*, p. 159 f.; *Weismann, Introd. in Memorab. Eccles.*, 1745, p. 137; *Heumann, Conspect. Reipub. Lit.*, 1763, p. 492; *Schræckh, Chr. Kirchengesch.*, 1775, ii. p. 341; *Griesbach, Opuscula Academ.*, 1824, i. p. 26; *Rosenmüller, Hist. Interpr. Libr. Sacr. in Eccles.*, 1795, i. p. 116; *Semler, Paraphr. in Epist. ii. Petri*, 1784, Præf.; *Kestner, Comm. de Eusebii H. E. condit.*, 1816, p. 63; *Henke, Allg. Gesch. chr. Kirche*, 1818, i. p. 96; *Neander, K. G.*, 1843, ii. p. 1140, cf. i. p. 357, anm. 1; *Baumgarten-Crusius, Lehrb. chr. Dogmengesch.*, 1832, p. 83, cf. *Comp. chr. Dogmengesch.*, 1840, p. 79; *Niedner, Gesch. chr. K.*, p. 196; *Thiersch, Die K. im ap. Zeit.*, p. 322; *Hagenbach, K. G.*, i. p. 115 f.; cf. *Curetton, Vind. Igr. append.*; *Ziegler, Versuch ein. prag. Gesch. d. kirchl. Verfassungsformen*, u. s. w., 1798, p. 16; *J. E. C. Schmidt, Versuch üb. d. gedopp. Recens. d. Br. S. Ignat. in Henke's Mag. f. Rel. Phil.*, u. s. w., 1795; cf. *Biblioth. f. Krit.*, u. s. w., N. T., i. p. 463 ff., *Urspr. kath. Kirche*, II. i. p. 1 f.; *II'buch Chr. K. G.*, i. p. 200.

<sup>4</sup> *Baur, Die sogenannt. Pastoralbr.*, p. 81 ff., *Zeitschr. f. Theol.*, 1836, iii. p. 199 ff., 1838, iii. p. 148, ff.; *Die Ignat. Br.*, p. 5 ff.; *Gesch. chr.*

Omitting for the present the so-called Epistle of Polycarp to the Philippians, the earliest reference to any of these epistles, or to Ignatius himself, is made by Irenæus, who quotes a passage which is found in the Epistle to the Romans (ch. iv.), without, however, any mention of name, introduced by the following words: "As a certain man of ours said, being condemned to the wild beasts on account of his testimony to God: 'I am the wheat of God, and by the teeth of beasts I am ground, that I may be found pure bread.'" <sup>1</sup> Origen likewise quotes two brief sentences which he refers to Ignatius. The first is merely: "But my love is crucified," <sup>2</sup> which is likewise found in the Epistle to the Romans (ch. vii.); and the other quoted as "out of one of the Epistles" of the martyr Ignatius: "From the Prince of this world was concealed the virginity of Mary," <sup>3</sup> which is found in the Epistle to the Ephesians (ch. xix). Eusebius mentions seven epistles, <sup>4</sup> and quotes one passage from the Epistle to the Romans (ch. v.), and a few words from an apocryphal Gospel contained

Kirche, 1863, i. p. 275 f., anm. 3; Vorles. Dogmengesch. I. i. p. 252; cf. Bleek, Einl. N. T., p. 145; Davidson, Introd. N. T., i. p. 19; Eichhorn, Einl. N. T., i. p. 142 f.; cf. Gfrörer, Allg. K. G., i. p. 302 f.; Harless, Comm. üb. Br. Pauli an d. Eph., 1834, p. xxxiv.; Hilgenfeld, Die ap. Väter, p. 187 ff., Der Paschastreit, 1860, p. 190; Hase, K. G. 5 Ausg., p. 70; Köstlin, Der Ursprung synopt. Evv., p. 126; Krubbe, Urspr. d. apost. Constit., p. 267; Lipsius, Verhältn. d. Textes d. drei Syr. Br., u. s. w., 1859; Ueber Ursprung u. d. ält. Gebrauch d. Christennamens, 1873, p. 7, anm.; Lechler, Das ap. u. nachap. Zeit., p. 521 f., anm. 2; Netz, Stud. u. Krit., 1835, p. 881 ff.; Rumpf, N. Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 8; Réville, Le Lien, 1856, Nos. 18—22; Schliemann, Die Clementinen, p. 421, anm. 18; Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 40 ff., 50 ff.; Schweigler, Das nachap. Zeitalter, ii. p. 159 ff.; Volkmar, Der Ursprung, p. 52 ff.; Die Evangelien, p. 636; Zeller, Die Apostelgesch., p. 51, anm. 2.

<sup>1</sup> Irenæus, Adv. Hær., v. 28, § 4; Eusebius, H. E., iii. 36. Lardner expresses a doubt whether this is a quotation at all.

<sup>2</sup> Prolog. in Cantic. Canticoꝝ.

<sup>3</sup> Hom. vi. in Lucam.

<sup>4</sup> H. E., iii. 36.

in the Epistle to the Smyrnæans (ch. iii.), the source of which he says that he does not know, and he cites from Irenæus the brief quotation given above, and refers to the mention of the epistles in the letter of Polycarp which we reserve. It will be observed that all these quotations, with the exception of the last, are taken from the three Epistles which exist in the Syriac translation, and they are found in that version; and the first occasion on which any passage attributed to Ignatius is quoted which is not in the Syriac version of the three Epistles occurs in the second half of the fourth century, when Athanasius, in his Epistle regarding the Synods of Ariminum and Selucia,<sup>1</sup> quotes a few words from the Epistle to the Ephesians (ch. vii.); but although foreign to the Syriac text, it is to be noted that the words are at least from a form of one of the three epistles which exist in that version.<sup>2</sup> It is a fact, therefore, that up to the second half of the fourth century no quotation ascribed to Ignatius, except one by Eusebius, exists, which is not found in the three short Syriac letters.

As we have already remarked, the Syriac version of the three epistles is very much shorter than the shorter Greek version, the Epistle to the Ephesians, for instance, being only about one-third of the length of the Greek text. Those who still maintain the superior authenticity of the Greek shorter version argue that the Syriac is an epitome of the Greek. This does not, however, seem tenable when the matter is carefully examined. Although so much is absent from the Syriac version, not only is there no interruption of the sense and no obscurity or undue curtness in the style, but the epistles read more

<sup>1</sup> Opera Bened. ed., i. p. 761.

<sup>2</sup> Cureton, *The Ancient Syriac Version*, &c., p. xxxiv.

consecutively, without faults of construction or grammar, and passages which in the Greek text were confused and almost unintelligible have become quite clear in the Syriac. The interpolations of the text, in fact, had been so clumsily made, that they had obscured the meaning, and their mere omission, without any other alteration of grammatical construction, has restored the epistles to clear and simple order.<sup>1</sup> It is, moreover, a remarkable fact that the passages which, long before the discovery of the Syriac epistles, were pointed out as chiefly determining that the epistles were spurious, are not found in the Syriac version at all.<sup>2</sup> Archbishop Usher, who only admitted the authenticity of six epistles, showed that much interpolation of these letters took place in the sixth century,<sup>3</sup> but this very fact increases the probability of much earlier interpolation also, at which the various existing versions most clearly point. The interpolations can be explained upon the most palpable dogmatic grounds, but not so the omissions upon the hypothesis of the Syriac version being an abridgment upon any conceivable dogmatic principle, for that which remains renders the omissions for dogmatic reasons absurd. There is no ground of interest upon which the portions omitted and retained by the Syriac version can be intelligently explained.<sup>4</sup> Finally, here, we may mention that the MSS. of the three Syriac epistles are more ancient by some centuries than those of any of the Greek versions of the Seven epistles.<sup>5</sup> The strongest internal, as well as other evidence, into which space forbids our

<sup>1</sup> Cureton, *The Ancient Syriac Version, &c.*, p. xxvi. f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. xix. f.; cf. *Dalleus, De Scriptis, &c.*, p. 386 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Dissert.*, ch. vi. p. xxxiii.

<sup>4</sup> *Cureton ib.*, . xvi. ff.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, . xl.

going in detail, has led the majority of critics to recognize the Syriac version as the most genuine form of the letters of Ignatius extant, and this is admitted by most of those who nevertheless deny the authenticity of any of the epistles.

Seven epistles have been selected out of fifteen extant, all equally purporting to be by Ignatius, simply because only that number were mentioned by Eusebius, from whom for the first time, in the fourth century,—except the general reference in the so-called Epistle of Polycarp, to which we shall presently refer,—we hear of them. Now neither the silence of Eusebius, regarding the eight epistles, nor his mention of the seven, can have much weight in deciding the question of their authenticity. The only point which is settled by the reference of Eusebius is that, at the date at which he wrote, seven epistles were known to him which were ascribed to Ignatius. He evidently knew little or nothing regarding the man or the Epistles, beyond what he had learnt from themselves,<sup>1</sup> and he mentions the martyr-journey to Rome as a mere report: “It is said that he was conducted from Syria to Rome to be cast to wild beasts on account of his testimony to Christ.”<sup>2</sup> It would be absurd to argue that no other epistles existed simply because Eusebius did not know them; and on the other hand it would be still more absurd to affirm that the seven epistles are authentic merely because Eusebius, in the fourth century,—that is to say, some two centuries after they are supposed to have been written,—had met with them. Does any one believe the letter of Jesus to Agbarus Prince of Edessa to be genuine because Euse-

<sup>1</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Die ap. Väter*, p. 210.

<sup>2</sup> *Λόγος δ' ἔχει τοῦτον ἀπὸ Συρίας ἐπὶ τὴν Ῥωμαίων πόλιν*, κ.τ.λ. *H. E.*, iii. 36.

bis inserts it in his history<sup>1</sup> as an authentic document out of the public records of the city of Edessa? There is, in fact, no evidence that the brief quotations of Irenæus and Origen are taken from either of the extant Greek versions of the epistles; for, as we have mentioned, they exist in the Syriac epistles, and there is nothing to show the original state of the letters from which they were derived. Nothing is more certain than the fact that, if any writer wished to circulate letters in the name of Ignatius, he would insert such passages as were said to have been quoted from genuine epistles of Ignatius, and supposing those quotations to be real, all that could be said on finding such passages would be that at least so much might be genuine.<sup>2</sup> It is a total mistake to suppose that the seven epistles mentioned by Eusebius have been transmitted to us in any special way. These epistles are mixed up in the Medicean and corresponding ancient Latin MSS. with the other eight epistles, universally pronounced to be spurious, without distinction of any kind, and all have equal honour.<sup>3</sup> The recognition of the number seven may, therefore, be ascribed simply to the reference to them by Eusebius, and his silence regarding the rest.

What, then, is the position of the so-called Ignatian Epistles? Towards the end of the second century, Irenæus makes a very short quotation from a source unnamed, which Eusebius, in the fourth century, finds in an epistle attributed to Ignatius. Origen, in the third century, quotes a very few words which he ascribes to Ignatius, although without definite reference to any par-

<sup>1</sup> H. E., i. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Cureton, *The Ancient Syriac Version, &c.*, p. xxxi. ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. xxv. f.; *Tregelles*, note to *Horne's Introd. N. T.*, iv. p. 332.

ticular epistle; and, in the fourth century Eusebius mentions seven epistles ascribed to Ignatius. There is no other evidence. There are, however, fifteen epistles extant, all of which are attributed to Ignatius, of all of which, with the exception of three which are only known in a Latin version, we possess both Greek and Latin versions. Of seven of these epistles—and they are those mentioned by Eusebius—we have two Greek versions, one of which is very much shorter than the other; and finally we now possess a Syriac version of three epistles only<sup>1</sup> in a form still shorter than the shorter Greek version, in which are found all the quotations of the Fathers, without exception, up to the fourth century. Eight of the fifteen epistles we universally rejected as spurious. The longer Greek version of the remaining seven epistles is almost unanimously condemned as grossly interpolated; and the great majority of critics recognize that the shorter Greek version is also much interpolated; whilst the Syriac version, which so far as MSS. are concerned is by far the most ancient text of any of the letters which we possess, reduces their number to three, and their contents to a very small compass indeed. It is not surprising that the vast majority of critics have expressed doubt more or less strong regarding the authenticity of all of these epistles, and that so large a number have repudiated them altogether. One thing is quite evident,—that amidst such a mass of falsification, interpolation, and fraud, the Ignatian Epistles cannot in any form be considered evidence on any important point.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is worthy of remark that at the end of the Syriac version the subscription is: "Here end *the* three Epistles of Ignatius, Bishop and Martyr;" cf. *Cureton, The Ancient Syriac Version, &c.*, p. 25.

<sup>2</sup> *J. J. Tayler, The Fourth Gospel, 1867, p. 56; Weizsäcker, Unters. evangelische Gesch.* p. 234.

We have not, however, finished. All of these epistles, including the three of the Syriac recension, profess to have been written by Ignatius during his journey from Antioch to Rome in the custody of Roman soldiers in order to be exposed to wild beasts, the form of martyrdom to which he had been condemned. The writer describes the circumstances of his journey as follows: "From Syria even unto Rome I fight with wild beasts, by sea and by land, by night and day; being bound amongst ten leopards, which are the band of soldiers: who even when good is done to them render evil."<sup>1</sup> Now if this account be in the least degree true, how is it possible to suppose that the martyr could have found means to write so many long epistles, entering minutely into dogmatic teaching, and expressing the most deliberate and advanced views regarding ecclesiastical government? Indeed it may be asked why Ignatius should have considered it necessary in such a journey, even if the possibility be for a moment conceded, to address such epistles to communities and individuals to whom, by the showing of the letters themselves, he had just had opportunities of addressing his counsels in person.<sup>2</sup> The epistles themselves bear none of the marks of composition under such circumstances, and it is impossible to suppose that soldiers such as the quotation above describes would allow a prisoner, condemned to wild beasts for professing Christianity, deliberately to write long epistles at every stage of his journey, promulgating the very

<sup>1</sup> 'Από Συρίας μέχρι Ῥώμης θηριομαχῶ, διὰ γῆς καὶ θαλάσσης, νυκτὸς καὶ ἡμέρας, ἐνδεδεμένος δέκα λεοπάρδοις, ὃ ἐστὶ στρατιωτῶν τάγμα· οἱ καὶ εὐεργετούμενοι χεῖρους γίνονται. Ep. Ad. Rom., v.

<sup>2</sup> Baur, Urspr. d. Episcopats, Tüb. Zeitschr. f. Theol., 1838, H. 3. p. 155 f., Die Ignat. Br., p. 61; Hilgenfeld, Die ap. Väter, p. 218; Schweigler, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 160.

doctrines for which he was condemned. And not only this, but on his way to martyrdom, he has, according to the epistles,<sup>1</sup> perfect freedom to see his friends. He receives the bishops, deacons, and members of various Christian communities, who come with greetings to him, and devoted followers accompany him on his journey. All this without hindrance from the "ten leopards," of whose cruelty he complains, and without persecution or harm to those who so openly declare themselves his friends and fellow believers. The whole story is absolutely incredible.<sup>2</sup> This conclusion, irresistible in itself, is, however, confirmed by facts arrived at from a totally different point of view. It has been demonstrated that Ignatius was not sent to Rome at all, but suffered martyrdom in Antioch itself on the 20th December, A.D. 115,<sup>3</sup> when he was condemned to be cast to wild beasts in the amphitheatre, in consequence of the fanatical excitement produced by the earthquake which took place on the 13th of that month.<sup>4</sup> There are no less than three martyrologies of Ignatius,<sup>5</sup> giving an account of the martyr's journey

<sup>1</sup> Cf. ad Ephes. i. ii., ad Magnes. ii. xv., ad Trall. i., ad Rom. x., ad Philadelp. xi., ad Smyrn. x. xiii., &c.

<sup>2</sup> *Baur*, Urspr. des Episcopats, Tüb. Zeitsch. f. Theol., 1838, H. 3. p. 154 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 216 f.; cf. *Neander*, K. G., 1842, i. p. 327, anm. 1, ii. (1843), p. 1140.

<sup>3</sup> *Baur*, Urspr. d. Episc., Tüb. Zeitschr. f. Theol., 1838, H. 3. p. 155 anm.; *Bretschneider*, Probabilia, &c. p. 185; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 144; *Guericke*, H'buch. K. G., i. p. 148; *Hagenbach*, K. G., i. p. 113 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 19; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 79; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 40, p. 50 f.; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 52; H'buch Einl. Apocr., i. p. 121 f., p. 136.

<sup>4</sup> *Volkmar*, H'buch Einl. Apocr., i. p. 121 ff., 136 f., Der Ursprung, p. 52 f.; *Baur*, Urspr. d. Episc., Tüb. Zeitschr. f. Th., 1838, H. 3. p. 149 f.; *Gesch. chr. Kirche*, 1863, i. p. 440 anm. 1; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 19; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 51 f.; cf. *Francke*, Zur Gesch. Trajans, u. s. w., 1840, p. 253 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 214.

<sup>5</sup> *Dressel*, Patr. Ap., p. 208 ff., 350 ff., 391 ff.

from Antioch to Rome, but they are all recognized to be mere idle legends, of whose existence we do not hear till a very late period.<sup>1</sup> In fact, the whole of the Ignatian literature is a mass of falsification and fraud.

We might well spare our readers the trouble of examining further the contents of the Epistles of pseudo-Ignatius, for it is manifest that they cannot afford testimony of any value whatever on the subject of our inquiry. We shall, however, briefly point out all the passages contained in the seven Greek Epistles which have any bearing upon our synoptic Gospels, in order that their exact position may be more fully appreciated. Tischendorf<sup>2</sup> refers to a passage in the Epistle to the Romans, c. vi., as a verbal quotation of Matthew xvi. 26, but he neither gives the context nor states the facts of the case. The passage reads as follows: "The pleasures of the world shall profit me nothing, nor the kingdoms of this time; it is better for me to die for Jesus Christ, than to reign over the ends of the earth. For what shall a man be profited if he gain the whole world, but lose his soul."<sup>3</sup> Now this quotation not only is not found in the Syriac version of the Epistle, but it is also omitted from the ancient Latin version, and is absent from the passage in the work of Timotheus of Alexandria against the Council of Chalcedon, and from other authorities. It is evidently a later addition, and is recognized as such by

<sup>1</sup> *Ewald*, *Gesch. d. V. Isr.*, vii. p. 314, anm. 1; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die ap. Väter* p. 214 ff.; *Milman*, *Hist. of Christianity*, ii. p. 101; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 51; *Uhlhorn*, *Das Verhältn. &c.*, in *Niedner's Zeitschr. f. hist. Theol.*, 1851, p. 252 f.; *Thiersch*, *Die Kirche im ap. Zeit.*, p. 320.

<sup>2</sup> *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 22.

<sup>3</sup> Οὐδέν μοι ὠφελήσει τὰ τεργὰ τοῦ κόσμου, οὐδὲ αἱ βασιλείαι τοῦ αἰῶνος τούτου. Καλόν μοι ἀποθανεῖν εἰς Χριστὸν Ἰησοῦν, ἢ βασιλεύειν τῶν περάτων τῆς γῆς. Τί γὰρ ὠφελείται ἄνθρωπος, εἰὰν κερδήσῃ τὸν κόσμον ὅλον, τὴν δὲ ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ ζημιώσῃ; c. vi.

most critics.<sup>1</sup> It was probably a gloss, which subsequently was inserted in the text. Of these facts, however, Tischendorf does not say a word.<sup>2</sup>

The next passage to which he refers is in the Epistle to the Smyrnæans, c. i., where the writer says of Jesus: "He was baptized by John in order that all righteousness might be fulfilled by Him,"<sup>3</sup>—which Tischendorf considers a reminiscence of Matthew iii. 15, "For thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness."<sup>4</sup> The phrase, besides being no quotation, has again all the appearance of being an addition; and when in Ch. iii. of the same Epistle we find a palpable quotation from an apocryphal Gospel, which Jerome states to be the "Gospel according to the Hebrews," to which we shall presently refer, a Gospel which we know to have contained the baptism of Jesus by John, it is not possible, even if the Epistle were genuine, which it is not, to base any such conclusion upon these words. There is not only the alternative of tradition, but the use of the same apocryphal Gospel, elsewhere quoted in the Epistle, as the source of the reminiscence.

Tischendorf does not point out any more supposed references to our synoptic Gospels, but we proceed to notice all the other passages which have been indicated by others. In the Epistle to Polycarp, c. ii., the following sentence occurs: "Be thou wise as a serpent in everything, and harmless as a dove." This is, of course,

<sup>1</sup> Cureton, *Ancient Syriac Version, &c.*, p. 42 ff.; *Grabe*, *Spicil. Patr.*, ii. p. 16; *Jacobson*, *Patr. Ap.*, ii. p. 402; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 84, anm. 6; *Anger*, *Synops. Ev.*, p. 119 f., *Dressel*, *Patr. Ap.*, p. 170; &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Canon Westcott does not refer to the passage at all.

<sup>3</sup> βαπτισμὸν ὑπὸ Ἰωάννου, ἵνα πληρωθῇ πάντα δικαιοσύνη ἰπ' αὐτοῦ, κ.τ.λ. c. i.

<sup>4</sup> οὕτως γὰρ πρέπειν ἔστιν ἡμῖν πληρῶσαι πᾶσαν δικαιοσύνην.

compared with Matth. x. 16, "Be ye, therefore, wise as serpents and innocent as doves." The Greek of both reads as follows :

## EPISTLE.

Φρόνιμος γίνου ὡς ὄφεις ἐν ἅπασιν,  
καὶ ἀκέραιος ὡς ἡ περιστέραί.

## MATTH. X. 16.

Γίνεσθε οὖν φρόνιμοι ὡς οἱ ὄφεις<sup>1</sup>  
καὶ ἀκέραιοι ὡς αἱ περιστέραί.

In the Syriac version, the passage reads : "Be thou wise as the serpent in everything, and harmless as to those things which are requisite as the dove."<sup>2</sup> It is unnecessary to add that no source is indicated for the reminiscence. Ewald assigns this part of our first Gospel originally to the Spruchsammlung,<sup>3</sup> and even apart from the variations presented in the Epistle there is nothing to warrant exclusive selection of our first Gospel as the source of the saying. The remaining passages we subjoin in parallel columns.

## EP. TO THE EPHESIANS V.

For if the prayer of one or two has such power, how much more that of the bishop and all of the Church.<sup>4</sup>

## MATTH. XVIII. 19.

Again I say unto you that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask it shall be done for them by my Father. v. 20. For when two or three are gathered together, &c. &c.

## EP. TO EPHESIANS VI.

For all whom the Master of the house sends to be over his own household we ought to receive as we should him that sent (πέμψαντα) him.

## MATTH. X. 40.

He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent (ἀποστειλαντα) me.

Πάντα γὰρ ὃν πέμπει ὁ οἰκοδεσπότης εἰς ἰδίαν οἰκονομίαν, οὕτως δεῖ ἡμᾶς αὐτὸν δέχεσθαι, ὡς αὐτὸν τὸν πέμψαντα.

Ὁ δεχόμενος ὑμᾶς ἐμὲ δέχεται, καὶ ὁ ἐμὲ δεχόμενος δέχεται τὸν ἀποστειλαντα με.

<sup>1</sup> The Cod. Sin. alone reads ὡς ὁ ὄφεις here.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Cureton, The Ancient Syriac Version, &c., p. 5, p. 72.

<sup>3</sup> Die drei ersten Evng.

<sup>4</sup> Εἰ γὰρ ἐνὸς καὶ δευτέρου προσευχῆ τοσαύτην ἰσχὺν ἔχει, πόσῳ μᾶλλον ἦτε τοῦ ἐπισκόπου καὶ πάσης τῆς ἐκκλησίας ;

## EP. TO TRALLIANS XI.

For these are not plants of the Father.

Οὗτοι γὰρ οὐκ εἰσιν φυτεία πατρός.

## EP. TO SMYRNÆANS VI.

He that receiveth it let him receive it.

Ὁ χωρῶν χωρεῖτω.

## MATTH. XV. 13.

Every plant which my heavenly Father did not plant shall be rooted up.

Πᾶσα φυτεία ἣν οὐκ ἐφύτευσεν ὁ πατήρ μου ὁ οὐράνιος ἐκρίζωθήσεται.

## MATTH. XIX. 12.

He that is able to receive it let him receive it.

Ὁ δυνάμενος χωρεῖν χωρεῖτω.

None of these passages are quotations, and they generally present such marked linguistic variations from the parallel passages in our first Gospel, that there is not the slightest ground for specially referring them to it. The last words cited are introduced without any appropriate context. In no case are the expressions indicated as quotations from, or references to, any particular source. They may either be traditional, or reminiscences of some of the numerous Gospels current in the early Church, such as the Gospel according to the Hebrews. That the writer made use of one of these cannot be doubted. In the Epistle to the Smyrnæans, c. iii., there occurs a quotation from an apocryphal Gospel to which we have already, in passing, referred: "For I know that also after his resurrection he was in the flesh, and I believe he is so now. And when he came to those who were with Peter, he said to them: Lay hold, handle me, and see that I am not an incorporeal spirit, (δαιμόνιον). And immediately they touched him and believed, being convinced both by his flesh and spirit."<sup>1</sup> Eusebius, who quotes this passage, says that he does not know whence it is taken.<sup>2</sup> Origen,

<sup>1</sup> Ἐγὼ γὰρ καὶ μετὰ τὴν ἀνάστασιν ἐν σαρκὶ αὐτὸν οἶδα καὶ πιστεύω ὄντα. Καὶ ὅτε πρὸς τοὺς περὶ Πέτρον ἦλθεν, ἔφη αὐτοῖς: "Λάβετε, ψηλαφήσατέ με, καὶ ἴδετε ὅτι οὐκ εἰμι δαιμόνιον ἀσώματον." Καὶ εὐθὺς αὐτοῦ ἤψαντο, καὶ ἐπίστευσαν, κραθέντες τῇ σαρκὶ αὐτοῦ καὶ τῷ πνεύματι.

<sup>2</sup> οὐκ οἶδ' ὅποθεν ῥητοῖς συγκέχρηται. H. E., iii. 36.

however, quotes it from a work well known in the early Church, called "The Doctrine of Peter," (*Διδαχὴ Πέτρου*);<sup>1</sup> and Jerome found it in the "Gospel according to the Hebrews," in use among the Nazarenes,<sup>2</sup> which he translated, as we shall hereafter see. It was, no doubt, in both of those works. The narrative, Luke, xxiv. 39 f., being neglected, and an apocryphal Gospel used here, the inevitable inference is clear and very suggestive. As it is certain that this quotation was taken from a source different from our Gospels, there is reason to suppose that the other passages which we have cited are reminiscences of the same work. An apocryphal writing is also quoted as Holy Scripture in the Epistle to the Philadelphians, c. vii., "But the Spirit proclaimed, saying these words: Do ye nothing without the bishop," &c.,<sup>3</sup> and the passage on the three mysteries in the Epistle to the Ephesians, c. xix., is evidently another quotation from an uncanonical source.<sup>4</sup>

We must, however, again point out that, with the single exception of the short passage in the Epistle to Polycarp, c. ii., which is not a quotation, differs from the reading in Matthew, and may well be from any other source, none of these supposed reminiscences of our synoptic Gospels are found in the Syriac version of the three epistles. The evidential value of the seven Greek epistles is clearly stated by an English historian and divine: "My conclusion is, that I should be unwilling to claim historical authority for any passage not con-

<sup>1</sup> *De Princip.* Præf., § 8.

<sup>2</sup> *De vir.* ill., 16; cf. *Comm. in Is.* lib. xviii. præf.

<sup>3</sup> *Τὸ δὲ Πνεῦμα ἐκήρυσσεν, λέγων τάδε* "Χωρὶς τοῦ ἐπισκόπου μηδὲν ποιεῖτε."  
κ.τ.λ.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Ewald*, *Gesch. d. Volkes Isr.*, vii. p. 318, anm. 1.

tained in Dr. Cureton's Syriac reprint."<sup>1</sup> We must, however, go much further, and assert that none of the Epistles have any value as evidence for an earlier period than the end of the second or beginning of the third century, if indeed they possess any value at all. The whole of the literature ascribed to Ignatius is, in fact, such a tissue of fraud and imposture, and the successive versions exhibit such undeniable marks of the grossest interpolation, that even if any small original element exist referrible to Ignatius, it is impossible to define it, or to distinguish with the slightest degree of accuracy between what is authentic and what is spurious. The Epistles do not, however, in any case afford evidence even of the existence of our synoptic Gospels.

## 2.

WE have hitherto deferred all consideration of the so-called Epistle of Polycarp to the Philippians, from the fact that, instead of proving the existence of the Epistles of Ignatius, with which it is intimately associated, it is itself discredited in proportion as they are shown to be inauthentic. We have just seen that the martyr-journey of Ignatius to Rome is, for cogent reasons, declared to be wholly fabulous, and the epistles purporting to be written during that journey must be held to be spurious. The Epistle of Polycarp, however, not only refers to the martyr-journey (c. ix.), but to the Ignatian Epistles which are inauthentic (c. xiii.), and the manifest inference is that it also is spurious.

Polycarp, who is said by Irenæus<sup>2</sup> to have been in his

<sup>1</sup> *Milman, Hist. of Christianity*, iii. p. 257, note (b).

<sup>2</sup> *Adv. Hær.*, iii. 3, § 4; cf. *Eusebius, H. E.*, v. 20.

youth a disciple of the Apostle John, became Bishop of Smyrna, was deputed to Rome c. A.D. 160, as representative of the Churches of Asia, for the discussion respecting the day on which the Christian Passover should be celebrated,<sup>1</sup> and ended his life by martyrdom, A.D. 167. Some critics who affirm the authenticity of the Epistle attributed to him, but who certainly do not justify their conclusion by any arguments nor attempt to refute adverse reasons, date the Epistle before A.D. 120.<sup>2</sup> But the preponderance of opinion amongst those who have most profoundly examined the matter, whether declaring the Epistle spurious or authentic, assigns it to the latter half of the second century, in so far as any genuine part of it is concerned.<sup>3</sup> Doubts of its authenticity, and of the integrity of the text, were very early expressed,<sup>4</sup> and the close scrutiny to which later and more competent criticism has subjected it, has led very many to the conclusion that the Epistle is either largely interpolated,<sup>5</sup> or altogether spurious.<sup>6</sup> The principal

<sup>1</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 3, § 4; *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 14.

<sup>2</sup> *Ewald*, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 310; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 23; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 234; *Lardner*, Works, ii. p. 89; *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xxiii.

<sup>3</sup> A.D. 167, *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 274; A.D. 160—165, *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 46; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 512; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 43; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, ii. p. 154; A.D. 140—168, *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 604 ff.; after A.D. 167, *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 52; middle of 2nd century, *Bunsen*, Ignatius u. s. Zeit, p. 107 ff.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 151.

<sup>4</sup> *Magdeburg Centur.*, cent. ii., cap. 10; *Dallæus*, De Scriptis, &c., lib. ii., c. 32, p. 428 ff.; *Röster*, Bibl. d. Kirchen Väter, p. 93 ff.; *Semler*, Zu Baumgarten's Unters. Theol. Streitigk., ii. p. 36 f.; *Mosheim*, De Rebus Christ., p. 161; *Ullmann*, Der zweite Br. Petri, p. 3, anm.

<sup>5</sup> *Bunsen*, Ignat. v. Ant., p. 107 ff.; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 604 ff.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 40 f.; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 42 ff.; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., i. p. 184.

*Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 271 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 154 ff.; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 52, anm. 1; Theol. Jahrb., 1845, p.

argument in favour of its authenticity is the fact that the Epistle is mentioned by Irenæus,<sup>1</sup> who, in his youth was acquainted with Polycarp. But the testimony of Irenæus is not, on that account, entitled to much weight, inasmuch as his intercourse with Polycarp was evidently confined to a short period of his extreme youth,<sup>2</sup> and we have no reason to suppose that he had any subsequent communication with him. This certainly does not entitle Irenæus to speak more authoritatively of an epistle ascribed to Polycarp, than any one else of his day.<sup>3</sup> In the Epistle itself, there are many anachronisms. In ch. ix. the "blessed Ignatius" is referred to as already a considerable time dead, and he is held up with Zosimus and Rufus, and also with Paul and the rest of the Apostles, as examples of patience: men who have not run in vain, but are with the Lord; but in ch. xiii. he is spoken of as living, and information is requested regarding him, "and those who are with him."<sup>4</sup> Moreover, although thus spoken of as alive, the writer already knows of his Epistles, and refers, in the plural, to those written by him "to us, and all the rest which we have by us."<sup>5</sup> The reference here, it will be observed, is not only to the Epistles to the Smyrnæans, and to Polycarp himself, but to other spurious epistles which are not included in the Syriac version. Dallæus<sup>6</sup> pointed out long ago, that ch. xiii. abruptly interrupts the con-

586 f., 1847, p. 144; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 151; cf. *Lücke*, Comment. Br. Johann. p. 3; *Taylor*, The Fourth Gospel, 1867, p. 55.

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Hær., iii. 3, § 4.

<sup>2</sup> Ἐν τῇ πρώτῃ ἡμῶν ἡλικίᾳ. κ.τ.λ. Adv. Hær., iii. 3, § 4, *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 14 cf. v. 20.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Zeller*, Die Apostelgeschichte, p. 52, anm. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Et de ipso Ignatio, et de his qui cum eo sunt, quod certius agnoveritis, significate.

<sup>5</sup> Τὰς ἐπιστολάς Ἰγνατίου τὰς πεμφθείσας ἡμῖν ὑπ' αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἄλλας ὄσας εἶχομεν παρ' ἡμῖν, κ.τ.λ.

<sup>6</sup> De Scriptis, &c., 427 ff.

clusion of the Epistle, and most critics, including those who assert the authenticity of the rest of the Epistle, reject it at least, although many of these likewise repudiate ch. ix. as interpolated.<sup>1</sup> Many of these, however, consider that the letter is quite consistent with the later date, which, according to internal evidence, must be assigned to the Epistle. The writer vehemently denounces,<sup>2</sup> as already widely spread, the Gnostic heresy and other forms of false doctrine which did not exist until the time of Marcion, to whom and to whose followers he refers in unmistakable terms. An expression is used in ch. vii. in speaking of these heretics, which Polycarp is reported by Irenæus to have actually applied to Marcion in person, during his stay in Rome about A.D. 160. He is said to have called Marcion the "first-born of Satan," (*πρωτότοκος τοῦ Σατανᾶ*),<sup>3</sup> and the same term is employed in this epistle with regard to every one who holds such false doctrines. The development of these heresies, therefore, implies a date for the composition of the Epistle, at earliest, after the middle of the second century, a date which is further confirmed by other circumstances.<sup>4</sup> The writer evidently

<sup>1</sup> *Bunsen*, *Ignatius v. Ant. u. s. Zeit.*, p. 108 ff.; *Dallaus*, *De Scriptis*, &c., p. 427 ff.; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, i. p. 184; *Ritschl*, *Entst. altk. Kirche*, p. 606 ff.; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 41; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die ap. Väter*, p. 207 ff.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, ii. p. 154 f.; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 44 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Ch. vi., vii.

<sup>3</sup> *Adv. Hær.*, iii. 3, § 4; *Eusebius*, *H. E.*, iv. 14.

<sup>4</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, ii. p. 155 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die ap. Väter*, p. 272 f.; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 44 ff.; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 41 ff. Schwegler and Hilgenfeld consider the insertion of this phrase, actually used in Rome against Marcion, as proof of the inauthenticity of the Epistle. They argue that the well-known saying was inserted to give an appearance of reality to the forgery. In any case it shows that the Epistle cannot have been written earlier than the second half of the second century.

assumes a position in the Church, to which Polycarp could only have attained in the latter part of his life, and of which we first have evidence about A.D. 160, when he was deputed to Rome for the Paschal discussion, and, throughout, the Epistle depicts the developed ecclesiastical organization of that period.<sup>1</sup> Hilgenfeld has pointed out another indication of the same date, in the injunction "Pray for the kings" (*Orate pro regibus*), which, in 1 Peter ii. 17, is "Honour the king" (*τὸν βασιλέα τιμᾶτε*), which accords with the period after Antoninus Pius had elevated Marcus Aurelius to joint sovereignty (A.D. 147), or better still, with that in which Marcus Aurelius appointed Lucius Verus his colleague, A.D. 161. Either date is within that period of the life of Polycarp, when other circumstances alone render the composition of the epistle possible. Upon no internal ground can any part of this Epistle be pronounced genuine; there are potent reasons for considering it spurious, and there is no evidence of any value whatever supporting its authenticity. In any case it could only be connected with the very latest years of Polycarp's life.

We shall now examine all the passages in this epistle which are pointed out as indicating any acquaintance with our synoptic Gospels.<sup>2</sup> The first occurs in ch. ii., and we subjoin it in contrast with the nearest parallel passages of the Gospels, but although we break it up into paragraphs, it will, of course, be understood that the quotation is continuous in the Epistle.

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, ii. p. 158; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die ap. Väter*, p. 273; *Schotten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 42.

<sup>2</sup> *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 23 f.; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 48, note.

## EPISTLE, C. II.

Remembering what the Lord said, teaching :

Judge not that ye be not judged ;

forgive and it shall be forgiven to you ;

be pitiful that ye may be pitied ;

with what measure ye mete it shall be measured to you again ; and that blessed are the poor and those that are persecuted for righteousness sake, for theirs is the kingdom of God.

## EPISTLE C. II.

*Μνημονεύοντες δὲ ὧν εἶπεν ὁ κύριος διδάσκων*

*Μὴ κρίνετε, ἵνα μὴ κριθῆτε.  
ἀφίετε, καὶ ἀφεθήσεται ὑμῖν.*

*ἐλεεῖτε, ἵνα ἐλεθῆτε*

*ἐν ᾧ μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε, ἀντιμετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν.*

*καὶ ὅτι μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοὶ καὶ οἱ διωκόμενοι ἕνεκεν δικαιοσύνης, ὅτι αὐτῶν ἐστὶν ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ.*

## MATTHEW.

vii. 1.

Judge not that ye be not judged.

vi. 14. For if ye forgive men their trespasses your heavenly Father will also forgive you : (cf. Luke vi. 37. . . . pardon and ye shall be pardoned.)

v. 7. Blessed are the pitiful, for they shall obtain pity.

vii. 2. With what measure ye mete it shall be measured to you.

v. 3. Blessed are the poor in spirit. . . . v. 10. Blessed are they that are persecuted for righteousness sake, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

## MATTHEW.

vii. 1.

*Μὴ κρίνετε, ἵνα μὴ κριθῆτε.*

vi. 14. Ἐὰν γὰρ ἀφῆτε τοῖς ἀνθρώποις κ. τ. λ. (cf. Luke vi. 37, Ἀπολύετε καὶ ἀπολυθήσεσθε.)

v. 7. Μακάριοι οἱ ἐλεήμονες, ὅτι αὐτοὶ ἐλεθῆσονται.

vii. 2. ἐν ᾧ μέτρῳ μετρεῖτε μετρηθήσεται ὑμῖν.

v. 3. Μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοὶ τῷ πνεύματι—10 μακ. οἱ δεδιωγμένοι ἕνεκεν δικαιοσύνης, ὅτι αὐτῶν ἐστὶν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν.

It will be remembered that an almost similar direct quotation of words of Jesus occurs in the so-called Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians, c. xiii., which we have already examined.<sup>1</sup> There, the passage is introduced by the same words, and in the midst of brief phrases which have parallels in our Gospel there occurs in both Epistles the same expression, "Be pitiful that ye may be pitied," which is not found in any of our Gospels. In

<sup>1</sup> p. 223 f.

order to find any parallels for the quotation, upon the hypothesis of a combination of texts, we have to add together portions of the following verses in the following order: Matthew vii. 1, vi. 14 (although, with complete linguistic variations, the sense of Luke vi. 37 is much closer), v. 7, vii. 2, v. 3, v. 10. Such fragmentary compilation is in itself scarcely conceivable in an epistle of this kind, but when in the midst we find a passage foreign to our Gospels, but which occurs in another work in connection with so similar a quotation, it is reasonable to conclude that the whole is derived from tradition or from a Gospel different from ours.<sup>1</sup> In no case is such a passage the slightest evidence of the existence of any one of our Gospels.

Another passage which is pointed out occurs in ch. vii., "beseeching in our prayers the all-seeing God not to lead us into temptation, as the Lord said: The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak."<sup>2</sup> This is compared with the phrase in "the Lord's Prayer" (Matthew vi. 13), or the passage (xxvi. 41): "Watch and pray that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak."<sup>3</sup> The second Gospel, however, equally has the phrase (xiv. 38), and shows how absurd it is to limit any of these historical sayings to any single Gospel. The next passage is of a similar nature (c. vi.): "If, therefore, we pray the Lord that he may forgive us we ought also ourselves to forgive."<sup>4</sup> The thought but not

<sup>1</sup> Zeller, *Die Apostelgesch.*, p. 52; Credner, *Beiträge*, i. p. 27, anm. 1; Reuss, *Gesch. h. Schr. N. T.*, p. 162; Eichhorn, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 151 f.; cf. Kirchhofer, *Quellensamml.*, p. 85, anm. 2.

<sup>2</sup> δεήσεσιν αιτούμενοι τὸν παντεπόπτην θεὸν, μὴ εἰσενεγκεῖν ἡμᾶς εἰς πειρασμόν, καθὼς εἶπεν ὁ κύριος: τὸ μὲν πνεῦμα πρόθυμον, ἡ δὲ σὰρξ ἀσθενής. c. vii.

<sup>3</sup> γρηγορεῖτε καὶ προσεύχεσθε, ἵνα μὴ εἰσέλθητε εἰς πειρασμόν. τὸ μὲν πνεῦμα πρόθυμον, ἡ δὲ σὰρξ ἀσθενής. Matt. xxvi. 41.

<sup>4</sup> Εἰ οὖν δεόμεθα τοῦ κυρίου, ἵνα ἡμῖν ἀφῆ ὀφειλομεν καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀφιέναι. c. vi.

the language of this passage corresponds with Matthew vi. 12—14, but equally so with Luke, xi. 4. Now we must repeat that all such sayings of Jesus were the common property of the early Christians—were no doubt orally current amongst them, and still more certainly were recorded by many of the numerous Gospels then in circulation, as they are by several of our own. In no case is there any written source indicated from which these passages are derived; they are simply quoted as words of Jesus, and being all connected either with the “Sermon on the Mount” or the “Lord’s Prayer,” the two portions of the teaching of Jesus which were most popular, widely known, and characteristic, there can be no doubt that they were familiar throughout the whole of the early Church, and must have formed a part of most or all of the many collections of the words of the Master. To limit them to our actual Gospels, which alone survive, would be absurd, and no reference to them, without specification of the source, can be received as evidence even of the existence of our Synoptics. We shall fully demonstrate this in considering the origin and composition of our present Gospels, but we may here briefly illustrate the point from the Synoptics themselves. Assuming the parable of the Sower to be a genuine example of the teaching of Jesus, as there is every reason to believe, it may with certainty be asserted that it must have been included in many of the records circulating among early Christians, to which reference is made in the prologue to the third Gospel. It would be absurd to affirm that no part of that parable could be referred to by an early writer without that reference being an indication of acquaintance with our synoptic Gospels. The parable is reported in closely similar words in each

of those three Gospels,<sup>1</sup> and it may have been, and probably was, recorded similarly in a dozen more. Confining ourselves, however, for a moment to the three Synoptics: what could a general allusion to the parable of the Sower prove regarding their existence and use, no mention of a particular source being made? Would it prove that all the three were extant, and that the writer knew them all, for each of them containing the parable would possess an equal claim to the reference? Could it with any reason be affirmed that he was acquainted with Matthew and not with Mark? or with Mark and not with Matthew and Luke? or with the third Gospel and not with either of the other two? The case is the very same if we extend the illustration, and along with the Synoptics include the numerous other records of the early Church. The anonymous quotation of historical expressions of Jesus cannot prove the existence of one special document among many to which we may choose to trace it. This is more especially to be insisted on from the fact, that hitherto we have not met with any mention of any one of our Gospels, and have no right even to assume their existence from any evidence which has been furnished.

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xiii. 3—23; Mark iv. 2—20; Luke viii. 4—15.

## CHAPTER III.

### JUSTIN MARTYR.

WE shall now consider the evidence furnished by the works of Justin Martyr, regarding the existence of our synoptic Gospels at the middle of the second century, and we may remark, in anticipation, that whatever differences of opinion may finally exist regarding the solution of the problem which we have to examine, at least it is clear that the testimony of Justin Martyr is not of a nature to establish the date, authenticity, and character of Gospels professing to communicate such momentous and astounding doctrines. The determination of the source from which Justin derived his facts of Christian history has for a century attracted more attention, and excited more controversy, than almost any other similar question in connection with patristic literature, and upon none have more divergent opinions been expressed.

Justin, who suffered martyrdom about A.D. 166—167,<sup>1</sup> under Marcus Aurelius, probably at the instigation of the cynical philosopher, Crescens, was born in the Greek-

<sup>1</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Evan., p. xxvi.; *Baur*, Vorles. Chr. Dogmengesch. I. i. p. 253; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 228; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 100; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doct., ii. p. 73; *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 16, Chron. Pasch. A.D. 165; *Eichhorn* (c. A.D. 163), Einl. N. T., i. p. 84; *Guericke*, II'buch K. G., p. 150, p. 377; *Milman*, Hist. of Christianity, ii. p. 134 f.; *Reuss*, Gesch. h. Schr. N. T., p. 288; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 20; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 25; *De Wette* (c. 163), Einl. N. T., 1860, p. 104.

Roman colony, Flavia Neapolis,<sup>1</sup> established during the reign of Vespasian, near the ancient Sichem in Samaria. By descent he was a Greek, and during the earlier part of his life a heathen, but after long and disappointed study of Greek philosophy, he became a convert to Christianity<sup>2</sup> strongly tinged with Judaism. It is not necessary to enter into any discussion as to the authenticity of the writings which have come down to us bearing Justin's name, many of which are undoubtedly spurious, for the two Apologies and the Dialogue with Trypho, with which we have almost exclusively to do, are generally admitted to be genuine. It is true that there has been a singular controversy regarding the precise relation to each other of the two Apologies now extant, the following contradictory views having been maintained: that they are the two Apologies mentioned by Eusebius, and in their original order; that they are Justin's two Apologies, but that Eusebius was wrong in affirming that the second was addressed to Marcus Aurelius; that our second Apology was the preface or appendix to the first, and that the original second is lost. The shorter Apology contains nothing of interest connected with our inquiry.

There has been much controversy as to the date of the two Apologies, and much difference of opinion still exists on the point. Many critics assign the larger to about A.D. 138—140, and the shorter to A.D. 160—161.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Apol. i. l.

<sup>2</sup> Dial. c. Tryph., ii. ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xxvi.; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 553; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., ii. p. 85; *Delitzsch*, Neue Unters. Entst. Kan. Evv., 1853, p. 30; *Ewald*, Gesch. V. Isr., vii. p. 513; *Guericke*, H'buch K. G., p. 151; *Lechler*, Das ap. u. nachap. Zeit., p. 505; *Niedner*, Gesch. d. chr. Kirche, p. 206; *Neander*, K. G., ii. p. 1147; *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, p. 53; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. Marcion's, 1846, p. 146; *Semisch*, Dio apost. Denkw. des Märt. Justinus, 1848, p. 3 f.; *Tholuck*,

A passage, however, occurs in the longer Apology, which indicates that it must have been written about a century and a half after the commencement of the Christian era, or, according to accurate reckoning, about A.D. 147. Justin speaks, in one part of it, of perverted deductions being drawn from his teaching "that Christ was born 150 years ago under Cyrenius."<sup>1</sup> Those who contend for the earlier date have no stronger argument against this statement than the unsupported assertion, that in this passage Justin merely speaks "in round numbers," but many important circumstances confirm the date which Justin thus gives us. In the superscription of the Apology, Antoninus is called "Pius," a title which was first bestowed upon him in the year 139. Moreover, Justin directly refers to Marcion, as a man "now living and teaching his disciples . . . and who has by the aid of demons caused many of all nations to utter blasphemies," &c.<sup>2</sup> Now the fact has been established that Marcion did not come to Rome, where Justin himself was, until A.D. 139—142,<sup>3</sup> when his prominent public career commenced, and it is apparent that the words of

Glaubwürdigkeit d. evang. Gesch., 1838, p. 272; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 26; *Otto*, De Just. Mart. Scr. et doct.

<sup>1</sup> "Ἰνα δὲ μὴ τινες ἀλογιστᾶιν οὖτοι εἰς ἀποτροπὴν τῶν δεδιδασκέντων ἑφ' ἡμῶν εἴπωσι, πρὸ ἐτῶν ἑκατὸν πεντήκοντα γεγενῆσθαι τὸν Χριστὸν λέγειν ἡμᾶς ἐπὶ Κυρηναίου, κ.τ.λ. Apol. i. 46.

<sup>2</sup> Μαρκίωνα δὲ τινα Ποντικόν, ὃς καὶ νῦν ἐτι ἐστὶ διδάσκων τοὺς πειθομένους, . . . ὃς κατὰ πᾶν γένος ἀνθρώπων διὰ τῆς τῶν δαιμόνων συλλήψεως, πολλοὺς πεποιήκε βλασφημίας λέγειν, κ.τ.λ. Apol. i. 26.

<sup>3</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xxiv. f.; *Baur*, Gesch. chr. K., i. p. 196; *Bleek*, Eiol. N. T., p. 126; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 562; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 40 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 21 f.; *Lipsius*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1867, p. 73 ff.; *Keim*, Jesu v. Nazara, i. p. 138, anm. 2; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 244; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 73; *Schleiermacher*, Sämmtl. Werke, 1840, xi. p. 107; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 57; *Volkmar*, Theol. Jahrb., 1850, p. 120, 1855, p. 270 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 273.

Justin indicate a period when his doctrines had already become widely diffused. For these and many other strong reasons, which need not here be detailed, the majority of competent critics agree in more correctly assigning the first Apology to about A.D. 147.<sup>1</sup> The Dialogue with Trypho, as internal evidence shows,<sup>2</sup> was written after the longer Apology, and it is therefore generally dated some time within the first decade of the second half of the second century.<sup>3</sup>

In these writings Justin quotes very copiously from the Old Testament, and he also very frequently refers to facts of Christian history and to sayings of Jesus. Of these references, for instance, some fifty occur in the first Apology, and upwards of seventy in the Dialogue with Trypho, a goodly number, it will be admitted, by means of which to identify the source from which he quotes. Justin himself frequently and distinctly says that his information and quotations are derived from the "Memoirs of the Apostles" (*ἀπομνημονεύματα τῶν ἀποστόλων*), but except upon one occasion, which we shall hereafter consider, when he indicates Peter, he never mentions an author's name. Upon examination it

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, Vorles. chr. Dogmengesch., I. i. p. 254, cf. 151, anm. 2; *Böhringer*, Kirchengesch. in Biographien, 2. aufl. I. i. p. 117; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 104; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 374; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 24; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1865, p. 336; *Lipsius*, Gnosticismus, p. 32 f.; *Zur Quellenkr. des Epiphanius*, p. 59 f.; *Riggenbach*, Die Zeugnisse f. d. Evang. Johan., p. 18 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 21 f., p. 160, anm. 2; *Schweyler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 216 ff., cf. p. 342 f., p. 359; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 89 f., p. 162, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1855, p. 270 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Dial. c. Tr.*, cxx.

<sup>3</sup> *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 553; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 104; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 374; *Guericke*, H'buch K. G., p. 151; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 24; *Keim*, Jesu v. Nazara, i. p. 138, anm. 2; *Lechler*, Das ap. u. nachap. Zeit., p. 452, p. 490 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 23; *Das Evang. Johannes*, p. 9, 11; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 93 f., p. 108 f., and p. 163; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1865, p. 468.

is found that, with only one or two brief exceptions, the numerous quotations from these Memoirs differ more or less widely from parallel passages in our synoptic Gospels, and in many cases differ in the same respects as similar quotations found in other writings of the second century, the writers of which are known to have made use of uncanonical Gospels, and further, that these passages are quoted several times, at intervals, by Justin with the same variations. Moreover, sayings of Jesus are quoted from these Memoirs which are not found in our Gospels at all, and facts in the life of Jesus and circumstances of Christian history derived from the same source, not only are not found in our Gospels, but are in contradiction with them.

These peculiarities have, as might have been expected, created much diversity of opinion regarding the nature of the "Memoirs of the Apostles." In the earlier days of New Testament criticism more especially, with an indiscriminating zeal not extinct even in our day, many of course at once identified the Memoirs with our Gospels exclusively, and the variations were explained by conveniently elastic theories of free quotation from memory, imperfect and varying MSS., combination, condensation and transposition of passages, and so on.<sup>1</sup> Others endeavoured to explain away difficulties by the supposition that they were a simple harmony of our Gospels,<sup>2</sup> or a

<sup>1</sup> *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, ii. p. 330 f.; *Semisch*, *Die Apost. Denkwürdigk. des Märts. Justinus*, 1848, p. 96 ff., p. 389 ff.; *Lange*, *Ausf. Gesch. d. Dogmen.*, 1796, i. p. 132, p. 184; *Michaelis*, *Einkl. N. B.*, 1788, i. p. 32 f.; *Tregelles*, *Canon Murat.*, 1867, p. 70 ff.; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 93—145; *Hug*, *Einkl. N. T.*, 1821, ii. p. 94 ff.; *Winer*, *Justinum Mart. evang. Canon usum fuisse ostenditur*, 1819; *Scholz*, *Nov. Test. Græce*, i., proleg. p. v.

<sup>2</sup> *Paulus*, *Ob das Ev. Just. das Ev. nach. d. Hebräern sei.*, *Exeg. Kr. Abhandl.*, 1784, p. 1—35; *Theol. exeg. Conservator.*, 1822, p. 52—72.

harmony of the Gospels, with passages added from some apocryphal work.<sup>1</sup> A much greater number of critics, however, adopt the conclusion that, along with our Gospels, Justin made use of one or more apocryphal Gospels, and more especially of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, or according to Peter.<sup>2</sup> Others assert that he made use of a special unknown Gospel, or of the Gospel according to the Hebrews or according to Peter, with a subsidiary use of a version of one or two of our Gospels to which, however, he did not attach much importance, preferring the apocryphal work;<sup>3</sup> whilst

<sup>1</sup> *Gratz, Krit. Unters. üb. Justin's ap. Denkw.*, 1814.

<sup>2</sup> *Bleek, Einl. N. T.*, p. 229 ff., 314 f., 637; *Beiträge Zur Ev. Krit.*, 1846, p. 220 ff.; *Bunsen, Bibelwerk*, viii. p. 553 ff.; *Bindemann, Theol. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1842, p. 355 ff.; *Davidson, Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 19 f., p. 111, p. 374 f.; *Dodwell, Dissert. in Ironæum*, 1689, p. 70 f.; *Delitzsch, N. Unters. üb. Entst. d. Kan. Evangelien*, 1853, i. p. 25 ff.; *Ewald, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1853-54, p. 60 ff., *Gesch. d. V. Isr.* vii., p. 512; *Eckermann, Theol. Beiträge*, 1796, v. 2, p. 168 f., p. 214.

*Grabe, Spicil. Patr.*, i. p. 16, p. 19; *Guericke, Gesamtgesch. N. T.*, 1854, p. 222 ff., p. 570 f.; *Holtzmann, Die synopt. Evv.*, 1863, p. 372, p. 402; *Keim, Jesu v. Nazara*, pp. 30, 51, 85, &c.; *Köstlin, Der Ursprung synopt. Evv.*, p. 372 f.; *Kirchhofer, Quellensamml.*, p. 34, p. 89 ff., p. 103 f.; *Meyer, Kr.-ex. H'buch Ev. Matth.*, 5 aufl. p. 20; *Mjñster, Theolog. Schriften*, 1825, p. 1 ff.; *Neudecker, Einl. N. T.*, 1840, p. 52 ff.; *Ols-hausen, Die Echtheit d. vier kan. Evv.*, 1823, pp. 279—406; *Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 21 f.; *Das ält. Evang.*, 1869, p. 248; *Schott, Isagoge Hist. Crit. in lib. N. Fœd.*, 1830, p. 18 ff.; *Tischendorf, Wann wurden, u. s. w.*, p. 27 f., p. 76 ff.; *Ritschl, Theol. Jahrb.*, 1851, p. 482 ff.; *Das Evang. Marcion's*, 1846, p. 130—151; *De Wette, Einl. N. T.*, 6 aufl., p. 111 ff.; *Wilcke, Tradition u. Mythe*, 1837, p. 30 f.; *Hug, Einl. N. T.*, 1847, i. p. 132.

<sup>3</sup> *Volkmar, Der Ursprung*, p. 91 f.; *Die Evangelien*, p. 631, p. 634 f.; *Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's*, u. s. w., 1850, p. 252—304, p. 263 ff., p. 284; *Die Evangelien*, 1854, p. 58, cf. p. 239 f., p. 346; *Der Kanon*, p. 24 f.; *J. G. C. Schmidt, Hist. crit. Einl. N. T.*, 1804, p. 218; *Storr, Ueb. Zweck d. Evang. Gesch. u. Br. Johan.*, 1786, p. 363—375; *Münscher, H'buch chr. Dogmengesch.*, 1804, i. p. 218—221; *Baur, Kr. Unters. ü. d. kan. Evv.*, 1847, p. 572 ff.; *Gesch. chr. Kirche*, 1863, i. p. 140; *Zeller, Die Apostelgesch.*, p. 26—51; *Reuss, Gesch. h. Schr. N. T.* p. 192 f.; cf. *Hist. du Canon*, p. 54 ff.

others have concluded that Justin did not make use of our Gospels at all, and that his quotations are either from the Gospel according to the Hebrews, or according to Peter, or from some other special apocryphal Gospel now no longer extant.<sup>1</sup>

Evidence permitting of such wide diversity of results to serious and laborious investigation of the identity of Justin's Memoirs of the Apostles, cannot be of much value towards establishing our Gospels, and in the absence of any specific mention of our Synoptics any very elaborate examination of the Memoirs might be considered unnecessary, more especially as it is admitted almost universally by competent critics, that Justin did not himself consider the Memoirs of the Apostles inspired, or of any dogmatic authority, and had no idea of attributing canonical rank to them.<sup>2</sup> In pursuance of the system which we desire invariably to adopt of

<sup>1</sup> *Corroli*, Versuch Beleucht. d. jüd. u. chr. Bibel Kanons, 1792, ii. p. 153 ff.; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 258 ff., Gesch. N. T. Kanons, p. 7 ff., p. 17, p. 22; *Bertholdt*, Einl. A. u. N. T., 1813, iii. p. 1213; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 20, p. 84—116; *Gieseler*, Hist. krit. Versuch ü. d. Entst. schr. Evv., 1818, p. 132, p. 182 f.; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 242 ff., p. 302 f.; *M. Nicolas*, Etudes sur les Evang. apocr., 1866, p. 50 ff., Etudes crit. sur la Bible: N. T., 1864, p. 314 ff.; *Rosenmüller*, Hist. interpret. libr. sacr., 1795, i. p. 154 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 205 ff.; *Stroth*, Fragm. d. Evang. n. d. Hebräern aus Just. Mär. im Repert. f. bibl. u. morgenl. Litt., 1771, i. p. 1—59; *Wegscheider*, Versuch Einl. in d. Ev. d. Johannes, 1806, p. 113 f.; cf. *Ritschl*, Das Ev. Marcion's, 1846, p. 130—151.

<sup>2</sup> *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 635 ff.; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 540; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 106 ff., Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 21; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., ii. p. 332; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 512; *Hilgenfeldt*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 304, Der Kanon, p. 26; *Nicolas*, Etudes Crit. sur la Bible: N. T., p. 299 ff., p. 314 ff.; *Scherer*, Rev. de Théologie, 1855, x. p. 207, 215—217; *Schotten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 22 f., 38 and 62, Das Evang. n. Johan. übers. Lang, p. 11; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 230 f.; *Weiss*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1864, p. 147; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 149; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 92; *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, p. 51 f., Gesch. h. Schr. N. T., p. 289.

enabling every reader to form his own opinion, we shall as briefly as possible state the facts of the case, and furnish materials for a full comprehension of the subject.

Justin himself, as we have already stated, frequently and distinctly states that his information regarding Christian history and his quotations are derived from the Memoirs of the Apostles (*ἀπομνημονεύματα τῶν ἀποστόλων*), to adopt the usual translation, although the word might more correctly be rendered "Recollections," or "Memorabilia." It has frequently been surmised that this name was suggested by the *ἀπομνημονεύματα Σωκράτους* of Xenophon, but, as Credner has pointed out, the similarity is purely accidental, and to constitute a parallel the title should have been "Memoirs of Jesus."<sup>1</sup> The word *ἀπομνημονεύματα* is here evidently used merely in the sense of records written from memory, and it is so employed by Papias in the passage preserved by Eusebius regarding Mark, who, although he had not himself followed the Lord, yet recorded his words from what he heard from Peter, and who, having done so without order, is still defended for "thus writing some things as he remembered them" (*οὕτως ἔνια γράψας ὡς ἀπομνημόνευσεν*).<sup>2</sup> In the same way Irenæus refers to the "Memoirs of a certain apostolic Presbyter" (*ἀπομνημονεύματα ἀποστολικοῦ τινὸς πρεσβυτέρου*)<sup>3</sup> whose name he does not mention; and Origen still more closely approximates to Justin's use of the word when, expressing his theory regarding the Epistle to the Hebrews, he says that the thoughts are the Apostle's, but the phraseology and the composition are of one recording what the Apostle said (*ἀπομνημονεύσαντός τινος τὰ ἀποστολικά*),

<sup>1</sup> Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 105.

<sup>2</sup> Eusebius, H. E., iii. 39.

<sup>3</sup> Eusebius, H. E., v. 8.

and as of one writing at leisure the dictation of his master.<sup>1</sup> Justin himself speaks of the authors of the Memoirs as οἱ ἀπομνημονεύσαντες,<sup>2</sup> and the expression was then and afterwards constantly in use amongst ecclesiastical and other writers.<sup>3</sup>

This title, "Memoirs of the Apostles," however, although most appropriate to mere recollections of the life and teaching of Jesus, evidently could not be applied to works ranking as canonical Gospels, but in fact excludes such an idea; and the whole of Justin's views regarding Holy Scripture, prove that he saw in the Memoirs merely records from memory to assist memory.<sup>4</sup> He does not call them γραφαί, but adheres always to the familiar name of ἀπομνημονεύματα, and whilst his constant appeals to a written source show very clearly his abandonment of oral tradition, there is nothing in the name of his records which can identify them with our Gospels.

Justin designates the source of his quotations ten times, the "Memoirs of the Apostles,"<sup>5</sup> and five times he calls it simply the "Memoirs."<sup>6</sup> He says, upon one occasion, that these Memoirs were composed "by his Apostles and their followers,"<sup>7</sup> but except in one place, to which we have already referred, and which we shall

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., vi. 25.

<sup>2</sup> *Apol.*, i. 33.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 105 f., *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 12; *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 53 f.; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 95, note 1. The Clementine Recognitions (ii. 1), make the Apostle Peter say: In consuetudine habui verba domine mei, quæ ab ipso audieram revocare ad memoriam.

<sup>4</sup> *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 12 f.; Beiträge, i. p. 106 f.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 226 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Apol.* i. 66, 67, cf. i. 33; *Dial. c. Tr.*, 88, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, and twice in 103.

<sup>6</sup> *Dial.* 103, 105, thrice 107.

<sup>7</sup> Ἐν γὰρ τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασι ἃ φημι ὑπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων αὐτοῦ καὶ τῶν ἐκείνοις παρακολουθησάντων συντετάχθαι, κ.τ.λ. *Dial.* 103.

hereafter fully examine, he never mentions the author's name, nor does he ever give any more precise information regarding their composition. It has been argued that, in saying that these Memoirs were recorded by the Apostles and their followers, Justin intentionally and literally described the four canonical Gospels, the first and fourth of which are ascribed to Apostles, and the other two to Mark and Luke, the followers of Apostles;<sup>1</sup> but such an inference is equally absurd and unfounded. The language itself forbids this explanation, for Justin does not speak indefinitely of Memoirs of Apostles and their followers, but of Memoirs of *the* Apostles, invariably using the article, which refers the Memoirs to the collective body of the Apostles.<sup>2</sup> Moreover, the incorrectness of such an inference is manifest from the fact that circumstances are stated by Justin as derived from these Memoirs, which do not exist in our Gospels at all, and which, indeed, are contradictory to them. Vast numbers of spurious writings, moreover, bearing the names of Apostles and their followers, and claiming more or less direct apostolic authority, were in circulation in the early Church: Gospels according to Peter,<sup>3</sup> to Thomas,<sup>4</sup> to James,<sup>5</sup> to Judas,<sup>6</sup> according to the

<sup>1</sup> *Semisch*, Die ap. Denkwürdigk. Märt. Just., p. 80 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 12 f.; cf. *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1853—54, p. 59 f.; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 637, anm.

<sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 3, 25, vi. 12; *Hieron.*, De Vir Ill., 1; *Origen*, in Matth. x. 17.

<sup>4</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 25; *Origen*, Hom. i. in Lucam; *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., i. 20; cf. *Tischendorf*, Evang. Apocr., 1853, proleg., p. xxxviii. ff.: Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 89 f.; *Hieron.*, Præf. in Matth.

<sup>5</sup> *Tischendorf*, Evang. Apocr., proleg. p. xii. ff.; *Epiphanius*, Hær., lxxix., § 5, &c.

<sup>6</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., i. 31, § 1; *Epiphanius*, Hær., xxxviii. § 1; *Theodoret*, Fab. Hær., i. 15.

Apostles, or according to the Twelve,<sup>1</sup> to Barnabas,<sup>2</sup> to Matthias,<sup>3</sup> to Nicodemus,<sup>4</sup> &c., and ecclesiastical writers bear abundant testimony to the early and rapid growth of apocryphal literature.<sup>5</sup> The very names of most of such apocryphal Gospels are lost, whilst of others we possess considerable information; but nothing is more certain than the fact, that there existed many works bearing names which render the attempt to interpret the title of Justin's Gospel as a description of the four in our canon a mere absurdity. The words of Justin evidently imply simply that the source of his quotations is the collective recollections of the Apostles, and those who followed them, regarding the life and teaching of Jesus.

The title "Memoirs of the Apostles" by no means indicates a plurality of Gospels.<sup>6</sup> A single passage has been pointed out, in which the Memoirs are said to have been called *εὐαγγέλια* in the plural: "For the Apostles in the Memoirs composed by them, which are called

<sup>1</sup> *Origen*, Hom. i. in Lucam; *Hieron.*, Præf. in Matth., Adv. Pelagianos, iii. 1; *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 339 f.

<sup>2</sup> Decret. Gelasii, vi. § 10; *Credner*, Zur Gesch. d. Kanons, p. 215.

<sup>3</sup> *Origen*, Hom. i. in Lucam; *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 25, Decret. Gelasii, vi. 8; *Credner*, Zur Gesch. d. Kanons, p. 215; *Hieron.*, Præf. in Matth.

<sup>4</sup> If this be not its most ancient title, the Gospel is in the Prologue directly ascribed to Nicodemus. The superscription which this apocryphal Gospel bears in the form now extant, *ὑπομνήματα τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ*, recalls the titles of Justin's Memoirs. *Tischendorf*, Evang. Apocr., p. 203 f., cf. Proleg. p. liv. ff.; *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 213 ff.; *Thilo*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., p. cxviii.—cxlii., p. 487 ff.

<sup>5</sup> Luke i. 1; *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., 1. 20, § 1; *Origen*, Hom. i. in Lucam. *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 3, 25, iv. 22, vi. 12; *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T.; *Thilo*, Cod. Apocr. N. T.; *Tischendorf*, Evang. Apocr.; cf. *Milman*, Hist. of Christianity, iii. p. 358 f., Decret. Gelasii, vi.; *Credner*, Zur Gesch. d. Kan., p. 215 f., Gesch. d. N. T. Kanon, p. 241 f., 279 f., 290 f., Beiträge, i. p. 107—268 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 52 ff., 77 f., 199 ff., 294 f.; *De Wette*, Lehrb. Einl. N. T., 1860, § 63 ff., §§ 73—74; *Reuss*, Gesch. h. Schr. N. T., §§ 245—280; *Gieseler*, Entst. schr. Evv., 1818, p. 8 ff. <sup>6</sup> Cf. *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 233, ann. 3.

Gospels,"<sup>1</sup> &c. The last expression ἡ καλεῖται εὐαγγέλια, as many scholars have declared, is a manifest interpolation. It is, in all probability, a gloss on the margin of some old MS. which some copyist afterwards inserted in the text.<sup>2</sup> If Justin really stated that the Memoirs were called Gospels, it seems incomprehensible that he should never call them so himself. In no other place in his writings does he apply the plural to them, but, on the contrary, we find Trypho referring to the "so-called Gospel," which he states that he has carefully read,<sup>3</sup> and which, of course, can only be Justin's "Memoirs;" and again, in another part of the same dialogue, Justin quotes passages which are written "in the Gospel"<sup>4</sup> (ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ γέγραπται). The term "Gospel" is nowhere else used by Justin in reference to a written record.<sup>5</sup> In no case, however, considering the numerous Gospels then in circulation, and the fact that many of these, different from the canonical Gospels, are known to have been exclusively used by distinguished contemporaries of Justin, and by various communities of Christians in that day, could such an expression be taken as a special indication of the canonical Gospels.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Οἱ γὰρ ἀπόστολοι ἐν τοῖς γενομένοις ὑπ' αὐτῶν ἀπομνημονεύμασιν, ἃ καλεῖται εὐαγγέλια. κ.τ.λ. Apol. i. 66.

<sup>2</sup> An instance of such a gloss getting into the text occurs in Dial. 107, where in a reference to Jonah's prophecy that Nineveh should perish in three days, according to the version of the lxx. which Justin always quotes, there is a former marginal gloss "in other versions forty," incorporated parenthetically with the text.

<sup>3</sup> τὰ ἐν τῷ λεγομένῳ εὐαγγελίῳ παραγγέλματα. κ.τ.λ. Dial. c. Tr. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Dial. 100.

<sup>5</sup> There is one reference, in the singular known to the Gospel, in the fragment *De Resurr.* 10, which is of doubtful authenticity.

<sup>6</sup> Credner argues that had Justin intended such a limitation, he must have said, ἡ καλεῖται τὰ τέσσαρα εὐαγγέλια. *Gesch. d. N. T. Kan.* p. 10.

Describing the religious practices amongst Christians, in another place, Justin states that, at their assemblies on Sundays, "the Memoirs of the Apostles or the writings of the prophets are read as long as time permits."<sup>1</sup> This, however, by no means identifies the Memoirs with the canonical Gospels, for it is well known that many writings which have been excluded from the canon were publicly read in the Churches, until very long after Justin's day.<sup>2</sup> We have already met with several instances of this. Eusebius mentions that the Epistle of the Roman Clement was publicly read in most of the Churches in his time,<sup>3</sup> and he quotes an Epistle of Dionysius of Corinth to Soter, the Bishop of Rome, which states that fact for the purpose of "showing that it was the custom to read it in the Churches, even from the earliest times."<sup>4</sup> Dionysius likewise mentions the public reading of the Epistle of Soter to the Corinthians. Epiphanius refers to the reading in the Churches of the Epistle of Clement,<sup>5</sup> and it continued to be so read in Jerome's day.<sup>6</sup> In like manner, the "Pastor" of Hermas,<sup>7</sup> the "Apocalypse of Peter,"<sup>8</sup> and other works excluded from the canon were publicly read in the Church in early days.<sup>9</sup> It is certain that Gospels which

<sup>1</sup> τὰ ἀπομνημονεύματα τῶν ἀποστόλων, ἢ τὰ συγγράμματα τῶν προφητῶν ἀναγινώσκειται μέχρις ἐγχαρεῖ. Apol. i. 67.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 228; *Volmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 91; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evng. Justin's*, p. 19. <sup>3</sup> H. E., iii. 16.

<sup>4</sup> δηλῶν ἀνέκαθεν ἐξ ἀρχαίου ἔθους ἐπὶ τῆς ἐκκλησίας τὴν ἀνάγνωσιν αὐτῆς ποιέσθαι. H. E., iv. 23. <sup>5</sup> Haer., xxx. 15.

<sup>6</sup> De Vir. Ill., 15. . . . "quæ in nonnullis ecclesiis publice legitur."

<sup>7</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 3; *Hieron.* De Vir Ill., 10.

<sup>8</sup> *Sozom.*, H. E., vii. 19; *Canon Murator.*, *Tregelles*, p. 56 f.; cf. *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 157, 164; *Mayerhoff*, *Einl. petr. Schr.*, p. 321 ff.

<sup>9</sup> The "Pastor" of Hermas, and the "Apocalypse of Peter," are enumerated amongst the books of Holy Scripture in the Stichometry of the

did not permanently secure a place in the canon, such as the Gospel according to the Hebrews, the Gospel according to Peter, the Gospel of the Ebionites, and many kindred Gospels, which in early times were exclusively used by various communities,<sup>1</sup> must have been read at their public assemblies. The public reading of Justin's Memoirs, therefore, does not prove anything, for this practice was by no means limited to the works now in our canon.<sup>2</sup>

The idea of attributing inspiration to the Memoirs, or to any other work of the Apostles, with the single exception, as we shall presently see, of the Apocalypse of John, which, as prophecy, entered within his limits, was quite foreign to Justin, who recognized the Old Testament alone as the inspired word of God.<sup>3</sup> Indeed, as we

Codex Claramontanus (ed. *Tischendorf*, p. 469; cf. *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kan.*, p. 175 f.), and the latter is placed amongst the ἀντιλεγόμενα in the Stichometry of Nicephorus, together with the Apocalypse of John and the Gospel according to the Hebrews. (*Credner*, *Zur Gesch. d. Kan.*, p. 117 ff.) In the Can. Murat. the Apoc. of Peter is received along with that of John, although some object to its being read in the Church. (Can. Murat., *Tregelles*, p. 65; *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kan.*, p. 175 f.); *Tischendorf* conjectures that the Apocalypse of Peter may have been inserted between the Ep. of Barnabas and the Pastor of Hermas, where six pages are missing in the Codex Sinaiticus. (*Nov. Test. Sinait.*, Lipsiæ, 1863, Proleg. p. xxxii.)

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Irenæus*, *Adv. Hær.*, i. 26, § 2, iii. 11, § 7; *Origen*, *Comm. in Ezech.*, xxiv. 7; *Eusebius*, *H. E.*, iii. 25, 27, vi. 12; *Epiphanius*, *Hær.*, xxix. 9, xxx. 3, 13 f.; *Theodoret*, *Hær. Fab.*, ii. 22; *Hieron.*, *Adv. Pelag.*, iii. 2, *Comm. in Matth.*, xii. 13; *De Wette*, *Lehrb. Einl. N. T.*, p. 97 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Dio Evv. Justin's*, p. 18, anm. 1; *Gieseler*, *Entst. schrift. Evv.*, p. 10—26; *Schweyler*, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 258 ff., 234 ff.; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 262 ff., *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 17 ff.; *Ritschl*, *Das Evang. Marcion's*, p. 137 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Dial. c. Tr.*, 81.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 119 ff., 125 ff., *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 14; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, ii. p. 332; *Ewald*, *Gesch. d. V. Israel*, vii. p. 512; *Gieseler*, *Entst. schr. Evv.*, p. 174 ff., 182 f.; *Reuss*, *Gesch. h. Schr. N. T.*, p. 289; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 92; *Weiss*, *Theol. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1864, p. 147.

have already said, the very name "Memoirs" in itself excludes the thought of inspiration,<sup>1</sup> which Justin attributed only to prophetic writings; and he could not in any way regard as inspired the written tradition of the Apostles and their followers, or the mere record of words of Jesus. On the contrary, he held the accounts of the Apostles to be credible solely from their being authenticated by the Old Testament, and he clearly states that he believes the facts recorded in the Memoirs because the spirit of prophecy had already foretold them.<sup>2</sup> According to Justin, the old Testament contained all that was necessary for salvation, and its prophecies are the sole criterion of truth, the Memoirs, and even Christ himself, being merely its interpreters.<sup>3</sup> He says that Christ himself commanded us not to put faith in human doctrines, but in those proclaimed by the holy prophets, and taught by himself.<sup>4</sup> Prophecy and the words of Christ himself are alone of dogmatic value, all else is human teaching.<sup>5</sup> Indeed, from a passage quoted with approval by Irenæus, Justin, in his last work against Marcion, said: "I would not have believed the Lord himself, if he had proclaimed any other God than the Creator;" that is to say, the God of the Old Testament.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 227; cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 106.

<sup>2</sup> *Apol.*, i. 33; cf. *Dial. c. Tr.*, 119, *Apol.*, i. 32, *Dial. c. Tr.*, 48, 53.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Apol.*, i. 30, 32, 52, 53, 61, *Dial. c. Tr.*, 32, 43, 48, 100; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 121 ff., *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 13 f.; *Donaldson*, *Hist. of Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, ii. p. 328; *Nicolas*, *Etudes sur les Ev. Apocr.*, p. 59; *Reuss*, *Gesch. h. Schr. N. T.*, p. 289, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 54; *Stroth*, *Eichhorn's Repert.*, p. 35, *anm. e.*

<sup>4</sup> ἐπειδὴ οὐκ ἀνθρωπιῶς διδάγμασι κεκελεύσμεθα ἢ ἀπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ πείθεσθαι, ἀλλὰ τοῖς διὰ τῶν μακαρίων προφητῶν κηρυχθεῖσι καὶ δι' αὐτοῦ διδασχθεῖσι. *Dial. c. Tr.* 48.

<sup>5</sup> *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 54.

<sup>6</sup> Καὶ καλῶς ὁ Ἰουστίνος ἐν τῷ πρὸς Μαρκίωνα συντάγματι φησὶν· Ὅτι αὐτῷ τῷ

That Justin does not mention the name of the author of the Memoirs would in any case render any argument as to their identity with our canonical Gospels inconclusive; but the total omission to do so is the more remarkable from the circumstance that the names of Old Testament writers constantly occur in his writings. Semisch counts 197 quotations of the Old Testament, in which Justin refers to the author by name, or to the book, and only 117 in which he omits to do so,<sup>1</sup> and the latter number might be reduced by considering the nature of the passages cited, and the inutility of repeating the reference. When it is considered, therefore, that notwithstanding the extremely numerous quotations, and references to facts of Christian history, all purporting to be derived from the "Memoirs," he absolutely never, except in the one instance referred to, mentions an author's name, or specifies more clearly the nature of the source, the inference must not be only that he attached small importance to the Memoirs, but also that he was actually ignorant of the author's name, and that his Gospel had no more definite superscription. Upon the theory that the Memoirs of the Apostles were simply our four canonical Gospels, the singularity of the omission is increased by the diversity of contents and of authors, and the consequently greater necessity and probability that he should, upon certain occasions, distinguish between them. The fact is that the only writing of the New Testament to which Justin refers by name is, as we have already mentioned, the Apocalypse, which he

Κυρίῳ οὐδ' ἂν ἐπέισθην, ἄλλον θεὸν καταγγέλλουσι παρὰ τὸν δημιουργόν. . . .  
*Adv. Hær.*, iv. 6, § 2. *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 18.

<sup>1</sup> *Semisch*, *Denkwürd. Justin's*, p. 84; cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 17; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 105; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 102 f.

attributes to "a certain man whose name was John, one of the Apostles of Christ, who prophesied by a revelation made to him," &c.<sup>1</sup> The manner in which John is here mentioned, after the Memoirs had been so constantly indefinitely referred to, clearly shows that Justin did not possess any Gospel also attributed to John. That he does name John, however, as author of the Apocalypse, and so frequently refers to Old Testament writers by name, yet never identifies the author of the Memoirs, is quite irreconcilable with the idea that they were the canonical Gospels.<sup>2</sup>

It is perfectly clear, however, and this is a point of very great importance upon which critics of otherwise widely diverging views are agreed, that Justin quotes from a *written* source, and that oral tradition is excluded from his system.<sup>3</sup> He not only does not, like Papias, attach value to tradition, but, on the contrary, he affirms that in the Memoirs is recorded "*everything* that concerns our Saviour Jesus Christ."<sup>4</sup> He constantly refers to them directly, as the source of his information regarding the history of Jesus, and distinctly states that he has derived his quotations from them. There is no reasonable ground whatever for affirming that Justin supplemented or modified the contents of the Memoirs by oral tradition. It must, therefore, be remembered, in considering the nature of these Memoirs, that the facts of Christian

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ ἐπειδὴ καὶ παρ' ἡμῶν ἀνὴρ τις, ᾧ ὄνομα Ἰωάννης, εἰς τῶν ἀποστόλων τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἐν ἀποκαλύψει γενομένη αὐτῷ, κ.τ.λ. Dial. c. Tr. 81.

<sup>2</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das Nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 233, anm. 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 129 ff., 220, *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 14 f.; *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1853-54, p. 60; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 29 f., *Der Kanon*, p. 25; *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 193, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 55; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 95.

<sup>4</sup> οἱ ἀπομνημονεύσαντες πάντα τὰ περὶ τοῦ Σωτήρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ εἰδιδαξαν. *Apol.* 1. 33.

history and the sayings of Jesus are derived from a determinate written source, and are quoted as Justin found them there.<sup>1</sup> Those who attempt to explain the divergences of Justin's quotations from the canonical Gospels, which they still maintain to have been his Memoirs, on the plea of oral tradition, defend the identity at the expense of the authority of the Gospels. For nothing could more forcibly show Justin's disregard and disrespect for the Gospels, than would the fact that, possessing them, he not only never names their authors, but considers himself at liberty continually to contradict, modify, and revise their statements.

As we have already remarked, when we examine the contents of the Memoirs of the Apostles, through Justin's numerous quotations, we find that many parts of the Gospel narratives are apparently quite unknown, whilst, on the other hand, we meet with facts of evangelical history, which are foreign to the canonical Gospels, and others which are contradictory of Gospel statements. Justin's quotations, almost without exception, vary more or less from the parallels in the canonical text, and often these variations are consistently repeated by himself, and are found in other works about his time. Moreover, Justin quotes expressions of Jesus, which are not found in our Gospels at all. The omissions, though often very singular, supposing the canonical Gospels before him, and almost inexplicable when it is considered how important they would often have been to his argument, need not, as merely negative evidence, be dwelt on here, but we shall briefly illustrate the other peculiarities of Justin's quotations.

The only genealogy of Jesus which is recognized by

<sup>1</sup> *Credner, Beiträge*, i. p. 130.

Justin is traced through the Virgin Mary. She it is who is descended from Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and from the house of David, and Joseph is completely set aside.<sup>1</sup> Jesus "was born of a virgin of the lineage of Abraham and tribe of Judah and of David, Christ the Son of God."<sup>2</sup> "Jesus Christ the Son of God has been born without sin of a virgin sprung from the lineage of Abraham."<sup>3</sup> "For he was conceived by a virgin of the seed of Jacob, who was the father of Judah, who, as we have shown, was the father of the Jews; and Jesse was his forefather according to the oracle, and he (Jesus) was the son of Jacob and Judah according to successive descent."<sup>4</sup> The genealogy of Jesus in the canonical Gospels, on the contrary, is traced solely through Joseph, who alone is stated to be of the lineage of David.<sup>5</sup> The genealogies of Matthew and Luke, though differing in several important points, at least agree in excluding Mary. That of the third Gospel commences with Joseph, and that of the first ends with him: "And Jacob begat Joseph, the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ."<sup>6</sup> The angel who warns Joseph not to put away his wife, addresses him as "Joseph, thou son of David,"<sup>7</sup> and the angel Gabriel, who, according to the third Gospel, announces to Mary the supernatural

<sup>1</sup> Dial. c. Tr. 23, 43 twice, 45 thrice, 100 twice, 101, 120, Apol. i. 32; cf. Matth. i. 1—16; Luke iii. 23—28.

<sup>2</sup> εἰς τὸν διὰ τῆς ἀπὸ τοῦ γένους τοῦ Ἀβραὰμ, καὶ φυλῆς Ἰουδα, καὶ Δαβὶδ Παρθένου γεννηθέντα υἱὸν τοῦ Θεοῦ Χριστόν. Dial. c. Tr. 43.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. c. Tr. 23.

<sup>4</sup> Διὰ γὰρ παρθένου τῆς ἀπὸ τοῦ σπέρματος Ἰακώβ, τοῦ γενομένου πατρὸς Ἰουδα, τοῦ δεδηλωμένου Ἰουδαίων πατρὸς, διὰ δυνάμεως Θεοῦ ἀπεκυήθη· καὶ Ἰεσοῦ προπάτωρ μὲν κατὰ τὸ λόγιον γεγένηται· τοῦ δὲ Ἰακώβ καὶ τοῦ Ἰουδα κατὰ γένους διαδοχὴν υἱὸς ὑπῆρχεν. Apol. i. 32.

<sup>5</sup> Matth. i. 1—16; cf. Luke iii. 23—28.

<sup>6</sup> Matth. i. 16; cf. Luke iii. 23.

<sup>7</sup> Matth. i. 20.

conception, is sent "to a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David."<sup>1</sup> So persistent, however, is Justin in ignoring this Davidic descent through Joseph, that not only does he at least eleven times trace it through Mary, but his Gospel materially differs from the canonical, where the descent of Joseph from David is mentioned by the latter. In the third Gospel, Joseph goes to Judæa "unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, because he was of the house and lineage of David."<sup>2</sup> Justin, however, simply states that he went "to Bethlehem . . . for his descent was from the tribe of Judah, which inhabited that region."<sup>3</sup> There can be no doubt that Justin not only did not derive his genealogies from the canonical Gospels, but that on the contrary the Memoirs, from which he did learn the Davidic descent through Mary only, differed persistently and materially from them.<sup>4</sup>

Many traces still exist to show that the view of Justin's Memoirs of the Apostles of the Davidic descent of Jesus through Mary instead of through Joseph, as the canonical Gospels represent it, was anciently held in the Church. Apocryphal Gospels of early date, based without doubt upon more ancient evangelical works, are still extant, in which the genealogy of Jesus is traced, as in Justin's Memoirs, through Mary. One of these is the Gospel of James, commonly called the *Protevangelium*, a work referred to by ecclesiastical writers of the third and fourth centuries,<sup>5</sup> and which Tischendorf even ascribes

<sup>1</sup> Luke i. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Luke ii. 4.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. c. Tr. 78.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 212 f. p. 215; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 140, 148, 156 ff.

<sup>5</sup> *Clemens*, Al., Strom., vii. 16, § 93; *Origen*, Comm. in Matth. iii.; *Epiphanius*, Hær., lxxix. § 5; cf. *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 39 ff.; *Thilo*, Cod. Apocr. N. T. proleg. xlv. ff.

to the first three decades of the second century,<sup>1</sup> in which Mary is stated to be of the lineage of David.<sup>2</sup> She is also described as of the royal race and family of David in the Gospel of the Nativity of Mary,<sup>3</sup> and in the Gospel of pseudo-Matthew her Davidic descent is prominently mentioned.<sup>4</sup> There can be no doubt that all of these works are based upon earlier originals,<sup>5</sup> and there is no reason why they may not have been drawn from the same source from which Justin derived his version of the genealogy in contradiction of the Synoptics.<sup>6</sup>

In the narrative of the events which preceded the

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 76 ff, cf. *Evangelia Apocr. Proleg.* p. xii. ff.

<sup>2</sup> Καὶ ἐμνήσθη ὁ ἱερεὺς τῆς παιδὸς Μαρίας, ὅτι ἦν ἐκ τῆς φυλῆς Δαβίδ, κ.τ.λ. *Protevangeliium Jacobi* x. *Tischendorf*, *Evangelia Apocr.*, p. 19 f.; *Fabricius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 90.

<sup>3</sup> . . . . Maria de stirpe regia et familia David oriunda. *Evang. de Nativ. Mariæ*, i.; *Fabricius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 19; *Tischendorf*, *Ev. Apocr.*, p. 106.

<sup>4</sup> Pseudo-Matth. *Evang.*, i. xiii., &c.; *Tischendorf*, *Ev. Apocr.*, p. 54, 73; cf. *Hist. de Nativ. Mar. et de Inf. Salv.*, xiii.; *Thilo*, *Cod. ap. N. T.*, p. 374. Regarding the antiquity of some of these works, cf. *Tischendorf*, *Ev. Apocr. proleg.*, p. xxv. ff.

<sup>5</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 154 ff. Hilgenfeld conjectures that the *Protevangeliium* may have been based upon the Gnostic work, the *Γέννα Μαρίας* mentioned by Epiphanius, or on the Gospel according to Peter, *Ib.*, p. 159 ff.; cf. *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 84 ff.; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden u. s. w.*, p. 78 ff.

<sup>6</sup> Several of the Fathers in like manner assert the Davidic descent through Mary. Irenæus states that she was "of the lineage of David" (*οὗτός ἐστιν ἐκ τῆς Δαβίδ παρθένου γενόμενος*. *Adv. Hær.*, iii. 21, § 5), and he argues that the Davidic descent through the Virgin was clearly indicated by prophecy. The same argument is taken up by Tertullian, who distinctly traces the descent of Christ through Mary (*ex stirpe autem Jesse deputatum per Mariam inde censendum*. *Adv. Marcionem*, iii. 17. *Eundem ex genere David secundum Mariæ consum*, *Ib.*, iv. 1, cf. v. 8). It is most probable that both Irenæus and Tertullian, who were well acquainted with the writings of Justin, followed him in this matter, for they very closely adopt his arguments. They may, however, have known apocryphal works containing the Davidic descent through Mary. They certainly did not derive it from the canonical Gospels.

birth of Jesus, the first Gospel describes the angel as appearing only to Joseph and explaining the supernatural conception,<sup>1</sup> and the author knows nothing of any announcement to Mary.<sup>2</sup> The third Gospel, on the contrary, knows nothing of any such angelic appearance to Joseph, but represents the angel as announcing the conception to Mary herself alone.<sup>3</sup> Justin's Memoirs know of the appearances both to Joseph and to Mary, but the words spoken by the angel on each occasion differ materially from those of both Gospels.<sup>4</sup> In this place, only one point, however, can be noticed. Justin describes the angel as saying to Mary: "Behold, thou shalt conceive of the Holy Ghost, and shalt bear a son, and he shall be called the Son of the Highest, and thou shalt call his name Jesus, for he shall save his people from their sins," as they have taught who have "recorded everything that concerns our Saviour Jesus Christ."<sup>5</sup> Now this is a clear and direct quotation, but besides distinctly differing in form from our Gospels, it presents the important peculiarity that the words, "for he shall save his people from their sins," are not, in Luke, addressed to Mary at all, but that they occur in the first Gospel in the address of the angel to Joseph.<sup>6</sup>

These words, however, are not accidentally inserted in this place, for we find that they are joined in the same manner to the address of the angel to Mary in the Protevangelium of James: "For the power of the Lord

<sup>1</sup> Matth. i. 20 f.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Matth. i. 18.

<sup>3</sup> Luke i. 26 f., cf. ii. 5—6.

<sup>4</sup> Apol. i. 33, Dial. c. Tr. 78, 100.

<sup>5</sup> Ἰδοὺ συλλήψῃ ἐν γαστρὶ ἐκ Πνεύματος ἁγίου, καὶ τέξῃ υἱόν, καὶ υἱὸς ὑψίστου κληθήσεται· καὶ καλέσεις τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦν· αὐτὸς γὰρ σώσει τὸν λαὸν αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν αὐτῶν· ὡς οἱ ἀπομνημονεύσαντες πάντα τὰ περὶ τοῦ Σωτῆρος ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ ἐδίδαξαν. Apol. i. 33.

<sup>6</sup> Matth. i. 21.

will overshadow thee ; wherefore that holy thing which is born of thee shall be called the Son of the Highest, and thou shalt call his name Jesus, for he shall save his people from their sins.”<sup>1</sup> Tischendorf states his own opinion that this passage is a recollection of the Protevangelium unconsciously added by Justin to the account in Luke,<sup>2</sup> but the arbitrary nature of the limitation “unconsciously” (ohne dass er sich dessen bewusst war) here is evident. There is a point in connection with this which merits a moment’s attention. In the text of the Protevangelium, edited by Tischendorf, the angel commences his address to Mary by saying : “ Fear not, Mary, for thou hast found favour before the Lord, and thou shalt conceive of his Word ” (καὶ συλλήψῃ ἐκ λόγου αὐτοῦ).<sup>3</sup> Now Justin, after quoting the passage above, continues to argue that the Spirit and the power of God must not be misunderstood to mean anything else than the Word, who is also the first born of God as the prophet Moses declared ; and it was this which, when it came upon the Virgin and overshadowed her, caused her to conceive.<sup>4</sup> The occurrence of the singular expression in the Protevangelium and the similar explanation of Justin immediately accompanying a variation from our Gospels, which is equally shared by the apocryphal work, strengthens the suspicion of a similarity of origin.

<sup>1</sup> Δύναμις γὰρ κυρίου ἐπισκιάσει σοι· διὸ καὶ τὸ γεννώμενον ἐκ σοῦ ἅγιον κληθήσεται υἱὸς ἰψίστου· καὶ παλέσεις τὸ ὄνομα αὐτοῦ Ἰησοῦν· αὐτὸς γὰρ σώσει τὸν λαὸν αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τῶν ἁμαρτιῶν αὐτῶν. *Protev. Jacobi*, xi. ; *Tischendorf*, *Evang. Apocr.*, p. 22 ; *Fabricius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 93.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 77.

<sup>3</sup> *Protev. Jac.*, xi. ; *Tischendorf*, *Evang. Apocr.*, p. 21 f. The peculiar expression is wanting in most of the other known MSS.

<sup>4</sup> Τὸ πνεῦμα οὖν καὶ τὴν δύναμιν τὴν παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ οὐδὲν ἄλλο νοῆσαι θέμις, ἢ τὸν Λόγον, ὃς καὶ πρωτότοκος τῷ θεῷ ἐστὶ, Μωσῆς ὁ προδεδηλωμένος προφήτης ἐμήνυσε. Καὶ τοῦτο, ἐλθὼν ἐπὶ τὴν παρθένον καὶ ἐπισκιάσαν, κ.τ.λ. *Apol.* i. 33.

Justin's divergences from the Protevangelium prevent our supposing that, in its present form, it could have been the actual source of his quotations, but the wide differences which exist between the extant MSS. of the Protevangelium show that even the most ancient does not present it in its original form. It is much more probable that Justin had before him a still older work, to which both the Protevangelium and the third Gospel were indebted.<sup>1</sup>

Justin's account of the removal of Joseph to Bethlehem is peculiar, and evidently is derived from a distinct uncanonical source. It may be well to present his account and that of Luke side by side.

JUSTIN. DIAL. C. TR. 78.

On the occasion of the first census which was taken in Judæa (ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ)

under Cyrenius (*first Procurator* (ἐπίτροπος) of Judæa. Apol. i. 34), Joseph went up from Nazareth, where he dwelt, to Bethlehem, from whence he was, to be enrolled; for his descent was from the tribe of Judah, which inhabited that region.<sup>2</sup>

LUKE II. 1—5.

1. . . . there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus that all the world (πᾶσαν τὴν οἰκουμένην) should be enrolled.

2. And this census was first made when Cyrenius was Governor (ἡγεμών) of Syria. 4. And Joseph went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth into Judæa, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; because he was of the house and lineage of David; 5. to enrol himself.

Attention has already been drawn to the systematic manner in which the Davidic descent of Jesus is traced by Justin through Mary, and to the suppression in this passage of all that might seem to indicate a claim of descent through Joseph. As the continuation of a

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evng. Justin's, p. 154 ff.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1853-54, p. 60 f.; *Ritschl*, Das Evng. Marcion's, p. 145 f.

<sup>2</sup> . . . ἀλλὰ, ἀπογραφῆς οὐσης ἐν τῇ Ἰουδαίᾳ τότε πρώτης ἐπὶ Κυρηρίου, ἀνεληλύθει ἀπὸ Ναζαρέτ, ἔνθα ᾤκει εἰς Βηθλεὲμ, ὅθεν ἦν, ἀπογράψασθαι ἀπὸ γὰρ τῆς κατοικουμένης τὴν γῆν ἐκείνην φυλῆς Ἰουδα τὸ γένος ἦν. Dial. 78.

peculiar representation of the history of the infancy of Jesus, differing materially from that of the Synoptics, it is impossible to regard this, with its remarkable variations, as an arbitrary correction by Justin of the canonical text, and we must hold it to be derived from a different source, perhaps, indeed, one of those from which Luke's Gospel itself first drew the elements of the narrative, and this persuasion will increase as further variations in the earlier history, presently to be considered, are taken into account. It is not necessary to enter into the question of the correctness of the date of this census, but it is evident that Justin's Memoirs clearly and deliberately modify the canonical narrative. The limitation of the census to Judæa, instead of extending it to the whole Roman Empire; the statement that it was the first census taken then under Cyrenius in contradistinction to the Gospel description of it as the general census first taken during the time of Cyrenius; the designation of Cyrenius as *ἐπίτροπος* of Judæa instead of *ἡγεμών* of Syria; and the careful suppression of the Davidic element in connection with Joseph indicate a peculiar written source different from the Synoptics.<sup>1</sup>

Had Justin departed from the account in Luke with the view of correcting inaccurate statements, the matter might have seemed more consistent with the use of the third Gospel, although at the same time it might have evinced but little reverence for it as a canonical work. On the contrary, however, the statements of Justin are still more inconsistent with history than those in Luke, inasmuch as, so far from being the first procurator of Judæa, as Justin's narrative states in opposition

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 229 ff.; *Ritschl*, Das Evang. Marcion's, p. 144 ff.

to the third Gospel, Cyrenius never held that office, but was really, later, the imperial proconsul over Syria, and as such, when Judæa became a Roman province after the banishment of Archelaus, had the power to enrol the inhabitants, and instituted Coponius as first Procurator of Judæa. Justin's statement involves the position that at one and the same time Herod was the King and Cyrenius the Roman Procurator of Judæa.<sup>1</sup> In the same spirit, and departing from the usual narrative of the Synoptics, which couples the birth of Jesus with "the days of Herod the King," Justin in another place states that Christ was born "under Cyrenius."<sup>2</sup> Justin evidently adopts without criticism a narrative which he found in his Memoirs, and does not merely correct and remodel a passage of the third Gospel, but, on the contrary, seems altogether ignorant of it.<sup>3</sup>

The genealogies of Jesus in the first and third Gospels differ irreconcilably from each other. Justin differs from both. In this passage another discrepancy arises. While Luke seems to represent Nazareth as the dwelling-place of Joseph and Mary, and Bethlehem as the city to which they went solely on account of the census,<sup>4</sup> Matthew, who knows nothing of the census, makes Bethlehem, on the contrary, the place of residence of Joseph,<sup>5</sup> and on coming back from Egypt, with the evident intention of returning to Bethlehem, Joseph is warned by a dream to turn aside into Galilee, and he

<sup>1</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Zeitschr. f. wiss. Theol.*, 1865, p. 408, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 147 f.; *Ritschl*, *Das Evang. Marcion's*, p. 144 f.; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 231 ff.; *Schneckenburger*, *Vorles. ii. N. T. Zeitgesch.*, ed. Löhlein, 1862, p. 199 ff.; *Joseph.*, *Antiq.*, xviii. 1, § 1; *Tertullian*, *Adv. Marc.*, iv. 19.

<sup>2</sup> *Apol.*, i. 46.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 230 ff.; *Ritschl*, *Das Evang. Marcion's*, p. 144 f.; cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 147 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Luke* ii. 4.

<sup>5</sup> *Matt.* ii. 1; cf. *Alford*, *Greek Test.*, i. p. 14.

goes and dwells, apparently for the first time, "in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets : He shall be called a Nazarene."<sup>1</sup> Justin, however, goes still further than the third Gospel in his departure from the data of Matthew, and where Luke merely infers, Justin distinctly asserts Nazareth to have been the dwelling-place of Joseph (ἐνθα ᾤκει), and Bethlehem, in contradistinction, the place from which he derived his origin (ὅθεν ἦν).<sup>2</sup>

The same view is to be found in several apocryphal Gospels still extant. In the Protevangelium of James again, we find Joseph journeying to Bethlehem with Mary before the birth of Jesus.<sup>3</sup> The census here is ordered by Augustus, who commands : "That all who were in Bethlehem of *Judæa*, should be enrolled,"<sup>4</sup> a limitation worthy of notice in comparison with that of Justin. In like manner the Gospel of the Nativity. This Gospel represents the parents of Mary as living in Nazareth, in which place she was born,<sup>5</sup> and it is here that the Angel Gabriel announces to her the supernatural conception.<sup>6</sup> Joseph goes to Bethlehem to set his house in order and prepare what is necessary for the marriage, but then

<sup>1</sup> Matt. ii. 22 f. It is scarcely necessary to point out that the author of the first Gospel quotes some apocryphal work ; and that the last word is a total misconception of the phrase. The word Ναζωραῖος should have been Ναζιραῖος, and the term has nothing whatever to do with the town of Nazareth. Cf. *Ewald*, Die drei ersten Evv., p. 176 f. ; *Alford*, Greek Test., i. p. 17 f.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 216 f. ; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 26 ; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 148 f.

<sup>3</sup> Protev. Jac., xvii., cf. xxi. ; *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 103 ; *Tischendorf*, Evang. Apocr., p. 30, p. 39.

<sup>4</sup> Κέλευσις δὲ ἐγένετο ἀπὸ Αὐγούστου βασιλέως ἀπογράφεσθαι πάντας τοὺς ἐν Βηθλεὲμ τῆς Ἰουδαίας. Protev. Jac., xvii.

<sup>5</sup> Evang. de Nativ. Mariæ, i. and viii. ; cf. Evang. Thomæ Lat., iii. ; *Tischendorf*, Evang. Apocr., p. 158.

<sup>6</sup> Ev. de Nat. Mariæ, ix.

returns to Nazareth, where he remains with Mary until her time was nearly accomplished,<sup>1</sup> "when Joseph having taken his wife with whatever else was necessary went to the city of Bethlehem, whence he was."<sup>2</sup> The phrase "*unde ipse erat*" recalls the *ὅθεν ἦν* of Justin.<sup>3</sup>

As we continue the narrative of the birth and infancy of Jesus, we meet with further variations from the account in the canonical Gospels for which the preceding have prepared us, and which indicate that Justin's Memorials certainly differed from them.

## JUSTIN. DIAL. 78.

But when the child was born in Bethlehem, as Joseph could not find a lodging in the village, he put up in a certain cave near the village, and while they were there Mary brought forth the Christ and placed him in a manger.<sup>4</sup>

## LUKE II. 7.

And she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes and laid him in the manger; because there was no room in the inn.<sup>5</sup>

At least it is clear that the particulars of the birth of Jesus here,—not taking place in Bethlehem itself but in a cave (*ἐν σπηλαίῳ*) near the village, because Joseph could not find a lodging there,—are not derived from our Gospels,

<sup>1</sup> Ev. de Nat. Mariæ, viii. ix.

<sup>2</sup> Joseph, uxore cum aliis quæ necessaria erant assumpta Bethlehem civitatem, unde ipse erat, tetendit. Evang. de Nat. Mar., x.; Fabricius, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 37; Tischendorf, Ev. Apocr., p. 114, cf. Evang. infantis Arab., ii.; Fabricius, *ib.*, i. p. 169; Tischendorf, *ib.*, p. 171. Here, Joseph goes from Jerusalem to Bethlehem, his native city.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Hist. de Nat. Mar. et de Inf. Salv. xiii. "Necesse autem fuerat, ut et Joseph cum Maria proficisceretur in Bethlehem, quia exinde erat, et Maria de tribu Juda et de domo ac patria David." Thilo, Cod. Apocr. N. T., p. 374.

<sup>4</sup> Γεννηθέντος δὲ τότε τοῦ παιδίου ἐν Βηθλεὲμ, ἐπειδὴ Ἰωσήφ οὐκ εἶχεν ἐν τῇ κώμῃ ἐκεῖνη ποῦ καταλῦσαι, ἐν δὲ σπηλαίῳ τινὶ συνεγγυς τῆς κώμης κατέλυσε· καὶ τότε αὐτῶν ὄντων ἐκεῖ, ἐτετόκει ἡ Μαρία τὸν Χριστὸν, καὶ ἐν φάτῃ αὐτὸν ἐθεθείκει. κ.τ.λ. Dial. 78.

<sup>5</sup> καὶ ἔτεκεν τὸν υἱὸν αὐτῆς τὸν πρωτότοκον, καὶ ἐσπαργάνωσεν αὐτὸν καὶ ἀνέκλιεν αὐτὸν ἐν τῇ φάτῃ, διότι οὐκ ἦν αὐτοῖς τόπος ἐν τῷ καταλύματι. Luke ii. 7.

and here even Semisch<sup>1</sup> is forced to abandon his theory that Justin's variations arise merely from imperfectly quoting from memory, and to conjecture that he must have adopted tradition. It has, however, been shown that Justin himself distinctly excludes tradition, and in this case, moreover, there are many special reasons for believing that he quotes from a written source. Ewald rightly points out that here, and in other passages, where in common with ancient ecclesiastical writers, Justin departs from our Gospels, the variation can in no way be referred to oral tradition;<sup>2</sup> and, moreover, that when Justin proves<sup>3</sup> from Isaiah xxxiii. 16, that Christ *must* be born in a cave, he only thereby shows how certainly he found the fact of the cave in his written Gospel.<sup>4</sup> The whole argument of Justin excludes the idea that he could avail himself of mere tradition. He maintains that everything which the prophets had foretold of Christ had actually been fulfilled, and he perpetually refers to the Memoirs and other written documents for the verification of his assertions. He either refers to the prophets for the confirmation of the Memoirs, or shows in the Memoirs the narrative of facts which are the accomplishment of prophecies, but in both cases it is manifest that there must have been a record of the facts which he mentions. There can be no doubt that the circumstances we

<sup>1</sup> Denkwürdigk. d. Mär. Just., p. 390 f.

<sup>2</sup> Wenn nämlich Jesu nach Justinos' rede in einer höhle bei Bätthéhem geboren ward und dasselbe auch sonst von alten kirchlichen schriftstellern erzählt wird, so kann man dieses sowie anders worin er von unsern Evangelien abweicht keineswegs aus einer mündlichen sage ableiten welche ihm zugekommen wäre: *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1853-54, p. 60.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. 71, cf. 70.

<sup>4</sup> Wenn aber Justinos' (c. 78, vgl. 70) dass Christus in einer höhle geboren werden *musste* aus Jes. 33, 16, beweist, so zeigt sich damit nur wie gewiss er die höhle in seinen evang. schriften gefunden hatte. *Ib.*, p. 60, anm. 1.

have just quoted, and which are not found in the canonical Gospels, must have been narrated in Justin's Memoirs.

We find, again, the same variations as in Justin in several extant apocryphal Gospels. The Protevangelium of James represents the birth of Jesus as taking place in a cave ;<sup>1</sup> so also the Arabic Gospel of the Infancy,<sup>2</sup> and several others.<sup>3</sup> This uncanonical detail is also mentioned by several of the Fathers, Origen and Eusebius both stating that the cave and the manger were still shown in their day.<sup>4</sup> Tischendorf does not hesitate to affirm that Justin derived this circumstance from the Protevangelium.<sup>5</sup> Justin, however, does not distinguish such a source ; and the mere fact that we have a form of that Gospel, in which it occurs, still extant, by no means justifies such a specific conclusion, when so many other works, now lost, may equally have contained it. If the fact be derived from the Protevangelium, that work, or whatever other apocryphal Gospel may have supplied it, must be admitted to have at least formed part of the Memoirs of the Apostles, and with that

<sup>1</sup> *Protev. Jac.*, xviii. ; *Fabricius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 105 ; *Tischendorf*, *Evang. Apocr.*, p. 32.

<sup>2</sup> *Evang. Infantie Arab.*, ii. iii. ; *Fabricius*, *ib.*, i. p. 169 f. ; *Tischendorf*, *ib.*, p. 171 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Pseudo-Matth. Ev.*, xiii. xiv. ; *Tischendorf*, *ib.*, p. 74 f. ; *Historia Josephi Fab. Lign.*, vii. ; *Tischendorf*, *ib.*, p. 118 ; *Hist. de Nat. Mar. et de Inf. Salv.*, xiv. ; *Thilo*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, p. 381.

<sup>4</sup> *Origen*, *Contra Cels.*, i. 51 ; *Eusebius*, *Vita Const.*, iii. 40 f. Their only variation from Justin's account is, that they speak of the cave as in Bethlehem, while Justin describes it as near the village. *Credner* remarks that the sacredness of the spot might by that time have attracted people, and led to the extension of the town in that direction, till the site might have become really joined to Bethlehem. *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 235 ; cf. *Socrates*, *H. E.*, i. 17 ; *Sozomen*, *H. E.*, ii. 2 ; *Epiphanius*, *Hær.*, xx. 1 ; *Hieron.*, *Ep.*, lviii., ad Paul.

<sup>5</sup> *Evang. Apocr. Proleg.*, p. xiii., *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 76 ff.

necessary admission ends all special identification of the Memoirs with our canonical Gospels. Much more probably, however, Justin quotes from the more ancient source from which the Protevangelium, and perhaps Luke drew their narrative.<sup>1</sup> There can be very little doubt that the Gospel according to the Hebrews contained an account of the birth in Bethlehem, and as it is, at least, certain that Justin quotes other particulars from it, there is fair reason to suppose that he likewise found this fact in that work.<sup>2</sup> In any case it is indisputable that he derived it from a source different from our canonical Gospels.<sup>3</sup>

Justin does not apparently know anything of the episode of the shepherds of the plain, and the angelic appearance to them, narrated in the third Gospel.<sup>4</sup>

To the cave in which the infant Jesus is born came the Magi, but instead of employing the phrase used by the first Gospel, "Magi from the East,"<sup>5</sup> (μάγοι ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν) Justin always describes them as "Magi from Arabia," (μάγοι ἀπὸ Ἀραβίας). Justin is so punctilious that he never speaks of these Magi without adding "from Arabia," except twice, where, however, he immediately mentions Arabia as the point of the argument for which they are introduced; and in the same chapter in which

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1853-54, p. 60 f.; *Ritschl*, Das Evang. Marcion's, p. 146.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1853-54, p. 60 f., also anm. 1, and p. 61, anm. 2; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 239.

<sup>3</sup> *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 555; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 217 f., 235; *Bindemann*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1842, p. 468; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 148 f., 158 f., 259; *Nicolas*, Etudes sur les Ev. Apocr., p. 52 f.; *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, p. 57; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. Marcion's, p. 143 ff.; *De Wette*, Lehrb. Einl. N. T., p. 111, p. 113; *Semisch*, Denkw. d. M. Just., p. 390 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 104, anm. 32.

<sup>4</sup> Luke ii. 8, 20.

<sup>5</sup> Matt. ii. 1.

this occurs he four times calls them directly Magi from Arabia.<sup>1</sup> He uses this expression not less than nine times.<sup>2</sup> That he had no objection to the term "the East," and that with a different context it was common to his vocabulary, is proved by his use of it elsewhere.<sup>3</sup> It is impossible to resist the conviction that Justin's Memoirs contained the phrase "Magi from Arabia," which is foreign to our Gospels."<sup>4</sup>

Again, according to Justin, the Magi see the star "in heaven" (ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ),<sup>5</sup> and not "in the East" (ἐν τῇ ἀνατολῇ) as the first Gospel has it:<sup>6</sup> "When a star rose in heaven (ἐν οὐρανῷ) at the time of his birth as is recorded in the Memoirs of the Apostle."<sup>7</sup> He knows nothing of the star guiding them to the place where the young child was.<sup>8</sup> Herod, moreover, questions the elders (πρεσβύτεροι)<sup>9</sup> as to the place where the Christ should be born, and not the "chief priests and scribes of the people" (ἀρχιερεῖς καὶ γραμματεῖς τοῦ λαοῦ).<sup>10</sup> These divergences, taken in connection with those which are interwoven with the whole narrative of the birth, can only proceed from the fact that Justin quotes from a source different from ours.<sup>11</sup>

Justin relates that when Jesus came to Jordan he was believed to be the son of Joseph the carpenter, and he appeared without comeliness, as the Scriptures announced; "and he was considered a carpenter, for he performed carpenter's work when amongst men, making

<sup>1</sup> Dial. c. Tr., 78.

<sup>2</sup> Dial. 77, 78 four times, 88, 102, 103, 106.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. 76, 120, 121, 126, 140, &c. ; cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 149.

<sup>4</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 214 ; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 148 ; *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 57.

<sup>5</sup> Dial. 106.

<sup>6</sup> *Matt.* ii. 2, cf. ii. 9 ; cf. *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. 216.

<sup>7</sup> Dial. 106.

<sup>8</sup> *Matt.* ii. 9.

<sup>9</sup> Dial. 78.

<sup>10</sup> *Matt.* ii. 4.

<sup>11</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 151.

ploughs and yokes (ἄροτρα καὶ ζυγά); by which he taught the symbols of righteousness and an active life."<sup>1</sup> These details are unknown to the canonical Gospels. Mark has the expression: "Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary?"<sup>2</sup> but Luke omits it altogether.<sup>3</sup> The idea that the Son of God should do carpenter's work on earth was very displeasing to many Christians, and attempts to get rid of the obnoxious phrase are evident in Mark. Apparently the copy which Origen used had omitted even the modified phrase, for he declares that Jesus himself is nowhere called a carpenter in the Gospels current in the Church.<sup>4</sup> A few MSS. still extant are without it, although it is found in all the more ancient Codices.

Traces of these details are found in several apocryphal works, especially in the Gospel of Thomas, where it is said: "Now his father was a carpenter and made at that time ploughs and yokes" (ἄροτρα καὶ ζυγούς)<sup>5</sup>, an account which, from the similarity of language, was in all probability derived from the same source as that of Justin. The explanation which Justin adds: "by which he taught the symbols of righteousness and an active life," clearly indicates that he refers to a written narrative containing

<sup>1</sup> . . . καὶ τέκτονος νομιζομένου ταῦτα γὰρ τὰ τεκτονικὰ ἔργα εἰργάζετο ἐν ἀνθρώποις ὢν, ἄροτρα καὶ ζυγά: διὰ τούτων καὶ τὰ τῆς δικαιοσύνης σύμβολα διδάσκων, καὶ ἐνεργῆ βίον. Dial. 88.

<sup>2</sup> οὐχ οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ τέκτων, ὁ υἱὸς Μαρίας; Mark vi. 3.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Luko iii. 23.

<sup>4</sup> . . . ὅτι οὐδαμοῦ τῶν ἐν ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις φερομένων εὐαγγελίων τέκτων αὐτοῦ ὁ Ἰησοῦς ἀναγράφεται. Contra Cels., vi. 36; cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 239; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 152.

<sup>5</sup> Ὁ δὲ πατὴρ αὐτοῦ τέκτων ἦν, καὶ ἐποίησεν ἐν τῷ καιρῷ ἐκείνῳ ἄροτρα καὶ ζυγούς. Evang. Thomæ Græce, A. xiii.; *Tischendorf*, Ev. Apocr., p. 144 cf.; Evang. Thomæ Lat., xi.; *Tischendorf*, *ib.*, p. 166; Pseudo-Matth. Ev., xxxvii.; *Tischendorf*, *ib.*, p. 99; Evang. Infant. Arab., xxxviii.; *Tischendorf*, *ib.*, p. 193; *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., p. 200.

the detail, already, perhaps, falling into sufficient disfavour to require the aid of symbolical interpretation.

In the narrative of the baptism there are many peculiarities which prove that Justin did not derive it from our Gospels. Thrice he speaks of John sitting by the river Jordan: "He cried as he sat by the river Jordan;"<sup>1</sup> "While he still sat by the river Jordan;"<sup>2</sup> and "For when John sat by the Jordan."<sup>3</sup> This peculiar expression so frequently repeated must have been derived from a written Gospel.<sup>4</sup> Then Justin, in proving that Jesus predicted his second coming and the re-appearance of Elias, states: "And therefore our Lord in his teaching announced that this should take place, saying Elias also should come" (εἰπὼν καὶ Ἠλίαν ἐλεύσεσθαι). A little lower down he again expressly quotes the words of Jesus: "For which reason our Christ declared on earth to those who asserted that Elias must come before Christ: Elias, indeed, shall come," &c. (Ἠλίας μὲν ἐλεύσεται, κ.τ.λ.).<sup>5</sup> Matthew, however, reads: "Elias indeed cometh," Ἠλίας μὲν ἔρχεται, κ.τ.λ.<sup>6</sup> Now there is no version in which ἐλεύσεται is substituted for ἔρχεται as Justin does, but, as Credner has pointed out,<sup>7</sup> the whole weight of Justin's argument lies in the use of the future tense. As there are so many other variations in Justin's context, this likewise appears to be derived from a source different from our Gospels.<sup>8</sup>

When Jesus goes to be baptized by John many

<sup>1</sup> ὅστις ἐπὶ τὸν Ἰορδάνην ποταμὸν καθεζόμενος, ἐβόα· κ.τ.λ. Dial. 49.

<sup>2</sup> ἔτι αὐτοῦ καθεζομένου ἐπὶ τοῦ Ἰορδάνου ποταμοῦ, κ.τ.λ. Dial. 51.

<sup>3</sup> Ἰωάννου γὰρ καθεζομένου ἐπὶ τοῦ Ἰορδάνου, κ.τ.λ. Dial. 88.

<sup>4</sup> Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 218; Zeller, Die Apostelgesch., p. 47, anm. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Dial. 49.

<sup>6</sup> xvii. 11. Many MSS. add πρώτον.

<sup>7</sup> Beiträge, i. p. 219

<sup>8</sup> Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 219 f., cf. 218; cf. Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 162, anm. 2.

striking peculiarities occur in Justin's narrative: "As Jesus went into the water, a fire also was kindled in the Jordan; and when he came out of the water, the Holy Spirit like a dove flew upon him, as the apostles of this very Christ of ours wrote . . . and at the same time a voice came from the heavens . . . Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee."<sup>1</sup>

The incident of the fire in Jordan is of course quite foreign to our Gospels, and further the words spoken by the heavenly voice differ from those reported by them, for instead of the passage from Psalm ii. 7, the Gospels have: "Thou art my beloved son; in thee I am well pleased."<sup>2</sup> Justin repeats his version a second time in the same chapter, and again elsewhere he says regarding the temptation: "For this devil also at the time when he (Jesus) went up from the river Jordan, when the voice declared to him: 'Thou art my son; this day have I begotten thee,' it is written in the Memoirs of the Apostles, came to him and tempted him," &c.<sup>3</sup>

In both of these passages, it will be perceived that Justin directly refers to the Memoirs of the Apostles as the source of his statements. Some have argued that Justin only appeals to them for the fact of the descent of the Holy Ghost, and not for the rest of the narrative.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> . . . κατελθόντος τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἐπὶ τὸ ὕδωρ, καὶ πῦρ ἀνήψθη ἐν τῷ Ἰορδάνῃ· καὶ ἀναδύνας αὐτοῦ ἀπὸ τοῦ ὕδατος, ὡς περιστεράν τὸ ἅγιον Πνεῦμα ἐπιπέτηναι ἐπ' αὐτὸν ἔγραψαν οἱ ἀπόστολοι αὐτοῦ τούτου τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἡμῶν. . . . καὶ φωνὴ ἐκ τῶν οὐρανῶν ἅμα ἐηλόθει. . . . "Υἱός μου εἶ σύ· ἐγὼ σήμερον γεγέννηκά σε." Dial. 88.

<sup>2</sup> Σὺ εἶ ὁ υἱός μου ὁ ἀγαπητός, ἐν σοὶ εὐδόκησα. Mark i. 11, Luke iii. 22. The first Gospel has a slight variation: "This is my son, &c., in whom, &c.," Οὗτός ἐστιν ὁ υἱός μου κ.τ.λ. . . . ἐν ᾧ εὐδόκησα. Matt. iii. 17; cf. 2 Peter i. 17, which agrees with Matt. <sup>3</sup> Dial. 103.

<sup>4</sup> *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr. i. 19; *Bindemann*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1842, p. 471; *Semisich*, Ap. Denkw. d. M. Just., p. 480 f.; *Hestcott*, On the Canon, p. 137 f.; *Paulus*, Theol. Exeg. Conservatorium, i. p. 18.

It has of course been felt that, if it can be shown that Justin quotes from the Memoirs words and circumstances which are not to be found in our canonical Gospels, the identity of the two can no longer be maintained. It is, however, in the highest degree arbitrary to affirm that Justin intends to limit his appeal to the testimony of the apostles to one-half of his sentence. To quote authority for one assertion and to leave another in the same sentence, closely connected with it and part indeed of the very same narrative, not only unsupported, but indeed weakened by direct exclusion, would indeed be singular, for Justin affirms with equal directness and confidence the fact of the fire in Jordan, the descent of the Holy Ghost, and the words spoken by the heavenly voice. If in the strictest grammatical accuracy there may be no absolute necessity to include in that which the Apostles wrote more than the phrase immediately preceding, there is not on the other hand anything which requires or warrants the exclusion of the former part of the sentence. The matter must therefore be decided according to fair inference and reasonable probability, and not to suit any foregone conclusion, and these as well as all the evidence concerning Justin's use of the Memoirs irresistibly point to the conclusion that the whole passage is derived from one source. In the second extract given above, it is perfectly clear that the words spoken by the heavenly voice, which Justin again quotes, and which are not in our Gospels, were recorded in the Memoirs, for otherwise Justin could not have referred to them for an account of the temptation at the time when Jesus went up from Jordan and the voice said to him: "Thou art my son; this day have I begotten thee," if these facts and words were not

recorded by them at all.<sup>1</sup> It is impossible to doubt, after impartial consideration, that the incident of the fire in Jordan, the words spoken by the voice from heaven, and the temptation were taken from the same source: they must collectively be referred to the Memoirs.<sup>2</sup>

Of one thing we may be sure: had Justin known the form of words used by the voice from heaven according to our Gospels, he would certainly have made use of it in preference to that which he actually found in his Memoirs. He is arguing that Christ is pre-existing God, become incarnate by God's will through the Virgin Mary, and Trypho demands how he can be demonstrated to have been pre-existent, who is said to be filled with the power of the Holy Ghost, as though he had required this. Justin replies that these powers of the Spirit have come upon him not because he had need of them, but because they would accomplish Scripture, which declared that after him there should be no prophet.<sup>3</sup> The proof of this, he continues, is that, as soon as the child was born, the Magi from Arabia came to worship him, because even at his birth he was in possession of his power,<sup>4</sup> and after he had grown up like other men by the use of suitable means, he came to the river Jordan where John was baptizing, and as he went into the water a fire was kindled in the Jordan, and the Holy Ghost descended like a dove. He did not go to the river because he had any need of baptism or of

<sup>1</sup> Dial. 103. The quotations regarding the temptation do not agree with our Gospels, but they will be referred to later.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 219 f., p. 221; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 164, and anm. 2; *De Wette*, Lehrb. Einl. N. T., p. 111, p. 113. Even *Semisch* (Ap. Denkw. d. M. Just., p. 390 f.) admits that they cannot be from our Gospels, and seems to ascribe them to traditional sources. Cf. *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 96, anm. 16, p. 104, anm. 33.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. 87. <sup>4</sup> Καὶ γὰρ γεννηθεὶς, δύναμιν τῆν αὐτοῦ ἔσχε. Dial. 88.

the descent of the Spirit, but because of the human race which had fallen under the power of death. Now if, instead of the passage actually cited, Justin could have quoted the words addressed to Jesus by the voice from heaven according to the Gospels: "Thou art my beloved son; in thee I am well pleased," his argument would have been greatly strengthened by such direct recognition of an already existing, and, as he affirmed, pre-existent divinity in Jesus. Not having these words in his *Memoirs of the Apostles*, however, he was obliged to be content with those which he found there: "Thou art my son; this day have I begotten thee;"—words which, in fact, in themselves destroyed the argument for pre-existence, and dated the divine begetting of Jesus as the son of God that very day. The passage, indeed, supported those who actually asserted that the Holy Ghost first entered into Jesus at this baptism. These considerations, and the repeated quotation of the same words in the same form, make it clear that Justin quotes from a source different from our Gospel.<sup>1</sup>

In the scanty fragments of the "Gospel according to the Hebrews" which have been preserved, we find both the incident of the fire kindled in Jordan and the words of the heavenly voice as quoted by Justin. "And as he went out of the water, the heavens opened, and he saw the Holy Spirit of God in the form of a dove descend and enter into him. And a voice was heard from

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 219 f.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 30 f., 104 f., 109, 156; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 165 f.; Die Evangelien, p. 57 f.; Theol. Jahrb., 1857, p. 411 f.; *Ritschl*, Das Evang. Marcion's, p. 133 f.; *Volkmar*, Die Evangelien, 1870, p. 42 ff.; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 57; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 111, p. 113; *Semisch* attributes both peculiarities to tradition. Ap. Denkw. Just., p. 390 f., 395 f.; cf. *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 137 f.

heaven saying: "Thou art my beloved son; in thee I am well pleased;" and again: "This day have I begotten thee. And immediately a great light shone in that place."<sup>1</sup> Epiphanius extracts this passage from the version in use amongst the Ebionites, but it is well known that there were many other varying forms of the same Gospel; and Hilgenfeld,<sup>2</sup> with all probability, conjectures that the version known to Epiphanius was no longer in the same purity as that used by Justin, but represents the transition stage to the Canonical Gospels,—adopting the words of the voice which they give without yet discarding the older form. Jerome gives another form of the words from the version in use amongst the Nazarenes: "Factum est autem cum ascendisset Dominus de aquâ, descendit fons omnis Spiritus Sancti et requievit super eum, et dixit illi: Fili mi, in omnibus Prophetis expectabam te ut venires et requiescerem in te, tu es enim requies mea, tu es filius meus primogenitus qui regnas in sempiternum."<sup>3</sup> This supports Justin's reading. Regarding the Gospel according to the Hebrews more must be said hereafter, but when it is remembered that Justin, a native of Samaria, probably first knew Christianity through believers in Syria to whose Jewish view of Christianity he all his life adhered, and that these Christians almost exclusively used this Gospel<sup>4</sup> under various forms and names

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ ὡς ἀνήλθεν ἀπὸ τοῦ ὕδατος, ἠνοίγησαν οἱ οὐρανοὶ, καὶ εἶδε τὸ πνεῦμα τοῦ θεοῦ τὸ ἄγιον ἐν εἰδει περιστερᾶς κατελθούσης καὶ εἰσελθούσης εἰς αὐτόν. Καὶ φωνὴ ἐγένετο ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, λέγουσα, Σὺ μου εἶ ὁ υἱὸς ὁ ἀγαπητός, ἐν σοὶ ἠνδόκησα καὶ πάλιν, Ἐγὼ σήμερον γεγέννηκά σε. Καὶ εὐθὺς περιέλαμψε τὸν τόπον φῶς μέγα. Epiphanius, Hær. xxx. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Dio Evv. Justin's, p. 165 f., anm. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Hieron., Comm. in Esaiæ, xi. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Origen, Comment. in Ezech., xxiv. 7; Epiphanius, Hær. xxx. 3; Eusebius, H. E., iii. 27; Hieron., Adv. Pelag., iii. 1 f.

it is reasonable to suppose that he also like them knew and made use of it, a supposition increased to certainty when it is found that Justin quotes words and facts foreign to the Canonical Gospels which are known to have been contained in it. The argument of Justin that Jesus did not need baptism may also be compared to another passage of the Gospel according to the Hebrews preserved by Jerome, and which preceded the circumstances narrated above, in which the mother and brethren of Jesus say to him that John the Baptist is baptizing for the remission of sins, and propose that they should go to be baptized by him. Jesus replies, "In what way have I sinned that I should be baptized by him?"<sup>1</sup> The most competent critics agree that Justin derived the incidents of the fire in Jordan and the words spoken by the heavenly voice from the Gospel according to the Hebrews or some kindred work,<sup>2</sup> and there is every probability that the numerous other quotations in his works differing from our Gospels are taken from the same source.

The incident of the fire in Jordan likewise occurs in the ancient work "Prædicatio Pauli,"<sup>3</sup> coupled with a

<sup>1</sup> *Ecce mater Domini et fratres ejus dicebant ei: Johannes Baptista baptizat in remissionem peccatorum, eamus et baptizemur ab eo. Dixit autem eis: Quid peccavi ut vadam et baptizer ab eo? Nisi forte hoc ipsum, quod dixi, ignorantia est. Hieron., Adv. Pelag., iii. 2.*

<sup>2</sup> *Ewald, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1853-54, p. 61, cf. p. 38 f.; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 219 ff., 237 f., 259 f.; De Wette, Einl. N. T., p. 111, p. 113; Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 164 ff., cf. 270 ff., p. 304; Ritschl, Das Evang. Marcion's, p. 133 f.; Volkmar, Die Evangelien, p. 42 ff.*

<sup>3</sup> *In quo libro contra omnes Scripturas et de peccato proprio confitentem invenies Christum, qui solus omnino nihil deliquit, et ad accipiendum Joannis baptismæ pæne invitum a matre sua Maria esse compulsus; item, cum baptizaretur, ignem super aquam esse visum. Quod in Evangelio nullo est scriptum. Auctor tract. de Rebaptismate; Fabricius, Cod. Apocr., i. p. 800.*

context which forcibly recalls the passage of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which has just been quoted, and apparent allusions to it are found in the Sibylline Books and early Christian literature.<sup>1</sup> Credner has pointed out that the marked use which was made of fire or lights at Baptism by the Church, during early times, probably rose out of this tradition regarding the fire which appeared in Jordan at the baptism of Jesus.<sup>2</sup> The peculiar form of words used by the heavenly voice according to Justin and to the Gospel according to the Hebrews was also known to several of the Fathers.<sup>3</sup> Augustine mentions that some MSS. in his time contained that reading in Luke iii. 22, although without the confirmation of more ancient Greek codices.<sup>4</sup> It is still extant in the Codex Bezae (D). The Itala version adds to Matthew iii. 15: "and when he was baptized a great light shone round from the water, so that all who had come were afraid" (et cum baptizaretur, lumen ingens circumfulsit de aqua, ita ut timerent omnes qui advenerant); and again at Luke iii. 22 it gives the words of the voice in a form agreeing at least in sense with those which Justin found in his Memoirs of the Apostles.

These circumstances point with certainty to an earlier original corresponding with Justin, in all probability

<sup>1</sup> Sibyll. Oracula, lib. vii. viii.; cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 237 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 167 ff.; *Reuss*, Les Sibylles Chrétiennes, N., Rev. de Théol., vol. vii. p. 235, 238.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 237; cf. *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 167 f.; *Volkmar*, Die Evangelien, p. 43.

<sup>3</sup> *Clemens Al.*, Pædag., i. 6; *Methodius*, Conviv. Virg. ix. *Lactantius*, Institut. Div., iv. 15; *Augustine*, Enchirid. ad Laurent., 49.

<sup>4</sup> Illud vero, quod nonnulli codices habent secundum Lucam, hoc illa voce sonuisse, quod in Psalmo scriptum est: Filius meus es tu; ego hodie genui te: quamquam in antiquioribus codicibus græcis non inveniri prohibeatur, &c., &c. *De Consensu Evang.*, ii. 14.

the Gospel according to the Hebrews, and to the subsequent gradual elimination of the passage from the Gospels finally adopted by the Church for dogmatic reasons, as various sects based on the words doctrines which were at variance with the ever-enlarging belief of the majority.<sup>1</sup>

Then Justin states that the men of his time asserted that the miracles of Jesus were performed by magical art (*μαγικὴ φαντασία*), "for they ventured to call him a magician and deceiver of the people."<sup>2</sup> This cannot be accepted as a mere version of the charge that Jesus cast out demons by Beelzebub, but must have been found by Justin in his Memoirs.<sup>3</sup> In the Gospel of Nicodemus or Acta Pilati, the Jews accuse Jesus before Pilate of being a magician,<sup>4</sup> coupled with the assertion that he casts out demons through Beelzebub the prince of the demons; and again they simply say: "Did we not tell thee that he is a magician?"<sup>5</sup> We shall presently see that Justin actually refers to certain acts of Pontius Pilate in justification of other assertions regarding the trial of Jesus.<sup>6</sup> In the Clementine Recognitions, moreover, the same charge is made by some of the Scribes, who say that Jesus did not perform his miracles as a prophet, but as a magician.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 241; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 170; *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., i. p. 327; *Volkmar*, Die Evangelien, p. 42 f.

<sup>2</sup> Καὶ γὰρ μάγον εἶναι αὐτὸν ἐτόλμων λέγειν καὶ λαοπλάνον. Dial. 69.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 255 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 207 ff., 258; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 111, 113. *Semisch* attributes it to tradition. Die ap. Denkw. Just., p. 391 ff.

<sup>4</sup> λέγουσιν αὐτῷ Γόης ἐστίν, κ.τ.λ. Evang. Nicod. sivo Gesta Pilati, Pars. I. A. i.; *Tischendorf*, Evang. Apocr., p. 208; cf. *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i.; *Nicod. Evang. Lat.*, i. p. 239, xxvii. p. 296, cf. 417.

<sup>5</sup> Μὴ οὐκ εἴπαμέν σοι ὅτι γόης ἐστίν; κ.τ.λ. c. ii.; *Tischendorf*, Ev. Ap., p. 214; *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 243.

<sup>6</sup> *Apol.*, i. 35, 48.

<sup>7</sup> Et ecce quidam de Scribis de medio populi exclamans ait: Jesus vester signa et prodigia quæ fecit, ut magus non ut propheta fecit. i. 58; cf. p. 40.

Celsus makes a similar charge,<sup>1</sup> and Lactantius refers to such an opinion as prevalent among the Jews at the time of Jesus,<sup>2</sup> which we find confirmed by many passages in Talmudic literature.<sup>3</sup> There was indeed a book called "Magia Jesu Christi," of which Jesus himself, it was pretended, was the author.<sup>4</sup>

In speaking of the trial of Jesus, Justin says: "For also as the prophet saith, they tormented him and set him on the judgment seat and said: Judge us,"<sup>5</sup> a peculiarity which is not found in the Canonical Gospels. Justin had just quoted the words of Isaiah (lxv. 2, lviii. 2) . . . "They now ask of me judgment and dare to draw nigh to God," and then he cites Psalm xxii. 16, 22: "They pierced my hands and my feet, and upon my vesture they cast lots." He says that this did not happen to David, but was fulfilled in Christ, and the expression regarding the piercing the hands and feet referred to the nails of the cross which were driven through his hands and feet. And after he was crucified they cast lots upon his vesture. "And that these things occurred," he continues, "you may learn from the Acts drawn up under Pontius Pilate."<sup>6</sup> He likewise upon another occasion refers to the same Acta for confirmation of statements.<sup>7</sup> The Gospel of Nicodemus or Gesta Pilati, now extant, does not contain the circumstance to which we are now referring, but in contradiction to the

<sup>1</sup> *Origen*, *Contra Cels.*, ii. 50, 51.      <sup>2</sup> *Instit. Div.*, v. 3, et passim.

<sup>3</sup> *Lightfoot*, *Horæ Hebraicæ*, Works, xi. p. 195 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *August. de Consensu Evang.*, i. 9; *Fabricsius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 305 ff.

<sup>5</sup> Καὶ γὰρ, ὡς εἶπεν ὁ προφήτης, διασύροντες αὐτὸν, ἐκάθισαν ἐπὶ βήματος, καὶ εἶπον· Κρίνον ἡμῖν. *Apol.*, i. 35.

<sup>6</sup> Καὶ ταῦτα ὅτι γέγονε, δύνασθε μαθεῖν ἐκ τῶν ἐπὶ Ποπίου Πιλάτου γεγομένων ἰσχυῶν. *Apol.*, i. 35.

<sup>7</sup> *Apol.*, i. 48. Cf. *Tertullian*, *Apol.* xxi.

statement in the fourth Gospel (xviii. 28, 29) the Jews in this apocryphal work freely go in to the very judgment seat of Pilate.<sup>1</sup> Tischendorf maintains that the first part of the Gospel of Nicodemus, or *Acta Pilati*, still extant, is the work, with more or less of interpolation, which, existing in the second century, is referred to by Justin.<sup>2</sup> A few reasons may here be given against such a conclusion. The fact of Jesus being set upon the judgment seat is not contained in the extant *Acta Pilati* at all, and therefore this work does not correspond with Justin's statement. It seems most absurd to suppose that Justin should seriously refer Roman Emperors to a work of this description, so manifestly composed by a Christian, and the *Acta* to which he directs them must have been a presumed official document, to which they had access, as of course no other evidence could be of any weight with them.<sup>3</sup> The extant work neither pretends to be, nor has in the slightest degree the form of, an official report. Moreover, the prologue attached to it distinctly states that Ananias, a provincial warden in the reign of Flavius Theodosius (towards the middle of the fifth century), found these Acts written in Hebrew by Nicodemus, and that he translated them into Greek.<sup>4</sup> The work itself, therefore, only pretends to be a private composition in Hebrew, and does not claim any relation to Pontius Pilate. The Greek is very corrupt and degraded, and considerations of style alone would assign it

<sup>1</sup> *Evang. Nicod. sive Gesta Pilate, Pars. i. A., i. ii.*; Tischendorf, *Evang. Apocr.*, p. 208 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Evang. Apocr. Proleg.*, p. lxiv. ff.; Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 82—89.

<sup>3</sup> Scholten, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 161; Nicolas, *Études sur les Évang. Apocr.*, p. 360.

<sup>4</sup> *Evang. Nicod. Proleg.*; Tischendorf, *Ev. Apocr.*, p. 203 f.

to the fifth century, as would still more imperatively the anachronisms with which it abounds.<sup>1</sup> Tischendorf considers that Tertullian refers to the same work as Justin, but it is evident that he infers an official report, for he says distinctly, after narrating the circumstances of the crucifixion and resurrection: "All these facts regarding Christ, Pilate . . . reported to the reigning Emperor Tiberius."<sup>2</sup> It is extremely probable that in saying this Tertullian merely extended the statement of Justin. He nowhere states that he himself had seen this report, nor does Justin, and as is the case with the latter, some of the facts which Tertullian supposes to be reported by Pilate are not contained in the apocryphal work.<sup>3</sup> There are still extant some apocryphal writings in the form of official reports made by Pilate of the trial, crucifixion, and resurrection of Jesus,<sup>4</sup> but none are of very ancient date. It is certain that, on the supposition that Pilate may have made an official report of events so important in their estimation, Christian writers, with greater zeal than conscience, composed fictitious reports in his name in the supposed interest of their religion, and there was in that day little or no critical sense to detect and discredit such forgeries. There is absolutely no evidence to show that Justin was acquainted with any official report of Pilate to the Roman Emperor, nor indeed is it easy to understand how he could possibly have been, even if such a document existed, and it is most probable, as Scholten conjectures, that Justin merely referred to docu-

<sup>1</sup> *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 172 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ea omnia super Christo Pilatus . . . Cæsari tum Tiberio nuntiavit.* Apol. xxi.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 163 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Fabricius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 298 ff.; *Thilo*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, p. 796 ff.; *Tischendorf*, *Evang. Apocr.*, p. 411 ff.

ments which tradition supposed to have been written, but of which he himself had no personal knowledge.<sup>1</sup> Be this as it may, as he considered the incident of the judgment seat a fulfilment of prophecy, there can be little or no doubt that it was narrated in the Memoirs which contained "everything relating to Jesus Christ," and finding it there he all the more naturally assumed that it must have been mentioned in any official report.

In narrating the agony in the Garden, there are further variations. Justin says: "And the passage: 'All my bones are poured out and dispersed like water; my heart has become like wax melting in the midst of my belly,' predicted what occurred to him that night when they came out against him to the Mount of Olives to seize him. For in the Memoirs composed, I say, by his Apostles and their followers, it is recorded that his sweat fell down like great drops while he prayed, saying: 'If possible, let this cup pass.'"<sup>2</sup> It will be observed that this is a direct quotation from the Memoirs, but there is a material difference from our Gospels. Luke is the only Gospel which mentions the bloody sweat, and there the account reads (xxii. 44), "as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground."

LUKE. ὡσεὶ θρόμβοι αἵματος καταβαίνοντες ἐπὶ τὴν γῆν.  
JUSTIN. ὡσεὶ θρόμβοι κατεχείτο.

In addition to the other linguistic differences Justin omits the emphatic αἵματος which gives the whole point to Luke's account, and which evidently could not have been in the text of the Memoirs. Semisch argues that θρόμβοι alone, especially in medical phraseology, meant

<sup>1</sup> Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 165 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Dial. 103.

“drops of blood,” without the addition of *αἵματος*;<sup>1</sup> but the author of the third Gospel did not think so, and undeniably makes use of both, and Justin does not. Moreover, Luke introduces the expression *θρόμβοι αἵματος* to show the intensity of the agony, whereas Justin evidently did not mean to express “drops of blood” at all, his intention in referring to the sweat being to show that the prophecy: “All my bones are poured out, &c., like water,” had been fulfilled, with which the reading in his Memoirs more closely corresponded. The prayer also so directly quoted decidedly varies from Luke xxii. 42, which reads: “Father, if thou be willing to remove this cup from me”:

LUKE. Πάτερ, εἰ βούλει παρενεγκέιν τούτο το ποτήριον ἀπ' ἐμοῦ·

JUSTIN. Παρελθέτω, εἰ δυνατόν, τὸ ποτήριον τούτο.

In Matthew xxvi. 39 this part of the prayer is more like the reading of Justin: “Father, if it be possible let this cup pass from me”—Πάτερ, εἰ δυνατόν ἐστίν, παρελθέτω ἀπ' ἐμοῦ τὸ ποτήριον τούτο· but that Gospel has nothing of the sweat of agony which excludes it from consideration. In another place Justin also quotes the prayer in the Garden as follows: “He prayed, saying: ‘Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me;’ and besides this, praying, he said: ‘Not as I wish, but as thou wiltest.’”<sup>2</sup> The first phrase in this place, apart from some transposition of words, agrees with Matthew; but even if this reading be preferred of the two, the absence of the incident of the sweat of agony from the first Gospel renders it impossible to regard it as the source; and, further, the second part of the prayer which is here

<sup>1</sup> D. ap. Denkw. Just., p. 146.

<sup>2</sup> Dial. 99.

given differs materially both from the first and third Gospels.

MATTH. Nevertheless not as I will but as thou.

LUKE. Nevertheless not my will but thine be done.

JUSTIN. Not as I wish but as thou willest.

MATTH. πλὴν οὐχ ὡς ἐγὼ θέλω ἀλλ' ὡς σὺ.

LUKE. πλὴν μὴ τὸ θέλημα μου ἀλλὰ τὸ σὸν γινέσθω.

JUSTIN. μὴ ὡς ἐγὼ βούλομαι, ἀλλ' ὡς σὺ θέλεις.

The two parts of this prayer, moreover, seem to have been separate in the Memoirs, for not only does Justin not quote the latter portion at all in Dial. 103, but here he markedly divides it from the former. Justin knows nothing of the episode of the Angel who strengthens Jesus, which is related in Luke xxii. 43. There is, however, a still more important point to mention: that although verses 43, 44 with the incidents of the angel and the bloody sweat are certainly in the greater number of MSS., they are omitted by the oldest Codices, as for instance the Sinaitic<sup>1</sup> and Vatican MSS. It is evident that in this part Justin's Memoirs differed from our first and third Gospels much in the same way that they do from each other.

In the same chapter Justin states that when the Jews went out to the Mount of Olives to take Jesus, "there was not even a single man to help him as a guiltless person."<sup>2</sup> This is in direct contradiction with all the Gospels,<sup>3</sup> and Justin not only completely ignores the episode of the ear of Malchus, but in this passage ex-

<sup>1</sup> They are added by a later hand.

<sup>2</sup> Οὐδείς γὰρ οὐδὲ μέχρις ἐνός ἀνθρώπου βοηθεῖν αὐτῷ ὡς ἀναμαρτήτῳ βοηθὸς ὑπήρχε. Dial. 103.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. xxvi. 51 ff.; Mark xiv. 46 ff.; Luke xxii. 49 ff.; John xviii. 10 f.

cludes it, and his Gospel could not have contained it.<sup>1</sup> Luke is specially marked in generalizing the resistance of those about Jesus to his capture. "When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him: Lord, shall we smite with the sword? And a certain one of them smote the servant of the high priest and cut off his right ear."<sup>2</sup> As this episode follows immediately after the incident of the bloody sweat and prayer in the Garden, and the statement of Justin occurs in the very same chapter in which he refers to them, this contradiction further tends to confirm the conclusion that Justin employed a different Gospel.

It is quite in harmony with the same peculiar account that Justin states that, "after he (Jesus) was crucified, all his friends (the Apostles) forsook him, having denied him<sup>3</sup> . . . (who, after he rose from the dead, and after they were convinced by himself that before his passion he had told them that he must suffer these things, and that they were foretold by the prophets, repented of their flight from him when he was crucified), and when living with them he sang praises to God, as is made evident in the Memoirs of the Apostles."<sup>4</sup> Justin, therefore, repeatedly asserts that *after* the crucifixion all the Apostles forsook him, and he extends the denial of Peter

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 228 f.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 232, anm. 1; *Ritschl*, Das Evang. Marcion's, p. 148; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 238 ff.; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 292; cf. *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 39.

<sup>2</sup> Luke xxii. 49, 50.

<sup>3</sup> Μετὰ οὖν τὸ σταυρωθῆναι αὐτὸν, καὶ οἱ γνώριμοι αὐτοῦ πάντες ἀπέστησαν, ἀρνησάμενοι αὐτόν. Apol. i. 50.

<sup>4</sup> (οἱ τινες μετὰ τὸ ἀναστῆναι αὐτὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν, καὶ πεισθῆναι ἐπ' αὐτοῦ, ὅτι καὶ πρὸ τοῦ παθεῖν ἔλεγεν αὐτοῖς, ὅτι ταῦτα αὐτὸν δεῖ παθεῖν, καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν προφητῶν ὅτι προεκεκήρυκτο ταῦτα, μετενόησαν ἐπὶ τῷ ἀφίστασθαι αὐτοῦ ὅτε ἐσταυρώθη), καὶ μετ' αὐτῶν διάγων, ἤμνησε τὸν Θεόν, ὡς καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασι τῶν ἀποστόλων δηλοῦται γεγενημένον, κ.τ.λ. Dial. 106; cf. Apol. i. 50; Dial. 53; do Resurr. 9.

to the whole of the twelve. It is impossible to consider this distinct and reiterated affirmation a mere extension of the passage: "they all forsook him and fled" (*πάντες ἀφέντες αὐτὸν ἔφυγον*),<sup>1</sup> when Jesus was arrested, which proceeded mainly from momentary fear.<sup>2</sup> Justin seems to indicate that the disciples forsook and denied Jesus when they saw him crucified, from doubts which consequently arose as to his Messianic character. Now, on the contrary, the Canonical Gospels represent the disciples as being together after the Crucifixion.<sup>3</sup> Justin knows nothing of the explanation given by the angels at the sepulchre as to Christ's having foretold all that had happened,<sup>4</sup> but makes this proceed from Jesus himself. Indeed, he makes no mention of these angels at all.

There are some traces elsewhere of the view that the disciples were offended after the Crucifixion.<sup>5</sup> Hilgenfeld points out the appearance of special Petrine tendency in this passage, in the fact that it is not Peter alone, but all the Apostles, who are said to deny their master; and he suggests that an indication of the source from which Justin quoted may be obtained from the kindred quotation in the Epistle to the Smyrnæans (iii.) by pseudo-Ignatius: "For I know that also after his resurrection he was in the flesh, and I believe that he is so now. And when he came to those that were with Peter, he said to them: Lay hold, handle me, and see that I am not an incorporeal spirit. And immediately they touched

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxvi. 56; Mark xiv. 50.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 257; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 246 f.

<sup>3</sup> Luke xxiv. 9—12, 33; Mark xvi. 10; John xx. 18, 19; cf. Luke xxxiii. 49.

<sup>4</sup> Luke xxiv. 4—8; Matt. xxviii. 5—7; Mark xvi. 5—7.

<sup>5</sup> In the "Ascensio Isaie," iii. 14, the following passage occurs: "Et ducedecim, qui cum eo, offensionem accipient in eum, et custodes constituentur, qui custodient sepulchrum." *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 246, ann. 2.

him and believed, being convinced both by his flesh and spirit." Jerome, it will be remembered, found this in the Gospel according to the Hebrews used by the Nazarenes, which he translated,<sup>1</sup> from which we have seen that Justin in all probability derived other particulars differing from the Canonical Gospels, and with which we shall constantly meet, in a similar way, in examining Justin's quotations. Origen also found it in a work called the "Doctrine of Peter" (*Διδαχὴ Πέτρου*),<sup>2</sup> which must have been akin to the "Preaching of Peter" (*Κήρυγμα Πέτρου*).<sup>3</sup> Hilgenfeld suggests that, in the absence of more certain information, there is no more probable source from which Justin may have derived his statement than the Gospel according to Peter, or the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which is known to have contained so much in the same spirit.<sup>4</sup>

It may well be expected that, at least in touching such serious matters as the Crucifixion and last words of Jesus, Justin must adhere with care to authentic records, and not fall into the faults of loose quotation from memory, free handling of texts, and careless omissions and additions, by which those who maintain the identity of the Memoirs with the Canonical Gospels seek to explain the systematic variations of Justin's quotations from the text of the latter. It will, however, be found that here also marked discrepancies occur. Justin says, after referring to numerous prophecies regarding the treatment of Christ: "And again, when he says: 'They spake with their lips, they wagged the head, saying: Let him deliver himself.' That all these things happened to

<sup>1</sup> De Vir. Ill., 16.

<sup>2</sup> De Princip. proem.

<sup>3</sup> *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., i. p. 56.

<sup>4</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 248 ff.; cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 265 f.; *Volkmar*, Die Evangelion, p. 631, p. 634.

the Christ from the Jews, you can ascertain. For when he was being crucified they shot out the lip, and wagged their heads, saying: 'Let him who raised the dead deliver himself.'"<sup>1</sup> And in another place, referring to the same Psalm (xxii.) as a prediction of what was to happen to Jesus, Justin says: "For they who saw him crucified also wagged their heads, each one of them, and distorted (*διέστρεφον*) their lips, and screwing (*διερinuῶντες*) their noses one to another, spoke ironically those words which are also written in the Memoirs of his Apostles: He declared himself the Son of God; come down let him walk about; let God save him."<sup>2</sup> In both of these passages Justin directly appeals to written authority. The *μαθεῖν δύνασθε* may leave the source of the first uncertain,<sup>3</sup> but the second is distinctly stated to contain the actual words "written in the Memoirs of his Apostles," and it seems reasonable to suppose that the former passage is also derived from them. It is scarcely necessary to add that both differ very materially from the Canonical Gospels.<sup>4</sup> The taunt

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ πάλιν ὅταν λέγη: Ἐλάλησαν ἐν χεῖλεσιν, ἐκίνησαν κεφαλὴν, λέγοντες ῥυσάσθω ἑαυτὸν. Ἄτινα πάντα γέγονεν ὑπὸ τῶν Ἰουδαίων τῷ Χριστῷ, μαθεῖν δύνασθε. Σταυρωθέντος γὰρ αὐτοῦ, ἐξέστρεφον τὰ χεῖλη, καὶ ἐκίνουν τὰς κεφαλὰς, λέγοντες Ὁ νεκροὺς ἀνεγείρας ῥυσάσθω ἑαυτὸν. *Apol. i. 38.*

<sup>2</sup> Οἱ γὰρ θεωροῦντες αὐτὸν ἐσταυρωμένον καὶ κεφαλὰς ἕκαστος ἐκίνουν, καὶ τὰ χεῖλη διέστρεφον, καὶ τοῖς μυξωτῆρσιν ἐν ἄλλοις διερinuῶντες ἔλεγον εἰρωνευόμενοι ταῦτα ἃ καὶ ἐν τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασι τῶν ἀποστόλων αὐτοῦ γέγραπται. "Υἱὸν Θεοῦ ἑαυτὸν ἔλεγε· καταβάς περιπατεῖτω· σωσάτω αὐτὸν ὁ Θεός." *Dial. 101.*

<sup>3</sup> Some writers consider that this is a reference to the *Acta Pilati* as in *Apol. i. 35.*

<sup>4</sup> Canon Westcott is obliged to admit that in the latter passage Justin does profess to give the exact words recorded in the Memoirs, and that they are not to be found in our Gospels; "but," he apologetically adds, "we do find these others so closely connected with them that few readers would feel the difference!" This is a specimen of apologetic criticism. Dr. Westcott goes on to say that as no MS. or Father known to him has preserved any reading more closely resembling Justin's, "if it appear not to be deducible from our Gospels, due allowance being made for the

contained in the first of these passages is altogether peculiar to Justin: "Let him who raised the dead deliver himself" (*Ὁ νεκροὺς ἀνεγείρας ῥυσάσθω ἑαυτὸν*);<sup>1</sup> and even if Justin did not himself indicate a written source, it would not be reasonable to suppose that he should himself for the first time record words to which he refers as the fulfilment of prophecy.<sup>2</sup> It would be still more absurd to endeavour to remove the difficulty presented by such a variation by attributing the words to tradition, at the same time that it is asserted that Justin's Memoirs were actually identical with the Gospels. No aberration of memory could account for such a variation, and it is impossible that Justin should prefer tradition regarding a form of words, so liable to error and alteration, with written Gospels within his reach. Besides, to argue that Justin affirmed the truth of his statement could be ascertained (*μαθεῖν δύνασθε*), whilst the words which he states to have been spoken were not actually recorded, would be against all reason.

The second of the mocking speeches<sup>3</sup> of the lookeron is referred distinctly to the Memoirs of the Apostles, but is also, with the accompanying description, foreign

object which he had in view, its source must remain concealed." On the Canon, p. 114 f. Cf. Matt. xxvii. 39—43; Mark xv. 29—32; Luke xxiii. 34—37.

<sup>1</sup> The nearest parallel in our Gospels is in Luke xxiii. 35. "He saved others, let him save himself if this man be the Christ of God, his chosen." (*Ἄλλους ἔσωσεν, σωσάτω ἑαυτὸν, κ.τ.λ.*)

<sup>2</sup> Hilgenfeld, *Die Evv.* Justin's, p. 244 f.

<sup>3</sup> Semisch argues that both forms are quotations of the same sentence, and that there is consequently a contradiction in the very quotations themselves; but there can be no doubt whatever that the two phrases are distinct parts of the mockery, and the very same separation and variation occur in each of the Canonical Gospels. *Die ap. Denkw. Märty. Just.*, p. 282; cf. Hilgenfeld, *Die Evv.* Justin's, p. 234.

to our Gospels. The nearest approach to it occurs in our first Gospel, and we subjoin both passages for comparison.

JUSTIN, DIAL. 101.

He declared himself the Son of God; come down let him walk about; let God save him.

Υἱὸν θεοῦ ἑαυτὸν ἔλεγε· καταβάς περιπατεῖτω· σωσάτω αὐτὸν ὁ θεός.

MATT. XXVII. 40, AND 42, 43.

40. Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself; if thou art the Son of God, come down from the cross.

42. He saved others, himself he cannot save. He is the King of Israel; let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe in him.

43. He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him, for he said, I am the Son of God.

42. . . . καταβάτω νῦν ἀπὸ τοῦ σταυροῦ καὶ πιστεύσομεν ἐπ' αὐτόν.

43. πέποιθεν ἐπὶ τὸν θεόν, ῥυσάσθω νῦν αὐτόν<sup>1</sup> εἰ θέλει αὐτόν· εἶπεν γὰρ ὅτι θεοῦ εἰμι υἱός.

It is evident that Justin's version is quite distinct from this, and cannot have been taken from our Gospels,<sup>2</sup> although professedly derived from the Memoirs of the Apostles.

Justin likewise mentions the cry of Jesus on the Cross, "O God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" ("Ὁ θεὸς, ὁ θεός μου, ἵνα τί ἐγκατέλιπές με;")<sup>3</sup> as a fulfilment of the words of the Psalm, which he quotes here, and elsewhere,<sup>4</sup> with the peculiar addition of the Septuagint version, "attend to me" (πρόσχες μοι), which, however, he omits when giving the cry of Jesus, thereby showing that he follows a written source which did not contain it, for the quotation of the Psalm, and of

<sup>1</sup> The Cod. Sin. omits αὐτόν.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 212; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 244; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 295.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. 99.

<sup>4</sup> Dial. 98.

the cry which is cited to show that it refers to Christ, immediately follow each other. He knows nothing whatever of the Chaldaic cry, "Eli, Eli, lama sabacthani" of the Gospels.<sup>1</sup> The first and second Gospels give the words of the cry from the Chaldaic differently from Justin, from the version of the LXX., and from each other. Matthew xxvii. 46, *Θεέ μου, θεέ μου, ἵνα τί με ἔγκατέλιπες*; Mark xv. 34, *Ὁ θεός, ὁ θεός μου, εἰς τί ἔγκατέλιπές με*. The third Gospel knows nothing at all of this cry, but instead has one altogether unknown to the other Gospels: "And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and said: Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said this, he expired." Justin has this cry also, and in the same form as the third Gospel. He says: "For when he (Jesus) was giving up his spirit on the cross, he said: 'Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit,' as I have also learned from the Memoirs."<sup>3</sup> Justin's Gospel, therefore, contained both cries, and as even the first two Synoptics mention a second cry of Jesus<sup>4</sup> without, however, giving the words, it is not surprising that other Gospels should have existed which included both. Even if we had no trace of this cry in any other ancient work, there would be no ground for asserting that Justin must have derived it from the third Gospel, for if there be any historical truth in the statement that these words were actually spoken by Jesus, it follows of course that they may have been and probably were reported in a dozen Christian writings now

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxvii. 46; Mark xv. 34.

<sup>2</sup> *Καὶ φωνήσας φωνῇ μεγάλῃ ὁ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν, Πάτερ, εἰς χεῖράς σου παρατίθειαι τὸ πνεῦμά μου. τοῦτο δὲ εἰπὼν ἐξέπνευσεν.* Luke xxiii. 46.

<sup>3</sup> *Καὶ γὰρ ἀποδιδούς τὸ πνεῦμα ἐπὶ τῷ σταυρῷ, εἶπε, Πάτερ, εἰς χεῖράς σου παρατίθειαι τὸ πνεῦμά μου ὡς καὶ ἐκ τῶν ἀπομνημονευμάτων καὶ τοῦτο ἔμαθον.* Dial. 105.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. xxvii. 50; Mark xv. 37.

no longer extant, and in all probability they existed in some of the "many" works referred to in the prologue to the third Gospel. Both cries, however, are given in the Gospel of Nicodemus, or *Gesta Pilati*, to which reference has already so frequently been made. In the Greek versions edited by Tischendorf we find only the form contained in Luke. In the Codex A, the passage reads: "And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and said: Father, Baddach ephkid rouel, that is, interpreted: 'into thy hands I commend my spirit;' and having said this he gave up the ghost."<sup>1</sup> In the Codex B, the text is: "Then Jesus having called out with a loud voice: 'Father, into thy hands will I commend my spirit,' expired."<sup>2</sup> In the ancient Latin version, however, both cries are given: "And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Hely, Hely, lama zabachthani, which interpreted is: 'My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me.' And after this, Jesus said: 'Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit': and saying this, he gave up the ghost."<sup>3</sup>

One of the Codices of the same apocryphal work likewise gives the taunting speeches of the Jews in a form more nearly approaching that of Justin's Memoirs

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ φωνήσας φωνῇ μεγάλῃ ὁ Ἰησοῦς εἶπεν Πατὴρ, βαδδὰχ ἐφκιδ ρουελ, ὃ ἐρμηνεύεται εἰς χεῖράς σου παρατίθῃμι τὸ πνεῦμά μου. καὶ τοῦτο εἰπὼν παρέδωκε τὸ πνεῦμα. *Evang. Nicod.*, Pars. I. A. sive *Gesta Pilati*, xi.; *Tischendorf*, *Evang. Apocr.*, p. 233; cf. *Thilo*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, p. 590 f.

<sup>2</sup> Ἐπειτα ὁ Ἰησοῦς κράξας φωνῇ μεγάλῃ Πάτερ, εἰς χεῖράς σου παραθήσομαι τὸ πνεῦμά μου, ἀπέπνευσε. *Ev. Nicod.*, Pars. I. B., sive *Acta Pilati B.*, xi.; *Tischendorf*, *Ev. Apocr.*, p. 287.

<sup>3</sup> "Et circa horam nonam exclamavit Jesus voce magnâ dicens: *Hely, Hely, lama zabachthani*, quod est interpretatum: Deus meus, Deus meus, ut quid dereliquisti me? Et post hæc dicit Jesus: Pater in manus tuas commendo spiritum meum. Et hæc dicens emisit spiritum." *Nicod. Ev.*, xi.; *Fabricius*, *Cod. Ap. N. T.*, i. p. 261; cf. *Thilo*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, p. 591 f.

than any found in our Gospels. "And the Jews that stood and looked ridiculed him, and said: If thou saidst truly that thou art the Son of God, come down from the cross, and at once, that we may believe in thee. Others ridiculing, said: He saved others, he helped others, and healed the sick, the paralytic, lepers, demoniacs, the blind, the lame, the dead, and himself he cannot help." <sup>1</sup> The fact that Justin actually refers to certain *Acta Pilati* in connection with the Crucifixion renders this coincidence all the more important. Other texts of this Gospel read: "And the Chief Priests, and the rulers with them, derided him, saying: He saved others, let him save himself; if he is the Son of God, let him come down from the cross." <sup>2</sup>

It is clear from the whole of Justin's treatment of the narrative, that he followed a Gospel adhering more closely than the Canonical to the Psalm xxii., but yet with peculiar variations from it. Our Gospels differ very much from each other; Justin's *Memoirs of the Apostles* in like manner differed from them. It had its characteristic features clearly and sharply defined. In this way his systematic variations are natural and perfectly intelligible, but they become totally inexplicable if it be supposed that, having our Gospels for his source, he thus

<sup>1</sup> Οἱ δὲ Ἰουδαῖοι οἱ ἰστάμενοι καὶ βλέποντες κατεγέλων αὐτὸν καὶ ἔλεγον Ἐὰν ἀληθῶς ἔλεγες ὅτι υἱὸς εἶ τοῦ θεοῦ, κατὰβηθι ἀπὸ τοῦ σταυροῦ, καὶ παρευθὺς ἵνα πιστεῦσωμεν εἰς σέ. ἕτεροι ἔλεγον καταγελῶντες Ἄλλους ἔσωσεν, ἄλλους ἰεθεράπευσεν, καὶ ἰάσατο ἀσθενεῖς, παραλελυμένους, λεπρούς, διμμοιζομένους, τυφλοὺς, χωλοὺς, νεκρωμένους, καὶ ἑαυτὸν οὐ δύναται θεραπεῦσαι. *Evang. Nicod.*, Pars. I. B., σίβε *Acta Pilati*, B. X.; *Tischendorf*, *Ev. Apocr.*, p. 286.

<sup>2</sup> *Ev. Nicod.*, Pars. I. A. X.; *Tischendorf*, *Ev. Apocr.*, p. 232; cf. *Thilo*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, p. 584; *Fabricius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 259; *Tischendorf*, *ib.*, p. 340. There are differences between all these texts—indeed there are scarcely two MSS. which agree—clearly indicating that we have now nothing but corrupt versions of a more ancient text.

persistently and in so arbitrary a way ignored, modified, or contradicted their statements.

Upon two occasions Justin distinctly states that the Jews sent persons throughout the world to spread calumnies against Christians. "When you knew that he had risen from the dead, and ascended into heaven, as the prophets had foretold, not only did you (the Jews) not repent of the wickedness which you had committed, but at that time you selected and sent forth from Jerusalem throughout the land chosen men, saying that the atheistic heresy of the Christians had arisen," &c.<sup>1</sup> . . . . "from a certain Jesus, a Galilæan impostor, whom we crucified, but his disciples stole him by night from the tomb where he had been laid when he was unloosed from the cross, and they now deceive men, saying that he has risen from the dead and ascended into heaven."<sup>2</sup> This circumstance is not mentioned by our Gospels, but reiterated twice by Justin in almost the same words, it was in all probability contained in the Memoirs. Eusebius quotes the passage from Justin, without comment, evidently on account of the information which it conveyed.

These instances, which, although far from complete, have already occupied too much of our space, show that Justin quotes from the Memoirs of the Apostles many statements and facts of Gospel history which are not only foreign to our Gospels, but in some cases contradictory to them, whilst the narrative of the most solemn events in the life of Jesus presents distinct and systematic variations from parallel passages in the Synoptic records.

<sup>1</sup> Dial. 17.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 108. This passage commences with statements to the same effect as the preceding.

It will now be necessary to compare his general quotations from the same Memoirs with the Canonical Gospels, and here a very wide field opens before us. As we have already stated, Justin's works teem with these quotations, and to take them all in detail would be impossible within the limits of this work. Such a course, moreover, is unnecessary. It may be broadly stated that even those who maintain the use of the Canonical Gospels can only point out two or three passages out of this vast array which verbally agree with them.<sup>1</sup> This extraordinary anomaly—on the supposition that Justin's Memoirs were in fact our Gospels—is, as we have mentioned, explained by the convenient hypothesis that Justin quotes imperfectly from memory, interweaves and modifies texts, and in short freely manipulates these Gospels according to his argument. Even strained to the uttermost, however, could this be accepted as a reasonable explanation of such systematic variation, that only twice or thrice out of the vast number of his quotations does he literally agree with passages in them? In order to illustrate the case with absolute impartiality we shall first take the instances brought forward as showing agreement with our Synoptic Gospels.

Tischendorf only cites two passages in support of his affirmation that Justin makes use of our first Gospel.<sup>2</sup> It might be supposed that, in selecting these, at least two might have been produced literally agreeing, but this is not the case, and this may be taken as an illustration of the almost universal variation of Justin's quotations.

<sup>1</sup> *De Wette*, *Lehrb. Einl. N. T.*, p. 104 f.; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 34 f., p. 89; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 106, f.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 222 f.; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 229; *Semisch*, *Die ap. Denkw. M. Just.*, p. 140 f.; *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 56; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 252 ff., p. 255.

<sup>2</sup> *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 27, anm. 2.

The first of Tischendorf's examples is the supposed use of Matthew viii. 11, 12 : " Many shall come from the east and from the west, and shall sit down," &c. &c. (Πολλοὶ ἀπὸ ἀνατολῶν καὶ δυσμῶν ἤξουσιν, κ.τ.λ.). Now this passage is repeated by Justin no less than three times in three very distinct parts of his Dialogue with Trypho,<sup>1</sup> but each time with a uniform variation from the text of Matthew—*They* shall come from the *west* and from the east," &c. &c. (Ἡξουσιν ἀπὸ δυσμῶν καὶ ἀνατολῶν, κ.τ.λ.)<sup>2</sup> That a historical saying of Jesus should be reproduced in many Gospels, and that no particular work can have any prescriptive right to it, must be admitted, so that even if the passage in Justin agreed literally with our first Synoptic, it would not afford any proof of the actual use of that Gospel; but when on the contrary Justin upon three several occasions, and at distinct intervals of time, repeats the passage with the same persistent variations from the reading in Matthew, not only can it not be ascribed to that Gospel, but there is absolute reason to conclude that Justin derived it from another source. It may be added that πολλοὶ is anything but a word uncommon in the vocabulary of Justin, and that elsewhere, for instance, he twice quotes a passage similar to one in Matthew, in which, amongst other variations, he reads "*Many* shall come (πολλοὶ ἤξουσιν)," instead of the phrase found in that Gospel.<sup>3</sup>

The second example adduced by Tischendorf is the

<sup>1</sup> Dial. 76, 120, 140.

<sup>2</sup> In some MSS., Dial. 76 omits "from the west" altogether, and it has elsewhere been reinserted to accord with the Synoptic—but there can be no doubt that the omission originally gave the opportunity for adjusting the text of some MSS. according to orthodox views, and that in all three places the reading of Justin was the same.

<sup>3</sup> Apol. i. 16, Dial. 35; cf. Matt. vii. 15.

supposed quotation of Matthew xii. 39 ; but in order fully to comprehend the nature of the affirmation, we quote the context of the Gospel and of Justin in parallel columns—

## JUSTIN. DIAL. 107.

And that he should rise again on the third day after the crucifixion, it is written in the Memoirs that some of your nation questioning him said: 'Show us a sign;' and he answered them: 'An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given to them (αὐτοῖς) but the sign of Jonah (Ἰωνᾶ).'

Καὶ ὅτι τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ ἐμελλεν ἀναστήσεσθαι μετὰ τὸ σταυρωθῆναι, γέγραπται ἐν τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασιν, ὅτι οἱ ἀπὸ τοῦ γένους ἡμῶν συζητοῦντες αὐτῷ ἔλεγον, ὅτι, "Δείξον ἡμῖν σημεῖον." καὶ ἀπεκρίνατο αὐτοῖς, Γενεὰ πονηρὰ, κ.τ.λ.

## MATTHEW XII. 38, 39.

38. Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered him, saying: Master, we would see a sign from thee.

39. But he answered and said unto them: An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given to it (αὐτῇ), but the sign of the prophet Jonah (Ἰωνᾶ τοῦ προφήτου).

Τότε ἀπεκρίθησαν αὐτῷ τινὲς τῶν γραμματέων καὶ Φαρισαίων λέγοντες, "Διδάσκαλε, θέλομεν ἀπὸ σοῦ σημεῖον ἰδεῖν." ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς, Γενεὰ πονηρὰ, κ.τ.λ.

Now it is clear that Justin here directly professes to quote from the Memoirs, and consequently that accuracy may be expected; but passing over the preliminary substitution of "some of your nation," for "certain of the scribes and Pharisees," although it recalls the "some of them," and "others," by which the parallel passage, otherwise so different, is introduced in Luke xi. 15, 16, 29 ff.,<sup>1</sup> the question of the Jews, which should be literal, is quite different from that of the first Gospel, whilst there are variations in the reply of Jesus, which, if not so important, are still undeniable. We cannot compare with the first Gospel the parallel passages in the second and third Gospels without recognizing that other works may have narrated the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Mark viii. 11.

same episode with similar variations, and whilst the distinct differences which exist totally exclude the affirmation that Justin quotes from Matthew, everything points to the conclusion that he makes use of another source. This is confirmed by another important circumstance. After enlarging during the remainder of the chapter upon the example of the people of Nineveh, Justin commences the next by returning to the answer of Jesus, and making the following statement: "And though all of your nation were acquainted with these things which occurred to Jonah, and Christ proclaimed among you, that he would give you the sign of Jonah, exhorting you at least after his resurrection from the dead to repent of your evil deeds, and like the Ninevites to supplicate God, that your nation and city might not be captured and destroyed; yet not only have you not repented on learning his resurrection from the dead, but as I have already said,<sup>1</sup> you sent chosen<sup>2</sup> and select men throughout all the world, proclaiming that an atheistic and impious heresy had arisen from a certain Jesus, a Galilæan impostor," &c. &c.<sup>3</sup> Now not only do our Gospels not mention this mission, as we have already pointed out, but they do not contain the exhortation to repent at least after the resurrection of Jesus here referred to, and which evidently must have formed part of the episode in the Memoirs.

Tischendorf does not produce any other instances of supposed quotations of Justin from Matthew, but rests his case upon these. As these are the best examples apparently which he can point out, we may judge of the

<sup>1</sup> Dial. 17. The passage quoted above, p. 345.

<sup>2</sup> χειροτονήσαντες. Literally, "elected by a show of hands,"—by vote.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. 108.

weakness of his argument. De Wette divides the quotations of Justin which may be compared with our first and third Gospels into several categories. Regarding the first class, he says: "Some agree quite literally, which, however, is seldom:"<sup>1</sup> and under this head he can only collect three passages of Matthew and refer to one of Luke. Of the three from Matthew the first is that, viii. 11, 12,<sup>2</sup> also brought forward by Tischendorf, of which we have already disposed. The second is Matt. v. 20: "For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed that of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven." A parallel passage to this exists in Dial. 105, a chapter in which there are several quotations not found in our Gospels at all, with the exception that the first words, "For I say unto you that," are not in Justin. We shall speak of this passage presently. De Wette's third passage is Matt. vii. 19: "Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire," which, with the exception of one word, "but," at the commencement of the sentence in Justin, also agrees with his quotation.<sup>3</sup> In these two short passages there are no peculiarities specially pointing to the first Gospel as their source, and it cannot be too often repeated that the mere coincidence of short historical sayings in two works by no means warrants the conclusion that the one is dependent on the other. In order, however, to enable the reader to form a correct estimate of the value of the similarity of the two passages above noted, and also at the same time to examine a considerable body of evidence, selected with

<sup>1</sup> *Mancho stimmen ganz wörtlich überein, was aber selten ist. De Wette, Lehrb. Einl. N. T., p. 104.*

<sup>2</sup> Dial. 76, 120, 140; cf. p. 347.

<sup>3</sup> Apol. i. 16.

evident impartiality, we propose to take all Justin's readings of the Sermon on the Mount, from which the above passages are taken, and compare them with our Gospels. This should furnish a fair test of the composition of the Memoirs of the Apostles.

Taking first, for the sake of continuity, the first Apology, we find that Chapters xv., xvi., xvii., are composed almost entirely of examples of what Jesus himself taught, introduced by the remark with which Chapter xiv. closes, that: "Brief and concise sentences were uttered by him, for he was not a sophist, but his word was the power of God."<sup>1</sup> It may broadly be affirmed that, with the exception of the few words quoted above by De Wette, not a single quotation of the words of Jesus in these three chapters agrees with the Canonical Gospels. We shall however confine ourselves at present to the Sermon on the Mount. We must mention that Justin's text is quite continuous, except where we have inserted stars. We subjoin Justin's quotations, together with the parallel passages in our Gospels, side by side, for greater facility of comparison.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Βραχείς δὲ καὶ σύντομοι παρ' αὐτοῦ λόγοι γεγόνασιν. Οὐ γὰρ σοφιστὴς ὑπῆρχεν, ἀλλὰ δύναμις Θεοῦ ὁ λόγος αὐτοῦ ἦν. Apol. i. 14. How completely this description contradicts the representation of the fourth Gospel of the discourses of Jesus. It seems clearly to indicate that Justin had no knowledge of that Gospel.

<sup>2</sup> It need not be said that the variations between the quotations of Justin and the text of our Gospels must be looked for only in the Greek. For the sake of the reader unacquainted with Greek, however, we shall endeavour as far as possible to indicate in translation where differences exist, although this cannot of course be fully done, nor often, without being more literal than is desirable. Where it is not necessary to amend the authorized version of the New Testament for the sake of more closely following the text, and marking differences from Justin, we shall adopt it. We divide the quotations where desirable by initial letters, in order to assist reference at the end of our quotations from the Sermon on the Mount.

## JUSTIN.

a. Apol., i. 15. He (Jesus) spoke thus of chastity: Whosoever may have gazed on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery already in the heart before God.

β. And, if thy right eye offend thee cut it out, for it is profitable for thee to enter into the kingdom of heaven with one eye (rather) than having two to be thrust into the everlasting fire.

a. Περὶ μὲν οὖν σωφροσύνης τοσοῦτον εἶπεν· Ὅς ἂν ἐμβλέψῃ γυναικὶ πρὸς τὸ ἐπιθυμῆσαι αὐτῆς ἢδη ἐμοίχευσε τῇ καρδίᾳ παρὰ τῷ Θεῷ.

β. Καὶ·<sup>3</sup> Εἰ δὲ ὀφθαλμός σου ὁ δεξιὸς σκανδαλίζει σε, ἔκκοψον αὐτόν·

συμφέρει γάρ σοι μονόφθαλμον εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν, ἢ μετὰ τῶν δύο πεμφθῆναι εἰς τὸ αἰώνιον πῦρ.

## GOSPEL.

Matt. v. 28. But I say unto you, that everyone that looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

29. But if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

<sup>1</sup> Ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι πᾶς ὁ βλέπων.<sup>1</sup> γυναῖκα πρὸς τὸ ἐπιθυμῆσαι αὐτὴν ἢδη ἐμοίχευσεν αὐτὴν ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτοῦ.

Εἰ δὲ ὁ ὀφθαλμός σου ὁ δεξιὸς σκανδαλίζει σε, ἔξελε<sup>2</sup> αὐτόν καὶ βάλε ἀπὸ σοῦ· συμφέρει γάρ σοι ἵνα ἀποληθῇ ἐν τῶν μελῶν σου, κ.τ.λ.; cf. Matt. xviii. 9<sup>4</sup>. . . . καλὸν σοὶ ἐστὶν μονόφθαλμον εἰς τὴν ζωὴν εἰσελθεῖν, ἢ δύο ὀφθαλμοὺς ἔχοντα βληθῆναι εἰς τὴν γέενναν τοῦ πυρός.

<sup>1</sup> Origen repeatedly uses ὁς ἂν ἐμβλέψῃ, and only once πᾶς ὁ βλέπων. *Griesbach*, *Symb. Criticæ*, 1785, ii. p. 251.

<sup>2</sup> *Clem. Al.* reads ἔκκοψον like Justin. *Griesbach*, *ib.*, ii. p. 252.

<sup>3</sup> The "καὶ" here forms no part of the quotation, and seems to separate the two passages, which were, therefore, probably distinct in Justin's *Memoirs*, although consecutive verses in *Matthew*.

<sup>4</sup> *Matt.* v. 29, 30, it will be remembered, are repeated with some variation and also reversed in order, and with a totally different context, *Matt.* xviii. 8, 9. The latter verse, the Greek of the concluding part of which we give above, approximates more nearly in form to Justin's, but is still widely different. "And if thine eye ('right' omitted) offend thee pluck it out and cast it from thee; it is good for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire." The sequence of *Matt.* v. 28, 29, points specially to it. The double occurrence of this passage, however, with a different context, and with the order reversed in *Matthew*, renders it almost certain that the two passages a. and β. were separate in the *Memoirs*. The reading of *Mark* ix. 47, is equally distinct from Justin's: And if thine eye offend thee cast it out (*ἔκβαλε αὐτόν*); it is good for thee (*καλὸν ἐστὶν σε*) to enter into the kingdom of God (*τοῦ θεοῦ*) with one eye rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell. (*ἢ δύο ὀφθαλμοὺς ἔχοντα βληθῆναι εἰς γέενναν*.)

## JUSTIN.

γ. And, Whoever marrieth a woman divorced from another man committeth adultery.

Καὶ. Ὅς γαμῆ ἀπολελυμένη ἀφ' ἑτέρου ἀνδρός, μοιχᾶται.

\* \* \* \*

δ. And regarding our affection for all, he taught thus :

If ye love them which love you what new thing do ye; for even the fornicators do this; but I say unto you: Pray for your enemies and love them which hate you, and bless them which curse you, and offer prayer for them which despitefully use you.

Περὶ δὲ τοῦ στέργειν ἅπαντας, ταῦτα ἐδίδαξεν· Εἰ ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς ἀγαπῶντας ὑμᾶς, τί καινὸν ποιεῖτε; καὶ γὰρ οἱ πόρνοι τοῦτο ποιοῦσιν. Ἐγὼ δὲ ὑμῖν λέγω· Εὐχεσθε ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐχθρῶν ὑμῶν καὶ ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς μισοῦντας ὑμᾶς, καὶ εὐλογεῖτε τοὺς καταρωμένους ὑμῖν, καὶ εὐχεσθε ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐπηρεάζοντων ὑμᾶς.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Matt. xix. 9, Luke xvi. 18. The words ἀφ' ἑτέρου ἀνδρός are peculiar to Justin. The passage in Luke has ἀπὸ ἀνδρός, but differs in the rest.

<sup>2</sup> It will be observed that here again Justin's Gospel reverses the order in which the parallel passage is found in our Synoptics. It does so indeed with a clearness of design which, even without the actual peculiarities of diction and construction, would indicate a special and different source. The passage varies throughout from our Gospels, but Justin repeats the same phrases in the same order elsewhere. In Dial. 133, he says: "While we all pray for you, and for all men as our Christ and Lord taught us to do, enjoining us even to pray for our enemies, and to love them that hate us, and to bless them that curse us," (εὐχεσθαι καὶ ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐχθρῶν, καὶ ἀγαπᾶν τοὺς μισοῦντας, καὶ εὐλογεῖν τοὺς καταρωμένους). And again in Apol. i. 14, he uses the expression that Christians pray for their enemies (ὑπὲρ τῶν ἐχθρῶν εὐχόμενοι) according to the precepts of Christ. The variation is therefore not accidental, but from a different text.

<sup>3</sup> The two passages within brackets are not found in any of the oldest MSS., and are only supported by Codices D, E, and a few obscure texts. All modern critics reject them.

<sup>4</sup> The parallel passage in Luke vi. 32, 27, 28, presents similar variations from Matt., though not so great as those of Justin from them both.

## GOSPEL.

Matt. v. 32. And whosoever shall marry a woman divorced committeth adultery.

. . . καὶ ὅς ἐάν ἀπολελυμένη γαμήσῃ, μοιχᾶται.<sup>1</sup>

Matt. v. 46.

For if ye should love them which love you what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? v. 44.<sup>2</sup> But I say unto you: Love your enemies<sup>3</sup> (bless them which curse you, do good to them which hate you), and pray for them which (despitefully use you and) persecute you.<sup>4</sup>

v. 46.

Ἐὰν γὰρ ἀγαπήσῃτε τοὺς ἀγαπῶντας ὑμᾶς, τίνα μισθὸν ἔχετε; οὐχὶ καὶ οἱ τελῶναι οὕτως ποιοῦσιν;

v. 44. Ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν, ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς ἐχθροὺς ὑμῶν (εὐλογεῖτε τοὺς καταρωμένους ὑμῖν, καλῶς ποιεῖτε τοῖς μισοῦσιν ὑμᾶς, καὶ προσεύχεσθε ὑπὲρ τῶν<sup>3</sup> (ἐπηρεάζοντων καὶ) διωκόντων ὑμᾶς.

## JUSTIN.

ε. And that we should communicate to the needy and do nothing for praise, he said thus :

Give ye to every one that asketh, and from him that desireth to borrow turn not ye away ; for if ye

lend to them from whom ye hope to receive, what new thing do ye ? for even the publicans do this.

But ye, lay not up for yourselves upon the earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt and robbers break through, but lay up for yourselves in the heavens, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt.

For what is a man profited if he shall gain the whole world, but destroy his soul ? or what shall he give in exchange for it ? Lay up, therefore, in the heavens, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt.<sup>2</sup>

Εἰς δὲ τὸ κοινωνεῖν τοῖς δεομένοις, καὶ μηδὲν πρὸς δόξαν ποιεῖν, ταῦτα ἔφη.

Παντὶ τῷ αἰτοῦντι δίδοτε, καὶ τὸν βουλόμενον δανείσασθαι, μὴ ἀποστραφῆτε.

εἰ γὰρ δανείζετε παρ' ὧν ἐλπίζετε λαβεῖν, τί καινὸν ποιεῖτε ; τοῦτο καὶ οἱ τελῶναι ποιοῦσιν.

## GOSPEL.

Matt. v. 42.

Give thou to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.<sup>1</sup>

Cf. Luke vi. 34.

And if ye lend to them from whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye ; for sinners lend, &c. &c.

Matt. vi. 19.

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal ;

vi. 20. But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal.

Matt. xvi. 26. For what shall a man be profited if he shall gain the whole world, but lose his soul ? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul ?

Matt. v. 42.

Τῷ αἰτοῦντί σε δός, καὶ τὸν θέλοντα ἀπὸ σοῦ δανείσασθαι, μὴ ἀποστραφῆς.

Cf. Luke vi. 34.

Καὶ εἰν δανίζετε παρ' ὧν ἐλπίζετε λαβεῖν, ποία ὑμῖν χάρις ἔστίν ; καὶ ἁμαρτωλοὶ ἁμαρτωλοῖς δανίζουσιν, κ.τ.λ.

<sup>1</sup> In the first Gospel the subject breaks off at the end of v. 42. v. 46 may be compared with Justin's continuation, but it is fundamentally different. The parallel passages in Luke vi. 30, 34, present still greater variations. We have given vi. 34 above, as nearer Justin than Matt. v. 46. It will be remarked that to find a parallel for Justin's continuation, without break, of the subject, we must jump from Matt. v. 42, 46, to vi. 19, 20.

<sup>2</sup> See next page, note <sup>1</sup>.

## JUSTIN.

‘Υμεῖς δὲ μὴ θησαυρίζετε ἑαυτοῖς ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, ὅπου σῆς καὶ βρώσις ἀφανίζει, καὶ ληστὰὶ διορύσσουσιν·

θησαυρίζετε δὲ ἑαυτοῖς ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, ὅπου οὔτε σῆς οὔτε βρώσις ἀφανίζει.

Τί γὰρ ὠφελείται ἄνθρωπος, ἂν τὸν κόσμον ὅλον κερδήσῃ, τὴν δὲ ψυχὴν, αὐτοῦ ἀπολέσῃ; ἢ τί δώσει αὐτῆς ἀτάλλαγμα;

θησαυρίζετε οὖν ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, ὅπου οὔτε σῆς οὔτε βρώσις ἀφανίζει.<sup>1</sup>

ζ. And: Be ye kind and merciful as your Father also is kind and merciful, and maketh his sun to rise on sinners, and just and evil.<sup>4</sup>

## GOSPEL.

## Matt. vi. 19.

Μὴ θησαυρίζετε ὑμῖν θησαυροὺς ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, ὅπου σῆς καὶ βρώσις ἀφανίζει, καὶ ὅπου κλέπται διορύσσουσιν καὶ κλέπτουσιν·

vi. 20. θησαυρίζετε δὲ ὑμῖν θησαυροὺς ἐν οὐρανῷ, ὅπου οὔτε σῆς οὔτε βρώσις ἀφανίζει, καὶ ὅπου κλέπται οὐ διορύσσουσιν οὐδὲ κλέπτουσιν.

xvi. 26. Τί γὰρ ὠφελθήσεται ἄνθρωπος, εἰὰν τὸν κόσμον ὅλον κερδήσῃ, τὴν δὲ ψυχὴν αὐτοῦ ζημωθῆ; ἢ τί δώσει ἄνθρωπος ἀτάλλαγμα τῆς ψυχῆς αὐτοῦ;

Luke vi. 36.<sup>2</sup> Be ye merciful even as your Father also is merciful. Matt. v. 45.<sup>3</sup> . . . for he maketh his sun to rise on evil and good and sendeth rain on just and unjust.

<sup>1</sup> This phrase, it will be observed, is also introduced higher up in the passage, and its repetition in such a manner, with the same variations, emphatically demonstrates the unity of the whole quotation.

<sup>2</sup> There is no parallel to this in the first Gospel. Matt. v. 48, is too remote in sense as well as language.

<sup>3</sup> The first part of v. 45 is quite different from the context in Justin: “That ye may be sons of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh, &c., &c.”

<sup>4</sup> This passage (ζ) is repeated with the peculiar *χρηστοὶ καὶ οἰκτ.* twice in Dial. 96, and in connection with the same concluding words, which are quite separate in our Synoptics. In that place, however, in paraphrasing and not quoting, he adds, “and sending rain on holy and evil.” Critics conjecture with much probability that the words *καὶ βρέχει ἐπὶ ὁσίοις* have been omitted above after *δικαίοις*, by a mistake either of the transcriber or of Justin. In the *Clementine Homilies* (iii. 57) a similar combination to that of Justin’s occurs together with a duplication recalling that of Justin, although *ἀγαθοὶ* is substituted for *χρηστοὶ*. *Γίνεσθε ἀγαθοὶ καὶ οἰκτιρμονες ὡς ὁ πατὴρ ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς ὅς ἀνατέλλει τὸν ἥλιον ἐπ’ ἀγαθοῖς, κ.τ.λ.* *Ephraïm* also twice makes use of a similar combination, although with variations in language, cf. Hær. lxvi. 22, xxxiii. 10. Origen likewise combines Matt. v. 48 and 45; cf. *de Princip.*, ii. 4, § 1. These instances confirm the indication of an ancient connection of the passage as quoted by Justin.

## JUSTIN.

But be not careful what ye shall eat and what ye shall put on.

Are ye not better than the birds and the beasts? And God feedeth them.

Therefore be not careful what ye shall eat, or what ye shall put on,

for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of these things, but seek ye the kingdom of the heavens, and all these things shall be added unto you,

for where the treasure is there is also the mind of the man.

Καὶ, Γίνεσθε δὲ χρηστοὶ καὶ οἰκτίρμονες, ὡς καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν χρηστός ἐστι καὶ οἰκτίρμων,

καὶ τὸν ἥλιον αὐτοῦ ἀνατέλλει ἐπὶ ἁμαρτωλοῦς καὶ δικαίους καὶ πονηροῦς.

Μὴ μεριμνᾶτε δὲ τί φάγητε, ἢ τί ἐνδύσησθε·

οὐχ ὑμεῖς τῶν πετεινῶν καὶ τῶν θηρίων διαφέρετε; καὶ ὁ θεὸς τρέφει αὐτά.

## GOSPEL.

Matt. vi. 25.

Therefore I say unto you, Be not careful for your life what ye shall eat and what ye shall drink, nor yet for your body what ye shall put on. . . .

vi. 26. Behold the birds of the air that they sow not, &c., &c., yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?

vi. 31.<sup>1</sup> Therefore be not careful, saying what shall we eat? or what shall we drink, or with what shall we be clothed?

vi. 32. For after all these things do the Gentiles seek: for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye need all these things.

vi. 33. But seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you.

vi. 21.<sup>2</sup> For where thy treasure is there will thy heart be also.

Luke vi. 36. Γίνεσθε οὖν οἰκτίρμονες, καθὼς καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν οἰκτίρμων ἐστίν.

Matt. v. 45. . . . ὅτι τὸν ἥλιον αὐτοῦ ἀνατέλλει ἐπὶ πονηροῦς καὶ ἀγαθοῦς καὶ βρέχει ἐπὶ δικαίους καὶ ἀδίκους.<sup>3</sup>

Matt. vi. 25.

Διὰ τοῦτο λέγω ὑμῖν, μὴ μεριμνᾶτε τῇ ψυχῇ ὑμῶν τί φάγητε καὶ τί πίητε,<sup>4</sup> μηδὲ τῷ σώματι ὑμῶν τί ἐνδύσησθε . . .

vi. 26. Ἐμβλέψατε εἰς τὰ πετεινὰ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ, κ.τ.λ. καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν ὁ οὐράνιος τρέφει αὐτά· οὐχ ὑμεῖς μᾶλλον διαφέρετε αὐτῶν;

<sup>1</sup> There is a complete break here in the continuity of the parallel passage.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Luke xii. 22—34, which, however, is equally distinct from Justin's text. The difference of order will not have escaped notice.

<sup>3</sup> In the Cod. Sinaiticus the last six words are omitted, but added by another hand.

<sup>4</sup> The Cod. Sinaiticus omits καὶ τί πίητε. Codices A, C, and D are defective at the part. Cod. B and most other MSS. have the words.

## JUSTIN.

Μὴ οὖν μεριμνήσητε τί φάγητε,

ἢ τί ἐνδύσησθε.

οἶδε γὰρ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν ὁ οὐράνιος,  
ὅτι τούτων χρείαν ἔχετε·

ζητεῖτε δὲ τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν,

καὶ ταῦτα πάντα προστεθήσεται ὑμῖν.

“Ὅπου γὰρ ὁ θησαυρὸς ἐστίν, ἐκεῖ καὶ  
ὁ νοῦς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου.

η. And: Do not these things to be seen of men, otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.

καὶ.

Μὴ ποιῆτε ταῦτα πρὸς τὸ θεαθῆναι ὑπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων· εἰ δὲ μή γε, μισθὸν οὐκ ἔχετε παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς ὑμῶν τοῦ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς.

Apol. i. 16.

θ. And regarding our being patient under injuries, and ready to help all, and free from anger, this is what he said: Unto him striking thy cheek offer the other also; and him who carrieth off thy cloak or thy coat do not thou prevent.

But whosoever shall be angry is in danger of the fire.

## GOSPEL.

vi. 31. μὴ οὖν μεριμνήσητε λέγοντες Τί φάγωμεν ἢ τί πῖωμεν ἢ τί περιβαλώμεθα;

vi. 32. πάντα γὰρ ταῦτα τὰ ἔθνη ἐπιζητοῦσιν· οἶδεν γὰρ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν ὁ οὐράνιος, ὅτι χρῆζετε τούτων ἀπάντων.

vi. 33. ζητεῖτε δὲ πρῶτον τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τὴν δικαιοσύνην αὐτοῦ, καὶ ταῦτα πάντα προστεθήσεται ὑμῖν.

vi. 21. “Ὅπου γὰρ ἐστίν ὁ θησαυρὸς σου, ἐκεῖ ἔσται καὶ ἡ καρδιά σου.

Matt. vi. 1.

But take heed that ye do not your righteousness before men to be seen of them, otherwise ye have no reward from your Father which is in heaven.

vi. 1. Προσέχετε δὲ τὴν δικαιοσύνην ὑμῶν μὴ ποιεῖν ἔμπροσθεν τῶν ἀνθρώπων πρὸς τὸ θεαθῆναι αὐτοῖς· εἰ δὲ μή γε, μισθὸν οὐκ ἔχετε παρὰ τῷ πατρὶ ὑμῶν τῷ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς.

Matt. v. 39.

But I say unto you that ye resist not evil,<sup>2</sup> but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek turn to him the other also.

v. 40. And to him who would sue thee at law and take away thy coat let him have thy cloak also.

v. 22.<sup>3</sup> But I say unto you that every one who is angry with his brother shall be in danger of the judgment, &c. &c.

<sup>1</sup> A few MSS. read “alms,” ἐλεημοσύνην, here, but the Cod. Sin. Vat., and all the older Codices have the reading of the text which is adopted by all modern editors.

<sup>2</sup> It is apparent that if Justin could have quoted this phrase it would have suited him perfectly.

<sup>3</sup> That part of Matt. v. 22 intrudes itself between parallels found in v. 40 and 41, will not have been overlooked.

## JUSTIN.

But every one who compelleth thee to go a mile, follow twain.

And let your good works shine before men so that, perceiving, they may adore your Father which is in heaven.

Τῷ τύπτοντί σου τὴν σιαγόνα, πάρεχε καὶ τὴν ἄλλην·  
καὶ τὸν αἰροντά σου τὸν χιτῶνα, ἢ τὸ ἱμάτιον, μὴ κωλύσης.

\* Ὅς δ' ἂν ὀργισθῆ, ἔνοχος ἔστιν εἰς τὸ πῦρ.

Παντὶ δὲ ἀγγαρεύοντί σοι μίλιον ἔν, ἀκαλούθησον δύο.

Λαμψάτω δὲ ὑμῶν τὰ καλὰ ἔργα<sup>3</sup> ἔμπροσθεν τῶν ἀνθρώπων, ἵνα βλέποντες,

θαυμάζωσι τὸν πατέρα ὑμῶν τὸν ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς.

i. And regarding our not swearing at all, but ever speaking the truth, he thus taught:

Ye may not swear at all, but let your yea be yea, and your nay nay, for what is more than these (i.e.) of the evil one.

<sup>1</sup> The parallel passage, Luke vi, 29, is closer to Justin's, but still presents distinct variations: "Unto him smiting thee on the cheek offer the other also, and from him that carrieth off thy coat do not thou withhold (μὴ κωλύσης) thy cloak also." Τῷ τύπτοντί σε ἐπὶ τὴν σιαγόνα, πάρεχε καὶ τὴν ἄλλην, καὶ ἀπὸ τοῦ αἰροντός σου τὸ ἱμάτιον καὶ τὸν χιτῶνα μὴ κωλύσης. The whole context however excludes Luke; cf. *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 272.

<sup>2</sup> εἰκῆ being omitted from Cod. Sin. Vat., and other important MSS. we do not insert it.

<sup>3</sup> Clement of Alexandria has in one place λαμψ. σου τὰ ἔργα and again τὰ ἀγαθὰ ὑμῶν ἔργα λαμψάτω. Cf. *Griesbach*, Symb. Crit., ii. p. 250.

## GOSPEL.

v. 41. And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

v. 16. Even so let your light shine before men that they may see your good works and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Matt. v. 39.<sup>1</sup>

Ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν μὴ ἀντιστῆναι τῷ ποιητῷ· ἀλλ' ὅστις σε ῥαπίσει ἐπὶ τὴν δεξιάν σου σιαγόνα, στρέψον αὐτῷ καὶ τὴν ἄλλην·

v. 40. καὶ τῷ θέλοντί σοι κριθῆναι καὶ τὸν χιτῶνά σου λαβεῖν, ἄφες αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ ἱμάτιον·

v. 22. Ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι πᾶς ὁ ὀργιζόμενος τῷ ἀδελφῷ αὐτοῦ<sup>2</sup> ἔνοχος ἔσται τῇ κρίσει· κ.τ.λ.

v. 41. Καὶ ὅστις σε ἀγγαρεύσει μίλιον ἔν, ὑπάγε μετ' αὐτοῦ δύο.

v. 16. Οὕτως λαμψάτω τὸ φῶς ὑμῶν ἔμπροσθεν τῶν ἀνθρώπων, ὥπως ἴδωσιν ὑμῶν τὰ καλὰ ἔργα καὶ δοξάσωσιν τὸν πατέρα ὑμῶν τὸν ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς.

Matt. v. 34.

But I say unto you swear not at all, neither by heaven, &c., &c.

v. 37. But let your speech be yea yea, nay nay, for what is more than these is of the evil one.

## JUSTIN.

Περὶ δὲ τοῦ μὴ ὁμνῆσαι ὄλωσ, τὰληθῆ  
δὲ λέγειν αἰὶ, οὕτως παρεκελεύσατο·  
Μὴ ὁμώσητε ὄλωσ·

ἔστω δὲ ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναί· καὶ τὸ οὐ  
οὐ.<sup>1</sup> τὸ δὲ περισσὸν τούτων ἐκ τοῦ  
πονηροῦ.

\* \* \* \*

κ. For not those who merely  
make profession but those who do  
the work, as he said, shall be  
saved. For he spake thus:

κ 1. Not every one that saith  
unto me, Lord, Lord, shall, &c., &c.

κ 2. For whosoever heareth me  
and doeth what I say, heareth him  
that sent me.

κ 3. But many will say to me:  
Lord, Lord, have we not eaten  
and drunk in thy name and done  
wonders?

## GOSPEL.

Matt. v. 34.

Ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ἡμῖν μὴ ὁμώσαι ὄλωσ·  
μήτε ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ, κ.τ.λ.

v. 37. Ἔστω δὲ ὁ λόγος ἡμῶν ναὶ ναί,  
οὐ οὐ· τὸ δὲ περισσὸν τούτων ἐκ τοῦ  
πονηροῦ ἐστίν.

Matt. vii. 21.

Not every one that saith unto  
me, Lord, Lord, shall, &c., &c.

Luke x. 16.<sup>2</sup> He hearing you  
heareth me, and he despising you,  
&c., &c., and he that despiseth me,  
despiseth him that sent me.

Matt. vii. 22.

Many will say to me in that day:  
Lord, Lord, did we not prophecy in  
thy name? and in thy name cast  
out devils? and in thy name do  
many wonders?

<sup>1</sup> This agrees with a passage which occurs twice in the Clementine Homilies. The version in Ep. of James v. 12, is evidently a quotation from a source different from Matthew, and supports Justin. Clement Al. twice uses a similar expression, and Epiphanius does so once, though probably following the Ep. of James. The Apostolic Constitutions also quotes in similar manner. The context of the Clementine Homilies corresponds with that of Justin, but not so the others. We contrast all these passages below—

James v. 12 . . . . .	ἦτω δὲ ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναί, καὶ τὸ οὐ οὐ.
Clem. Hom. iii. 55 . . . . .	ἔστω ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναί, τὸ οὐ οὐ.
Ib., xix. 2 . . . . .	ἔστω ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναί, καὶ τὸ οὐ οὐ.
Justin Apol. i. 16 . . . . .	ἔστω δὲ ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναί, καὶ τὸ οὐ οὐ.
Clem. Al. Strom. v. 14, § 100	ἔστω ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναί, καὶ τὸ οὐ οὐ.
Epiph. Hær. xix. 6 . . . . .	ἦτω ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναί, καὶ τὸ οὐ οὐ.
Constit. Ap. v. 12 . . . . .	εἶναι δὲ τὸ ναὶ ναί, καὶ τὸ οὐ οὐ.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Matt. x. 40; Mark ix. 37; Luke ix. 48, which are still more remote. In Matt. vii. 24, however, we find: "Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine and doeth them (καὶ ποιῇ αὐτούς), I will liken him unto, &c., &c." This, however, as the continuation of v. 21--23 quoted above immediately before this passage, is very abrupt, but it seems to indicate the existence of such a passage as we find in Justin's Memoirs.

## JUSTIN.

κ 4. And then will I say unto them :  
Depart from me workers of iniquity.

κ 5. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when indeed the righteous shall shine as the sun, but the wicked are sent into everlasting fire.

κ 6. For many shall arrive in my name, outwardly, indeed, clothed in sheep's skins, but inwardly being ravening wolves.

κ 7. Ye shall know them from their works.

κ 8. And every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire.

κ 1. Οὐχὶ πᾶς ὁ λέγων μοι, Κύριε, κύριε, κ.τ.λ.<sup>1</sup>

κ 2. \* Οὐ γὰρ ἀκούει μου, καὶ ποιεῖ ἃ λέγω, ἀκούει τοῦ ἀποστείλαντός με.<sup>2</sup>

## GOSPEL.

vii. 23. And then will I confess unto them that : I never knew you : Depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

Matt. xiii. 42 . . . . .  
and shall cast them into the furnace of fire : there shall be the weeping and the gnashing of teeth.

xiii. 43. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father.

Matt. vii. 15.

But beware of false prophets which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves.

vii. 16. Ye shall know them by their fruit. Do men gather grapes from thorns, or figs from thistles ?

vii. 19. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire.

Matt. vii. 21.

Οὐ πᾶς ὁ λέγων μοι, Κύριε, κύριε, κ.τ.λ.

Luke x. 16.

Ὁ ἀκούων ἡμῶν ἐμοῦ ἀκούει, καὶ ὁ ἀθετῶν ἡμᾶς ἐμὲ ἀθετεῖ· ὁ δὲ ἐμὲ ἀθετῶν ἀθετεῖ τὸν ἀποστείλαντά με.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> This is one of the passages quoted by De Wette (Einl. N. T., p. 105) as agreeing except in a single word.

<sup>2</sup> Justin repeats part of this passage, omitting however, "and doeth what I say," in Apol. i. 63 : "As our Lord himself also says: He that heareth me heareth him that sent me." Justin, however, merely quotes the portion relative to his subject. He is arguing that Jesus is the Word, and is called Angel and Apostle, for he declares whatever we require to know, "as our Lord himself also says, &c.," and therefore the phrase omitted is a mere suspension of the sense and unnecessary.

<sup>3</sup> Cod. D. (Bezae) reads for the last phrase ὁ δὲ ἐμοῦ ἀκούων, ἀκούει τοῦ ἀποστείλαντός με· but all the older MSS. have the above. A very few obscure MSS. and some translations add: "He hearing me, heareth him that sent me." καὶ ὁ ἐμοῦ ἀκούων, ἀκούει τοῦ ἀποστείλαντός με.

## JUSTIN.

κ 3. Πολλοὶ δὲ ἐροῦσί μοι·  
Κύριε, κύριε, οὐ τῷ σῶ ὀνόματι ἐφά-  
γομεν καὶ ἐπίομεν, καὶ δυνάμεις ἐποιή-  
σαμεν;

κ 4. Καὶ τότε ἐρῶ αὐτοῖς. Ἀποχωρεῖτε  
ἀπ' ἐμοῦ ἐργάται τῆς ἀνομίας.<sup>1</sup>

κ 5. Τότε κλαυθμὸς ἔσται καὶ βρυγμὸς  
τῶν ὀδόντων· ἔταν οἱ μὲν δίκαιοι  
λάμψουσιν ὡς ὁ ἥλιος· οἱ δὲ ἄδικοι  
πέμπωνται εἰς τὸ αἰώνιον πῦρ.

## GOSPEL.

Matt. vii. 22.

Πολλοὶ ἐροῦσίν μοι ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ,  
Κύριε, κύριε, οὐ τῷ σῶ ὀνόματι ἐπρο-  
φητεύσαμεν, καὶ τῷ σῶ ὀνόματι δαιμόνια  
ἐξεβάλομεν, καὶ τῷ σῶ ὀνόματι δυνάμεις  
πολλὰς ἐποιήσαμεν;

vii. 23. Καὶ τότε ὁμολογήσω αὐτοῖς  
ὅτι οὐδέποτε ἔγνων ὑμᾶς· ἀποχωρεῖτε ἀπ'  
ἐμοῦ οἱ ἐργαζόμενοι τὴν ἀνομίαν.<sup>2</sup>

Matt. xiii. 42

. . . καὶ βαλοῦσιν αὐτοὺς εἰς τὴν  
κείμενον τοῦ πυρός· ἐκεῖ ἔσται ὁ κλαυθμὸς  
καὶ ὁ βρυγμὸς τῶν ὀδόντων.

43. Τότε οἱ δίκαιοι ἐκλάμψουσιν<sup>3</sup> ὡς  
ὁ ἥλιος ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτῶν.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In Dial 76, Justin makes use of a similar passage. "And many will say to me in that day: Lord, Lord, have we not eaten and drunk in thy name, and prophesied and cast out devils. And I will say to them Depart from me." καὶ Πολλοὶ ἐροῦσί μοι τῇ ἡμέρᾳ ἐκείνῃ· Κύριε, κύριε, οὐ τῷ σῶ ὀνόματι ἐφάγομεν καὶ ἐπίομεν καὶ προεφητεύσαμεν καὶ δαιμόνια ἐξεβάλομεν; Καὶ ἐρῶ αὐτοῖς· Ἀναχωρεῖτε ἀπ' ἐμοῦ. This is followed by one which differs from our Gospels in agreement with one in the Clementine Homilies, and by others varying also from our Gospels. Although Justin may quote these passages freely, he is persistent in his departure from our Synoptics, and the freedom of quotation is towards his own peculiar source, for it is certain that neither form agrees with the Gospels.

<sup>2</sup> The parallel passage, Luke xiii. 26, 27, is still more remote. Origen in four places, in Joh. xxxii. 7, 8, Contra Cels. ii. 49, de Principiis, quotes a passage nominally from Matt., more nearly resembling Justin's: πολλοὶ ἐροῦσί μοι ἐν ἐκείνῃ τῇ ἡμέρᾳ· Κύριε, κύριε, οὐ τῷ ὀνόματί σου ἐφάγομεν, καὶ τῷ ὀνόματί σου ἐπίομεν, καὶ τῷ ὀνόματί σου δαιμόνια ἐξεβάλομεν, κ.τ.λ. Cf. *Griesbach*, Symb. Crit., ii. p. 61 f.; Origen may have here confused the Gospel according to the Hebrews with Matthew.

<sup>3</sup> The Cod. D. (Bezae) has λάμψουσιν, and so also quotes Origen. Cf. *Griesbach*, Symb. Crit., ii. p. 278.

<sup>4</sup> The corresponding passage in Luke (xiii. 26—28) much more closely follows the order which we find in Justin, but linguistically and otherwise it is remote from his version, although in connection of ideas more similar than the passage in the first Gospel. In Luke, the weeping and gnashing of teeth are to be when the wicked see the righteous in heaven whilst they are excluded; whereas in Matt. xiii. 42, 43, the weeping, &c., are merely a characteristic of the furnace of fire, and the shining forth of the righteous is mentioned as a separate circumstance. Matt. xiii. 42, 43 has a different context, and is entirely separated from the parallel passage in Justin, which precedes, and naturally introduces this quotation.

## JUSTIN.

κ 6. Πολλοὶ γὰρ ἤξουσιν ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματί μου, ἔξωθεν μὲν ἐνδεδυμένοι δέρματα προβάτων, ἔσωθεν δὲ ὅσες λύκοι ἄρπαγες<sup>1</sup>

κ 7. ἐκ τῶν ἔργων αὐτῶν ἐπιγνώσεσθε αὐτούς.

κ 8. Πᾶν δὲ δένδρον μὴ ποιῶν καρπὸν καλὸν ἐκκόπτεται καὶ εἰς πῦρ βάλλεται.

Apol. i. 17.

λ. As Christ declared saying: To whom God has given more, of him shall more also be demanded again.

. . . ὡς ὁ Χριστὸς ἐμήνυσεν εἰπών· Ὁ πλεόν ἔδωκεν ὁ θεὸς, πλεόν καὶ ἀπαιτηθήσεται παρ' αὐτοῦ.<sup>2</sup>

## GOSPEL.

Matt. vii. 15.

Προσέχετε δὲ ἀπὸ τῶν ψευδοπροφητῶν, οἵτινες ἔρχονται πρὸς ὑμᾶς ἐν ἐνδύμασιν προβάτων, ἔσωθεν δὲ εἰσὶν λύκοι ἄρπαγες.

16. Ἀπὸ τῶν καρπῶν αὐτῶν ἐπιγνώσεσθε αὐτούς, κ.τ.λ.

19. Πᾶν δένδρον μὴ ποιῶν καρπὸν καλὸν ἐκκόπτεται καὶ εἰς πῦρ βάλλεται.<sup>3</sup>

Luke xii. 48 (not found in Matthew).

. . . . For unto whom much is given, of him shall much be required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will demand a greater amount.

Luke xii. 48.

. . . Παντὶ δὲ ᾧ ἐδόθη πολὺ, πολὺ ζητηθήσεται παρ' αὐτοῦ, καὶ ᾧ παρέθεντο πολὺ, περισσώτερον αἰτήσουσιν<sup>3</sup> αὐτόν.

<sup>1</sup> Justin makes use of this passage with the same variations from our Gospel in Dial. c. Tr. 35. Πολλοὶ ελεύσονται ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματί μου, ἔξωθεν ἐνδεδυμένοι δέρματα προβάτων, ἔσωθεν δὲ εἰσὶ λύκοι ἄρπαγες. With only a separating καὶ, Justin proceeds to quote a saying of Jesus not found in our Gospels at all, "And: There shall be schisms and heresies," "καὶ" Ἔσονται σχίσματα καὶ αἱρέσεις. And then, with merely another separating "And," he quotes another passage similar to the above, but differing from Matt. "And: Beware of false prophets who shall come to you outwardly clothed in sheep's skins, but inwardly are ravening wolves,"—and with another separating "And," he ends with another saying not found in our Gospels: "And: Many false Christs and false Apostles shall arise, and shall deceive many of the faithful, καὶ Ἐναστήσουσιν πολλοὶ ψευδοχριστοὶ καὶ ψευδοἀπόστολοι, καὶ πολλοὺς τῶν πιστῶν πλανήσουσιν. Both passages must have been in his Memoirs and both differ from our Gospels.

<sup>2</sup> This passage occurs in Matthew iii. 10, and Luke iii. 9, literally, as a saying of John the Baptist, so that in Matt. vii. 19, it is a mere quotation.

<sup>3</sup> The Codex D. (Bezae) reads πλεόν ἀπαιτήσουσιν instead of περισσώτερον αἰτήσουσιν.

<sup>4</sup> Clement of Alexandria (Stromata, ii. 23, § 146) has this passage as follows: ᾧ πλεόν ἐδόθη, οὗτος καὶ ἀπαιτηθήσεται. Cf. *Griesbach*, Symb. Crit., ii. p. 380. This version more nearly approximates to Justin's, though still distinct from it.

## JUSTIN.

Dial. c. Tr. 105.

μ. Except your righteousness shall exceed, &c., &c.

## GOSPEL.

Matt. v. 20.

For I say unto you<sup>1</sup> that except your righteousness shall exceed, &c., &c.<sup>2</sup>

We have taken the whole of Justin's quotations from the Sermon on the Mount not only because, adopting so large a test, there can be no suspicion that we select passages for any special purpose, but also because, on the contrary, amongst these quotations are more of the passages claimed as showing the use of our Gospels than any series which could have been selected. It will have been observed that most of the passages follow each other in unbroken sequence in Justin, for with the exception of a short break between  $\gamma$  and  $\delta$  the whole extract down to the end of  $\theta$  is continuous, as indeed, after another brief interruption at the end of  $\iota$ , it is again to the close of the very long and remarkable passage  $\kappa$ . With two exceptions, therefore, the whole of these quotations from the Sermon on the Mount occur consecutively in two succeeding chapters of Justin's first Apology, and one passage follows in the next chapter. Only a single passage comes from a distant part of the dialogue with Trypho. These passages are bound together by clear unity of idea and context, and as, where there is a separation of sentences in his Gospel, Justin clearly marks it by  $\kappa\alpha\iota$ , there is every reason to decide that those quotations which are continuous in form and in argument were likewise consecutive in the Memoirs. Now the hypothesis that these quotations are from the

<sup>1</sup> λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι are wanting in Justin.

<sup>2</sup> This passage, quoted by De Wette, was referred to, p. 345, and led to this examination.

Canonical Gospels requires the acceptance of the fact that Justin, with singular care, collected from distant and scattered portions of those Gospels a series of passages in close sequence to each other, forming a whole unknown to them but complete in itself, and yet, although this is carefully performed, he at the same time with the most systematic carelessness misquoted and materially altered almost every precept he professes to cite. The order of the Canonical Gospels is as entirely set at naught as their language is disregarded. As Hilgenfeld has pointed out, throughout the whole of this portion of his quotations the undeniable endeavour after accuracy, on the one hand, is in the most glaring contradiction with the monstrous carelessness on the other, if it be supposed that our Gospels are the source from which Justin quotes. Nothing is more improbable than the conjecture that he made use of the Canonical Gospels, and we must accept the conclusion that Justin quotes with substantial correctness the expressions in the order in which he found them in his peculiar Gospel.<sup>1</sup>

It is absurd and most arbitrary to dissect a passage, quoted by Justin as a consecutive and harmonious whole, and finding parallels more or less approximate to its various phrases scattered up and down distant parts of our Gospels, scarcely one of which is not materially different from the reading of Justin, to assert that he is quoting these Gospels freely from memory, altering, excising, combining, and interweaving texts, and introverting their order, but nevertheless making use of them and not of others. It is perfectly obvious that such an assertion is nothing but the merest assumption. Our Synoptic Gospels themselves condemn

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 129 f.; *Credner*, Beiträge. i. p. 259.

it utterly, for precisely similar differences of order and language exist in them and distinguish between them. Not only the language but the order of a quotation must have its due weight, and we have no right to dismember a passage, and discovering fragmentary parallels in various parts of the Gospels to assert that it is compiled from them and not derived as it stands from another source.<sup>1</sup> As an illustration from our Gospels, let us for a moment suppose the "Gospel according to Luke" to have been lost like the "Gospel according to the Hebrews," and so many others. In the works of one of the Fathers we discover the following quotation from an unnamed evangelical work: "And he said unto them (ἔλεγεν δὲ πρὸς αὐτούς): The harvest truly is great but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. Go your ways: (ὑπάγετε) behold I send you forth as lambs (ἄρναις) in the midst of wolves." Following the system adopted in regard to Justin, apologetic critics would of course maintain that this was a compilation from memory of passages quoted freely from our first Gospel, that is to say Matt. ix. 37. "Then saith he unto his disciples (τότε λέγει τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ) the harvest," &c., and Matt. x. 16, "Behold I (ἐγὼ) send you forth as sheep (πρόβατα) in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore," &c., which, with the differences which we have indicated, agree. It would probably be in vain

<sup>1</sup> For the arguments of apologetic criticism, the reader may be referred to Canon Westcott's work *On the Canon*, p. 112—139. Dr. Westcott does not attempt to deny the fact that Justin's quotations are different from the text of our Gospels, but he accounts for his variations on grounds which are purely imaginary. It is evident that so long as there are such variations to be explained away, at least no proof of identity is possible.

to argue that the quotation indicated a continuous order, and the variations combined to confirm the probability of a different source, and still more so to point out that, although parts of the quotation separated from their context might to a certain extent correspond with scattered verses in the first Gospel, such a circumstance was no proof that the quotation was taken from that and from no other Gospel. The passage, however, is a literal quotation from Luke x. 2, 3, which, as we have assumed, had been lost.

Again, still supposing the third Gospel no longer extant, we might find the following quotation in a work of the Fathers: "Take heed to yourselves (*ἐαυτοῖς*) of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy (*ἣτις ἐστὶν ὑπόκρισις*). For there is nothing covered up (*συγκεκαλυμμένον*) which shall not be revealed, and hid which shall not be known." It would of course be affirmed that this was evidently a combination of two verses of our first Gospel quoted almost literally, with merely a few very immaterial slips of memory in the parts we note, and the explanatory words "which is hypocrisy" introduced by the Father, and not a part of the quotation at all. The two verses are Matt. xvi. 6: "Beware and (*ὀράτε καὶ*) take heed of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees" (*καὶ Σαδδουκαίων*) and Matt. x. 26 . . . . "For (*γὰρ*) there is nothing covered (*κεκαλυμμένον*) that shall not be revealed and hid that shall not be known." The sentence would in fact be divided as in the case of Justin, and each part would have its parallel pointed out in separate portions of the Gospel. How wrong such a system is—and it is precisely that which is adopted with regard to Justin—may be clearly perceived from the fact that the quotation

instead of being such a combination is simply taken from the Gospel according to Luke xii. 1, 2, as it stands.

To give one more example, and they might easily be multiplied, if our second Gospel had been lost, and the following passage were met with in one of the Fathers without its source being indicated, what would be the argument of those who insist that Justin's quotations, though differing from our Gospels, were yet taken from them? "If any one have (εἰ τις ἔχει) ears to hear let him hear. And he said unto them: Take heed what (τί) ye hear: with what measure ye mete it shall be measured to you: and more shall be given unto you. For he (ὁς) that hath to him shall be given, and he (καὶ ὁς) that hath not from him shall be taken even that which he hath." Upon the principle on which Justin's quotations are treated, it would certainly be affirmed positively that this passage was a quotation from our first and third Gospels combined and made from memory. The exigencies of the occasion might probably cause the assertion to be made that the words: "And he said to them," really indicated a separation of the latter part of the quotation from the preceding, and that the Father thus showed that the passage was not consecutive; and as to the phrase: "and more shall be given unto you," that it was evidently an addition of the Father. The passage would be dissected, and its different members compared with scattered sentences, and declared almost literal quotations from the Canonical Gospels: Matt. xiii. 9. He that hath (ὁ ἔχων) ears to hear let him hear."<sup>1</sup> Luke viii. 18, "Take heed therefore how (οὖν πῶς) ye hear." Matt. vii. 2 . . . "with what measure ye

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Matt. xi. 15; Luke viii. 8.

mete it shall be measured to you.”<sup>1</sup> Matt. xiii. 12 : “For whosoever (ὁστίς) hath, to him shall be given (and he shall have abundance) ; but whosoever (ὁστίς δὲ) hath not from him shall be taken even that which he hath.”<sup>2</sup> In spite of these ingenious assertions, however, the quotation in reality is literally and consecutively taken from Mark iv. 23—25.

These examples may suffice to show that any argument which commences by the assumption that the order of a passage quoted may be entirely disregarded, and that it is sufficient to find parallels scattered irregularly up and down the Gospels to warrant the conclusion that the passage is compiled from them, and is not a consecutive quotation from some other source, is utterly unfounded and untenable. The supposition of a lost Gospel which has just been made to illustrate this argument is, however, not a mere supposition as applied to Justin but a fact, for we no longer have the Gospel according to Peter nor that according to the Hebrews, not to mention the numerous other works in use in the early Church. The instances we have given show the importance of the order as well as the language of Justin’s quotations, and while they prove the impossibility of demonstrating that a consecutive passage which differs not only in language but in order from the parallels in our Gospels must be derived from them, they likewise prove the probability that such passages are actually quoted from a different source.

If we examine further, however, in the same way, quotations which differ merely in language, we arrive at the very same conclusion. Supposing the third Gospel to be lost, what would be the source assigned to the fol-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Luke vi. 38.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Matt. xxv. 29 ; Luke viii. 18, xix. 26.

lowing quotation from an unnamed Gospel in the work of one of the Fathers? "No servant (*οὐδεὶς οἰκέτης*) can serve two lords, for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and Mammon." Of course the passage would be claimed as a quotation from memory of Matt. vi. 24, with which it perfectly corresponds with the exception of the addition of the second word *οἰκέτης*, which, it would no doubt be argued, is an evident and very natural amplification of the simple *οὐδεὶς* of the first Gospel. Yet this passage, only differing by the single word from Matthew, is a literal quotation from the Gospel according to Luke xvi. 13. Or, to take another instance, supposing the third Gospel to be lost, and the following passage quoted, from an unnamed source, by one of the Fathers: "Beware (*προσέχετε*) of the Scribes which desire to walk in long robes, and love (*φιλοῦντων*) greetings in the markets, and chief seats in the synagogues and uppermost places at feasts; which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation." This would without hesitation be declared a quotation from memory of Mark xii. 38-40 ". . . . Beware (*βλέπετε*) of the Scribes which desire to walk in long robes and greetings in the markets, and chief seats in the synagogues and uppermost places at feasts: which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive," &c. It is however a literal quotation of Luke xx. 46, 47; yet probably it would be in vain to submit to apologetic critics that possibly, not to say probably, the passage was not derived from Mark but from a lost Gospel. To quote one more instance, let us

suppose the "Gospel according to Mark" no longer extant, and that in some early work there existed the following quotation: "It is easier for a camel to go through the eye (*τρυμαλιᾶς*) of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God." This would of course be claimed as a quotation from memory of Matt. xix. 24,<sup>1</sup> with which it agrees with the exception of the substitution of *τρυπήματος* for the *τρυμαλιᾶς*. It would not the less have been an exact quotation from Mark x. 25.<sup>2</sup>

We have repeatedly pointed out that the actual agreement of any saying of Jesus, quoted by one of the early Fathers from an unnamed source, with a passage in our Gospels is by no means conclusive evidence that the quotation was actually derived from that Gospel. It must be apparent that literal agreement in reporting short and important sayings is not in itself so surprising as to constitute proof that, occurring in two histories, the one must have copied from the other. The only thing which is surprising is that such frequent inaccuracies should occur. When we add, however, the fact that most of the larger early evangelical works, including our Synoptic Gospels, must have been compiled out of the same original sources, and have been largely indebted to each other, the common possession of such sayings becomes

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Luke xviii. 25.

<sup>2</sup> For further instances compare —

Luke	xiv.	11,	with	Matt.	xxiii.	12,	and	Luke	xviii.	14.
„	xvii.	37,	„	„	xxiv.	28.				
„	vi.	41,	„	„	vii.	3.				
Mark	vi.	4,	„	„	xiii.	57.				
„	viii.	34,	„	Luke	ix.	23.				
Matt.	xviii.	11,	„	„	xix.	10.				
„	xxiv.	37,	„	„	xiii.	34.				
„	xxiv.	34—36,	with	Mark	xiii.	30—32,	and	Luke	xxi.	32—33.

a matter of natural occurrence. Moreover, it must be admitted even by apologetic critics that, in a case of such vast importance as the report of sayings of Jesus, upon the verbal accuracy of which the most essential doctrines of Christianity depend, it cannot be a wonder, to the extent of proving plagiarism so to say, if various Gospels report the same saying of Jesus in the same words. Practically, the Synoptic Gospels differ in their reports a great deal more than is right or desirable; but we may take them as an illustration of the fact, that identity of passages, where the source is unnamed, by no means proves that such passages in a work of the early Fathers were derived from one Gospel, and not from any other. Let us suppose our first Gospel to have been lost, and the following quotation from an unnamed source to be found in an early work: "Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire." This being in literal agreement with Luke iii. 9, would certainly be declared by modern apologists conclusive proof that the Father was acquainted with that Gospel, and although the context in the work of the Father might for instance be: "Ye shall know them from their works, and every tree," &c., &c., and yet, in the third Gospel, the context is: "And now also, the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: and every tree," &c., that would by no means give them pause. The explanation of combination of texts, and quotation from memory, is sufficiently elastic for every emergency. Now the words in question might in reality be a quotation from the lost Gospel according to Matthew, in which they twice occur, so that here is a passage which is literally repeated three times, Matthew iii. 10, vii. 19, and Luke iii. 9. In Matthew iii. 10, and in the third

Gospel, the words are part of a saying of John the Baptist ; whilst in Matthew vii. 19, they are given as part of the Sermon on the Mount, with a different context. This passage is actually quoted by Justin ( $\kappa$  8), with the context, "Ye shall know them from their works," which is different from that in any of the three places in which the words occur in our synoptics, and on the grounds we have clearly established it cannot be considered in any case as necessarily a quotation from our Gospels, but on the contrary, there are good reasons for the very opposite conclusion.

Another illustration of this may be given, by supposing the Gospel of Luke to be no longer extant, and the following sentence in one of the Fathers: "And ye shall be hated by all men, for my name's sake." These very words occur both in Matthew x. 22, and Mark xiii. 13, in both of which places there follow the words: "but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved." There might here have been a doubt, as to whether the Father derived the words from the first or second Gospel, but they would have been ascribed either to the one or to the other, whilst in reality they were taken from a different work altogether, Luke xxi. 17. Here again, we have the same words in three Gospels. In how many more may not the same passage have been found? One more instance to conclude. The following passage might be quoted from an unnamed source by one of the Fathers: "Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away." If the Gospel according to Mark were no longer extant, this would be claimed as a quotation either from Matthew xxiv. 35, or Luke xxi. 33, in both of which it occurs, but, notwithstanding, the Father might not have been acquainted

with either of them, and simply have quoted from Mark xiii. 31.<sup>1</sup> And here again, the three Gospels contain the same passage without variation.

Now in all these cases, not only is the selection of the Gospel from which the quotation was actually taken completely an open question, since they all have it, but still more is the point uncertain, when it is considered that many other works may also have contained it, historical sayings being naturally common property. Does the agreement of the quotation with a passage which is equally found in the three Gospels prove the existence of all of them? and if not, how is the Gospel from which it was actually taken to be distinguished? If it be difficult to do so, how much more when the possibility and probability, demonstrated by the agreement of the three extant, that it might have formed part of a dozen other works is taken into account. In the case of Justin, it is simply absurd and unreasonable, in the face of his persistent variation from our Gospels, to assert positively that his quotations are derived from them.

It must have been apparent to all that, throughout his quotation from the "Sermon on the Mount," Justin follows an order which is quite different from that in our Synoptic Gospels, and as might have been expected, the inference of a different source, which is naturally suggested by this variation in order, is more than confirmed by persistent and continuous variation in language. If it be true, that examples of confusion of quotation, are to be found in the works of Clement of Alexandria, Origen,

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Matt. vii. 7—8, with Luke xi. 9—10; Matt. xi. 25, with Luke x. 21.

and other Fathers, it must at the same time be remembered, that these are quite exceptional, and we are scarcely in a position to judge how far confusion of memory may not have arisen from reminiscences of other forms of evangelical expressions occurring in apocryphal works, with which we know the Fathers to have been well acquainted. The most vehement asserter of the identity of the Memoirs with our Gospels, however, must absolutely admit as a fact, explain it as he may, that variation from our Gospel readings is the general rule in Justin's quotations, and agreement with them the very rare exception.<sup>1</sup> Now, such a phenomenon is elsewhere unparalleled in those times, when memory was more cultivated than with us in these days of cheap printed books, and it is unreasonable to charge Justin with such universal want of memory and carelessness about matters which he held so sacred, merely to support a foregone conclusion, when the recognition of a difference of source, indicated in every direction, is so much more simple, natural, and justifiable.

There are very many of the quotations of Justin which bear unmistakable marks of exactness and verbal accuracy, but which yet differ materially from our Gospels, and most of his quotations from the Sermon on the Mount are of this kind. For instance, Justin introduces the passages which we have marked  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$ ,  $\gamma$ , with the words: "He (Jesus) spoke thus of Chastity,"<sup>2</sup> and after giving the quotations,  $\alpha$ ,  $\beta$ , and  $\gamma$ , the first two of which, although finding a parallel in two consecutive verses, Matthew v. 28, 29, are divided by the separating *καὶ*, and therefore do not appear to have been united in

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 209 f.  
VOL. I.

<sup>2</sup> p. 347 f.  
B B

his Gospel, Justin continues: "So that all who by human law marry twice, are sinners in the eye of our Master, and those who look upon a woman to lust after her. For not only he who actually commits adultery is rejected by Him, but also he who desires to commit adultery, since not our acts alone are open before God, but also our thoughts."<sup>1</sup> Now it is perfectly clear that Justin here professes to give the actual words of Jesus, and then moralizes upon them; and both the quotation and his own subsequent paraphrase of it lose all their significance, if we suppose that Justin did not correctly quote in the first instance, but actually commences by altering the text.<sup>2</sup> These passages *α*, *β*, and *γ*, however, have all marked and characteristic variations from the Gospel text, but as we have already shown, there is no reason for asserting that they are not accurate verbal quotations from another Gospel.

The passage *δ* is likewise a professed quotation,<sup>3</sup> but not only does it differ in language, but it presents deliberate transpositions in order which clearly indicate that Justin's source was not our Gospels. The nearest parallels in our Gospels are found in Matthew v. 46, followed by 44. The same remarks apply to the next passage *ε*, which is introduced as a distinct quotation,<sup>4</sup> but which, like the rest, differs materially, linguistically and in order, from the canonical Gospels. The whole of

<sup>1</sup> Ὡςπερ καὶ οἱ νόμοι ἀνθρώπων διγαμίας ποιούμενοι, ἀμαρτωλοὶ παρὰ τῷ ἡμετέρῳ διδασκάλῳ εἰσὶ, καὶ οἱ προσβλέποντες γυναῖκι πρὸς τὸ ἐπιθυμῆσαι αὐτῆς. Οὐ γὰρ μόνον ὁ μοιχεύων ἔργῳ ἐκβέβληται παρ' αὐτῷ, ἀλλὰ καὶ ὁ μοιχεύσαι βουλόμενος· ὡς οὐ τῶν ἔργων φανερῶν μόνον τῷ θεῷ, ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἐνθυμημάτων. Apol. I. 15. After the passages *α*, *β*, *γ*, and before the above there is another quotation compared with Matt. xix. 12, but distinctly different from it.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 131.

<sup>3</sup> p. 348.

<sup>4</sup> p. 349 f.

the passage is consecutive, and excludes the explanation of a mere patchwork of passages loosely put together, and very imperfectly quoted from memory. Justin states that Jesus taught that we should communicate to those who need, and do nothing for vain glory, and he then gives the very words of Jesus in an unbroken and clearly continuous discourse. Christians are to give to all who ask, and not merely to those from whom they hope to receive again, which would be no new thing—even the publicans do that; but Christians must do more. They are not to lay up riches on earth, but in heaven, for it would not profit a man to gain the whole world, and lose his soul; therefore, the Teacher a second time repeats the injunction that Christians should lay up treasures in heaven. If the unity of thought which binds this passage so closely together were not sufficient to prove that it stood in Justin's Gospel in the form and order in which he quotes it, the requisite evidence would be supplied by the repetition at its close of the injunction: "Lay up, therefore, in the heavens," &c. It is impossible that Justin should, through defect of memory, quote a second time in so short a passage the same injunction, if the passage were not thus appropriately terminated in his Gospel. The common sense of the reader must at once perceive that it is impossible that Justin, professedly quoting words of Jesus, should thus deliberately fabricate a discourse rounded off by the repetition of one of its opening admonitions, with the addition of an argumentative "therefore." He must have found it so in the Gospel from which he quotes. Nothing indeed but the difficulty of explaining the marked variations presented by this passage, on the supposition that Justin must quote from our Gospels, could lead apologists to insinuate

such a process of compilation, or question the consecutive character of this passage. The nearest parallels to the dismembered parts of this quotation, presenting everywhere serious variations, however, can only be found in the following passages in the order in which we cite them, Matthew v. 42, Luke vi. 34, Matthew vi. 19, 20, xvi. 26, and a repetition of part of vi. 20, with variations. Moreover, the expression: "What new thing do ye?" is quite peculiar to Justin. We have already met with it in the preceding section  $\delta$ . "If ye love them which love you, what *new* thing do ye? for even," &c. Here, in the same verse, we have: "If ye lend to them from whom ye hope to receive, what *new* thing do ye? for even," &c. It is evident, both from its repetition and its distinct dogmatic view of Christianity as a new teaching in contrast to the old, that this variation cannot have been the result of defective memory, but must have been the reading of the Memoirs, and, in all probability, it was the original form of the teaching. Such antithetical treatment is clearly indicated in many parts of the Sermon on the Mount: for instance, Matthew v. 21, "Ye have heard that it hath been said *by them of old* . . . but I say unto you," &c., cf. v. 33, 38, 43. It is certain that the whole of the quotation  $\epsilon$  differs very materially from our Gospels, and there is every reason to believe that not only was the passage not derived from them, but that it was contained in the Memoirs of the Apostles substantially in the form and order in which Justin quotes it.<sup>1</sup>

The next passage ( $\zeta$ )<sup>2</sup> is separated from the preceding merely by the usual  $\kappa\alpha\iota$ , and it moves on to its close with

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. pp. 221—226; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 178 ff.; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schriften, p. 264 ff. <sup>2</sup> p. 330 f.

the same continuity of thought and the same peculiarities of construction which characterize that which we have just considered. Christians are to be kind and merciful (*χρηστοὶ καὶ οἰκτίρμονες*) to all as their Father is, who makes his sun to shine alike on the good and evil, and they need not be anxious about their own temporal necessities: what they shall eat and what put on; are they not better than the birds and beasts whom God feedeth? therefore they are not to be careful about what they are to eat and what put on, for their heavenly Father knows they have need of these things; but they are to seek the kingdom of heaven, and all these things shall be added: for where the treasure is—the thing he seeks and is careful about—there will also be the mind of the man. In fact, the passage is a suitable continuation of  $\epsilon$ , inculcating, like it, abstraction from worldly cares and thoughts in reliance on the heavenly Father, and the mere fact that a separation is made where it is between the two passages  $\epsilon$  and  $\zeta$  shows further that each of those passages was complete in itself. There is absolutely no reason for the separating *καὶ* if these passages were a mere combination of scattered verses. This quotation, however, which is so consecutive in Justin, can only find distant parallels in passages widely divided throughout the Synoptic Gospels, which have to be arranged in the following order: Luke vi. 36, Matt. v. 45, vi. 25, 26, 31, 32, 33, vi. 21, the whole of which present striking differences from Justin's quotation. The repetition of the injunction "be not careful" again with the conductive "therefore" is quite in the spirit of  $\epsilon$ . This admonition: "Therefore, be not careful," &c., is reiterated no less than three times in the first Gospel (vi. 25, 31, 34), and confirms the characteristic repetition of Justin's Gospel, which seems

to have held a middle course between Matthew and Luke, the latter of which does not repeat the phrase, although the injunction is made a second time in more direct terms. The repetition of the passage: "Be ye kind and merciful," &c., in Dial. 96, with the same context and peculiarities, is a remarkable confirmation of the natural conclusion that Justin quotes the passage from a Gospel different from ours. The expression *χρηστοὶ καὶ οἰκτίρμονες* thrice repeated by Justin himself, and supported by a similar duplication in the Clementine Homilies (iii. 57)<sup>1</sup> cannot possibly be an accidental departure from our Gospels.<sup>2</sup> For the rest it is undeniable that the whole passage ζ differs materially both in order and language from our Gospels, from which it cannot without unwarrantable assumption be maintained to have been taken either collectively or in detail, and strong internal reasons lead us to conclude that it is quoted substantially as it stands from Justin's Gospel, which must have been different from our Synoptics.<sup>3</sup>

In θ again we have an express quotation introduced by the words: "And regarding our being patient under injuries and ready to help all, and free from anger, this is what he said;" and then he proceeds to give the actual words.<sup>4</sup> At the close of the quotation he continues: "For we ought not to strive, neither would he have us be imitators of the wicked, but he has exhorted us by

<sup>1</sup> See p. 350, note 4.

<sup>2</sup> *Delitzsch* admits the very striking nature of this triple quotation, and of another (in our passage κ 3 and 4), although he does not accept them as necessarily from a different source. "Auffällig, aber allerdings sehr auffällig sind nur folgende 2 citate *γίνεσθε χρηστοὶ, κ.τ.λ.* Apol. i. 15; Dial. 96, und *Κύριε, κύριε, κ.τ.λ.* Apol. i. 16, Dial. 76; *Unters. u. d. Entst. d. Matth. Evang.*, 1853, p. 34.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 226, p. 241 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 180 ff.; *Mayerhoff*, *Einl. petr. Schr.*, p. 266 ff. <sup>4</sup> p. 352 f.

patience and gentleness to lead men from shame and the love of evil," &c., &c.<sup>1</sup> It is evident that these observations, which are a mere paraphrase of the text, indicate that the quotation itself is deliberate and precise. Justin professes first to quote the actual teaching of Jesus, and then makes his own comments; but if it be assumed that he began by concocting out of stray texts, altered to suit his purpose, a continuous discourse, the subsequent observations seem singularly useless and out of place. Although the passage forms a consecutive and harmonious discourse, the nearest parallels in our Gospels can only be found by uniting parts of the following scattered verses: Matthew v. 39, 40, 22, 41, 16. The Christian who is struck on one cheek is to turn the other, and not to resist those who would take away his cloak or coat; but if, on the contrary, he be angry, he is in danger of fire; if, then, he be compelled to go one mile, let him show his gentleness by going two, and thus let his good works shine before men that, seeing them, they may adore his Father which is in heaven. It is evident that the last two sentences, which find their parallels in Matt. by putting v. 16 after 41, the former verse having quite a different context in the Gospel, must have so followed each other in Justin's text. His purpose is to quote the teaching of Jesus, "regarding our being patient under injuries, and ready to help all and free from anger," but his quotation of "Let your good works shine before men," &c., has no direct reference to his subject, and it cannot reasonably be supposed that Justin would have selected it from a separate part of the Gospel. Coming as it no doubt did in his Memoirs in the order in which he quotes it, it is quite appropriate to his purpose. It is

<sup>1</sup> Apol. i. 16.

impossible, for instance, to imagine why Justin further omitted the injunction in the parallel passage, Matthew v. 39, "that ye resist not evil," when supposed to quote the rest of the verse, since his express object is to show that "we ought not to strive," &c. The whole quotation presents the same characteristics as those which we have already examined, and in its continuity of thought and wide variation from the parallels in our Gospels, both in order and language, we must recognize a different and peculiar source.<sup>1</sup>

The passage *ι*, again, is professedly a literal quotation, for Justin prefaces it with the words: "And regarding our not swearing at all, but ever speaking the truth, he taught thus;" and having in these words actually stated what Jesus did teach, he proceeds to quote his very words.<sup>2</sup> In the quotation there is a clear departure from our Gospel, arising, not from accidental failure of memory, but from difference of source. The parallel passages in our Gospels, so far as they exist at all, can only be found by taking part of Matthew v. 34 and joining it to v. 37, omitting the intermediate verses. The quotation in the Epistle of James v. 12, which is evidently derived from a source different from Matthew, supports the reading of Justin. This, with the passage twice repeated in the Clementine Homilies in agreement with Justin, and, it may be added, the peculiar version found in early ecclesiastical writings,<sup>3</sup> all tend to confirm the belief that there existed a more ancient form of the injunction which Justin no doubt found in his Memoirs.<sup>4</sup> The precept, terse, simple, and direct, as it is here, is much more in

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 222, p. 226; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 176 f.; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 270 ff. <sup>2</sup> p. 353 f.

<sup>3</sup> p. 354, note 1.

<sup>4</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 175 f.; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 211;

accordance with Justin's own description of the teaching of Jesus, as he evidently found it in his Gospel, than the diffused version contained in the first Gospel, v. 33—37.

Another remarkable and characteristic illustration of the peculiarity of Justin's Memoirs is presented by the long passage  $\kappa$ , which is also throughout consecutive and bound together by clear unity of thought.<sup>1</sup> It is presented with the context: "For not those who merely make professions but those who do the works, as he (Jesus) said, shall be saved. For he spake thus." It does not, therefore, seem possible to indicate more clearly the deliberate intention to quote the exact expressions of Jesus, and yet not only do we find material difference from the language in the parallel passages in our Gospels, but those parallels, such as they are, can only be made by patching together the following verses in the order in which we give them: Matt. vii. 21, Luke x. 16, Matt. vii. 22, 23, xiii. 42, 43, vii. 15, part of 16, 19. It will be remarked that the passage ( $\kappa$  2) Luke x. 16, is thrust in between two consecutive verses in Matthew, and taken from a totally different context as the nearest parallel to  $\kappa$  2 of Justin, although it is widely different from it, omitting altogether the most important words: "and doeth what I say." The repetition of the same phrase: "He that heareth me heareth him that sent me," in Apol. I., 63,<sup>2</sup> makes it certain that Justin accurately quotes

*Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 246; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 209, anm. 1.

Canon Westcott considers that "the coincidence between Justin and the Clementine Gospel illustrates still more clearly the existence of a traditional as well as of an evangelical form of Christ's words." On the Canon, p. 32. But why merely a "traditional," if by that he means oral tradition? Luke i. 1, shows how many written versions there may have been; cf. *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 28 f., and anm. 1, p. 29.

<sup>1</sup> p. 354 ff.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 355, note 2.

his Gospel, whilst the omission of the words in that place : "and doeth what I say," evidently proceeds from the fact that they are an interruption of the phrase for which Justin makes the quotation, namely, to prove that Jesus is sent forth to reveal the Father.<sup>1</sup> It may be well to compare Justin's passage, κ 1—4, with one occurring in the so-called Second Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians, iv. "Let us not, therefore, only call him Lord, for that will not save us. For he saith : 'Not every one that saith to me, Lord, Lord, shall be saved, but he that worketh righteousness.' . . . the Lord said : 'Even though ye were gathered together with me in my bosom, and were not to do my commandments, I should cast you off and say to you : Depart from me ; I know you not, whence ye are, workers of iniquity.'" <sup>2</sup> The expression *ἐργάται ἀνομίας* here strongly recalls the reading of Justin.<sup>3</sup> This passage, which is foreign to our Gospels, at least shows the existence of others containing parallel discourses with distinct variations. Some of the quotations in this spurious Epistle are stated to be taken from the "Gospel according to the Egyptians,"<sup>4</sup> which was in all probability a version of the Gospel according to the Hebrews.<sup>5</sup> The variations which occur in Justin's repetition, in Dial. 76, of his quotation κ 3 are not important, because the more weighty departure

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evng. Justin's*, p. 186.

<sup>2</sup> *Μὴ μόνον οὖν αὐτὸν καλῶμεν Κύριον· οὐ γὰρ τοῦτο σώσει ἡμᾶς. Λέγει γάρ· "Οὐ πᾶς ὁ λέγων μοι, Κύριε, κύριε, σωθήσεται, ἀλλὰ ὁ ποιῶν τὴν δικαιοσύνην"* . . . . *Λιὰ τοῦτο, ταῦτα ἡμῶν πρᾶσσόντων εἶπεν ὁ Κύριος· "Ἐὰν ἦτε μετ' ἐμοῦ συνηγμένοι ἐν τῷ κόλπῳ μου, καὶ μὴ ποιῆτε τὰς ἐντολάς μου, ἀποβαλῶ ὑμᾶς, καὶ ἐρῶ ὑμῖν· Ὑπάγετε ἀπ' ἐμοῦ, οὐκ οἶδα ὑμᾶς, πόθεν ἐστέ, ἐργάται ἀνομίας."*

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 245.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Clemens Al.*, *Strom.*, iii. 9, § 63, 13, § 93.

<sup>5</sup> Compare the quotation *Clem. 11 ad Corinth.*, ii. 9, with the quotations from the Gospel according to the Hebrews in *Epiphanius*, *Her.*, xxx: 14.

from the Gospel in the words "have we not eaten and drunk in thy name," (οὐ τῷ σῶ ὀνόματι ἐφάγομεν καὶ ἐπιόμεν) is deliberately repeated,<sup>1</sup> and if, therefore, there be freedom of quotation it is free quotation not from the canonical, but from a different Gospel.<sup>2</sup> Origen's quotation<sup>3</sup> does not affect this conclusion, for the repetition of the phrase (οὐ) τῷ ὀνόματι σου has the form of the Gospel, and besides, which is much more important, we know that Origen was well acquainted with the Gospel according to the Hebrews and other apocryphal works from which this may have been a reminiscence.<sup>4</sup> We must add, moreover, that the passage in Dial. 76 appears in connection with others widely differing from our Gospels. The passage κ 5 not only materially varies from the parallel in Matt. xiii. 42, 43 in language but in connection of ideas.<sup>5</sup> Here also upon examination we must conclude that Justin quotes from a source different from our Gospels, and moreover, that his Gospel gives with greater correctness the original form of the passage.<sup>6</sup> The weeping and gnashing of teeth are distinctly represented as the consequence when the wicked see the bliss of the righteous while they are sent into everlasting fire, and not as the mere characteristics of hell. It will be observed that the preceding passages κ 3 and 4, find parallels to a certain extent in Matt. vii. 22, 23, although Luke xiii. 26, 27, is in some respects closer to the reading of Justin. κ 5, however, finds no continuation,

<sup>1</sup> Delitzsch admits the very striking character of this repetition. *Unters. Entst. Matth. Ev.*, p. 34, see back, p. 374, note 2.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 186 f.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. p. 356, note 2.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 187.

<sup>5</sup> p. 356, cf. note 2.

<sup>6</sup> *Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. J.*, 187 f.; *Mayerhoff, Einl. petr. Schr.*, p. 276 f.

of parallel in Matt. vii., from which the context comes, but we have to seek it in xiii. 42, 43. K 5, however, does find its continuing parallel in the next verse in Luke xiii. 28, where we have "There shall be (the) weeping and (the) gnashing of teeth when ye shall see Abraham," &c. There is here, it is evident, the connection of ideas which is totally lacking in Matt. xiii. 42, 43, where the verses in question occur as the conclusion to the exposition of the Parable of the Tares. Now, although it is manifest that Luke xiii. 28, cannot possibly have been the source from which Justin quotes, still the opening words and the sequence of ideas demonstrate the great probability that other Gospels must have given, after  $\kappa$  4, a continuation which is wanting after Matt. vii. 23, but which is indicated in the parallel Luke xiii. (26, 27) 28, and is somewhat closely followed in Matt. xiii. 42, 43. When such a sequence is found in an avowed quotation from Justin's Gospel, it is absolutely certain that he must have found it there substantially as he quotes it. The passage  $\kappa$  6,<sup>1</sup> "For many shall arrive," &c., is a very important one, and it departs emphatically from the parallel in our first Gospel. Instead of being, like the latter, a warning against false prophets, it is merely the announcement that many deceivers shall come. This passage is rendered more weighty by the fact that Justin repeats it with little variation in Dial. 35, and immediately after quotes a saying of Jesus' of only five words which is not found in our Gospels, and then he repeats a quotation to the same effect in the shape of a warning, "Beware of false prophets," &c., like that in Matt. vii. 15, but still distinctly differing from it.<sup>2</sup> It is perfectly clear that Justin quotes

<sup>1</sup> p. 355.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. p. 357, note 1.

two separate passages.<sup>1</sup> It is impossible that he could intend to repeat the same quotation at an interval of only five words; it is equally impossible that, having quoted it in the one form, he could so immediately quote it in the other through error of memory.<sup>2</sup> The simple and very natural conclusion is that he found both passages in his Gospel. The object for which he quotes would more than justify the quotation of both passages, the one referring to the many false Christians and the other to the false prophets of whom he is speaking. That two passages so closely related should be found in the same Gospel is not in the least singular. There are numerous instances of the same in our Synoptics.<sup>3</sup> The actual facts of the case then are these: Justin quotes in the Dialogue, with the same marked deviations from the parallel in the Gospel, a passage quoted by him in the Apology, and after an interval of only five words he quotes a second passage to the same effect, though with very palpable difference in its character, which likewise differs from the Gospel, in company with other texts which still less find any parallels in the canonical Gospels. The two passages, by their differences, distinguish each other as separate, whilst, by their agreement in common variations from the parallel in Matthew, they declare their common origin from a special Gospel, a result still further made manifest by the agreement between the first passage in the Dialogue and the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 246.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 188 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Matt. v. 29, 30, with xviii. 98.

xix. 30, with xx. 16.

xiii. 12 „ xxv. 29.

iii. 10 „ vii. 19.

xx. 16 „ xxii. 14; and viii. 12, xiii. 42, 50, xxii. 13, xxiv.

51, and xxv. 30, together; Luke xiv. 11, with xviii. 14, &c., &c.

quotations in the Apology. In  $\kappa$  7,<sup>1</sup> Justin's Gospel substitutes  $\epsilon\rho\gamma\omega\nu$  for  $\kappa\alpha\rho\pi\omega\nu$ , and is quite in the spirit of the passage  $\theta$ . "Ye shall know them from their works" is the natural reading. The Gospel version clearly introduces "fruit" prematurely, and weakens the force of the contrast which follows. It will be observed, moreover, that in order to find a parallel to Justin's passage  $\kappa$  7, 8, only the first part of Matt. vii. 16, is taken, and the thread is only caught again at vii. 19,  $\kappa$  8 being one of the two passages indicated by De Wette which we are considering, and it agrees with Matt. vii. 19, with the exception of the single word  $\delta\epsilon$ . We must again point out, however, that this passage in Matt. vii. 19, is repeated no less than three times in our Gospels, a second time in Matt. iii. 10, and once in Luke iii. 19. Upon two occasions it is placed in the mouth of John the Baptist, and forms the second portion of a sentence the whole of which is found in literal agreement both in Matt. iii. 10, and Luke iii. 9, "But now the axe is laid unto the root of the trees, therefore every tree," &c., &c. The passage pointed out by De Wette as the parallel to Justin's anonymous quotation, Matt. vii. 19—a selection which is of course obligatory from the context—is itself a mere quotation by Jesus of part of the saying of the Baptist, presenting, therefore, double probability of being well known; and as we have three instances of its literal reproduction in the Synoptics, it would indeed be absurd to affirm that it was not likewise given literally in other Gospels.

The passage  $\lambda$ <sup>2</sup> is very emphatically given as a literal quotation of the words of Jesus, for Justin cites it directly to authenticate his own statements of Christian

p. 355.

<sup>2</sup> p. 357.

belief. He says: "But if you disregard our prayers, and all our clear explanations, we shall not suffer loss, inasmuch as we believe, or rather are persuaded, that every one will be punished by eternal fire according to the desert of his deed, and will give account according to the faculties he has received from God, as Christ declared when he said: To whom God has given more, of him shall more also be demanded again." This quotation has no parallel in the first Gospel, but we add it here as part of the Sermon on the Mount. The passage in Luke xii. 48, it will be perceived, presents distinct variation from it, and that Gospel cannot for a moment be maintained as the source of Justin's quotation.

The last passage,  $\mu$ ,<sup>1</sup> is one of those advanced by De Wette which led to this examination.<sup>2</sup> It is likewise clearly a quotation, but as we have already shown, its agreement with Matt. v. 20, is no evidence that it was actually derived from that Gospel. Occurring as it does as one of numerous quotations from the Sermon on the Mount, whose general variation both in order and language from the parallels in our Gospel points to the inevitable conclusion that Justin derived them from a different source, there is no reason for supposing that this sentence also did not come from the same Gospel.

No one who has attentively considered the whole of these passages from the Sermon on the Mount, and still less those who are aware of the general rule of variation in his mass of quotations as compared with parallels in our Gospels, can fail to be struck by the systematic departure from the order and language of the Synoptics. The hypothesis that they are quotations from our Gospels involves the accusation against Justin of an amount of

<sup>1</sup> p. 358.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. p. 345.

carelessness and negligence which is quite unparalleled in literature. Justin's character and training, however, by no means warrant any such aspersion,<sup>1</sup> and there are no grounds whatever for it. Indeed, but for the attempt arbitrarily to establish the identity of the "Memoirs of the Apostles" with our Gospels, such a charge would never have been thought of. It is impossible to suppose that avowed and deliberate quotations of sayings of Jesus, made for the express purpose of furnishing authentic written proof of Justin's statements regarding Christianity, can as an almost invariable rule be so singularly incorrect. The idea is monstrous, more especially when it is considered that these quotations occur in an elaborate apology for Christianity addressed to the Roman emperors, and in a careful and studied controversy with a Jew in defence of the new faith. The simple and natural conclusion, supported by many strong reasons, is, that Justin derived his quotations from a Gospel which was different from ours, although naturally by subject and design it must have been related to them. His Gospel, in fact, differs from our Synoptics as they differ from each other.

We now return to Tischendorf's statements with regard to Justin's acquaintance with our Gospels. Having examined the supposed references to the first Gospel, we find that Tischendorf speaks much less positively with regard to his knowledge of the other two Synoptics. He says: "There is the greatest probability that in several passages he also follows Mark and Luke."<sup>2</sup> First taking

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 11, 18.

<sup>2</sup> Dass er an mehreren Stellen auch den Markus und den Lukas befolge dafür hat sich die grösste Wahrscheinlichkeit herausgestellt.—Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 28.

Mark, we find that the only example which Tischendorf gives is the following. He says: "Twice (Dial. 76 and 100) he quotes as an expression of the Lord: 'The Son of Man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the Scribes and Pharisees (Ch. 100 by the 'Pharisees and Scribes'), and be crucified and the third day rise again.'"<sup>1</sup> This agrees better with Mark viii. 31 and Luke x. 21 than with Matt. xvi. 21, only in Justin the 'Pharisees' are put instead of the 'Elders and Chief Priests' (so Matthew, Mark, and Luke), likewise 'be crucified' instead of 'be killed.'"<sup>2</sup> This is the only instance of similarity with Mark that Tischendorf can produce, and we have given his own remarks to show how thoroughly weak his case is. The passage in Mark viii. 31, reads: "And he began to teach them that the Son of Man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the Elders and the Chief Priests (*ὑπὸ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ τῶν ἀρχιερέων*), and the Scribes and be killed (*καὶ ἀποκτανθῆναι*), and after three days (*καὶ μετὰ τρεῖς ἡμέρας*) rise again." And the following is the reading of Luke ix. 22: "Saying that the Son of Man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the Elders and Chief Priests (*ἀπὸ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων καὶ ἀρχιερέων*) and Scribes and be killed (*καὶ ἀποκτανθῆναι*), and the third day rise again." It will be perceived that, different as it also is, the passage in Luke is nearer than that of Mark, which cannot in any case have been the source of Justin's quotation. Tischendorf, however, does not point out that Justin, elsewhere, a third time refers to

<sup>1</sup> Δεῖ τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου πολλὰ παθεῖν, καὶ ἀποδοκιμασθῆναι ὑπὸ τῶν Γραμματέων καὶ Φαρισαίων, καὶ στανρωθῆναι, καὶ τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ ἀναστῆναι. Dial. 76 (c. 100, Φαρισαίων καὶ Γραμματέων).

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 28, anm. 1.

this very passage in the very same terms. He says: "And Christ . . . . having come . . . . and himself also preached, saying . . . . that he must suffer many things from the Scribes and Pharisees and be crucified, and the third day rise again."<sup>1</sup> Although this omits the words "and be rejected," it gives the whole of the passage literally as before. And thus there is the very remarkable testimony of a quotation three times repeated, with the same marked variations from our Gospels, to show that Justin found those very words in his Memoirs.<sup>2</sup> The persistent variation clearly indicates a different source from our Synoptics. We may, in reference to this reading, compare Luke xxiv. 6: "He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee (v. 7), saying that the Son of Man must be delivered up into the hands of sinful men, *and be crucified*, and the third day rise again." This reference to words of Jesus, in which the words *καὶ σταυρωθῆναι* occurred, as in Justin, indicates that although our Gospels do not contain it some others may well have done so. In one place Justin introduces the saying with the following words: "For he exclaimed before the crucifixion, the Son of Man," &c.,<sup>3</sup> both indicating a time for the discourse, and also quoting a distinct and definite saying in contradistinction to this report of the matter of his teaching, which is the form in which the parallel passage occurs in the Gospels. In Justin's Memoirs it no doubt existed as an actual discourse of Jesus, which he verbally and accurately quoted.

<sup>1</sup> ὅτι δὲ αὐτὸν πολλὰ παθεῖν ἀπὸ τῶν Γραμματέων καὶ Φαρισαίων, καὶ σταυρωθῆναι, καὶ τῇ τρίτῃ ἡμέρᾳ ἀναστῆναι. Dial. 51.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 256; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv.* Justin's, p. 201 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. 76.

With regard to the third Gospel, Tischendorf says: "It is in reference to Luke (xxii. 44) that Justin recalls in the Dialogue (103) the falling drops of the sweat of agony on the Mount of Olives, and certainly with express appeal to the Memoirs recorded by his Apostles and their followers."<sup>1</sup> Now we have already seen<sup>2</sup> that Justin, in the passage referred to, does not make use of the peculiar expression which gives the whole of its character to the account in Luke, and that there is no ground for affirming that Justin derived his information from that Gospel. The only other reference to passages proving the "probability" of Justin's use of Luke or Mark is that which we have just discussed—"The Son of Man must," &c. From this the character of Tischendorf's assumptions may be inferred. De Wette does not advance any instances of verbal agreement either with Mark or Luke.<sup>3</sup> He says, moreover: "The historical references are much freer still (than quotations), and combine in part the accounts of Matthew and Luke; some of the kind, however, are not found at all in our Canonical Gospels."<sup>4</sup> This we have already sufficiently demonstrated.

We might now well terminate the examination of Justin's quotations, which has already taken up too much of our space, but before doing so it may be well very briefly to refer to another point. In his work "On the Canon," Dr. Westcott adopts a somewhat singular course. He evidently feels the very great diffi-

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 28, anm. 1.

<sup>2</sup> p. 328 f.

<sup>3</sup> We may point out, however, that he says: "Andere wörtliche Uebereinstimmungen kommen mitten unter Abweichungen vor, wie Apol. ii. p. 75, vgl. Matt. i. 21, wo Luc. i. 35, damit combinirt ist." Einl. N. T., p. 105; but a single phrase combined with a passage very like one in a different Gospel is a very poor argument.

<sup>4</sup> Einl. N. T., p. 111.

culty in which any one who asserts the identity of the source of Justin's quotations with our Gospels is placed by the fact that, as a rule, these quotations differ from parallel passages in our Gospels; and whilst on the one hand maintaining that the quotations generally are from the Canonical Gospels, he on the other endeavours to reduce the number of those which profess to be quotations at all. He says: "To examine in detail the whole of Justin's quotations would be tedious and unnecessary. It will be enough to examine (1) those which are alleged by him as quotations, and (2) those also which, though anonymous, are yet found repeated with the same variations either in Justin's own writings, or (3) in heretical works. It is evidently on these quotations that the decision hangs."<sup>1</sup> Now under the first category Dr. Westcott finds very few. He says: "In seven passages only, as far as I can discover, does Justin profess to give the exact words recorded in the Memoirs; and in these, if there be no reason to the contrary, it is natural to expect that he will preserve the exact language of the Gospels which he used, just as in anonymous quotations we may conclude that he is trusting to memory."<sup>2</sup> Before proceeding further, we may point out the straits to which an apologist is reduced who starts with a foregone conclusion. We have already seen a number of Justin's professed quotations; but here, after reducing the number to seven only, our critic prepares a way of escape even out of these. It is difficult to understand what "reason to the contrary" can possibly justify a man "who professes to give the exact words recorded in the Memoirs" for not doing what he professes; and further, it passes our comprehension to understand why, in

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 112 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 114.

anonymous quotations, "we may conclude that he is trusting to memory." The cautious exception is as untenable as the gratuitous assumption, and both are adopted simply from the necessities of a divine defending an unsubstantial theory. Dr. Westcott continues as follows the passage which we have just interrupted:—

"The result of a first view of the passages is striking. Of the seven, five agree verbally with the text of St. Matthew or St. Luke, *exhibiting indeed three slight various readings not elsewhere found, but such as are easily explicable*; the sixth is a *compound summary* of words related by St. Matthew; the seventh alone *presents an important variation in the text of a verse*, which is, however, otherwise very uncertain."<sup>1</sup> The italics of course are ours. The "first view" of the passages and of the above statement is indeed striking. It is remarkable how easily difficulties are overcome under such an apologetic system. The striking result, to summarize Canon Westcott's own words, is this: out of seven professed quotations from the Memoirs, in which he admits we may expect to find the exact language preserved, five present three variations; one is a compressed summary, and does not agree verbally at all; and the seventh presents an important variation. Dr. Westcott, on the same easy system, continues: "Our inquiry is thus confined to the two last instances; and it must be seen whether their disagreement from the Synoptic Gospel is such as to outweigh the agreement of the remaining five."<sup>2</sup> Before proceeding to consider these seven passages admitted by Dr. Westcott, we must point out that in a note to the statement of the number, he mentions that he excludes other two pas-

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 113 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 114.

sages as "not merely quotations of words, but concise narratives."<sup>1</sup> If Canon Westcott did not know that there was great inconvenience in producing these two instances, he would scarcely have thus attempted to exclude them. If they profess to be quotations, why should they be excluded simply because they are combined with a historical statement? We shall produce them. The first is in Apol. i. 66: "For the Apostles, in the Memoirs composed by them, which are called Gospels,<sup>2</sup> have thus transmitted to us what was enjoined on them by Jesus: 'Having taken bread, he said, having given thanks: "This do in remembrance of me. This is my body." And similarly, having taken the cup and having given thanks, he said: "This is my blood," and delivered it to them alone.'"<sup>3</sup> This passage, it will be remembered, occurs in an elaborate apology for Christianity addressed to the Roman emperors, and here Justin is giving an account of the most solemn sacrament of his religion. Here, if ever, we might reasonably expect accuracy and care, and Justin, in fact, carefully indicates the source of the quotation he is going to make. It is difficult to understand any ground upon which so direct a quotation from the "Memoirs of the Apostles" can be set aside by Canon Westcott. Justin distinctly states that the Apostles in these Memoirs have "thus" (οὕτως) transmitted what was enjoined on us by Jesus, and then gives the precise

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 113, note 1.

<sup>2</sup> We have already discussed these words, p. 293 f.

<sup>3</sup> Οἱ γὰρ ἀπόστολοι ἐν τοῖς γενομένοις ὑπ' αὐτῶν ἀπομνημονεύμασιν, ἃ καλεῖται εὐαγγέλια, οὕτως παρέδωκαν ἐντετάλθαι αὐτοῖς τὸν Ἰησοῦν λαβόντα ἄρτον, εὐχαριστήσαντα εἰπεῖν· Τοῦτο ποιεῖτε εἰς τὴν ἀνάμνησίν μου. Τοῦτέστι τὸ σῶμά μου· καὶ τὸ ποτήριον ὁμοίως λαβόντα καὶ εὐχαριστήσαντα εἰπεῖν· Τοῦτό ἐστι αἷμά μου· καὶ μόνοις αὐτοῖς μεταδοῦναι. Apol. i. 66.

quotation. Had the quotation agreed with our Gospels, would it not have been claimed as a professedly accurate quotation from them? Surely no one can reasonably pretend, for instance, that when Justin, after this preamble, states that having taken bread, &c., *Jesus said*: "This do in remembrance of me: this is my body;" or having taken the cup, &c., *he said*: "This is my blood"—Justin does not deliberately mean to quote what Jesus actually did say? Now the account of the episode in Luke is as follows (xxii. 17): "And he took a cup, gave thanks, and said: Take this, and divide it among yourselves. 18. For I say unto you, I will not henceforth drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come. 19. And he took bread, gave thanks, brake it, and gave it unto them, saying: This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me. 20. And in like manner the cup after supper, saying: This is the new covenant in my blood, which is shed for you."<sup>1</sup> Dr. Westcott of course only compares this passage of Justin with Luke, to which and the parallel in 1 Cor. xi. 24, wide as the difference is, it is closer than to the accounts in the other two Gospels. That Justin professedly quoted literally from the Memoirs is evident, and is rendered still more clear by the serious context by which the quotation is introduced, the quotation in fact being made to authenticate by actual written testimony the explanations of Justin.

<sup>1</sup> 17. Καὶ δεξιόμενος ποτήριον εὐχαριστήσας εἶπεν λάβετε τοῦτο καὶ διαμερίσατε εἰς ἑαυτοὺς· 18. λέγω γὰρ ὑμῖν, οὐ μὴ πῖω ἀπὸ τοῦ γενήματος τῆς ἀμπέλου ἕως ὅτου ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ ἔλθῃ. 19. Καὶ λαβὼν ἄρτον εὐχαριστήσας ἔκλασεν καὶ ἔδωκεν αὐτοῖς λέγων Τοῦτό ἐστιν τὸ σῶμά μου τὸ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν διδόμενον· τοῦτο ποιεῖτε εἰς τὴν ἐμὴν ἀνάμνησιν. 20. Καὶ τὸ ποτήριον ὡσαύτως μετὰ τὸ δειπνήσαι, λέγων Τοῦτο τὸ ποτήριον ἡ καινὴ διαθήκη ἐν τῷ αἵματί μου, τὸ ὑπὲρ ὑμῶν ἐκχυνόμενον. Luke xxii. 17—20; cf. Matt. xxvi. 26 ff.; Mark xiv. 22 ff.

His dogmatic views, moreover, are distinctly drawn from a Gospel, which, in a more direct way than our Synoptics do, gave the expressions: "This is my body," and "This is my blood," and it must have been observed that Luke, with which Justin's reading alone is compared, not only has not: *Τοῦτό ἐστι αἷμά μου*, at all, but instead makes use of a totally different expression: "This cup is the new covenant in my blood, which is shed for you."

The second quotation from the Memoirs which Dr. Westcott passes over is that in Dial. 103, compared with Luke xxii. 42, 43,<sup>1</sup> on the Agony in the Garden, which we have already examined,<sup>2</sup> and found at variance with our Gospel, and without the peculiar and distinctive expressions of the latter.

We now come to the seven passages which Canon Westcott admits to be professed quotations from the Memoirs, and in which "it is natural to expect that he will preserve the exact words of the Gospels which he used." The first of these is a passage in the Dialogue, part of which has already been discussed in connection with the fire in Jordan and the voice at the Baptism, and found to be from a source different from our Synoptics.<sup>3</sup> Justin says: "For this devil also, at the time when he (Jesus) went up from the river Jordan when the voice spoke to Him: 'Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee,' is recorded in the Memoirs of the Apostles to have come to him and tempted him even so far as saying to him: 'Worship me;' and Christ answered him (*καὶ ἀποκρίνασθαι αὐτῷ τὸν Χριστὸν*), 'Get thee behind me, Satan' (*Ἔπαγε ὀπίσω μου, Σατανᾶ*), 'thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 113, note 1.

<sup>2</sup> p. 328 f.

<sup>3</sup> p. 317 f.

serve.'"<sup>1</sup> This passage is compared with the account of the temptation in Matt. iv. 9, 10 : "And he said unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. 10. Then saith Jesus unto him (τότε λέγει αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς), Get thee hence, Satan (Ἔπαγε Σατανᾶ) : *it is written*, Thou shalt worship," &c. All the oldest Codices, it should be stated, omit the ὀπίσω μου, as we have done, but Cod. D. (Bezae) and a few others of infirm authority, insert these two words. Canon Westcott, however, justly admits them to be "probably only a very early interpolation."<sup>2</sup> We have no reason whatever for supposing that they existed in Matthew during Justin's time. The oldest Codices omit the whole phrase from the parallel passage, Luke iv. 8, but Cod. A. is an exception, and reads : Ἔπαγε ὀπίσω μου, Σατανᾶ. The best modern editions, however, reject this as a mere recent addition to Luke. A comparison of the first and third Gospels with Justin clearly shows that the Gospel which he used followed the former more closely than Luke. Matthew makes the climax of the temptation the view of all the kingdoms of the world, and the offer to give them to Jesus if he will fall down and worship Satan. Luke, on the contrary, makes the final temptation the suggestion to throw himself down from the pinnacle of the temple. Justin's Gospel, as the words, "so far as saying to him" (μέχρι τοῦ εἰπεῖν αὐτῷ), &c., clearly indicate, had the same climax as Matthew. Now

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ γὰρ οὗτος ὁ διήβολος, ἅμα τῷ ἀναβῆναι αὐτὸν ἀπὸ τοῦ ποταμοῦ τοῦ Ἰορδάνου, τῆς φωνῆς αὐτοῦ λεχθείσης, "Υἱός μου εἶ σύ. ἐγὼ σήμερον γεγέννηκά σε" ἐν τοῖς ἀποκηρυγμαῖσι τῶν ἀποστόλων γέγραπται προσελθὼν αὐτῷ καὶ πειρίζων μέχρι τοῦ εἰπεῖν αὐτῷ, "Προσκύνησόν μοι," καὶ ἀποκρίνασθαι αὐτῷ τὸν Χριστὴν, "Ἔπαγε ὀπίσω μου, Σατανᾶ. Κύριον τὸν θεὸν σου προσκυνήσεις, καὶ αὐτῷ μόνῳ λατρεύσεις. Dial. 103.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 113, note 2, i.

the following points must be observed. Justin makes the words of Satan, "Worship me" (*Προσκύνησόν μοι*), a distinct quotation; the Gospel makes Satan offer all that he has shown "if thou wilt fall down and worship me" (*ἐὰν πεσὼν προσκυνήσης μοι*). Then Justin's quotation proceeds: "And Christ answered him" (*καὶ ἀποκρίνασθαι αὐτῷ τὸν Χριστὸν*); whilst Matthew has, "Then Jesus saith to him" (*τότε λέγει αὐτῷ ὁ Ἰησοῦς*), which is a marked variation.<sup>1</sup> The *ὀπίσω μου* of Justin is not found in any of the older Codices of Matthew. Then the words: "it is written," which form part of the reply of Jesus in our Gospels, are omitted in Justin's; but we must add that, in Dial. 125, in again referring to the temptation, he adds, "it is written." Still, in that passage he also omits the whole phrase, "Get thee behind me, Satan," and commences: "For he answered him: It is written, Thou shalt worship," &c.

We must, however, again point out the most important fact, that this account of the temptation is directly connected with another which is foreign to our Gospels. The Devil is said to come at the time Jesus went up out of the Jordan and the voice said to him: "Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee"—words which do not occur at all in our Gospels, and which are again bound up with the incident of the fire in Jordan. It is altogether unreasonable to assert that Justin could have referred the fact which he proceeds to quote from the Memoirs, to the time those words were uttered, if they were not to be found in the same Memoirs. The one incident was most certainly not derived from our Gospels, inasmuch as they do not contain it, and there are the very strongest reasons for asserting that Justin derived the account of the

<sup>1</sup> Luke iv. 12, reads, *καὶ ἀποκριθεὶς αὐτῷ εἶπεν ὁ Ἰησοῦς.*

temptation from a source which contained the other. Under these circumstances every variation is an indication, and those which we have pointed out are not accidental, but clearly exclude the assertion that the quotation is from our Gospels.

The second of the seven passages of Canon Westcott is one of those from the Sermon on the Mount, Dial. 105, compared with Matt. v. 20, adduced by De Wette, which we have already considered.<sup>1</sup> With the exception of the opening words, λέγω γὰρ ὑμῶν ὅτι, the two sentences agree, but this is no proof whatever that Justin derived the passage from Matthew; while on the contrary, the persistent variation of the rest of his quotations from the Sermon on the Mount, both in order and language, forces upon us the conviction that he derived the whole from a source different from our Gospels.

The third passage of Dr. Westcott is that regarding the sign of Jonas the prophet, Matt. xii. 39, compared with Dial. 107, which was the second instance adduced by Tischendorf. We have already examined it,<sup>2</sup> and found that it presents distinct variations from our first Synoptic, both linguistically and otherwise, and that many reasons lead to the conclusion that it was quoted from a Gospel different from ours.

The fourth of Canon Westcott's quotations is the following, to part of which we have already had occasion to refer:<sup>3</sup> "For which reason our Christ declared on earth to those who asserted that Elias must come before Christ: Elias indeed shall come (Ἡλίας μὲν ἐλεύσεται) and shall restore all things: but I say unto you that Elijah is come already, and they knew him not, but did unto him (αὐτῷ) whatsoever they listed. And it is

<sup>1</sup> Cf. pp. 345, 383.

<sup>2</sup> p. 342 f.

<sup>3</sup> p. 316.

written that then the disciples understood that he spoke to them of John the Baptist.”<sup>1</sup> The “express quotation” in this passage, which is compared with Matt. xvii. 11—13, is limited by Canon Westcott to the last short sentence<sup>2</sup> corresponding with Matt. xvii. 13, and he points out that Credner admits that it must have been taken from Matthew. It is quite true that Credner considers that if any passage of Justin’s quotations proves a necessary connection between Justin’s Gospels and the Gospel according to Matthew, it is this sentence: “And it is written that then the disciples, &c.” He explains his reason for this opinion as follows: “These words can only be derived from our Matthew, with which they literally agree; for it is thoroughly improbable that a remark of so special a description could have been made by two different and independent individuals so completely alike.”<sup>3</sup> We totally differ from this argument, which is singularly opposed to Credner’s usual clear and thoughtful mode of reasoning.<sup>4</sup> No doubt if such Gospels could be considered to be absolutely distinct and independent works, deriving all their matter from individual and separate observation of the occurrences narrated by their authors and personal report of the discourses given, there might be greater force in the

<sup>1</sup> Διὸ καὶ ὁ ἡμέτερος Χριστὸς εἰρήκει ἐπὶ γῆς τότε τοῖς λέγουσι πρὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ Ἴλιαν δεῖν εἰλθεῖν. “Ἰλιάς μὲν ἐλεύσεται καὶ ἀποκαταστήσει πάντα· λέγω δὲ ὑμῖν ὅτι Ἰλιάς ἦδη ἦλθε, καὶ οὐκ ἐπέγνωσαν αὐτὸν, ἀλλ’ ἐποίησαν αὐτῷ ὅσα ἠθέλησαν.” Καὶ γέγραπται ὅτι τότε συνῆκαν οἱ μαθηταὶ ὅτι περὶ Ἰωάννου τοῦ Βαπτιστοῦ εἶπεν αὐτοῖς. Dial. 49.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 114, note 4.

<sup>3</sup> Diese Worte können nur aus unserm Matthäus, mit welchem sie buchstäblich übereinstimmen, entnommen sein; denn es ist durchaus unwahrscheinlich, dass eine Bemerkung so specieller Art von zwei verschiedenen und von einander unabhängigen Individuen so ganz auf dieselbe Weise gemacht worden sei. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 237.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 280 f.

argument, although even in that case it would have been far from conclusive here, inasmuch as the observation we are considering is the mere simple statement of a fact necessary to complete the episode, and it might well have been made in the same terms by separate reporters. The fact is, however, that the numerous Gospels current in the early Church cannot have been, and our synoptic Gospels most certainly are not, independent works, but are based upon earlier evangelical writings no longer extant, and have borrowed from each other. The Gospels did not originate full fledged as we now have them, but are the result of many revisions of previously existing materials. Critics may differ as to the relative ages and order of the Synoptics, but almost all are agreed that in one order or another they are dependent on each other, and on older forms of the Gospel. Now such an expression as Matt. xvii. 13 in some early record of the discourse might have been transferred to a dozen of other Christian writings. Ewald assigns the passage to the oldest Gospel, Matthew in its present form being fifth in descent.<sup>1</sup>

Our three canonical Gospels are filled with instances in which expressions still more individual are repeated, and these show that such phrases cannot be limited to one Gospel, but, if confined in the first instance to one original source, may have been transferred to many subsequent evangelical works. Take, for instance, a passage in Matt. vii. 28, 29: “. . . the multitudes were astonished at his teaching: for he taught them as having authority, and not as their scribes.”<sup>2</sup> Mark i. 22

<sup>1</sup> Dio drei ersten Evangelien, p. 34, cf. p. 1; Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1849, p. 190 ff.

<sup>2</sup> . . . ἐξεπλήσσοντο οἱ ὄχλοι ἐπὶ τῇ διδαχῇ αὐτοῦ· ἦν γὰρ διδάσκων αὐτοὺς ὡς ἐξουσίαν ἔχων, καὶ οὐχ ὡς οἱ γραμματεῖς αὐτῶν. Matt. vii. 28, 29.

has the very same passage,<sup>1</sup> with the mere omission of "the multitudes" (οἱ ὄχλοι), which does not in the least affect the argument; and Luke iv. 32: "And they were astonished at his teaching: for his word was power."<sup>2</sup> Although the author of the third Gospel somewhat alters the language, it is clear that he follows the same original, and retains it in the same context as the second Gospel. Now the occurrence of such a passage as this in one of the Fathers, if either the first or second Gospels were lost, would, on Credner's grounds, be attributed undoubtedly to the survivor, although in reality derived from the Gospel no longer extant, which likewise contained it. Another example may be pointed out in Matt. xiii. 34: "All these things spake Jesus unto the multitudes in parables; and *without a parable spake he not unto them,*" compared with Mark iv. 33, 34, "And with many such parables spake he the word unto them . . . and without a parable spake he not unto them." The part of this very individual remark which we have italicised is literally the same in both Gospels, as a personal comment at the end of the parable of the grain of mustard seed. Then, for instance, in the account of the sleep of the three disciples during the agony in the Garden (Matt. xxvi. 43, Mark xiv. 40), the expression "and he found them asleep, *for their eyes were heavy,*" which is equally individual, is literally the same in the first two Gospels. Another special remark of a similar kind regarding the rich young man: "he went away sorrowful, for he had great possessions," is found both in Matt. xix. 22 and Mark x. 22. Such

<sup>1</sup> The final αἰτῶν is omitted from the end of the passage in Matthew in many MSS., and added by others in Mark.

<sup>2</sup> καὶ ἐξεπλήσσοιτο ἐπὶ τῇ διδαχῇ αὐτοῦ, ὅτι ἐν ἐξουσίᾳ ἦν ὁ λόγος αὐτοῦ. Luke iv. 32.

examples<sup>1</sup> might be multiplied, and they show that the occurrence of passages of the most individual character cannot in Justin's time be limited to any single Gospel.

Now the verse we are discussing, Matt. xvii. 13, in all probability, as Ewald supposes, occurred in one or more of the older forms of the Gospel from which our Synoptics and many other similar works derived their matter, and nothing is more likely than that the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which in many respects was nearly related to Matthew, may have contained it. At any rate we have shown that such sayings cannot, however apparently individual, be considered evidence of the use of a particular Gospel simply because it happens to be the only one now extant which contains it. Credner, however, whilst expressing the opinion which we have quoted likewise adds his belief that by the expression *καὶ γέγραπται* Justin seems expressly to indicate that this sentence is taken from a different work from what precedes it, and he has proved that the preceding part of the quotation was not derived from our Gospels.<sup>2</sup> We cannot, however, coincide with this opinion either. It seems to us that the expression "and it is written" simply was made use of by Justin to show that the identification of Elias with John the Baptist is not his, but was the impression conveyed at the time by Jesus to his disciples. Now the whole narrative of the baptism of John in Justin bears characteristic marks of being from a Gospel different from ours,<sup>3</sup> and in the first part of this very quotation we find distinct variation. Justin first affirms that Jesus in his teaching had pro-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Matt. iii. 3, Mark i. 2, 3, Luko iii. 4; Matt. iii. 5, 6, Mark i. 5; Matt. xiv. 3, 4, Mark vi. 17, 18; Matt. xiv. 9, Mark vi. 26; Matt. xxvii. 14, Mark xv. 5; Matt. xxvii. 39, Mark xv. 29, &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 237.*

<sup>3</sup> p. 316 ff.

claimed that Elias should also come (*καὶ Ἡλίαν ἐλεύσεται*), and then further on he gives the actual words of Jesus: *Ἡλίας μὲν ἐλεύσεται, κ.τ.λ.*, which we have before us, whilst in Matthew the words are: *Ἡλίας μὲν ἔρχεται*, and there is no MS. which reads *ἐλεύσεται* for *ἔρχεται*, and yet, as Credner remarks, the whole force of the quotation rests upon the word, and Justin is persistent in his variation from the text of our first Synoptic. It is absurd to say that Justin quotes loosely the important part of his passage, and then about a few words at the close pretends to be so particularly careful. Considering all the facts of the case we must conclude that this quotation also is from a source different from our Gospels.<sup>1</sup>

Another point, however, must be noted. Dr. Westcott claims this passage as an express quotation from the Memoirs, apparently for no other reason than that the few words happen to agree with Matt. xvii. 13, and that he wishes to identify the Memoirs with our Gospels. Justin, however, does not once mention the Memoirs in this chapter; it follows, therefore, that Canon Westcott who is so exceedingly strict in his limitation of express quotations, assumes that all quotations of Christian history and words of Jesus in Justin are to be considered as derived from the Memoirs whether they be mentioned by name or not. We have already seen that amongst these there are not only quotations differing from the Gospels, and contradicting them, but others which have no parallels at all in them.

The fifth of Dr. Westcott's express quotations occurs in Dial. 105, where Justin says: "For when he (Jesus) was giving up his spirit on the cross he said: 'Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit,' as I have also

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr. p. 280.

learned from the Memoirs." This short sentence agrees with Luke xxiii. 46, it is true, but as we have already shown,<sup>1</sup> Justin's whole account of the Crucifixion differs so materially from that in our Gospels that it cannot have been derived from them.

We see this forcibly in examining the sixth of Canon Westcott's quotations, which is likewise connected with the Crucifixion. "For they who saw him crucified also wagged their heads each one of them, and distorted their lips, and screwing their noses one to another spoke ironically those words which are also written in the Memoirs of his Apostles: He declared himself the son of God: come down let him walk about: let God save him."<sup>2</sup> We have ourselves already quoted and discussed this passage,<sup>3</sup> and need not further examine it here. Canon Westcott has nothing better to say regarding this quotation, in an examination of the accuracy of parallel passages, than this: "These exact words do not occur in our Gospels, but we do find there others so closely connected with them that few readers would feel the difference!"<sup>4</sup> When criticism descends to language like this, the case is indeed desperate. It is clear that, as Canon Westcott admits, the words are expressly declared to be a quotation from the Memoirs of the Apostles, but they do not exist in our Gospels, and consequently our Gospels are not identical with the Memoirs. Canon Westcott refers to the taunts in Matthew and then with commendable candour he concludes his examination of the quotation with the following words: "No manuscript or Father (so far as we know) has preserved any reading of the passage more closely resembling Justin's quotation; and if it appear not to be deducible from our Gospels, due allowance being made for the object which he had in

<sup>1</sup> p. 333 ff.    <sup>2</sup> Dial. 101.    <sup>3</sup> p. 334 ff.    <sup>4</sup> On the Canon, p. 114 f.

view, its source must remain concealed."<sup>1</sup> We need only add that it is absurd to talk of making "due allowance" for the object which Justin had in view. His immediate object was accurate quotation, and no allowance can account for such variation in language and thought as is presented in this passage. That this passage, though a professed quotation from the Memoirs, is not taken from our Gospels is certain both from its own variations and the differences in other parts of Justin's account of the Crucifixion, an event whose solemnity and importance might well be expected to secure reverential accuracy. It is impossible to avoid the conclusion that Justin's Memoirs of the Apostles were not our Gospels, and the systematic variation of his quotations thus receives its natural and reasonable explanation.

The seventh and last of Dr. Westcott's express quotations is, as he states, "more remarkable." We subjoin the passage in contrast with the parallel texts of the first and third Gospels.

JUSTIN. DIAL. 100.

And in the Gospel it is written indeed that he said :

All things have been delivered to me by the Father, and no one knoweth (*γινώσκει*) the Father but the Son, nor the Son but the Father and

those to whom the Son shall reveal him.

MATT. XI. 27.

All things were delivered to me by the<sup>2</sup> Father, and no one knoweth (*ἐπιγινώσκει*) the Son but the Father, nor knoweth (*ἐπιγινώσκει*) anyone the Father but the Son, and he to whom the son is minded to reveal him.

LUKE x. 22.

All things were delivered to me by my Father, and no one knoweth (*γινώσκει*) who the Son is but the Father, and who the Father is but the Son, and he to whom the Son is minded to reveal him.

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 115.

<sup>2</sup> Most Codices read "my," but the Cod. Sin. having "the," we give it as more favourable.

JUSTIN. DIAL. 100

Καὶ ἐν τῷ εὐαγγελίῳ  
δὲ γέγραπται εἰπών·  
Πάντα μοι παραδέδοται  
ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς καὶ οὐδεὶς  
γινώσκει τὸν πατέρα εἰ  
μὴ ὁ υἱός· οὐδὲ τὸν υἱὸν  
εἰ μὴ ὁ πατήρ καὶ οἱς ἂν  
ὁ υἱὸς ἀποκαλύψῃ.

MATT. XI. 27.

Πάντα μοι παρεδόθη  
ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς,<sup>1</sup> καὶ οὐδεὶς  
ἐπιγινώσκει τὸν υἱὸν εἰ  
μὴ ὁ πατήρ, οὐδὲ τὸν  
πατέρα τις ἐπιγινώσκει  
εἰ μὴ ὁ υἱὸς καὶ ᾧ ἐὼν  
βούληται ὁ υἱὸς ἀποκα-  
λύψαι.

LUKE X. 22.

Πάντα μοι παρεδόθη  
ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς μου, καὶ  
οὐδεὶς γινώσκει τίς ἐστίν  
ὁ υἱὸς εἰ μὴ ὁ πατήρ,  
καὶ τίς ἐστίν ὁ πατήρ  
εἰ μὴ ὁ υἱὸς καὶ ᾧ ἐὼν  
βούληται ὁ υἱὸς ἀποκα-  
λύψαι.

It is apparent that Justin's quotation differs very materially from our Gospels in language, in construction, and in meaning. These variations, however, acquire very remarkable confirmation and significance from the fact that Justin in two other places<sup>2</sup> quotes the latter and larger part of the passage from οὐδεὶς in precisely the same way, with the sole exception that, in both of these quotations, he uses the aorist *ἔγνω* instead of *γινώσκει*. This threefold repetition in the same peculiar form clearly stamps the passage as being a literal quotation from his Gospel, and the one exception to the verbal agreement of the three passages, in the substitution of the present for the aorist in the Dialogue, does not in the least remove or lessen the fundamental variation of the passage from our Gospel. As the *ἔγνω* is twice repeated it was probably the reading of his text. Now it is well known that the peculiar form of the quotation in Justin occurred in what came to be considered heretical Gospels, and constituted the basis of important Gnostic doctrines.<sup>3</sup> Canon Westcott speaks of the use of this passage by the Fathers in agreement with Justin in a manner which, unintentionally we

<sup>1</sup> See Note 2 on preceding page.

<sup>2</sup> *Apol.*, i. 63.

<sup>3</sup> Canon Westcott merely alludes to this in the briefest way in a note.

On the Canon, p. 115, note 2.

have no doubt, absolutely misrepresents important facts. He says: "The transposition of the words still remains; and how little weight can be attached to that will appear upon an examination of the various forms in which the text is quoted by Fathers like Origen, Irenæus and Epiphanius, who admitted our Gospels exclusively. It occurs in them as will be seen from the table of readings<sup>1</sup> with almost every possible variation. Irenæus in the course of one chapter quotes the verse first as it stands in the canonical text; then in the same order, but with the last clause like Justin's; and once again altogether as he has given it. Epiphanius likewise quotes the text seven times in the same order as Justin, and four times as it stands in the Gospels."<sup>2</sup> Now in the chapter to which reference is made in this sentence Irenæus commences by stating that the Lord had declared "Nemo cognoscit Filium nisi Pater; neque Patrem quis cognoscit nisi Filius, et cui voluerit Filius revelare,"<sup>3</sup> as he says, "Matthew has set it down and Luke similarly, and Mark the very same."<sup>4</sup> He goes on to state, however, that those who would be wiser than the apostles write this verse as follows: "Nemo cognovit Patrem nisi Filius; nec Filium nisi Pater, et cui voluerit Filius revelare." And he explains: "They interpret it as though the true God was known to no man before the coming of our Lord; and that God who was announced by the Prophets they affirm not to be the

<sup>1</sup> In the few readings given in this table, Dr. Westcott does not distinguish the writers at all. Cf. On the Canon, p. 116, note 3.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 116.

<sup>3</sup> Adv. Hær., iv. 6, § 1.

<sup>4</sup> Sic et Mathæus posuit, et Lucas similiter, et Marcus idem ipsum. We need not point out that this is a misstatement, for our Mark has not got the passage at all.

Father of Christ.”<sup>1</sup> Now in this passage we have the *ἔγνω* of Justin in the ‘cognovit,’ in contradistinction to the ‘cognoscit’ of the Gospel, and his transposition of order as not by any possibility an accidental thing, but as the distinct basis of doctrines. Irenæus goes on to argue that no one can know the Father unless through the Word of God, that is through the Son, and this is why he said: “Nemo cognoscit Patrem nisi Filius; neque Filium nisi Pater, et quibuscunque Filius revelaverit.’ Thus declaring himself and the Father as he is, in order that we may not receive any other Father except him who is revealed by the Son.”<sup>2</sup> In this third quotation Irenæus alters the *ἔγνω* into *γινώσκει*, but retains the form, for the rest, of the Gnostics and of Justin, and his aim apparently is to show that adopting his present tense instead of the aorist the transposition of words is of no importance. A fourth time, however, in the same chapter, which in fact is wholly dedicated to this passage and to the doctrines based upon it, Irenæus quotes the saying “Nemo cognoscit Filium nisi Pater; neque Patrem nisi Filius, et quibuscunque Filius revelaverit.”<sup>3</sup> Here the language and order of the Gospel are followed with the exception that ‘cui voluerit revelare’ is altered to the ‘quibuscunque revelaverit’ of Justin; and that this is intentional is made clear by the continuation: “For *revelaverit* was said not with reference to the future alone,”<sup>4</sup> &c.

<sup>1</sup> “Et interpretantur, quasi a nullo cognitus sit verus Deus ante Domini nostri adventum: et cum Deum, qui a prophetis sit annuntiatus, dicunt non esse Patrem Christi.” Adv. Hæc., iv. 6, § 1.

<sup>2</sup> Docens semetipsum et Patrem, sicut est, ut alterum non recipiamus Patrem, nisi eum qui a Filio revelatur. *Ib.*, iv. 6, § 3.

<sup>3</sup> Adv. Hæc., iv. 6, § 7.

<sup>4</sup> Revelaverit enim, non solum in futurum dictum est, &c.; *Ib.*, iv. 6, § 7.

Now in this chapter we learn very clearly that, although the canonical Gospels by the express declaration of Irenæus had their present reading of the passage before us, other Gospels of considerable authority even in his time had the form of Justin, for again in a fifth passage he quotes the opening words: "He who was known, therefore, was not different from him who declared: 'No one knoweth the Father,' but one and the same."<sup>1</sup> With the usual alteration of the verb to the present tense, Irenæus in this and in one of the other quotations of this passage just cited gives some authority to the transposition of the words "Father" and "Son," although the reading was opposed to the Gospels, but he invariably adheres to *γινώσκει* and condemns *ἔγνων*, the reading maintained by those who in the estimation of Irenæus "would be wiser than the Apostles." Elsewhere, descanting on the passages of Scripture by which heretics attempt to prove that the Father was unknown before the advent of Christ, Irenæus, after accusing them of garbling passages of Scripture,<sup>2</sup> goes on to say of the Marcosians and others: "Besides these, they adduce an indescribable number of apocryphal and spurious works which they themselves have forged in order that they may bewilder the foolish, and those who are not versed in the Scriptures of truth."<sup>3</sup> He also points out passages occurring in our Gospels to which they give a peculiar interpretation, and amongst these that quoted by Justin. He says: "But

<sup>1</sup> Non ergo alius erat qui cognoscebatur, et alius qui dicebat: "Nemo cognoscit Patrem:" sed unus et idem, &c.; *Ib.*, iv. 6, § 7. In another place Irenæus again quotes the passage in the same order, with the same careful adherence to the present tense. *Adv. Hær.*, ii. 6, § 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Adv. Hær.*, i. 19, § 1.

<sup>3</sup> Πρὸς δὲ τοῦτοις ἀμύθητον πλῆθος ἀποκρίφων καὶ ψευδῶν γραφῶν, ἃς αὐτοὶ ἔπλασαν, παρεισφέρουσιν εἰς κατάπληξιν τῶν ἀνοήτων καὶ τῆς ἀληθείας μὴ ἐπισταμένων γράμματα. *Adv. Hær.*, i. 20, § 1.

they adduce as the highest testimony, and as it were the crown of their system, the following passage. . . . ‘All things were delivered to me by my Father, and no one knew (ἐγνώ) the Father but the Son, and the Son but the Father, and he to whom (ᾧ ἄν) the Son shall reveal (ἀποκαλύψῃ).’<sup>1</sup> In these words they assert that he clearly demonstrated that the Father of truth whom they have invented was known to no one before his coming; and they desire to interpret the words as though the Maker and Creator had been unknown to all, and the Lord spoke these words regarding the Father unknown to all whom they proclaim.”<sup>2</sup> Here we have the exact quotation twice made by Justin, with the ἐγνώ and the same order, set forth as the reading of the Gospels of the Marcosians and other sects, and the highest testimony to their system. It is quite impossible that Justin could have altered the passage by an error of memory to this precise form, but it must be regarded as the reading of his Memoirs.<sup>3</sup> The evidence of Irenæus is clear: The Gospels had the reading which we now find in them, but apocryphal Gospels on the other hand had that which we find twice quoted by Justin, and the passage was as it were the text upon which a large sect of the early Church based its most fundamental doctrine. The ἐγνώ is invariably repudiated, but the transposition of the words

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Hær., i. 20, § 3. And again, referring to Valentinus and his followers, and endeavouring to show the inconsistency of their views, he says: “Salvator ergo, secundum eos, erit mentitus, dicens: ‘Nemo cognovit Patrem nisi Filius.’ Si enim cognitus est vel a matre, vel a semine ejus; solutum est illud, quod, ‘nemo cognovit Patrem nisi Filius.’” Adv. Hær., ii. 14, § 7. Irenæus then endeavours out of their own form of the text to confute their doctrines.

<sup>2</sup> Adv. Hær., i. 20, § 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Crelmer*, Beiträge, i. p. 210 f., 248 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 201; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 245.

“Father” and “Son” was apparently admitted to a certain extent, although the authority for this was not derived from the Gospels recognized by the Church, which contained the contrary order.

We must briefly refer to the use of this passage by Clement of Alexandria. He quotes portions of the text eight times, and although with some variation of terms he invariably follows the order of the Gospels. Six times he makes use of the aorist ἔγνω,<sup>1</sup> once of γινώσκει,<sup>2</sup> and once of ἐπιγινώσκει.<sup>3</sup> He only once quotes the whole passage,<sup>4</sup> but on this occasion, as well as six others in which he only quotes the latter part of the sentence,<sup>5</sup> he omits βούληται, and reads “and he to whom the Son shall reveal,” thus supporting the ἀποκαλύψη of Justin. Twice he has “God” instead of “Father,”<sup>6</sup> and once he substitutes μηδεὶς for οὐδεὶς.<sup>7</sup> It is evident from the loose and fragmentary way in which Clement interweaves the passage with his text, that he is more concerned with the sense than the verbal accuracy of the quotation, but the result of his evidence is that he never departs from the Gospel order of “Father” and “Son,” although he frequently makes use of ἔγνω and also employs ἀποκαλύψη in agreement with Justin, and, therefore, he shows the prevalence of forms approximating to, though always presenting material difference from, the reading of Justin.

Epiphanius refers to this passage no less than ten

<sup>1</sup> *Paed.*, i. 9, § 88; i. 5, § 20; *Strom.*, i. 28, § 178; v. 13, § 95; vii. 10, § 58; *Cohort.*, i. 10.

<sup>2</sup> *Strom.*, vii. 18, § 109.

<sup>3</sup> *Quis Div. Salv.*, 9.

<sup>4</sup> *Strom.*, i. 28, § 178.

<sup>5</sup> *Coh.*, i. § 10; *Paed.*, i. 5, § 20; *Strom.*, v. 13, § 85; vii. 10, § 58; vi. 18, § 109; *Quis Div. Salv.*, 8.

<sup>6</sup> *Coh.*, i. § 10; *Paed.*, i. 5, § 20.

<sup>7</sup> *Strom.*, v. 13, § 85.

times,<sup>1</sup> but he only quotes it fully five times, and upon each of these occasions with variations. Of the five times to which we refer, he thrice follows the order of the Gospels,<sup>2</sup> as he does likewise in another place where he does not complete the sentence.<sup>3</sup> On the remaining two occasions he adopts the same order as Justin, with variations from his reading, however, to which we shall presently refer;<sup>4</sup> and where he only partially quotes he follows the same order on other three occasions,<sup>5</sup> and in one other place the quotation is too fragmentary to allow us to distinguish the order.<sup>6</sup> Now in all of these ten quotations, with one exception, Epiphanius substitutes *οἶδε* for *ἐπιγινώσκει* at the commencement of the passage in Matthew, and only thrice does he repeat the verb in the second clause as in that Gospel, and on these occasions he twice makes use of *οἶδε*<sup>7</sup> and once of *ἔγνω*.<sup>8</sup> He once uses *ἔγνω* with the same order as Justin, but does not complete the sentence.<sup>9</sup> Each time he completes the quotation he uses *ὃ ἐάν* with the Gospel, and *ἀποκαλύψη* with Justin,<sup>10</sup> but only once out of the five complete quotations does he insert *ὁ υἱὸς* in the concluding phrase. It is evident from this examination, which we must not carry further, that Epiphanius never verbally agrees with the Gospel in his quotation of this passage and never verbally with Justin, but mainly fol-

<sup>1</sup> Hær., liv. 4, ed. Petav. p. 466; lxiv. 9, p. 532; lxxv. 6, p. 613; lxxix. 43, p. 766; lxxiv. 4, p. 891, 10, p. 898; lxxvi. 7, p. 943, 29, p. 977, 32, p. 981.

<sup>2</sup> Hær., lxxvi. 7, p. 943; liv. 4, p. 466; lxxv. 6, p. 613.

<sup>3</sup> Hær., lxxvi. 9, p. 532.

<sup>4</sup> Hær., lxxiv. 4, p. 891; lxxvi. 29, p. 977.

<sup>5</sup> Hær., lxxix. 43, p. 766; lxxiv. 10, p. 898; lxxvi. 32, p. 981.

<sup>6</sup> Hær., lxxvi. 32, p. 981.

<sup>7</sup> Hær., liv. 4, p. 466; lxxix. 43, p. 766.

<sup>8</sup> Hær., lxxv. 6, p. 613

<sup>9</sup> Hær., lxxiv. 10, p. 898.

<sup>10</sup> Except once when he has *ἀποκαλύπτει*. Hær., lxxiv. 4, p. 891.

lows a version different from both. It must be remembered, however, that he is writing against various heresies, and it does not seem to us improbable that he reproduces forms of the passage current amongst those sects.

In his work against Marcion, Tertullian says: "With regard to the Father, however, that he was never seen, the Gospel which is common to us will testify, as it was said by Christ: *Nemo cognovit patrem nisi filius,*"<sup>1</sup> but elsewhere he translates "*Nemo scit,*"<sup>2</sup> evidently not fully appreciating the difference of *ἔγνω*.<sup>3</sup> The passage in Marcion's Gospel reads like Justin's: *οὐδεὶς ἔγνω τὸν πατέρα, εἰ μὴ ὁ υἱὸς, οὐδὲ τὸν υἱὸν τις γινώσκει, εἰ μὴ ὁ πατήρ.*<sup>4</sup> The use of *ἔγνω* as applied to the Father and *γινώσκει* as regards the Son in this passage is suggestive. Origen almost invariably uses *ἔγνω*, sometimes adopting the order of the Gospels and sometimes that of Justin, and always employing *ἀποκαλύψῃ*.<sup>5</sup> The Clementine Homilies always read *ἔγνω*, and always follow the same order as Justin, presenting other and persistent variations from the form in the Gospels. *Οὐδεὶς ἔγνω τὸν πατέρα εἰ μὴ ὁ υἱὸς, ὡς οὐδὲ τὸν υἱὸν τις εἶδεν*<sup>6</sup> *εἰ μὴ ὁ πατήρ, καὶ οἷς ἂν βούληται ὁ υἱὸς ἀποκαλύψαι.*<sup>7</sup> This reading occurs four times. The Clementine Recognitions have the aorist with the order of the Gospels.<sup>8</sup>

There only remain a few more lines to add to those already quoted to complete the whole of Dr. Westcott's

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Marc., ii. 27.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 25, cf. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeldt*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 202 f.

<sup>4</sup> Dial. de recta in Deum fide, 1; *Origen*, Op., i. p. 817 D; *Thilo*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., p. 433; *Hahn*, Das Evang. Marcions, p. 160.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. *Griesbach*, Symb. Crit., ii. p. 271, 373.

<sup>6</sup> *Credner*, Boitūgo, i. p. 250.

<sup>7</sup> Clem. Hom., xvii. 4; xviii. 4, 13, 20; xviii. 11.

<sup>8</sup> Clem. Recog., ii. 47.

argument regarding this passage. He continues and concludes thus: "If, indeed, Justin's quotations were made from memory, no transposition could be more natural; and if we suppose that he copied the passage directly from a manuscript, there is no difficulty in believing that he found it so written in a manuscript of the Canonical St. Matthew, since the variation is excluded by no internal improbability, while it is found elsewhere, and its origin is easily explicable."<sup>1</sup> It will be observed that Canon Westcott does not attempt any argument, but simply confines himself to suppositions. If such explanations were only valid, there could be no difficulty in believing anything, and every embarrassing circumstance would indeed be easily explicable.

The facts of the case may be briefly summed up as follows: Justin deliberately and expressly quotes from his Gospel, himself calling it "Gospel," be it observed, a passage whose nearest parallel in our Gospels is Matt. xi. 27. This quotation presents material variations from our Canonical Gospel both in form and language. The larger part of the passage he quotes twice in a different work written years before in precisely the same words as the third quotation, with the sole exception that he uses the aorist instead of the present tense of the verb. No MS. of our Gospel extant approximates to the reading in Justin, and we are expressly told by Irenæus that the present reading of our Matthew was that existing in his day. On the other hand, Irenæus states with equal distinctness that Gospels used by Gnostic sects had the reading of Justin, and that the passage was "the very crown of their system," and one upon whose testimony they based their leading doctrines. Here, then, is the

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 117.

clear statement that Justin's quotation disagrees with the form in the Gospels, and agrees with that of other Gospels. The variations occurring in the numerous quotations of the same passage by the Fathers, which we have analysed, show that they handled it very loosely, but also indicate that there must have been various readings of considerable authority then current. It has been conjectured with much probability that the form in which Justin quotes the passage twice in his Apology may have been the reading of older Gospels, and that it was gradually altered by the Church to the form in which we now have it, for dogmatic reasons, when Gnostic sects began to base doctrines upon it inconsistent with the prevailing interpretation.<sup>1</sup> Be this as it may, Justin's Gospel clearly had a reading different from ours, but in unison with that known to exist in other Gospels, and this express quotation only adds additional proof to the mass of evidence already adduced that the Memoirs of the Apostles were not our Canonical Gospels.<sup>2</sup>

We have already occupied so much space even with this cursory examination of Justin's quotations, that we must pass over in silence passages which he quotes from the Memoirs with variations from the parallels in our Gospels which are also found in the Clementine Homilies and other works emanating from circles in which other Gospels than ours were used.<sup>3</sup> We shall now only briefly refer to a few sayings of Jesus expressly quoted by

<sup>1</sup> *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 245; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 254 ff.; *Delitzsch*, N. Unters. Kan. Evv., p. 35 f.; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 250 f.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Scholten*, Het. Paulin. Evangelio, 1870, p. 103 f., p. 400.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 210 f., 248 f.; *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., 1847, p. 576; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 201 ff.; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 245; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 48.

Justin, which are altogether unknown to our Gospels: Justin says: "For the things which he foretold would take place in his name, these we see actually coming to pass in our sight. For he said: 'Many shall come,' &c., &c.,<sup>1</sup> and 'There shall be schisms and heresies,'<sup>2</sup> and 'Beware of false prophets,'<sup>3</sup> &c., and 'Many false Christs and false Apostles shall arise and shall deceive many of the faithful.'"<sup>4</sup> Neither of the two prophecies here quoted are to be found anywhere in our Gospels, and to the second of them Justin repeatedly refers. He says in one place that Jesus "foretold that in the interval of his coming, as I previously said,<sup>5</sup> heresies and false prophets would arise in his name."<sup>6</sup> It is admitted that these prophecies are foreign to our Gospels.<sup>7</sup> It is very probable that the Apostle Paul refers to the prophecy, "There shall be schisms and heresies" in 1 Cor. xi. 18-19, where it is said, ". . . I hear that schisms exist amongst you; and I partly believe it. For there must also be heresies amongst you," &c. (*ἀκούω σχίσματα ἐν ὑμῖν ὑπάρχειν, καὶ μέρος τι πιστεύω. δεῖ γὰρ καὶ αἱρέσεις ἐν ὑμῖν εἶναι, κ.τ.λ.*)<sup>8</sup> We find also elsewhere traces both of this saying and that which accompanies it. In the Clementine Homilies, Peter is represented as stating,

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 357, note 1, p. 380 f.

<sup>2</sup> εἶπε γὰρ . . . . Ἔσονται σχίσματα καὶ αἱρέσεις. Dial. 35.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. 357, note 1, p. 380 f.

<sup>4</sup> Ἀναστήσονται πολλοὶ ψευδόχριστοι, καὶ ψευδοαπόστολοι, καὶ πολλοὺς τῶν πιστῶν πλανήσουσιν. Dial. 35; cf. Apol., i. 12. <sup>5</sup> Dial. 35.

<sup>6</sup> Καὶ ἐν τῷ μεταξὺ τῆς παρουσίας αὐτοῦ χρόνῳ, ὡς προέφην, γενήσεσθαι ἱερεῖς καὶ ψευδοπροφήτας ἐπὶ τῷ ὀνόματι αὐτοῦ προεμήνυσε, κ.τ.λ. Dial. 51; cf. 82.

<sup>7</sup> Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 212, 246; Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 232 f.; Semisch, Die Ap. Denkw. d. M. Just., p. 391, u. anm. 2; Reuss, Hist. du Canon, p. 59; Kirchofer, Quellensamml., p. 103, anm. 28 (Kirchofer thinks the first may be from the Ebionitish Gospel). Cf. Westcott, On the Canon, p. 140.

<sup>8</sup> Cf. Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 246.

“For there shall be, as the Lord said, *false apostles*, false prophets, *heresies*, desires for supremacy,” &c. (ἔσονται γὰρ, ὡς ὁ κύριος εἶπεν, ψευδαπόστολοι, ψευδεῖς προφήται, αἰρέσεις, φιλαρχίαι, κ.τ.λ.).<sup>1</sup> We are likewise reminded of the passage in the Epistle attributed to the Roman Clement, xliv.: “Our Apostles knew through our Lord Jesus Christ that there would be contention regarding the dignity of the episcopate.”<sup>2</sup> In our Gospel there is no reference anywhere to schisms and heresies, nor are false Apostles once mentioned, the reference being solely to “false Christs” and “false prophets.” The recurrence here and elsewhere of the peculiar expression “false apostles” is very striking,<sup>3</sup> and the evidence for the passage as a saying of Jesus is important. Hegesippus, after enumerating a vast number of heretical sects and teachers, continues: “From these have sprung the false Christs, false prophets, *false apostles*, who have divided the union of the Church by corrupt doctrines concerning God and his Christ.”<sup>4</sup> It will be remembered that Hegesippus made exclusive use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, and the Clementine literature points to the same source. In the Apostolic Constitutions we read: “For these are false Christs and false prophets, and *false apostles*, deceivers, and corrupters,” &c.,<sup>5</sup> and in the Clementine Recognitions the Apostle Peter is represented as saying that the Devil, after the temptation, terrified by the final answer of Jesus, “hastened immediately to send forth into this world false prophets,

<sup>1</sup> Hom. xvi. 21.    <sup>2</sup> xliv. See Greek passage quoted, p. 236, note 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Semisch*, Die Ap. Denk. d. Märt. Just., p. 391, anm. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Ἀπὸ τούτων ψευδόχριστοι, ψευδοπροφήται, ψευδαπόστολοι, οἷτινες ἐμίρισαν τὴν ἔνωσιν τῆς ἐκκλησίας φθοριμαίους λόγοις κατὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ κατὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ αὐτοῦ. *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 22.

<sup>5</sup> Οἷτοι γὰρ εἰσι ψευδόχριστοι, καὶ ψευδοπροφήται, καὶ ψευδαπόστολοι, πλάνοι καὶ φθορεῖς, κ.τ.λ. *Constit. Apost.*, vi. 13; cf. vi. 18.

and *false apostles*, and false teachers, who should speak in the name of Christ indeed, but should perform the will of the demon."<sup>1</sup> Justin's whole system forbids our recognizing in these two passages mere tradition, and we must hold that we have here quotations from a Gospel different from ours.

Elsewhere Justin says: "Out of which (affliction and fiery trial of the Devil) Jesus, the Son of God, has promised to deliver us again, and to put on us prepared garments, if we do his commandments, and to provide an eternal kingdom for us."<sup>2</sup> This promise is nowhere found in our Gospel.<sup>3</sup>

Immediately following the passage (κ 3 and 4) which we have discussed<sup>4</sup> as repeated in the Dialogue: "Many shall say to me, &c., &c., and I will say to them, Depart from me," Justin continues: "And in other words by which he will condemn those who are unworthy to be saved, he said: Begone into the darkness without, which the Father hath prepared for Satan and his angels."<sup>5</sup> The nearest parallel to this is in Matt. xxv. 41: "Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand: Depart from me, ye cursed, into the eternal fire which is prepared for the devil and his angels." It is apparent that

## JUSTIN, DIAL. 76.

Καὶ ἐν ἄλλοις λόγοις οἷς καταδικάζειν τοὺς ἀναξίους μὴ σώζεσθαι μέλλει, ἔφη εἶπεν· Ὑπάγετε εἰς τὸ σκότος τὸ ἐξώτερον, ὃ ἡτοίμασεν ὁ πατήρ τῷ Σατανᾷ καὶ τοῖς ἀγγέλοις αὐτοῦ.

## MATT. xxv. 41.

Τότε ἐρεῖ καὶ τοῖς ἐξ εὐωνύμων Πορεύεσθε ἀπ' ἐμοῦ οἱ καταραμένοι εἰς τὸ πῦρ τὸ αἰώνιον τὸ ἡτοίμασμένον τῷ διαβόλῳ καὶ τοῖς ἀγγέλοις αὐτοῦ.

<sup>1</sup> Recog. iv. 34.

<sup>2</sup> ἐξ ὧν καὶ πάλιν ἀποσπᾷ ἡμᾶς Ἰησοῦς ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ Θεοῦ, ἐνδύσαι ἡμᾶς τὰ ἡτοιμασμένα ἐνδύματα, ἐὰν πράξωμεν αὐτοῦ τὰς ἐντολὰς, ὑπέσχετο, καὶ αἰώνιον βασιλείαν προνοήσαι ἐπιγγέλται. Dial. 116.

<sup>3</sup> (Tredner, Beiträge, i. p. 255; Reuss, Hist. du Canon, p. 59; Eichhorn, Einl. N. T., i. p. 99. <sup>4</sup> p. 356, note 1. <sup>5</sup> Dial. 76.

Justin's quotation differs very widely from the reading of our Gospel. The same reading, with the exception of a single word, is found in the Clementine Homilies (xix. 2), that is to say, that "Devil" is substituted for "Satan," and this variation is not important. The agreement of the rest, on the other hand, establishes the quotation to be from a written Gospel different from ours,<sup>1</sup> and here we have further strong indications of Justin's use of the Ebionitish Gospel.

Another of the sayings of Jesus which are foreign to our Gospels is one in reference to the man who falls away from righteousness into sin, of whom Justin says: "Wherefore also our Lord Jesus Christ said: In whatsoever things I shall find you in these I shall also judge you."<sup>2</sup> (Διὸ καὶ ὁ ἡμέτερος κύριος Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς εἶπεν "Ἐν οἷς ἂν ὑμᾶς καταλάβω, ἐν τούτοις καὶ κρινῶ.") A similar expression is used by some of the Fathers, and in some cases is ascribed to the prophets.<sup>3</sup> Clement of Alexandria has quoted a phrase closely resembling this without indicating the source. 'Ἐφ' οἷς γὰρ ἂν εὗρω ὑμᾶς, φησὶν, ἐπὶ τούτοις καὶ κρινῶ.<sup>4</sup> Grabe was of opinion that Justin derived the passage from the Gospel according to the Hebrews,<sup>5</sup> an opinion shared by the greater number of modern critics, and which we are prepared to accept by many previous instances of agreement. Even the warmest asserters of the theory that the Memoirs are identical with our Gospels are obliged to admit that the saying of Jesus is not contained in them, and

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 211; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 233 f.; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 245 f.

<sup>2</sup> Dial. 47.

<sup>3</sup> *Grabe*, Spicil. patr., ii. p. 327; *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 333 f., ii. p. 524.

<sup>4</sup> Quis Div. Salv., 40.

<sup>5</sup> Spicil. Patr., ii. p. 327.

that it must have been derived from an extra-canonical source.<sup>1</sup>

Other passages of a similar kind might have been pointed out, but we have already devoted too much space to Justin's quotations, and must hasten to a conclusion. There is one point, however to which we must refer. We have more than once alluded to the fact that, unless in one place, Justin never mentions an author's name in connection with the Memoirs of the Apostles. The exception to which we referred is the following. Justin says: "The statement also that he (Jesus) changed the name of Peter, one of the Apostles, and that this is also written in *his* Memoirs, together with the fact that he also changed the name of other two brothers, who were sons of Zebedee, to Boanerges, that is, sons of Thunder," &c.<sup>2</sup> According to the usual language of Justin, and upon strictly critical grounds, the *αὐτοῦ* in this passage must be referred to Peter; and Justin, therefore, seems to ascribe the Memoirs to that Apostle, and to speak consequently of a Gospel of Peter. Some critics maintain that the *αὐτοῦ* does not refer to Peter, but to Jesus, or, more probably still, that it should be amended to *αὐτῶν*, and apply to the Apostles.<sup>3</sup> The

<sup>1</sup> *Fabrieus*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 333 f.; *Semisch*, Die Ap. Denkw. Just., p. 390, 394; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 111; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 140; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensammlung, p. 103; *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, p. 59; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 247, cf. p. 212; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 233; *Donaldson*, Hist. of Chr. Lit. and Doctr., ii. p. 330.

<sup>2</sup> Καὶ τὸ εἰπεῖν μετωνομακεῖν αὐτὸν Πέτρον ἕνα τῶν ἀποστόλων, καὶ γεγράφθαι ἐν τοῖς ἀπομνημονεύμασιν αὐτοῦ γεγενημένον καὶ τοῦτο, μετὰ τοῦ καὶ ἄλλους δύο ἀδελφούς υἱούς Ζεβεδαίου ὄντας μετωνομακεῖν ὀνόματι τοῦ Βοανεργῆς, ὃ ἐστὶν υἱοὶ Βροντῆς, κ.τ.λ. Dial. 106.

<sup>3</sup> *Otto*, Justini Opp., ii. p. 356 f.; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 315; *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, p. 55; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., ii. p. 329; *Semisch*, Die Ap. Denkw. d. M. Just., p. 150 ff.; *Neudecker*, Lehrb. Einl. N. T., p. 66 f.; *Oshausen*, Echth. sammtl. Schr. N. T., p. 290, 304;

great majority, however, are forced to admit the reference of the Memoirs to Peter, although they explain it, as we shall see, in different ways. It is argued by some that this expression is used when Justin is alluding to the change of name not only of Peter but of the sons of Zebedee, the narrative of which is only found in the Gospel according to Mark. Now Mark was held by many of the Fathers to have been the mere mouthpiece of Peter, and to have written at his dictation ;<sup>1</sup> so that, in fact, in calling the second Gospel by the name of the Apostle Peter, they argue, Justin merely adopted the tradition current in the early Church, and referred to the Gospel now known as the Gospel according to Mark.<sup>2</sup> It must be evident, however, that after admitting that Justin speaks of the Memoirs "of Peter," it is indeed hasty in the extreme to conclude from the fact that the mention of the sons of Zebedee being surnamed Boanerges is only recorded in Mark iii. 17, and not in the other canonical Gospels, that therefore the "Memoirs of Peter" and our Gospel according to Mark are one and the same. We shall, hereafter, in examining the testimony of Papias, see that the Gospel according to Mark, of which the

*Gieseler*, Versuch Entst. schr. Evv., pp. 14, 58; *Gratz*, Krit. Unters. p. 50 f.; *Delitzsch*, N. Unters. Entst. kan. Evv., p. 26.

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., ii. 15, iii. 39, v. 8, vi. 14, 25; *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. l. § 1; *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 5; *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 1; cf. *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 375; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 221 *Semisch*, Die Ap. Denkw. d. Mart. Just., p. 152.

<sup>2</sup> *J. P. Lange*, Das Evang. nach Markus, 1868, p. 6; *Holtzmann*, Die synopt. Evv. p. 372; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 99; *Storr*, Zweck d. Evang. Gesch., p. 366 f.; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., 1847, ii. p. 58, cf. 97; *Winer*, Just. Mart., p. 18.

Some who admit that, rightly, the *αἰροῦ* applies to Peter are prevented by other considerations from pronouncing judgment clearly. Cf. *De Wette*, Etl. N. T. p. 114; *Bindemann*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1842, p. 407 f.; *Delitzsch*, Entst. kan. Evv., p. 26; *Reuss*, Gesch. heil. Schr. N. T., p. 192; *Weiss*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1861, p. 677.

Bishop of Hierapolis speaks, was not our canonical Mark at all. It would be very singular indeed on this hypothesis that Justin should not have quoted a single passage from the only Gospel whose author he names, and the number of times he seems to quote from a Petrine Gospel, which was quite different from Mark, confirms the inference that he cannot possibly here refer to our second Gospel. It is maintained, therefore, by numerous other critics that Justin refers to a Gospel according to Peter, or according to the Hebrews, and not to Mark.<sup>1</sup>

We learn from Eusebius that Serapion, who became Bishop of Antioch about A.D. 190, composed a book on the "Gospel according to Peter" (*περὶ τοῦ λεγομένου κατὰ Πέτρον εὐαγγελίου*), which he found in circulation in his diocese. At first Serapion had permitted the use of this Gospel, as it evidently was much prized, but he subsequently condemned it as a work favouring Docetic views, and containing many things superadded to the doctrine of the Saviour.<sup>2</sup> Origen likewise makes mention of the Gospel according to Peter (*τοῦ ἐπιγεγραμμένου κατὰ Πέτρον εὐαγγελίου*) as agreeing with the tradition of the Hebrews.<sup>3</sup> But its relationship to the Gospel according to the Hebrews becomes more clear when Theodoret states that the Nazarenes made use of the Gospel according to

<sup>1</sup> *Bertholdt*, Einl. A. und N. Test., iii. p. 1213; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 132; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 111; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 23 f., 261 ff.; cf. *Die Evangelien*, p. 147 f; *Küstlin*, Urspr. synopt. Evv., p. 99, p. 368 f.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 107; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 40 f.; *Schotten*, Das ält. Evang., p. 248; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 220 f.; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 234 ff.; *Weisse*, Die evangelische Gesch., i. p. 64; *Feilmoser*, Einl. N. T., 2. Aufl. p. 104, anm. \*; *Schott*, Isagoge, p. 86, anm. 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., vi. 12; cf. *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 41.

<sup>3</sup> *Ad. Matt. xiii.* 54-56. He couples it with the Book of James, or the Protevangelium Jacobi.

Peter,<sup>1</sup> for we know by the testimony of the Fathers generally that the Nazarene Gospel was that commonly called the Gospel according to the Hebrews (*Εὐαγγέλιον καθ' Ἑβραίων*). The same Gospel was in use amongst the Ebionites, and, in fact, as almost all critics are agreed, the Gospel according to the Hebrews, under various names, such as the Gospel according to Peter, according to the Apostles, the Nazarenes, Ebionites, Egyptians, &c., with modifications certainly, but substantially the same work, was circulated very widely throughout the early Church.<sup>2</sup> A quotation occurs in the so-called Epistle of Ignatius to the Smyrnæans, to which we have already referred, which is said by Origen to be in the work called the doctrine of Peter<sup>3</sup> (*Διδαχὴ Πέτρου*), but Jerome states that it is taken from the

<sup>1</sup> *Hæret. Fab.*, ii. 2; cf. *Hieron.*, lib., vi. Comment. in Ezech. xviii., in *Matt.* xii. 13; *De Vir.* Ill. 2. The Marcians also used this Gospel, and we have seen them in agreement with Justin's quotation; cf. p. 406 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Eusebius*, II. E., iii. 25; *Epiphanius*, *Hæret.* xxx. 13; *Hieron.*, *Adv. Pelag.*, iii. 1, ad *Matt.* vi. 11, xii. 13, xxiii. 35; *Theodoret*, *Hæret. Fab.*, ii. 2; *Ambrose*, *Proem. Ev. Lucæ*; *Anger*, *Synops. Ev.*, p. xii. ff.; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 331, 347 f., 385 f., 391 f., 409 ff.; *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 9, p. 17, p. 21; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 197 ff., 234 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 452, anm. 17, p. 465, anm. 1; *Ebrard*, *Die evang. Gesch.*, p. 769 ff.; *Bunsen*, *Bibelwerk*, viii. p. 541 ff., 559 ff.; *Guericke*, *Gesammtgesch. N. T.*, p. 215 ff.; *Delitzsch*, *N. Unt. Entst. kan. Evv.*, p. 20 ff.; *Baur*, *Unters. üb. kan. Evv.*, p. 572 ff.; *Mayerhoff*, *Einl. petr. Schr.*, p. 238 ff., 303 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1863, p. 345 ff., *Die Evv. Just.*, p. 11 ff.; *Volkmar*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 42; *Reuss*, *Gesch. heil. Schr. N. T.*, p. 191 ff., *Hist. du Canon*, p. 63; *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, i. p. 29 ff.; *Bleek*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 99 ff.; *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1854, p. 36 ff.; *Nicolas*, *Etudes sur les Evang. Apocr.*, p. 23 ff., 60 ff., 95 ff., 118; *Hertwig*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 21; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 96 ff., 138 f.; *Schneckenburger*, *Ueb. d. Evang. d. Ægyptier*, 1834, *Urspr. erst. kan. Evang.*; *Fabricius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 340 ff.; *Fiechhorn*, *Einl. N. T.* i. p. 9 f. 14 ff.; *Schott*, *Isagoge*, p. 8 ff.; *Gieseler*, *Entst. schrift. Evv.*, p. 9 ff.; *Neudecker*, *Einl. N. T.*, 1840, p. 24 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *De Princip. Præf.*, § 8.

Hebrew Gospel of the Nazarenes.<sup>1</sup> Delitzsch finds traces of the Gospel according to the Hebrews before A.D. 130 in the Talmud.<sup>2</sup> Eusebius<sup>3</sup> informs us that Papias narrated from the Gospel according to the Hebrews a story regarding a woman accused before the Lord of many sins.<sup>4</sup> The same writer likewise states that Hegesippus, who came to Rome and commenced his public career under Anicetus, quoted from the same Gospel.<sup>5</sup> The evidence of this "ancient and apostolic" man is very important, and although he evidently attaches great value to tradition, knew of no canonical Scriptures of the New Testament, and, like Justin, rejected the Apostle Paul;<sup>6</sup> he still regarded the Gospel according to the Hebrews with respect, and made use of no other. The best critics consider that this Gospel was the evangelical work used by the author of the Clementine Homilies.<sup>7</sup> Cerinthus and Carpocrates made use of a form of it,<sup>8</sup> and there is good reason to suppose that Tatian, like his master Justin, used the same Gospel:

<sup>1</sup> Hieron., Proem. in Esaie, xviii., De Vir. Ill., 16; cf. Fabricius, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 359 f. A similar passage was in the *Κήρυγμα Πέτρον*. cf. Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 249. Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 407 f.

<sup>2</sup> Tract. Sabbath, f. 116; Delitzsch, N. Unters. Eust. kan. Evv., p. 18.

<sup>3</sup> Eusebius, H. E., iii. 39.

<sup>4</sup> This is generally believed to be the episode inserted in the fourth Gospel, viii. 1—11, but not originally belonging to it.

<sup>5</sup> Eusebius, H. E., iv. 22.

<sup>6</sup> Baur, Paulus, i. p. 222 f., Gesch. chr. Kirche, i. p. 83 f.; Hilgenfeld, Der Kanon, p. 27 ff.; Volkmar, Der Ursprung, p. 91 f., 132; Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 22 f., Das Evang. nach. Johan., p. 11; Reuss, Gesch. h. Schr. N. T., p. 289; Nicolas, Et. sur. les Ev. Apocr., p. 58; Schweyler, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 173 ff.

<sup>7</sup> Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 330 ff.; Neander, Genet. Entw. d. vorn. Gnost. Syst. p. 418; Schweyler, Das nachap. Zeit., p. 207; Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Just., p. 377 f.; Reuss, Gesch. h. Schr. N. T., p. 192 f.; Baur, Unters. üb. kan. Evv., p. 573; cf. Anger, Synops. Evang., p. xvi.

<sup>8</sup> Epiphanius, Haer., xxvii. 5, cf. xxx. 26, xxx. 14; cf. De Wette, Einl. N. T., p. 116 f., 119; Schweyler, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 204.

indeed his "Diatessaron," we are told, was by some called the Gospel according to the Hebrews.<sup>1</sup> Clement of Alexandria quotes it as an authority with quite the same respect as the other Gospels. He says: "So also in the Gospel according to the Hebrews, 'He who adores shall reign,' it is written, 'and he who has reigned shall rest.'"<sup>2</sup> A form of this Gospel, "according to the Egyptians," is quoted in the second Epistle of pseudo-Clement of Rome, as we are informed by the Alexandrian Clement, who likewise quotes the same passage.<sup>3</sup> Origen frequently made use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews,<sup>4</sup> and that it long enjoyed great consideration in the Church is proved by the fact that Theodoret found it in circulation not only among heretics, but also amongst orthodox Christian communities;<sup>5</sup> and even in the fourth century Eusebius does not class this Gospel amongst spurious books, but in the second class along with the Apocalypse of John;<sup>6</sup> and later still Jerome translated it;<sup>7</sup> whilst Nicephorus inserts it, in his Stichometry, not amongst the Apocrypha, but amongst

<sup>1</sup> *Epiphanius*, Hær., xlvi. 1; cf. *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 116, 119; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 208; *Schneckenburger*, Das Evang. d. Ægypt., p. 36 f.; *Uredner*, Beiträge, i. p. 444; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 28, 120 ff.; *Schmidt*, Einl. N. T., p. 124 ff.; *Gratz*, K. Unt. Just. Denk., p. 814; *Baur*, Unt. kan. Evv., p. 573; *Reuss*, Gesch. heil. Schr. N. T., p. 193; *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch. N. T., p. 227 f.

<sup>2</sup> ἢ καὶ τῷ καθ' Ἑβραίων εὐαγγέλιῳ "ὁ θαυμάσιος βασιλεύσει," γέγραπται, "καὶ ὁ βασιλεύσας ἀπαυθίσηται." *Clem. Al.*, Strom., ii. 9, § 45.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Ep. ad Corinth., xii.; cf. *Clem. Al.*, Strom., iii. 9, § 13.

<sup>4</sup> Evangelium quoque, quod appellatur secundum Hebreos . . . quo et Origenes sæpe utitur. *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 2; *Origen*, in Joh., vol. iv. 63, Matt. xix. 19, vol. iii., p. 771, &c.

<sup>5</sup> *Fab. Hær.*, i. 20; cf. *Epiphanius*, Hær., xlvi. 1.

<sup>6</sup> *Eusebius*, iii. 25; cf. *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 211, ann. 1; *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch. N. T., p. 215 f.; *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., i. p. 351 f., p. 355 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Nov. Test. extra Can. recept. Fasc., iv. p. 5 ff.

<sup>7</sup> De Vir. Ill., 2.

the Antilegomena, or merely doubtful books of the New Testament, along with the Apocalypse of John.<sup>1</sup> Eusebius bears testimony to the value attached to it by the Jewish Christians,<sup>2</sup> and indeed he says of the Ebionites that, "only making use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, they consider the rest of but small value."<sup>3</sup> In such repute was this Gospel amongst the earliest Christian communities, that it was generally believed to be the original of the Greek Gospel of Matthew. Irenæus states that the Ebionites used solely the Gospel according to Matthew and reject the Apostle Paul, asserting that he was an apostate from the law.<sup>4</sup> We know from statements regarding the Ebionites<sup>5</sup> that this Gospel could not have been our Gospel according to Matthew, and besides, both Clement<sup>6</sup> of Alexandria and Origen<sup>7</sup> call it the Gospel according to the Hebrews. Eusebius, however, still more clearly identifies it, as we have seen above. Repeating the statements of Irenæus, he says: "These indeed (the Ebionites) thought that all the Epistles of the Apostle (Paul) should be rejected, calling him an apostate from the law; making use only of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, they consider the rest of small value."<sup>8</sup> Epiphanius calls both the single Gospel of the Ebionites and of the Nazarenes the "Gospel according to the Hebrews," and also the Gospel according to Matthew,<sup>9</sup> as does also Theodoret.<sup>10</sup> Jerome translated the Gospel

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Zur Gesch. Des Kan., p. 120.

<sup>2</sup> II. E., iii. 25.

<sup>3</sup> εὐαγγελίῳ δὲ μόνῳ τῷ καθ' Ἑβραίων λεγομένῳ χρώμενοι, τῶν λοιπῶν σμικρὸν ἐποιούντο λόγον. II. E., iii. 27.

<sup>4</sup> Adv. Hær., i. 26, § 2; cf. iii. 12, § 7.

<sup>5</sup> Origen, Contra Cels., v. 61; Eusebius, II. E., iii. 27.

<sup>6</sup> Strom., ii. 9, § 45.

<sup>7</sup> In Joh. t. ii. 6 (Op. iv. p. 63 f.), Hom. in Jerem., xv. 4; cf. Hieron., in Mich. vii. 6; in Es. xl. 12, De Vir. Ill., 2.

<sup>8</sup> II. E., iii. 27.

<sup>9</sup> Hær., xxx. 3; cf. Hær. xxix. 9, xxx. 14.

<sup>10</sup> Hær. Fab., ii. 1.

according to the Hebrews both into Greek and Latin,<sup>1</sup> and it is clear that his belief was that this Gospel, a copy of which he found in the library collected at Cæsarea by the Martyr Pamphilus († 309), was the Hebrew original of Matthew; and in support of this view he points out that it did not follow the version of the LXX. in its quotations from the Old Testament, but quoted directly from the Hebrew.<sup>2</sup> An attempt has been made to argue that, later, Jerome became doubtful of this view, but it seems to us that this is not the case, and certainly Jerome in his subsequent writings states that it was generally held to be the original of Matthew.<sup>3</sup> That this Gospel was not identical with the Greek Matthew is evident both from the quotations of Jerome and others, and also from the fact that Jerome considered it worth while to translate it twice. If the Greek Gospel had been an accurate translation of it, of course there could not have been inducement to make another.<sup>4</sup> As we shall hereafter

<sup>1</sup> *Evangelium quoque, quod appellatur secundum Hebræos, et a me nuper in græcum latinumque sermonem translatum est, quo et Origenes sæpe utitur, &c. Hieron., De Vir. Ill. 2.; cf. Adv. Pelag., 1.*

<sup>2</sup> Porro ipsum hebraicum (Matthæi) habetur usque hodie in Cæsariensi bibliotheca quam Pamphilus martyr studiosissime confecit, mihi quoque a Nazaraeis qui in Berœa urbe Syriae hoc volumine utuntur, describendi facultas fuit, in quo animadvertendum, quod ubicunque Evangelista sive ex persona Domini Salvatoris veteris Scripturæ testimoniis utitur, non sequatur LXX translatorum auctoritatem sed hebraicam, &c. &c. De Vir. Ill., 3.

<sup>3</sup> In Evangelio juxta Hebræos quod Chaldaico quidem Syroque sermone sed hebraicis literis scriptum est, quo utuntur usque hodie Nazareni secundum Apostolos, sive ut plerique autumant juxta Matthæum quod et in Cæsariensi habetur Bibliotheca, narrat historia, &c. &c. *Hieron., Adv. Pelag., iii. 2.; cf. Comment. in Esaïæ, xi. 2, ad. Matt. xii. 13.; cf. Anger, Synops. Evv., p. xii. f.; Hilgenfeld, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1863, p. 352; Schweyler, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 216; Davidson, Introd. N. T., i. p. 472 f.; Schneckenburger, Urspr. erst. kan. Evv., passim, et 171; Eichhorn, Einl. N. T., i. p. 24 ff.*

<sup>4</sup> *Schweyler, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 246; Hilgenfeld, Zeitschr. wiss.*

see, the belief was universal in the early Church that Matthew wrote his Gospel in Hebrew. Attempts have been made to argue that the Gospel according to the Hebrews was first written in Greek and then translated into Hebrew,<sup>1</sup> but the reasons advanced seem quite insufficient and arbitrary,<sup>2</sup> and it is contradicted by the whole tradition of the Fathers.

It is not necessary for our purpose to enter fully here into the question of the exact relation of our canonical Gospel according to Matthew to the Gospel according to the Hebrews. It is sufficient for us to point out that we meet with the latter before Matthew's Gospel, and that the general opinion of the early church was that it was the original of the canonical Gospel. This opinion, as Schwegler<sup>3</sup> remarks, is supported by the fact that tradition assigns the origin of both Gospels to Palestine, and that both were intended for Jewish Christians and exclusively used by them. That the two works, however originally related, had by subsequent manipulation become distinct, although still amidst much variation preserving some substantial affinity, cannot be doubted,

Theol. 1863, p. 351; *Anger*, Synops. Evang., p. xii. ff.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 24 ff.

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 345 f., 379, 405; cf. Einl. N. T., i. § 45, p. 89 *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 102 f.; *Delitzsch*, Entst. kan. Evv., p. 26 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 117; *Volkmar*, Die Religion Jesu, p. 406 f.; *Pudus*, Exeget. Conserv., i. p. 143; *Theile*, Winer's N. Krit. Journal, i. p. 291; *Schotten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 181; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 110 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 474 ff.; *Siefert*, Urspr. erst. kan. Evv., p. 33; *Schneckenburger*, Urspr. erst. kan. Ev., p. 139 ff.; *Meyer*, Kr. ex. II'buch üb. Ev. d. Matth., 5 aufl., p. 18 f.; *Reuss*, Gesch. heil. Schr. N. T., p. 191 f.; *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 572 ff.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1853-54, p. 42; *Thiersch*, Die Kirche im apost. Zeitalter, p. 183 f.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., p. 13 ff.; *Ebrard*, Krit. d. evang. Gesch., p. 778, anm. 18.

<sup>3</sup> Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 241.

and in addition to evidence already cited we may point out that in the Stichometry of Nicephorus, the Gospel according to Matthew is said to have 2500 *στίχοι*, whilst that according to the Hebrews has only 2200.<sup>1</sup>

Whether this Gospel formed one of the *πολλοὶ* of Luke it is not our purpose to inquire, but enough has been said to prove that it was one of the most ancient<sup>2</sup> and most valued evangelical works, and to show the probability that Justin Martyr, a Jewish Christian living amongst those who are known to have made exclusive use of this Gospel, may well, like his contemporary Hegesippus, have used the Gospel according to the Hebrews; and this probability is, as we have seen, greatly strengthened by the fact that many of his quotations agree with passages which we know to have been contained in it; whilst, on the other hand, almost all differ from our Gospels, presenting generally, however, a greater affinity to the Gospel according to Matthew, as we might expect, than to the other two. It is clear that the title "Gospel according to the Hebrews" cannot have been its actual superscription, but merely was a name descriptive of the readers for whom it was prepared or amongst whom it chiefly circulated, and it is most probable that it originally bore no other title than "The

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Zur Gesch. des Kanons, p. 120; *Gesch. d. N. T. Kan.*, p. 243.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 97, p. 138; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 199; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 409 ff.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 483; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1853-54, p. 40 ff.; *Delitzsch*, Entst. kan. Evv., p. 18 ff.; *Guericke*, Gosammtgesch. N. T., p. 215 ff.; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 542, 547 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol. 186, p. 345 ff.; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 234 ff.; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 99 ff.; *Keim*, Jesu v. Nazara, i. p. 29; *Nicolas*, Etudes sur les Ev. Apocr., p. 23 ff.; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 19 ff.; *Schueckenburger*, Urspr. erstkan. Ev., p. 105 ff.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i., p. 7, p. 18 ff.; *Schott*, Isagoge, p. 8 ff.; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 24 ff.

Gospel" (τὸ εὐαγγέλιον), to which were added the different designations under which we find it known amongst different communities.<sup>1</sup> We have already seen that Justin speaks of "The Gospel" and seems to refer to the "Memoirs of Peter," both distinguishing appellations of this Gospel, but there is another of the names borne by the "Gospel according to the Hebrews," which singularly recalls the "Memoirs of the Apostles," by which Justin prefers to call his evangelical work. It was called the "Gospel according to the Apostles"<sup>2</sup> (εὐαγγέλιον κατὰ τοὺς ἀποστόλους), and, in short, comparing Justin's Memoirs with this Gospel, we find at once similarity of contents and even of name.<sup>3</sup>

It is not necessary, however, for the purposes of this examination to dwell more fully upon the question as to what specific Gospel now no longer extant Justin employed. We have shown that there is no evidence that he made use of any of our Gospels,<sup>4</sup> and he cannot, therefore, be cited even to prove their existence, and much less to attest the authenticity and character of records

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 202; *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 573.

<sup>2</sup> In evangelio juxta Hebræos quo utuntur usque hodie Nazareni secundum apostolos, sive, ut plerique autumant, juxta Matthæum. *Hieron.*, Adv. Pelag., iii. 2. Cf. *Origen*, Hom. in Luc.; *Epiphanius*, Hær., xxx. 13; *Ambros.* in Proem. Com. in Luc.; *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch. N. T., p. 216; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 303; *Schneckenburger*, Urspr. erst. kan. Evv., p. 156; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 9 ff., p. 108 f.; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 25 f.; *Gieseler*, Vers. Entst. schr. Evv., p. 9 ff., cf. p. 57 ff.; *Reithmayr*, Einl. N. T., 1852, p. 46 f.; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 24 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Schwegler* rightly remarks that if it can be shown that Justin even once made use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, or any other uncanonical source, there is no ground for asserting that he may not always have done so. *Das nachap. Zeit.* i. p. 229 f.; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 229; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 256.

<sup>4</sup> The peculiarities of language of our Synoptic Gospels are entirely wanting in Justin. Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 213 f.

whose authors he does not once name. On the other hand it has been made evident that there were other Gospels, now lost but which then enjoyed the highest consideration, from which his quotations might have been, and probably were, taken. We have seen that Justin's Memoirs of the Apostles contained many facts of Gospel history unknown to, or contradictory of, our Gospels, which were contained in apocryphal works and in the Gospel according to the Hebrews; that they contained matter otherwise contradictory to our Gospels, and sayings of Jesus not contained in them; and that his quotations, although so numerous, systematically vary from similar passages in our Gospels. No theory of quotation from memory can account for these phenomena, and the reasonable conclusion is that Justin did not make use of our Gospels, but quoted from another source. In no case can the testimony of Justin afford the requisite support to the Gospels as records of miracles and of a Divine Revelation.

*Later Canonists*  
 who are credited with Justin's words, thought. No one  
 could find the original source, or any other of his life &  
 teachings. To give a goodly list of the works any thing  
 supposed in that sort of history, and we cannot  
 be accused of the alternative — — —  
 (Ed. Dimpfle 21)

## CHAPTER IV.

### HEGESIPPUS—PAPIAS OF HIERAPOLIS.

WE now turn to Hegesippus, one of the contemporaries of Justin, and, like him, a Palestinian Jewish Christian. Most of our information regarding him is derived from Eusebius, who, however, fortunately gives rather copious extracts from his writings. Hegesippus was born in Palestine, of Jewish parents,<sup>1</sup> and in all probability belonged to the primitive community of Jerusalem.<sup>2</sup> In order to make himself thoroughly acquainted with the state of the Church, he travelled widely and came to Rome when Anicetus was Bishop. Subsequently he wrote a work of historical Memoirs, *ὑπομνήματα*, in five books, and thus became the first ecclesiastical historian of Christianity. This work is lost, but portions have been preserved to us by Eusebius, and one other fragment is also extant.<sup>3</sup> It must have been, in part at least, written after the succession of Eleutherus to the Roman bishopric (A.D. 177-193), as that event is mentioned in the book itself, and his testimony is allowed by all critics to date from an advanced period of the second half of the second century.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 22; *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 34; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 136; *Ewald*, *Gesch. d. V. Isr.*, vii. p. 17, anm. 1; *Lechler*, *Das apost. u. nachap. Zeitalter*, p. 462; *Donaldson*, *Hist. of Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 186.

<sup>2</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 136; *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 34. <sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 22; cf. iv. 11.

<sup>4</sup> *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 139; *Baur*, *Gesch. chr. Kirche*, i. p. 84; *Reuss*, *Gesch. heil. Schr. N. T.*, p. 290; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 51; *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 77; *Einl. N. T. i.*, p. 573; *Scholten*, *Het Paulin.*

The testimony of Hegesippus is of great value, not only as that of a man born near the primitive Christian tradition, but also as that of an intelligent traveller amongst many Christian communities. Eusebius evidently held him in high estimation as recording the unerring tradition of the Apostolic preaching in the most simple style of composition,<sup>1</sup> and as a writer of authority who had "lived during the first succession of the Apostles"<sup>2</sup> (ἐπὶ τῆς πρώτης τῶν ἀποστόλων γενόμενος διαδοχῆς). Any indications, therefore, which we may derive from information regarding him, and from the fragments of his writings which survive, must be of peculiar importance for our inquiry.

As might have been expected from a convert from Judaism<sup>3</sup> (πεπιστευκῶς ἐξ Ἑβραίων), we find in Hegesippus manifest evidences of general tendency to the Jewish side of Christianity. For him, "James, the brother of the Lord" was the chief of the Apostles, and he states that he had received the government of the Church after the death of Jesus.<sup>4</sup> The account which he gives of him is remarkable. "He was consecrated from his mother's womb. He drank neither wine nor strong drink, nor ate he any living thing. A razor never went upon his head, he anointed not himself with

Evangelie, p. 3; Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 19 f.; *Lechler*, Das apost. u. nachap. Zeitalter, p. 296, p. 463; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 462, ii. p. 160; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 183; *Ritschl*, Entst. altkath. Kirche, p. 268; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. Volkes Isr., p. 17 f.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 19, anm. 1; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 164, p. 57 f.; *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xiii. not. 4, p. xvi.; *Hieron.*, Introd. to H. S., 12th ed. ed. Tregelles, iv. p. 423; *Lardner*, Credibility &c., Works, ii. p. 141.

<sup>1</sup> τὴν ἀπλανῆ παρίδοσιν τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ κηρύγματος ἀπλουστάτῃ συντάξει γραφῆς ὑπομνηματισάμενος, κ.τ.λ. *Eusebius*, iv. 8.

<sup>2</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., ii. 23; cf. *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 22.

<sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 22.

<sup>4</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., ii. 23.

oil, and did not use a bath. He alone was allowed to enter into the Holies. For he did not wear woollen garments, but linen. And he alone entered into the Sanctuary and was found upon his knees praying for the forgiveness of the people; so that his knees became hard like a camel's, through his constant bending and supplication before God, and asking for forgiveness for the people. In consequence of his exceeding great righteousness he was called Righteous and 'Oblias,' that is, Protector of the people and Righteousness, as the prophets declare with regard to him,"<sup>1</sup> and so on. Throughout the whole of his account of James, Hegesippus describes him as a mere Jew, and as frequenting the temple, and even entering the Holy of Holies as a Jewish High Priest. Whether the account be apocryphal or not is of little consequence here; it is clear that Hegesippus sees no incongruity in it, and that the difference between the Jew and the Christian was extremely small. The head of the Christian community could assume all the duties of the Jewish High-Priest,<sup>2</sup> and his Christian doctrines did not offend more than a small party amongst the Jews.<sup>3</sup>

We are not, therefore, surprised to find that his rule (*κανών*) of orthodoxy in the Christian communities

<sup>1</sup> Οὗτος δὲ ἐκ κοιλίας μητρὸς αὐτοῦ ἅγιος ἦν. Οἶνον καὶ σίκερα οὐκ ἔπιεν, οὐδὲ ἔμψυχον ἔφαγε. Ξυρὸν ἐπὶ τὴν κεφαλὴν αὐτοῦ οὐκ ἀνέβη, ἔλαιον οὐκ ἠλείψατο, καὶ βαλανεῖον οὐκ ἐχρήσατο. Τούτῳ μόνῳ ἐξῆν εἰς τὰ ἅγια εἰσιέναι. Οὐδὲ γὰρ ἐρεοῖν ἐφίρει, ἀλλὰ σιδῶνας. Καὶ μόνος εἰσῆρχετο εἰς τὸν ναόν, ἠρίσκειτό τε κείμενος ἐπὶ τοῖς γόνασι, καὶ αἰτούμενος ὑπὲρ τοῦ λαοῦ ἄφεισιν, ὡς ἀπεσκληκέναι τὰ γόνατα αὐτοῦ δίκην καμήλου, διὰ τὸ αἰεὶ κάμπτεν προσκυνούντα τῷ Θεῷ, καὶ αἰτεῖσθαι ἄφεισιν τῷ λαῷ. Διὰ γέ τοι τὴν ὑπερβολὴν τῆς δικαιοσύνης αὐτοῦ, ἐκαλεῖτο δίκαιος καὶ ὠβλιᾶς· ὅ ἐστιν Ἑλληνιστὶ περιουχὴ τοῦ λαοῦ καὶ δικαιοσύνη, ὡς οἱ προφῆται δηλοῦσι περὶ αὐτοῦ. *Euseb.*, II. E., ii., 23.

<sup>2</sup> Eriphanus also has the tradition that James alone as High Priest once a year went into the Holy of Holies. *Her.* lxxviii. 13; cf. 14; xxix. 4.

<sup>3</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. 136 ff., 342 ff.

which he visited, was "the Law, the Prophets, and the Lord." Speaking of the result of his observations during his travels, and of the succession of Bishops in Rome, he says: "The Corinthian Church continued in the true faith until Primus was Bishop of Corinth. I conversed with them on my journey to Rome, and stayed many days with the Corinthians, during which time we strengthened each other in true doctrine. Arrived in Rome I composed the succession until Anicetus, whose deacon was Eleutherus. After Anicetus succeeded Soter, and afterwards Eleutherus. But in every succession, and in every city, that prevails which the Law, and the Prophets, and the Lord enjoin."<sup>1</sup> The test of true doctrine (*ὁρθὸς λόγος*) with Hegesippus as with Justin, therefore, is no New Testament Canon, which does not yet exist for him, but the Old Testament, the only Holy Scriptures which he acknowledges, and the words of the Lord himself,<sup>2</sup> which, as in the case of Jewish Christians like Justin, were held to be established by and in direct conformity with the Old Testament.<sup>3</sup> He carefully transmits the unerring tradition of apostolic preaching (*τὴν ἀπλανῆ παράδοσιν τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ κηρύγματος*), but he knows nothing of any canonical series even of apostolic epistles.

The care with which Eusebius searches for every trace of the use of the books of the New Testament in early writers, and his anxiety to produce any evidence concerning their authenticity, render his silence upon the subject

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 22.

<sup>2</sup> *Schotten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 19 f.; *Credner*, Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 76 ff.; *Beiträge*, i. p. 51; *Ritschl*, Entst. alkath. Kirche, p. 268; *Reuss*, Gesch. heil. Schr. N. T., p. 290; *Schwegler*, Dasnachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 206 f., 238 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 462.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 30, p. 33.

almost as important as his distinct utterance when speaking of such a man as Hegesippus. Now, while Eusebius does not assert that Hegesippus refers to any of our Canonical Gospels or Epistles, he very distinctly states that the Gospel of which Hegesippus made use in his writings was that "according to the Hebrews" (ἐκ τε τοῦ καθ' Ἑβραίους εὐαγγελίου . . . τινὰ τίθησιν), and when he adds, "And other things he records as from unwritten Jewish tradition,"<sup>1</sup> and then mentions the Proverbs of Solomon and certain apocrypha, Eusebius shows that he has sought and here details all the sources from which Hegesippus quotes, or regarding which he expresses opinions. It may be well, however, to give his remarks in a consecutive form. "He sets forth some matters from the Gospel according to the Hebrews and the Syriac, and particularly from the Hebrew language, showing that he was a convert from among the Hebrews, and other things he records as from unwritten Jewish tradition. And not only he, but also Irenæus, and the whole body of the ancients, called the Proverbs of Solomon: Wisdom including every virtuous precept. And regarding the so-called Apocrypha, he states that some of them had been forged in his own time by certain heretics."<sup>2</sup>

It is certain that Eusebius, who quotes with so much care the testimony of Papias, a man of whom he speaks disparagingly, regarding the Gospels and the Apocalypse,

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ ἄλλα δὲ ὡς ἂν ἐξ Ἰουδαϊκῆς ἀγράφου παραδόσεως μνημονεύει. *Euseb.*, II. E., iv. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Ἐκ τε τοῦ καθ' Ἑβραίους εὐαγγελίου καὶ τοῦ Συριακοῦ καὶ ἰδίως ἐκ τῆς Ἑβραϊδος διαλέκτου τινὰ τίθησιν, ἐμφαίνων ἐξ Ἑβραίων ἑαυτὸν πεπιστευκέναι· καὶ ἄλλα δὲ ὡς ἂν ἐξ Ἰουδαϊκῆς ἀγράφου παραδόσεως μνημονεύει, οὐ μόνος δὲ οὗτος, ἀλλὰ καὶ Εἰρηναῖος καὶ ὁ πᾶς τῶν ἀρχαίων χορὸς, πανάρετον σοφίαν τὰς Σολομῶνος παροιμίας ἐκάλουν. Καὶ περὶ τῶν λεγομένων δὲ ἀποκρύφων διαλαμβάνων, ἐπὶ τῶν αὐτοῦ χρόνων πρὸς τινῶν αἰρετικῶν ἀναπεπλάσθαι τινὰ τούτων ἱστορεῖ. II. E., iv. 22.

would not have neglected to have availed himself of the evidence of Hegesippus, for whom he has so much respect, had that writer furnished him with any opportunity, and there can be no doubt that he exclusively made use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, together with unwritten tradition.<sup>1</sup> In the passage regarding the Gospel according to the Hebrews, as even Lardner<sup>2</sup> conjectures, the text of Eusebius is in all probability confused, and he doubtless said what Jerome later found to be the fact, that "the Gospel according to the Hebrews is written in the Chaldaic and Syriac (or Syro-Chaldaic) language, but with Hebrew characters."<sup>3</sup> It is in this sense that Rufinus translates it. It may not be inappropriate to point out that fragments of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which have been preserved, show the same tendency to give some pre-eminence to James amongst the Apostles which we observe in Hegesippus.<sup>4</sup> It has been argued by a few that the words, "and regarding the so-called Apocrypha, he states that some of them had been forged in his own times by certain heretics," are contradictory to his attributing authority to the Gospel according to the Hebrews, or at least that they indicate some distinction amongst Christians between recognized and apocryphal works. The apocryphal works referred to, however, are clearly Old

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 206 f.; *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 35, p. 143; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 57 f., p. 132 f., p. 164; cf. *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 19; *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 42; cf. *Anger*, *Synops. Ev.*, p. xiii., note 4.

<sup>2</sup> *Credibility, &c.*, Works, ii. p. 144.

<sup>3</sup> *In Evangelio juxta Hebræos quod Chaldaico quidem Syroque sermone sed hebraicis literis scriptum est, &c.* *Adv. Pelag.*, iii. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Hieron.*, *De Vir. Ill.*, 2; cf. *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 398, 406 f.; *Neander*, *Pflanzung d. chr. Kirche*, p. 430, anm. 2.

Testament Apocrypha.<sup>1</sup> The words are introduced by the statement that Hegesippus records matters "as from unwritten Jewish tradition," and then proceeds, "and not only he, but also Irenæus and the whole body of the ancients, called the Proverbs of Solomon, Wisdom including every virtuous precept." Then follow the words, "And with regard to the *so-called* Apocrypha," &c., &c., evidently passing from the work just mentioned to the Old Testament Apocrypha, several of which stand also in the name of Solomon, and it is not improbable that amongst these were included the *Ascensio Esaiæ* and the *Apocalypsis Eliæ*, to which is referred a passage which Hegesippus, in a fragment preserved by Photius,<sup>2</sup> strongly repudiates. As Hegesippus does not mention any canonical work of the New Testament, but takes as his rule of faith the Law, the Prophets, and the words of the Lord as he finds them in the Gospel according to the Hebrews, quotes also Jewish tradition and discusses the Proverbs of Solomon, the only possible conclusion at which we can reasonably arrive is that he spoke of Old Testament Apocrypha. Had he spoken of New Testament Apocrypha, there cannot be a doubt that Eusebius must have recorded his recognition of New Testament Canonical works implied in such a distinction, and also his repudiation of New Testament Apocrypha regarding which he so carefully collects information.

We must now see how far in the fragments of the works of Hegesippus which have been preserved to us there are references to assist our inquiry. In his account

<sup>1</sup> Even Canon Westcott admits: "There is indeed nothing to show distinctly that he refers to the apocryphal books of the New Testament, but there is nothing to limit his words to the Old." On the Canon, p. 184.

<sup>2</sup> *Bibl.*, 232; cf. *Routh*, *Reliq. Sacre*, 1846, i. p. 281 f.

of certain surviving members of the family of Jesus, who were brought before Domitian, Hegesippus says: "For Domitian was as much afraid of the appearance of the Christ as Herod."<sup>1</sup> It has been argued that this may be an allusion to the massacre of the children by Herod related in Matt. ii., more especially as it is not absolutely certain that the parallel account to that contained in the first two chapters of the first Gospel existed in the oldest forms of the Gospel according to the Hebrews. But if it be doubtful whether some forms of that Gospel contained the two opening chapters of Matthew,<sup>2</sup> it is certain that Jerome found them in the version which he translated, a fact which is proved by his quotations from it regarding events recorded in these two chapters.<sup>3</sup> This argument, therefore, has no weight whatever.

The principal passages which apologists<sup>4</sup> adduce as references to our Gospels occur in the account which Hegesippus gives of the martyrdom of James the Just. The first of these is the reply which James is said to have given to the Scribes and Pharisees: "Why do ye ask me concerning Jesus the Son of Man? He sits in heaven on the right hand of great power, and is about to come on the clouds of heaven."<sup>5</sup> This is compared with

<sup>1</sup> ἔφοβεῖτο γὰρ τὴν παρουσίαν τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὡς καὶ Ἡρώδης. *Euseb.*, H. E., iii. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Eriphanius*, Hær., xxix. 9; *Hilgenfeld*, *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1863, p. 354.

<sup>3</sup> *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 8, Comm. ad Matt. ii. 6, xii. 13, ad Es. xi. 1; ad Habac., iii. 3; cf. *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 102 f.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 238; *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1853-54, p. 42.

*Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 182, note 4.

<sup>5</sup> Τί με ἐπερωτᾶτε περὶ Ἰησοῦ τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου; καὶ αὐτὸς κάθηται ἐν τῷ οὐρανῷ ἐκ δεξιῶν τῆς μεγάλης δυνάμεως, καὶ μέλλει ἔρχεσθαι ἐπὶ τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ. *Euseb.*, H. E., ii. 23.

Matt. xxvi. 64 : "From this time ye shall see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven."<sup>1</sup> It is not necessary to point out the variations between these two passages, which are obvious, and it must be apparent that an argument must indeed be weak which in such a matter rests upon mere similarities. If we had not the direct intimation that Hegesippus made use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which no doubt contained this passage, it would be apparent that a man who valued tradition so highly might well have derived this and other passages from that source. This is precisely one of those sayings which were most current in the early Church, whose hope and courage were sustained amid persecution and suffering by such Chiliastic expectations, with which according to the apostolic injunction they comforted each other.<sup>2</sup> In any case the words do not agree with the passage in the first Gospel, and as we have already established, even perfect agreement would not under the circumstances be sufficient evidence that the quotation is from that Gospel, and not from another; but with such discrepancy, without any evidence whatever that Hegesippus knew anything of our Gospels, but on the contrary with the knowledge that he made use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, we must decide that any such passages must be derived from it and not from our Gospels.

It is scarcely necessary to say anything regarding the phrase : "for we and all the people testify that thou art just and that thou respectest not persons."<sup>3</sup> Canon

<sup>1</sup> ἀπ' ἄρτι ὄψεσθε τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ ἀνθρώπου καθήμενον ἐκ δεξιῶν τῆς δυνάμεως καὶ ἐρχόμενον ἐπὶ τῶν νεφελῶν τοῦ οὐρανοῦ. Matt. xxvi. 64.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Thess. iv. 18.

<sup>3</sup> Ἡμεῖς γὰρ μαρτυροῦμέν σοι καὶ πᾶς ὁ λαὸς, ὅτι δίκαιος εἶ, καὶ ὅτι πρόσωπον οὐ λαμβάνεις, κ.τ.λ. Euseb., H. E., ii. 23.

Westcott points out that *καὶ οὐ λαμβάνεις πρόσωπον* only occurs in Luke xx. 21, and Galatians ii. 6;<sup>1</sup> but the similarity of this single phrase, which is not given as a quotation, but in a historical form put into the mouth of those who are addressing James, cannot for a moment be accepted as evidence of a knowledge of Luke. The episode of the tribute money is generally ascribed to the oldest form of the Gospel history, and although the other two Synoptics<sup>2</sup> read *βλέπεις* for *λαμβάνεις*, there is no ground for asserting that many of the *πολλοὶ* who preceded Luke did not use the latter form, and as little for asserting that it did not so stand in the Gospel according to the Hebrews. The employment of the same expression in the Epistle, moreover, at once deprives the Gospel of any individuality in its use.

Hegesippus represents the dying James as kneeling down and praying for those who were stoning him: "I beseech (thee) Lord God Father forgive them, for they know not what they do" (*Παρακαλῶ, κύριε Θεὲ πάτερ, ἄφες αὐτοῖς· οὐ γὰρ οἶδασιν τί ποιούσιν*).<sup>3</sup> This is compared with the prayer which Luke<sup>4</sup> puts into the mouth of Jesus on the cross: "Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do" (*Πάτερ, ἄφες αὐτοῖς· οὐ γὰρ οἶδασιν τί ποιούσιν*), and it is assumed from this partial coincidence that Hegesippus was acquainted with the third of our canonical Gospels. We are surprised to see an able and accomplished critic like Hilgenfeld adopting such a conclusion without either examination or argument of any kind.<sup>5</sup> Such a deduction is totally unwarranted by the

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 182, note 4.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xxii. 16; Mark xii. 14.

<sup>3</sup> *Euseb.*, II. E., ii. 23.

<sup>4</sup> xxiii. 34.

<sup>5</sup> *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1863, p. 354, p. 360, anm. 1; *Die Ev. Justin's*, p. 369; *Der Kanon*, p. 28. In each of these places the bare assertion is made, and the reader is referred to the other passages. In fact

facts of the case, and if the partial agreement of a passage in such a Father with a historical expression in a Gospel which alone out of many previously existent has come down to us can be considered evidence of the acquaintance of the Father with that particular Gospel, the function of criticism is at an end.

It may here be observed that the above passage of Luke xxiii. 34 is omitted altogether from the Vatican MS. and Codex D (Bezae), and it is erased from the Codex Sinaiticus, in which its position is of a very doubtful character. The Codex Alexandrinus which contains it omits the word *πάτερ*.<sup>1</sup> Luke's Gospel was avowedly<sup>2</sup> composed after many other similar works were already in existence, and we know from our Synoptics how closely such writings often followed each other, and drew from the same sources.<sup>3</sup> If any historical character is conceded to this prayer of Jesus it is natural to suppose that it must have been given in at least some of these numerous Gospels which have unfortunately perished. No one could reasonably assert that our third Gospel is the only one which ever contained the passage. It would be preposterous to affirm, for instance, that it did not exist in the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which Hegesippus employed. On the supposition that the passage is historical, which apologists at least will not dispute, what could be more natural or probable than that

there is merely a circle of references to mere unargued assumptions. *Bunsen* (Bibelwerk, viii. p. 543) repeats the assertion of *Hilgenfeld*, and refers to the passages above, where, however, as we have stated, no attempt whatever is made to establish the truth of the assumption. Cf. *Schotten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 19; *Het Paulin. Evangelie*, p. 3.

<sup>1</sup> The Clementine Homilies give the prayer of Jesus: Πάτερ, ἄφεσ αὐτοῖς τὰς ἁμαρτίας αὐτῶν, κ.τ.λ. Hom., xi. 20. <sup>2</sup> i. 1.

<sup>3</sup> The passage we are considering was certainly not an original addition by the author of our present third gospel, but was derived from earlier sources. Cf. *Ewald*, Die drei ersten Evv., p. 150.

such a prayer, "emanating from the innermost soul of Jesus,"<sup>1</sup> should have been adopted under similar circumstances by James his brother and successor, who certainly could not have derived it from Luke. The tradition of such words, expressing so much of the original spirit of Christianity, setting aside for the moment written Gospels, could scarcely fail to have remained fresh in the mind of the early Church, and more especially in the primitive community amongst whom they were uttered, and of which Hegesippus was himself a later member; and they would certainly have been treasured by one who was so careful a collector and transmitter of "the unerring tradition of the apostolic preaching." No saying is more likely to have been preserved by tradition, both from its own character, brevity, and origin, and from the circumstances under which it was uttered, and there can be no reason for limiting it amongst written records to Luke's Gospel. The omission of the prayer from very important codices of Luke further weakens the claim of that Gospel to the passage. Beyond these general considerations, however, there is the important and undoubted fact that the prayer which Hegesippus represents James as uttering does not actually agree with the prayer of Jesus in the third Gospel. So far from proving the use of Luke, therefore, this merely fragmentary and partial agreement, on the contrary, rather proves that he did not know that Gospel, for on the supposition of his making use of the third Synoptic at all for such a purpose, and merely fabricating a prayer for his hero, why did he not give the prayer as he found it in Luke?

We have still to consider a fragment of Hegesippus

<sup>1</sup> "Ganz aus dem innersten Geiste Jesus' geschöpft." *Ewa'd*, Die drei erst. Evv., p. 361.

preserved to us by Stephanus Gobarus, a learned monophysite of the sixth century, which reads as follows: "That the good things prepared for the righteous neither eye hath seen, nor ear heard, nor have they entered into the heart of man. Hegesippus, however, an ancient and apostolic man, how moved I know not, says in the fifth book of his Memoirs that these words are vainly spoken, and that those who say these things give the lie to the divine writings and to the Lord saying: 'Blessed are your eyes that see, and your ears that hear,' &c. (Μακάριοι οἱ ὀφθαλμοὶ ὑμῶν οἱ βλέποντες, καὶ τὰ ὤτα ὑμῶν τὰ ἀκούοντα, καὶ τὰ ἐξῆς).<sup>1</sup> We have here an expression of the strong prejudice against the Apostle Paul and his teaching which continued for so long to prevail amongst Jewish Christians, and which is apparent in many writings of that period.<sup>2</sup> The quotation of Paul, 1 Corinthians ii. 9, differs materially from the Septuagint version of the passage in Isaiah lxiv. 4, and, as we have seen, the same passage quoted by "Clement of Rome,"<sup>3</sup> differs both from the version of the LXX. and from the Epistle, although closer to the former. Jerome however found the passage in the apocryphal work called "Ascensio Isaiæ,"<sup>4</sup> and Origen, Jerome, and others likewise ascribe it to the "Apocalypsis Eliae."<sup>5</sup> This, however, does not concern us here, and we have merely to examine the "saying of the Lord," which Hegesippus opposes to the passage: "Blessed are your eyes that see

<sup>1</sup> Photius, *Bibl. Cod.*, 232, col. 893.

<sup>2</sup> Baur, *Gesch. chr. Kirche*, i. p. 84 ff.; Paulus, i. p. 252 ff., ii. p. 111 f.; Crédner, *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 33 f.; Schwyler, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 173 f.; Volkmar, *Der Ursprung*, p. 132 f., p. 57 f., 164 f.; Schotten, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 19 f.; Hilgenfeld, *Der Kanon*, p. 28 f.

<sup>3</sup> Ep. ad Corinth. xxxiv.

<sup>4</sup> *Comm. Es.*, lxiv. 4.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Cotelerius, *Patr. Apost.*, in *notis ad Constit. Apost.*, vi. 16.

and your ears that hear." This is compared with Matt. xiii. 16, "But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they hear" (ὕμων δὲ μακάριοι οἱ ὀφθαλμοὶ ὅτι βλέπουσιν, καὶ τὰ ὦτα ὑμῶν ὅτι ἀκούουσιν), and also with Luke x. 23, "Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see," &c. We need not point out that the saying referred to by Hegesippus, whilst conveying the same sense as that in the two Gospels, differs as materially from them both as they do from each other, and as we might expect a quotation taken from a different though kindred source, like the Gospel according to the Hebrews, to do. The whole of the passages which we have examined, indeed, exhibit the same natural variation.

We have already referred to the expressions of Hegesippus regarding the heresies in the early Church: "From these have sprung the false Christs, and false prophets, and *false apostles* who have divided the unity of the Church by introducing evil doctrines concerning God and his Christ."<sup>1</sup> We have shown how this recalls quotations in Justin of sayings of Jesus foreign to our Gospels, in common with similar expressions in the Clementine Homilies,<sup>2</sup> Apostolic Constitutions,<sup>3</sup> and Clementine Recognitions,<sup>4</sup> and we need not discuss the matter further. This community of reference in a circle known to have made use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, to matters foreign to our Synoptics, furnishes collateral illustration of the influence of that Gospel.

Tischendorf, who so eagerly searches for every trace, real or imaginary, of the use of our Gospels and of the existence of a New Testament Canon, passes over in

<sup>1</sup> *Euseb.*, H. E., iv, 22.

<sup>2</sup> vi. 18, cf. 18.

<sup>3</sup> xvi. 21.

<sup>4</sup> iv. 34.

silence, with the exception of a short note<sup>1</sup> devoted to the denial that Hegesippus was opposed to Paul, this first writer of Christian Church history, whose evidence, could it have been adduced, would have been so valuable. He does not pretend that Hegesippus made use of the Canonical Gospels, or knew of any other Holy Scriptures than those of the Old Testament, and, on the other hand, he does not mention that he possessed, and quoted from, the Gospel according to the Hebrews. Nothing is more certain than the fact that, in spite of the opportunity for collecting information afforded him by his travels through so many Christian communities for the express purpose of such inquiry, Hegesippus did not find any New Testament Canon, or that such a rule of faith did not yet exist in Rome in A.D. 160-170.<sup>2</sup> There is no evidence whatever to show that Hegesippus recognized any other evangelical work than the Gospel according to the Hebrews, as the source of his knowledge, together with tradition, of the words of the Lord.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 19.

<sup>2</sup> Volkmar, Der Ursprung, p. 57 f.; Credner, Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 76 ff.; Beiträge, i. p. 51; Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, 19; Ritschl, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 268; Schweigler, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 206 f., 238 f., 343 ff.; Reuss, Gesch. heil. Schr. N. T., p. 290; cf. Westcott, On the Canon, p. 184.

<sup>3</sup> Schweigler, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 206; Credner, Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 35, p. 143.

## 2.

THE testimony of Papias is of great interest and importance in connection with our inquiry, inasmuch as he is the first ecclesiastical writer who mentions the tradition that Matthew and Mark composed written records of the life and teaching of Jesus; but no question has been more continuously contested than that of the identity of the works to which he refers with our actual Canonical Gospels. Papias was Bishop of Hierapolis, in Phrygia<sup>1</sup> in the first half of the second century, and is said to have suffered martyrdom under Marcus Aurelius about A.D. 164-167.<sup>2</sup> About the middle of the second century<sup>3</sup> he wrote a work in five books, entitled "Exposition of the Lord's Oracles"<sup>4</sup> (*Λογίων κυριακῶν ἐξήγησις*), which, with the exception of a few fragments preserved chiefly to us by Eusebius and Irenæus, is unfortunately, no longer extant. This work was less based on written records of the teaching of Jesus than on that which Papias had been able to collect from tradition,<sup>5</sup> which he considered more authentic, for, like

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii., 36, 39; *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 18.

<sup>2</sup> *Chron. Pasch.*, i. 481.

<sup>3</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Evv., p. xiii. n. 4; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 94 f.; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 97; *Delitzsch*, Unters. Entst. Matth. Ev., p. 8, p. 10; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 226, anm. 1; *Guericke*, H'buch Kirchengesch., p. 204, anm. 1; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 344; *Holtzmann*, Die synopt. Evv., p. 248; *Nicolas*, Etudes crit. N. T., p. 16, note 2; *Renan*, Vie de Jésus, xiii<sup>m</sup>. ed. p. li.; *Scholten*, Das ält. Evang., p. 240; *Thiersch*, Versuch, p. 438; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 105, p. 113; *Volkmar*, Die Evangelien, 1870, p. 548, Der Ursprung, p. 59, p. 163; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 60, note 1; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. üb. d. evang. Gesch., p. 27; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 222; *Zahn*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1866, p. 668.

<sup>4</sup> *Euseb.*, H. E., iii. 39.

<sup>5</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 23 f.; *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 27 f.; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 94; *Steitz*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1868, p. 67 ff.; *Weizsäcker*, Evang. Gesch., p. 27 f.; *Zahn*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1866, p. 673 f.

his contemporary Hegesippus, Papias avowedly prefers tradition to any written works with which he was acquainted. In the preface to his book he himself stated: "I shall not hesitate to set beside my interpretations all that I rightly learnt from the Presbyters, and rightly remembered, earnestly testifying to its truth. For I have not, like the multitude, delighted in those who spoke much, but in those who taught the truth, nor in those who recorded alien commandments, but in those who recall those delivered by the Lord to faith, and which come from truth itself. If it happened that any one came who had followed the Presbyters, I inquired minutely after the words of the Presbyters, what Andrew or what Peter said, or what Philip or what Thomas or James, or what John or Matthew, or what any other of the disciples of the Lord, and what Aristion and the Presbyter John, the disciples of the Lord say, for I held that what was to be derived from books was not so profitable as that from the living and abiding voice (of tradition)"<sup>1</sup> Οὐ γὰρ τὰ ἐκ τῶν βιβλίων τοσοῦτόν με ὠφελεῖν ὑπελάμβανον, ὅσον τὰ παρὰ ζώσης φωνῆς καὶ μενούσης). It is clear from this that, even if Papias knew any of our Gospels, he attached little or no value to them,<sup>2</sup> and that he knew absolutely nothing of Canonical Scriptures of the New Testament.<sup>3</sup> His work

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 39.

<sup>2</sup> With reference to this last sentence of Papias, *Tischendorf* asks: "What books does he refer to here, perhaps our Gospels? According to the expression this is not impossible, but from the whole character of the book in the highest degree improbable." (*Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 109.) We know little or nothing of the "whole character" of the book, and what we do know is contradictory to our Gospels. The natural and only reasonable course is to believe the express declaration of Papias, more especially as it is made, in this instance, as a prefatory statement of his belief.

<sup>3</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 537, *Das Markus Evang.*, p. 191 f.;

was evidently intended to furnish a more complete collection of the discourses of Jesus from oral tradition than any previously existing, with his own expositions, and this is plainly indicated by his own words, and by the title of his work, *Λογίων κυριακῶν ἐξήγησις*.<sup>1</sup>

The most interesting part of the work of Papias which is preserved to us is that relating to Matthew and Mark. After stating that Papias had inserted in his book accounts of Jesus given by Aristion, of whom nothing is known, and by the Presbyter John, Eusebius proceeds to extract a tradition regarding Mark communicated by the latter. There has been much controversy as to the identity of the Presbyter John, some affirming him to have been the Apostle,<sup>2</sup> but the great majority of critics deciding that he was a totally different person.<sup>3</sup> Irenæus, who, sharing the Chiliastic opinions of

*Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 23 f., 31 f.; *Davidson*, Intro. N. T., i. p. 468; *Hilgenfeld*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1865, p. 334 f.; *Der Kanon*, p. 13 ff., p. 20, p. 147; *Holtzmann*, Die synopt. Evv., p. 249 ff.; *Gieseler*, Entst. schr. Evv., p. 171 f., 178 ff., 199; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 235, anm., 1; *Nicolas*, Et. crit. N. T., p. 15 ff., 20 ff., 30 f.; *Renan*, Vie de Jésus, xiii<sup>me</sup> ed. p. li., p. liv. f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 15 ff.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 176, p. 164; cf. *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 102, p. 109 f.

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 27 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., ii. p. 17; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 30, anm. 2; *Klostermann*, Das Markusevang., p. 326; *Rüggenbach*, Die Zeugn. f. das Ev. Johann., 1866, p. 110 ff.; *Routh*, Reliq. Sacræ, i. p. 22 f.; *Zahn*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1866, p. 665.

<sup>3</sup> *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 95; *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 69; *Davidson*, Intro. N. T., i. p. 314; *Delitzsch*, Unters. Entst. kan. Evv., p. 8; *Ebrard*, Wiss. krit. ev. Gesch., p. 707, anm. 2, p. 786; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1849, p. 205, Gesch. Volkes Isr., vi. p. 169 ff., vii. p. 226, anm. 1; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 339 f., *Der Kanon*, p. 13, p. 214, anm. 1; *Nicolas*, Et. cr. N. T., p. 14 f.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 175 ff.; *Steitz*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1868, p. 71 ff.; *Scholten*, Das ält. Evang., p. 241; *Schott*, authen. d. kan. Ev. n. Matth., 1837, p. 87; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. üb. evang. Gesch., p. 28 f., anm. 2; *Westcott*, on the Canon, p. 59, and note 5; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 57; *Meyer*, Kr. ex. II'buch Ev. Matth., 5 aufl. p. 4; cf. *Guericke*, Gesamtgt., p. 147 f., anm. 3; *Renan*, Vie de

Papias, held him in high respect, boldly calls him "the hearer of John" (meaning the Apostle) "and a companion of Polycarp" (ὁ Ἰωάννου μὲν ἀκουστής, Πολυκάρπου δὲ ἐταῖρος γεγωνῶς);<sup>1</sup> but this is expressly contradicted by Eusebius, who points out that, in the preface to his book, Papias by no means asserts that he was himself a hearer of the Apostles, but merely that he received their doctrines from those who had personally known them;<sup>2</sup> and after making the quotation from Papias which we have given above, he goes on to point out that the name of John is twice mentioned, once together with Peter, James, and Matthew, and the other Apostles, "evidently the Evangelist," and the other John he mentions separately, ranking him amongst those who are not Apostles, and placing Aristion before him, distinguishing him clearly by the name of Presbyter.<sup>3</sup> He further refers to the statement of the great Bishop of Alexandria, Dionysius,<sup>3</sup> that at Ephesus there were two tombs, each bearing the name of John, thereby leading to the inference that there were two men of the name.<sup>4</sup> There can be no doubt that Papias himself in the passage quoted mentions two persons of the name of John, distinguishing the one from the other, and classing the one amongst the Apostles and the other after Aristion, an unknown "disciple of the Lord," and, but for the phrase of Irenæus, so characteristically uncritical and assumptive, there probably never would have been any doubt raised as to the meaning of the passage. The question is not of importance to us,

Jésus, xiii<sup>m</sup> ed. p. xi., p. lxxii. note 1; *Hengstenberg*, Die Offenbarung Joh. ii. 2, p. 101 ff.; *Lücke*, Einl. Offenb. Joh., 2 aufl. ii. p. 540 ff.

<sup>1</sup> *Adv. Hær.*, v. 33, § 4; *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 39.

<sup>2</sup> *Euseb.*, H. E., iii. 39; cf. *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 18.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, H. E., vii. Proem.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, vii. 25; cf. *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 9.

and we may leave it, with the remark that a writer who suffered martyrdom under Marcus Aurelius, c. A.D. 165, can scarcely have been a hearer of the Apostles.<sup>1</sup>

The account which the Presbyter John is said to have given of Mark's Gospel is as follows: "And the Presbyter also said: Mark having become the interpreter of Peter, wrote accurately what he remembered, though he did not arrange in order the things which were either said or done by Christ. For he was neither a hearer of the Lord, nor followed him; but afterwards, as I said, accompanied Peter, who adapted his teaching to the occasion, and not as making a consecutive record of the discourses of the Lord. Mark, therefore, did not do wrong in thus writing down some things as he remembered them. For of one point he was careful, to omit none of the things which he heard, and not to narrate any of them falsely.' These facts Papias relates concerning Mark."<sup>2</sup> The question to decide is, whether the work here described is our Canonical Gospel or not.

The first point in this account is the statement that Mark was the interpreter of Peter (*ἐρμηνευτής Πέτρου*). Was he merely the secretary of the Apostle writing in a manner from his dictation, or does the passage mean that he translated the Aramaic narrative of Peter into Greek?<sup>3</sup> The former is the more probable supposition

<sup>1</sup> *Ewald*, *Gesch. Volkes Isr.*, vii. p. 226, anm. 1; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden u. s. w.*, p. 105.

<sup>2</sup> "Καὶ τοῦθ' ὁ πρεσβύτερος ἔλεγε. Μάρκος μὲν ἐρμηνευτὴς Πέτρου γενομένος, ὅσα ἐμνημόνευσεν, ἀκριβῶς ἔγραψεν, οὐ μὲν τοι τάξει τὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἢ λεχθέντα ἢ πραχθέντα. Οὔτε γὰρ ἤκουσε τοῦ Κυρίου, οὔτε παρηκολούθησεν αὐτῷ· ὕστερον δὲ, ὡς ἔφη, Πέτρῳ, ὃς πρὸς τὰς χρείας ἐποιεῖτο τὰς διδασκαλίας, ἀλλ' οὐχ ὥσπερ σύνταξιν τῶν κυριακῶν ποιούμενος λογίων, ὡς τε οὐδὲν ἤμαρτε Μάρκος, οὕτως ἔνια γράψας ὡς ἀπεμνημόνευσεν. Ἐνὸς γὰρ ἐποίησατο πρόνοιαν, τοῦ μηδὲν ἐν ἤκουσε παραλιπεῖν, ἢ ψεύσασθαι τι ἐν αὐτοῖς." Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ἰστώρηται τῷ Παπῖα περὶ τοῦ Μάρκου. *Euseb.*, *H. E.*, iii. 39.

<sup>3</sup> Most critics agree to the former, but the following assert the latter:

and that which is most generally adopted, but the question is not material here. The connection of Peter with the Gospel according to Mark was generally affirmed in the early Church, as was also that of Paul with the third Gospel,<sup>1</sup> with the evident purpose of claiming apostolic origin for all the Canonical Gospels.<sup>2</sup> Irenæus says: "After their decease (Peter and Paul), Mark the interpreter of Peter delivered to us in writing that which had been preached by Peter."<sup>3</sup> Eusebius quotes a similar tradition from Clement of Alexandria, embellished however with further particulars. He says: ". . . The cause for which the Gospel according to Mark was written was this: When Peter had publicly preached the word at Rome, and proclaimed the Gospel by the spirit, many who were present requested Mark, as he had followed him from afar, and remembered what he had said, to write down what he had spoken; and when he had composed the Gospel, he gave it to those who had required it of him; which when Peter knew he neither hindered nor encouraged it."<sup>4</sup> Tertullian repeats the same tradition. He says: "And the Gospel which Mark published may be affirmed

*Volkmar*, Anmerk. z. Credner's Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 136, Geschichtstreue Theol., 1858, p. 47 ff.; *Valesius*, Not. ad Euseb., H. E., iii. 39; *Bertholdt*, Einl. A. u. N. T., iii. p. 1280.

<sup>1</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hæc., iii. 1; cf. *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 8; *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 5; *Origen*, ap. *Euseb.*, H. E., vi. 25; *Eusebius*, H. E. iii. 4; *Hierom.*, De Vir. Ill., 7. <sup>2</sup> Cf. *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 5.

<sup>3</sup> Μετὰ δὲ τὴν τούτων ἔξουδον, Μάρκος ὁ μαθητὴς καὶ ἑρμηνευτὴς Ἡέτρον, καὶ αὐτὸς τὰ ἐπὶ Ἡέτρον κηρυσσόμενα ἐγγράφως ἡμῖν παραδίδωκε. Adv. Hæc., iii. 1, § 1; *Euseb.*, H. E., v. 8.

<sup>4</sup> Τὸ δὲ κατὰ Μάρκον ταύτην ἐσχικέαι τὴν οἰκονομίαν. Τοῦ Πέτρον δημοσίᾳ ἐν Ῥώμῃ κηρύξαντος τὸν λόγον, καὶ Πνεύματι τὸ εὐαγγέλιον ἐξιπόπτος, τοὺς παρόντας πολλοὺς ὄντας παρακαλέσαι τὸν Μάρκον, ὡς ἂν ἀκολουθήσαντα αὐτῷ πόρρωθεν καὶ μεμνημένων τῶν λεχθέντων, ἀναγράψαι τὰ εἰρημένα ποιήσαντα δὲ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, μεταδοῦναι τοῖς δεομένοις αὐτοῦ. Ὅπερ ἐπιγόντα τὸν Πέτρον, προτρεπτικῶς μῆτε κωλύσαι μῆτε προτρέψασθαι. *Euseb.*, H. E., vi. 14.

to be Peter's, whose interpreter Mark was . . . . for it may rightly appear that works which disciples publish are of their masters."<sup>1</sup> We have it again from Origen: "The second (Gospel) is according to Mark, written as Peter directed him."<sup>2</sup> Eusebius gives a more detailed and advanced version of the same tradition. "So much, however, did the effulgence of piety illuminate the minds of those (Romans) who heard Peter, that it did not content them to hear but once, nor to receive only the unwritten doctrine of the divine teaching, but they in every way entreated Mark, whose Gospel we have, as the companion of Peter, that he should leave them a written record of the doctrine thus orally conveyed. Nor did they cease their entreaties until they had persuaded the man, and thus became the cause of the writing of the Gospel called according to Mark. They say, moreover, that the Apostle (Peter) having become aware, through revelation to him of the Spirit, of what had been done, was delighted with the ardour of the men, and ratified the work in order that it might be read in the churches. This narrative is given by Clement in the sixth book of his Institutions, whose testimony is supported by that of Papias the Bishop of Hierapolis."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Licet et Marcus quod edidit Petri affirmetur, ejus interpres Marcus. . . . Capit magistrorum videri, quæ discipuli promulgarint. Adv. Marc., iv. 5.

<sup>2</sup> δεύτερον δὲ τὸ κατὰ Μάρκον, ὡς Πέτρος ὑφηγήσατο αὐτῷ, ποιήσαντα. Comment. in Matt. Euseb., II. E., vi. 25.

<sup>3</sup> . . . τοσοῦτο δ' ἐπελαμψεν ταῖς τῶν ἀκροατῶν τοῦ Πέτρου διανοίαις εὐσεβείας φέγγος, ὡς μὴ τῇ εἰσάπαξ ἰκανῶς ἔχειν ἀρκείσθαι ἀκοῇ, μηδὲ τῇ ἀγράφῳ τοῦ θείου κηρύγματος διδασκαλίᾳ, παρακλήσεσι δὲ παντοίας Μάρκον, οὐ τὸ εὐαγγελίον φέρεται, ἀκολουθῶν ὄντα Πέτρον λιπαρήσαι, ὡς ἂν καὶ διὰ γραφῆς ὑπόμνημα τῆς διὰ λόγου παραδοθείσης αὐτοῖς καταλείψοι διδασκαλίας, μὴ πρότερόν τε ἀνεῖναι, ἢ κατεργάσασθαι τὴν ἄνδρα, καὶ ταύτη αἰτίους γενέσθαι τῆς τοῦ λεγομένου κατὰ Μάρκον εὐαγγελίου γραφῆς. Γινόντα δὲ τὸ πραχθέν φασὶ τὸν ἀπόστολον, ἀποκαλύψαντος αὐτῷ τοῦ πνεύματος, ἡσθῆναι τῇ τῶν ἀνδρῶν προθυμίᾳ. κυρῶσαι τε τὴν γραφὴν εἰς ἔντευξιν ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις (Κλήμης ἐν ἔκτῳ τῶν ὑποτυπώσεων παρατέ-

The account given by Clement, however, by no means contained these details, as we have seen. In his "Demonstration of the Gospel" Eusebius, referring to the same tradition, affirms that it was the modesty of Peter which prevented his writing a Gospel himself.<sup>1</sup> Jerome almost repeats the preceding account of Eusebius: "Mark, the disciple and interpreter of Peter, being entreated by the brethren of Rome, wrote a short Gospel according to what he had heard from Peter, which when Peter heard, he approved, and gave his authority for its being read in the Churches, as Clement writes in the sixth book of his Institutions,"<sup>2</sup> &c. Jerome moreover says that Peter had Mark for an interpreter, "whose Gospel is composed: Peter narrating and he writing" (*eujus evangelium Petro narrante et illo scribente compositum est.*<sup>3</sup>) It is evident that all these writers merely repeat with variations the tradition regarding the first two Gospels which Papias originated.<sup>4</sup> Irenæus dates the writing of Mark after the death of Peter and Paul in Rome. Clement describes Mark as writing during Peter's life, the Apostle preserving absolute neutrality. By the time of Eusebius, however, the tradition has acquired new and miraculous elements and a more decided character—Peter is made aware of the undertaking of Mark through a revelation of the Spirit, and instead of being neutral is delighted and lends the work the weight of his authority. Eusebius refers to Clement and Papias as giving the same account, which they do

*Θεῖται τὴν ἱστορίαν, συνεπιμαρτυρεῖ δ' αὐτῷ καὶ ὁ Ἱεραπολίτης ἐπίσκοπος ὀνόματι Πάπιας* κ.τ.λ. *Euseb.*, II. E., ii. 15.

<sup>1</sup> *Demonstr. Evang.*, iii. 5.    <sup>2</sup> *De Vir.* III., 8.    <sup>3</sup> *Ad Hedib.*, c. 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Huy*, *Einl. N. T.*, ii. § 8—12; *Mayerhoff*, *Einl. petr. Schr.*, p. 237, *anm.* 1; *Bour*, *Das Markus Evang.*, 1851, p. 129; *Cellérier*, *Introd. au N. T.*, p. 234 f.

not, however, and Jerome merely repeats the story of Eusebius without naming him, and the tradition which he had embellished thus becomes endorsed and perpetuated. Such is the growth of tradition;<sup>1</sup> it is impossible to overlook the mythical character of the information we possess as to the origin of the second Canonical Gospel.<sup>2</sup>

In a Gospel so completely inspired by Peter as the tradition of Papias and of the early Church indicates, we may reasonably expect to find unmistakable traces of Petrine influence, but on examination it will be seen that these are totally wanting.<sup>3</sup> Some of the early Church did not fail to remark this singular discrepancy between the Gospel and the tradition of its dependence on Peter, and in reply Eusebius adopts an apologetic tone.<sup>4</sup> For instance, in the brief account of the calling of Simon in Mark, the distinguishing addition: "called Peter," of the first Gospel is omitted,<sup>5</sup> and still more notably the whole

<sup>1</sup> A similar discrepancy of tradition is to be observed as to the place in which the Gospel was written, Irenæus and others dating it from Rome, and others (as *Chrysostom*, in *Matth. Homil.*, i.), assigning it to Egypt. Indeed some MSS. of the second Gospel have the words *ἑγράφη ἐν Αἰγύπτῳ* in accordance with this tradition as to its origin. Cf. *Scholz*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 201. Various critics have argued for its composition at Rome, Alexandria, and Antioch. We do not go into the discussion as to whether Peter ever was in Rome.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 178; *Baur*, *Das Markus Evang.*, p. 133; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 589 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Alford*, *Greek Test.*, 1868, *Proleg.* i. p. 34 f.; *Baur*, *Das Markus Evang.*, p. 133 ff., *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 539; *Credner*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 123; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 83; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 602 ff., 610 ff.; *Griesbach*, *Comment. qua Marci Evang. totum e Matth. et Luc. Comm. decerpt. esse demonstratur*; *Gieseler*, *Entst. schr. Ev.* p. 152 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1864, p. 290, anm. 1; *Schleiermacher*, *Theol. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1832, p. 758 ff.; *Storr*, *Zweck d. ev. Gesch. u. Br. Johann.*, p. 249 ff., 366 ff.; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 203 ff.; *Neudecker*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 227 ff.; *Wülke*, *Tradition und Mythe*, 1837, p. 52 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Dem. Ev.*, iii. 3; cf. *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 539; *Credner*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 123.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. *Mark i. 16, 17*; *Matt. iv. 18*.

narrative of the miraculous draught of fishes, which gives the event such prominence in the third Gospel.<sup>1</sup> In Matthew, Jesus goes into the house of "Peter" to cure his wife's mother of a fever, whilst in Mark it is "into the house of Simon and Andrew," the less honourable name being still continued.<sup>2</sup> Matthew commences the catalogue of the twelve by the pointed indication: "The first, Simon, who is called Peter,"<sup>3</sup> thus giving him precedence, whilst Mark merely says: "And Simon he surnamed Peter."<sup>4</sup> The important episode of Peter's walking on the sea of the first Gospel<sup>5</sup> is altogether ignored by Mark. The enthusiastic declaration of Peter: "Thou art the Christ,"<sup>6</sup> is only followed by the chilling injunction to tell no one, in the second Gospel,<sup>7</sup> whilst Matthew not only gives greater prominence to the declaration of Peter, but gives the reply of Jesus: "Blessed art thou Simon Bar-jona," &c.,—of which Mark knows nothing,—and then proceeds to the most important episode in the history of the Apostle, the celebrated words by which the surname of Peter was conferred upon him: "And I say unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my Church," &c.<sup>8</sup> The Gospel supposed to be inspired by Peter, however, totally omits this most important passage; as it also does the miracle of the finding the tribute money in the fish's mouth, narrated by the first Gospel.<sup>9</sup> Luke states that "Peter and John" are sent to prepare the Passover, whilst Mark has only "two disciples;"<sup>10</sup> and in the account of the

<sup>1</sup> Luke v. 1—11.

<sup>2</sup> Mark i. 29.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. x. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Mark iii. 16.

<sup>5</sup> Matt. xiv. 22—33.

<sup>6</sup> Matt. adds, "the son of the living God," xvi. 16.

<sup>7</sup> Mark viii. 27—30; cf. *Baur*, Das Markus Ev., p. 133.

<sup>8</sup> Matt. xvi. 16—19.

<sup>9</sup> Matt. xviii. 24—27.

<sup>10</sup> Luke xxii. 8; Mark xiv. 13.

last Supper, Luke gives the address of Jesus to Peter: "Simon, Simon, behold Satan hath desired to have you (all) that he may sift you as wheat; but I have prayed for thee that thy faith fail not; and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren."<sup>1</sup> Of this Mark knows nothing. Again, after the denial, Luke reads: "And the Lord turned and looked upon Peter, and Peter remembered the word of the Lord, &c., and Peter went out and wept bitterly;"<sup>2</sup> whereas Mark omits the reproachful look of Jesus, and makes the penitence of Peter depend merely on the second crowing of the cock, and further modifies the penitence by the omission of "bitterly"—"And when he thought thereon he wept."<sup>3</sup> There are other instances to which we need not refer. Not only are some of the most important episodes in which Peter is represented by the other Gospels as a principal actor altogether omitted, but throughout the Gospel there is the total absence of anything which is specially characteristic of Petrine influence and teaching. The argument that these omissions are due to the modesty of Peter is quite untenable, for not only does Irenæus, the most ancient authority on the point, state that this Gospel was only written after the death of Peter,<sup>4</sup> but also there is no modesty in omitting passages of importance in the history of Jesus, simply because Peter himself was in some way concerned in them, or, for instance, in decreasing his penitence for such a denial of his master, which could not but have filled a sad place in the Apostle's memory. On the other hand, there is no adequate record of special matter, which the intimate

<sup>1</sup> Luke xxii. 31, 32.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 61, 62; cf. Matt. xxvi. 75.

<sup>3</sup> Mark xiv. 72.

<sup>4</sup> *Adv. Hær.*, iii. 1, § 1; *Euseb.*, H. E., v. 8. See quot., p. 449, note 3.

knowledge of the doings and sayings of Jesus possessed by Peter might have supplied, to counterbalance the singular omissions. There is infinitely more of the spirit of Peter in the first Gospel than there is in the second. The whole internal evidence, therefore, shows that this part of the tradition of the Presbyter John transmitted by Papias does not apply to our Gospel.

The discrepancy, however, is still more marked when we compare with our actual second Gospel the account of the work of Mark which Papias received from the Presbyter. Mark wrote down from memory some parts (*ἔνια*) of the teaching of Peter regarding the life of Jesus, but as Peter adapted his instructions to the actual circumstances (*πρὸς τὰς χρείας*), and did not give a consecutive report (*σύνταξις*) of the discourses or doings of Jesus, Mark was only careful to be accurate, and did not trouble himself to arrange in historical order (*τάξις*) his narrative of the things which were said and done by Jesus, but merely wrote down facts as he remembered them. This description would lead us to expect a work composed of fragmentary reminiscences of the teaching of Peter, without regular sequence or connection. The absence of orderly arrangement is the most prominent feature in the description, and forms the burden of the whole. Mark writes "what he remembered;" "he did not arrange in order the things that were either said or done by Christ;" and then follow the apologetic expressions of explanation—he was not himself a hearer or follower of the Lord, but derived his information from the occasional preaching of Peter, who did not attempt to give a consecutive narrative, and therefore Mark was not wrong in merely writing things without order as he happened to hear or remember them. Now

it is impossible in the work of Mark here described to recognize our present second Gospel, which does not depart in any important degree from the order of the other two Synoptics, and which, throughout, has the most evident character of orderly arrangement. The Gospel opens formally, and after presenting John the Baptist as the messenger sent to prepare the way of the Lord, proceeds to the baptism of Jesus, his temptation, his entry upon public life, and his calling of the disciples. Then, after a consecutive narrative of his teaching and works, the history ends with a full and consecutive account of the last events in the life of Jesus, his trial, crucifixion, and resurrection. There is in the Gospel every characteristic of artistic and orderly arrangement, from the striking introduction by the prophetic voice crying in the wilderness to the solemn close of the marvellous history.<sup>1</sup> The great majority of critics, therefore, are agreed in concluding that the account of the Presbyter John recorded by Papias does not apply to our second Canonical Gospel at all.<sup>2</sup> Many

<sup>1</sup> Augustine calls Mark the follower and abbreviator of Matthew. "Tanquam pedissequus et brevior Matthei." *De Consensu Evang.* i. 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 536 ff.; *Das Markus Ev.*, pp. 118, 123—133; *Bertholdt*, *Einl. A. u. N. T.*, iii. p. 1280 ff.; *Credner*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 123, p. 205; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 80 ff., cf. i. p. 464; *Theol. Rev.*, iv., 1867, p. 498; *Delitzsch*, *Entst. d. Matth. Ev.*, p. 110 f.; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 596 ff.; *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.* 1849, p. 205 ff., cf. 207; *Feilmoser*, *Einl. N. T.*, 2. ausg. p. 103 f.; *Gfrörer*, *Urchristenthum*, II. i. p. 13 ff.; *Allg. K. G.*, 1841, i. p. 166 ff.; *Guericke*, *Gesammtgesch. N. T.*, p. 147 ff.; cf. *Beitr. Einl. N. T.* 1828, p. 47 f.; *Griesbach*, *Comment. qua Mar. Ev. tot. e Matth. et Luc. Comment. decerpt. esse demonstratur*; *Holtzmann*, *Die synopt. Evv.*, p. 254, cf. 373; *A. Kayser*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1854, p. 107; *Köstlin*, *Urspr. synopt. Evv.*, pp. 99, 358, 385; *Lachmann*, *De Ordine narr. in Evang. Synopt. Th. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1835; *Mayerhoff*, *Einl. petr. Schr.* p. 235, anm. 1; *Neander*, *Pflanz. d. chr. Kirche*, 5. auf. p. 464 f., anm. 2; *Neudecker*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 232 ff.; *Nicolas*, *Et. crit. N. T.*, p. 41, p. 88 ff.; *Révillon*, *Et. crit. sur l'Ev.*

of those who affirm that the description of Papias may apply to our second Gospel<sup>1</sup> do so with hesitation, and few maintain that we now possess the original work without considerable subsequent alteration. Some of these critics, however, feeling the difficulty of identifying our second Gospel with the work here described, endeavour to reconcile the discrepancy by a fanciful interpretation of the account of Papias. They suggest that the first part, in which the want of chronological order is pointed out, refers to the rough notes which Mark made during the actual preaching and lifetime of Peter, and that the latter part applies to our present Gospel, which

selon S. Matth.; *Renan*, Vie de Jésus, xiii<sup>me</sup> ed. p. lii. f.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 177 f.; N. Rev. de Théol., 1858, p. 62 f.; *Rumpf*, N. Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 32, p. 360; *Saunier*, Ueb. Quell. des Ev. Marci, 1825; *Scherer*, N. Rev. de Théol., 1859, p. 307, 1861, p. 295 ff.; *Schleiermacher*, Stud. u. Krit., 1832, p. 758 ff.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 15 ff.; Das ält. Evang., p. 245 ff., p. 248; Das Ev. nach. Joh., p. xxiii. f.; *Strauss*, Das Leben Jesu, p. 50 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. pp. 457—460; *Storr*, Zweck d. evang. Gesch. u. Br. Joh., p. 249 ff., 265 ff.; *Semler*, Zusätze zu Townson's Abh. üb. 4 Ev., i. p. 21; *Theile*, Zur Biographie Jesu, p. 33 f.; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. üb. evang. Gesch., p. 118 ff.; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 204 f.; *Zeller*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol. 1865, p. 406.

<sup>1</sup> *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 118; *Ebrard*, Wiss. krit. ev. Gesch., p. 793 ff.; *Gieseler*, Entst. schr. Evv., p. 122 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 148 f.; Das Markus Ev., 108 ff.; cf. 118; Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1864, p. 290, ann. 1; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 32, ann. 5, 6; *Klostermann*, Das Markusev., p. 341 f.; *Horne*, Introd. H. S., 1869, iv. p. 434 f.; *Lücke*, Stud. u. Krit., 1833, p. 499 ff.; *Meyer*, Kr. ex. H'buch Evv. d. Markus u. Luk. 6 aufl. p. 3 ff., 10 ff., H'buch Matth., p. 35 ff.; *Rithmayer*, Einl. can. Bücher N. B., 1852, p. 381 ff.; *Steitz*, Stud. u. Krit., 1868, p. 83 ff.; *Schenkel*, Das Charakterbild Jesu, 1864, p. 332 f.; *Thiersch*, Versuch z. Herst. hist. Standp. d. Krit. N. T. Schr., p. 179 ff., 193, 212 f., 340; cf. Die Kirche im ap. Zeit., p. 105; *Tholuck*, Glaubw. d. ev. Gesch., pp. 239—267, 262 ff.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 106; *Weiss*, Stud. u. Krit., 1861, p. 672 ff.; Jahrb. deutsche Theol., 1865, ii. p. 287 f.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 63 f.; *Weisse*, Die ev. Gesch., i. p. 29 ff., 56 ff.; Evangelienfrage, p. 144 ff.; *Zahn*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1866, p. 690 ff.; cf. *Hug*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 111 ff.; *Witke*, Tradition und Mythe, 1837, p. 47 ff.

he later remodelled into its present shape.<sup>1</sup> This most unreasonable and arbitrary application of the words of Papias is denounced even by apologists.<sup>2</sup>

It has been well argued that the work here described as produced by Mark in the character of *ἐρμηνευτῆς Πέτρου* is much more one of the same family as the Clementine Homilies than of our Gospels.<sup>3</sup> The work was no systematic narrative of the history of Jesus, nor report of his teaching, but the dogmatic preaching of the Apostle, illustrated and interspersed with passages from the discourses of Jesus or facts from his life.<sup>4</sup> Of this character seems actually to have been that ancient work "The Preaching of Peter" (*Κήρυγμα Πέτρου*), which was used by Heracleon<sup>5</sup> and by Clement<sup>6</sup> of Alexandria as an authentic canonical work,<sup>7</sup> denounced by Origen<sup>8</sup> on account of the consideration in which it was held by many, but still quoted with respect by Gregory of Nazianzum.<sup>9</sup> There can be no doubt that the *Κήρυγμα*

<sup>1</sup> *H. A. W. Meyer*, *Komm. z. Matth.*, 5. Aufl. p. 38 ff.; *Thiersch*, *Versuch*, p. 178 ff.; *Die Kirche im ap. Zeit.*, p. 105; cf. *Schenkel*, *Das Charakterbild Jesu*, p. 332.

<sup>2</sup> *Bleek*, *Beiträge*, p. 171 f. Bleek expresses much doubt as to the applicability of the account of Papias to our second Gospel, although we have classed him amongst those who adopt it. Cf. *Einl. N. T.*, pp. 118, 120.

<sup>3</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. üb. kan. Evv.* p. 536; *Hilgenfeld*, *Das Markus Evv.*, p. 115; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 459 ff.; *Credner*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 123; cf. *Beiträge*, i. p. 284 ff.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 82 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 459 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Origen*, *Comment. in Joan.*, xiii. 17.

<sup>6</sup> *Strom.*, i. 29, § 182, vi. 5, § 39, 6, § 48, 15, § 128; cf. *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 351 ff.

<sup>7</sup> The work is generally quoted by the latter with the introduction "Peter in the preaching says:" *Πέτρος ἐν τῷ κήρυγματι λέγει, κ.τ.λ.*

<sup>8</sup> *De Princip. Præf.*, 8.

<sup>9</sup> *Ep. xvi.* (ad Cæsar., i.); cf. *Fabricius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 812; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 350; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 54; *Mayerhoff*, *Einl. petr. Schr.*, p. 304 ff.

Πέτρον, although it failed to obtain a permanent place in the canon, was one of the most ancient works of the Christian Church, dating probably from the first century, from which indeed the Clementine Homilies themselves were produced,<sup>1</sup> and, like the work described by Papias, it also was held to have been composed in Rome in connection with the preaching there of Peter and Paul.<sup>2</sup> It must be noted, moreover, that Papias does not call the work ascribed to Mark a Gospel, but merely a record of the preaching of Peter.

It is not necessary for us to account for the manner in which the work to which the Presbyter John referred disappeared, and the present Gospel according to Mark became substituted for it. The merely negative evidence that our actual Gospel is not the work described by Papias is sufficient for our purpose. Any one acquainted with the thoroughly uncritical character of the Fathers, and with the literary history of the early Christian Church, will readily conceive the facility with which this can have been accomplished. The great mass of intelligent critics are agreed that our Synoptic Gospels have assumed their present form only after repeated modifications by various editors of earlier evangelical works. These changes have not been effected without traces being left by which the various materials may be separated and distinguished, but the more primitive Gospels have entirely disappeared, supplanted by the later and amplified versions. The critic, however, who distinguishes between the earlier and later matter is not

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 349 f.; *Gfrörer*, Allg. K. G., 1841, i. p. 237 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 30 ff.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 249 ff.; cf. *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 314 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 360 f.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 31 f.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 250.

bound to perform the now impossible feat of producing the originals, or accounting in any but a general way for the disappearance of the primitive Gospel. In our investigation it is still less necessary to attempt such an explanation, for if our present Gospel cannot be proved to be the very work referred to by the Presbyter John, as most certainly it cannot, the evidence of Papias becomes fatal to the claims of the second Canonical Gospel.

Tischendorf asks: "How then has neither Eusebius nor any other theologian of Christian antiquity thought that the expressions of Papias were in contradiction with the two Gospels (Mt. and Mk.)?"<sup>1</sup> The absolute credulity with which those theologians accepted any fiction, however childish, which had a pious tendency, and the frivolous character of the only criticism in which they ever indulged, render their unquestioning application of the tradition of Papias to our Gospels anything but singular, and it is only surprising to find their silent acquiescence elevated into an argument. We have already in the course of these pages seen something of the singularly credulous and uncritical character of the Fathers, and we cannot afford space to give instances of the absurdities with which their writings abound. No fable could be too gross, no invention too transparent, for their unsuspecting acceptance, if it assumed a pious form or tended to edification. No period in the history of the world ever produced so many spurious works as the first two or three centuries of our era. The name of every Apostle, or Christian teacher, not excepting that of the great Master himself, was freely attached to every description of religious forgery. False gospels, epistles, acts, martyrologies, were unscrupulously

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 107.

circulated, and such pious falsification was not even intended or regarded as a crime, but perpetrated for the sake of edification. It was only slowly and after some centuries that many of these works, once, as we have seen, regarded with pious veneration, were excluded from the canon; and that genuine works shared this fate, whilst spurious ones usurped their places, is one of the surest results of criticism. The Fathers omitted to inquire critically when such investigation might have been of value, and mere tradition credulously accepted and transmitted is of no critical value.<sup>1</sup> In an age when the multiplication of copies of any work was a slow process, and their dissemination a matter of difficulty and even danger, it is easy to understand with what facility the more complete and artistic Gospel could take the place of the *Κήρυγμα Πέτρου* as the work of Mark.

The account given by Papias of the work ascribed to Matthew is as follows: "Matthew composed the oracles in the Hebrew dialect, and every one interpreted them as he was able."<sup>2</sup> Critics are divided in opinion as to whether this tradition was, like that regarding Mark, derived from the Presbyter John,<sup>3</sup> or is given merely on

<sup>1</sup> Canon Westcott himself admits that "the proof of the Canon is rendered more difficult by the uncritical character of the first two centuries." He says: "The spirit of the ancient world was essentially uncritical." On the Canon, p. 7 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ματθαῖος μὲν οὖν Ἑβραϊδὶ διαλέκτῳ τὰ λόγια συνεγράψατο. Ἡρμῆνευσε δ' αὐτὰ ὡς ἦν δυνατὸς ἕκαστος.* *Euseb.*, II. E., iii. 39.

<sup>3</sup> *Auger*, Synops. Ev., p. 265 f.; *Credner*, Gesch. d. N. T. Kanon, p. 27 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 467; *Delitzsch*, Zeitschr. luther. Theol. 1850, p. 459; *Ebrard*, Wiss. krit. ev. Gesch., p. 767; *Kern*, Tübing. Zeitschr. f. Theol. 1834, 2, p. 5; *Scholten*, Das ält. Evang., p. 241; *Sieffert*, Urspr. erst. kan. Ev. 1832, p. 14 ff.; *Thiersch*, Versuch z. Herstell. Standp. d. Krit. N. T., 1845, p. 187 f.; *Weisse*, Die evang. Gesch., i. p. 30; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 62.

the authority of Papias himself.<sup>1</sup> Eusebius joins the account of Mark to that given by Matthew merely by the following words: "These facts Papias relates concerning Mark; but regarding Matthew he has said as follows:"<sup>2</sup> Eusebius distinctly states that the account regarding Mark is derived from the Presbyter, and the only reason for ascribing to him also that concerning Matthew is that it is not excluded by the phraseology of Eusebius, and the two passages being given by him consecutively—however they may have stood in the work of Papias—it is reasonable enough to suppose that the information was derived from the same source. The point is not of much importance, but it is clear that there is no absolute right to trace this statement to the Presbyter John, as there is in the case of the tradition about Mark.

This passage has excited even more controversy than that regarding Mark, and its interpretation and application are still keenly debated. The intricacy and difficulty of the questions which it raises are freely admitted by some of the most earnest defenders of the Canonical Gospels, but the problem, so far as our examination is concerned, can be solved without much trouble. The dilemma in which apologists find themselves when they attempt closely to apply the description of this work given by Papias to our Canonical Gospel is the great difficulty which complicates the matter and prevents a

<sup>1</sup> *Collérier*, *Introd. au N. T.*, p. 233; *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Kanon*, p. 214, *anm.* 1; *cf.* *Das Markus Ev.*, p. 109, *anm.* 3; *Die Evangelien*, p. 119; *Holtzmann*, *Die synopt. Evv.*, p. 249; *Hug.* *Einl. N. T.*, ii. p. 16; *Meyer*, *Kr. ex H'buch Ev. Matth.*, 1864, p. 4, *anm.*; *Tholuck*, *Glaubwürd. evang. Gesch.*, 2 *auf.* p. 239.

<sup>2</sup> *Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ἰστέρηται τῷ Παπία περὶ τοῦ Μάρκου. Περὶ δὲ τοῦ Ματθαίου ταῦτ' εἴρηται. Eusch.*, *H. E.*, iii. 39.

clear and distinct solution of the question. We shall avoid minute discussion of details, contenting ourselves with the broader features of the argument, and seeking only to arrive at a just conclusion as to the bearing of the evidence of Papias upon the claim to authenticity of our Canonical Gospel.

The first point which we have to consider is the nature of the work which is here described. Matthew is said to have composed the *λόγια* or Oracles, and there can be little doubt from the title of his own book: "Exposition of the Lord's Oracles" (*Λογίων κυριακῶν ἐξήγησις*), that these oracles referred to by Papias were the Discourses of Jesus. Does the word *λόγια*, however, mean strictly Oracles or discourses alone, or does it include within its fair signification also historical narrative? Were the "*λόγια*" here referred to a simple collection of the discourses of Jesus, or a complete Gospel like that in our Canon bearing the name of Matthew? That the direct and natural interpretation of the word is merely "Discourses" is indirectly admitted, even by the most thorough apologists, when they confess the obscurity of the expression—obscurity, however, which simply appears to exist from the difficulty of straining the word to make it apply to the Gospel. "In these sentences," says Tischendorf, referring to the passage about Matthew, "there is much obscurity; for instance, it is doubtful whether we have rightly translated 'Discourses of the Lord,'"<sup>1</sup> and he can only extend the meaning to include historical narrative by leaving the real meaning of the word and interpreting it by supposed analogy.

There can be no doubt that the direct meaning of the word *λόγια* anciently and at the time of Papias was

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 106 f.

simply: words or oracles of a sacred character, and however much the signification became afterwards extended, that it was not then at all applied to doings as well as sayings. There are many instances of this original and limited signification in the New Testament,<sup>1</sup> and there is no linguistic precedent for straining the expression, used at that period, to mean anything beyond a collection of sayings of Jesus which were estimated as oracular or divine, nor is there any reason for thinking that τὰ λόγια was used in any other sense.<sup>2</sup> It is argued on the other hand, that in the preceding passage upon Mark, a more extended meaning of the word is indicated. The Presbyter John says that Mark, as the interpreter of Peter, wrote without order "the things which were either said or done by Christ" (τὰ ὑπὸ τοῦ Χριστοῦ ἢ λεχθέντα ἢ πραχθέντα), and then, apologizing for him, he goes on to say that Peter, whom he followed, adapted his teaching to the occasion, "and not as making a consecutive record of the discourses (λογίων) of the Lord." Here, it is said, the word λογίων is used in reference both to sayings and doings, and therefore in the passage on Matthew τὰ

<sup>1</sup> "Unto them were committed the oracles of God," τὰ λόγια τοῦ Θεοῦ, Rom. iii. 2. "The first principles of the oracles of God," τῶν λογίων τοῦ Θεοῦ, Heb. v. 12. "Let him speak as the oracles of God," ὡς λόγια Θεοῦ, 1 Pet. iv. 11. Cf. *Suicer*, Thes. Eccles., ii. p. 247 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 91, p. 752; *Baumgarten-Crusius*, Comm. üb. Matth. 1844, p. 26 f.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss. 1849, p. 202; *Holtzmann*, Die synopt. Evv., p. 251 ff.; *Köstlin*, Urspr. der synopt. Evv. p. 56; *Lachmann*, Th. Studien u. Krit., 1835, p. 577 ff.; *Meyer*, Kr. ex II'buch Evang. d. Matth., 11 f.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 175 ff.; *N. Rev. de Théol.* 1858, p. 46; *Réville*, Etudes crit. sur l'Ev. selon S. Matth., pp. 1—13; *Rumpf*, N. Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 32; *Schleiermacher*, Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1832, p. 735 ff.; *Schalten*, Das ält. Ev., p. 240 f.; *Schenkel*, Das Charakterb. Jesu, p. 335; *Schwackenburger*, Urspr. erst. kan. Evang. 1834, p. 160 f.; *Steitz*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1868, p. 68 f.; *Weisse*, Evang. Gesch., i. p. 34 ff.; *Wieseler*, Chron. Synops. d. vier Evv., p. 300; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. üb. evang. Gesch., p. 32.

λόγια must not be understood to mean only λεχθέντα, but also includes, as in the former case, the πραχθέντα. For these and similar reasons,—in very many cases largely influenced by the desire to see in these λόγια our actual Gospel according to Matthew—many critics have maintained that τὰ λόγια in this place may be understood to include historical narrative as well as discourses.<sup>1</sup> The arguments by which they arrive at this conclusion, however, seem to us to be based upon thorough misconception of the direct meaning of the passage. Few or none of these critics would deny that the simple interpretation of τὰ λόγια at that period was oracular sayings, or discourses.<sup>2</sup> Papias shows his preference for discourses in the very title of his lost book, “Exposition of the λογίων of the Lord,” and in the account which he gives of the works attributed to Mark and Matthew, the discourses evidently attracted his chief

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 580 f.; *Bleek*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 96 f.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, i. p. 467; *Delitzsch*, *Unters. Entst. d. Matth. Ev.*, p. 10 f.; *Ebrard*, *Wiss. kr. evang. Gesch.*, p. 767 f.; *Feilmoser*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 76; *Guericke*, *Gesammtgesch. N. T.*, p. 111; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 119; *Kern*, *Urspr. erst. Evang. Tüb. Zeitschr.*, 1834, 2, p. 8 ff.; *Kuhn*, *Leben Jesu*, i. p. 18; *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, i. p. 56; *Lücke*, *Stud. u. Krit.*, 1833, p. 499 ff.; *Nicolas*, *Et. crit. N. T.*, p. 119 f.; *Schott*, *Authen. d. kan. Ev. n. Matth.*, benannt, 1837, p. 96 f.; *Thiersch*, *Versuch z. Herst. Standp. d. Kr.*, &c., p. 186 ff.; *Die Kirche im apost. Zeit.*, p. 180 ff.; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 107; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 197, anm. b.; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 62, note 2. (He admits the difficulty, however.) *Zahn*, *Th. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1866, p. 694.

<sup>2</sup> *Tischendorf* himself in a note says: “Rufinus translates the word λόγια according to the old linguistic usage by *oracula*. It is in the highest degree probable that in fact the book of Papias, according to the Millenarian standing-point of the man, was dedicated specially to prophecies of the Lord. Christian linguistic usage, however, gave the word a wider signification, so that the sayings of the Lord and of the Apostles, even when they had not the particular character of prophecy, were so called, and Holy Scripture was designated *θεία λόγια*.” *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 102, note 1.

interest. Now, in the passage regarding Mark, instead of λογίων being made the equivalent of λεχθέντα and πραχθέντα, the very reverse is the fact. The Presbyter says Mark wrote what he remembered of the things which were said or done by Christ, although not in order, and he apologizes for his doing this on the ground that he had not himself been a *hearer* of the Lord, but merely reported what he had heard from Peter, who adapted his teaching to the occasion, and did *not* attempt to give a consecutive record of the discourses (λογίων) of the Lord. Mark, therefore, could not do so either. Matthew, on the contrary, he states, did compose the discourses (τὰ λόγια). There is an evident contrast made: Mark wrote ἡ λεχθέντα ἡ πραχθέντα because he had not the means of writing the discourses, but Matthew composed the λόγια.<sup>1</sup> Papias clearly distinguishes the work of Mark, who had written reminiscences of what Jesus had said and done, from that of Matthew, who had made a collection of his discourses.<sup>2</sup>

It is impossible upon any but arbitrary grounds, and from a foregone conclusion, to maintain that a work commencing with a detailed history of the birth and infancy of Jesus, his genealogy, and the preaching of John the Baptist, and concluding with an equally minute history of his betrayal, trial, crucifixion, and resurrection, and which relates all the miracles and has for its evident aim throughout the demonstration that Messianic prophecy was fulfilled in Jesus, could be entitled τὰ λόγια: the oracles or discourses of the Lord.<sup>3</sup> For these and other reasons, some of which shall presently be referred to, the great majority of critics deny that the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 752.

<sup>2</sup> *Scholten*, Das ält. Evang., p. 240.

<sup>3</sup> *Weiss*, Th. Studien u. Krit., 1861, p. 88.

work described by Papias can be the same as the Gospel in our canon bearing the name of Matthew.<sup>1</sup> Whilst of those who admit that the (Aramaic) original of which Papias speaks may have been substantially similar to it in construction, very few affirm that the work did not receive much subsequent manipulation, addition, and alteration, not to speak here of translation, before it assumed the form in which the Gospel now lies before us, and many of them altogether deny its actual apostolic origin.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 97 ff., p. 286 ff.; *Beiträge*, p. 60 ff.; *Baumgarten-Crusius*, Comment. üb. Matth., 1844, p. 26 f.; *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 91 ff., 203, 752; *Gesch. N. T. Kanons*, p. 6; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 482 f., 490 f., ii. p. 5; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 461 ff.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1849, p. 201 f.; *Gfrörer*, Allg. K. G., i. p. 167 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 119 f.; *Holtzmann*, Die synopt. Evv., p. 248 ff.; *Kleuer*, De Authen. Ev. Matth., 1832; *Köstlin*, Urspr. synopt. Evv., p. 45 ff., 130 ff.; *Lachmann*, De Ord. Narr. in Ev. Synopt. Th. Studien u. Krit., 1835, p. 577 ff.; *Meyer*, Kr. ex H'buch Ev. des Matth., 5 aufl. p. 11 ff.; *Neander*, Gesch. Pflanz. christl. Kirche, p. 464, anm. 2; *Niemeyer*, Recens. Schott's Isagoge. Haller litt. Zeitung, 1832, März, No. 57, p. 454; *Paulus*, Exeg. Conserv., i. p. 143; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 175 ff.; *N. Rev. de Théol.*, 1858, p. 46, p. 71; *Réville*, Et. crit. sur l'Ev. selon S. Matth., p. 53 ff., 336 ff.; *Rumpf*, *N. Rev. de Théol.*, 1867, p. 32, p. 360; *Renan*, Vie de Jésus, xiii<sup>me</sup> ed. p. 411 ff.; *Schleiermacher*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1832, p. 735 ff.; *Schneckenburger*, Urspr. erst. kan. Ev., 1834, p. 158 ff.; *Scherer*, *N. Rev. de Théol.*, 1861, p. 295 ff.; *Schenkel*, Charakterbild Jesu, 1864, p. 334 ff.; *Steitz*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1868, p. 68 ff., 85 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. pp. 241—259; *Sieffert*, Urspr. erst. kan. Evang., 1832, p. 22 ff.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 15 f.; *Das ält. Evangelium*, p. 240 ff., 248 ff.; *Das Ev. nach Johann.*, p. xxiii. f.; *Theile*, *Winer's n. kr. Journal*, 1824, i. p. 291; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 196 ff.; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. evang. Gesch., p. 29 ff.; *Weisse*, Die evang. Gesch., i. p. 34 ff.; *Evangelienfrage*, p. 78, 141 ff.; *Weiss*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1861, p. 88 ff.; *Jahrb. deutsche Theol.*, 1864, i. p. 49 ff., iii. p. 287 ff.; *Wieseler*, Chronol. Synops. d. 4 Evv., 1843, p. 300, 305, anm. 1; *Wilke*, Die Urevangelist, 1838, p. 691 f.; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 6 ff.; *Gratz*, *N. Versuch Entst. d. 3 erst. Evv. zu erklären*, 1812.

<sup>2</sup> *Anger*, Ratio qua loci Vet. Test. in Evang. Matth. laudatur, &c., 1862, part. iii. p. 8; *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 580 ff.; *Bengel*, Gnomon N. T., 1742, p. 1 ff.; *Delitzsch*, Entst. Matth. Evang., p. 10 ff.;

The next most important and obvious point is that the work described in this passage was written by Matthew in the Hebrew or Aramaic dialect, and each one who did not understand that dialect was obliged to translate as best he could. Our Gospel according to Matthew, however, is in Greek. Tischendorf, who is obliged to acknowledge the Greek originality of our actual Gospel, and that it is not a translation from another language, recognizes the inevitable dilemma in which this fact places apologists, and has, with a few other critics, no better argument with which to meet it than the simple suggestion that Papias must have been mistaken in saying that Matthew wrote in Hebrew.<sup>1</sup> Just as much of the testimony as is convenient or favourable is eagerly claimed by such apologists, and the rest, which destroys its applicability to our Gospel, is set aside as a mistake. Tischendorf perceives the difficulty, but not having arguments to meet it, he takes refuge in feeling. "In this," he says, "there lies before us one of the most complicated questions, whose detailed treatment would here not be in place. For our part, we are fully at rest concerning it,

*Ebrard*, *Wiss. krit. evang. Gesch.*, p. 766 ff.; *Feilmoser*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 76; *Frommann*, *Th. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1840, p. 912 ff.; *Gieseler*, *Versuch Entst. schr. Evv.*, p. 121 ff.; *Guericke*, *Gesamtgesch. N. T.*, p. 111 ff.; *Harless*, *Lucubr. Evang. can. spect.*, pars 1, 1841, p. 4 ff.; *Horne*, *Introd. H. S.*, 1869, iv. p. 420; *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, i. p. 56; *Kern*, *Tüb. Zeitschr. f. Th.*, 1834, 2, p. 8 ff.; *Kuhn*, *Das Leben Jesu*, i. p. 18; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 38, anm. 6; *J. P. Lange*, *Bibelwerk*, N. T., i.; *Das Ev. n. Matth.*, p. 3; *Lücke*, *Th. Stud. und Krit.*, 1833, p. 499 ff.; *Luthardt*, *De Compos. Ev. Matth.*, 1861, p. 5; *Nicolas*, *Et. cr. N. T.*, p. 119 ff.; *Neudecker*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 102, anm.; *Olshausen*, *Apost. Ev. Matth. origo defenditur*, 1835; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 106 ff.; *Thiersch*, *Versuch*, p. 186 ff., 222 ff., 348; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 62; *Zahn*, *Th. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1866, p. 690 ff.

<sup>1</sup> *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 107 f.; cf. *Bleek*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 62; *Einl. N. T.*, p. 112; *Cellérier*, *Introd. au N. T.*, p. 233 ff., p. 256; *Hug*, *Einl. N. T.*, ii. p. 16 ff., p. 51.

in the conviction that the acceptance by Papias of a Hebrew original text of Matthew, which already in his time cannot have been limited to himself and was soon repeated by other men, arises only from a misunderstanding."<sup>1</sup> It is difficult to comprehend why it should be considered out of place in a work specially written to establish the authenticity of the Gospels to discuss fully so vital a point, and its wilful and deliberate evasion in such a manner alone can be deemed out of place on such an occasion.<sup>2</sup>

We may here briefly remark that Tischendorf and others<sup>3</sup> repeat with approval the disparaging expressions against Papias which Eusebius, for dogmatic reasons, did not scruple to use, and in this way they seek somewhat to depreciate his testimony, or at least indirectly to warrant their free handling of it. It is true that Eusebius says that Papias was a man of very limited comprehension<sup>4</sup> (*σφόδρα γάρ τοι σμικρὸς ὦν τὸν νοῦν*), but this is acknowledged to be on account of his Millenarian opinions,<sup>5</sup> to which Eusebius was vehemently

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 107 f.

<sup>2</sup> Canon Westcott evades the whole difficulty by not referring to it at all, and indeed on all the other points which are inconvenient in the evidence of Papias regarding Matthew's work he preserves a discreet reserve, and assumes without a hint of doubt or uncertainty the orthodox conclusions. On the Canon, pp. 59—62.

<sup>3</sup> Tischendorf, Wann wurden, u. s. w., pp. 106—111; Cellérier, *Introd. au N. T.*, 1823, p. 233; Guericke, *Gesamtgesch.*, N. T., p. 111, anm. 2; Hug, *Einl. N. T.*, ii. p. 14 f.

<sup>4</sup> H. E., iii. 39. The passage (iii. 36) in which on the contrary Papias is called "a man in all respects most learned" (*ἄνηρ τὰ πάντα ὅτι μάλιστα λογιώτατος*) is doubtful, as it is not found in the St. Petersburg Syriac edition, nor in several other old Greek MSS.; but treated even as an ancient note by some one acquainted with the writings of Papias it may be mentioned here.

<sup>5</sup> Credner, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 90; Delitzsch, *Unters. Entst. Matth. Ev.*, p. 8; Davidson, *Introd. N. T.*, i. p. 466; Ebrard, *Wiss. kr. evang. Gesch.*, p. 783; Gieseler, *Versuch Entst. schr. Evv.*, p. 122 f.; Holtmann, *Die*

opposed. It must be borne in mind, however, that the Chiliastic passage from Papias quoted by Irenæus, and in which he certainly saw nothing foolish, is given on the authority of the Presbyter John, to whom, and not to Papias, any criticism upon it must be referred. If the passage be not of a very elevated character, it is quite in the spirit of that age. The main point, however, is that in regard to the testimony of Papias we have little to do with his general ability, for all that was requisite was the power to see, hear, and accurately state very simple facts. He repeats what is told him by the Presbyter, and in such matters we presume that the Bishop of Hierapolis must be admitted to have been competent.<sup>1</sup>

There is no point, however, on which the testimony of the Fathers is more invariable and complete than that the work of Matthew was written in Hebrew or Aramaic. The first mention of any work ascribed to Matthew occurs in the account communicated by Papias, in which, as we have seen, it is distinctly said that Matthew wrote "in the Hebrew dialect." Irenæus, the next writer who refers to the point, says: "Matthew also produced a written Gospel amongst the Hebrews in their own dialect," and that he did not derive his information solely from Papias may be inferred from his going on to state the epoch of Matthew's writings: "when Peter and Paul were preaching and founding the Church in Rome."<sup>2</sup> The evidence fur-

synopt. Evv., p. 264; *Kern*, Tübing. Zeitschr. f. Theol. 1834, 2, p. 13; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 29, anm. 1; *Meyer*, Kr. ex. H'buch Matth., p. 5; *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 952 ff.; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 190, anm.; *Reithmayr*, Einl. N. T., 1852, p. 360, anm. 1; *Réville*, Et. sur l'Ev. selon S. Matth.; *Scholten*, Das ält. Evang., p. 241.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Eichhorn*, Einl., N. T., i. p. 504 f.; *Kern*, Tübing. Zeitschr. f. Theol., 1834, 2, p. 13 f.

<sup>2</sup> Ὁ μὲν δὴ Ματθαῖος ἐν τοῖς Ἑβραίοις τῇ ἰδίᾳ αὐτῶν διαλέκτῳ καὶ γραφῇν

nished by Pantænus is certainly independent of Papias. Eusebius states with regard to him: "Of these Pantænus is said to have been one, and to have penetrated as far as India (Southern Arabia), where it is reported that he found the Gospel according to Matthew, which had been delivered before his arrival to some who had the knowledge of Christ, to whom Bartholomew, one of the Apostles, as it is said, had preached, and left them that writing of Matthew in Hebrew letters" (*αὐτοῖς τε Ἑβραίων γράμμασι τὴν τοῦ Ματθαίου καταλείψαι γραφήν*).<sup>1</sup> Jerome gives a still more circumstantial account of this. "Pantænus found that Bartholomew, one of the twelve Apostles, had there (in India) preached the advent of our Lord Jesus Christ according to the Gospel of Matthew, which was written in Hebrew letters (*quod Hebraicis literis scriptum*), and which on returning to Alexandria he brought with him."<sup>2</sup> It is quite clear that this was no version specially made by Bartholomew, for had he translated the Gospel according to Matthew from the Greek, for the use of persons in Arabia, he certainly would not have done so into Hebrew.<sup>3</sup> Origen, according to Eusebius, "following the ecclesiastical canon," states what he has understood from tradition (*ἐν παραδόσει*) of the Gospels, and says: "The first was written according to Matthew, once a publican, but afterwards an Apostle of Jesus Christ, who delivered it to the Jewish believers, written in the Hebrew language."<sup>4</sup> Eusebius in another place makes a similar statement in

*ἔξηνεγκεν εὐαγγέλιον, τοῦ Πέτρου καὶ τοῦ Παύλου ἐν Ῥώμῃ εὐαγγελιζομένων καὶ θεμελιούντων τὴν ἐκκλησίαν.* Adv. Hæc., iii. 1, § 1; *Euseb.*, H. E., v. 8.

<sup>1</sup> *Euseb.*, H. E., v. 10.

<sup>2</sup> *De Vir.* III., 36.

<sup>3</sup> *Davidson*, *Introd.* N. T., i. p. 469 f.

<sup>4</sup> *πρῶτον μὲν γέγραπται τὸ κατὰ τὸν ποτὲ τελώνην, ὕστερον δὲ ἀπόστολοι Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ Ματθαῖον, ἐκδεδικῶτα αὐτὸ τοῖς ἀπὸ Ἰουδαϊσμοῦ πιστεύουσι, γράμμασιν Ἑβραϊκοῖς συντεταγμένον.* *Euseb.*, H. E., vi. 25.

his own name: "Matthew having first preached to the Hebrews when he was about to go also to others, delivered to them the Gospel according to him written in their native language, and thus compensated to them for the want of his presence by the writing."<sup>1</sup> Cyril of Jerusalem says: "Matthew, writing the Gospel, wrote it in the Hebrew language."<sup>2</sup> Epiphanius, referring to the fact that the Nazarenes called the only Gospel which they recognized the "Gospel according to the Hebrews," continues: "As in very truth we can affirm that Matthew alone in the New Testament set forth the Gospel in the Hebrew language and in Hebrew characters;"<sup>3</sup> and elsewhere he states that "Matthew wrote the Gospel in Hebrew."<sup>4</sup> The same tradition is repeated by Chrysostom,<sup>5</sup> Augustine,<sup>6</sup> and others.

Whilst the testimony of the Fathers was thus unanimous as to the fact that the Gospel ascribed to Matthew was originally written in Hebrew, no question ever seems to have arisen in their minds as to the character of the Greek version; much less was any examination made with the view of testing the accuracy of the translation. "Such inquiries were not in the spirit of Christian learned men generally of that time,"<sup>7</sup> as Tischendorf remarks in connection with the

<sup>1</sup> Ματθαῖος μὲν γὰρ πρότερον Ἑβραῖοις κηρύξας, ὡς ἤμελλεν καὶ ἐφ' ἑτέροισι ἰεναί, πατριῶν γλώττῃ γραφῆν παραδοῦς τὸ κατ' αὐτὸν εὐαγγέλιον, τὸ λείπον τῆ αὐτοῦ παρουσίᾳ, τοῖσι ἀφ' ὧν ἐστέλλετο, διὰ τῆς γραφῆς ἀπεπλήρου. *Euseb.*, H. E., iii. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Ματθαῖος ὁ γράψας τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, Ἑβραϊδὶ γλώσσῃ τοῦτο ἔγραψεν. *Catech.*, 14.

<sup>3</sup> ὡς τὰ ἀληθῆ ἐστὶν εἰπεῖν ὅτι Ματθαῖος μόνος Ἑβραῖστὶ καὶ Ἑβραϊκοῖς γράμμασιν ἐν τῇ καινῇ διαθήκῃ ἐποίησατο τὴν τοῦ εὐαγγελίου ἔκθεσιν τε καὶ κήρυγμα. *Περ.*, xxx. 3; ed. *Petav.*, p. 127.

<sup>4</sup> . . . ὁ Ματθαῖος Ἑβραϊκοῖς γράμμασι γράφει τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, κ.τ.λ. *Περ.*, li. 5; ed. *Pet.*, p. 426.

<sup>5</sup> *Hom. in Matth.*, i.

<sup>6</sup> *De Consensu Evang.*, i. 2.

<sup>7</sup> *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 108.

belief current in the early Church, and afterwards shared by Jerome, that the Gospel according to the Hebrews was the original of the Greek Gospel according to Matthew. The first who directly refers to the point, frankly confessing the total ignorance which generally prevailed, was Jerome. He states: "Matthew, who was also called Levi, who from a publican became an Apostle, first wrote a Gospel of Christ in Judæa in Hebrew language and letters, on account of those from amongst the circumcision who believed; but who afterwards translated it into Greek is not sufficiently certain."<sup>1</sup> It was only at a much later period, when doubt began to arise, that the translation was wildly ascribed to the Apostles John, James, and others.<sup>2</sup>

The expression in Papias that "everyone interpreted them (the λόγια) as he was able" (ἡρμήνευσε δ' οὐτὰ ὡς ἦν δυνατὸς ἕκαστος) has been variously interpreted by different critics, like the rest of the account. Schleiermacher explained the ἡρμήνευσε as translation by enlargement: Matthew merely collected the λόγια, and everyone added the explanatory circumstances of time and occasion as best he could.<sup>3</sup> This view, however, has not been largely adopted. Others consider that the expression refers to the interpretation which was given on reading it at the public meetings of Christians for worship,<sup>4</sup> but there can be no doubt that, coming

<sup>1</sup> Matthæus, qui et Levi, ex publicano apostolus, primus in Judæa, propter eos qui ex circumcissione crediderant, evangelium Christi Hebraicis litteris verbisque composuit: quod quis postea in Græcum transtulerit, non satis certum est. *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 3.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Theophylact.*, Com. in Matth. Proem. Auctor Synops. Script. Sacr.; *Athanasius*, Opp. Paris., ii. p. 155; *Evang. sec. Matth. od. Matthæi*, p. 10; *Scholz*, N. T. Græce., i. p. xxx., p. 107; *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 72 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Th. Studion u. Krit.*, 1832, p. 735 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Thiersch*, Versuch, u. s. w., p. 193, 222 ff., 348; *Die Kirche im apost. Zeitalt.*, p. 180 ff.

after the statement that the work was written in the Hebrew dialect, *ἔρμηνεύειν* can only mean simple translation.<sup>1</sup> Some maintain that the passage infers the existence of many written translations, amongst which very probably was ours;<sup>2</sup> whilst others affirm that the phrase merely signifies that as there was no recognized translation, each one who had but an imperfect knowledge of the language, yet wished to read the work, translated the Hebrew for himself orally as best he could.<sup>3</sup> Some consider that Papias or the Presbyter use the verb in the past tense, *ἤρμηνευσεν*, as contrasting the time when it was necessary for each to interpret as best he could with the period when, from the existence of a recognized translation, it was no longer necessary for them to do so;<sup>4</sup> whilst others deny that any written translation of an authentic character was known to Papias at all.<sup>5</sup> Now the words in Papias are simply: "Matthew composed the *λόγια* in the Hebrew dialect,"<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, *Krit. Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 581; *Lücke*, *Th. Studien u. Krit.*, 1833, p. 499.

<sup>2</sup> *Lücke*, *Th. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1833, p. 499 ff.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, i. pp. 468, 491; *Weizsäcker*, *Unters. evang. Gesch.*, p. 31; *Bleek*, *Beiträge*, p. 60; *Einl. N. T.*, ii. p. 95; *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1849, p. 202; *Michaelis*, *Einl. N. T.*, 1788, ii. p. 952.

<sup>3</sup> *Ebrard*, *Wiss. krit. evang. Gesch.*, p. 785, anm. 6; *Feilmoser*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 42 f.; *Weisse*, *Die evang. Gesch.*, p. 36 f.; *Schott*, *Authen. kan. Ev. n. Matth. benannt*, 1837, p. 86 f., cf. 93; *Sieffert*, *Urspr. erst. kan. Ev. p. 20 f.*; cf. *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1849, p. 202.

<sup>4</sup> *Ebrard*, *Wiss. kr. evang. Gesch.*, p. 785, anm. 6, p. 786 f. anm. 8; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 62; *Delitzsch*, *Entst. d. Matth. Ev.* p. 11.

<sup>5</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Ev.* p. 582; *Bleek*, *Beiträge*, p. 60; *Credner*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 91; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 15; *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 175 ff.; *Holtzmann*, *Die synopt. Evv.*, p. 265; *Schott*, *Authen. d. kan. Ev. n. Matth. benannt*, p. 87; cf. *Sieffert*, *Urspr. erst. kan. Ev.*, p. 21 f., p. 20 ff.; *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1849, p. 202.

<sup>6</sup> In connection with this it may be of interest to remember that, in the account of his conversion and the vision which he saw on his way to Damascus which Paul gives to King Agrippa in the Acts of the Apostles,

and everyone interpreted them as he was able." The statement is perfectly simple and direct, and it is at least quite clear that it conveys the fact that translation was requisite, and as each one translated "as he was able," that no recognized translation existed to which all might have recourse. There is absolutely not a syllable which warrants the conclusion that Papias was acquainted with an authentic Greek version, although it is possible that he may have known of the existence of some Greek translations of no authority. The words used, however, imply that, if he did, he had no respect for any of them.

Thus the account of Papias, supported by the perfectly unanimous testimony of the Fathers, declares that the work composed by Matthew was written in the Hebrew or Aramaic dialect. The only evidence which asserts that Matthew wrote any work at all, therefore, equally asserts that he wrote it in Hebrew. It is quite impossible to separate the statement of the authorship from the language. The two points are so indissolubly united that they stand or fall together. If it be denied that Matthew wrote in Hebrew, it cannot be asserted that he wrote at all. It is therefore perfectly certain from this testimony that Matthew cannot be declared the direct author of the Greek canonical Gospel bearing his name.<sup>1</sup> At the very best it can only be a translation, by an unknown hand, of a work the original of which was early lost. None of the Fathers ever ventured a conjecture as to how, when, or by whom the translation was effected. Jerome explicitly states that the translator of the work was unknown. The

he states that Jesus spoke to him "in the Hebrew dialect" (*Ἑβραϊδὶ διαλέκτῳ*), Acts xxvi. 14.

<sup>1</sup> *Ewald, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1849, p. 202.

deduction is clear : our Greek Gospel, in so far as it is associated with Matthew at all, cannot at the utmost be more than a translation, but as the work of an unknown translator, there cannot, in the absence of the original, or even of testimony of its accuracy, be any assurance that the translation faithfully renders the work of Matthew, or accurately conveys the sense of the original. All its Apostolical authority is gone. Even Michaelis long ago recognized this: "If the original text of Matthew be lost, and we have nothing but a Greek translation : then, frankly, we cannot ascribe any divine inspiration to the words: yea, it is possible that in various places the true meaning of the Apostle has been missed by the translator."<sup>1</sup> This was felt and argued by the Manicheans in the fourth century,<sup>2</sup> and by the Anabaptists at the time of the Reformation.<sup>3</sup> A wide argument might be opened out as to the dependence of the other two Gospels on this unauthenticated work.

The dilemma, however, is not yet complete. It was early remarked that our first Canonical Gospel bore no real marks of being a translation at all, but is evidently an original independent Greek work. Even men like Erasmus, Calvin, Cajetan, and Ecolampadius, began to deny the statement that our Gospels showed any traces of Hebrew origin, and the researches of later scholars have so fully confirmed their doubts that few now maintain the primitive belief in a translation. We do not propose here to enter fully into this argument. It is sufficient to say that the great majority of competent critics declare

<sup>1</sup> Einl. N. T., ii. p. 997, cf. p. 1003.

<sup>2</sup> *Augustin.*, *Contra Faust.*, 32, 2 ; 33, 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Sixtus Senensis*, *Bibl. Sancta*, vii. 2, p. 924.

that our first Canonical Gospel is no translation, but an original Greek text;<sup>1</sup> whilst of those who consider that they find traces of translation and of Hebrew origin, some barely deny the independent originality of the

<sup>1</sup> *Alber*, Hermeneut. Novi Test., i. p. 239 ff.; *Alford*, Nov. Test. Gr., 1868, Proleg. i. p. 29; *Anger*, Ratio qua loci V. T. in Ev. Matth. laudantur, 1861; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 286 ff., p. 106 ff.; Beiträge, p. 62 ff.; *Baumgarten-Crusius*, Comment. Ev. d. Matth., 1844, p. 23; *Basnage*, Annal. Ad. A.C. 64, p. 729; *Beza*, Adnot. Maj. N. T.; *Buslav*, Dissert. de lingua orig. Evang., sec. Matth., 1826, 8; *Calvin*, Comment. in N. T.; *Cellérier*, Introd. au N. T., p. 256; *Clericus*, Diss. in quat. Evang., § 1; *Cajetan*, Comment. in quat. Evang.; *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 92 ff.; Gesch. N. T. Kanons, p. 136; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 466 ff., 490; *Delitzsch*, Unters. üb. Entst. d. Matth. Ev., p. 12 ff., 111 f.; *Erasmus*, Ad Matth., viii. Schol. ad Hieron. Catal. Script. Eccles., v.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1849, p. 210; *Fabricius*, Bibl. Græca ed. Harless, iv. 4, 7, p. 700 ff.; *Flaccius*, N. T. ex vers. D. Erasmi emend. &c., 1570, p. 1 ff.; (cf. *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 193, anm. 1); *Fritzsche*, Evang. Matthæi recens. 1826, p. xviii. ff.; *Gerhard*, Annot. posth. in Ev. Matth., 1650, p. 35 ff.; *Grawitz*, Sur la langue orig. de l'Ev. de St. Matth., 1827; *Grotius*, Annotat. ad Matth., i. 1; *Harless*, Lucubr. Evang. can. spect., pars i., 1841; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 115 ff.; *Holtzmann*, Die synopt. Ev., p. 264 ff.; *Heydenreich*, in Winer's Kr. Journal, iii. 1825, p. 129 ff., 385 ff.; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 52 ff.; *Heidegger*, Enchiridion, 1681, p. 705 ff.; *Hofmann*, Ad Pritii Introd. in Lect. N. T., 1764, p. 307 ff.; *Jortin*, Remarks on Eccl. Hist., 2nd ed. i. p. 309 f.; *Keim*, Gesch. Jesu v. Nazara, i. p. 54 ff.; *Köstlin*, Urspr. synopt. Evv., p. 43; *Koecher*, Analecta philol. et exeg. &c., 1766; *Kuhn*, Das Leben Jesu, i.; *Lardner*, Suppl. to Credibility, &c., Works, vi. pp. 46—65; *Lightfoot*, Horæ Hebr. ad Matth., i. 23; Works, xi. p. 21 ff.; *Lessing*, Theolog. Nachlass, pp. 45—72; Vermischte Schr., vi. p. 50; *Masch*, Grundsprache d. Ev. Matth., 1755—8; *Majus*, Exam. Hist. Crit. Textus N. T., 1694, ch. v. vi.; *Moldenhawer*, Introd. ad Libr. Canon., p. 247 ff.; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 200 ff.; *Paulus*, Introd. in N. T. Cap. Select., 1799, p. 279; Theol. exeg. Conservatorium, 1822, i. p. 159 ff.; Exeg. II'buch, i. 1, p. 36 f.; *Pritius*, Introd. in Lect. N. T., 1764; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 189 ff.; *Ritschl*, Theol. Jahrb., 1851, p. 536 ff.; *Rumpæus*, Com. Crit. in N. T., p. 81 ff.; *Schott*, Isagoge, p. 68 ff.; Authent. d. kan. Ev. n. Matth. benannt, p. 83 ff., 105 ff.; *Schubert*, Diss. qua in Serm. quo Ev. Matth. conscript. fuerit inquiritur, 1810; *C. F. Schmidt*, Hist. Antiq. et vindictio Canonis, 1775, p. 435 ff.; *Schroeder*, De lingua Matth. Authen., 1701; *Scholten*, Das ält. Evang., p. 249 f.; *Steitz*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1868, p. 85 ff.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 107 ff.; *Theile*, in Winer's N. Kr. Journal, 1824, i. p. 198 ff.; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 6 ff.; *Viser*, Herm. Sac. N. T., pars ii. p. 344 ff.; *Vogel*, Entst. drei erst.

Greek Gospel, and few assert more than substantial agreement with the original, with more or less variation and addition often of a very decided character.<sup>1</sup> The case, therefore, stands thus: The whole of the evidence which warrants our believing that Matthew wrote any work at all, distinctly, invariably, and emphatically asserts that he wrote that work in Hebrew or Aramaic;

Evv. Gabler's Journal f. auserl. Theol. Lit., 1804, i. 1; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 196 ff.; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. üb. evang. Gesch., p. 31; *Weiss*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1861, p. 86 ff.; *Wilke*, Der Urevangelist, 1838, p. 691 f., et passim; *Wilcke*, Tradition und Mythe, p. 34 ff.; *Wetstein*, Nov. Test. Gr., i. p. 224. We do not pretend to give complete lists.

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, Unters. üb. kan. Evv., p. 580 ff. (a translation which by alterations and additions has more and more lost its original character); *Bertholdt*, Einl. A. und N. T., 1813, iii. p. 1114 ff., 1175 ff., 1257 ff.; *Bolten*, Bericht d. Matth. v. Jesu der Messia, 1792-8 Vorrede; *Corradi*, Beleucht. d. Gesch. d. Bibel-Kanons, ii. p. 149 ff.; *Eckermann*, Erklär. all. dunkl. Stellen N. T., i. p. xi.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 502 ff.; *Ebrard*, Wiss. kr. evang. Gesch., p. 780 ff.; *Fischer*, Einl. in d. Dogm. d. evang.-luth. Kirche, 1828, p. 115 ff.; *Feilmoser*, Einl. N. T., 2 ausg. p. 38 ff.; *Gieseler*, Versuch Entst. schr. Evv., p. 120 ff.; *Gratz*, N. Versuch Entst. 3 erst. Evv. zu erklären, 1812; *Hänlein*, H'buch Einl. N. T., iii. p. 30, 75 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, Quollensamml., p. 33, anm. 6; *Kern*, Tübing. Zeitschr. f. Theol., 1834, 2 p. 14 ff., 43 ff., 122 ff.; cf. 1838, 2, p. 14 f.; *Klener*, Recent. de Authentia Ev. Matth. quæst. recensentur, &c., 1832; *Kuinoel*, Comm. N. T., 1807, i. xvi.; *Luthardt*, De Compos. ev. Matth., 1861; *Meyer*, Kr. ex. H'buch üb. d. Ev. des Matth., 5te auf. p. 4 ff.; *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 946 ff.; *Niemeyer*, Allg. Litteraturzeit., 1832, No. 37; *Osiander*, Tüb. Zeitschr., 1836, 4 p. 77 f.; *Reithmayr*, Einl. N. T., 1852, p. 356 ff.; *Schneckenburger*, Urspr. erst. kan. Ev., 1834, p. 105 ff., 171; *Schulz*, Beiträge z. Lehre, v. heil. Abendmahl, 1 ausg. p. 302 ff.; *Schulthess*, Rosenmüller's Repert., 1824, ii. p. 172 f.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 241 ff.; *Semler*, Uebersetz. v. Townson's Abh. üb. 4 Evv., 1783, i. p. 146 ff.; *J. E. C. Schmidt*, In Henke's Magazin, 1795, iv. p. 576; Einl. N. T., i. p. 60 ff.; *Simon*, Hist. crit. du N. T., p. 47 ff.; *Storr*, Zweck d. evang. Gesch. u. Br. Johannis, p. 360 f.; *Tregelles*, Orig. language St. Matth. Gospel, 1850. Note to Horne's Introd. to H. S., 12th ed., iv. p. 420; *Thiess*, N. Krit. Comment. N. T., i., Einl. p. 18 ff.; *Venturini*, Gesch. d. Urchristenthums, ii. p. 8, 41, 51; *Weisse*, Die evang. Gesch., i. p. 45 ff.; *Weber*, Beiträge z. Gesch. N. T. Kanons, 1791, p. 21 ff.; Versuch einer Beleucht. d. Gesch. d. Bibel-Kanons, 1792, ii. p. 150 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 262; *Zahn*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1866, p. 693 ff.

a Greek Gospel, therefore, as connected with Matthew, can only be a translation by an unknown hand, whose accuracy we have not, and never have had, the means of verifying. Our Greek Gospel, however, being an independent original Greek text, there is no ground whatever for ascribing it to Matthew at all, the whole evidence of antiquity being emphatically opposed, and even the Gospel itself laying no claim to such authorship.

One or other of these alternatives must be adopted for our first Gospel, and either is absolutely fatal to its direct Apostolic origin. Neither as a translation from the Hebrew nor as an original Greek text can it claim Apostolic authority. This has been so well recognized, if not admitted, that some writers, with greater zeal than discretion, have devised fanciful theories to obviate the difficulty. These maintain that Matthew himself wrote both in Hebrew and in Greek,<sup>1</sup> or at least that the translation was made during his own lifetime and under his own eye,<sup>2</sup> and so on. There is not, however, a particle of evidence for any of these assertions, which are merely the arbitrary and groundless conjectures of embarrassed apologists.

It is manifest that upon this evidence both those who

<sup>1</sup> *Bengel*, *Gnomon N. T.*, 1742, p. 3; *Benson*, *Hist. of First Planting of Christ. Religion*, i. p. 257; *Guericke*, *Beiträge*, 1828, p. 36 ff.; *Einl. N. T.*, 2 aufl. p. 115; *Gesammt. Gesch. N. T.*, p. 114 ff.; *Horne*, *Intro. to H. S.*, 1869, iv. p. 420; *Lange*, *Das Ev. Matth.*, p. 3; *Bibelwerk*, 1868, i.; *Olshausen*, *Echtheit d. 4 kan. Evv.*, 1823, p. 18 ff.; *Apost. Ev. Matth. origo def.*, 1835; *Sixtus Sen.*, *Biblioth. Sanct.*, vii. p. 582; *Thiersch*, *Versuch, u. s. w.*, p. 190 ff., 348 ff.; *Townson*, *Works*, i. p. 30 ff.; *Schwarz*, *Solœcismi Discip. J. C.*, 1730; *Hales*, *Analysis of Chronology*, ii. p. 665.

Cf. *Milman*, *Hist. of Christianity*, 1867, i. p. 386; cf. p. 422.

<sup>2</sup> *Ebrard*, *Wiss. krit. evang. Gesch.*, p. 786; *Orelli* conjectures that two disciples of Matthew wrote the Gospel, the one in Aramaic, the other in Greek. *Selecta Patr. Eccles. Capita*, p. 10.

assert the Hebrew original of Matthew's work and those who maintain that our Gospel is not a translation but an original Greek composition, should logically deny the apostolicity of our actual Gospel. We need not say that this is not done, and that for dogmatic and other foregone conclusions many profess belief in the Apostolic authorship of the Gospel, although in doing so they wilfully ignore the facts, and in many cases merely claim a substantial but not absolute Apostolic origin for the work.<sup>1</sup> A much greater number of the most able and learned critics, however, both from external and internal evidence deny the Apostolic origin of our first Canonical Gospel.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Alford*, Greek Test., 1868, Proleg. i. p. 24; *Bengel*, Archiv f. Theol., vi. 1824, p. 572; *Gnomon N. T.*, 1742, p. 3; *Benson*, Hist. First Planting of Chr. Religion, i. p. 257; *Delitzsch*, Entst. d. Matth. Evang., p. 110, cf. p. 7 f.; *Ebrard*, Wiss. krit. evang. Gesch., p. 787 ff.; *Feilmoser*, Einl. N. T., 2 ausg. p. 71 ff.; *Fritzsche*, Proleg. in Matth., 1826, p. 18 ff.; *Gieseler*, Entst. schr. Evv., p. 120 ff.; *Guericke*, Beiträge, pp. 23—36; Einl. N. T., p. 115; *Gesammtgesch.*, p. 109 ff.; *Gerhard*, Annot. posth. in Evang. Matth., p. 38; *Heydenreich*, Winer's Kr. Journal, iii., 1825, p. 129 ff., p. 385 ff.; *Zeitschr. Predegerwiss. v. Heyden u. Huffel*, 1828, p. 10 ff.; *Hengstenberg*, Evang. Kirchenzeitung, 1858, p. 627 ff.; *Heidegger*, Enchiridion, p. 707; *Horne*, Introd. to H. S., iv. p. 421; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., 1847, ii. p. 4 ff., 90 ff., 111 f.; *Kern*, Tübinger Zeitschr. f. Theol., 1834, 2, p. 122 f.; cf. 21; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 33, ann. 6; *Lange*, Bibelwerk N. T., i., Ev. in Matth., p. 2 ff.; *Olshausen*, Apost. Ev. Matth. origo def., 1835; *Bibl. Commentar*, 1830, p. 11 f.; *Reithmayr*, Einl. N. T., 1852, p. 351 ff.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., passim; *Thiersch*, Versuch, u. s. w., p. 190 ff., 348 ff.; *Townson*, Works, i. p. 30 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 62, et passim; *Schwarz*, Solocismi Discip. J. C., &c., 1730; *Hales*, Analysis of Chronology, ii. p. 665.

<sup>2</sup> *Baur*, Krit. Unters. üb. kan. Evv., p. 571 ff.; *B. Bauer*, Krit. d. evang. Gesch. d. Synopt., 1846; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., 1866, § 110, p. 286 ff.; *Beiträge*, 1846, p. 62 ff.; *Baumgarten-Crusius*, Comment. üb. Ev. Matth., 1844, p. 24 ff.; *Bertholdt*, Einl. A. und N. T., 1813, iii. § 332, p. 1265 ff.; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 97 f.; cf. p. 38; *Corradi*, Versuch einer Beleucht. d. Gesch. J. u. Chr. Bibel-Kanons, ii. p. 149 ff.; *Christiannus*, Das Evang. des Reichs, 1859; *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. § 47, p. 97 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 484 ff.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., 1820, i.

There is another fact to which we may briefly refer, which from another side shows that the work of Matthew

§ 100 ff., p. 461 ff.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., ii., 1849, p. 209 ff.; *Fischer*, Einl. in d. Dogmatik, 1828, p. 115 ff.; *Gfrörer*, Gesch. d. Urchristenthums, ii. p. 7, 114 f.; Allgemeine Kirchengesch., 1841, i. p. 166; *Gratz*, N. Versuch Entst. 3 erst. Evv. zu erklären, 1812; *Herder*, Regel d. zusam. uns. Evv., &c.; Von Gottes Sohn, u. s. w., 1791, xii.; *Hilgenfeldt*, Die Evangelien, pp. 106—120; *Holtmann*, Die synopt. Evv., § 18, p. 264 ff., 359 ff.; *Kleuer*, Recent. de authent. Evang. Matth. quest., 1832; *Klein*, Jesu v. Nazara, i. p. 63 ff., 67 ff.; *Köstlin*, Urspr. d. synopt., p. 43 ff., 69 ff.; *Lachmann*, Th. Studien u. Krit., 1835, p. 577 ff.; *Lücke*, Th. Studien u. Krit., 1833, p. 497 ff.; Comment. zum Ev. Johan., 1820, i.; *Lessing*, Theolog. nachlass, 1784, p. 45 ff.; *Meyer*, Kr. exeg. II'buch üb. d. Ev. des. Matth., 5to auf. § 2, p. 3 ff.; *Neander*, Leben Jesu, p. 11; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., § 27, p. 290 ff.; *Nicolas*, Etudes crit. sur la Bible, N. T., p. 28 ff., 43, p. 153 ff.; *Niemeyer*, Allgem. Literaturzeit., 1832, No. 37; *Orelli*, Selecta Patr. Eccles. Cap. 1821, p. 10; *Plitt*, De Comp. Evang. Synopt., 1860; *Renan*, Vie de Jésus, xiii<sup>me</sup> ed. p. 1. ff.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., § 195, p. 188; N. Rev. de Théol., 1858, p. 46; *Révillé*, Etudes crit. sur l'Ev. selon S. Matth., 1862; *Rumpf*, N. Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 32; *Radtiger*, Symbolæ quadam ad N. T. pertinentes, 1827; *Schliermacher*, Th. Studien u. Krit., 1832, p. 735 ff.; *Schneckenburger*, Urspr. erst kan. Evang., 1834, p. 3 ff. 90 ff.; Beiträge, p. 24; *Scherer*, N. Rev. de Théol., 1859, p. 307 f., 1861, p. 295 ff.; *J. E. C. Schmidt*, Entwurf, u. s. w., Hencke's Mag., iv. p. 576 ff.; Einl. N. T., i. p. 68 ff.; *Schenkel*, Das Charakterbild Jesu, 1864, p. 333 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 241 ff.; *Scholten*, Das ält. Evangelium, p. 210 ff., 248 ff.; cf. Die ält. Zeugnisse, u. s. w., p. 15 f.; *Schulz*, Bemerk. üb. Verf. d. Ev. n. Matth. Beit. z. Christ. Lehre v. heil. Abendmahl, 1 ausg., 1824, pp. 302—322; *Schott*, Authent. des kan. Ev. benannt nach Matth., 1837, herausg. v. Danz., p. 93 ff., 106 ff.; *Schulthess*, Rosenmüller's Bibl. exeg. Repertorium, 1824, ii. p. 172 f.; *Semler*, Vorrede z. Baumgarten's Unters. Theol. Streitigkeit, 1762, p. 52; Uebersetz. v. Townson's Abhandl. 4 Evv., 1783, i. p. 146 ff., 221, 290; *Sieffert*, Ursprung. d. erst. kan. Evv., 1832, p. 123 ff., 138 ff., 160 ff.; *Stroth*, Interpol. in Evang. Matth. in Eichhorn's Repertorium f. bibl. u. morgenl. Litt., ix. p. 99 ff.; *Theile*, Zur Biographie Jesu, 1836, p. 35; *Tohter*, Die Evangelienfrage, 1858; *Usteri*, Comment. Crit. in qua Ev. Johan. gen. esse, &c., 1823; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, u. s. w., p. 6 ff.; *Venturini*, Gesch. des Urchristenthums, ii. p. 1 ff.; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., § 98, a. b., 201 ff.; *Weisäcker*, Unters. üb. evang. Gesch., 26 ff., 104 ff., 129 ff.; *Weisse*, Evang. Gesch., i. p. 29 ff.; Die Evangelienfrage, p. 89 ff., 141 ff.; *Weiss*, Th. Studien u. Krit., 1861, p. 88 ff.; *Wilke*, Der Urevangelist, p. 691, et passim; *Wilke*, Tradition u. Mythe, 1837, § 19, p. 38 ff.; *Wieseler*, Chronolog. Synopsis d. 4 Ev., 1843, p. 300, 304 ff.; Beiträge z. apok. Litt., p. 182.

with which Papias was acquainted was different from our Gospel. In a fragment from the fourth book of his lost work which is preserved to us by Œcumenius and Theophylact, Papias relates the circumstances of the death of Judas Iscariot in a manner which is in contradiction to the account in the first Gospel. In Matthew xxvii. 5, the death of the traitor is thus related: "And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple and departed and went and hanged himself."<sup>1</sup> The narrative in Papias is as follows: "Judas walked about in this world a great example of impiety; for his body having swollen so that he could not pass where a chariot could easily pass, he was crushed by the chariot so that his bowels were emptied out."<sup>2</sup> Theophylact, in connection with this passage, adds other details also apparently taken from the work of Papias, as for instance that, from his excessive corpulency, the eyes of Judas were so swollen that they could not see, and so sunk in his head that they could not be perceived even by the aid of the optical instruments of physicians; and that the rest of his body was covered with running sores and maggots, and so on in the manner of the early Christian ages, whose imagination conjured up the wildest "special providences" to punish the enemies of the faith.<sup>3</sup> As Papias expressly states that he eagerly inquired what the Apostles, and amongst them what Matthew, said, we may conclude that he would not have deliberately contradicted the account given by that Apostle had he been

<sup>1</sup> In Acts i. 18 f., an account is given which again contradicts both Matth. and the version of Papias.

<sup>2</sup> Μέγα ἀσεβείας ὑπόδειγμα ἐν τούτῳ τῷ κόσμῳ περιεπάτησεν Ἰούδας· πρησθεὶς γὰρ ἐπὶ τοσοῦτον τὴν σάρκα, ὥστε μὴ δύνασθαι διελθεῖν, ἀμάξης ῥαδίως διερχομένης, ἰπὸ τῆς ἀμάξης ἐπίεσθη, ὥστε τὰ ἔγκατα αὐτοῦ ἐκκενωθῆναι. (Œcumenius, Comm. in Acta Apost., cap. ii.)

<sup>3</sup> Routh, Reliq. Sacræ, 1846, i. pp. 9, 23 f., 25 ff.

acquainted with any work attributed to him which contained it.<sup>1</sup>

It has been argued, from some very remote and imaginary resemblance between the passage from the preface to the work of Papias quoted by Eusebius with the prologue to Luke, that Papias was acquainted with that Gospel;<sup>2</sup> but nothing could be more groundless than such a conclusion based upon such evidence, and there is not a word in our fragments of Papias which warrants such an assertion.<sup>3</sup> Eusebius, who never fails to enumerate the works of the New Testament to which the Fathers refer, does not pretend that Papias knew either the third or fourth Gospels. He states, however, that Papias "made use of testimonies from the first Epistle of John and, likewise, from that of Peter."<sup>4</sup> As Eusebius, however, does not quote the passages from Papias, we must remain in doubt whether he did not, as elsewhere, assume from some similarity of wording that the passages were quotations from these Epistles, whilst in reality they might not be. Eusebius made a similar statement with regard to a supposed quotation in the so-called Epistle of Polycarp<sup>5</sup> upon very insufficient grounds.<sup>6</sup> Andrew, a Cappadocian bishop of the fifth

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Einl. N. T., p. 91; *Holtmann*, Die synopt. Evv., p. 251 f.; cf. *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 66.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 202; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 15 f.; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1861, p. 202.

<sup>3</sup> *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 19; *Nicolas*, Et. crit. N. T., p. 21 f.; *Reuss*, N. Rev. de Théol., 1858, p. 45, note 5; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugn., p. 16 f.; *Het Paulin. Evangelie*, p. 2 f.; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 11; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 60 f.; cf. *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 117 f.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 65 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Euseb.*, H. E., iii. 39.

<sup>5</sup> *Ad. Phil.*, vii.; *Euseb.*, H. E., iv. 14.

<sup>6</sup> *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 350, ann.; *Reinm.*, Vie de Jésus, xiii<sup>me</sup> ed. p. lxx. note 4; *Scholten*, Das Evang. n. Johannes, p. 8.

century, mentions that Papias, amongst others of the Fathers, considered the Apocalypse inspired.<sup>1</sup> No reference is made to this by Eusebius, but although from his Millenarian tendencies it is very probable that Papias regarded the Apocalypse with peculiar veneration as a prophetic book, this evidence is too vague and isolated to be of much value.

We find, however, that Papias, like Hegesippus and others of the Fathers, was acquainted with the Gospel according to the Hebrews. Eusebius says: "He (Papias) likewise relates another history of a woman accused of many sins before the Lord, which is contained in the Gospel according to the Hebrews."<sup>2</sup> This is generally believed to be the episode inserted in the later MSS. of the fourth Gospel viii. 1—11. This Gospel, of which, as we have seen, we find much more ancient and distinct traces than any other, was clearly used by Papias.<sup>3</sup>

Whatever books Papias knew, however, it is certain, from his own express declaration, that he ascribed little importance to them, and preferred tradition as a more reliable source of information regarding evangelical history. "For I held that what was to be derived from books," he says, "was not so profitable as that from the living and abiding voice (of tradition)."<sup>4</sup> If, therefore, it could even have been shown that Papias was

<sup>1</sup> Proleg. Comment. in Apocalypsin; *Routh*, Reliq. Sacra, 1846, i. p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Ἐκτίθεται δὲ καὶ ἄλλην ἱστορίαν περὶ γυναῖκος, ἐπὶ πολλαῖς ἁμαρτίαις διαβληθείσης ἐπὶ τοῦ Κυρίου. Ὁ μὲν τὸ κατ' Ἑβραίους εὐαγγέλιον περιέχει. *H. E.*, iii. 39.

<sup>3</sup> *Delitzsch*, *Entst. d. Matth. Evang.*, p. 24; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 21 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 119; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 33, ann. 8; *Scholten*, *Das ält. Evang.*, p. 242; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 205; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 110.

<sup>4</sup> *Euseb.*, *H. E.*, iii. 39.

acquainted with any of our Canonical Gospels, it could only have been with the accompanying fact that he did not recognize them as authoritative documents. It is manifest from the evidence adduced, however, that Papias did not know our Gospels. It is not possible that he could have found it better to inquire "what John or Matthew, or what any other of the disciples of the Lord . . . say" if he had known of Gospels such as ours actually written by them, deliberately telling him what they had to say. The work of Matthew which he mentions being, however, a mere collection of discourses of Jesus, he might naturally inquire what the Apostle<sup>1</sup> himself said of the history of the Master. The evidence of Papias is in every respect most important. He is the first writer who mentions that Matthew and Mark were believed to have written any works at all; but whilst he shows that he does not accord any canonical authority even to the works attributed to them, his description of those works and his general testimony comes with crushing force against the pretensions made on behalf of our Gospels to Apostolic origin and authenticity.

<sup>1</sup> We may merely remark that Papias does not call the Matthew who wrote the *λόγια* an Apostle. In this passage he speaks of the Apostle, but he does not distinctly identify him with the Matthew of the other passage.

END OF VOL. I.







# BEECHER'S BRAVADO.

Remarkable Utterances of the Plymouth Pulpit-Pounder.

Heresy, or Blasphemy?—Or Are These the Wild Ravings of an Irresponsible Lunatic!

*Special Dispatch to the Enquirer.*

New York, December 16.—The virtuous Mr. Beecher seems to be gradually shaking off the old-fashioned doctrine of the Congregational body of which he is a member, and striking out in his accustomed sensational way. All doctrine hangs lightly upon his shoulders, and it has long been easier to tell from his public utterances what he does not believe than what he does. He indulged in a vast deal of swearing to-day on the doctrines of the Trinity and of hell.

Speaking of the Trinity, he said he believed there were three persons united in one God-head; but if any one should ask him why he believed it, he should tell him he did not know any thing about it, only that it was easier to believe that which he thought coincided with the doctrines of the New Testament than to deny it. Orthodoxy says that men must believe in the Trinity or they can not come into the Church. That is called orthodoxy, but he called it heathenism.

"It is not an easy thing," said Mr. Beecher, "for an honest, conservative man to know just what to preach and what not to preach. A man who values morality, and who has the good of his fellow-man at heart, can not be careless as to the things he ought to teach. It was said that Adam was created perfect. It was also said that Adam sinned, and that the consequence of that sin the whole human race felt. The human race had existed on the earth for thousands and thousands of years, and had gone on propagating and multiplying until all the waves that had rolled in upon the shore during those centuries did not contain drops enough, nor the sands of the sea particles enough, nor all the figures of the arithmetic numbers enough, to compute the preface, to say nothing of the great history of the human race. The numbers of the human race were actually beyond computation, and for thousands and thousands and thousands of years they had been born into the world, had lived and struggled, and finally died and gone—where? If you tell me that they have all gone to Heaven, my answer will be that such a sweeping of mud into Heaven would defile its purity, and I can not accept that. If you tell me that they have gone to hell, then I swear by the Lord Jesus Christ, whom I have sworn to worship forever, that you will make an infidel of me.

"The doctrine that God has been for thousands of years peopling this earth with human beings during a period three-fourths of which was not illuminated by an altar or a church, and in places where a vast population of those people are yet without light, is to transform the Almighty into a monster more hideous than Satan himself; and I swear by all that is sacred that I will never worship Satan, though he should appear dressed in royal robes and seated on the throne of Jehovah. Men may say, 'You will not go to heaven.' A heaven presided over by such a demon as that, who has been peopling this world with millions of human beings, and then sweeping them off into hell—not like dead flies, but without taking the trouble even to kill them—and gloating and laughing over their eternal misery, is not such a heaven as I want to go to. The doctrine is too horrible. I can not believe it, and I won't. They say the Saints in heaven are so happy that they do not mind the torments of the damned in hell. But what sort of Saints must they be who could be happy while looking down upon the horrors of the bottomless pit? And by the blood of Christ I denounce this doctrine. By the wounds in His hands and in His side I abhor it. By His groans and agony I abhor and denounce it as that hideous nightmare of theology."



BL  
2775  
.C34  
1874

SUPERNATURAL RELIGION.

The three Mottos of the  
Common Sense of  
Mankind -

"Creed - gagrin Creed  
1. Bayyala, Hecchig - Miracles  
for fools -

Latin

"Creed - gagrin Creed  
2. Creedum injuria.

"Dis Creedum - injuries  
of the gods is a care for  
the gods only.

Roman Creedum

3. "In Creedum Creedum  
in Creedum Creedum  
All evil begins in the name  
of the gods."

# SUPERNATURAL RELIGION:

38736

AN INQUIRY

INTO

THE REALITY OF DIVINE  
REVELATION.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

Cassida, Walter Pichard, 1826-1897

THIRD EDITION

LONDON:  
LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.,  
1874.

[*The Right of Translation is Reserved.*]

LONDON  
BRADBURY, AGNEW, & CO., PRINTERS, WHITEFRIARS.

# CONTENTS

OF

## THE SECOND VOLUME.



### PART II.

*(Continued.)*

#### CHAPTER V.

	PAGE
THE CLEMENTINES . . . . .	1
THE EPISTLE TO DIOGNETUS . . . . .	37

#### CHAPTER VI.

BASILIDES . . . . .	41
VALENTINUS. . . . .	55

#### CHAPTER VII.

MARCION . . . . .	79
-------------------	----

#### CHAPTER VIII.

TATIAN . . . . .	148
DIONYSIUS OF CORINTH . . . . .	163

#### CHAPTER IX.

MELITO OF SARDIS . . . . .	172
CLAUDIUS APOLLINARIS . . . . .	185
ATHENAGORAS . . . . .	191
EPISTLE OF VIENNE AND LYONS . . . . .	200

#### CHAPTER X.

PTOLEMÆUS AND HERACLEON . . . . .	205
CELSUS . . . . .	227
THE CANON OF MURATORI . . . . .	237
RESULTS . . . . .	248

**PART III.**  
**THE FOURTH GOSPEL.**

	PAGE
<b>CHAPTER I.</b>	
THE EXTERNAL EVIDENCE . . . . .	251
<b>CHAPTER II.</b>	
THE AUTHORSHIP AND CHARACTER OF THE FOURTH GOSPEL . . . . .	387
<b>CHAPTER III.</b>	
CONCLUSIONS . . . . .	477

# AN INQUIRY INTO THE REALITY OF DIVINE REVELATION.

---

## PART II.

---

### CHAPTER V.

#### THE CLEMENTINES—THE EPISTLE TO DIOGNETUS.

WE must now as briefly as possible examine the evidence furnished by the apocryphal religious romance generally known by the name of "The Clementines," and assuming, falsely of course,<sup>1</sup> to be the composition of the Roman Clement. The Clementines are composed of three principal works, the Homilies, Recognitions, and a so-called Epitome. The Homilies, again, are prefaced by a pretended epistle addressed by the Apostle Peter to James, and another from Clement. These Homilies were only known in an imperfect form till 1853, when Dressel<sup>2</sup> published a complete Greek text. Of the Recognitions we

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, Dogmengesch., 1865, I. i. p. 155; *Bunsen*, Hippolytus, i. p. 431; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 183; *Guericke*, H'buch K. G., i. p. 117, ann. 2; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 30, p. 204, ann. 1; Die apost. Väter, p. 287; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 461, ann. 47; *Lechler*, Das apost. u. nachap. Zeit., p. 454, 500; *Nicolas*, Et. sur les Ev. Apocr., 1866, p. 87 ff.; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 204 f.; *Cotelerius*, Patr. Apost., i. p. 490, 606; *Gallandi*, Patr. Bibl., ii. Proleg., p. lv.

<sup>2</sup> Clementis R. quæ feruntur Homiliæ xx. nunc primum integræ. Ed. A. B. M. Dressel.

201

only possess a Latin translation by Rufinus (A.D. 402) Although there is much difference of opinion regarding the claims to priority of the Homilies and Recognitions, many critics assigning that place to the Homilies,<sup>1</sup> whilst others assert the earlier origin of the Recognitions,<sup>2</sup> all are agreed that the one is merely a version of the other, the former being embodied almost word for word in the latter, whilst the Epitome is a blending of the other two, probably intended to purge them from heretical doctrine. These works, however, which are generally admitted to have emanated from the Ebionitic party of the early Church,<sup>3</sup> are supposed to be based upon older Petrine writings, such as the "Preaching of Peter" (Κήρυγμα Πέτρου), and the "Travels of Peter" (Περίοδοι Πέτρου).<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 280 f.; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 183, anm. 2; *Engelhardt*, Zeitschr. f. hist. Theol., 1852, i. p. 104 f.; *Guericke*, H'buch K. G., i. p. 117, anm. 2; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 254; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 481; *Schliemann*, Die Clement. Recog., 1843, p. 68—72; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden u. s. w., p. vii., anm. 1; *Uhlhorn*, Die Homil. u. Recogn., p. 343 ff.; *Dorner*, Lehre von d. Person Christi, 1845, i. p. 348, anm. 192; *Lücke*, Comment. Ev. Joh., i. p. 225, &c., &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 288 f.; *Zeitschr. f. wiss. Theol.*, 1869, p. 353 ff.; *Köstlin*, Hallische Allg. Lit. Zeitung, 1849, No. 73—77; *Nicolas*, Etudes Crit. sur les Ev. Apocr., p. 77, note 2; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 264, anm. 1; cf. p. 451, anm. 1; *Thiersch*, Die Kirche im ap. Zeit., p. 341 f.; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 62, p. 137, &c., &c., &c.

<sup>3</sup> *Baur*, Paulus, i. p. 381 f.; *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 562; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 279 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die ap. Väter, p. 288 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 461, anm. 47; *Lechler*, D. ap. u. nachap. Zeit., p. 500; *Nicolas*, Etudes sur les Ev. Ap., p. 87; *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, 1863, p. 63, note 1; *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 253; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. K., p. 204 f.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 363 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 251; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgeschichte, 1854, p. 53.

<sup>4</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 536 ff.; *Bansen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 560 ff.; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 331 f.; *Gfrörer*, Allg. K. G., i. p. 256 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Das Markus Ev., p. 113 f.; *Die ap. Väter*, p. 289 ff.; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1869, p. 361 ff.; *Köstlin*, Der Ursprung synopt. Evv., p. 395; *Kayser*, Rev. de Théol., 1851, p. 131; *Mayerhoff*, Einl. petr. Schr. p. 314 ff.; *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 251 f.; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 264 ff.; *Thiersch*, Die Kirche im ap. Zeit., p. 340 f.; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 62.

It is not necessary for our purpose to go into any analysis of the character of the Clementines. It will suffice to say that they almost entirely consist of discussions between the Apostle Peter and Simon the Magician regarding the identity of the true Mosaic and Christian religions. Peter follows the Magician from city to city for the purpose of exposing and refuting him, the one, in fact, representing Apostolic doctrine and the other heresy, and in the course of these discussions occur the very numerous quotations of sayings of Jesus and of Christian history which we have to examine.

The Clementine Recognitions, as we have already remarked, are only known to us through the Latin translation of Rufinus; and from a comparison of the evangelical quotations occurring in that work with the same in the Homilies, it is evident that Rufinus has assimilated them in the course of translation to the parallel passages of our Gospels. It is admitted, therefore, that no argument regarding the source of the quotations can rightly be based upon the Recognitions, and that work may, consequently, be entirely set aside,<sup>1</sup> and the Clementine Homilies alone need occupy our attention.

We need scarcely remark that, unless the date at which these Homilies were composed can be ascertained, their value as testimony for the existence of our Synoptic Gospels is very small indeed. The difficulty of arriving at a correct conclusion regarding this point, great under almost any circumstances, is of course increased by the fact that the work is altogether apocryphal, and most certainly not held by any one to have

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 280 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 481 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justins, p. 370 f.; *Nicolas*, Et. sur les Ev. Apocr., p. 69, note 2; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 60; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 55 f., anm. 10; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 251.

been written by the person whose name it bears. There is in fact nothing but internal evidence by which to fix the date, and that internal evidence is of a character which admits of very wide extension down the course of time, although a sharp limit is set beyond which it cannot mount upwards. Of external evidence there is almost none, and what little exists does not warrant an early date. Origen, it is true, mentions *Περίοδοι Κλήμεντος*,<sup>1</sup> which, it is conjectured, may either be the same work as the *Ἀναγνωρισμός*, or Recognitions, translated by Rufinus, or related to it, and Epiphanius and others refer to *Περίοδοι Πέτρου*;<sup>2</sup> but our Clementine Homilies are not mentioned by any writer before pseudo-Athanasius.<sup>3</sup> The work, therefore, can at the best afford no substantial testimony to the antiquity and apostolic origin of our Gospels. Hilgenfeld, following in the steps of Baur, arrives at the conclusion that the Homilies are directed against the Gnosticism of Marcion (and also, as we shall hereafter see, against the Apostle Paul), and he, therefore, necessarily assigns to them a date subsequent to A.D. 160. As Reuss, however, inquires: upon this ground, why should a still later date not be named, since even Tertullian wrote vehemently against the same Gnosis.<sup>4</sup> There can be little doubt that the author was a representative of Ebionitic Gnosticism, which had once been the purest form of primitive Christianity, but later, through its own development, though still more through

<sup>1</sup> Comment. in Genesin Philoc., 22.

<sup>2</sup> *Hilgenfeld* considers Recog. iv.—vi., Hom. vii.—xi. a version of the *περίοδοι Πέτρου*. Dio ap. Vater, p. 291 ff.; *Ritschl* does not consider that this can be decidedly proved, *Entst. Altk. Kirche*, p. 204 f.; so also *Uhlhorn*, *Die Hom. u. Recog.*, p. 71 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Synops. Sacr. Script.*, sub finem.

<sup>4</sup> *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 254.

the rapid growth around it of Paulinian doctrine, had assumed a position closely verging upon heresy. It is not necessary for us, however, to enter upon any exhaustive discussion of the date at which the Clementines were written; it is sufficient to show that there is no certain ground upon which a decision can be based, and that even an approximate conjecture can scarcely be reasonably advanced. Critics variously date the composition of the original Recognitions from about the middle of the second century to the end of the third, though the majority are agreed in placing them at least in the latter century.<sup>1</sup> They assign to the Homilies an origin at different dates within a period commencing about the middle of the second century, and extending to a century later.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A.D. 150, *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 163, cf. 93 f., 108 f.; Circa A.D. 140—150, *Hilgenfeld*, *Die ap. Väter*, p. 297, anm. 11; *Der Paschas-treit*, p. 194. After A.D. 170, *Maran.*, *Divinit.* D. N. J. C., lib. ii., cap. 7, § 4, p. 250 ff. Beginning 3rd century, *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 254; *Zeller*, *Die Apostolgesch.*, p. 64; *Bleek*, *Beiträge*, p. 277. *Dorner*, *Lehre von d. Person Christi*, 1845, i. p. 348, anm. 192. Between A.D. 212—230, *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 481. *Schlicmann*, *Die Clementinen*, 1844, p. 326 f. Not before A.D. 216, *Gallandi*, *Vet. Patr. Bibl.*, ii. Proleg., p. lv. Between A.D. 218—231, *Doctwell*, *Dissert. vi. in Iren.*, § xi. p. 443. End 3rd century, *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 281.

<sup>2</sup> Before middle 2nd century, *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kan.*, p. 45; cf. *Beiträge*, i. p. 281. Middle 2nd century, *Ritschl*, *Entst. altk. K.*, p. 264, 451; cf. p. 65; *Kern*, *Tüb. Zeitschr.* 1835, H. 2, p. 112; *Gfrörer*, *Allg. K. G.*, i. p. 256; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden u. s. w.*, p. 90; *Réville*, *Essais de Crit. Religieuse*, 1860, p. 35. Soon after middle 2nd century, *Schlicmann*, *Die Clementinen*, p. 548 f.; A.D. 160, *Lechler*, *Das ap. u. nachap. Zeit.*, p. 461. A.D. 150—170, *Schotten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 55. A.D. 150—160, *Renan*, *St. Paul*, 1869, p. 303, note 8. Before A.D. 180, *Kayser*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1851, p. 155. A.D. 161—180, *Hilgenfeld*, *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1869, p. 353, anm. 1; cf. *Die ap. Väter*, p. 301; *Der Paschas-treit*, p. 194. A.D. 175—180, *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 164; cf. 137, 63. Second half 2nd century, *Dorner*, *Lehre Person Christi*, i. p. 341, anm. 190. End of 2nd century, *Baur*, *Dogmengesch.*, 1865, I. i. p. 155; *Ewald*, *Gesch. d. V. Israel*, vii. p. 183; cf. 386, anm. 1; *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 254; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 406; *Kirchhofer*, *Quel-*

In the Homilies there are very numerous quotations of expressions of Jesus and of Gospel history, which are generally placed in the mouth of Peter, or introduced with such formulæ as: "The teacher said," "Jesus said," "He said," "The prophet said," but in no case does the author name the source from which these sayings and quotations are derived. That he does, however, quote from a written source, and not from tradition, is clear from the use of such expressions as "in another place (*ἄλλῃ πού*)<sup>1</sup> he has said," which refer not to other localities or circumstances, but another part of a written history.<sup>2</sup> There are in the Clementine Homilies upwards of a hundred quotations of expressions of Jesus or references to his history, too many by far for us to examine in detail here, but, notwithstanding the number of these passages, so systematically do they vary more or less from the parallels in our canonical Gospels, that, as in the case of Justin, Apologists are obliged to have recourse to the elastic explanation, already worn so threadbare, of "free quotation from memory" and "blending of passages" to account for the remarkable phenomena presented. It must, however, be evident that the necessity for such an apology at all shows the absolute weakness of the evidence furnished by these quotations. De Wette says: "The quotations of evangelical works and histories in the pseudo-Clementine writings, from their free and unsatisfactory nature, permit only uncertain conclusions

lensamml., p. 461, anm. 47; *Lücke*, Comment Ev. Joh. 1840, i. p. 225; *Gieseler*, Kirchengeschichte, *Neander*, Genet. Entw. Gnost. Systeme, p. 370. *Zimmermann*, Lebensgesch. d. Kirche J. C. 2 Ausg., ii. p. 118. A.D. 250, *Gallandi*, Vet. Patr. Bibl. Proleg., p. lv.; *Mill*, Proleg. N. T. Gr., § 670. Fourth century, *Lentz*, Dogmengeschichte, i. p. 58. Their groundwork 2nd or 3rd century, *Guericke*, H'buch K. G., p. 146.

<sup>1</sup> See several instances, Hom. xix. 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 283.

as to their written source.”<sup>1</sup> Critics have maintained very different and conflicting views regarding that source. Apologists, of course, assert that the quotations in the Homilies are taken from our Gospels only.<sup>2</sup> Others ascribe them to our Gospels, with a supplementary apocryphal work: the Gospel according to the Hebrews, or the Gospel according to Peter.<sup>3</sup> Some, whilst admitting a subsidiary use of some of our Gospels, assert that the author of the Homilies employs, in preference, the Gospel according to Peter;<sup>4</sup> whilst others, recognizing also the similarity of the phenomena presented by these quotations with those of Justin’s, conclude that the author does not quote our Gospels at all, but makes use of the Gospel according to Peter, or the Gospel according to the Hebrews.<sup>5</sup> Evidence permitting of such divergent conclusions manifestly cannot be of a decided character. We may affirm, however, that few of those who are

<sup>1</sup> Die Anführungen evangelischer Werke und Geschichten in den pseudo-clementinischen Schriften, ihrer Natur nach frei und ungenau, lassen nur unsichere auf ihre schriftliche Quelle zurückschliessen. Einl. N. T. p. 115.

<sup>2</sup> *Lechler*, Das ap. u. nachap. Zeit., p. 458, anm.; *Orelli*, Selecta Patr. Eccles., cap. 1821, p. 22; *Semisch*, Denkw. d. M. Just., p. 356 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 251; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden u. s. w., p. 90.

<sup>3</sup> *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 533; *Franck*, Die evang. Citate in d. Clem. Hom., Stud. w. Geistlichkeit, 1847, 2, p. 144 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 461, anm. 47, 48; *Köstlin*, Der Ursprung synopt. Evv., p. 372 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 58; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 115 f.; *Weisse*, Der evang. Gesch., i. p. 27, anm. \*\*\*; *Uhlhorn*, Die Homilien u. Recog. d. Clem. Rom., 1854, p. 119—137; *Herzog’s Realencyclp.*, Art. Clementinen.

<sup>4</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin’s, p. 388; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 62; *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 575 ff.; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 59.

<sup>5</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 330 ff.; *Neander*, Gnostische Entw. der vorn. Gnost. Syst., p. 418 f.; *Nicolas*, Et. sur les Evang. Apocr., p. 69 ff.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 193; *Schweyler*, Das nachap. Zeit., p. 207.

*Hilgenfeld*, *Volkmar*, *Zeller*, and others consider that the author uses the same Gospel as Justin. See references in note 3.

willing to admit the use of our Synoptics by the author of the Homilies along with other sources, make that concession on the strength of the absolute isolated evidence of the Homilies themselves, but they are generally moved by antecedent views on the point. In an inquiry like that which we have undertaken, however, such easy and indifferent judgment would obviously be out of place, and the point we have to determine is not whether an author may have been acquainted with our Gospels, but whether he furnishes testimony that he actually was in possession of our present Gospels and regarded them as authoritative.

We have already mentioned that the author of the Clementine Homilies never names the source from which his quotations are derived. Of these very numerous quotations we must distinctly state that only two or three, of a very brief and fragmentary character, literally agree with our Synoptics, whilst all the rest differ more or less widely from the parallel passages in these Gospels. Many of these quotations are repeated more than once with the same persistent and characteristic variations, and in several cases, as we have already seen, they agree with quotations of Justin from the Memoirs of the Apostles. Others, again, have no parallels at all in our Gospels, and even Apologists generally are compelled to admit the use also of an apocryphal Gospel. As in the case of Justin, therefore, the singular phenomenon is presented of a vast number of quotations of which only one or two brief phrases, too fragmentary to avail as evidence, perfectly agree with our Gospels; whilst of the rest all vary more or less, some merely resemble combined passages of two Gospels, others merely contain the sense, some present variations likewise found in other writers

or in various parts of the Homilies are repeatedly quoted with the same variations, and others are not found in our Gospels at all. Such phenomena cannot be fairly accounted for by any mere theory of imperfect memory or negligence. The systematic variation from our Synoptics, variation proved by repetition not to be accidental, coupled with quotations which have no parallels at all in our Gospels, naturally point to the use of a different Gospel. In no case can the Homilies be accepted as furnishing evidence of any value even of the existence of our Gospels.

As it is impossible here to examine in detail all of the quotations in the Clementine Homilies, we must content ourselves with the distinct statement of their character which we have already made, and merely illustrate briefly the different classes of quotations, exhausting, however, those which literally agree with passages in the Gospels. The most determined of recent Apologists do not afford us an opportunity of testing the passages upon which they base their assertion of the use of our Synoptics, for they merely assume that the author used them without producing instances.<sup>1</sup>

The first quotation which agrees with a passage in our Synoptics occurs in Hom. iii. 52: "And he cried, saying: Come unto me all ye that are weary," which agrees with the opening words of Matt. xi. 28, but the phrase does not continue, and is followed by the explanation: "that

<sup>1</sup> *Tischendorf* only devotes a dozen lines, with a note, to the Clementines, and only in connection with our fourth Gospel, which shall hereafter have our attention. *Wann wurden u. s. w.*, p. 90. In the same way Canon Westcott passes them over in a short paragraph, merely asserting the allusions to our Gospels to be "generally admitted," and only directly referring to one supposed quotation from Mark which we shall presently examine, and one which he affirms to be from the fourth Gospel. On the Canon, p. 251 f.

is, who are seeking the truth and not finding it.”<sup>1</sup> It is evident, that so short and fragmentary a phrase cannot prove anything.<sup>2</sup>

The next passage occurs in Hom. xviii. 15 : “ For Isaiah said : I will open my mouth in parables, and I will utter things that have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.”<sup>3</sup> Now this passage, with a slightly different order of words, is found in Matt. xiii. 35. After giving a series of parables, the author of the Gospel says (v. 34), “ All these things spake Jesus unto the multitudes in parables ; and without a parable spake he not unto them ; (v. 35,) That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet (Isaiah) saying : I will open my mouth in parables, &c.” There are two peculiarities which must be pointed out in this passage. It is not found in Isaiah, but in Psalm lxxviii. 2,<sup>4</sup> and it presents a variation from the version of the lxx. Both the variation and the erroneous reference to Isaiah, therefore, occur also in the Homily. The first part of the sentence agrees with, but the latter part is quite different from, the Greek of the lxx., which reads : “ I will utter problems from the beginning,” *φθέγξομαι προβλήματα ἀπ’ ἀρχῆς*.<sup>5</sup>

The Psalm from which the quotation is really taken is, by its superscription, ascribed to Asaph, who, in the Septuagint version of II. Chronicles xxix. 30, is called a prophet.<sup>6</sup> It was, therefore, early asserted that the

<sup>1</sup> Διὸ καὶ ἐβόα λέγων ‘ Δεῦτε πρὸς με πάντες οἱ κοπιῶντες.’ τουτέστιν, οἱ τὴν ἀλήθειαν ζητοῦντες καὶ μὴ εὐρίσκοντες αὐτήν. Hom. iii. 52.

<sup>2</sup> Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin’s, u. s. w., p. 351.

<sup>3</sup> Καὶ τὸν Ἡσαΐαν εἰπεῖν ‘ Ἀνοίξω τὸ στόμα μου ἐν παραβολαῖς καὶ ἐξερεύξομαι κεκρυμμένα ἀπὸ καταβολῆς κόσμου. Hom. xviii. 15.

<sup>4</sup> The Vulgate reads : *aperiam in parabolis os moum : loquar propositiones ab initio.* Ps. lxxviii. 2.

<sup>5</sup> Ps. lxxvii. 2.

<sup>6</sup> ἐν λόγοις Δαβὶδ καὶ Ἀσάφ τοῦ προφήτου.

original reading of Matthew was "Asaph," instead of "Isaiah."

Porphyry, in the third century, twitted Christians with this erroneous ascription by their inspired evangelist to Isaiah of a passage from a Psalm, and reduced the Fathers to great straits. Eusebius, in his commentary on this verse of the Psalm, attributes the insertion of the words, "by the prophet Isaiah," to unintelligent copyists, and asserts that in accurate MSS. the name is not added to the word prophet. Jerome likewise ascribes the insertion of the name Isaiah for that of Asaph, which was originally written, to an ignorant scribe,<sup>1</sup> and in the commentary on the Psalms, generally, though probably falsely, ascribed to him, the remark is made that many copies of the Gospel to that day had the name "Isaiah," for which Porphyry had reproached Christians,<sup>2</sup> and the writer of the same commentary actually allows himself to make the assertion that Asaph was found in all the old codices, but ignorant men had removed it.<sup>3</sup> The fact is, that the reading "Asaph" for "Isaiah" is not found in any extant MS., and, although "Isaiah" has disappeared from all but a few obscure codices, it cannot be denied that the name anciently stood in the text.<sup>4</sup> In the Sinaitic Codex, which is probably the earliest MS. extant, and which is assigned to the fourth century, "the prophet *Isaiah*" stands in the text by the first hand, but is erased by the second (B).

<sup>1</sup> Comment. Matt., xiii. 35.

<sup>2</sup> *Multa evangelia usque hodie ita habent : Ut impleretur, quod scriptum est per *Isaiam* prophetam, &c., &c.* Hieron., Opp., vii. p. 270 f.

<sup>3</sup> Asaph invenitur in omnibus veteribus codicibus, sed homines ignorantes tulerunt illud. To this *Crelner* pertinently remarks: "Die Noth, in welche die guten Kirchenväter durch Porphyrius gekommen waren, erlaubte auch eine Lüge. Sie geschah ja: *in majorem Dei gloriam*." Beiträge, i. p. 304.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Crelner*, Beiträge, i. p. 303 f.

The quotation in the Homily, however, is clearly not from our Gospel. It is introduced by the words "For Isaiah says:" and the context is so different from that in Matthew, that it seems impossible that the author of the Homily could have had the passage suggested to him by the Gospel. It occurs in a discussion between Simon the Magician and Peter. The former undertakes to prove that the Maker of the world is not the highest God, and amongst other arguments he advances the passage: "No man knew the Father, &c.," to show that the Father had remained concealed from the Patriarchs, &c., until revealed by the Son, and in reply to Peter he retorts, that if the supposition that the Patriarchs were not deemed worthy to know the Father was unjust, the Christian teacher was himself to blame, who said: "I thank thee, Lord of heaven and earth, that what was concealed from the wise thou hast revealed to suckling babes." Peter argues that in the statement of Jesus: "No man knew the Father, &c.," he cannot be considered to indicate another God and Father from him who made the world, and he continues: "For the concealed things of which he spoke may be those of the Creator himself; for Isaiah says: 'I will open my mouth, &c.' Do you admit, therefore, that the prophet was not ignorant of the things concealed,"<sup>1</sup> and so on. There is absolutely nothing in this argument to indicate that the passage was suggested by the Gospel, but, on the contrary, it is used in a totally different way, and is quoted not as an evangelical text, but as a saying from the Old Testament, and treated in connection with the prophet himself, and not with its supposed fulfilment in Jesus. It may be remarked, that in the corresponding part of the Recognitions, whether that work be of older or more

<sup>1</sup> Hom., xviii. 1—15.

recent date, the passage does not occur at all. Now, although it is impossible to say how and where this erroneous reference to a passage of the Old Testament first occurred, there is no reason for affirming that it originated in our first Synoptic, and as little for asserting that its occurrence in the Clementine Homilies, with so different a context and object, involves the conclusion that their author derived it from the Gospel, and not from the Old Testament or some other source. On the contrary, the peculiar argument based upon it in the Homilies suggests a different origin, and it is very probable that the passage, with its erroneous reference, was derived by both from another and common source.

Another passage is a phrase from the "Lord's Prayer," which occurs in Hom. xix. 2: "But also in the prayer which he commended to us, we have it said: Deliver us from the evil one" (*Ῥῦσαι ἡμᾶς ἀπὸ τοῦ πονηροῦ*). It need scarcely be said, however, that few Gospels can have been composed without including this prayer, and the occurrence of this short phrase demonstrates nothing more than the mere fact, that the author of the Homilies was acquainted with one of the most universally known lessons of Jesus, or made use of a Gospel which contained it. There would have been cause for wonder had he been ignorant of it.

The only other passage which agrees literally with our Gospels is also a mere fragment from the parable of the Talents, and when the other references to the same parable are added, it is evident that the quotation is not from our Gospels. In Hom. iii. 65, the address to the good servant is introduced: "Well done, good and faithful servant" (*Εὖ, δούλε ἀγαθὲ καὶ πιστῆ*), which agrees

with the words in Matt. xxv. 21. The allusion to the parable of the talents in the context is perfectly clear, and the passage occurs in an address of the Apostle Peter to overcome the modest scruples of Zaccheus, the former publican, who has been selected by Peter as his successor over the Church of Cæsarea when he is about to leave in pursuit of Simon the Magician. Anticipating the possibility of his hesitating to accept the office, Peter, in an earlier part of his address, however, makes fuller allusions to the same parable of the talents, which we must contrast with the parallel in the first Synoptic. "But if any of those present, having the ability to instruct the ignorance of men, shrink back from it, considering only his own case, then let him expect to hear:"

ΗΟΜ. ΙΙΙ. 61.

Thou wicked and slothful servant ;

thou oughtest to have put out my money with the exchangers, and at my coming I should have exacted mine own.

Cast ye the unprofitable servant into the darkness without.

Δούλε πονηρὲ καὶ ὀκνηρὲ,

ἔδει σε τὸ ἀργύριόν μου προβαλεῖν ἐπὶ τῶν τραπεζιτῶν, καὶ ἐγὼ ἂν ἐλθὼν ἔπραξα τὸ ἐμόν'

ἐκβάλετε τὸν ἀχρεῖον δοῦλον εἰς τὸ σκότος τὸ ἐξώτερον.

ΜΑΤΤ. XXV. 26—30.

v. 26. Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather from where I strawed not.

v. 27. Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

v. 28, 29. Take therefore, &c. &c.

v. 30. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into the darkness without; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

v. 26. Πονηρὲ δούλε καὶ ὀκνηρὲ, ἦδεις ὅτι θερίζω, κ.τ.λ.

v. 27. ἔδει σε οὖν βαλεῖν τὸ ἀργύριόν μου τοῖς τραπεζίταις, καὶ ἐλθὼν ἐγὼ ἐκομισάμην<sup>1</sup> ἂν τὸ ἐμὸν σὺν τόκῳ.

v. 28, 29, ἄρατε οὖν, κ.τ.λ.

v. 30. καὶ τὸν ἀχρεῖον δοῦλον ἐκβάλετε εἰς τὸ σκότος τὸ ἐξώτερον· ἐκεῖ ἔσται ὁ κλαυθμὸς, κ.τ.λ.

<sup>1</sup> Luko xix. 23, substitutes ἔπραξα for ἐκομισάμην.

The Homily does not end here, however, but continues in words not found in our Gospels at all: "And reasonably: 'For,' he says, 'it is thine, O man, to prove my words as silver and as money are proved by the ex-changers.'" <sup>1</sup> This passage is very analogous to another saying of Jesus, frequently quoted from an apocryphal Gospel, by the author of the Homilies, to which we shall hereafter more particularly refer, but here merely point out: "Be ye approved money-changers" (*γίνεσθε τραπεζῖται δόκιμοι*).<sup>2</sup> The variations from the parallel passages in the first and third Gospels, the peculiar application of the parable to the *words* of Jesus, and the addition of a saying not found in our Gospels, warrant us in denying that the quotations we are considering can be appropriated by our canonical Gospels, and, on the contrary, give good reason for the conclusion, that the author derived his knowledge of the parable from another source.

There is no other quotation in the Clementine Homilies which literally agrees with our Gospels, and it is difficult, without incurring the charge of partial selection, to illustrate the systematic variation in such very numerous passages as occur in these writings. It would be tedious and unnecessary to repeat the test applied to the quotations of Justin, and give in detail the passages from the Sermon on the Mount which are found in the Homilies. Some of these will come before us presently, but with regard to the whole, which are not less than fifty, we may broadly and positively state that they all more or less differ from our Gospels. To take the

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ εὐλόγως. Σοῦ γὰρ, φησὶν, ἄνθρωπε, τοὺς λόγους μου ὡς ἀργύριον ἐπὶ τραπεζιτῶν βαλεῖν, καὶ ὡς χρήματα δοκιμάσαι. Hom. iii. 61.

<sup>2</sup> Hom. iii. 50, ii. 51, &c., &c.

severest test, however, we shall compare those further passages which are specially adduced as most closely following our Gospels, and neglect the vast majority which most widely differ from them. In addition to the passages which we have already examined, Credner<sup>1</sup> points out the following. The first is from Hom. xix. 2.<sup>2</sup> “If Satan cast out Satan he is divided against himself: how then shall his kingdom stand?” In the first part of this sentence, the Homily reads, *ἐκβάλλη* for the *ἐκβάλλει* of the first Gospel, and the last phrase in each is as follows:—

Hom. *πὼς οὖν αὐτοῦ στήκη ἡ βασιλεία;*

Matt. *πὼς οὖν σταθήσεται ἡ βασιλεία αὐτοῦ;*

The third Gospel differs from the first as the Homily does from both. The next passage is from Hom. xix. 7.<sup>3</sup> “For thus, said our Father, who was without deceit: out of abundance of heart mouth speaketh.” The Greek compared with that of Matt. xii. 34.

Hom. Ἐκ περισσεύματος καρδίας στόμα λαλεῖ.

Matt. Ἐκ γὰρ τοῦ περισσεύματος τῆς καρδίας τὸ στόμα λαλεῖ.

The form of the homily is much more proverbial. The next passage occurs in Hom. iii. 52: “Every plant which the heavenly Father did not plant shall be rooted up.” This agrees with the parallel in Matt. xv. 13, with the important exception, that although in the mouth of Jesus, “*the* heavenly Father” is substituted for the “*my* heavenly Father” of the Gospel. The last passage pointed out by Credner, is from Hom. viii. 4: “But many” he said also, “called, but few chosen,” which may be compared with Matt. xx. 16, &c.

Hom. Ἀλλὰ καὶ πολλοὶ, φησὶν, κλητοὶ, ὀλίγοι δὲ ἐκλεκτοί.

Matt. πολλοὶ γὰρ εἰσιν κλητοὶ, ὀλίγοι δὲ ἐκλεκτοί.

<sup>1</sup> Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 285; cf. p. 302.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Matt. xii. 26.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Matt. xii. 34.

We have already fully discussed this passage of the Gospel in connection with the "Epistle of Barnabas,"<sup>1</sup> and need not say more here.

The variations in these passages, it may be argued, are not very important. Certainly, if they were the exceptional variations amongst a mass of quotations perfectly agreeing with parallels in our Gospels, it might be exaggeration to base upon such divergences a conclusion that they were derived from a different source. When it is considered, however, that the very reverse is the case, and that these are passages selected for their closer agreement out of a multitude of others either more decidedly differing from our Gospels or not found in them at all, the case entirely changes, and variations being the rule instead of the exception, these, however slight, become evidence of the use of a Gospel different from ours. As an illustration of the importance of slight variations in connection with the question as to the source from which quotations are derived, the following may at random be pointed out. The passage "See thou say nothing to any man, but go thy way, show thyself to the priest" (*Ὅρα μηδενὶ μηδὲν εἶπης, ἀλλὰ ὑπαγε σεαυτὸν δεῖξον τῷ ἱερεῖ*) occurring in a work like the Homilies would, supposing our second Gospel no longer extant, be referred to Matt. viii. 4, with which it entirely agrees with the exception of its containing the one extra word *μηδὲν*. It is however actually taken from Mark i. 44, and not from the first Gospel. Then again, supposing that our first Gospel had shared the fate of so many others of the *πολλοὶ* of Luke, and in some early work the following passage were found: "A prophet is not without honour except in his own country

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i. p. 236 ff.

and in his own house" (*Οὐκ ἔστιν προφήτης ἄτιμος εἰ μὴ ἐν τῇ ἰδίᾳ<sup>1</sup> πατρίδι αὐτοῦ καὶ ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ αὐτοῦ*), this passage would undoubtedly be claimed by apologists as a quotation from Mark vi. 4, and as proving the existence and use of that Gospel. The omission of the words "and among his own kin" (*καὶ ἐν τοῖς συγγενεῦσιν αὐτοῦ*) would at first be explained as mere abbreviation, or defect of memory, but on the discovery that part or all of these words are omitted from some MSS., that for instance the phrase is erased from the oldest manuscript known, the Cod. Sinaiticus, the derivation from the second Gospel would be considered as established. The author notwithstanding might never have seen that Gospel, for the quotation is taken from Matt. xiii. 57.<sup>2</sup>

We have already quoted the opinion of De Wette as to the inconclusive nature of the deductions to be drawn from the quotations in the pseudo-Clementine writings regarding their source, but in pursuance of the plan we have adopted we shall now examine the passages which he cites as most nearly agreeing with our Gospels.<sup>3</sup> The first of these occurs in Hom. iii. 18: "The Scribes and the Pharisees sit upon Moses' seat; all things therefore, whatsoever they speak to you, hear them," which is compared with Matt. xxiii. 2, 3: "The Scribes and the Pharisees sit upon Moses' seat; all things therefore, whatsoever they say to you, do and observe." The Greek of the latter half of these passages we subjoin.

Hom. πάντα οὖν ὅσα λέγωσιν ὑμῖν, ἀκούετε αὐτῶν.

Matt. πάντα οὖν ὅσα ἐὰν εἰπωσιν ὑμῖν ποιήσατε καὶ τηρεῖτε.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *ἰδίᾳ*, though not found in all MSS., has the authority of the Cod. Sinaiticus and other ancient texts.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Matt. viii. 19—22; Luke ix. 57—60, &c., &c.

<sup>3</sup> Einl. N. T., p. 115.

<sup>4</sup> It is unnecessary to point out the various readings of the three last

That the variation in the Homily is deliberate and derived from the Gospel used by the author is clear from the continuation: "Hear *them* (αὐτῶν), he said, as entrusted with the key of the kingdom, which is knowledge, which alone is able to open the gate of life, through which alone is the entrance to eternal life. But verily, he says: They possess the key indeed, but those who wished to enter in they do not allow."<sup>1</sup> The αὐτῶν is here emphatically repeated, and the further quotation and reference to the denunciation of the Scribes and Pharisees continues to differ distinctly both from the account in our first and third Gospels. The passage in Matt. xxiii. 13, reads: "But woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut the kingdom of heaven against men; for ye go not in yourselves neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in."<sup>2</sup> The parallel in Luke xi. 52 is not closer. There the passage regarding Moses' seat is altogether wanting, and in ver. 52, where the greatest similarity, exists, the "lawyers" instead of the "Scribes and Pharisees" are addressed. The verse reads: "Woe unto you, Lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered."<sup>3</sup> The first Gospel has not the direct image of the key at all: the Scribes and Pharisees "shut the kingdom of words in various MSS. Whether shortened or inverted, the difference from the Homily remains the same.

<sup>1</sup> Αὐτῶν δὲ, εἶπεν, ὡς τὴν κλεῖδα τῆς βασιλείας πεπιστευμένον, ἥτις ἐστὶ γνώσις, ἡ μόνη τὴν πύλην τῆς ζωῆς ἀνοίξει δύναται, δι' ἧς μόνως εἰς τὴν αἰωνίαν ζωὴν εἰσελθεῖν ἔστιν. Ἄλλα ναὶ, φησὶν, κρατοῦσι μὲν τὴν κλεῖν, τοῖς δὲ βουλομένοις εἰσελθεῖν οὐ παρέχουσιν. Πom. iii. 18; cf. Hom. iii. 70, xviii. 15, 16.

<sup>2</sup> Οὐαὶ, κ.τ.λ. . . . ὅτι κλείετε τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν ἔμπροσθεν τῶν ἀνθρώπων ὑμεῖς γὰρ οὐκ εἰσέρχεσθε, οὐδὲ τοὺς εἰσερχομένους ἀφίετε εἰσελθεῖν. Matt. xxiii. 13.

<sup>3</sup> Οὐαὶ ὑμῖν τοῖς νομικοῖς, ὅτι ἤρατε τὴν κλεῖδα τῆς γνώσεως· αὐτοὶ οὐκ εἰσῆλθατε καὶ τοὺς εἰσερχομένους ἐκωλύσατε. Luko xi. 52.

heaven ;” the third has “ the key of knowledge” (*κλειδα τῆς γνώσεως*) taken away by the lawyers, and not by the Scribes and Pharisees, whilst the Gospel of the Homilies has the key of the kingdom (*κλειδα τῆς βασιλείας*), and explains that this key is knowledge (*ἥτις ἐστὶ γνώσις*). It is apparent that the first Gospel uses an expression more direct than the others, whilst the third Gospel explains it, but the Gospel of the Homilies has in all probability the simpler original words : the “ key of the kingdom,” which both of the others have altered for the purpose of more immediate clearness. In any case it is certain that the passage does not agree with our Gospel.<sup>1</sup>

The next quotation referred to by De Wette is in Hom. iii. 51 : “ And also that he said : ‘ I am not come to destroy the law . . . the heaven and the earth will pass away, but one jot or one tittle shall in no-wise pass from the law.’ ” This is compared with Matt. v. 17, 18 :<sup>2</sup> “ Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets : I am not come to destroy but to fulfil. (v. 18) For verily I say unto you : Till heaven and earth pass away one jot or one tittle shall in nowise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.” The Greek of both passages reads as follows :—

## HOM. III. 51.

Τὸ δὲ καὶ εἶπεν αὐτόν·

Οὐκ ἦλθον καταλῦσαι τὸν νόμον.

‘Ο οὐρανὸς καὶ ἡ γῆ παρέλεύσονται ἰῶτα δὲ ἐν ἡ μία κεραία οὐ μὴ παρέλθῃ ἀπὸ τοῦ νόμου.

## MATT. V. 17, 18.

Μὴ νομίσητε ὅτι ἦλθον καταλῦσαι τὸν νόμον ἢ τοὺς προφήτας· οὐκ ἦλθον καταλῦσαι ἀλλὰ πληρῶσαι.

v. 18. ἀμὴν γὰρ λέγω ὑμῖν, ἕως ἂν παρέλθῃ ὁ οὐρανὸς καὶ ἡ γῆ, ἰῶτα ἐν ἡ μία κεραία οὐ μὴ παρέλθῃ ἀπὸ τοῦ νόμου, ἕως ἂν πάντα γένηται.

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 317 f. ; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 366 f. *Zeller*, *Die Apostelgesch.*, p. 57 f.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Luke xvi. 17.*

That the omissions and variations in this passage are not accidental is proved by the fact that the same quotation occurs again literally in the Epistle from Peter<sup>1</sup> which is prefixed to the Homilies in which the *παρελεύσονται* is repeated, and the sentence closes at the same point. The author in that place adds: "This he said that all might be fulfilled" (*τοῦτο δὲ εἶρηκεν, ἵνα τὰ πάντα γίνηται*). Hilgenfeld considers this Epistle of much more early date than the Homilies, and that this agreement bespeaks a particular text.<sup>2</sup> The quotation does not agree with our Gospels, and must be assigned to another source.

The next passage pointed out by De Wette is the erroneous quotation from Isaiah which we have already examined.<sup>3</sup> That which follows is found in Hom. viii. 7: "For on this account our Jesus himself said to one who frequently called him Lord, yet did nothing which he commanded: Why dost thou say to me Lord, Lord, and doest not the things which I say?" This is compared with Luke vi. 46:<sup>4</sup> "But why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?"

ΗΟΜ. VIII. 7.

Τί με λέγεις, Κύριε, κύριε, καὶ οὐ ποιεῖς ἃ λέγω;

LUKE VI. 46.

Τί δέ με καλεῖτε Κύριε, κύριε, καὶ οὐ ποιεῖτε ἃ λέγω;

This passage differs from our Gospels in having the second person singular instead of the plural, and in substituting *λέγεις* for *καλεῖτε* in the first phrase. The Homily, moreover, in accordance with the use of the second person singular, distinctly states that the saying was addressed to a person who frequently called Jesus "Lord," whereas in the Gospels it forms part of the Sermon on the Mount with a totally impersonal application to the multitude.

<sup>1</sup> § ii.

<sup>2</sup> Die Evv. Justin's, p. 340.

<sup>3</sup> P. 10. Cf. Hom. xviii. 15; Matt. xiii. 35,

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Matt. vii. 21.

The next passage referred to by De Wette is in Hom. xix. 2: "And he declared that he saw the evil one as lightning fall from heaven." This is compared with Luke x. 18, which has no parallel in the other Gospels: "And he said to them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven."

ΗΟΜ. ΧΙΧ. 2.  
Καὶ ὅτι ἑώρακε τὸν πονηρὸν  
ὡς ἀστραπήν πεσόντα ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ  
ἔδήλωσεν.

LUKE X. 18.  
Εἶπεν δὲ αὐτοῖς Ἐθεώρουν τὸν σατανᾶν  
ὡς ἀστραπήν ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ πεσόντα.

The substitution of τὸν πονηρὸν for τὸν σατανᾶν, had he found the latter in his Gospel, would be all the more remarkable from the fact that the author of the Homilies has just before quoted the saying "If Satan cast out Satan,"<sup>1</sup> &c. and he continues in the above words to show that Satan had been cast out, so that the evidence would have been strengthened by the retention of the word in Luke had he quoted that Gospel. The variations, however, indicate that he quoted from another source.<sup>2</sup>

The next passage pointed out by De Wette likewise finds a parallel only in the third Gospel. It occurs in Hom. ix. 22: "Nevertheless, though all demons and all diseases flee before you, in this is not to be your sole rejoicing, but in that, through grace, your names, as of the ever-living, are recorded in heaven." This is compared with Luke x. 20: "Notwithstanding, in this rejoice not that the spirits are subject unto you, but rejoice that your names are written in the heavens."

ΗΟΜ. ΙΧ. 22.  
Ἄλλ' ὅμως κἰν πάντες δαίμονες μετὰ  
πάντων τῶν παθῶν ὑμᾶς φεύγωσιν,  
οὐκ ἔστιν ἐν τοῦτω μόνῳ χαίρειν, ἀλλ'  
ἐν τῷ δι' εὐαρεστίαν τὰ ὀνόματα ὑμῶν ἐν  
οὐρανῷ ὡς αἰεὶ ζώντων ἀναγραφῆναι.

LUKE X. 20.  
Πλὴν ἐν τούτῳ μὴ χαίρετε ὅτι τὰ  
πνεύματα ὑμῶν ὑποτάσσεται, χαίρετε  
δὲ ὅτι τὰ ὀνόματα ὑμῶν ἐγγέγραπται ἐν  
τοῖς οὐρανοῖς.

<sup>1</sup> See p. 16.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 346 f.

The differences between these two passages are too great and the peculiarities of the Homily too marked to require any argument to demonstrate that the quotation cannot be successfully claimed by our third Gospel. On the contrary, as one of so many other passages systematically varying from the canonical Gospels, it must be assigned to another source.

De Wette says: "A few others (quotations) presuppose (voraussetzen) the Gospel of Mark,"<sup>1</sup> and he gives them. The first occurs in Hom. ii. 19: "Justa,<sup>2</sup> who is amongst us, a Syrophœnician, a Canaanite by race, whose daughter was affected by a sore disease, and who came to our Lord crying out and supplicating that he would heal her daughter. But he being also asked by us, said: 'It is not meet to heal the Gentiles who are like dogs from their using divers meats and practices, whilst the table in the kingdom has been granted to the sons of Israel.' But she hearing this and desiring to partake like a dog of the crumbs falling from this table, having changed what was to lead the same life as the sons of the kingdom, she obtained, as she asked, the healing of her daughter."<sup>3</sup> This is compared with Mark vii. 24—30,<sup>4</sup> as it is the only Gospel which calls the woman a Syrophœnician. The Homily, however, not only calls her so, a very unimportant point, but gives her name as "Justa." If, there-

<sup>1</sup> Einl. N. T., p. 115.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Hom. iii. 73; xiii. 7.

<sup>3</sup> Ἰουδαία τις ἐν ἡμῖν ἐστὶ Συροφωινίκισσα, τὸ γένος Χαναανίτις, ἧς τὸ θυγάτριον ὑπὸ χυλεπῆς νόσου συνέιχετο, ἣ καὶ τῷ Κυρίῳ ἡμῶν προσῆλθε βοῶσα καὶ ἰκετείουσα, ὅπως αὐτῆς τὸ θυγάτριον θεραπεύσῃ. Ὁ δὲ, καὶ ὑφ' ἡμῶν ἀξιωθεῖς, εἶπεν· Οὐκ ἔξεστιν ἰᾶσθαι τὰ ἔθνη, εὐκότα κυσίν, διὰ τὸ διαφόροις χρῆσθαι τροφαῖς καὶ πράξεσιν, ἀποδομένης τῆς κατὰ τὴν βασιλείαν τραπέζης τοῖς υἱοῖς Ἰσραὴλ. Ἡ δὲ τοῦτο ἀκούσασα, καὶ τῆς αὐτῆς τραπέζης, ὡς κύων, ψυχίων ἀποπιπτόντων συμμεταλαμβάνειν μεταθεμένη ὑπερ ἦν, τῷ ὁμοίως δαιτᾶσθαι τοῖς τῆς βασιλείας υἱοῖς, τῆς εἰς τὴν θυγάτέρα, ὡς ἤξιώσεν ἔτυχεν ἰάσεως. Hom. ii. 19.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Matt. xv. 21—28.

fore, it be argued that the mention of her nationality supposes that the author found the fact in his Gospel, and that as we know no other but Mark<sup>1</sup> which gives that information, that he therefore derived it from our second Gospel, the additional mention of the name of "Justa" on the same grounds necessarily points to the use of a Gospel which likewise contained it, which our Gospel does not. Nothing can be more decided than the variation in language throughout this whole passage from the account in Mark, and the reply of Jesus is quite foreign to our Gospels. In Mark (vii. 25) the daughter has "an unclean spirit" (*πνεῦμα ἀκάθαρτον*); in Matthew (xv. 22) she is "grievously possessed by a devil" (*κακῶς δαιμονίζεται*), but in the Homily she is "affected by a sore disease" (*ὑπὸ χαλεπῆς νόσου συνείχετο*). The second Gospel knows nothing of any intercession on the part of the disciples, but Matthew has: "And the disciples came and besought him (*ἠρώτων αὐτὸν*) saying: 'Send her away, for she crieth after us,'" <sup>2</sup> whilst the Homily has merely "being also asked by us," (*ἀξιωθεῖς*) in the sense of intercession in her favour. The second Gospel gives the reply of Jesus as follows: "Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the bread of the children, and to cast it to the dogs. And she answered and said unto him: 'Yea, Lord, for the dogs also eat under the table of the crumbs of the children. And he said unto her: For this saying go thy way; the devil is gone out of thy daughter.'" <sup>3</sup> The nature of the reply of the woman is,

<sup>1</sup> "The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation." (*ἡ δὲ γυνὴ ἦν Ἑλληνίς, Σύρα Φοινίκισσα τῷ γένει*). Mark vii. 26. "A woman of Canaan" (*γυνὴ Χανααία*). Matt. xv. 22. <sup>2</sup> Matt. xv. 23.

<sup>3</sup> Mark vii. 27—29. "Ἄφες πρῶτον χορτασθῆναι τὰ τέκνα· οὐ γὰρ ἐστὶν καλὸν λαβεῖν τὸν ἄρτον τῶν τέκνων καὶ τοῖς κυναρίοις βαλεῖν· ἡ δὲ ἀπεκρίθη καὶ λέγει αὐτῷ· Ναί, κύριε· καὶ γὰρ τὰ κυνάρια ἵποκάτω τῆς τραπέζης ἐσθίουσιν ἀπὸ τῶν ψιχίων τῶν παιδίων. κ.τ.λ.

in the Gospels, the reason given for granting her request; but in the Homily the woman's conversion to Judaism,<sup>1</sup> that is to say Judeo-Christianity, is prominently advanced as the cause of her successful pleading. It is certain from the whole character of this passage, the variation of the language, and the reply of Jesus which is not in our Gospels at all, that the narrative was not derived from them but from another source.<sup>2</sup>

The last of De Wette's<sup>3</sup> passages is from Hom. iii. 57: "Hear, O Israel; the Lord thy<sup>4</sup> God is one Lord." This is a quotation from Deuteronomy vi. 4, which is likewise quoted in the second Gospel, xii. 29, in reply to the question, "Which is the first Commandment of all? Jesus answered: The first is, Hear, O Israel; the Lord our God is one Lord, and thou shalt love the Lord thy God," &c. &c. In the Homily, however, the quotation is made in a totally different connection, for there is no question of commandments at all, but a clear statement of the circumstances under which the passage was used, which excludes the idea that this quotation was derived from Mark xii. 29. The context in the Homily is as follows: "But to those who were beguiled to imagine many gods as the Scriptures say, he said: Hear, O Israel," &c., &c.<sup>5</sup> There is no hint of the assertion of many gods in the Gospels; but, on the contrary, the question is put by one of the scribes in Mark to whom Jesus says: "Thou art not far from the Kingdom of God."<sup>6</sup> The quotation,

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Hom. xiii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 353 f.

<sup>3</sup> Einl. N. T., p. 115.

<sup>4</sup> Although most MSS. have σου in this place, some, as for instance that edited by Cotelarius, read ἑμῶν.

<sup>5</sup> Τοῖς δὲ ἠπατημένοις πολλοὺς θεοὺς ἵποιοεῖν, ὡς αἱ Γραφαὶ λέγουσιν, ἔφη. Ἄκουε, Ἰσραὴλ, κ.τ.λ. Hom. iii. 57.

<sup>6</sup> Mark xii. 34.

therefore, beyond doubt, must have been taken from a different Gospel.

We may here refer to the passage, the only one pointed out by him in connection with the Synoptics, the discovery of which Canon Westcott affirms, "has removed the doubts which had long been raised about those (allusions) to St. Mark."<sup>1</sup> The discovery referred to is that of the Codex Ottobonianus by Dressel, which contains the concluding part of the Homilies, and which was first published by him in 1853. Canon Westcott says: "Though St. Mark has few peculiar phrases, one of these is repeated verbally in the concluding part of the 19th Homily."<sup>2</sup> The passage is as follows: Hom. xix. 20: "Wherefore also he explained to his disciples privately the mysteries of the kingdom of the heavens." This is compared with Mark iv. 34. . . . and privately to his own disciples, he explained all things."

## HOM. XIX. 20.

Διὸ καὶ τοῖς αὐτοῦ μαθηταῖς κατ' ἰδίαν ἐπέλυε τῆς τῶν οὐρανῶν βασιλείας τὰ μυστήρια.

## MARK IV. 34.

. . . . κατ' ἰδίαν δὲ τοῖς ἰδίοις μαθηταῖς ἐπέλυεν πάντα.<sup>3</sup>

We have only a few words to add to complete the whole of Dr. Westcott's remarks upon the subject. He adds after the quotation: "This is the only place where ἐπιλύω occurs in the Gospels."<sup>4</sup> We may, however, point out that it occurs also in Acts xix. 39 and 2 Peter i. 20. It is upon the coincidence of this word that Canon Westcott rests his argument that this passage is a

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 251.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Ib.*, p. 252.

<sup>3</sup> Dr. Westcott quotes this reading, which is supported by the Codices B, C, Sinaiticus and others. The Codex Alexandrinus and a majority of other MSS. read for τοῖς ἰδίοις μαθηταῖς,—“τοῖς μαθηταῖς αὐτοῦ,” which is closer to the passage in the Homily. It is fair that this should be pointed out.

<sup>4</sup> On the Canon, p. 252, note 1.

reference to Mark. Nothing, however, could be weaker than such a conclusion from such an indication. The phrase in the Homily presents a very marked variation from the passage in Mark. The "all things" (πάντα) of the Gospel, reads: "The mysteries of the kingdom of the heavens" (τῆς τῶν οὐρανῶν βασιλείας τὰ μυστήρια) in the Homily. The passage in Mark iv. 11, to which Dr. Westcott does not refer, reads τὸ μυστήριον τῆς βασιλείας τοῦ θεοῦ. There is one very important matter, however, which our Apologist has omitted to point out, and which he passes over in convenient silence—the context in the Homily. The chapter commences thus: "And Peter said: We remember that our Lord and Teacher, as commanding, said to us: 'Guard the mysteries for me, and the sons of my house.' Wherefore also he explained to his disciples privately," &c.<sup>1</sup> And then comes our passage. Now, here is a command of Jesus, in immediate connection with which the phrase before us is quoted, which does not appear in our Gospels at all, and which clearly establishes the use of a different source. The phrase itself which differs from Mark, as we have seen, may with all right be referred to the same unknown Gospel.

It must be borne in mind that all the quotations which we have hitherto examined are those which have been selected as most closely approximating to passages in our Gospels. Space forbids our giving illustrations of the vast number which so much more widely differ from parallel texts in the Synoptics. We shall confine ourselves to pointing out in the briefest possible manner

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ ὁ Πέτρος· Μεμνήμεθα τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν καὶ Διδασκάλου, ὡς ἐντελλόμενος, εἶπεν ἡμῖν· Τὰ μυστήρια ἐμοὶ καὶ τοῖς υἱοῖς τοῦ οἴκου μου φυλάξατε. κ.τ.λ. Hom. xix. 20.

some of the passages which are persistent in their variations or recall similar passages in the Memoirs of Justin. The first of these is the injunction in Hom. iii. 55 : "Let your yea be yea, your nay nay, for whatsoever is more than these cometh of the evil one." The same saying is repeated in Hom. xix. with the sole addition of "and." We subjoin the Greek of these, together with that of the Gospel and Justin with which the Homilies agree.

Hom. iii. 55. Ἔστω	ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναὶ	τὸ οὐ οὐ.
Hom. xix. 2. Ἔστω	ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναὶ καὶ	τὸ οὐ οὐ.
Apol. i. 16. Ἔστω δὲ	ἡμῶν τὸ ναὶ ναὶ καὶ	τὸ οὐ οὐ.
Matt. v. 37. Ἔστω δὲ ὁ λόγος	ἡμῶν ναὶ ναὶ	οὐ οὐ.

As we have already discussed this passage<sup>1</sup> we need not repeat our remarks here. That this passage comes from a source different from our Gospels is rendered more apparent by the quotation in Hom. xix. 2 being preceded by another which has no parallel at all in our Gospels. "And elsewhere he said, 'He who sowed the bad seed is the devil' (Ὁ δὲ τὸ κακὸν σπέρμα σπείρας ἐστὶν ὁ διάβολος<sup>2</sup>): and again : "Give no pretext to the evil one."<sup>2</sup> (Μὴ δότε πρόφασιν τῷ πονηρῷ.) But in exhorting he prescribes : "Let your yea be yea," &c. The first of these phrases differs markedly from our Gospels ; the second is not in them at all ; the third, which we are considering, differs likewise in an important degree in common with Justin's quotation, and there is every reason for supposing that the whole were derived from the same unknown source.<sup>3</sup>

In the same Homily, xix. 2, there occurs also the passage which exhibits variations likewise found in Justin, which we have already examined,<sup>4</sup> and now merely point out. "Begone into the darkness without,

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i. p. 354, p. 376 f.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Matt. xiii. 39.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 306 ; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 360.

<sup>4</sup> Vol. i. p. 415 f.

which the Father hath prepared for the devil and his angels.”<sup>1</sup> The quotation in Justin (Dial. 76) agrees exactly with this, with the exception that Justin has *Σατανᾶ* instead of *διαβόλω*, which is not important, whilst the agreement in the marked variation from the parallel in the first Gospel establishes the fact of a common source different from ours.<sup>2</sup>

We have also already<sup>3</sup> referred to the passage in Hom. xvii. 4. “No one knew (*ἐγνων*) the Father but the Son, even as no one knoweth the Son but the Father and those to whom the Son is minded to reveal him.” This quotation differs from Matt. xi. 27 in form, in language, and in meaning, but agrees with Justin’s reading of the same text, and as we have shown the use of the aorist here, and the transposition of the order, were characteristics of Gospels used by Gnostics and other parties in the early Church, and the passage with these variations was regarded by them as the basis of some of their leading doctrines.<sup>4</sup> That the variation is not accidental, but a deliberate quotation from a written source, is proved by this, and by the circumstance that the author of the Homilies repeatedly quotes it elsewhere in the same form.<sup>5</sup> It is impossible to suppose that the quotations in these Homilies are so systematically and consistently erroneous, and the only natural conclusion is that they are derived from a source different from our Gospels.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Ὑπάγετε εἰς τὸ σκότος τὸ ἐξώτερον, ὃ ἠτοίμασεν ὁ Πατήρ τῷ διαβόλῳ καὶ τοῖς ἀγγέλοις αὐτοῦ. Hom. xix. 2; cf. Matt. xxv. 41.

<sup>2</sup> Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin’s, pp. 369, 233 f.; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 211, p. 330; Mayerhoff, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 245 f.

<sup>3</sup> Vol. i. p. 402 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Irenæus, Contra Hæc., iv. 6, §§ 1, 3, 7; cf. vol. i. p. 406 f.

<sup>5</sup> Hom. xviii. 4, 6, 7, 8, 13, 20.

<sup>6</sup> Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin’s, p. 201 ff., 351; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 210 f., 248 f., 314, 330; Mayerhoff, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 245; Zeller, Die Apostelgesch., p. 48; Baur, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 576.

Another passage occurs in Hom. iii. 50 : “ Wherefore ye do err, not knowing the true things of the Scriptures ; and on this account ye are ignorant of the power of God.” This is compared with Mark xii. 24 :<sup>1</sup> “ Do ye not therefore err, not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God.”

HOM. III. 50.

Διὰ τοῦτο πλανᾶσθε, μὴ εἰδότες τὰ ἀληθῆ τῶν γραφῶν, οὐ εἴκεν ἀγνοεῖτε τὴν δύναμιν τοῦ Θεοῦ.

MARK XII. 24.

Οὐ διὰ τοῦτο πλανᾶσθε μὴ εἰδότες τὰς γραφὰς μηδὲ τὴν δύναμιν τοῦ Θεοῦ ;

The very same quotation is made both in Hom. ii. 51 and xviii. 20, and in each case in which the passage is introduced it is in connection with the assertion that there are true and false Scriptures, and that as there are in the Scriptures some true sayings and some false, Jesus by this saying showed to those who erred by reason of the false the cause of their error. There cannot be a doubt that the author of the Homilies quotes this passage from a Gospel different from ours, and this is demonstrated both by the important variation from our text and also by its consistent repetition, and by the context in which it stands.<sup>2</sup>

Upon each occasion, also, that the author of the Homilies quotes the foregoing passage he likewise quotes another saying of Jesus which is foreign to our Gospels : “ Be ye approved money-changers,” *γίνεσθε τραπεζίται δόκιμοι*.<sup>3</sup> The saying is thrice quoted without variation, and each time, together with the preceding passage, it refers to the necessity of discrimination between true and false sayings in the Scriptures, as for instance : “ And Peter said : If, therefore, of the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Matt. xxii. 29, which is still more remote.

<sup>2</sup> Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 365.

<sup>3</sup> Hom. ii. 51, iii. 50, xviii. 20.

Scriptures some are true and some are false, our Teacher rightly said: 'Be ye approved money-changers,' as in the Scriptures there are some approved sayings and some spurious."<sup>1</sup> This is one of the best known of the apocryphal sayings of Jesus, and it is quoted by nearly all the Fathers,<sup>2</sup> by many as from Holy Scripture, and by some ascribed to the Gospel of the Nazarenes, or the Gospel according to the Hebrews. There can be no question here that the author quotes an apocryphal Gospel.<sup>3</sup>

There is, in immediate connection with both the preceding passages, another saying of Jesus quoted which is not found in our Gospels: "Why do ye not discern the good reason of the Scriptures?" "Διὰ τί οὐ νοεῖτε τὸ εὐλογον τῶν γραφῶν."<sup>4</sup> This passage also comes from a Gospel different from ours,<sup>5</sup> and the connection and sequence of these quotations is very significant.

One further illustration, and we have done. We find the following in Hom. iii. 55: "And to those who think that God tempts, as the Scriptures say, he said: 'The evil one is the tempter, who also tempted himself.'"<sup>6</sup> This short saying is not found in our Gospels.

<sup>1</sup> Hom. ii. 51.

<sup>2</sup> Apost. Constit., ii. 36; cf. 37; *Clem. Al.*, Strom., i. 28, § 177; cf. ii. 4, § 15, vi. 10, § 81, vii. 15, § 90; *Origen*, in Joan. T. xix., vol. iv. p. 289; *Ephraïm*, Haer., xlv. 2, p. 382; *Hieron.*, Ep. ad Minerv. et Alex., 119 (al. 152); Comm. in Ep. ad Ephes., iv.; *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., i. p. 13 f., 326; *Cotelerius*, Patr. Ap., i. p. 247 f.; *Fabricius*, Cod. Apocr. N. T., ii. p. 524.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 326 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 369; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 115, anm. f.

<sup>4</sup> Hom. iii. 50.

<sup>5</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 326; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 365; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 115, anm. f.; *Cotelerius*, Not. ad Clem. Hom., iii. 50.

<sup>6</sup> Τοῖς δὲ οἰομένοις ὅτι ὁ θεὸς πειράζει, ὡς αἱ Γραφαὶ λέγουσιν ἔφη· Ὁ πονηρὸς ἐστὶν ὁ πειράζων, ὁ καὶ αὐτὸν πειράσας. Hom. iii. 55.

It probably occurred in the Gospel of the Homilies in connection with the temptation of Jesus. It is not improbable that the writer of the Epistle of James, who shows acquaintance with a Gospel different from ours,<sup>1</sup> also knew this saying.<sup>2</sup> We are here again directed to the Ebionitish Gospel. Certainly the quotation is derived from a source different from our Gospels.<sup>3</sup>

These illustrations of the evangelical quotations in the Clementine Homilies give but an imperfect impression of the character of the extremely numerous passages which occur in the work. We have selected for our examination the quotations which have been specially cited by critics as closest to parallels in our Gospels, and have thus submitted the question to the test which was most favourable to the claims of our Synoptics. Space forbids our adequately showing the much wider divergence which exists in the great majority of cases between them and the quotations in the Homilies. To sum up the case: Out of more than a hundred of these quotations only four brief and fragmentary phrases really agree with parallels in our Synoptics, and these, we have shown, are either not used in the same context as in our Gospels or are of a nature far from special to them. Of the rest, all without exception systematically vary more or less from our Gospels, and many in their variations agree with similar quotations in other writers, or on repeated quotation always present the same peculiarities, whilst others, professed to be direct quotations of sayings of Jesus, have no parallels in our Gospels at all. Upon the hypothesis that the author made use of our Gospels, such systematic divergence would be per-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. ch. v. 12.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. ch. i. 13.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 306; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 339.

fectly unintelligible and astounding. On the other hand, it must be remembered that the agreement of a few passages with parallels in our Gospels cannot prove anything. The only extraordinary circumstance is that even using a totally different source, there should not have been a greater agreement with our Synoptics. But for the universal inaccuracy of the human mind, every important historical saying, having obviously only one distinct original form, would in all truthful histories have been reported in that one unvarying form. The nature of the quotations in the Clementine Homilies leads to the inevitable conclusion that their author derived them from a Gospel different from ours. The source of the quotations is never named throughout the work, and there is not the faintest indication of the existence of our Gospels. These circumstances render the Clementine Homilies, in any case, of no evidential value as to the origin and authenticity of the canonical Gospels. This mere fact, in connection with a work written a century and a half after the establishment of Christianity, and abounding with quotations of the discourses of Jesus, is in itself singularly suggestive.

It is scarcely necessary to add that the author of the Homilies has no idea whatever of any canonical writings but those of the Old Testament, though even with regard to these some of our quotations have shown that he held peculiar views, and believed that they contained spurious elements. There is no reference in the Homilies to any of the Epistles of the New Testament.<sup>1</sup>

One of the most striking points in this work, on the other hand, is its determined animosity against the

<sup>1</sup> *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 252, note 2; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 57.

Apostle Paul. We have seen that a strong anti-Pauline tendency was exhibited by many of the Fathers, who, like the author of the Homilies, made use of Judeo-Christian Gospels different from ours. In this work, however, the antagonism against the "Apostle of the Gentiles" assumes a tone of peculiar virulence. There cannot be a doubt that the Apostle Paul is attacked in this religious romance, as the great enemy of the true faith, under the hated name of Simon the Magician, whom Peter follows everywhere for the purpose of unmasking and confuting him. He is robbed of his title of "Apostle of the Gentiles," which, together with the honour of founding the Church of Antioch, of Laodicæa, and of Rome, is ascribed to Peter. All that opposition to Paul which is implied in the Epistle to the Galatians and elsewhere<sup>2</sup> is here realized and exaggerated, and the personal difference with Peter to which Paul refers<sup>3</sup> is widened into the most bitter animosity. In the Epistle of Peter to James which is prefixed to the Homilies, Peter says, in allusion to Paul: "For some among the Gentiles have rejected my lawful preaching and accepted certain lawless and foolish

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, Paulus, i. p. 97 ff., 148, anm. 1, p. 250; K. G. d. 3 erst. Jahrb., p. 87 ff., 93, anm. 1; *Tübinger Zeitschr. f. Th.*, 1831, h. 4, p. 136 f.; *Dogmengesch.* I., i. p. 155; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 286 f.; *Afrörer*, Allg. K. G., i. p. 257 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Clem. Recogn. u. Hom., p. 319; *Zeitschr. f. wiss. Theol.*, 1869, p. 353 ff.; *Der Kanon*, p. 11 f.; *A. Kayser*, Rev. de Théol., 1851, p. 142 f.; *Lechler*, Das apost. u. nachap. Zeit., p. 457 f., p. 500; *Réville*, Essais de Crit. Relig., 1860, p. 35 f.; *Renan*, St. Paul, 1869, p. 303, note 8; *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, p. 63, note 1; *Ritschl*, Entst. altk. Kirche, p. 277 ff.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugn., p. 57; *Schweyler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 372 ff.; *Uhlhorn*, Die Homilien, u. s. w., 1854, p. 297; *Volkmar*, Theol. Jahrb., 1856, p. 279 f.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 252, note 2; *Zeller*, Apostelgeschichte, p. 158 f.

<sup>2</sup> 1 Cor. i. 11, 12; 2 Cor. xi. 13, 20 f.; Philip. i. 15, 16.

<sup>3</sup> Gal. ii. 11; cf. 1 Cor. i. 11, 12.

teaching of the hostile man.”<sup>1</sup> First expounding a doctrine of duality, as heaven and earth, day and night, life and death,<sup>2</sup> Peter asserts that in nature the greater things come first, but amongst men the opposite is the case, and the first is worse and the second better.<sup>3</sup> He then says to Clement that it is easy according to this order to discern to what class Simon (Paul) belongs, “who came before me to the Gentiles, and to which I belong who have come after him, and have followed him as light upon darkness, as knowledge upon ignorance, as health upon disease.”<sup>4</sup> He continues: “If he were known he would not be believed, but now, not being known, he is wrongly believed; and though by his acts he is a hater, he is loved; and although an enemy, he is welcomed as a friend; and though he is death, he is desired as a saviour; and though fire, esteemed as light; and though a deceiver, he is listened to as speaking the truth.”<sup>5</sup> There is much more of this acrimonious abuse put into the mouth of Peter.<sup>6</sup> The indications that it is Paul who is really attacked under the name of Simon are much too clear to admit of doubt. In Hom. xi. 35, Peter, warning the Church against false teachers, says: “He who hath sent us, our Lord and Prophet, declared to us that the evil one . . . . announced that he would send from amongst his followers apostles<sup>7</sup> to deceive. Therefore above all remember to avoid every apostle, or teacher, or prophet, who first does not accurately compare his teaching with that of James

<sup>1</sup> Epist. Petri ad Jacobum, § 2. Canon Westcott quotes this passage with the observation, “There can be no doubt that St. Paul is referred to as ‘the enemy.’” On the Canon, p. 252, note 2.

<sup>2</sup> Hom. ii. 15.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 16.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 17.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 18.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Hom. iii. 59; vii. 2, 4, 10, 11.

<sup>7</sup> We have already pointed out that this declaration is not in our Gospels.

called the brother of my Lord, and to whom was confided the ordering of the Church of the Hebrews in Jerusalem," &c., lest this evil one should send a false preacher to them, "as he has sent to us Simon preaching a counterfeit of truth in the name of our Lord and disseminating error."<sup>1</sup> Further on he speaks more plainly still. Simon maintains that he has a truer appreciation of the doctrines and teaching of Jesus because he has received his inspiration by supernatural vision, and not merely by the common experience of the senses,<sup>2</sup> and Peter replies: "If, therefore, our Jesus indeed appeared to you in a vision, revealed himself, and spoke to you, it was only as an irritated adversary. . . . But can any one through visions become wise in teaching? And if you say: 'It is possible,' then I ask, 'Wherefore did the Teacher remain and discourse for a whole year to those who were attentive? And how can we believe your story that he appeared to you? And in what manner did he appear to you, when you hold opinions contrary to his teaching? But if seen and taught by him for a single hour you became his apostle :<sup>3</sup> preach his words, interpret his sayings, love his apostles, oppose not me who consorted with him. For you now set yourself up against me who am a firm rock, the foundation of the Church. If you were not an opponent you would not calumniate me, you would not revile my teaching in order that, in declaring what I have myself heard from the Lord, I may not be believed, as though I were condemned. . . . But

<sup>1</sup> Hom. xi. 35; cf. Galat. i. 7 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, xvii. 13 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. 1 Cor. ix. 1 ff. "Am I not an Apostle? have I not seen Jesus our Lord?" Cf. Galat. i. 1; i. 12, "For neither did I myself receive it by man, nor was I taught it, but by revelation of Jesus Christ,"

if you say that I am condemned, you blame God who revealed Christ to me,'"<sup>1</sup> &c. This last phrase: "If you say that I am condemned" (\*Η εἰ κατεγνωσμένον με λέγεις) is an evident allusion to Galat. ii. 11: "I withstood him to the face, because he was condemned" (ὅτι κατεγνωσμένος ἦν).

We have digressed to a greater extent than we intended, but it is not unimportant to show the general character and tendency of the work we have been examining. The Clementine Homilies,—written perhaps about the end of the second century, which never name or indicate a single Gospel as the source of the author's knowledge of evangelical history, whose quotations of sayings of Jesus, numerous as they are, systematically differ from the parallel passages of our Synoptics, or are altogether foreign to them, which denounce the Apostle Paul as an impostor, enemy of the faith, and disseminator of false doctrine, and therefore repudiate his Epistles, at the same time equally ignoring all the other writings of the New Testament,—can scarcely be considered as giving much support to any theory of the early formation of the New Testament Canon, or as affording evidence even of the existence of its separate books.

## 2.

AMONG the writings which used formerly to be ascribed to Justin Martyr, and to be published along with his general works, is the short composition commonly known as the "Epistle to Diognetus." The ascription of this composition to Justin arose solely from

<sup>1</sup> Hom. xvii. 19.

the fact that in the only known MS. of the letter there is an inscription Τοῦ αὐτοῦ πρὸς Διογνητον which from its connection was referred to Justin.<sup>1</sup> The style and contents of the work, however, soon convinced critics that it could not possibly be written by Justin,<sup>2</sup> and although it has been ascribed by various isolated writers to Apollos, Clement, Marcion, Quadratus, and others, none of these guesses have been seriously supported, and critics are almost universally agreed in confessing that the author of the Epistle is entirely unknown.

Such being the case, it need scarcely be said that the difficulty of assigning a date to the work with any degree of certainty is extreme, if it be not absolutely impossible to do so. This difficulty, however, is increased by several circumstances. The first and most important of these is the fact that the Epistle to Diognetus is neither quoted nor mentioned by any ancient writer, and consequently there is no external evidence whatever to indicate the period of its composition.<sup>3</sup> Moreover, it is not only anonymous but incomplete, or, at least, as we have it, not the work of a single writer. At the end of Chapter x. a break is indicated, and the two

<sup>1</sup> *Otto*, Ep. ad Diognetum, &c., 1852, p. 11 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Baur*, Dogmengesch. I., i. p. 255; *Gesch. chr. Kirche*, i. p. 373; *Bunsen*, *Analecta Ante-Nic.*, i. p. 103 ff.; *Christianity and Mankind*, i. p. 170 f.; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 50; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 399; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, ii. p. 138 ff.; *Ewald*, *Gesch. Volkes Isr.*, vii. p. 251; *Guericke*, *H'buch K. G.*, p. 152; *C. D. a. Grossheim*, *De ep. ad Diogn. Comm.*, 1828; *Hollenberg*, *Der Br. ad Diogn.*, 1853; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die ap Väter*, p. 1, cf. 9 f.; *Kayser*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1856, p. 258 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 36, anm. 1; *Möhler*, *Ueb. d. Br. an Diogn. Werke*, 1839, i. p. 19 ff.; *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 289; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 101; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 40; *Tillemont*, *Mém. eccl.*, tom. ii. pt. 1, p. 366, 493, note 1; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 74 f.; *Zeller*, *Zie Apostelgesch.*, p. 50.

<sup>3</sup> *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, ii. p. 126; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 36, anm. 1.

concluding chapters are unmistakably by a different and later hand.<sup>1</sup> It is not singular, therefore, that there exists a wide difference of opinion as to the date of the first ten chapters, although all agree regarding the later composition of the concluding portion. It is assigned to various periods between about the end of the first quarter of the second century to the end of that century,<sup>2</sup> whilst others altogether denounce it as a modern forgery.<sup>3</sup> Nothing can be more insecure in one direction than the date of a work derived alone from internal evidence. Allusions to actual occurrences may with certainty prove that a work could only have been written after they had taken place. The mere absence of later indications in an anonymous Epistle only found in a single MS. of the thirteenth or fourteenth century, however, and which may have been and probably was written expressly in imitation of early Christian feeling, cannot furnish any solid basis for an early date. It must be evident that

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, *Der Kanon*, p. 59 ff., 67, 76; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 339; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, ii. p. 142; *Ewald*, *Gesch. V. Isr.*, vii. p. 251, anm. 1; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die ap. Väter*, p. 1; *Otto*, *Just. Mart.*, ii. p. 201 n.; *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 290; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 75.

<sup>2</sup> c. A.D. 117. *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 76. A.D. 120—130, *Ewald*, *Gesch. V. Isr.*, vii. p. 252. *Between Hadrian and Marc. Aurel. Kayser*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1856, p. 258. *An elder contemporary of Justin. Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden, u. s. w.*, p. 40. A.D. 133—135, *Otto*; *De Ep. ad Diogn.*, 1845; *Bunsen*, *Chr. and Mankind*, i. p. 170. A.D. 135, *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 289. A.D. 140, *Credner*, *Der Kanon*, p. 59; cf. *Beiträge*, i. p. 50. After A.D. 170, *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 101. Hardly before A.D. 180, *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 399. *Hilgenfeld* excludes it from the 2nd century. *Die ap. Väter*, p. 9 f. *Zeller* considers it of no value, even if it contained quotations, on account of its late date. *Die Apostelgesch.*, p. 51; *Theol. Jahrb.*, iv. p. 619 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Donaldson* considers it either a forgery by H. Stephanus the first editor, or by Greeks who came over to Italy when Constantinople was threatened by the Turks. *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, ii. p. 141 f. So also *Overbeck* decides it to be a fictitious production written after the time of Constantine; *Ueb. d. pseudojust. Br. an Diognet. Programm.* 1872.

the determination of the date of this Epistle cannot therefore be regarded as otherwise than doubtful and arbitrary. It is certain that the purity of its Greek and the elegance of its style distinguish it from all other Christian works of the period to which so many assign it.<sup>1</sup>

The Epistle to Diognetus, however, does not furnish any evidence even of the existence of our Synoptics, for it is admitted that it does not contain a single direct quotation from any evangelical work.<sup>2</sup> We shall hereafter have to refer to this Epistle in connection with the fourth Gospel, but in the meantime it may be well to add that in Chapter xii., one of those it will be remembered which are admitted to be of later date, a brief quotation is made from 1 Cor. viii. 1, introduced merely by the words, ὁ ἀπόστολος λέγει.

<sup>1</sup> *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 102; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 399; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., ii. p. 134 ff.; cf. *Ewald*, Gesch. V. Isr., vii. p. 253; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 74 f.; *Kayser*, Rev. de Théol., 1856, p. 257.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 50; *Kayser*, Rev. de Théol., 1856, p. 257; *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, p. 40 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 102; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 40; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 78.

## CHAPTER VI.

## BASILIDES—VALENTINUS.

WE must now turn back to an earlier period and consider any evidence regarding the Synoptic Gospels which may be furnished by the so-called heretical writers of the second century. The first of these who claims our attention is Basilides, the founder of a system of Gnosticism, who lived in Alexandria about the year 125 of our era.<sup>1</sup> With the exception of a very few brief fragments,<sup>2</sup> none of the writings of this Gnostic have been preserved, and all our information regarding them is therefore derived at second-hand from ecclesiastical writers opposed to him and his doctrines, and their statements, especially where acquaintance with, and the use of, the New Testament Scriptures are assumed, must be received with very great caution. The uncritical and inaccurate character of the Fathers rendered them peculiarly liable to be misled by foregone devout conclusions.

Eusebius states that Agrippa Castor, who had written a refutation of the doctrines of Basilides, "Says that he had composed twenty-four books upon the Gospel."<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 7, 8, 9; *Baur*, *Gesch. chr. K.*, i. p. 196; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 388; *Guericke*, *H'buch K. G.*, i. p. 182; *Lechler*, *Das ap. und nachap Zeit.*, p. 498; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 64; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 50.

<sup>2</sup> *Grabe*, *Spicil. Patr.*, ii. p. 39 ff., 65 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Φησὶν αὐτὸν εἰς μὲν τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τέσσαρα πρὸς τοῖς ἑξοκσι συντάξει βιβλία. H. E., iv. 7.

This is interpreted by Tischendorf, without argument, and in a most arbitrary and erroneous manner, to imply that the work was a commentary upon our four canonical Gospels;<sup>1</sup> a conclusion the audacity of which can scarcely be exceeded. This is, however, almost surpassed by the treatment of Canon Westcott, who writes regarding Basilides: "It appears, moreover, that he himself published a Gospel—a 'Life of Christ' as it would perhaps be called in our days, or 'The Philosophy of Christianity'<sup>2</sup>—but he admitted the historic truth of all the facts contained in the canonical Gospels, and used them as Scripture. For, in spite of his peculiar opinions, the testimony of Basilides to our 'acknowledged' books is comprehensive and clear. In the few pages of his writings which remain there are certain references to the Gospels of St. Matthew, St. Luke, and St. John,"<sup>3</sup> &c. Now in making, in such a manner, these assertions: in totally ignoring the whole of the discussion with regard to the supposed quotations of Basilides in the work commonly ascribed to Hippolytus and the adverse results of learned criticism: in the unqualified assertions thus made and the absence either of explanation of the facts or the reasons for the conclusion: this statement must be condemned in the strongest manner as unworthy of a scholar, and only calculated to mislead readers who must generally be ignorant of the actual facts of the case.

We know from the evidence of antiquity that Basilides made use of a Gospel, written by himself it is said, but certainly called after his own name.<sup>4</sup> An attempt has

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 51 f.

<sup>2</sup> These names are pure inventions of Dr. Westcott's fancy, of course.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 255 f.

<sup>4</sup> Ausus fuit et Basilides scribere Evangelium et suo illud nomine titu-

been made to explain this by suggesting that perhaps the Commentary mentioned by Agrippa Castor may have been mistaken for a Gospel;<sup>1</sup> but the fragments of that work which are still extant<sup>2</sup> are of a character which precludes the possibility that any work of which they formed a part could have been considered a Gospel.<sup>3</sup> Various opinions have been expressed as to the exact nature of the Gospel of Basilides. Neander affirmed it to be the Gospel according to the Hebrews which he brought from Syria to Egypt;<sup>4</sup> whilst Schneckenburger held it to be the Gospel according to the Egyptians.<sup>5</sup> Others believe it to have at least been based upon one or other of these Gospels.<sup>6</sup> There seems most reason for the hypothesis that it was a form of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which we have found so generally in use amongst the Fathers.

We have already quoted the passage in which Eusebius states, on the authority of Agrippa Castor, whose works are no longer extant, that Basilides had

lare. *Origen*, Hom. i. in Lucam. Ausus est etiam Basilides Evangelium scribere quod dicitur secundum Basilidem. *Ambros.*, Comment in Luc. Proem. *Hieron.*, Præf. in Matt.; cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 37; Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 11; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 568; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 389; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 414, anm. 3, p. 475; *Neulecker*, Einl. N. T., 1840, p. 85 f.; *Schott*, Isagoge, p. 23; *Scholten*, Die alt. Zeugnisse, p. 64.

<sup>1</sup> *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 414, anm. 3; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 52, anm. 1; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 255 f., note 4; *Afrörer*, Allg. K. G., i., p. 340, anm.\*\*\*; *Nicolas*, Et. sur les Ev. Apocr., p. 134.

<sup>2</sup> *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., ii. p. 39 ff., 65 ff.; *Clemens Al.*, Strom., iv. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Dr. Westcott admits this. On the Canon, p. 255, note 4.

<sup>4</sup> Gnost. Syst., p. 84; cf. K. G., 1843, ii. p. 709, anm. 2; *Nicolas*, Et. sur les Ev. Apocr., p. 134.

<sup>5</sup> Ueb. d. Ev. d. Ægypt., 1834; cf. *Gieseler*, Entst. schr. Evv., p. 19.

<sup>6</sup> *Gieseler*, Entst. schr. Evv., p. 19; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 568; cf. *Fabricius*, Cod. Ap. N. T., i. p. 343, note m.

composed a work in twenty-four books on the Gospel (*τὸ εὐαγγέλιον*), and we have mentioned the unwarranted inference of Tischendorf that this must have been a work on our four Gospels. Now, so far from deriving his doctrines from our Gospels or other New Testament writings or acknowledging their authority, Basilides expressly states that he received his knowledge of the truth from Glaucias, "the interpreter of Peter," whose disciple he claimed to be,<sup>1</sup> and he thus sets Gospels aside and prefers tradition.<sup>2</sup> In mentioning this fact Canon Westcott says: "At the same time he appealed to the authority of Glaucias, who, as well as St. Mark, was 'an interpreter of St. Peter.'<sup>3</sup> Now we have here again an illustration of the same misleading system which we have already condemned, and shall further refer to, in the introduction after "*Glaucias*" of the words "*who as well as St. Mark was an interpreter of St. Peter.*" The words in italics are the gratuitous addition of Canon Westcott himself, and can only have been inserted for one of two purposes: I., to assert the fact that Glaucias was actually an interpreter of Peter as tradition represented Mark to be; or II., to insinuate to unlearned readers that Basilides himself acknowledged Mark as well as Glaucias as the interpreter of Peter. We can scarcely suppose the first to have been the intention, and we regret to be forced back upon the second, and infer that the temptation to weaken the inferences from the appeal of Basilides to the uncanonical

<sup>1</sup> . . . . καθίπερ ὁ Βασιλείδης κἄν Γλαυχίαν ἐπιγράφηται διδάσκαλον, ὡς ἀρχοῦσιν αὐτοί, τὸν Πέτρον ἐρμηνεία. *Clemens Al.*, Strom., vii. 17, § 106.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 37; *Gfrörer*, Allg. K. G., i. p. 340; *Scholten*, Dio ält. Zeugnisse, p. 64; cf. *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 568.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 255.

Glaucias, by coupling with it the allusion to Mark, was, unconsciously, no doubt, too strong for the apologist.<sup>1</sup>

Basilides also claimed to have received from a certain Matthias the report of private discourses which he had heard from the Saviour for his special instruction.<sup>2</sup> Agrippa Castor further stated, according to Eusebius, that in his *ἐξηγητικά* Basilides refers to Barcabbas and Barcoph (Parchor<sup>3</sup>) as prophets, as well as invents others for himself who never existed and claimed their authority for his doctrines.<sup>4</sup> With regard to all this Canon Westcott writes: "Since Basilides lived on the verge of the apostolic times, it is not surprising that he made use of other sources of Christian doctrine besides the canonical books. The belief in Divine Inspiration was still fresh and real,"<sup>5</sup> &c. It is apparent, however, that Basilides, in basing his doctrines on these Apocryphal books as inspired, and upon tradition, and in having a special Gospel called after his own name, which, therefore, he clearly adopts as the exponent of his ideas of Christian truth, absolutely ignores the canonical Gospels altogether, and not only does not offer any evidence for their existence, but proves that he did not recognize any such works as of authority. Therefore there is no ground

<sup>1</sup> We may add that the "Saint" inserted before Peter neither belongs to Clement nor to Basilides, but is introduced into the quotation by Dr. Westcott.

<sup>2</sup> Βασιλείδης τοίνυν καὶ Ἰσίδωρος, ὁ Βασιλείδου παῖς γνήσιος καὶ μαθητής, φασὶν εἰρηκέναι Μαθθίαν αὐτοῖς λόγους ἀποκρύφους, οὓς ἤκουσε παρὰ τοῦ σωτήρος κατ' ἰδίαν διδασθεῖς. *Hippolytus*, *Refut. Omn. Hæc.*, vii. 20; ed. Duncker et Schneidewin, 1859.

<sup>3</sup> Isidorus, his son and disciple, wrote a commentary on the prophecy of Parchor (*Clem. Al.*, *Strom.*, vi. 6, § 53), in which he further refers to the "prophecy of Cham." Cf. *Neander*, *Allg. K. G.*, 1843, ii. p. 703 ff.

<sup>4</sup> . . . . . προφήτας δὲ ἐαυτῶ ὀνομάσαι Βαρκαββάν καὶ Βαρκῶφ καὶ ἄλλους ἀνυπάρχουσιν τινὰς ἐαυτῶ συστήσασθαι, κ.τ.λ. *Euseb.*, *H. E.*, iv. 7.

<sup>5</sup> On the Canon, p. 255.

whatever for Tischendorf's assumption that the commentary of Basilides "on the Gospel" was written upon our Gospels, but that idea is on the contrary negatived in the strongest way by all the facts of the case.<sup>1</sup> The perfectly simple interpretation of the statement is that long ago suggested by Valesius,<sup>2</sup> that the Commentary of Basilides was composed upon his own Gospel,<sup>3</sup> whether it was the Gospel according to the Hebrews or the Egyptians.

Moreover, it must be borne in mind that Basilides used the word "Gospel" in a peculiar technical way. Hippolytus, in the work usually ascribed to him, writing of the Basilidians and describing their doctrines, says: "When therefore it was necessary to reveal, he (?) says, us, who are children of God, in expectation of which revelation, he says, the creature groaneth and travaileth, the Gospel came into the world, and came through (διήλθε? prevailed over) every principality and power and dominion, and every name that is named."<sup>4</sup> "The Gospel, therefore, came first from the Sonship, he says, through the Son, sitting by the Archon, to the Archon, and the Archon learnt that he was not the God of all things but begotten,"<sup>5</sup> &c. "The Gospel is the knowledge of supramundane matter,"<sup>6</sup> &c. This may not be

<sup>1</sup> Davidson, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 389; Scholten, *Dio ált. Zeugnisse*, p. 64; *Credner*, *Der Kanon*, p. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Fabricius*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, i. p. 343, not. m.

<sup>3</sup> *Neudecker*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 85; *Nicolas*, *Et. sur les Ev. Apocr.*, p. 134.

<sup>4</sup> "Ἐπεὶ οὖν ἔδει ἀποκαλυφθῆναι, φησίν, ἡμᾶς τὰ τέκνα τοῦ θεοῦ, περὶ ὧν ἐστὶν ναῖε, φησίν, ἢ κτίσις καὶ ὄδιον, ἀπεκδεχομένη τὴν ἀποκάλυψιν, ἦλθε τὸ εὐαγγέλιον εἰς τὸν κόσμον, καὶ διήλθε διὰ πάσης ἀρχῆς καὶ ἐξουσίας καὶ κυριότητος καὶ παντὸς ὀνόματος ὀνομαζομένου, κ.τ.λ. *Hippolytus*, *Refut. Omn. Hæer.*, vii. 25.

<sup>5</sup> "Ἦλθεν οὖν τὸ εὐαγγέλιον πρῶτον ἀπὸ τῆς υἰότητος, φησί, διὰ τοῦ παρακαθιμένου τῷ ἀρχοντι υἱοῦ πρὸς τὸν ἀρχοντα, καὶ ἔμαθεν ὁ ἀρχων, ὅτι οὐκ ἦν θεὸς τῶν ὅλων, ἀλλ' ἦν γεννητὸς, κ.τ.λ. *Ib.*, vii. 26; cf. 27, &c.

<sup>6</sup> *Εὐαγγέλιον ἐστὶ κατ' αἰτούς ἢ τῶν ὑπερκοσμίων γνώσις, κ.τ.λ. Ib.*, vii. 27.

very intelligible, but it is sufficient to show that "the Gospel" in a technical sense<sup>1</sup> formed a very important part of the system of Basilides. Now there is nothing whatever to show that the twenty-four books which he composed "on the Gospel" were not in elucidation of the Gospel as technically understood by him, illustrated by extracts from his own special Gospel and from the tradition handed down to him by Glaucias and Matthias.

The emphatic assertion of Canon Westcott and Basilides, "admitted the historic truth of all the facts contained in the canonical Gospels," is based solely upon the following sentence of the work attributed to Hippolytus. "Jesus, however, was generated according to these (followers of Basilides) as we have already said.<sup>2</sup> But when the generation which has already been declared had taken place, all things regarding the Saviour, according to them, occurred in a similar way as they have been written in the Gospel."<sup>3</sup> There are, however, several important points to be borne in mind in reference to this passage. The statement in question is not made in connection with Basilides himself, but distinctly in reference to his followers, of whom there were many in the time of Hippolytus and long after him. It is, moreover, a general observation the accuracy of which we have no means of testing, and upon the correctness of which there is no special reason to rely. The remark, made at the beginning of the third century, however, that the followers of Basilides believed that the actual events of the life of Jesus occurred in the way in which they have

<sup>1</sup> Canon Westcott admits this technical use of the word, of course. On the Canon, p. 255 f., note 4.

<sup>2</sup> He refers to a mystical account of the incarnation.

<sup>3</sup> 'Ο δὲ Ἰησοῦς γεγένηται κατ' αὐτοὺς ὡς προειρήκαμεν. Γεγεννημένης δὲ τῆς γενέσεως τῆς προδεδηλωμένης, γέγονε πάντα ὁμοίως κατ' αὐτοὺς τὰ περὶ τοῦ σωτήρος ὡς ἐν τοῖς εὐαγγελίοις γέγραπται. *Hippolytus*, Rsf. Omu. Hæc., vii. 27.

been written in the Gospels, is no proof whatever that either they or Basilides used or admitted the authority of our Gospels. The exclusive use by any one of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, for instance, would be perfectly consistent with the statement. No one who considers what is known of that Gospel, or who thinks of the use made of it in the first half of the second century by perfectly orthodox Fathers before we hear anything of our Gospels, can doubt this. The passage is, therefore, of no weight as evidence for the use of our Gospels. Canon Westcott is himself obliged to admit that in the extant fragments of Isidorus, the son and disciple of Basilides, who "maintained the doctrines of his father," he has "noticed nothing bearing on the books of the New Testament."<sup>1</sup> On the supposition that Basilides actually wrote a Commentary on our Gospels, and used them as Scripture, it is indeed passing strange that we have so little evidence on the point.

We must now, however, examine in detail all of the quotations, and they are few, alleged to show the use of our Gospels, and we shall commence with those of Tischendorf. The first passage which he points out is found in the Stromata of Clement of Alexandria. Tischendorf guards himself, in reference to these quotations, by merely speaking of them as "Basilidian" (Basilidianisch),<sup>2</sup> but it might have been more frank to have stated clearly that Clement distinctly assigns the quotation to the followers of Basilides (οἱ δὲ ἀπὸ Βασιλείδου),<sup>3</sup> and not to Basilides himself.<sup>4</sup> The supposed quotation, therefore, however surely traced to our Gospels, could really not prove anything in regard to Basilides. The

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 257.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 51.

<sup>3</sup> Οἱ δὲ ἀπὸ Βασιλείδου πυθόμενων φασὶ τῶν ἀποστόλων μὴ ποτε ἄμεινιν ἔστι τὸ μὴ γαμεῖν ἀποκρίνασθαι λέγουσι τὸν κύριον, κ.τ.λ. Strom., iii. 1, § 1.

<sup>4</sup> Canon Westcott does not refer to this quotation at all.

passage itself compared with the parallel in Matt. xix. 11, 12, is as follows :—

STROM. III. 1, § 1.

They say the Lord answered :  
All men cannot receive this saying.

For there are eunuchs who are indeed from birth, but others from necessity.

Οὐ πάντες χωροῦσι τὸν λόγον τοῦτον, εἰσι γὰρ εὐνοῦχοι, οἱ μὲν ἐκ γενετῆς, οἱ δὲ ἐξ ἀνάγκης.

MATT. XIX. 11, 12.

v. 11. But he said unto them :  
All men cannot receive this saying but only they to whom it is given.

v. 12. For there are eunuchs which were so born from their mother's womb : and there are eunuchs which were made eunuchs by men, &c. &c.

Οὐ πάντες χωροῦσιν τὸν λόγον τοῦτον, ἀλλ' οἷς δέδοται. εἰσιν γὰρ εὐνοῦχοι οἵτινες ἐκ κοιλίας μητρὸς ἐγεννήθησαν οὕτως, καὶ εἰσιν εὐνοῦχοι οἵτινες εὐνο- χίσθησαν ὑπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων, κ.τ.λ.

Now this passage in its affinity to and material variation from our first Gospel might be quoted as evidence for the use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, but it is simply preposterous to point to it as evidence for the use of Matthew. Apologists in their anxiety to grasp at the faintest analogies as testimony seem altogether to ignore the history of the creation of written Gospels, and to forget the very existence of the πολλοὶ of Luke.<sup>1</sup>

The next passage referred to by Tischendorf<sup>2</sup> is one quoted by Epiphanius<sup>3</sup> which we subjoin in contrast with the parallel in Matt. vii. 6 :—

HÆR. XXIV. 5.

And therefore he said :  
Cast not ye pearls before swine, neither give that which is holy unto dogs.

Μὴ βάλῃτε τοὺς μαργαρίτας ἔμπροσθεν τῶν χοίρων, μηδὲ δότε τὸ ἅγιον τοῖς κυσί.

MATT. VII. 6.

Give not that which is holy unto dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

Μὴ δῶτε τὸ ἅγιον τοῖς κυσί, μηδὲ βάλῃτε τοὺς μαργαρίτας ὑμῶν ἔμπροσθεν τῶν χοίρων, κ.τ.λ.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Ewald, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1849, p. 208.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 51.

<sup>3</sup> Hær., xxiv. 5, p. 72.

Here again the variation in order is just what one might have expected from the use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews or a similar work, and there is no indication whatever that the passage did not end here, without the continuation of our first Synoptic. What is still more important, although Tischendorf does not mention the fact, nor otherwise hint a doubt than by the use again of an unexplained description of this quotation as "Basilidianisch" instead of a more direct ascription of it to Basilides himself, this passage is by no means attributed by Epiphanius to that heretic. It is introduced into the section of his work directed against the Basilidians, but he uses, like Clement, the indefinite *φησί*, and as in dealing with all these heresies there is continual interchange of reference to the head and the later followers, there is no certainty who is referred to in these quotations, and in this instance nothing to indicate that this passage is ascribed to Basilides himself. His name is mentioned in the first line of the first chapter of this "heresy," but not again before this *φησί* occurs in chapter v. Tischendorf does not claim any other quotations.

Canon Westcott states: "In the few pages of his (Basilides') writings which remain there are certain references to the Gospels of St. Matthew, St. Luke,"<sup>1</sup> &c. One might suppose from this that the "certain" references occurred in actual extracts made from his works, and that the quotations therefore appeared set in a context of his own words. This impression is strengthened when we read as an introduction to the instances: "The following examples will be sufficient to show his method of quotation."<sup>2</sup> The fact is, however,

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 256.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 256, note 3.

that these examples are found in the work of Hippolytus, in an epitome of the views of the school by that writer himself, with nothing more definite than a subjectless *φησί* to indicate who is referred to. The only examples Canon Westcott can give of these "certain references" to our first and third Synoptics, do not show his "method of quotation" to much advantage. The first is not a quotation at all, but a mere reference to the Magi and the Star. "But that each thing, he says (*φησί*), has its own times, sufficient the Saviour when he says: . . . and the Magi discerning the star,"<sup>1</sup> &c. This of course Canon Westcott considers a reference to Matt. ii. 1, 2, but we need scarcely point out that this falls to the ground instantly, if it be admitted, as it must be, that the Star and the Magi may have been mentioned in other Gospels than the first Synoptic. We have already seen, when examining the evidence of Justin, that this is the case. The only quotation asserted to be taken from Luke is the phrase: "The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee,"<sup>2</sup> which agrees with Luke i. 35. This again is introduced by Hippolytus with another subjectless "he says," and apart from the uncertainty as to who "he" is, this is very unsatisfactory evidence as to the form of the quotation in the original text, for it may easily have been corrected by Hippolytus, consciously or unconsciously, in the course of transfer to his pages. We have already met with this passage as quoted by Justin from a Gospel different from ours, and this again would lead us to the Gospel according to the Hebrews.

<sup>1</sup> "Οτι δέ, φησίν, ἕκαστον ἰδίους ἔχει καιρούς, ἰκανὸς ὁ σωτὴρ λέγων . . . . καὶ οἱ μάγοι τὸν ἀστέρα τεθεαμένοι. *Hippolytus*, Ref. Omn. Hæc., vii. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Πνεῦμα ἁγίων ἐπελεύσεται ἐπὶ σέ, καὶ δύναμις ὑψίστου ἐπισκιάσει σοι. *Hippolytus*, Ref. Omn. Hæc., vii. 26.

As we have already stated, however, none of the quotations which we have considered are directly referred to Basilides himself, but they are all introduced by the utterly vague expression, "he says," (*φησι*) without any subject accompanying the verb. Now it is admitted that writers of the time of Hippolytus, and notably Hippolytus himself, made use of the name of the founder of a sect to represent the whole of his school, and applied to him, apparently, quotations taken from unknown and later followers.<sup>1</sup> The passages which he cites, therefore, and which appear to indicate the use of Gospels, instead of being extracted from the works of the founder himself, in all probability were taken from writings of Gnostics of his own time. Canon Westcott himself admits the possibility of this, in writing of other early heretics. He says: "The evidence that has been collected from the documents of these primitive sects is necessarily somewhat vague. It would be more satisfactory to know the exact position of their authors, and the precise date of their being composed. It is just possible that Hippolytus made use of writings which were current in his own time without further examination, and transferred to the apostolic age forms of thought and expression which had been the growth of two, or even of three generations."<sup>2</sup> So much as to the reliance to be placed on the work ascribed to Hippolytus. It is certain, for instance, that in writing of the sect of

<sup>1</sup> *Zeller*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1853, p. 148 ff.; *Die Apostelgesch.*, p. 63 f.; *Volkmar*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1854, p. 108 ff.; *Hippolytus*, u. d. röm. Zeitgenossen, 1855, p. 167; *Der Ursprung*, p. 70 f.; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 65 f.; *Das Ev. n. Johan.*, p. 427; *Rumpf*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1867, p. 17 ff.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 388 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 345 f., anm. 5; *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 287; *J. J. Tayler*, *The Fourth Gospel*, 1867, p. 57.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 252.

Naaseni and Ophites, Hippolytus perpetually quotes passages from the writings of the school, with the indefinite *φησί*,<sup>1</sup> as he likewise does in dealing with the Peratici,<sup>2</sup> and Docetæ,<sup>3</sup> no individual author being named; yet he evidently quotes various writers, passing from one to another without explanation, and making use of the same unvarying *φησί*. In one place,<sup>4</sup> where he has "the Greeks say," (*φασὶν οἱ Ἕλληνες*) he gives, without further indication, a quotation from Pindar.<sup>5</sup> A still more apt instance of his method is that pointed out by Volkmar,<sup>6</sup> where Hippolytus, writing of "Marcion, or some one of his hounds," uses, without further explanation, the subjectless *φησί* to introduce matter from the later followers of Marcion.<sup>7</sup> Now, with regard to Basilides, Hippolytus directly refers not only to the heretic chief, but also to his disciple Isidorus and all their followers,<sup>8</sup> (*καὶ Ἰσίδωρος καὶ πᾶς ὁ τούτων χορὸς*) and then proceeds to use the indefinite "he says," interspersed with references in the plural to these heretics, exhibiting the same careless method of quotation, and leaving the same complete uncertainty as to the speaker's identity as in the other cases mentioned.<sup>9</sup> On the other hand, it has been demonstrated by

<sup>1</sup> *Hippolytus*, Ref. Omn. Hær., v. 6 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, v. 16, 17.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, viii. 9, 10.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, v. 7.

<sup>5</sup> *Hippol.*, Ref. Omn. Hær. ed. Duncker et Schneidewin not. in loc., p. 134; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 65 f.; *Zeller*, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 149 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 389.

<sup>6</sup> Theol. Jahrb., 1854, p. 108 ff.; *Der Ursprung*, p. 70.

<sup>7</sup> *Hippolytus*, Ref. Omn. Hær., vii. 30; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 66.

<sup>8</sup> *Hippolytus*, *ib.*, vii. 20; cf. 22.

<sup>9</sup> *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 65; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 71 f., anm.; Theol. Jahrb., 1854, p. 108 f.; *Rumpf*, Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 18 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 388; *Zeller*, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 148 ff.

Hilgenfeld, that the gnosticism ascribed to Basilides by Hippolytus, in connection with these quotations, is of a much later and more developed type than that which Basilides himself held,<sup>1</sup> as shown in the actual fragments of his own writings which are still extant, and as reported by Irenæus,<sup>2</sup> Clement of Alexandria,<sup>3</sup> and the work "Adversus omnes Hæreses," annexed to the "Præscriptio hæreticorum" of Tertullian, which is considered to be the epitome of an earlier work of Hippolytus. The fact probably is that Hippolytus derived his views of the doctrines of Basilides from the writings of his later followers, and from them made the quotations which are attributed to the founder of the school.<sup>4</sup> In any case there is no ground for referring these quotations with an indefinite *φησί* to Basilides himself.

Of all this there is not a word from Canon Westcott,<sup>5</sup> but he ventures to speak of "the testimony of Basilides to our 'acknowledged' books," as "comprehensive and clear."<sup>6</sup> We have seen, however, that the passages referred to have no weight whatever as evidence for the use of our

<sup>1</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Theol. Jahrb., 1856, p. 86 ff., 786 ff.; *Die jüd. Apok.*, 1857, p. 287 ff.; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1862, p. 452 ff.; *Volkmar*, Hippolytus u. d. röm. Zeitgenossen, p. 167; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1860, p. 295 ff.; *Der Ursprung*, p. 70; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 66; *Lipsius*, Der Gnosticismus. Ersch. u. Gruber's Allg. Encyclop., 1, sect. 71, 1860, p. 90, 152; *Guericke*, H'buch K. G., i. p. 184; *Zundert*, Zeitschr. luth. Theol., 1855, h. 2, 1856, h. 1, 3. The following differ from the view taken by Hilgenfeld: *Baur*, Die chr. Kirche 3 erst. Jahrh., p. 187 f.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1856, p. 121 ff.; *Bunsen*, Hippolytus u. s. Zeit., 1852, i. p. 65 ff.; *Jacobi*, Basilides Phil. Gnost. ex. Hippolyti lib. nuper reperto illustr., 1852; *Uhlhorn*, Das Basilidianische System, u. s. w., 1855.

<sup>2</sup> Adv. Hær., i. 24.

<sup>3</sup> Stromata, vi. 3.

<sup>4</sup> *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 66; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 69 ff.; *Rumpf*, Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 18 ff.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 388 ff.; *Zeller*, Apostelgesch., p. 65 f.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1853, p. 148 ff.

<sup>5</sup> And very little from Tischendorf.

<sup>6</sup> On the Canon, p. 256.

Synoptics. The formulæ (as τὸ εἰρημένον to that compared with Luke i. 35, and ὡς γέγραπται, ἡ γραφή with references compared with some of the Epistles) which accompany these quotations, and to which Canon Westcott points as an indication that the New Testament writings were already recognized as Holy Scripture,<sup>1</sup> need no special attention, because, as it cannot be shown that the expressions were used by Basilides himself at all, they do not come into question. If anything, however, were required to complete the evidence that these quotations are not from the works of Basilides himself, but from later writings by his followers, it would be the use of such formulæ, for as the writings of pseudo-Ignatius, Polycarp, Justin Martyr, Papias, Hegesippus, and others of the Fathers in several ways positively demonstrate, the New Testament writings were not admitted, even amongst orthodox Fathers, to the rank of Holy Scripture, until a very much later period.<sup>2</sup>

## 2.

Much of what has been said with regard to the claim which is laid to Basilides, by some apologists, as a witness for the Gospels and the existence of a New Testament Canon, and the manner in which that claim is advanced, likewise applies to Valentinus, another Gnostic leader, who, about the year 140, came from Alexandria to Rome and flourished till about A.D. 160.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 256.

<sup>2</sup> Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 69; Zeller, Die Apostelgesch., p. 65, anm. 3; Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 148.

<sup>3</sup> Irenæus, Adv. Hær., iii. 4, § 3; Eusebius, H. E., iv. 11; Baur, Gesch. chr. Kirche, i. p. 196; Anger, Synops. Ev. Proleg., p. xxxv.; Bleck, Einl. N. T., p. 227; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 38; Davidson, Introd. N. T., ii.

Very little remains of the writings of this Gnostic, and we gain our only knowledge of them from a few short quotations in the works of Clement of Alexandria, and some doubtful fragments preserved by others. We shall presently have occasion to refer more directly to these, and need not here more particularly mention them.

Tischendorf, the self-constituted modern Defensor fidei,<sup>1</sup> asserts, with an assurance which can scarcely be characterized otherwise than as an unpardonable calculation upon the ignorance of his readers, that Valentinus used the whole of our four Canonical Gospels. To do him full justice, we shall as much as possible give his own words; and, although we set aside systematically all discussion regarding the fourth Gospel for separate treatment hereafter, we must, in order to convey the full sense of Dr. Tischendorf's proceeding, commence with a sentence regarding that Gospel. Referring to a statement of Irenæus, that the followers of Valentinus made use of the fourth Gospel, Tischendorf continues: "Hippolytus confirms and completes the statement of Irenæus, for he quotes several expressions of John, which Valentinus employed. This occurs in the clearest way, in the case of John x. 8; for Hippolytus writes: 'Because the prophets and the law, according to the doctrine of Valentinus, were only filled with a subordinate and foolish spirit, Valentinus says: On account of this, the Saviour says: All who came before me are thieves and robbers.'"<sup>2</sup> Now this, to begin with, is a deliberate

p. 390; *Guericke*, H'buch K. G., i. p. 184; *Schotten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 67; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 243; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 43; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 258 f.

<sup>1</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1865, p. 329.

<sup>2</sup> Die Angabe des Irenäus bestärkt und vervollständigt Hippolytus, denn er führt einzelne Johanneische Aussprüche an, welche Valentinus

falsification of the text of the Philosophumena, which reads : "Therefore all the Prophets and the Law have spoken by reason of the Demiurge, a foolish God, he says, (they themselves being) foolish, knowing nothing. On this account, he says, the Saviour saith : All who came before me," &c. &c.<sup>1</sup> There is no mention whatever of the name of Valentinus in the passage, and, as we shall presently show, there is no direct reference in the whole chapter to Valentinus himself. The introduction of his name in this manner into the text, without a word of explanation, is highly reprehensible. It is true that in a note Tischendorf gives a closer translation of the passage, without, however, any explanation ; and here again he adds, in parenthesis to the "says he," "namely, Valentinus." Such a note, however, which would probably be unread by a majority of readers, does not rectify the impression conveyed by so positive and emphatic an assertion as is conveyed by the alteration in the text.

Tischendorf continues : "And as the Gospel of John, so also were the other Gospels used by Valentinus. According to the statement of Irenæus (I. 7, § 4), he found the said subordinate spirit, which he calls Demiurge, Masterworker, emblematically represented by the Centurion of Capernaum (Matt. viii. 9, Luke vii. 8) ; in the dead and resuscitated twelve years old daughter of Jairus

benutzt hat. Am deutlichsten geschieht dies mit Joh. x. 8 ; denn Hippolytus schreibt : Weil die Propheten und das Gesetz, nach Valentins Lehre, nur von einem untergeordneten und thörichten Geiste erfüllt waren, so sagt Valentin : Eben deshalb spricht der Erlöser : Alle die vor mir gekommen sind, sind Diebe und Mörder gewesen." Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 44.

<sup>1</sup> Πάντες οὖν οἱ προφῆται καὶ ὁ νόμος ἐλάλησαν ἀπὸ τοῦ δημιουργοῦ, μωροῦ λέγει θεοῦ, μωροὶ οὐδὲν εἶδότες. Διὰ τοῦτο, φησί, λέγει ὁ σωτήρ· Πάντες, κ.τ.λ. *Hippolytus*, Ref. Omn. Hær., vi. 35.

(Luke viii. 41), he recognized a symbol of his 'Wisdom' (Achamoth), the mother of the Masterworker (I. 8, § 2); in like manner, he saw represented in the history of the woman who had suffered twelve years from the bloody issue, and was cured by the Lord (Matt. ix. 20), the sufferings and salvation of his twelfth primitive spirit (Aeon) (I. 3, § 3); the expression of the Lord (Matt. v. 18) on the numerical value of the iota ('the smallest letter') he applied to his ten æons in repose."<sup>1</sup> Now, in every instance where Tischendorf here speaks of Valentinus by the singular "he," Irenæus uses the plural "they," referring not to the original founder of the sect, but to his followers in his own day, and the text is thus again in every instance falsified by the pious zeal of the apologist. In the case of the Centurion: "they say" (λέγουσι) that he is the Demiurge;<sup>2</sup> "they declare" (διηγούνται) that the daughter of Jairus is the type of Achamoth;<sup>3</sup> "they say" (λέγουσι) that the apostasy of Judas points to the passion in connection with the twelfth æon, and also the fact that Jesus suffered in the twelfth month after his baptism; for they will have it (βούλονται) that he only preached for one year. The case of the woman with the bloody issue for twelve years, and the power which went forth from the Son to heal her, "they will have to be Horos" (εἶναι δὲ ταύτης τὸν Ὅρον θελουσιν).<sup>4</sup> In like manner they assert that the ten æons are indicated (σημαίνεσθαι λέγουσι) by the letter "Iota," mentioned in the Saviour's expression, Matt. v. 18.<sup>5</sup> At the end of these and numerous other similar references in this chapter to New Testament

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 44 f.

<sup>2</sup> Irenæus, Adv. Hæer., i. 7, § 4.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, i. 8, § 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, i. 3, § 3.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, i. 3, § 2.

expressions and passages, Irenæus says: "Thus they interpret," &c. (ἐρμηνεύουσιν εἰρησθαι).<sup>1</sup> The plural "they" is employed throughout.

Tischendorf proceeds to give the answer to his statement which is supposed to be made by objectors. "They say: all that has reference to the Gospel of John was not advanced by Valentinus himself, but first by his disciples. And in fact, in Irenæus, 'they—the Valentinians—say,' occurs much oftener than 'he—Valentinus—says.' But who is there so sapient as to draw the line between what the master alone says, and that which the disciples state without in the least repeating the master?"<sup>2</sup> Tischendorf solves the difficulty by referring everything indiscriminately to the master. Now, in reply to these observations, we must remark in the first place that the admission here made by Tischendorf, that Irenæus much more often uses "they say" than "he says" is still quite disingenuous, inasmuch as invariably, and without exception, Irenæus uses the plural in connection with the texts in question. Secondly, it is quite preposterous to argue that a Gnostic, writing about A.D. 185—195, was not likely to use arguments which were never thought of by a Gnostic, writing at the middle of the second century. At the end of the century, the writings of the New Testament had acquired consideration and authority, and Gnostic writers had therefore a reason to refer to them, and to endeavour to show that they supported their peculiar views, which did not exist at all at the time when Valentinus propounded his system. Tischendorf, however, cannot be allowed the benefit even of such a doubt as he insinuates, as to what belongs to the master, and what to the followers. Such

<sup>1</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., i. 3, § 4.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 45.

doubtful testimony could not establish anything, but it is in point of fact also totally excluded by the statement of Irenæus himself.

In the preface to the first book of his great work, Irenæus clearly states the motives and objects for which he writes. He says: "I have considered it necessary, having read the commentaries (*ὑπομνήμασι*) of the disciples of Valentinus, as they call themselves, and having by personal intercourse with some of them apprehended their opinions, to unfold to thee," &c., and he goes on to say that he intends to set forth "the opinions of those who are now teaching heresy; I speak particularly of those round Ptolemæus, whose system is an off-shoot of the school of Valentinus."<sup>1</sup> Nothing could be more explicit than this statement that Irenæus neither intended nor pretended to write upon the works of Valentinus himself, but upon the commentaries of his followers of his own time, with some of whom he had had personal intercourse, and that the system which he intended to attack was that actually being taught in his day by Ptolemæus and his school, the off-shoot from Valentinus. All the quotations to which Tischendorf refers are made within a few pages of this explicit declaration. Immediately after the passage about the Centurion, he says: "such is their system" (*τοιαύτης δὲ τῆς ὑποθέσεως αὐτῶν οὔσης*), and three lines below he states that they derive their views from unwritten sources (*ἐξ ἀγράφων ἀναγινώσκοντες*).<sup>2</sup> The first direct

<sup>1</sup> . . . ἀναγκαῖον ἡγησάμην, ἐντυχὼν τοῖς ὑπομνήμασι τῶν, ὡς αὐτοὶ λέγουσι, Οὐαλεντίνου μαθητῶν, ἐπίοις δὲ αὐτῶν καὶ συμβαλῶν, καὶ καταλαβόμενος τὴν γνώμην αὐτῶν, μηνῦσαι σοι, κ.τ.λ. . . . τὴν τε γνώμην αὐτῶν τῶν νῦν παραδιδασκόντων, λέγω δὴ τῶν περὶ Πτολεμαίων, ἀπάνθισμα οὔσαν τῆς Οὐαλεντίνου σχολῆς, κ.τ.λ. *Irenæus*, Adv. Hæc. Præf., i. § 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, Adv. Hæc., i. 8, § 1.

reference to Valentinus does not occur until after these quotations, and is for the purpose of showing the variation of opinion of his followers. He says: "Let us now see the uncertain opinions of these heretics, for there are two or three of them, how they do not speak alike of the same things, but set forth differently, both statements and names." Then he continues: "The first of the Gnostic heresy, who adapted ancient doctrines to his characteristic teaching, Valentinus, thus defined," &c., &c.<sup>1</sup> And after a brief description of his system, in which no Scriptural allusion occurs, he goes on to compare the views of the rest, and in chap. xii. he returns to Ptolemæus and his followers (*Ὁ Πτολεμαῖος, καὶ οἱ σὺν αὐτῷ, κ.τ.λ.*).

In the preface to Book ii., he again says that he has been exposing the falsity of the followers of Valentinus (*qui sunt a Valentino*) and will proceed to establish what he has advanced; and everywhere he uses the plural "they," with occasional direct references to the followers of Valentinus (*qui sunt a Valentino*).<sup>2</sup> The same course is adopted in Book iii., the plural being systematically used, and the same distinct definition introduced at intervals.<sup>3</sup> And again, in the preface to Book iv. he recapitulates that the preceding books had been written against these, "*qui sunt a Valentino*" (§ 2). In fact, it would almost be impossible for any writer more fre-

<sup>1</sup> *Ἰδωμεν νῦν καὶ τὴν τοῦτων ἄστατον γνώμην, δύο που καὶ τριῶν ὄντων, πῶς περὶ τῶν αὐτῶν οὐ τὰ αὐτὰ λέγουσιν, ἀλλὰ τοῖς πράγμασι καὶ τοῖς ὀνόμασι ἐναντία ἀποφαίνονται. Ὁ μὲν γὰρ πρῶτος ἀπὸ τῆς λεγομένης Γνωστικῆς αἰρέσεως τὰς ἀρχὰς εἰς ἴδιον χαρακτῆρα διδασκαλείου μεθαρμόσας Οὐαλεντίνος, οὕτως ἐξηροφόρησεν, κ.τ.λ. Irenæus, Adv. Hæer., i. 11, § 1.*

<sup>2</sup> As, for instance, ii. 16, § 4.

<sup>3</sup> For instance, "*Secundum autem eos qui sunt a Valentino*," iii. 11, § 2. "*Secundum autem illos*," § 3; "*ab omnibus illos*," § 3. "*Hi autem qui sunt a Valentino*," &c., § 7, *ib.* § 9, &c. &c.

quently and emphatically to show that he is not, as he began by declaring, dealing with the founder of the school himself, but with his followers living and teaching at the time at which he wrote.

Canon Westcott, with whose system of positively enunciating unsupported and controverted statements we are already acquainted, is only slightly outstripped by the German apologist in his misrepresentation of the evidence of Valentinus. It must be stated, however, that, acknowledging, as no doubt he does, that Irenæus never refers to Valentinus himself, Canon Westcott passes over in complete silence the supposed references upon which Tischendorf relies as his only evidence for the use of the Synoptics by that Gnostic. He, however, makes the following extraordinary statement regarding Valentinus: "The fragments of his writings which remain show the same natural and trustful use of Scripture as other Christian works of the same period; and there is no diversity of character in this respect between the quotations given in Hippolytus and those found in Clement of Alexandria. He cites the Epistle to the Ephesians as 'Scripture,' and refers clearly to the Gospels of St. Matthew, St. Luke, and St. John, to the Epistles to the Romans,"<sup>1</sup> &c.

We shall now give the passages which he points out in support of these assertions.<sup>2</sup> The first two are said to occur in the Stromata of the Alexandrian Clement, who professes to quote the very words of a letter of Valentinus to certain people regarding the passions, which are called by the followers of Basilides "the appendages of the soul." The passage is as follows: "But one is good,

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 259 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 260, note 2.

whose advent is through the manifestation of the Son, and by whose power alone the heart can become pure, every spirit of evil being expelled from the heart. For the number of spirits dwelling in it do not allow it to be pure, but each of them performs its own works, often insulting it with unseemly lusts. And the heart appears to be treated like an inn. For such a place has both rents and holes made in it, and is frequently filled with ordure, men abiding brutally in it, and having no thought for the place even as established for others. And in such wise fares the heart, while without thought, being impure, and the dwelling-place of many demons, but so soon as the alone good Father visits it, it is sanctified and flashes through with light, and the possessor of such a heart is blessed, for he shall see God.”<sup>1</sup> According to Canon Westcott this passage contains two of the “clear references” to our Gospels upon which he bases his statement, namely to Matt. v. 8, and to Matt. xix. 17.

Now it is clear that there is no actual quotation from any evangelical work in this passage from the Epistle of Valentinus, and the utmost for which the most zealous apologist could contend is, that there is a slight similarity with some words in the Gospel, and Canon

<sup>1</sup> Εἰς δὲ ἔστιν ἀγαθὸς, οὗ παρρησία (*Grube—Spicil. Patr.* ii. p. 52—suggests παρουσία, which we adopt.) ἡ διὰ τοῦ υἱοῦ φανέρωσις, καὶ δι’ αὐτοῦ μόνου δύναιτο ἂν ἡ καρδιά καθαρὰ γενέσθαι παντὸς πονηροῦ πνεύματος ἐξωθουμένου τῆς καρδίας. πολλὰ γὰρ ἐνοικοῦντα αὐτῇ πνεύματα οὐκ εἰ̄ καθαρεύειν, ἕκαστον δὲ αὐτῶν τὰ ἴδια ἐκτελεῖ ἔργα πολλαχῶς ἐνυβριζόντων ἐπιθυμίας οὐ προσηκούσαις. καὶ μοι δοκεῖ ὅμοιον τι πάσχειν τῷ πανδοχείῳ ἡ καρδιά· καὶ γὰρ ἐκεῖνο κατατιτράται τε καὶ ὀρύττεται καὶ πολλάκις κόπρου πίμπλαται ἀνθρώπων ἀσελγῶς ἐμμενόντων καὶ μηδὲ μίαν πρόνοιαν ποιουμένων τοῦ χωρίου, καθάπερ ἄλλοτρίου καθεστῶτος· τὸν τρόπον τοῦτον καὶ ἡ καρδιά μέχρι μὴ προνοίας τυγχάνει, ἀκάθαρτος οὖσα, πολλῶν οὖσα, δαιμόνων οἰκητήριον, ἐπειδὴν δὲ ἐπισκέψῃται αὐτὴν ὁ μόνος ἀγαθὸς πατήρ, ἡγιασται καὶ φωτὶ διαλύμπει, καὶ οὕτω μακαρίζεται ὁ ἔχων τὴν τοιαύτην καρδίαν, ὅτι ὕψεται τὸν θεόν. *Clem. Al., Strom.,* ii. 20, § 114.

Westcott himself does not venture to call them more than "references." That such distant coincidences should be quoted as the only evidence for the use of the first Gospel shows how weak is his case. At best such vague references could not prove anything, but when the passages to which reference is supposed to be made are examined, it will be apparent that nothing could be more absurd or arbitrary than the claim of reference specially to our Gospel, to the exclusion of the other Gospels then existing, which to our knowledge contained both passages. We may, indeed, go still further, and affirm that if these coincidences are references to any Gospel at all, that Gospel is not the canonical, but one different from it.

The first reference alluded to consists of the following two phrases: "But one is good (*εἰς δὲ ἔστιν ἀγαθός*). . . . the alone good Father" (*ὁ μόνος ἀγαθὸς πατήρ*). This is compared with Matt. xix. 17: <sup>1</sup> "Why askest thou me concerning good? there is one that is good" (*εἰς ἔστιν ὁ ἀγαθός*).<sup>2</sup> Now the passage in the epistle, if a reference to any parallel episode, such as Matt. xix. 17, indicates with certainty the reading: "One is good, the Father." *εἰς ἔστιν ἀγαθός ὁ πατήρ*. There is no such reading in any of our Gospels. But although this reading does not exist in any of the Canonical Gospels, it is well known that it did exist in uncanonical Gospels no longer extant, and that the passage was one upon which various sects of so-called heretics laid great stress. Irenæus quotes it as one of

<sup>1</sup> *Westcott, On the Canon*, p. 260, note 2.

<sup>2</sup> Mark x. 18, and Luke xviii. 18, are linguistically more distant. "Why callest thou me good? There is none good but God only." *οὐδεὶς ἀγαθὸς εἰ μὴ εἰς ὁ θεός*.

the texts to which the Marcosians, who made use of apocryphal Gospels,<sup>1</sup> and notably of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, gave a different colouring: *εἰς ἔστιν ἀγαθός, ὁ πατήρ.*<sup>2</sup> Epiphanius also quotes this reading as one of the variations of the Marcionites: *εἰς ἔστιν ἀγαθός, ὁ θεός, ὁ πατήρ.*<sup>3</sup> Origen, likewise, remarks that this passage is misused by some Heretics: "Velut proprie sibi datum scrutum putant (hæretici) quod dixit Dominus in Evangelio: Nemo bonus nisi unus Deus pater."<sup>4</sup> Justin Martyr quotes the same reading from a source different from our Gospels,<sup>5</sup> *εἰς ἔστιν ἀγαθός ὁ πατήρ μου, κ.τ.λ.,*<sup>6</sup> and in agreement with the repeated similar readings of the Clementine Homilies, which likewise derived it from an extra canonical source,<sup>7</sup> *ὁ γὰρ ἀγαθός εἰς ἔστιν, ὁ πατήρ.*<sup>8</sup> The use of a similar expression by Clement of Alexandria,<sup>9</sup> as well as by Origen, only serves to prove the existence of the reading in extinct Gospels, although it is not found in any MS. of any of our Gospels.

The second of the supposed references is more diffuse: One is good by whose power alone the heart can become pure (*ἡ καρδιά καθαρά γενέσθαι*) . . . but when the alone good Father visits it, it is sanctified and flashes through with light, and the possessor of such a heart is blessed, for he shall see God (*καὶ οὕτω μακαρίζεται ὁ ἔχων τὴν τοιαύτην καρδίαν, ὅτι ὄψεται τὸν θεόν*). This is

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Hær., i. 20, § 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, i. 20, § 2.

<sup>3</sup> Epiphanius, Hær., xlii.; Schol. L. ed. Pet., p. 339.

<sup>4</sup> De Principiis, i. 2, § 13; cf. de Orat., 15; Exhort. ad Mart., 7; Contra Cels., v. 11; cf. Griesbach, Symb. Crit., ii. p. 305, 349, 388.

<sup>5</sup> Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 220 ff.; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 243 ff.

<sup>6</sup> Apol., i. 16.

<sup>7</sup> Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 362 f.; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 321.

<sup>8</sup> Hom., xviii. 1; 3.

<sup>9</sup> οὐδεις ἀγαθός, εἰ μὴ ὁ πατήρ μου, κ.τ.λ. Pædag., i. 8, § 72, cf. § 74; εἰς ἀγαθός ὁ πατήρ. Strom., v. 10, § 64.

compared<sup>1</sup> with Matthew v. 8 : "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God" (*μακάριοι οἱ καθαροὶ τῆ καρδία, ὅτι αὐτοὶ τὸν θεὸν ὄψονται*). It might be argued that this is quite as much a reference to Psalm xxiv. 3-6 as to Matt. v. 8, but even if treated as a reference to the Sermon on the Mount, nothing is more certain than the fact that this discourse had its place in much older forms of the Gospel than our present Canonical Gospels,<sup>2</sup> and that it formed part of the Gospel according to the Hebrews and other evangelical writings in circulation in the early Church. Such a reference as this is absolutely worthless as evidence of special acquaintance with our first Synoptic.<sup>3</sup>

Tischendorf does not appeal at all to these supposed references contained in the passages preserved by Clement, but both the German, and the English apologist join in relying upon the testimony of Hippolytus,<sup>4</sup> with regard to the use of the Gospels by Valentinus, although it must be admitted that the former does so with greater fairness of treatment than Canon Westcott. Tischendorf does refer to, and admit, some of the difficulties of the case, as we shall presently see, whilst Canon Westcott, as in the case of Basilides, boldly makes his assertion, and totally ignores all adverse facts. The only Gospel

<sup>1</sup> *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 260, note 2.

<sup>2</sup> Ewald assigns it to the Spruchsammlung. *Die drei erst. Evv.*, p. 7.

<sup>3</sup> The supposed reference to the Ep. to the Romans i. 20 ; cf. *Clem. Al.*, *Strom.*, iv. 13, § 91, 92, is much more distant than either of the preceding. It is not necessary for us to discuss it, but as Canon Westcott merely gives references to all of the passages without quoting any of the words, a good strong assertion becomes a powerful argument, since few readers have the means of verifying its correctness.

<sup>4</sup> By a misprint Canon Westcott ascribes all his references of Valentinus to the N. T., except three, to the extracts from his writings in the *Stromata* of Clement, although he should have indicated the work of Hippolytus. Cf. *On the Canon*, 1866, p. 260, note 2.

reference which can be adduced even in the *Philosophumena*, exclusive of one asserted to be to the fourth Gospel, which will be separately considered hereafter, is advanced by Canon Westcott, for Tischendorf does not refer to it, but confines himself solely to the supposed reference to the fourth Gospel. The passage is the same as one also imputed to Basilides: "The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee;" which happens to agree with the words in Luke i. 35; but, as we have seen in connection with Justin, there is good reason for concluding that the narrative to which it belongs was contained in other Gospels.<sup>1</sup> In this instance, however, the quotation is carried further and presents an important variation from the text of Luke. "The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee; therefore the thing begotten of thee shall be called holy"<sup>2</sup> (διὸ τὸ γεννώμενον ἐκ σοῦ ἅγιον κληθήσεται). The reading of Luke is: "Therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God" (διὸ καὶ τὸ γεννώμενον ἅγιον κληθήσεται υἱὸς θεοῦ). It is probable that the passage referred to in connection with the followers of Basilides may have ended in the same way as this, and been derived from the same source. Nothing, however, can be clearer than the fact that this quotation, by whoever made, is not taken from our third Synoptic, inasmuch as there does not exist a single MS. which contains such a passage. We again, however, come to the question: Who really made the quotations which Hippolytus introduces so indefinitely?

We have already, in speaking of Basilides, pointed out

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 141 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Hippolytus*, *Adv. Hæc.*, vi. 35.

the loose manner in which Hippolytus and other early writers, in dealing with different schools of heretics, indifferently quote the founder or his followers without indicating the precise person quoted. This practice is particularly apparent in the work of Hippolytus when the followers of Valentinus are in question. Tischendorf himself is obliged to admit this. He says: "Even though it be also incontestable that the author (Hippolytus) does not always sharply distinguish between the sect and the founder of the sect, does this apply to the present case?"<sup>1</sup> He denies that it does in the instance to which he refers, but he admits the general fact. In the same way another apologist of the fourth Gospel (and as the use of that Gospel is maintained in consequence of a quotation in the very same chapter as we are now considering, only a few lines higher up, both third and fourth are in the same position) is forced to admit: "The use of the Gospel of John by Valentinus cannot so certainly be proved from our refutation-writing (the work of Hippolytus). Certainly in the statement of these doctrines it gives abstracts, which contain an expression of John (x. 8), and there cannot be any doubt that this is taken from some writing of the sect. But the apologist, in his expressions regarding the Valentinian doctrines, does not seem to confine himself to one and the same work, but to have alternately made use of different writings of the school, for which reason we cannot say anything as to the age of this quotation, and from this testimony, therefore, we merely have further confirmation that the Gospel was early<sup>2</sup> (?) used in the

<sup>1</sup> Wenn nun auch unbestreitbar ist, dass der Verfasser nicht immer streng zwischen der Sekte sondert und dem Urheber der Sekte, findet dies auf den vorliegenden Fall Anwendung? Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 46.

<sup>2</sup> Why "early"? since Hippolytus writes about A.D. 225.

School of the Valentinians,"<sup>1</sup> &c. Of all this not a word from Canon Westcott, who adheres to his system of bare assertion.

Now we have already quoted<sup>2</sup> the opening sentence of Book vi. 35, of the work ascribed to Hippolytus, in which the quotation from John x. 8, referred to above occurs, and ten lines further on, with another intermediate and equally indefinite "he says" (*φησί*), occurs the supposed quotation from Luke i. 35, which, equally with that from the fourth Gospel, must, according to Weizsäcker, be abandoned as a quotation which can fairly be ascribed to Valentinus himself, whose name is not once mentioned in the whole chapter. A few lines below the quotation, however, a passage occurs which throws much light upon the question. After explaining the views of the Valentinians regarding the verse: "The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee," &c., the writer thus proceeds: "Regarding this there is among them (*αὐτοῖς*) a great question, a cause both of schism and dissension. And hence their (*αὐτῶν*) doctrine has become divided, and the one doctrine according to them (*κατ' αὐτούς*) is called Eastern (*ἀνατολική*) and the other Italian. They from Italy, of whom is Heracleon and Ptolemæus, say (*φασί*) that the body of Jesus was animal, and on account of this, on the occasion of the baptism, the Holy Spirit like a dove came down—that is, the Logos from the Mother above, Sophia—and became joined to the animal, and raised him from the dead. This, *he says* (*φησί*) is the declaration (*τὸ εἰρημένον*),"—and here be it observed we come to another of the "clear references" which Canon Westcott ventures, deliberately and

<sup>1</sup> Weizsäcker, *Unters. üb. d. evang. Gesch.*, 1864, p. 234.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. ii. p. 57, "Therefore all the Prophets," &c.

without a word of doubt, to attribute to Valentinus himself,<sup>1</sup>—"This, he says, is the declaration: 'He who raised Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies,'<sup>2</sup> indeed animal. For the earth has come under a curse: 'For dust, he says (*φησί*) thou art and unto dust shalt thou return.'<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, those from the East (*οἱ δ' αὖ ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνατολῆς*), of whom is Axionicus and Bardesanes, say (*λέγουσιν*) that the body of the Saviour was spiritual, for the Holy Spirit came upon Mary, that is the Sophia and the power of the Highest,"<sup>4</sup> &c.

In this passage we have a good illustration of the mode in which the writer introduces his quotations with the subjectless "he says." Here he is conveying the divergent opinions of the two parties of Valentinians, and explaining the peculiar doctrines of the Italian school "of whom is Heracleon and Ptolemæus," and he suddenly departs from the plural "they" to quote the passage from Romans viii. 11, in support of their views with the singular "he says." Nothing can be more obvious than that "he" cannot possibly be Valentinus himself, for the schism is represented as taking place

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 260.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Rom. viii. 11.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Gen. iii. 19.

<sup>4</sup> Περὶ τούτου ζήτησις μεγάλη ἐστὶν αὐτοῖς καὶ σχισμάτων καὶ διαφορῶν ἀφορμή. Καὶ γέγονεν ἐνεύθεν ἡ διδασκαλία αὐτῶν διηρημένη, καὶ καλεῖται ἡ μὲν ἀνατολικὴ τῆς διδασκαλίας κατ' αὐτοῦς, ἡ δὲ Ἰταλιωτικὴ. Οἱ μὲν ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰταλίας, ὧν ἐστὶν Ἡρακλέων καὶ Πτολεμαῖος, ψυχικὸν φασὶ τὸ σῶμα τοῦ Ἰησοῦ γεγονέναι, καὶ διὰ τοῦτο ἐπὶ τοῦ βυπτίσματος τὸ πνεῦμα ὡς περιστέρῃ κατελήλυθε, τουτέστιν ὁ λόγος ὁ τῆς μητρὸς ἄνωθεν τῆς σοφίας, καὶ γέγονε τῷ ψυχικῷ, καὶ ἐγήγερκεν αὐτὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν. Τοῦτο ἐστὶ, φησί, τὸ εἰρημένον· Ὁ ἐγείρας Χριστὸν ἐκ νεκρῶν, ζωοποιήσει καὶ τὰ θνητὰ σώματα ὑμῶν, ἧτοι ψυχικά. Ὁ χοῦς γὰρ ὑπὸ κατάραν ἐλήλυθε. Γῆ γὰρ, φησὶν, εἶ, καὶ εἰς γῆν ἀπελεύση. Οἱ δ' αὖ ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνατολῆς λέγουσιν, ὧν ἐστὶν Ἀξιώνικος καὶ Ἀρδησιάνης, ὅτι πνευματικὸν ἦν τὸ σῶμα τοῦ σωτήρος· πνεῦμα γὰρ ἅγιον ἦλθεν ἐπὶ τὴν Μαρίαν, τουτέστιν ἡ σοφία, καὶ ἡ δύναμις τοῦ ἰψίστου, κ.τ.λ. *Hierolytus*, Ref. Omn. Patr., vi. 35.

amongst his followers, and the quotation is evidently made by one of them to support the views of his party in the schism, but whether Hippolytus is quoting from Heracleon or Ptolemæus or some other of the Italian<sup>1</sup> school, there is no means of knowing. Of all this, again, nothing is said by Canon Westcott, who quietly asserts without hesitation or argument, that Valentinus himself is the person who here makes the quotation.

We have already said that the name of Valentinus does not occur once in the whole chapter (vi. 35) which we have been examining, and if we turn back we find that the preceding context confirms the result at which we have arrived, that the *φησί* has no reference to the Founder himself, but is applicable only to some later member of his school, most probably contemporary with Hippolytus. In vi. 21, Hippolytus discusses the heresy of Valentinus, which he traces to Pythagoras and Plato, but in Ch. 29 he passes from direct reference to the Founder to deal entirely with his school. This is so manifest, that the learned editors of the work of Hippolytus, Professors Duncker and Schneidewin, alter the preceding heading at that part from "Valentinus" to "Valentiniani." At the beginning of Ch. 29 Hippolytus writes: "Valentinus, therefore, and Heracleon and Ptolemæus and the whole school of these (heretics) . . . have laid down as the fundamental principle of their teaching the arithmetical system. For according to these," &c. And a few lines lower down: "There is discernible amongst them, however, considerable difference of opinion. For many of them, in order that

<sup>1</sup>The quotation from an Epistle to the Romans by the Italian school is appropriate.

the Pythagorean doctrine of Valentinus may be wholly pure, suppose, &c., but others," &c. He shortly after says that he will proceed to state their doctrines as they themselves teach them (*μνημονεύσαντες ὡς ἐκῆνοι διδάσκουσιν ἐροῦμεν*). He then continues: "There is, he says (*φησί*)," &c. &c., quoting evidently one of these followers who want to keep the doctrine of Valentinus pure, or of the "others," although without naming him, and three lines further on again, without any preparation, returning to the plural "they say" (*λέγουσι*) and so on through the following chapters, "he says" alternating with the plural, as the author apparently has in view something said by individuals or merely expresses general views. In the Chapter (34) preceding that which we have principally been examining, Hippolytus begins by referring to "the Quaternion according to Valentinus," but after five lines on it, he continues: "These things are what they say: *ταῦτά ἐστιν ἃ λέγουσιν*,"<sup>1</sup> and then goes on to speak of "their whole teaching" (*τὴν πᾶσαν αὐτῶν διδασκαλίαν*), and lower down he distinctly sets himself to discuss the opinions of the school in the plural: "Thus these (Valentinians) subdivide the contents of the Pleroma," &c. (*οὕτως οὗτοι, κ.τ.λ.*), and continues with an occasional "according to them" (*κατ' αὐτοὺς*) until, without any name being mentioned, he makes use of the indefinite "he says" to introduce the quotation referred to by Canon Westcott as a citation by Valentinus himself of "the Epistle to the Ephesians as Scripture."<sup>2</sup> "This is, he says, what is written in Scripture," and there follows a quotation which, it may merely be mentioned as Canon Westcott says nothing of it, differs considerably from the passage in the Epistle

<sup>1</sup> vi. 34.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 260.

iii. 14—18. Immediately after, another of Canon Westcott's quotations from 1 Cor. ii. 14, is given, with the same indefinite "he says," and in the same way, without further mention of names, the quotations in Ch. 35 compared with John x. 8, and Luke i. 35. There is, therefore, absolutely no ground whatever for referring these *φησί* to Valentinus himself; but, on the contrary; Hippolytus shows in the clearest way that he is discussing the views of the later writers of the sect, and it is one of these, and not the Founder himself, whom in his usual indefinite way he thus quotes.

We have been forced by these bald and unsupported assertions of apologists to go at such length into these questions at the risk of being very wearisome to our readers, but it has been our aim as much as possible to make no statements without placing before those who are interested the materials for forming an intelligent opinion. Any other course would be to meet mere assertion by simple denial, and it is only by bold and unsubstantiated statements which have been simply and in good faith accepted by ordinary readers who have not the opportunity, if they have even the will, to test their veracity, that apologists have so long held their ground. Our results regarding Valentinus so far may be stated as follows: the quotations which without any explanation are so positively and disingenuously imputed to Valentinus are not made by him, but by later writers of his school;<sup>1</sup> and, moreover, the passages which are indicated by the English apologist as references to our two

<sup>1</sup> *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 68 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 345, anm. 5; *Rumpf*, Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 17 ff.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 390, p. 516; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 65 ff.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1853, p. 151 ff.; *Bretschneider*, Probabilia de Evang. et Ep. Joannis, 1820, p. 212 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 387, anm. 1; *Volkmar*, Der

Synoptic Gospels not only do not emanate from Valentinus, but do not agree with our Gospels, and are derived from other sources.<sup>1</sup>

The remarks of Canon Westcott with regard to the connection of Valentinus with our New Testament are on a par with the rest of his assertions. He says: "There is no reason to suppose that Valentinus differed from Catholic writers on the Canon of the New Testament."<sup>2</sup> We might ironically adopt this sentence, for as no writer whatever of the time of Valentinus, as we have seen, recognized any New Testament Canon at all, he certainly did not in this respect differ from the other writers of that period. Canon Westcott relies upon the statement of Tertullian, but even here, although he quotes the Latin passage in a note, he does not fully give its real sense in his text. He writes in immediate continuation of the quotation given above: "Tertullian says that in this he differed from Marcion, that he at least professed to accept 'the whole instrument,' perverting the interpretation, where Marcion mutilated the text." Now the assertion of Tertullian has a very important modification, which, to any one acquainted with the very unscrupulous boldness of the "Great African" in dealing with religious controversy, is extremely significant. He does not make the assertion positively and of his own knowledge, but modifies it by saying: "Nor, indeed, if Valentinus uses the whole instrument, as it seems (*neque enim si Valentinus*

Ursprung, p. 70 f.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1854, p. 108 ff., 125 f.; *Weizsäcker*, *Unters. evang. Gesch.*, p. 234; *J. J. Tayler*, *The Fourth Gospel*, 1867, p. 57.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Zeller*, *Die Apostelgesch.*, p. 67 f.; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 387, anm. 1.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 259.

integro instrumento uti videtur),”<sup>1</sup> &c. Tertullian evidently knew very little of Valentinus himself, and had probably not read his writings at all.<sup>2</sup> His treatise against the Valentinians is avowedly not original, but, as he himself admits, is compiled from the writings of Justin, Miltiades, Irenæus, and Proclus.<sup>3</sup> Tertullian would not have hesitated to affirm anything of this kind positively, had there been any ground for it, but his assertion is at once too uncertain, and the value of his statements of this nature much too small for such a remark to have any weight as evidence.<sup>4</sup> Besides, by his own showing Valentinus altered Scripture (sine dubio emendans),<sup>5</sup> which he could not have done had he recognized it as of canonical authority.<sup>6</sup> We cannot, however, place any reliance upon criticism emanating from Tertullian.

All that Origen seems to know on this subject is that the followers of Valentinus (τοὺς ἀπὸ Οὐαλεντίνου) have altered the form of the Gospel (μεταχαράξαντες τὸ εὐαγγέλιον).<sup>7</sup> Clement of Alexandria, however, informs us that Valentinus, like Basilides, professed to have direct traditions from the Apostles, his teacher being Theodas, a disciple of the Apostle Paul.<sup>8</sup> If he had known any Gospels which he believed to have apostolic authority, there would clearly not have been any need of such tradition. Hippolytus distinctly affirms that Valentinus derived his system from Pythagoras and Plato,

<sup>1</sup> De Præscrip. Hær., 38.

<sup>2</sup> Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 67; Davidson, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 390.

<sup>3</sup> Adv. Valent., 5.

<sup>4</sup> Baur, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 357; Davidson, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 390; Reuss, Hist. du Canon, p. 70.

<sup>5</sup> De Præscrip. Hær., 30.

<sup>6</sup> Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 38.

<sup>7</sup> Contra Cels., ii. 27.

<sup>8</sup> Strom., vii. 17, § 106.

and "not from the Gospels" (*οὐκ ἀπὸ τῶν εὐαγγελίων*), and that consequently he might more properly be considered a Pythagorean and Platonist than a Christian.<sup>1</sup> Irenæus, in like manner, asserts that the Valentinians derive their views from unwritten or unscriptural sources (*ἐξ ἀγράφων ἀναγνώσκοντες*),<sup>2</sup> and he accuses them of rejecting the Gospels, for after enumerating them,<sup>3</sup> he continues: "When, indeed, they are refuted out of the Scriptures, they turn round in accusation of these same Scriptures, as though they were not correct, nor of authority . . . For (they say) that it (the truth) was not conveyed by written records but *vivâ voce*."<sup>4</sup> In the same chapter he goes on to show that the Valentinians not only reject the authority of Scripture, but also reject ecclesiastical tradition. He says: "But, again, when we refer them to that tradition which is from the Apostles, which has been preserved through a succession of Presbyters in the Churches, they are opposed to tradition, affirming themselves wiser not only than Presbyters, but even than the Apostles, in that they have discovered the uncorrupted truth. For (they say) the Apostles mixed up matters which are of the law with the words of the Saviour, &c. . . . It comes to this, they neither consent to Scripture nor to tradition. (*Evenit itaque, neque Scripturis jam, neque Traditioni consentire eos.*)"<sup>5</sup> We find, therefore, that even in the time of Irenæus the Valentinians rejected the writings

<sup>1</sup> Ref. Omn. Hær., vi. 29; cf. vi. 21.

<sup>2</sup> Adv. Hær., i. 8, § 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 1, § 1.

<sup>4</sup> Cum enim ex Scripturis arguuntur, in accusationem convertuntur ipsarum Scripturarum, quasi non recte habeant, neque sint ex auctoritate. . . . Non enim per litteras traditam illam, sed per vivam vocem, &c. Irenæus, Adv. Hær., iii. 2, § 1.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 2, § 2.

of the New Testament as authoritative documents, which they certainly would not have done had the Founder of their sect himself acknowledged them. So far from this being the case, there was absolutely no New Testament Canon for Valentinus himself to deal with,<sup>1</sup> and his perfectly orthodox contemporaries recognized no other Holy Scriptures than those of the Old Testament.

Irenæus, however, goes still further, and states that the Valentinians of his time not only had many Gospels, but that they possessed one peculiar to themselves. "Those indeed who are followers of Valentinus," he says, "on the other hand, being without any fear, putting forth their own compositions, boast that they have more Gospels than there are. Indeed they have proceeded so far in audacity that they entitle their not long written work the Gospel of Truth, agreeing in nothing with the Gospels of the Apostles, so that there is no Gospel according to them which is not blasphemous."<sup>2</sup> It follows clearly, from the very name of the Valentinian Gospel, that they did not consider that others contained the truth,<sup>3</sup> and indeed Irenæus himself perceived this, for he continues: "For if what is published by them be the Gospel of Truth, but is dissimilar from those which have been delivered to us by the Apostles, any may perceive who please, as is demonstrated by these very Scriptures, that that which has been handed down from the Apostles is not the Gospel of Truth."<sup>4</sup> These passages speak for

<sup>1</sup> *Reuss*, Hist. du Canon, p. 69 f.; *Credner*, Gesch. N. T. Kan., p. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Hi vero, qui sunt a Valentino, iterum existentes extra omnem timorem, suas conscriptiones proferentes, plura habere gloriantur, quam sint ipsa Evangelia. Siquidem in tantum processerunt audacie, uti quod ab his non olim conscriptum est, veritatis Evangelium titulent, in nihilo conveniens apostolorum Evangeliiis, ut nec Evangelium quidem sit apud eos sine blasphemia. *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 11, § 9.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 38, f.

<sup>4</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 11, § 9.

themselves, and we need not further comment upon the statements of Canon Westcott. It has been suggested that the "Gospel of Truth" was a harmony of the four Gospels.<sup>1</sup> This, however, cannot by any possibility have been the case, inasmuch as Irenæus distinctly says that it did not agree in anything with the Gospels of the Apostles. We have been compelled to devote too much space to Valentinus, and we now leave him with the certainty that in nothing does he afford any evidence even of the existence of our Synoptic Gospels.

<sup>1</sup> *Bleek, Einl. N. T.*, p. 638.

## CHAPTER VII.

## MARCION.

WE must now turn to the great Heresiarch of the second century, Marcion, and consider the evidence regarding our Gospels which may be derived from what we know of him. The importance, and at the same time the difficulty, of arriving at a just conclusion from the materials within our reach have rendered Marcion's Gospel the object of very elaborate criticism, and the discussion of its actual character has continued with fluctuating results for nearly a century.

Marcion was born at Sinope, in Pontus, of which place his father was Bishop,<sup>1</sup> and although it is said that he aspired to the first place in the Church of Rome,<sup>2</sup> the Presbyters refused him communion on account of his peculiar views of Christianity. We shall presently more fully refer to these opinions, but here it will be sufficient to say that he objected to what he considered the debasement of true Christianity by Jewish elements, and he upheld the teaching of Paul alone, in opposition to that of all the other Apostles, whom he accused of mixing up matters of the law with the Gospel of Christ, and

<sup>1</sup> *Epiphanius*, Hær., xlii. 1 ed. Petav., p. 302; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 125; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 40 f.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 57; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 272.

<sup>2</sup> *Epiph.*, Hær., xlii. 1.

falsifying Christianity,<sup>1</sup> as Paul himself had protested.<sup>2</sup> He came to Rome about A.D. 139—142,<sup>3</sup> and continued teaching for some twenty years.<sup>4</sup> His high personal character and elevated views produced a powerful effect upon his time,<sup>5</sup> and, although during his own lifetime and long afterwards vehemently and with every opprobrious epithet denounced by ecclesiastical writers, his opinions were so widely adopted that in the time of Epiphanius his followers were said to be found throughout the whole world.<sup>6</sup>

Marcion is said to have recognized as his sources of Christian doctrine, besides tradition, a single Gospel and ten Epistles of Paul, which in his collection stood in the following order;—Epistle to Galatians, Corinthians (2), Romans, Thessalonians (2), Ephesians (which he had with

<sup>1</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 2, § 2; cf. 12, § 12; *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 2, 3; cf. i. 20; *Origen*, in Joann. T. v., § 4; *Neander*, Allg. K. G., 1843, ii. p. 815 f.; cf. p. 795; *Schleiermacher*, Lit. nachlass iii. Sämmtl. Werke, viii.; Einl. N. T., 1845, p. 214 f.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 273 f.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. i. 6 ff.; cf. ii. 4 ff., 11 ff.; cf. 2 Cor. xi. 1 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. xxiv.; *Baur*, Gesch. chr. Kirche, i. p. 196; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 126; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 562; *Burton*, Lectures on Eccl. History of first Three Centuries, ii. p. 105 ff.; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 40 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 21 f.; *Lipsius*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1867, p. 75 ff.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 244; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 73; *Schleiermacher*, Gesch. chr. Kirche, Sämmtl. Werke, 1840, xi. 1 abth., p. 107; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 57; *Volkmar*, Theol. Jahrb., 1850, p. 120, *ib.*, 1855, p. 270 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 273. The accounts of the Fathers are careless and conflicting. Cf. *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., i. 19; *Epiph.*, Hær., xlii. 1; *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 4, § 3; *Clem. Al.*, Strom., vii. 17, A.D. 140—150, *Bertholdt*, Einl. A. und N. T., i. p. 103.

<sup>4</sup> *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 244; *Lipsius*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1867; p. 75 ff.; *Volkmar*, Theol. Jahrb., 1855, p. 270 ff.

<sup>5</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 40; *Schleiermacher*, Sämmtl. Werke, viii.; Einl. N. T., 1845, p. 64; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 272 f.

<sup>6</sup> *Epiph.*, Hær., xlii. 1.

the superscription "to the Laodiceans"),<sup>1</sup> Colossians, Philippians, and Philemon.<sup>2</sup> None of the other books which now form part of the canonical New Testament were either mentioned or recognized by Marcion.<sup>3</sup> This is the oldest collection of Apostolic writings of which there is any trace,<sup>4</sup> but there was at that time no other "Holy Scripture" than the Old Testament, and no New Testament Canon had yet been imagined. Marcion neither claimed canonical authority for these writings,<sup>5</sup> nor did he associate with them any idea of divine inspiration.<sup>6</sup> We have already seen the animosity expressed by contemporaries of Marcion against the Apostle Paul.

The principal interest in connection with the collection of Marcion, however, centres in his single Gospel, the nature, origin, and identity of which have long been actively and minutely discussed by learned men of all shades of opinion with very varying results. The work itself is unfortunately no longer extant, and our only knowledge of it is derived from the bitter and very inaccurate opponents of Marcion. It seems to have

<sup>1</sup> *Tertullian*, *Adv. Marc.*, v. 11, 17; *Epiph.*, *Hær.*, xlii. 9; cf. 10, *Schol.* xl.

<sup>2</sup> *Tertullian*, *Adv. Marc.*, v.; *Epiph.*, *Hær.*, xlii. 9. (Epiphanius transposes the order of the last two Epistles.)

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 42; *Hug*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 68 ff.; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 275.

<sup>4</sup> *Baur*, *Paulus*, i. p. 277 f.; *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 76 f.; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 57; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 272.

<sup>5</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 42 f., 44 f.; *Gesch. N. T. Kan.*, p. 23; *Bunsen*, *Bibelwerk*, viii. p. 563; *Bleek*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 126; *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Kanon*, p. 22 f.; *Köstlin*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1851, p. 151; *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 244, p. 286; *Hist. du Canon*, p. 72; *Ritschl*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1851, p. 529; *Schotten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 74; *Hot Paulinisch Evangelie*, p. 6.

<sup>6</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 45 f.

borne much the same analogy to our third Canonical Gospel which existed between the Gospel according to the Hebrews and our first Synoptic.<sup>1</sup> The Fathers, whose uncritical and, in such matters, prejudiced character led them to denounce every variation from their actual texts as a mere falsification, and without argument to assume the exclusive authenticity and originality of our Gospels, which towards the beginning of the third century had acquired wide circulation in the Church, vehemently stigmatized Marcion as an audacious adulterator of the Gospel, and affirmed his evangelical work to be merely a mutilated and falsified version of the "Gospel according to Luke."<sup>2</sup>

This view continued to prevail, almost without question or examination, till towards the end of the eighteenth century, when Biblical criticism began to exhibit the earnestness and activity which have ever since more or less characterized it. Semler first abandoned the prevalent tradition, and, after analyzing the evidence, he concluded that Marcion's Gospel and Luke's were different versions of an earlier work,<sup>3</sup> and that the so-called heretical Gospel was one of the numerous Gospels from amongst which the Canonical had been selected by the Church.<sup>4</sup> Griesbach about the same time also rejected the ruling opinion, and denied the close relationship usually asserted to exist between the two Gospels.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 260.

<sup>2</sup> *Irenaeus*, Adv. Hær., i. 27, § 2; iii. 12, § 12; *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 2—6; *Epiphanius*, Hær., xlii. 9, 11; *Origen*, Contra Cels., ii. 27; *Theodoret*, Hær. fab., i. 24.

<sup>3</sup> Vorrede zu Townson's Abhandl. üb. d. vier Evv., 1783.

<sup>4</sup> Neuer Versuch, die Gemeinnützige Auslegung u. anwend. der N. T. zu befördern, 1786, p. 162 f.; cf. Prolegg. in Ep. ad Galatas.

<sup>5</sup> Curæ in hist. textus epist. Pauli, 1799, sect. iii., Opuscula Academica, ii. p. 124 ff.

Löffler<sup>1</sup> and Corrodi<sup>2</sup> strongly supported Semler's conclusion, that Marcion was no mere falsifier of Luke's Gospel, and J. E. C. Schmidt<sup>3</sup> went still further, and asserted that Marcion's Gospel was the genuine Luke, and our actual Gospel a later version of it with alterations and additions. Eichhorn,<sup>4</sup> after a fuller and more exhaustive examination, adopted similar views; he repudiated the statements of Tertullian regarding Marcion's Gospel as utterly untrustworthy, asserting that he had not that work itself before him at all, and he maintained that Marcion's Gospel was the more original text and one of the sources of Luke. Bolten,<sup>5</sup> Bertholdt,<sup>6</sup> Schleiermacher,<sup>7</sup> and D. Schultz<sup>8</sup> likewise maintained that Marcion's Gospel was by no means a mutilated version of Luke, but, on the contrary, an independent original Gospel. A similar conclusion was arrived at by Gieseler,<sup>9</sup> but later, after Hahn's criticism, he abandoned it, and adopted the opinion that Marcion's Gospel was constructed out of Luke.<sup>10</sup>

On the other hand, the traditional view was maintained

<sup>1</sup> Marcionem Pauli epist. et Lucæ evang. adulterasse dubitatur, 1788, in Velthusen Kuinzel et Ruperti Comment. Theologicæ, 1794, i. pp. 180—218.

<sup>2</sup> Versuch einer Beleuchtung d. Gesch. des jüd. u. Christl. Bibelkanons, 1792, ii. p. 158 ff. 169.

<sup>3</sup> Ueber das ächte Evang. des Lucas, in Henke's Mag. für Religionsphilos., u. s. w., iii. 1796, p. 468 ff., 482 f., 507 f.

<sup>4</sup> Einl. N. T., 1820, i. pp. 43—84.

<sup>5</sup> Bericht des Lucas von Jesu dem Messia. Vorbericht, 796, p. 29 f.

<sup>6</sup> Einl. A. u. N. T., 1813, iii. p. 1293 ff.

<sup>7</sup> Sammlt. Werke, viii.; Einl. N. T., 1845, p. 64 f., 197 f., 214 f.

<sup>8</sup> Theol. Stud. u. Krit., 1829, 3, pp. 586—595.

<sup>9</sup> Entst. schr. Evv., 1818, p. 24 ff.

<sup>10</sup> Recons. d. Hahn's Das Ev. Marcion's in Hall. Allg. Litt. Z., 1823, p. 225 ff.; K. G., i. § 45.

by Storr,<sup>1</sup> Arneth,<sup>2</sup> Hug,<sup>3</sup> Neander,<sup>4</sup> and Gratz,<sup>5</sup> although with little originality of investigation or argument; and Paulus<sup>6</sup> sought to reconcile both views by admitting that Marcion had before him the Gospel of Luke, but denying that he mutilated it, arguing that Tertullian did not base his arguments on the actual Gospel of Marcion, but upon his work, the "Antithesis." Hahn,<sup>7</sup> however, undertook a more exhaustive examination of the problem, attempting to reconstruct the text of Marcion's Gospel<sup>8</sup> from the statements of Tertullian and Epiphanius, and he came to the conclusion that the work was a mere version, with omissions and alterations made by the Heresiarch in the interest of his system, of the third Canonical Gospel. Olshausen<sup>9</sup> arrived at the same result, and with more or less of modification but no detailed argument, similar opinions were expressed by Credner,<sup>10</sup> De Wette,<sup>11</sup> and others.<sup>12</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Zweck d. Evang. Gesch. u. Br. Johan., 1786, pp. 254—265.

<sup>2</sup> Ueber d. Bekantsch. Marcion's mit. u. Kanon, u. s. w., 1809.

<sup>3</sup> Einl. N. T., 1847, i. p. 64 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Genet. Entwickl. d. vorn. Gnost. Syst., 1818, p. 311 ff.; cf. Allg. K. G., 1843, ii. pp. 792—816.

<sup>5</sup> Krit. Unters. üb. Marcion's Evang., 1818.

<sup>6</sup> Theol. exeg. Conserv., 1822, Lief. i. p. 115 ff.

<sup>7</sup> Das Evang. Marcion's in seiner ursprüngl. Gestalt, 1823.

<sup>8</sup> The reconstructed text also in Thilo's Cod. Apocr. N. T., 1832, pp. 403—486.

<sup>9</sup> Die Echtheit der vier kan. Evv., 1823, pp. 107—215.

<sup>10</sup> Beiträge, i. p. 43.

<sup>11</sup> Einl. N. T., 6th ausg., 1860, p. 119 ff.

<sup>12</sup> The following writers, either before Hahn's work was written or subsequently, have maintained the dependence, in one shape or another, of Marcion's Gospel on Luke. *Becker*, Exam. Crit. de l'Ev. de Marcion, 1837; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 135; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 565 f.; *Anger*, Synopsis Ev. Proleg., xxiv. ff.; *Cellérier*, Introd. Crit. N. T., 1823, p. 25 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 51 f.; *Ebrard*, Wiss. krit. evang. Gesch., p. 810; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1853—54, p. 48; *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch. N. T., p. 231; *H'buch* K. G., i. p. 190; *Gfrörer*, Allg. K. G., i. p. 363 ff.; *Harting*, Quæst. de Marcione Lucani,

Not satisfied, however, with the method and results of Hahn and Olshausen, whose examination, although more minute than any previously undertaken, still left much to be desired, Ritschl<sup>1</sup> made a further thorough investigation of the character of Marcion's Gospel, and decided that it was in no case a mutilated version of Luke, but, on the contrary, an original and independent work, from which the Canonical Gospel was produced by the introduction of anti-Marcionitish passages and readings. Baur<sup>2</sup> strongly enunciated similar views, and maintained that the whole error lay in the mistake of the Fathers, who had, with characteristic assumption, asserted the earlier and shorter Gospel of Marcion to be an abbreviation of the later Canonical Gospel, instead of recognizing the latter as a mere extension of the former. Schwegler<sup>3</sup> had already, in a remarkable criticism of Marcion's Gospel declared it to be an independent and original work, and in no sense a mutilated Luke, but, on the contrary, probably the source of that Gospel. Köstlin,<sup>4</sup> while stating that the theory that Marcion's Gospel was an earlier work and the basis of that ascribed to Luke was not very probable, affirmed that much of the

*Evangelii, &c.*, 1849; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 48, p. 361, anm. 10; *Meyer*, Krit.-exeg. Kommentar N. T., 1867, 1 abth. 2 hälfte, p. 228; *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., 1788, i. p. 40; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., 1840, p. 68 ff.; *Nicolas*, Et. sur les Ev. Apocr., 1866, p. 157 f.; *Rhode*, Prolegg. ad Quest. de evang. Marcionis denuo instit. 1834; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 244 f.; *Rev. de Théol.*, 1857, p. 4 f.; *Rumpf*, Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 20 f.; *Schott*, Isagoge, 1830, p. 13 ff., note 7; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 73 f.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., pp. 56—65; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 272 ff.; *Witke*, Tradition u. Mythe, 1837, p. 28; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 12 ff.

<sup>1</sup> Das Evangelium Marcion's, 1846.

<sup>2</sup> Krit. Unters. kan. Evv., 1847, p. 397 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Das nachap. Zeit., 1846, i. p. 260 ff.; Theol. Jahrb., 1843, pp. 575—590.

<sup>4</sup> Der Ursprung d. synopt. Evv., 1853, p. 303 ff.

Marcionitish text was more original than the Canonical, and that both Gospels must be considered versions of the same original, although Luke's was the later and more corrupt.

These results, however, did not satisfy Volkmar,<sup>1</sup> who entered afresh upon a searching examination of the whole subject, and concluded that Marcion's work was simply a version of Luke, mutilated and altered to suit his own dogmatic views. This criticism, together with the arguments of Hilgenfeld, succeeded in convincing Ritschl,<sup>2</sup> who withdrew from his previous opinions, although he still maintained some of Marcion's readings to be more original than those of Luke,<sup>3</sup> and generally defended Marcion from the aspersions of the Fathers, on the ground that his procedure with regard to Luke's Gospel was precisely that of the Canonical Evangelists to each other; <sup>4</sup> Luke himself being clearly dependent both on Mark and Matthew.<sup>5</sup> Baur was likewise induced by Volkmar's and Hilgenfeld's arguments to modify his views; <sup>6</sup> but although for the first time he admitted that Marcion had altered the original of his Gospel frequently for dogmatic reasons, he still maintained that there was an older form of the Gospel without the earlier chapters, from which both Marcion and Luke directly constructed their Gospels;—both of them stood in the same line in regard to the original; both altered it; the one abbreviated, the other extended it.<sup>7</sup> Encouraged by this success, but not yet satisfied, Volkmar immediately undertook a further and more exhaustive examination of

<sup>1</sup> Theol. Jahrb., 1850, pp. 110—138, pp. 185—235.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 1851, p. 528 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 529.

<sup>6</sup> Das Markusevangelium. Anhang üb. das Ev. Marcion's, 1851, p. 191 ff.

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, p. 225 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 530 ff.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, p. 534 ff.

the text of Marcion, in the hope of finally settling the discussion, and he again, but with greater emphasis, confirmed his previous results.<sup>1</sup> In the meantime Hilgenfeld<sup>2</sup> had seriously attacked the problem, and, like Hahn and Volkmar, had sought to reconstruct the text of Marcion, and, whilst admitting many more original and genuine readings in the text of Marcion, he had also decided that his Gospel was dependent on Luke, although he further concluded that the text of Luke had subsequently gone through another, though slight, manipulation before it assumed its present form. These conclusions he again fully confirmed after a renewed investigation of the subject.<sup>3</sup>

This brief sketch of the controversy which has so long occupied the attention of critics will at least show the insecure position of the matter, and the uncertainty of the data upon which any decision is based. We have not attempted to give more than the barest outlines, but it will appear as we go on that most of those who decide against the general independence of Marcion's Gospel, at the same time admit his partial originality and superiority of readings over the third Synoptic, and justify his treatment of Luke as a procedure common to the Evangelists, and warranted not only by their example but by the fact that no Gospels had yet emerged from the position of private documents in limited circulation. We are, however, very far from considering the discussion as closed; but, on the contrary, we believe that a just and impartial judgment in the case must lead to the conclusion that if, in the absence of sufficient data, Marcion's

<sup>1</sup> *Das Evang. Marcion's*, 1852.

<sup>2</sup> *Ueb. die Evv. Justin's der Clem. Hom. und Marcion's*, 1850, p. 389 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1853, pp. 192—244.

Gospel cannot be absolutely proved to be a special and original Gospel, still less can it be shown to be a mutilated version of Luke's Gospel. There are very strong reasons for considering it to be either an independent work, derived from the same sources as our third Synoptic, or a more primitive version of that Gospel.

Marcion's Gospel not being any longer extant, it is important to establish clearly the nature of our knowledge regarding it, and the exact value of the data from which various attempts have been made to reconstruct the text. It is manifest that the evidential force of any deductions from a reconstructed text is almost wholly dependent on the accuracy and sufficiency of the materials from which that text is derived.

The principal sources of our information regarding Marcion's Gospel are the works of his most bitter denouncers Tertullian and Epiphanius, who, however, it must be borne in mind, wrote long after his time,—the work of Tertullian against Marcion having been composed about A.D. 208,<sup>1</sup> and that of Epiphanius very much later. We may likewise merely mention here the "*Dialogus de recte in deum fide*," commonly attributed to Origen, although it cannot have been composed earlier than the middle of the fourth century.<sup>2</sup> The first three sections are directed against the Marcionites, but only deal with a late form of their doctrines.<sup>3</sup> As Volkmar admits that the author clearly had only a general acquaintance with the "Antithesis," and principal proof passages of the Marcionites, but, although he certainly possessed the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Tertullian, Adv. Marc.*, i. 15; *Neander, Antignosticus*, 1849, p. 398; *Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 75.

<sup>2</sup> *Volkmar, Das Ev. Marcion's*, p. 52.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 52 f.

Epistles, had not the Gospel of Marcion itself,<sup>1</sup> we need not now more particularly consider it.

We are, therefore, dependent upon the "dogmatic and partly blind and unjust adversaries"<sup>2</sup> of Marcion for our only knowledge of the text they stigmatize; and when the character of polemical discussion in the early centuries of our era is considered, it is certain that great caution must be exercised, and not too much weight attached to the statements of opponents who regarded a heretic with abhorrence, and attacked him with an acrimony which carried them far beyond the limits of fairness and truth. Their religious controversy bristles with misstatements, and is turbid with pious abuse. Tertullian was a master of this style, and the vehement vituperation with which he opens<sup>3</sup> and often interlard his work against "the impious and sacrilegious Marcion" offers anything but a guarantee of fair and legitimate criticism. Epiphanius was, if possible, still more passionate and exaggerated in his representations against him.<sup>4</sup> Undue importance must not, therefore, be attributed to their statements.<sup>5</sup>

Not only should there be caution, and great caution, exercised in receiving the representations of one side in a religious discussion, conducted in an age when the absence of any spirit of calm criticism only gave freer scope to the attacks of intolerant zeal, but more particularly is such caution necessary in the case of Tertullian, whose trustworthiness is very far from being above

<sup>1</sup> *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. Marcion's*, p. 53.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1850, p. 120.

<sup>3</sup> *Adv. Marc.*, i. 1.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 122.

<sup>5</sup> *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 71, 72; *Gieseler*, *Entst. schr. Evv.*, p. 25; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 75; *Volkmar*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1850, p. 120; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 276; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 122.

suspicion, and whose inaccuracy is often apparent.<sup>1</sup> "Son christianisme," says Reuss, "est ardent, sincère, profondément ancré dans son âme. L'on voit qu'il en vit. Mais ce christianisme est âpre, insolent, brutal, ferrailleur. Il est sans onction et sans charité, quelquefois même sans loyauté, dès qu'il se trouve en face d'une opposition quelconque. C'est un soldat qui ne sait que se battre et qui oublie, tout en se battant, qu'il faut aussi respecter son ennemi. Dialecticien subtil et rusé, il excelle à ridiculiser ses adversaires. L'injure, le sarcasme, un langage qui rappelle parfois en vérité le genre de Rabelais, une effronterie d'affirmation dans les moments de faiblesse qui frise et atteint même la mauvaise foi, voilà ses armes. Je sais ce qu'il faut en cela mettre sur le compte de l'époque. . . . Si, au second siècle, tous les partis, sauf quelques gnostiques, sont intolérants, Tertullian l'est plus que tout le monde."<sup>2</sup>

The charge of mutilating and interpolating the Gospel of Luke is first brought against Marcion by Irenæus,<sup>3</sup> and it is reported with still greater vehemence and fulness by Tertullian,<sup>4</sup> and Epiphanius;<sup>5</sup> but the mere assertion by Fathers at the end of the second and in the third centuries, that a Gospel different from their own was one of the Canonical Gospels falsified and mutilated, can have no weight whatever in itself in the inquiry as to the real nature of that work.<sup>6</sup> Their dogmatic point of

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, 1847, p. 357; *Reuss*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1857, p. 67 f.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeitalter*, i. p. 278 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Reuss*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1857, p. 67 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Et super hæc, id quod est secundum Lucam Evangelium circumcidens. . . . Irenæus*, *Adv. Hær.*, i. 27, § 2; cf. iii. 11, § 7; 12, § 12; 14, § 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Adv. Marc.*, iv. 1, 2, 4 et passim.

<sup>5</sup> *Hær.*, xlii. 9, 10 et passim.

<sup>6</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 446 f., 448; *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 72 f.; *Volkmar*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1850, p. 120; *Ritschl*, *Das Evang. Marcion's*, p. 23 ff.

view, and arbitrary assumption of exclusive originality and priority for the four Gospels of the Church led them, without any attempt at argument, to treat every other evangelical work as an offshoot or falsification of these. We need not refer to the childish reasoning of Irenæus<sup>1</sup> to prove that there could not be more nor less than four Gospels, which he evidently considered quite conclusive. The arguments by which Tertullian endeavours to establish that the Gospels of Luke and the other Canonical Evangelists were more ancient than that of Marcion<sup>2</sup> is on a par with it, and shows that he had no idea of historical or critical evidence.<sup>3</sup> We are therefore driven back upon such actual data regarding the text and contents of Marcion's Gospel as are given by the Fathers, as the only basis, in the absence of the Gospel itself, upon which any hypothesis as to its real character can be built. The question therefore is: Are these data sufficiently ample and trustworthy for a decisive judgment from internal evidence? if indeed internal evidence in such a case can be decisive at all.

All that we know, then, of Marcion's Gospel is simply what Tertullian and Epiphanius have stated with regard to it. It is, however, undeniable, and indeed is universally admitted, that their object in dealing with it at all was entirely dogmatic, and not in the least degree critical.<sup>4</sup> The spirit of that age was indeed so essentially uncritical<sup>5</sup> that not even the canonical text could waken it into

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Hæc., iii. 11, §§ 8, 9.

<sup>2</sup> Adv. Marc., iv. 5.

<sup>3</sup> Eichhorn, Einl. N. T., i. p. 73; Schweyler, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 276.

<sup>4</sup> Kirchofer, Quellensamml., p. 361, anm. 10, p. 362, anm. 12; Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 447 f.; Reuss, Rev. de Théol., 1857, p. 4; Volkmar, Theol. Jahrb., 1850, p. 120; Das Evang. Marcion's, 1852, pp. 29, 31; De Wette, Einl. N. T., p. 123; Tischendorf, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 62.

<sup>5</sup> Westcott, On the Canon, p. 8.

activity. Tertullian very clearly states what his object was in attacking Marcion's Gospel. After asserting that the whole aim of the Heresiarch was to prove a disagreement between the Old Testament and the New, and that for this purpose he had erased from the Gospel all that was contrary to his opinion, and retained all that he had considered favourable, Tertullian continues with regard to the portions retained : " These we shall collect, these we shall particularly consider,—whether they shall be more for our view,—whether they destroy the assumption of Marcion. Then it will be proved that he has shown the same defect of blindness of heresy both in that which he has erased, and that which he has retained. Such will be the purpose and form of our little work."<sup>1</sup> His method throughout is to quote passages of the Gospel for which he can find parallels in the Old Testament, and in this way to endeavour to establish a kind of harmony between them. Epiphanius explains his aim with equal clearness. His intention is to show how wickedly and disgracefully Marcion has mutilated and falsified the Gospel, and how fruitlessly he has done so, inasmuch as he has stupidly, or by oversight, allowed so much to remain in his Gospel by which he may be fully refuted.<sup>2</sup>

As it is impossible within our limits fully to illustrate the procedure of the Fathers with regard to Marcion's Gospel, and the nature and value of the materials they supply, we shall as far as possible quote the declarations of Volkmar and Hilgenfeld, who, in the true and

<sup>1</sup> *Hæc conveniemus, hæc amplectemur, si nobiscum magis fuerint, si Marcionis præsumptionem percusserint. Tunc et illa constabit eodem vitio hæreticæ cæcitatæ erasa quo et hæc reservata. Sic habebit intentio et forma opusculi nostri, &c., &c. Tertullian, Adv. Marc, iv. 6.*

<sup>2</sup> *Epiphanius, Hær., xlii. 9 f.*

enlightened spirit of criticism, impartially state the character of the data available for the understanding of the text. As these two critics have, by their able and learned investigations, done more than any others to educe and render possible a decision of the problem, their own estimate of the materials upon which a judgment has to be formed is of double value. With regard to Tertullian, Volkmar explains that his desire is totally to annihilate the most dangerous heretic of his time,—first (Books i.—iii.), to overthrow Marcion's system in general as expounded in his "Antithesis,"—and then (Book iv.) to show that even the Gospel of Marcion only contains Catholic doctrine (he concludes, "*Christus Jesus in Evangelio tuo meus est,*" c. 43); and therefore he examines the Gospel only so far as may serve to establish his own view and refute that of Marcion. "To show," Volkmar continues, "wherein this Gospel was falsified or mutilated, *i.e.*, varied from his own, on the contrary, is in no way his design, for he perceives that Marcion could cast back the reproach of interpolation, and in his time proof from internal grounds was hardly possible, so that only exceptionally, where a variation seems to him remarkable, does he specially mention it."<sup>1</sup> Of course the remark that proof from internal criticism of the text was hardly possible in Tertullian's time refers to the total absence of the critical spirit regarding which we have already spoken, and which renders its display by any individual too isolated an intellectual effort to be expected.

Hilgenfeld expresses precisely the same views of Tertullian's object and procedure.<sup>2</sup> "In Book iv." he says,

<sup>1</sup> *Volkmar, Das Evang. Marcion's, p. 29.*

<sup>2</sup> *Die Evv. Justin's, p. 395 ff.*

“he carries out the project of refuting Marcion and his Antithesis of evangelical history out of his own Gospel. He proceeds to Marcion’s Gospel only with this dogmatic purpose, as he himself states in the principal passage of iv. 6. . . . Tertullian proposes to confine himself to that which he (Marcion) allows to remain, and to prove that even this contains the doctrine of the Church.”<sup>1</sup> With regard to Epiphanius, Hilgenfeld says, “This writer also proceeds with the dogmatic object of refuting Marcion’s Gospel and Ἀπόστολος.<sup>2</sup> But he has also the subsidiary design, in particular instances, of proving the audacity of the Beast, as he is pleased to call Marcion, in the mutilation of Luke. Both representations supplement each other, so that we can still, with tolerable certainty and completeness, determine the contents of the Marcionitish Gospel.”<sup>3</sup> In order not to separate the last phrase from its context, we have given it here a little in anticipation of its more appropriate place, but we shall see that this opinion has to be received in a very mitigated way. As Hilgenfeld himself says, a few pages further on: “From the critical stand-point one must, on the other hand, consider the statements of the Fathers of the Church only as expressions of their subjective view, which itself requires proof.”<sup>4</sup> Obviously statements which proceed from a mere dogmatic point of view, and which avowedly are not dictated by impartial criticism, are a very insecure and insufficient basis for the reconstruction of Marcion’s text.

We understand this more fully when we consider the manner in which Tertullian and Epiphanius performed

<sup>1</sup> Die Evv. Justin’s, p. 395 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Hæc., xlii. 9.

<sup>3</sup> Die Evv. Justin’s, p. 397 f.; cf. *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. Marcion’s*, p. 31.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 446.

the work they had undertaken. Hilgenfeld remarks : " As Tertullian, in going through the Marcionitish Gospel, has only the object of refutation in view, he very rarely states clearly what is missing in it ; and as, on the one hand, we can only venture to conclude from the silence of Tertullian that a passage is wanting, when it is altogether inexplicable that he should not have made use of it for the purpose of refutation ; so, on the other, we must also know how Marcion used and interpreted his Gospel, and should never lose sight of Tertullian's refutation and defence." <sup>1</sup> It is scarcely necessary to point out how wide a field of conjecture is opened out and rendered necessary by this incompleteness of Tertullian. <sup>2</sup> Volkmar, upon the same subject, says : " In the same way his (Tertullian's) silence may become weighty testimony for the fact that something is missing in Marcion's Gospel which we read in Luke. . . . But his silence *alone* can only under certain conditions represent with diplomatic certainty an omission in Marcion. It is indeed probable that he would not lightly have passed over a passage in the Gospel of Marcion which could in any way be used for the refutation of its system, if one altogether similar had not preceded it, all the more as he frequently drags in such proof passages from Marcion's text as it were by the hair, and often, in like manner, only with a certain sophistry, tries to refute his adversary out of the words of his own Gospel. But it is always possible that in his eagerness he has overlooked much ; and besides, he believed that in replying to particular passages

<sup>1</sup> Hilgenfeld, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 397.

<sup>2</sup> Ritschl, *Das Ev. Marcion's*, p. 48 f. ; Schweyler, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 262 f.

he had done enough for many others of a similar kind ; indeed, avowedly, he will not willingly repeat himself. Nothing certain, therefore, can be deduced from the silence of Tertullian except when special circumstances enter.”<sup>1</sup> With such an opening for mere guesses, and for the insertion or omission of passages in accordance with preconceived ideas or feelings, it is scarcely possible that there should be either accuracy or agreement in reconstructing the text of Marcion’s Gospel, and Ritschl, in fact, reproaches Hahn with much too free a licence in interpreting the silence of Tertullian.<sup>2</sup>

Volkmar’s opinion of the incompleteness of Epiphanius is still more unfavourable than in the case of Tertullian. Comparing him with the latter, he says : “ More superficial is the procedure of the later Epiphanius, who has only the merit of basing his criticism on a copy of the Gospel of Marcion, quite independently from the work of Tertullian.<sup>3</sup> . . . How far we can build upon his statements, whether as regards their completeness or their trustworthiness, is not yet altogether clear, and yet so much depends on that.”<sup>4</sup> Volkmar then goes on to show how thoroughly Epiphanius intended to do his work, and yet, although we might, from what he himself leads us to expect, hope to find a complete catalogue of Marcion’s sins, the eager Father himself destroys this belief by his own admission of shortcomings.<sup>5</sup> He proceeds : “ Epiphanius, however, only proves to us that absolute completeness in regard to that which

<sup>1</sup> Volkmar, *Das Evang. Marcion’s*, p. 29 f.

<sup>2</sup> Ritschl, *Das Ev. Marcion’s*, p. 48 ; cf. Schweigler, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 262. With regard to arguments *a silentio*, see Volkmar, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1855, p. 237.

<sup>3</sup> Volkmar, *Das Ev. Marcion’s*, p. 31.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 32.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, p. 32 f., p. 42 ff.

Marcion had not in his Gospel is not to be reckoned upon in his Scholia. He has certainly intended to pass over nothing, but in the eagerness which so easily renders men superficial and blind much has escaped him.”<sup>1</sup> Further on, he says still more emphatically: “Nor is completeness in his statements of the passages apparently opposed to Marcion to be reckoned upon in Epiphanius, even if he aimed at it: it would be all the more important if he were always but fully trustworthy in his statements.”<sup>2</sup> This, Volkmar explains, Epiphanius only is where, and *so far as*, he wishes to state an omission or variation in Marcion’s text from his own Canonical Gospel in his Scholia, in which case he minutely registers the smallest point from his Codex of Marcion, but this is to be clearly distinguished from cases where, in his Refutations, he represents something as falsified by Marcion; for only in the earlier sketch of his Scholia (Proem. 10) had he the Marcionitish Gospel before him and compared it with Luke; but in the case of the Refutations, on the contrary, which he wrote later, he has not again compared the Gospel of Luke nor, most probably, even the Gospel of Marcion itself. “It is, however, altogether different,” continues Volkmar, “as regards the statements of Epiphanius concerning the part of the Gospel of Luke which is preserved in Marcion. Whilst he desires to be *strictly literal* in the account of the *variations*, and also with two exceptions *is so*, he so generally adheres *only to the contents* of the passages retained by Marcion, that altogether literal quotations only belong to the exceptions;

<sup>1</sup> Volkmar, *Das Ev. Marcion's*, p. 33; cf. *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 75 ff.; *Hahn*, *Das Ev. Marcion's*, p. 114 f.; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 123; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 361, anm. 10, p. 362 f., anm. 15, 16, 17.

<sup>2</sup> Volkmar, *ib.*, p. 43.

*throughout*, however, where passages of greater extent are referred to, these are not merely abbreviated, but also are quoted in *very free* fashion, and nowhere can we even reckon that the passage in Marcion ran verbally as Epiphanius quotes it."<sup>1</sup>

Volkmar, moreover, not only reproaches Epiphanius with free quotation,<sup>2</sup> alteration of the text without explanation,<sup>3</sup> and alteration of the same passage in more than one way,<sup>4</sup> abbreviations and omission of parts of quotations,<sup>5</sup> sudden ending of texts just commenced with the indefinite *καὶ τὰ ἐξῆς* or *καὶ τὸ λοιπόν*,<sup>6</sup> and differing modes of referring to the same chapters,<sup>7</sup> but he finds fault with his whole system of quotation, whether as regards the contents of, or the omissions from, the Marcionitish Gospel, for as in his time there were no numbers of chapters and verses, he does not take the smallest trouble to identify quotations,<sup>8</sup> the whole method being most misleading.<sup>9</sup> The difficulty, however, does not end here, for Volkmar himself says: "The ground for a certain fixture of the text of the Marcionitish Gospel, however, seems completely taken away by the fact that Tertullian and Epiphanius, in their statements

<sup>1</sup> Etwas ganz Anderes aber ist es mit den Angaben des Epiphanius über das vom Lucas-Evangelium bei Marcion, Bewahrte. Während er im Bericht über die *Abweichungen Buchstaben-genau* sein will und er es auch bis auf jene beiden Ausnahmen *ist*, kommt es ihm hinsichtlich *jener* so sehr *nur auf den Inhalt* des von Marcion Stehngelassenen im Allgemeinen an, dass ganz wörtliche Anführungen nur zu den Ausnahmen gehören, *überall* aber, wo Stellen von grösserm Umfang bemerkt werden sollen, jener nicht bloss so abkürzenden sondern auch *sehr freien* Citationsweise Platz machen und wir auch nirgends darauf rechnen können, dass so gerade, wie es Epiph. citirt, die Stelle bei Marcion wörtlich gelautet habe. Volkmar, Das Ev. Marcion's, p. 43 f.; cf. p. 34.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 33.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 34.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, p. 35 f.

<sup>8</sup> *Ib.*, p. 33 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 33 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, p. 34 f.; cf. p. 22.

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, p. 34 f.

<sup>9</sup> *Ib.*, p. 35 ff.

regarding its state, not merely repeatedly seem to, but in part actually do, directly contradict each other."<sup>1</sup> Hahn endeavours to explain some of these contradictions by imagining that later Marcionites had altered the text of their Gospel, and that Epiphanius had the one form and Tertullian another;<sup>2</sup> but such a doubt only renders the whole of the statements regarding the work more uncertain and insecure. That it is not without some reason, however, appears from the charge which Tertullian brings against the disciples of Marcion: "for they daily alter it (their Gospel) as they are daily refuted by us."<sup>3</sup> In fact, we have no assurance whatever that the work upon which Tertullian and Epiphanius base their charge against Marcion of falsification and mutilation of Luke was Marcion's original Gospel at all, and we certainly have no historical evidence on the point.<sup>4</sup>

The question, moreover, arises, whether Tertullian and indeed Epiphanius had his Gospel in any shape before them when they wrote, or merely Marcion's work, the "Antithesis."<sup>5</sup> In commencing his onslaught on Marcion's Gospel, Tertullian says: "For of the Commentators whom we possess, Marcion seems (videtur) to have selected Luke, which he mutilates."<sup>6</sup> This is a

<sup>1</sup> *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marcion's, p. 22 f., p. 46 ff.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1854, p. 106.

<sup>2</sup> *Hahn*, Das Ev. Marcion's, p. 169; cf. *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 82.

<sup>3</sup> Nam et quotidie reformant illud, prout a nobis quotidie revincuntur. *Adv. Marc.*, iv. 5; cf. *Dial. de recte in deum fide*, § 5; *Orig., Opp.*, i. p. 867.

<sup>4</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 262 f.; cf. *Volkmar*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1854, p. 106 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 45, anm. i.; cf. p. 77 f., p. 83; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 279 f.

<sup>6</sup> Nam ex iis commentatoribus, quos habemus, Lucam videtur Marcion elegisse, quem cæderet. *Adv. Marc.*, iv. 2.

very uncertain expression for so decided a controversialist, if he had been able to speak more positively.<sup>1</sup> We have seen that in some instances it is admitted that Epiphanius clearly wrote without the Gospel before him, and also without comparing Luke, and it is also conceded that Tertullian at least had not the Canonical Gospel, but in professing to quote Luke evidently does so from memory, and approximates his text to Matthew, with which Gospel, like most of the Fathers, he was better acquainted.<sup>2</sup> How superficial and hasty the proceeding of these Fathers was, and how little reliance can be placed upon their statements, is evident from the fact that both Tertullian and Epiphanius reproach Marcion with erasing passages from the Gospel of Luke, which never were in Luke at all.<sup>3</sup> Tertullian says: "Marcion also removes from the Gospel: 'I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel,'<sup>4</sup> and 'It is not meet to take the children's bread, and give it to dogs,'<sup>5</sup> in order, be it known, that Christ may not seem to be an Israelite."<sup>6</sup> The lightness and inaccuracy with which the "Great African" proceeds, is all the better illustrated by the fact, that not only does he accuse Marcion falsely, but he actually defines the motives for which he expunged the passage which never existed. In the same chapter, he also similarly accuses Marcion of erasing "as

<sup>1</sup> *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 78, anm. g. p. 83; cf. *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 447, anm. 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marcion's, p. 30 f.; cf. 43.

<sup>3</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 278 f.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 45 f., anm. i. cf. p. 77; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marcion's, p. 43; cf. *Hahn*, Das Ev. Marcion's, p. 264.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. xv. 24.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, xv. 26.

<sup>6</sup> Marcion, aufer etiam illud de evangelio: non sum missus, nisi ad oves perditas domus Israel; et: non est auferre panem filiis et dare eum canibus, ne scilicet Christus Israelis videretur. Adv. Marc., iv. 7.

an interpolation,"<sup>1</sup> the saying that Christ had not come to destroy the law and the prophets, but to fulfil them,<sup>2</sup> and he actually repeats the same charge on two other occasions.<sup>3</sup> Epiphanius commits the same mistake of reproaching Marcion with omitting from Luke what is only found in Matthew.<sup>4</sup> We have, in fact, no guarantee of the accuracy or trustworthiness of any of their statements.

We have said enough, we trust, to show that the sources for the reconstruction of a text of Marcion's Gospel are most unsatisfactory, and no one who attentively studies the analysis of Hahn, Ritschl, Volkmar, Hilgenfeld, and others, who have examined and systematized the data of the Fathers, can fail to be struck by the uncertainty which prevails throughout, the almost continuous vagueness and consequent opening, nay, necessity, for conjecture, and the absence of really certain indications. The Fathers had no intention of showing what Marcion's text actually was, and their object being solely dogmatic and not critical, their statements are very insufficient for the purpose.<sup>5</sup> The reconstructed texts, as might be expected, differ from each other, and one Editor finds the results of his predecessors incomplete or unsatisfactory,<sup>6</sup> although naturally at each successive attempt, the materials previously collected and adopted, have contributed to an apparently more complete result. After complaining of the incompleteness and uncertainty

<sup>1</sup> Hoc enim Marcion ut additum erasit. *Adv. Mar.*, iv. 7.

<sup>2</sup> *Matt.* v. 17.

<sup>3</sup> *Adv. Marc.*, iv. 9, 36.

<sup>4</sup> *Hær.*, xlii. p. 322 f., *Ref.* 1; cf. *Luke* v. 14; *Matt.* viii. 4.

<sup>5</sup> *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 361, *anm.* 10, p. 362 f.; *anm.* 15, 16, 17.

<sup>6</sup> *Ritschl*, *Das Ev. Marcion's*, p. 55 f.; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. Marc.*, p. 5 f., p. 19 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 444 f., p. 394 f.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1853, p. 194 f., p. 211 f.

of the statements of Tertullian and Epiphanius, Ritschl says: "We have thus so little of firm material from which to construct a hypothesis, that rather through first setting up a hypothesis may we fix the remains of the Gospel from Tertullian."<sup>1</sup> Hilgenfeld quotes this with approval, and adds: "Of this, certainly, so much is right, that the matter of fact can no longer in all points be settled from external data which first can decide in many respects the general conclusion regarding this Gospel."<sup>2</sup> Volkmar, in the introduction to his last comprehensive work on Marcion's Gospel, says: "And, in fact, it is no wonder that for so long a time critics have disputed in so really pardonable a way regarding the protean question, for we have continued so uncertain as to the very basis (Fundament) itself,—the precise form of the text of the remarkable document,—that Baur has found full ground for rejecting, as unfounded, the presumption on which that finally-attained decision (his previous one) rested."<sup>3</sup> Critics of all shades of opinion are forced to admit that we have no longer the materials for any certain reconstruction of Marcion's text, and, consequently, for an absolute settlement of the question from internal evidence.<sup>4</sup>

Before proceeding to a closer examination of Marcion's Gospel and the general evidence bearing upon it, it may

<sup>1</sup> *Ritschl*, Das Evv. Marcion's, p. 55.

<sup>2</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 445.

<sup>3</sup> *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marcion's, 1852, p. 19 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 126; *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 565; *Hilgenfeld*, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 194 ff., 211 ff.; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 58 ff.; cf. *Hahn*, Das Ev. Marcion's, p. 114 f.; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 361, ann. 10; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 75 ff.; *Reuss*, Rev. de Théol., 1857, p. 3; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 262 f.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 60 f.; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marcion's, 19 ff., 22 ff.

be well here briefly to refer to the system of the Heresiarch whose high personal character exerted so powerful an influence upon his own time,<sup>1</sup> and whose views continued to prevail widely for a couple of centuries after his death. It was the misfortune of Marcion to live in an age when Christianity had passed out of the pure morality of its infancy, when, untroubled by complicated questions of dogma, simple faith and pious enthusiasm had been the one great bond of Christian brotherhood, into a phase of ecclesiastical development in which religion was fast degenerating into theology, and complicated doctrines were rapidly assuming that rampant attitude which led to so much bitterness, persecution, and schism. In later times Marcion might have been honoured as a reformer, in his own he was denounced as a heretic.<sup>2</sup> Austere and ascetic in his opinions, he aimed at superhuman purity, and although his clerical adversaries might scoff at his impracticable doctrines regarding marriage and the subjugation of the flesh, they have had their parallels amongst those whom the Church has since most delighted to honour, and at least the whole tendency of his system was markedly towards the side of virtue.<sup>3</sup> It would of course be foreign to our purpose to enter upon any detailed statement of its principles, and we must confine ourselves to such particulars only as are necessary to an understanding of the question before us.

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 40; *Schleiermacher*, Sämmtl. Werke, viii.; Einl. N. T., 1845, p. 64; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 272 f.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Neander*, Allg. K. G., 1843, ii. p. 792, 815 f.; *Schleiermacher*, Einl. N. T., 1845, p. 64.

<sup>3</sup> *Gfrörer*, Allg. K. G., i. p. 134 f.; *Hagenbach*, K. G., 1869, i. p. 134 f.; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 56 ff.; *Milman*, Hist. of Chr., 1867, ii. p. 77 ff.; *Neander*, Allg. K. G., ii. p. 791 ff.; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marc., p. 25 ff.

As we have already frequently had occasion to mention, there were two broad parties in the primitive Church, and the very existence of Christianity was in one sense endangered by the national exclusiveness of the people amongst whom it originated. The one party considered Christianity a mere continuation of the Law, and dwarfed it into an Israelitish institution, a narrow sect of Judaism; the other represented the glad tidings as the introduction of a new system applicable to all and supplanting the Mosaic dispensation of the Law by a universal dispensation of grace. These two parties were popularly represented in the early Church by the two Apostles Peter and Paul, and their antagonism is faintly revealed in the Epistle to the Galatians. Marcion, a gentile Christian, appreciating the true character of the new religion and its elevated spirituality, and profoundly impressed by the comparatively degraded and anthropomorphic features of Judaism, drew a very sharp line of demarcation between them, and represented Christianity as an entirely new and separate system abrogating the old and having absolutely no connection with it. Jesus was not to him the Messiah of the Jews, the son of David come permanently to establish the Law and the Prophets, but a divine being sent to reveal to man a wholly new spiritual religion, and a hitherto unknown God of goodness and grace. The Creator (*Δημιουργός*), the God of the Old Testament, was different from the God of grace who had sent Jesus to reveal the Truth, to bring reconciliation and salvation to all, and to abrogate the Jewish God of the World and of the Law, who was opposed to the God and Father of Jesus Christ as Matter is to Spirit, impurity to purity. Christianity was in distinct antagonism to Judaism, the Spiritual God of

heaven, whose goodness and love were for the Universe, to the God of the World, whose chosen and peculiar people were the Jews, the Gospel of Grace to the dispensation of the Old Testament. Christianity, therefore, must be kept pure from the Judaistic elements humanly thrust into it, which were so essentially opposed to its whole spirit.

Marcion wrote a work called "Antithesis" (*Ἀντιθέσεις*), in which he contrasted the old system with the new, the God of the one with the God of the other, the Law with the Gospel, and in this he maintained opinions which anticipated many held in our own time. Tertullian attacks this work in the first three books of his treatise against Marcion, and he enters upon the discussion of its details with true theological vigour: "Now, then, ye hounds, yelping at the God of truth, whom the Apostle casts out,<sup>1</sup> to all your questions! These are the bones of contention which ye gnaw!"<sup>2</sup> The poverty of the "Great African's" arguments keep pace with his abuse. Marcion objected: If the God of the Old Testament be good, prescient of the future, and able to avert evil, why did he allow man, made in his own image, to be deceived by the devil, and to fall from obedience of the Law into sin and death?<sup>3</sup> How came the devil, the origin of lying and deceit, to be made at all?<sup>4</sup> After the fall, God became a judge both severe and cruel; woman is at once condemned to bring forth in sorrow and to serve her husband, changed from a help into a slave, the earth is cursed which before was blessed, and man is

<sup>1</sup> *Rev.* xxii. 15.

<sup>2</sup> *Jam hinc ad questiones, omnes canes, quos foras apostolus expellit, latrantes in deum veritatis. Hæc sunt argumentationum ossa, quæ obroditis.* *Adv. Marc.*, ii. 5.

<sup>3</sup> *Tertullian*, *Adv. Marc.*, ii. 5; cf. 9.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 10.

doomed to labour and to death.<sup>1</sup> The law was one of retaliation and not of justice—*lex talionis*—eye for eye, tooth for tooth, stripe for stripe.<sup>2</sup> And it was not consequent, for in contravention of the Decalogue, God is made to instigate the Israelites to spoil the Egyptians, and fraudulently rob them of their gold and silver;<sup>3</sup> to incite them to work on the Sabbath by ordering them to carry the ark for eight days round Jericho;<sup>4</sup> to break the second commandment by making and setting up the brazen serpent and the golden cherubim.<sup>5</sup> Then God is inconstant, electing men, as Saul and Solomon, whom he subsequently rejects;<sup>6</sup> repenting that he had set up Saul, and that he had doomed the Ninevites,<sup>7</sup> and so on. God calls out: Adam, where art thou? inquires whether he had eaten the forbidden fruit, asks of Cain where his brother was, as if he had not yet heard the blood of Abel crying from the ground, and did not already know all these things.<sup>8</sup> Anticipating the results of modern criticism, Marcion denies the applicability to Jesus of the so-called Messianic prophecies. The Emmanuel of Isaiah (vii. 14, cf. viii. 4) is not Christ;<sup>9</sup> the "Virgin" his mother is simply a "young woman" according to Jewish phraseology,<sup>10</sup> and the sufferings of the Servant of God (Isaiah lii. 13—liii. 9) are not predictions of the death of Jesus.<sup>11</sup> There is a complete severance between the Law and the Gospel, and the God of the latter is the Antithesis of that of the

<sup>1</sup> *Tertullian, Adv. Marc.*, ii. 11.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 18.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 20. Tertullian introduces this by likening the Marcionites to the cuttle-fish, like which "they vomit the blackness of blasphemy" (*tenebras blasphemiarum intervomunt*), l. c.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 21.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 22.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 23.

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 24.

<sup>8</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 25.

<sup>9</sup> *Adv. Marc.*, iii. 12.

<sup>10</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 13.

<sup>11</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 17, 18.

former.<sup>1</sup> "The one was perfect, pure, beneficent, passionless; the other, though not unjust by nature, infected by matter,—subject to all the passions of man,—cruel, changeable; the New Testament, especially as remodelled by Marcion,<sup>2</sup> was holy, wise, amiable; the Old Testament, the Law, barbarous, inhuman, contradictory, and detestable."<sup>3</sup>

Marcion ardently maintained the doctrine of the impurity of matter, and he carried it to its logical conclusion, both in speculation and practice. He, therefore, asserting the incredibility of an incarnate God, denied the corporeal reality of the flesh of Christ. His body was a mere semblance and not of human substance, was not born of a human mother, and the divine nature was not degraded by contact with the flesh.<sup>4</sup> Marcion finds in Paul the purest promulgator of the truth as he understands it, and emboldened by the Epistle to the Galatians, in which that Apostle rebukes even Apostles for "not walking uprightly according to the truth of the Gospel," he accuses the other Apostles of having depraved the pure form of the Gospel doctrines delivered to them by Jesus,<sup>5</sup> "mixing up matters of the Law with the words of the Saviour."<sup>6</sup>

Tertullian accuses Marcion of having written the work in which he details the contrasts between Judaism and Christianity, of which we have given the briefest sketch,

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Marc., iv. 1.

<sup>2</sup> We give this quotation as a *résumé* by an English historian and divine, but the idea of the "New Testament remodelled by Marcion," is a mere ecclesiastical imagination.

<sup>3</sup> Milman, Hist. of Christianity, 1867, ii. p. 77 f.

<sup>4</sup> Tertullian, Adv. Marc., iii. 8 ff.

<sup>5</sup> Adv. Marc., iv. 3.

<sup>6</sup> Apostolos enim admiscuisse ea quæ sunt legalia salvatoris verbis. Irenæus, Adv. Hær., iii. 2, § 2; cf. iii. 12, § 12.

as an introduction and encouragement to belief in his Gospel, which he ironically calls "the Gospel according to the Antithesis"<sup>1</sup> and the charge which the Fathers bring against Marcion is that he laid violent hands on the Canonical Gospel of Luke, and manipulated it to suit his own views. "For certainly the whole aim which he has elaborated in drawing up the 'Anti-thesis,'" says Tertullian, "amounts to this: that he may prove a disagreement between the Old and New Testament, so that his own Christ may be separated from the Creator, as of the other God, as alien from the Law and the Prophets. For this purpose it is certain that he has erased whatever was contrary to his own opinion, as though in conspiracy with the Creator it had been interpolated by his partisans, but has retained everything consistent with his own opinion."<sup>2</sup> The whole hypothesis that Marcion's Gospel is a mutilated version of our third Synoptic in fact rests upon this accusation. It is obvious that if it can not be shown that Marcion's Gospel was our Canonical Gospel merely garbled by the Heresiarch for dogmatic reasons in the interest of his system,—for there could not be any other conceivable reason for tampering with it,—the claim of Marcion's Gospel to the rank of a more original and authentic work than Luke's acquires double force. We must, therefore, inquire into the character of the variations between the so-called heretical, and the

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Marc., iv. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Certe enim totum, quod elaboravit, etiam Antitheses præstruendo, in hoc cogit, ut veteris et novi testamenti diversitatem constituat, proinde Christum suum a creatore separaturus ut dei alterius, ut alienum legis et prophetarum. Certe propterea contraria quæque sententiæ suæ erasit, conspirantia cum creatore, quasi ab adsertoribus eius intexta; competentia autem sententiæ suæ reservavit. Adv. Marc., iv. 6.

Canonical Gospels, and see how far the hypothesis of the Fathers accords with the contents of Marcion's Gospel so far as we are acquainted with it.

At the very outset we are met by the singular phenomenon, that both Tertullian and Epiphanius, who accuse Marcion of omitting everything which was unfavourable, and retaining only what was favourable to his views, undertake to refute him out of what remains in his Gospel. Tertullian says: "It will be proved that he has shown the same defect of blindness of heresy both in that which he has erased and that which he has retained."<sup>1</sup> Epiphanius also confidently states that, out of that which Marcion has allowed to remain of the Gospel, he can prove his fraud and imposture, and thoroughly refute him.<sup>2</sup> Now if Marcion mutilated Luke to so little purpose as this, what was the use of his touching it at all? He is known as an able man, the most influential and distinguished of all the heretical leaders of the second century, and it seems absurd to suppose that, on the theory of his erasing or altering all that contradicted his system, he should have done his work so imperfectly.<sup>3</sup> The Fathers say that he endeavours to get rid of the contradictory passages which remain by a system of false interpretation; but surely he would not have allowed himself to be driven to this extremity, leaving weapons in the hands of his opponents, when he might so easily have excised the obnoxious texts along with the rest? It is admitted by critics, moreover, that passages said to have been

<sup>1</sup> *Tunc et illa constabit eodem vitio hæreticæ cæcitatæ erasa, quo et hæc reservata.* Adv. Marc., iv. 6.

<sup>2</sup> Hær., xlii. 9 f., p. 310 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 75.

omitted by Marcion are often not opposed to his system at all, and sometimes, indeed, even in favour of it;<sup>1</sup> and on the other hand, that passages which were retained are contradictory to his views.<sup>2</sup> This is not intelligible upon any theory of arbitrary garbling of a Gospel in the interest of a system.

It may be well to give a few instances of the anomalies presented, upon this hypothesis, by Marcion's text. It is generally agreed that the verses Luke vii. 29—35, were wanting in Marcion's Gospel.<sup>3</sup> Hahn accounts for the omission of verses 29, 30, regarding the baptism of John, because they represented the relation of the Baptist to Jesus in a way which Marcion did not admit.<sup>4</sup> But as he allowed the preceding verses to remain, such a proceeding was absurd. In verse 26 he calls John a prophet, and much more than a prophet, and in the next verse (27) quotes respecting him the words of Malachi iii. 1: "This is he of whom it is written: Behold I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee." It is impossible

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 423 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Just.*, p. 444 ff.; *Nicolas*, *Et. sur les Ev. Apocr.*, p. 151; *Ritschl*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1851, p. 529 f.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 263 ff., 273 ff.; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 132; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. Marcion's*, p. 107 ff.; cf. *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1850, p. 214 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 423 ff.; *Guericke*, *Gesammtgesch. N. T.*, p. 231, *anm. 1*; cf. *Ebrard*, *Wiss. krit. d. evang. Gesch.*, p. 810, *anm. 2*; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 75 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, *Quellensamml.*, p. 362, *anm. 13*; *Neander*, *Allg. K. G.*, ii. p. 816; *Nicolas*, *Et. sur les Ev. Apocr.*, p. 151 ff.; *Ritschl*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1851, p. 529 f.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 263 ff., 273 ff.; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. Marcion's*, p. 107 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. J.*, p. 444 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Tertullian and Epiphanius pass them over in silence. Cf. *Hahn*, *Ev. Marc. in Thilo*, *Cod. Apocr. N. T.*, p. 418, *anm. 24*; *Ritschl*, *Das Ev. Marc.*, p. 78 f.; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. Marc.*, p. 156 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, though somewhat doubtful, seems to agree: *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 407; cf. 441; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 125.

<sup>4</sup> *Das Ev. Marc.*, p. 147.

on any reasonable ground to account for the retention of such honourable mention of the Baptist, if verses 29-30 were erased for such dogmatic reasons.<sup>1</sup> Still more incomprehensible on such a hypothesis is the omission of Luke vii. 31—35, where that generation is likened unto children playing in the market-place and calling to each other: "We piped unto you and ye danced not," and Jesus continues: "For John is come neither eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil (34). The Son of Man is come, eating and drinking; and ye say: Behold a gluttonous man and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners." Hahn attributes the omission of these verses to the sensuous representation they give of Jesus as eating and drinking.<sup>2</sup> What was the use of eliminating these verses when he allowed to remain unaltered verse 36 of the same chapter,<sup>3</sup> in which Jesus is invited to eat with the Pharisee, and goes into his house and sits down to meat? or verses 29—35,<sup>4</sup> in which Jesus accepts the feast of Levi, and defends his disciples for eating and drinking against the murmurs of the Scribes and Pharisees? or xv. 2,<sup>5</sup> where the Pharisees say of him: "This man receiveth sinners and eateth with them?" How absurdly

<sup>1</sup> *Ritschl*, Das Ev. Marc., p. 78 f.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 263; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 132; cf. *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marcion, p. 156; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 406 f.; *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 18; *Epiphanius*, Hær., xlii., Sch. viii. f.; Ref. viii. f.

<sup>2</sup> Das Ev. M., p. 147; Evang. Marc. in *Thilo*, Cod. ap. N. T., p. 418, anm. 24, 33; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marc., p. 156; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. Marc., p. 78 f.; cf. *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 407.

<sup>3</sup> *Hahn*, Evang. Marc. *Thilo*, p. 418, 419, anm. 25; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marc., p. 157.

<sup>4</sup> *Hahn*, Ev. Marc. in *Thilo*, p. 408; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marc., p. 155; *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 11.

<sup>5</sup> *Hahn*, Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 451; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marc., p. 162; cf. *Tertullian*, Adv. M., iv. 32.

futile the omission of the one passage for dogmatic reasons, while so many others were allowed to remain unaltered.<sup>1</sup>

The next passage to which we must refer is one of the most important in connection with Marcion's Docetic doctrine of the person of Jesus. It is said that he omitted viii. 19: "And his mother and his brethren came to him and could not come at him for the crowd," and that he inserted in verse 21, *τίς μου μήτηρ καὶ οἱ ἀδελφοί*; making the whole episode in his Gospel read (20): "And it was told him by certain which said: Thy mother and thy brethren stand without desiring to see thee: 21. But he answered and said unto them: Who are my mother and brethren? My mother and my brethren are these," &c.<sup>2</sup> The omission of verse 19 is said to have been made because, according to Marcion, Christ was not born like an ordinary man, and consequently had neither mother nor brethren.<sup>3</sup> The mere fact, however, that Marcion retains verse 20, in which the crowd simply state as a matter fully recognized the relationship of those who were seeking Jesus, renders the omission of the preceding verse useless,<sup>4</sup> except on the ground of mere redundancy.

Marcion is reported not to have had the word *αἰώνιος* in. x. 25,<sup>5</sup> so that the question of the lawyer simply ran:

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 263; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 132.

<sup>2</sup> *Hahn*, Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 421, ann. 26; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. Marc., p. 150; *Epiph.*, Hær., xliii., Sch. 12; *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 19, de carne Christi, § 7; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 125; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 408 f., 441; *Baur*, Das Markusev., p. 192 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Hahn*, Das Ev. M., p. 148 f.; Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 421, ann. 27; cf. *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 56 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 264.

<sup>5</sup> *Hahn*, Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 434; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 159; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. J., p. 441; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 126.

“Master, what shall I do to inherit life?” The omission of this word is supposed to have been made in order to make the passage refer back to the God of the Old Testament, who promises only long life on earth for keeping the commandments, whilst it is only in the Gospel that *eternal* life is promised.<sup>1</sup> But in the corresponding passage, xviii. 18,<sup>2</sup> the *αἰώνιος* is retained, and the question of the ruler is: “Good master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?” It has been argued that the introduction of the one thing still lacking (verse 22) after the keeping of the law and the injunction to sell all and give to the poor, changes the context and justifies the use there of *eternal* life as the reward for fulfilment of the higher commandment.<sup>3</sup> This reasoning, however, seems to us without grounds, and merely an ingenious attempt to account for an embarrassing fact. In reality the very same context occurs in the other passage, for, explaining the meaning of the word “neighbour,” love to whom is enjoined as part of the way to obtain “life,” Jesus inculcates the very same duty as in xviii. 22, of distributing to the poor (cf. x. 28—37). There seems, therefore, no reasonable motive for omitting the word from the one passage whilst retaining it in the other.<sup>4</sup>

The passage in Luke xi. 29—32, from the concluding words of verse 29, “but the sign of the prophet Jonah”

<sup>1</sup> *Hahn*, Das Ev. M., p. 161; *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 435, an. 42; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 58, p. 159; *Tertullian*, Adv. M. iv. 25; *Baur*, Das Markusev., p. 193.

<sup>2</sup> *Hahn*, Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 461; *Epiph.*, Hær., xlii. Sch. 50; *Tertullian*, Adv. M. iv. 36.

<sup>3</sup> *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 58; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Just., p. 426; *Baur*, Das Markusev., p. 193.

<sup>4</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 264.

was not found in Marcion's Gospel.<sup>1</sup> This omission is accounted for on the ground that such a respectful reference to the Old Testament was quite contrary to the system of Marcion.<sup>2</sup> Verses 49—51 of the same chapter, containing the saying of the "Wisdom of God," regarding the sending of the prophets that the Jews might slay them, and their blood be required of that generation, were also omitted.<sup>3</sup> The reason given for this omission is, that the words of the God of the Old Testament are too respectfully quoted and adopted to suit the views of the Heretic.<sup>4</sup> Both Hilgenfeld<sup>5</sup> and Baur<sup>6</sup> agree that the words in verses 31—32, "And a greater than Solomon—than Jonah is here," might well have been allowed to remain in the text, and indeed the superiority of Christ over the kings and prophets of the Old Testament which is asserted directly suits and supports the system of Marcion. How much less, however, is the omission of these passages to be explained upon any intelligent dogmatic principle, when we find in Marcion's text the passage in which Jesus justifies his conduct on the Sabbath by the example of David (vi. 3—4),<sup>7</sup> and that in which he assures the disciples of the greatness of their reward in heaven for the persecu-

<sup>1</sup> *Hahn*, *Ev. M.* in *Thilo*, 438, anm. 46; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 151; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 126; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. J.*, p. 441; *Epiph.*, *Hær.*, xlii. Sch. 25; cf. *Ref.* It is conjectured that the words *πομπή ἐστὶ* were also wanting. Epiphanius does not use them, but he is thought to be quoting "freely." The words, however, equally fail in *Codex 235*.

<sup>2</sup> *Hahn*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 163; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 58.

<sup>3</sup> *Hahn*, *Das Ev. M.* in *Thilo*, 439, anm. 47; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 151.

<sup>4</sup> *Hahn*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 165; *Ev. M.* in *Thilo*, 440, anm. 47; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 58 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Die Evv. J.*, p. 453.

<sup>6</sup> *Das Markusev.*, p. 194.

<sup>7</sup> *Hahn*, *Ev. M.* in *Thilo*, 410; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, 155.

tions they were to endure : " For behold your reward is great in heaven : for after the same manner did their fathers unto the prophets " (vi. 23).<sup>1</sup> As we have seen, Jesus is also allowed to quote an Old Testament prophecy (vii. 27) as fulfilled in the coming of John to prepare the way for himself. The questions which Jesus puts to the Scribes (xx. 41—44) regarding the Christ being David's son, with the quotation from Ps. cx. 1, which Marcion is stated to have retained,<sup>2</sup> equally refute the supposition as to his motive for " omitting " xi. 29 ff. It has been argued with regard to the last passage that Jesus merely uses the words of the Old Testament to meet his own theory,<sup>3</sup> but the dilemma in which Jesus places the Scribes is clearly not the real object of his question : its aim is a suggestion of the true character of the Christ. But amongst his other sins with regard to Luke's Gospel, Marcion is also accused of interpolating it. And in what way? Why the Heresiarch who is so averse to all references to the Old Testament that he is supposed to erase them, actually, amongst his few interpolations, adds a reference to the Old Testament. Between xvii. 14 and 15 (some critics say in verse 18) Marcion introduced the verse which is found in Luke iv. 27 : " And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed saving Naaman, the Syrian."<sup>4</sup> Now is it conceivable that a man who inserts, as it is said, references to the

<sup>1</sup> *Hahn, Ev. M. in Thilo*, 412; *Volkmar, Das Ev. M.* 156.

<sup>2</sup> *Hahn, in Thilo*, 468; *Volkmar, ib.*, p. 165.

<sup>3</sup> *Volkmar, ib.*, p. 59 f.; *Hilgenfeld, Die Ev. J.*, p. 453.

<sup>4</sup> *Epiph., Hær.*, xlii. Sch. 48; *Tertullian, Adv. M.*, iv. 35; *Hahn, Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 457, anm. 67; *De Wette, Einl. N. T.*, p. 128 f.; *Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. J.*, p. 424; *Baur, Das Markusev.*, p. 213; *Volkmar, Theol. Jahrb.*, 1850, p. 131; *Das Ev. M.*, p. 163, p. 82 ff.; *Eichhorn, Einl. N. T.*, p. 77.

Old Testament into his text so gratuitously, can have been so inconsistent as to have omitted these passages because they contain similar references? We must say that the whole of the reasoning regarding these passages omitted and retained, and the fine distinctions which are drawn between them, are anything but convincing. A general theory being adopted, nothing is more easy than to harmonise everything with it in this way; nothing is more easy than to assign some reason, good or bad, apparently in accordance with the foregone conclusion, why one passage was retained, and why another was omitted, but in almost every case the reasoning might with equal propriety be reversed if the passages were so, and the retention of the omitted passage as well as the omission of that retained be quite as reasonably justified. The critics who have examined Marcion's Gospel do not trouble themselves to inquire if the general connection of the text be improved by the absence of passages supposed to be omitted, but simply try whether the supposed omissions are "explainable on the ground of a dogmatic tendency in Marcion."<sup>1</sup> In fact the argument throughout is based upon foregone conclusions, and rarely upon any solid grounds whatever. The retention of such passages as we have quoted above renders the omission of the other for dogmatic reasons quite purposeless.<sup>2</sup>

The passage, xii. 6, 7, which argues that as the sparrows are not forgotten before God, and the hairs of our head are numbered, the disciples need not fear, was not found in Marcion's Gospel.<sup>3</sup> The supposed omission

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 62.

<sup>2</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, p. 264; *Ritschl*, *Das. Ev. M.*, p. 87 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Hahn*, *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 441; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 151, cf. 94; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. J.*, p. 411; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1853, p. 204.

is explained on the ground that, according to Marcion's system, God does not interest himself about such trifles as sparrows and the hairs of our head, but merely about souls.<sup>1</sup> That such reasoning is absurd, however, is apparent from the fact, that Marcion's text had verse 24 of the same chapter:<sup>2</sup> "Consider the ravens," &c., &c., and "God feedeth them:" &c., and also v. 28,<sup>3</sup> "But if God so clothe the grass," &c., &c., "how much more will he clothe you, O! ye of little faith?" As no one ventures to argue that Marcion limited the providence of God to the ravens, and to the grass, but excluded the sparrows and the hair, no dogmatic reason can be assigned for the omission of the one, whilst the other is retained.<sup>4</sup>

The first nine verses of ch. xiii. were likewise absent from Marcion's text,<sup>5</sup> wherein Jesus declares that like the Galilæans, whose blood Pilate had mixed with their sacrifices (v. 1, 2), and the eighteen upon whom the tower in Siloam fell (v. 4), "except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish," (v. 3 and 5), and then recites the parable of the unfruitful fig-tree (v. 6—9), which the master of the vineyard orders to be cut down (v. 7), but then spares for a season (v. 8, 9). The theory advanced to account for the asserted "omission" of these

<sup>1</sup> *Hahn*, Das Ev. M., p. 167; *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 441, anm. 49.

<sup>2</sup> *Hahn*, *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 442.

<sup>3</sup> *Hahn*, *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 443, anm. 51; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 160; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 127. This verse was wanting according to *Epiph.*, Sch., 31, but was in the text by the decided statement of *Tertullian*, Adv. M., iv. 29; *Volkmar* (Das Ev. M., 46 ff.), and *Hilgenfeld* (Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 204), agree that this arose solely from an accidental absence of the verse in the copy of Epiphanius.

<sup>4</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 265; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. M., p. 91; cf. *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 132.

<sup>5</sup> *Hahn*, *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 446; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 151. (He omits xiii. 1—10); *Hilgenfeld*, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 204. (He had previously, —*Dio Ev. J.*, p. 441,—only admitted the absence of xiii. 1—5); *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 125 f.

verses is that they could not be reconciled with Marcion's system, according to which the good God never positively punishes the wicked, but merely leaves them to punish themselves in that, by not accepting the proffered grace, they have no part in the blessedness of Christians.<sup>1</sup> In his earlier work, Volkmar distinctly admitted that the whole of this passage might be omitted without prejudice to the text of Luke, and that he could not state any ground, in connection with Marcion's system, which rendered its omission either necessary or even conceivable. He then decided that the passage was not contained at all in the version of Luke, which Marcion possessed, but was inserted at a later period in our Codices.<sup>2</sup> It was only on his second attempt to account for all omissions on dogmatic grounds that he argued as above. In like manner Hilgenfeld also, with Rettig, considered that the passage did not form part of the original Luke, so that here again Marcion's text was free from a very abrupt passage, not belonging to the more pure and primitive Gospel.<sup>3</sup> Baur recognizes not only that there is no dogmatic ground to explain the omission, but on the contrary, that the passage fully agrees with the system of Marcion.<sup>4</sup> The total insufficiency of the argument to explain the omission, however, is apparent from the numerous passages, which were allowed to remain in the text, which still more clearly outraged this part of Marcion's system. In the parable of the great supper, xiv. 15—24, the Lord is angry (v. 21), and declares that none of those who were

<sup>1</sup> *Hahn*, Das Ev. M., p. 175; Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 446, anm. 55; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 64 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1850, p. 207 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Die Ev. J.*, p. 470.

<sup>4</sup> *Das Markusev.*, p. 195 f.

bidden should taste of his supper (v. 24). In xii. 5, Jesus warns his own disciples : "Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell ; yea, I say unto you : fear him." It is absurd to argue that Marcion here understands the God of the Old Testament, the Creator, for he would thus represent his Christ as forewarning his own disciples to fear the power of that very Demiurge, whose reign he had come to terminate. Then again, in the parable of the wise steward, and the foolish servants, xii. 41 ff, he declares (v. 46), that the lord of the foolish servant "will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers," and (vs. 47, 48) that the servants shall be beaten with stripes, in proportion to their fault. In the parable of the nobleman who goes to a far country and leaves the ten pounds with his servants, xix. 11 ff, the lord orders his enemies, who would not that he should reign over them, to be brought and slain before him (v. 27). Then how very much there was in the Epistles of Paul, which he upheld, of a still more contradictory character. There is no dogmatic reason for such inconsistency.<sup>1</sup>

Marcion is accused of having falsified xiii. 28 in the following manner : "There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see *all the just* (*πάντας τοὺς δικαίους*) in the kingdom of God, but you yourselves being thrust, *and bound* (*καὶ κρατουμένους*) without." The substitution of "all the just" for "Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets," is one of those variations which the supporter of the dogmatic theory greedily lays hold of, as bearing evident tokens of falsification in antijudaistic interest.<sup>2</sup> But Marcion had in his Gospel

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 265 ; *Baur*, Das Markusev. p. 195.

<sup>2</sup> *Hahn*, Das Ev. M., p. 177 ; Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 448, anm. 58 ; cf.

the parable of the rich man and Lazarus, xvi. 19—31, where the beggar is carried up into Abraham's bosom.<sup>1</sup> And again, there was the account of the Transfiguration, ix. 28—36, in which Moses and Elias are seen in converse with Jesus.<sup>2</sup> The alteration of the one passage for dogmatic reasons, whilst the parable of Lazarus is retained, would have been useless. Hilgenfeld, however, in agreement with Baur and Ritschl, has shown that Marcion's reading *πάντας τοὺς δικαίους* is evidently the contrast to the *ἐργάται τῆς ἀδικίας* of the preceding verse, and is superior to the canonical version, which was either altered after Matth. viii. 12, or with the anti-Marcionitish object of bringing the rejected Patriarchs into recognition.<sup>3</sup> The whole theory in this case again goes into thin air, and it is consequently weakened if not destroyed in all.

Marcion's Gospel did not contain the parable of the Prodigal Son, xv. 11—23.<sup>4</sup> The omission of this passage,

*Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 62 f., and *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. J., p. 420, who explain the omission differently, and consider Hahn in error.

<sup>1</sup> *Tertullian* (Adv. M., iv. 34), gives an elaborate explanation of the interpretation by which Marcion does away with the offensive part of the parable, but in this and every case erasure was surely more simple than explanation if Marcion erased anything at all.

<sup>2</sup> *Hahn*, in verse 30 reads *συνέστησαν* for *συνελάλουν*, the two men "stood" with him instead of "talked" with him, as in Luke. This he derives from the obscure words of Tertullian, which, however, really refer to v. 32 (Adv. M. iv. 22), but *Epiphanius* (Sch. 17) has very distinctly the reading of Luke. Hahn omits v. 31 altogether, on the very undecided evidence of Tertullian and Epiphanius; *Hahn*, Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 427, anm. \*; *Das Ev. M.*, p. 154; *Volkmar* (Das Ev. Marc., p. 158, cf. 151), and *Hilgenfeld* (Die Evv. J., p. 411 f., 466 f.), prove that the reading was unaltered in v. 30, and that v. 31 stood in Marcion's text. The whole discussion, as showing the uncertainty of the text, is very instructive. Cf. *Ritschl*, Das Ev. M., p. 80 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. J., p. 470; *Baur*, Das Markusev., p. 206 f.; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. M., p. 94 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Hahn*, Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 452; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 162; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. J., p. 441; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 128; *Epiphanius*,

which is universally recognized as in the purest Paulinian spirit, is accounted for partly on the ground that a portion of it (v. 22—32) was repugnant to the ascetic discipline of Marcion, to whom the killing of the fatted calf, the feasting, dancing and merry-making, must have been obnoxious, and, partly because, understanding under the similitude of the elder son the Jews, and of the younger son the Gentiles, the identity of the God of the Jews and of the Christians would be recognized.<sup>1</sup> There is, however, the very greatest doubt admitted as to the interpretation which Marcion would be likely to put upon this parable, and certainly the representation which it gives of the Gentiles, not only as received completely on a par with the Jews, but as only having been lost for a time, and found again, is thoroughly in harmony with the teaching of Paul, who was held by Marcion to be the only true Apostle. It could not, therefore, have been repugnant to him. Any points of disagreement could very easily have been explained away, as his critics are so fond of asserting to be his practice in other passages.<sup>2</sup> As to the supposed dislike of Marcion for the festive character of the parable, what object could he have had for omitting this, when he retained the parable of the

Hær., xlii. Sch. 42; *Tertullian* (*Adv. Marc.*, iv. 32) passes it over in silence.

<sup>1</sup> *Hahn*, *Das. Ev. M.*, p. 182; *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 452, anm. 62; *Ols-hausen*, *Ectheit. d. vier Can. Evv.*, 1823, p. 208 f. *Hahn* and *Ols-hausen* did not hold the second part of this explanation, but applied the parable merely to Judaic and Gentile Christians, under which circumstances critics would not admit reason for the omission. *Volkmar*, *Das Evv. M.*, p. 66; *Baur*, *Das Markusev.*, p. 194 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Volkmar* talks of the intentional omission of the parable by Marcion as being "fully conceivable" (völlig begreiflich), but it is almost impossible to find anything for which a reason cannot be discovered if the question asked be: "Is the intentional omission on any ground conceivable?"

great supper, xiv. 15—24; the feast in the house of Levi, v. 27—32; the statements of Jesus eating with the Pharisees, vii. 36, xv. 2? If Marcion had any objection to such matters, he had still greater to marriage, and yet Jesus justifies his disciples for eating and drinking by the similitude of a marriage feast, himself being the bridegroom: v. 34, 35, "Can ye make the sons of the bridechamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them: then will they fast in those days." And he bids his disciples to be ready "like men that wait for their lord, when he shall return from the wedding," (xii. 36), and makes another parable on a wedding feast (xiv. 7—10). Leaving these passages, it is impossible to see any dogmatic reason for excluding the others.<sup>1</sup>

The omission of a passage in every way so suitable to Marcion's system as the parable of the vineyard, xx. 9—16, is equally unintelligible upon the dogmatic theory.

Marcion is accused of falsifying xvi. 17, by altering τοῦ νόμου to τῶν λόγων μου,<sup>2</sup> making the passage read: "But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than for one tittle of my words to fail." The words in the canonical Gospel, it is argued, were too repugnant to him to be allowed to remain unaltered, representing as they do the permanency of "the Law" to which he was opposed.<sup>3</sup> Upon this hypothesis why did he leave

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeitalter, i. p. 266 f.; *Nicolas*, Et. sur les Ev. apocr., p. 153; cf. *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. J., p. 454.

<sup>2</sup> *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 151; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. J., p. 441; *Hahn*, reads τῶν λόγων τοῦ κυρίου. Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 454; *Das Ev. M.*, p. 185.

<sup>3</sup> *Hahn*, Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 454, anm. 63; *Das Ev. M.*, p. 185; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 65 f.

x. 25 f. (especially v. 26) and xviii. 18 ff, in which the keeping of the law is made essential to life? or xvii. 14, where Jesus bids the lepers conform to the requirements of the law? or xvi. 29, where the answer is given to the rich man pleading for his relatives: "They have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them"?<sup>1</sup> Hilgenfeld, however, with others, admits that it has been fully proved that the reading in Marcion's text is not an arbitrary alteration at all, but the original expression, and that the version in Luke xvi. 17, on the contrary, is a variation of the original introduced to give the passage an anti-Marcionitish tendency.<sup>2</sup> Here, again, it is clear that the supposed falsification is rather a falsification on the part of the editor of the third canonical Gospel.<sup>3</sup>

One more illustration may be given. Marcion is accused of omitting from xix. 9 the words: "forasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham," (*καθότι καὶ αὐτὸς υἱὸς Ἀβραάμ ἐστιν*) leaving merely: "And Jesus said unto him: This day is salvation come to this house."<sup>4</sup> Marcion's system, it is said, could not tolerate the phrase which was erased.<sup>5</sup> It was one, however, eminently in the spirit of his Apostle Paul, and in his favourite Epistle to the Galatians he retained the very parallel

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 267; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 75.

<sup>2</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Ev. J.*, p. 470; *Ritschl*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 97 f.; *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 402; *Das Markusev.*, p. 196 ff. *Baur*, in the last-mentioned work, argues that even Tertullian himself (*Adv. M.*, iv. 33), represents Marcion's reading as the original.

<sup>3</sup> *Ritschl*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 98.

<sup>4</sup> *Hahn*, *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 463; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 152; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. J.*, p. 442.

<sup>5</sup> *Hahn*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 195; *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 463, anm. 74. "Quæ non potuit ferre Marcion, ejus Christus potius servavit eum quem filii Abrahami damnabant."

passage iii. 7, "Ye know therefore that they which are of faith, these are the sons of Abraham."<sup>1</sup> How could he, therefore, find any difficulty in such words addressed to the repentant Zacchæus, who had just believed in the mission of Christ? Moreover, why should he have erased the words here, and left them standing in xiii. 16, in regard to the woman healed of the "spirit of infirmity:" "and ought not this woman, *being a daughter of Abraham*, whom Satan hath bound, lo! these eighteen years, to be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?" No reasoning can explain away the substantial identity of the two phrases. Upon what principle of dogmatic interest, then, can Marcion have erased the one while he retained the other?<sup>2</sup>

We have taken a very few passages for illustration and treated them very briefly, but it may roundly be said that there is scarcely a single variation of Marcion's text regarding which similar reasons are not given, and which do not present similar anomalies in consequence of what has elsewhere been retained.<sup>3</sup> As we have already stated, much that is really contradictory to Marcion's system was found in his text, and much which either is not opposed or is favourable to it is omitted

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Rom. iv. 11, 12, 16. It has been argued from Tertullian's obscure reference that Marcion omitted the last phrase of Gal. iii. 7, but *Epiph.* does not say so, and the statement of Jerome (*Comm. in Ep. ad Gal.*) was evidently not from the direct source, but was probably derived from a hasty perusal of Tertullian, and there is no real ground whatever for affirming it. Even Tertullian himself does not positively do so. *Ritschl*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 154 ff.; *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 412 ff.; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 274.

<sup>2</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 268; *Ritschl*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 98 f.; cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. J.*, p. 427.

<sup>3</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 411 ff.; *Das Markusev.*, p. 191 f.; *Nicolas*, *Et. sur les Ev. apocr.*, p. 155; *Ritschl*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1851, p. 530 ff.; cf. *Das Ev. M.*, p. 46; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 274 f.

and cannot be set down to arbitrary alteration. Moreover, it has never been shown that the supposed alterations were made by Marcion himself,<sup>1</sup> and till this is done the pith of the whole theory is wanting. There is no principle of intelligent motive which can account for the anomalies presented by Marcion's Gospel, considered as a version of Luke mutilated and falsified in the interest of his system. The contrast of what is retained with that which is omitted reduces the hypothesis *ad absurdum*. Marcion was too able a man to do his work so imperfectly, if he had proposed to assimilate the Gospel of Luke to his own views. As it is avowedly necessary to explain away by false and forced interpretations requiring intricate definitions,<sup>2</sup> very much of what was allowed to remain in his text, it is inconceivable that he should not have cut the Gordian knot with the same unscrupulous knife with which it is asserted he excised the rest. The ingenuity of most able and learned critics endeavouring to discover whether a motive in the interest of his system cannot be conceived for every alteration, is, notwithstanding the evident scope afforded by the procedure, often foiled. Yet a more elastic hypothesis could not possibly have been advanced, and that the text obstinately refuses to fit into it, is even more than could have been expected. Marcion is like a prisoner at the bar without witnesses, who is treated from the first as guilty, attacked by able and passionate adversaries who warp every possible circumstance against him, and yet who cannot be convicted. The foregone conclusion by which every supposed omission from his Gospel is explained, is, as we have shown, almost in

<sup>1</sup> Westcott, *On the Canon*, p. 274.

<sup>2</sup> Hilgenfeld, *Die Evv. J.*, p. 443 f.

every case contradicted by passages which have been allowed to remain, and this is rendered more significant by the fact, which is generally admitted, that Marcion's text contains many readings which are manifestly superior to, and more original than, the form in which the passages stand in our third Synoptic.<sup>1</sup> The only one of these to which we shall refer is the interesting variation from the passage in Luke xi. 2, in the substitution of a prayer for the Holy Spirit for the "hallowed be thy name,"—*ἐλθέτω τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμά σου ἐφ' ἡμᾶς* instead of *ἁγιασθήτω τὸ ὄνομά σου*. The former is recognized to be the true original reading. This phrase is evidently referred to in v. 13. We are, therefore, indebted to Marcion for the correct version even of "the Lord's Prayer."<sup>2</sup>

There can be no doubt that Marcion's Gospel bore great analogy to our Luke, although it was very considerably shorter. It is, however, unnecessary to repeat that there were many Gospels in the second century which, although nearly related to those which have become canonical, were independent works, and the most favourable interpretation which can be given of the relationship between our three Synoptics leaves them very much in a line with Marcion's work. His Gospel was chiefly distinguished

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, Das Markusev., p. 195 ff., p. 223 ff.; *Anger*, Synops. Ev. Proleg., p. xxv. ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. J., p. 473; Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 222 ff.; Die Evangelien, p. 30; *Köstlin*, Der Urspr. synopt. Evv., p. 303; *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., 1788, i. p. 40, p. 342 f., p. 751; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 72 ff.; *Reuss*, Rev. de Théol., 1857, p. 4; *Ritschl*, Theol. Jahrb., 1851, p. 530 ff.; Das Ev. M., p. 46; *Bertholdt*, Einl., 1813, iii. p. 1294 ff.; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 187—199, p. 256 f.; Der Ursprung, p. 75; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 132 ff.; *Zeller*, Die Apostelgesch., p. 13 ff., p. 23 ff.; cf. *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 275.

<sup>2</sup> *Ritschl*, Das Ev. M., p. 71; *Baur*, Das Markusev., p. 207; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 197 f., p. 256 f.; Der Ursprung, p. 75; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. J., p. 441, p. 415 f.; *Anger*, Synops. Ev., p. 41; cf. *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 26.

by a shorter text,<sup>1</sup> but besides large and important omissions there are a few additions,<sup>2</sup> and very many variations of text. The whole of the first two chapters of Luke, as well as all the third, was wanting, with the exception of part of the first verse of the third chapter, which, joined to iv. 31, formed the commencement of the Gospel. Of chapter iv. verses 1—13, 17—20 and 24 were likewise probably absent. Some of the other more important omissions are xi. 29—32, 49—51, xiii. 1—9, 29—35, xv. 11—32, xvii. 5—10 (probably), xviii. 31—34, xix. 29—48, xx. 9—19, 37—38, xxi. 1—4, 18, 21—22, xxii. 16—18, 28—30, 35—38, 49—51, and there is great doubt about the concluding verses of xxiv. from 44 to the end, but it may have terminated with v. 49. It is not certain whether the order was the same as Luke,<sup>3</sup> but there are instances of decided variation, especially at the opening. As the peculiarities of the opening variations have had an important effect in inclining some critics towards the acceptance of the mutilation hypothesis,<sup>4</sup> it may be well for us briefly to examine the more important amongst them.

Marcion's Gospel is generally said to have commenced thus: "In the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Jesus came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee."<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 53 ff., p. 58 ff., 68 ff.; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 2 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 80 f.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 77; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 128.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Epiphanius*, Hær., xlii., ed. Pet., p. 312; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 46; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 141; *Hilgenfeld*, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 199.

<sup>4</sup> *Reuss*, Rev. de Théol., 1857, p. 54; *Baur*, Das Markusev., p. 209; *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch., p. 232.

<sup>5</sup> *Hahn* incorrectly reads, "God came down" (ὁ θεὸς κατῆλθεν) Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 403; cf. *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 150, anm. 3; *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 406, anm. \*; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. J., p. 398, anm. 1.

There are various slightly differing readings of this. Ephiaphianus gives the opening words, Ἐν τῷ πεντεκαίδεκάτῳ ἔτει Τιβερίου Καίσαρος, καὶ τὰ ἐξῆς.<sup>1</sup> Tertullian has: Anno quintodecimo principatus Tiberiani. . . . descendisse in civitatem Galilææ Capharnaum."<sup>2</sup> The καὶ τὰ ἐξῆς of Ephiaphianus has permitted the conjecture that there might have been an additional indication of the time, such as "Pontius Pilate being governor of Judæa,"<sup>3</sup> but this has not been generally adopted.<sup>4</sup> It is not necessary for us to discuss the sense in which the "came down" (κατηλθε) was interpreted, since it is the word used in Luke. Marcion's Gospel then proceeds with iv. 31: "and taught them on the sabbath days, (v. 32), and they were exceedingly astonished at his teaching, for his word was power." Then follow vs. 33—39 containing the healing of the man with an unclean spirit,<sup>5</sup> and of Simon's wife's mother, with the important omission of the expression "of Nazareth" (Ναζαρηνέ)<sup>6</sup> after "Jesus" in the cry of the possessed (v. 34). The vs. 16—30<sup>7</sup> immediately follow iv. 39, with important

<sup>1</sup> Hær., xlii., ed. Pet., p. 312.

<sup>2</sup> Adv. M., iv. 7.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Dial. de recta fide; Orig., Opp., i. p. 868; Irenæus, Adv. Hær., i. 27, § 2.

<sup>4</sup> Volkmar has it, Das Ev. M., p. 154, 224, p. 126; Hahn omits it, Ev. M. in Thilo, l. c., as do also Baur (Unters. kan. Ev., p. 406, who after the statement of Epiph. also rightly leaves open the τῆς ἡγεμονίας and καίσαρος), and Hilgenfeld (who conjectured the second date), Die Evv. J., p. 398; cf. Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 197.

<sup>5</sup> Volkmar omits v. 37; Hahn, Hilgenfeld, and others retain it. Ritschl rejects 38, 39, the healing of Simon's wife's mother, which are passed over in silence by Tertullian (Adv. M., iv. 8), Das Ev. M., p. 76 f., in which he is joined by Baur only. The whole of this examination illustrates the uncertainties of the text and of the data on which critics attempt to reconstruct it.

<sup>6</sup> Volkmar, Das Ev. M., p. 150; cf. 56, 131; Hahn, in Thilo, p. 404, anm. 4; Hilgenfeld, Die Evv. J., p. 441; Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 198.

<sup>7</sup> Volkmar also includes the latter part of v. 14, and all of 15, "And

omissions and variations. In iv. 16, where Jesus comes to Nazareth, the words "where he had been brought up" are omitted, as is also the concluding phrase "and stood up to read."<sup>1</sup> Verses 17—19, in which Jesus reads from Isaiah, are altogether wanting.<sup>2</sup> Volkmar omits the whole of v. 20, Hilgenfeld only the first half down to the sitting down, retaining the rest; Hahn retains from "and he sat down" to the end.<sup>3</sup> Of v. 21 only: "He began to speak to them" is retained.<sup>4</sup> From v. 22 the concluding phrase: "And said: Is not this Joseph's son" is omitted,<sup>5</sup> as are also the words "in thy country" from v. 23.<sup>6</sup> Verse 24, containing the proverb: "A prophet has no honour" is wholly omitted,<sup>7</sup> but the best critics differ regarding the two following verses 25—26; they are omitted according to Hahn, Ritschl and De Wette,<sup>8</sup> but retained by Volkmar and Hilgenfeld.<sup>9</sup> Verse 27,

there went out a fame of him," &c., &c. (Das Ev. M., p. 152, cf. 154), but in this he is unsupported by others. Cf. *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 8.

<sup>1</sup> *Hahn*, in *Thilo*, p. 404, 405, anm. 7; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 150, cf. 154; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 441, cf. 399; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 124; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. M., p. 76.

<sup>2</sup> *Hahn*, in *Thilo*, 404; Das Ev. M., p. 136; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 150; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. M., 76, anm. 1; *Hilgenfeld*, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 199; In Die Evv. J., p. 399 (cf. 441), he considers it probable, but does not speak with certainty. *Tertullian* is silent, Adv. M., iv. 8.

<sup>3</sup> *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 150, 154; *Hilgenfeld*, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 199; *Hahn*, in *Thilo*, p. 404.

<sup>4</sup> *Volkmar* reads *καὶ ἤρξατο κηρύσσειν αὐτοῖς*, Das. Ev. M., p. 154; *Hahn* has *λέγει πρὸς αὐτοὺς*, in *Thilo*, p. 404; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. M., 76 anm. 1; *Hilgenfeld* suggests *λαλεῖν* for *λέγειν*, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 199.

<sup>5</sup> *Hahn*, Ev. M. in *Thilo*, p. 405; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 150, 154; *Hilgenfeld*, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 199; Die Evv. J., p. 441; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. M., p. 76, anm. 1.

<sup>6</sup> *Hahn*, in *Thilo*, p. 405; *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 150, 154; *Hilgenfeld*, Theol. Jahrb. 1853, p. 199.

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*

<sup>8</sup> *Hahn*, in *Thilo*, p. 405; *Ritschl*, Das Ev. M., 76 anm. 1; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 124.

<sup>9</sup> *Volkmar*, Das Ev. M., p. 154; *Hilgenfeld*, Th. Jahrb., 1853, p. 199.

referring to the leprosy of Naaman, which, it will be remembered, is interpolated at xvii. 14, is omitted here by most critics, but retained by Volkmar.<sup>1</sup> Verses 28—30 come next,<sup>2</sup> and the four verses iv. 40—44, which then immediately follow, complete the chapter. This brief analysis, with the accompanying notes, illustrates the uncertainty of the text, and, throughout the whole Gospel, conjecture similarly plays the larger part. We do not propose to criticise minutely the various conclusions arrived at as to the state of the text, but must emphatically remark that where there is so little certainty there cannot be any safe ground for delicate deductions regarding motives and sequences of matter. Nothing is more certain than that, if we criticise and compare the Synoptics on the same principle, we meet with the most startling results and the most irreconcilable difficulties.<sup>3</sup> The opening of Marcion's Gospel is more free from abruptness and crudity than that of Luke.

It is not necessary to show that the first three chapters of Luke present very many differences from the other Synoptics. Mark omits them altogether, and they do not even agree with the account in Matthew. We know that some of the oldest Gospels of which we have any knowledge, such as the Gospel according to the Hebrews, are said not to have had the narrative of the first two chapters at all,<sup>4</sup> and there is much more than doubt as to their originality. The mere omission of the history of

<sup>1</sup> Volkmar, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 154; *Hahn*, in *Thilo*, 405; *De Wette*. *Einkl. N. T.*, p. 124; *Ritschl*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 76, anm. 1; *Hilgenfeld*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1853, p. 199 f.

<sup>2</sup> Volkmar adds to "went his way" the words "to Capernaum," *Das Ev. M.*, p. 155.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Baur*, *Das Markusev.*, p. 211 ff.; *Volkmar*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1850, p. 126 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Epiphanius*, *Haer.*, xxix. 9; cf. xxx. 13 f.

the infancy, &c., from Mark, however, renders it unnecessary to show that the absence of these chapters from Marcion's Gospel has the strongest support and justification. Now Luke's account of the early events and geography of the Gospel history is briefly as follows: Nazareth is the permanent dwelling-place of Joseph and Mary,<sup>1</sup> but on account of the census they travel to Bethlehem, where Jesus is born;<sup>2</sup> and after visiting Jerusalem to present him at the Temple,<sup>3</sup> they return "to their own city Nazareth."<sup>4</sup> After the baptism and temptation Jesus comes to Nazareth "where he had been brought up,"<sup>5</sup> and in the course of his address to the people he says: "Ye will surely say unto me this proverb: Physician heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum do also here in thy country."<sup>6</sup> No mention, however, has before this been made of Capernaum, and no account has been given of any works done there; but, on the contrary, after escaping from the angry mob at Nazareth, Jesus goes for the first time to Capernaum, which, on being thus first mentioned, is particularized as "a city of Galilee,"<sup>7</sup> where he heals a man who had an unclean spirit, in the synagogue, who addresses him as "Jesus of Nazareth;"<sup>8</sup> and the fame of him goes throughout the country.<sup>9</sup> He cures Simon's wife's mother of a fever<sup>10</sup> and when the sun is set they bring the sick and he heals them.<sup>11</sup>

The account in Matthew contradicts this in many points, some of which had better be pointed out here. Jesus is born in Bethlehem, which is the ordinary

<sup>1</sup> Luke i. 26, ii. 4.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 22.

<sup>3</sup> iv. 23.

<sup>4</sup> iv. 37.

<sup>4</sup> ii. 39; cf. 42, 51.

<sup>7</sup> iv. 31.

<sup>10</sup> iv. 38 f.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 4.

<sup>5</sup> iv. 16.

<sup>8</sup> iv. 33 ff.

<sup>11</sup> iv. 40-44.

dwelling-place of the family;<sup>1</sup> his parents fly thence with him into Egypt,<sup>2</sup> and on their return, they dwell "in a city called Nazareth; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets: He shall be called a Nazarene."<sup>3</sup> After John's imprisonment, Jesus leaves Nazareth, and goes to dwell in Capernaum.<sup>4</sup> From that time he begins to preach.<sup>5</sup> Here then, he commences his public career in Capernaum.

In Mark, Jesus comes from Nazareth to be baptized,<sup>6</sup> and after the imprisonment of John, he comes into Galilee preaching.<sup>7</sup> In Capernaum, he heals the man of the unclean spirit, and Simon's wife's mother,<sup>8</sup> and then retires to a solitary place,<sup>9</sup> returns after some days to Capernaum<sup>10</sup> without going to Nazareth at all, and it is only at a later period that he comes to his own country, and quotes the proverb regarding a prophet.<sup>11</sup>

It is evident from this comparison, that there is very considerable difference between the three Synoptics, regarding the outset of the career of Jesus, and that there must have been decided elasticity in the tradition, and variety in the early written accounts of this part of the Gospel narrative. Luke alone commits the error of making Jesus appear in the synagogue at Nazareth, and refer to works wrought at Capernaum, before any mention had been made of his having preached or worked wonders there to justify the allusions

<sup>1</sup> Matt. ii. 1, 5 ff.

<sup>2</sup> ii. 13 ff.

<sup>3</sup> ii. 33. We need not pause here to point out that there is no such prophecy known in the Old Testament. The reference may very probably be a singularly mistaken application of the word in Isaiah xi. 1, the Hebrew word for branch being נֶזֶר, Nazer.

<sup>4</sup> iv. 12—13, for the fulfilment of another supposed prophecy, v. 14 ff.

<sup>5</sup> iv. 17.

<sup>6</sup> Mark i. 9.

<sup>7</sup> i. 14 f.

<sup>8</sup> i. 21 ff.

<sup>9</sup> i. 35.

<sup>10</sup> ii. 1.

<sup>11</sup> vi. 1—6; cf. Matt. xiii. 54.

and the consequent agitation. It is obvious that there has been confusion in the arrangement of the third Synoptic and a transposition of the episodes, clearly pointing to a combination of passages from other sources.<sup>1</sup> Now Marcion's Gospel did not contain these anomalies. It represented Jesus as first appearing in Capernaum, teaching in the synagogue, and performing mighty works there, and *then* going to Nazareth, and addressing the people with the natural reference to the previous events at Capernaum, and in this it is not only more consecutive, but also adheres more closely to the other two Synoptics.

That Luke happens to be the only one of our canonical Gospels, which has the words with which Marcion's Gospel commences, is no proof whatever that these words were original in that work, and not found in several of the πολλοὶ which existed before the third Synoptic was compiled. Indeed, the close relationship between the first three Gospels is standing testimony to the fact that one Gospel was built upon the basis of others previously existing. This which has been called "the chief prop of the mutilation hypothesis,"<sup>2</sup> has really no solid ground whatever to stand on beyond the accident that only one of three Gospels survives out of many which may have had the phrase. The fact that Marcion's Gospel really had the words of Luke, moreover, is mere conjecture, inasmuch as Epiphanius, who alone gives the Greek, shows a distinct variation of reading. He has: Ἐν τῷ πεντε-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Luke iv. 23; Matt. viii. 54; Mark vi. 1—6. We do not go into the question as to the sufficiency of the motives ascribed for the agitation at Nazareth, or the contradiction between the facts narrated as to the attempt to kill Jesus, and the statement of their wonder at his gracious words, v. 22, &c. There is no evidence where the various discrepancies arose, and no certain conclusions can be based upon such arguments.

<sup>2</sup> "Die Hauptstütze der Verstümmelungshypothese." Baur, Das Markusev., p. 209.

καιδεκάτω ἔτει Τιβερίου Καίσαρος, καὶ τὰ ἑξῆς.<sup>1</sup> Luke reads: Ἐν ἔτει δὲ πεντεκαδεκάτῳ τῆς ἡγεμονίας Τιβερίου Καίσαρος. We do not of course lay much stress upon this, but the fact that there is a variation should be noticed. Critics quietly assume, because there is a difference, that Epiphanius has abbreviated, but that is by no means sure. In any case, instances could be multiplied to show that if one of our Synoptic Gospels were lost, one of the survivors would in this manner have credit for passages which it had in reality either derived from the lost Gospel, or with it drawn from a common original source.

Now starting from the undeniable fact that the Synoptic Gospels are in no case purely original independent works, but are based upon older writings, or upon each other, each Gospel remodelling and adding to already existing materials, as the author of the third Gospel, indeed, very frankly and distinctly indicates,<sup>2</sup> it seems indeed a bold thing to affirm that Marcion's Gospel, whose existence is authenticated long before we have any evidence of Luke's,<sup>3</sup> must have been derived from the latter. Ewald has made a minute analysis of the Synoptics assigning the materials of each to what he considers their original source. We do not of course attach any very specific importance to such results, for it is clear that they must to a great extent be arbitrary and incapable of proof, but being effected without any reference to the question before us, it may be interesting

<sup>1</sup> Hæc., xlii. ed. Pet., p. 312.

<sup>2</sup> Luke i. 1—4. He professes to write in order the things in which Theophilus had already been instructed, not to tell something new, but merely that he might know the certainty thereof.

<sup>3</sup> Schweigler, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 276; Volkmar, Das Ev. M., p. i., p. 175 ff.; Der Ursprung, p. 75.

to compare Ewald's conclusions regarding the parallel part of Luke, with the first chapter of Marcion's Gospel. Ewald details the materials from which our Synoptic Gospels were derived, and the order of their composition as follows, each Synoptic of course making use of the earlier materials: I. the oldest Gospel. II. the collection of Discourses (Spruchsammlung). III. Mark. IV. the Book of earlier History. V. our present Matthew. VI. the sixth recognizable book. VII. the seventh book. VIII. the eighth book; and IX. Luke.<sup>1</sup> Now the only part of our third canonical Gospel corresponding with any part of the first chapter of Marcion's Gospel which Ewald ascribes to the author of our actual Luke is the opening date.<sup>2</sup> The passage to which the few opening words are joined, and which constitute the commencement of Marcion's Gospel, Luke iv. 31—39, is a section commencing with verse 31, and extending to the end of the chapter, thereby including verses 40—44, which Ewald assigns to Mark.<sup>3</sup> Verses 16—24, which immediately follow, also form a complete

<sup>1</sup> *Ewald*, Die drei ersten Evangelien, 1850, p. 1; cf. *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, 1848—49.

<sup>2</sup> The verses iv. 14—15, which Volkmar wished to include, but which all other critics reject (see p. 128, note 7), from Marcion's text, Ewald likewise identifies as an isolated couple of verses by the author of our Luke inserted between episodes derived from other written sources. Cf. *Ewald*, l. c.

<sup>3</sup> *Ewald*, Die drei erst. Evv., p. 104 f.; cf. p. 1. We hold that Marcion's Gospel read continuously, v. 31—44, and that v. 16 ff. then immediately followed. This would make the reference at Nazareth to the works done at Capernaum much more complete, and would remove the incongruity of attributing v. 40—44, to the evening of the day of escape from Nazareth and return to Capernaum or to Nazareth itself. The only reason for not joining 40—44 to the preceding section 31—39, is the broken order of reference by *Tertullian* (*Adv. Marc.* iv. 8), but there is no statement that he follows the actual order of Marcion in this, and his argument would fully account for the order of his references without dividing this passage. Cf. *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 146 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Dio Evv. J.*, p. 462 ff.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1853, p. 198 f.

and isolated passage assigned by Ewald, to the "sixth recognizable book."<sup>1</sup> Verses 25—27, also are the whole of another isolated section attributed by Ewald, to the "Book of earlier history," whilst 28—30, in like manner form another complete and isolated episode, assigned by him to the "eighth recognizable book."<sup>2</sup> According to Ewald, therefore, Luke's Gospel at this place is a mere patchwork of older writings, and if this be in any degree accepted, as in the abstract, indeed, it is by the great mass of critics, then the Gospel of Marcion is an arrangement different from Luke of materials not his, but previously existing, and of which, therefore, there is no warrant to limit the use and reproduction to the canonical Gospel.

The course pursued by critics, with regard to Marcion's Gospel, is necessarily very unsatisfactory. They commence with a definite hypothesis, and try whether all the peculiarities of the text may not be more or less well explained by it. On the other hand, the attempt to settle the question by a comparison of the reconstructed text with Luke's is equally inconclusive. The determination of priority of composition from internal evidence, where there are no chronological references, must as a general rule be arbitrary, and can rarely be accepted as final. Internal evidence would, indeed, decidedly favour the priority of Marcion's Gospel. The great uncertainty of the whole system, even when applied under the most favourable circumstances, is well illustrated by the contradictory results at which critics have arrived as to the order of production and dependence on each other of our three Synoptics. Without going into

<sup>1</sup> *Ewald*, *Die drei erst. Evv.*, p. 104, cf. p. 1; v. 24 is omitted.

<sup>2</sup> *Ewald*, *ib.*, p. 104, cf. p. 1.

details, we may say that critics who are all agreed upon the mutual dependence of those Gospels have variously arranged them in the following order: I. Matthew—Mark—Luke.<sup>1</sup> II. Matthew—Luke—Mark.<sup>2</sup> III. Mark—Matthew—Luke.<sup>3</sup> IV. Mark—Luke—Matthew.<sup>4</sup> V. Luke—Matthew—Mark.<sup>5</sup> VI. All three out of common written sources.<sup>6</sup> Were we to state the various theories still more in detail, we might largely increase the variety of conclusions. These, however, suffice to show the uncertainty of results derived from internal evidence.

It is always assumed that Marcion altered a Gospel to suit his own particular system, but as one of his most orthodox critics, while asserting that Luke's narrative lay at the basis of his Gospel, admits: "it is not equally clear that all the changes were due to Marcion himself;"<sup>7</sup> and, although he considers that "some of the omissions can be explained by his peculiar doctrines," he

<sup>1</sup> Of course we only pretend to indicate a few of the critics who adopt each order. So Bengel, Bolton, Ebrard, Grotius, Hengstenberg, Hug, Hilgenfeld, Holtzmann, Mill, Seiler, Townson, Wetstein.

<sup>2</sup> So Ammon, Baur, Bleck, Delitzsch, Fritzsche, Gfrörer, Griesbach, Kern, Köstlin, Neudecker, Saunier, Schwarz, Schwegler, Sieffert, Stroth, Theile, Owen, Paulus, De Wette, Augustine (de cons. Ev., i. 4).

<sup>3</sup> So Credner, Hitzig, Lachmann, (?) Reuss, Ritschl, Meyer, Storr, Thiersch, Ewald.

<sup>4</sup> B. Bauer, Hitzig, (?) Schneckenburger, Volkmar, Weisse, Wilke.

<sup>5</sup> Büsching, Evanson.

<sup>6</sup> Bertholdt, Clericus, Corrodi, Eichhorn, Gratz, Hänlein, Kuinoel, Lessing, Marsh, Michaelis, Koppe, Nicmeyer, Semler, Schleiermacher, Schmidt, Weber. This view was partly shared by many of those mentioned under other orders.

<sup>7</sup> *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 275. We do not pause to discuss *Tertullian's* insinuations (*Adv. Marc.*, iv. 4), that Marcion himself admitted that he had amended St. Luke's Gospel, for the statement was repudiated by the Marcionites, abandoned practically by Tertullian himself, and has been rejected by the mass of critics. Cf. *Ritschl*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 23 ff.; *Volkmar*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1850, p. 120; *Das Ev. M.*, p. 3 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. J.*, p. 446; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. 283, anm. 2.

continues : " others are unlike arbitrary corrections, and must be considered as various readings of the greatest interest, dating as they do from a time anterior to all other authorities in our possession." <sup>1</sup> Now, although undoubtedly the more developed forms of the Gospel narrative grew up by additions, materially influenced by dogmatic and local reasons, it is an argument contrary to actual critical results, generally, to affirm that a Gospel whose distinguishing characteristic is greater brevity was produced by omissions in the interest of a system from a longer work of which we never hear till long after. It is more simple and natural to suppose that the system was formed upon the Gospel as Marcion found it, than that the Gospel was afterwards fitted to the system. The latter hypothesis, as we have seen, involves absurd anomalies which are universally admitted. So imperfectly did Marcion do the work he is supposed to have undertaken that he is refuted out of his own manipulated document. This might well be the case if he had evolved his system from a Gospel independently composed, and which in the main seemed to support him, but not in a work upon which he had felt able freely to use the knife. On examination it is found that he omits what is favourable, retains what is contradictory, and actually interpolates passages contrary to his principles. A more senseless and absurd proceeding, judged by actual facts, was never ascribed to an able man. <sup>2</sup> The statement of the Fathers that Marcion's Gospel was no original work, but a mutilated version of Luke, is unsupported by a single historical or critical argument,

<sup>1</sup> *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 275.

<sup>2</sup> *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 270 ff.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 75; *Reuss*, Rev. de Théol., 1857, p. 4; cf. *Tertullian*, Adv. Marc., iv. 43.

and was based merely upon their ecclesiastical theory that, being a canonical work adopted by the Church, Luke's Gospel must be the older work. If we except the Gospel according to the Hebrews, however, Marcion's Gospel is the oldest evangelical work of which we hear anything, and it ranks far above our third Synoptic in this respect.<sup>1</sup> There is no evidence that it was not one of the numerous Gospels in circulation before our third Synoptic was written, and out of which that Gospel itself grew.<sup>2</sup>

Marcion's Gospel, we contend, may well have been one of the earlier evangelical works which, after the development of doctrine in the early Church had led to fuller and more elaborate versions, and to the introduction of elements from which the more crude primitive Gospels were free, were doubtless treasured by some as a purer and simpler exposition of Christianity. No one of course would maintain that the instant a new edition of the Gospel, "with additions and improvements," was produced, the older and more fragmentary codices at once disappeared. They would probably gradually decline in favour, but many conservative minds, especially in distant districts, would long cling to their teaching in preference to the more elaborate but later productions. This view is supported by many considerations, and is rendered all the more probable by the fact that Marcion found his Gospel in the distant province of

<sup>1</sup> *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 276; *Volkmar*, *Das Ev. M.*, pp. 1, 75, 175 ff., 186, 257; *Der Ursprung*, p. 75; *Hiilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. J.*, p. 474 f.; *Holtzmann*, *Die synopt. Evv.*, p. 402; cf. *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 274 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 74; *Gieseler*, *Entst. schr. Evv.*, p. 26; *Schleiermacher*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 198; cf. *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss*, 1853—54, p. 48.

Pontus, which in the days when MSS. were but slowly multiplied and disseminated lay far from the centres of novelty. Tertullian delights in calling the Gospel of the Heresiarch the "*Evangelium Ponticum*,"<sup>1</sup> and the Marcionites maintained that their Gospel was that of which the Apostle Paul himself made use.<sup>2</sup> The circumstance that it was actually brought by Marcion from Pontus, and the name given to it by Tertullian, however, show it to have been a work most probably in circulation amongst the Christians of that province, who no doubt had their special Gospel like all the early Christian communities. The Church in Pontus was strongly Paulinian, and it is therefore probable that they may have used a form of the Gospel narrative associated with that Apostle which, elsewhere, in circles of greater intellectual and Christian activity, had gradually become transformed and matured into larger proportions.<sup>3</sup> No one accuses Marcion of having written his own Gospel, nor did he, after the fashion of his time, call it after his own name.<sup>4</sup> On the contrary, it had no author's name attached to it, and its superscription was simply, "The Gospel," or "The Gospel of the Lord" (*τὸ εὐαγγέλιον* or *εὐαγγέλιον τοῦ κυρίου*).<sup>5</sup> Schwegler has rightly remarked

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Adv. Marc., iv. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Tertullian, Adv. Marc., iv. 2; Dial. de recta fide, § 1; Orig., Opp., i. p. 807; cf. Rom. ii. 16, xvi. 25; Gal. i. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Bertholdt, Einl. A. und N. T., 1813, iii. p. 1216 ff., 1294 ff. Bertholdt considers Marcion's Gospel an earlier Greek translation from the original Gospel which formed the basis of Luke. Luke edited in Greek the original Gospel which Paul used.

<sup>4</sup> Bunsen, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 563; Schleiermacher, Einl. N. T., p. 198; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 43; Eichhorn, Einl. N. T., i. p. 79 f.

<sup>5</sup> Marcion Evangelio suo nullum adscribit auctorem. Tertullian, Adv. Marc., iv. 2; Dial. de recta fide, § 1; Bertholdt, Einl., iii. p. 1293; Bleek, Einl. N. T., p. 126; Bunsen, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 563; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 43; Eichhorn, Einl. N. T., i. p. 79 f.; Schwegler, Das nachap. Zeit.

that this very namelessness is, as in the Gospel according to the Hebrews, strong evidence of its originality; a forger would certainly not have omitted to attach to his falsified Gospel some weighty name of apostolic times.<sup>1</sup> That some importance should be attached to this point is evident from the fact that Tertullian reproaches Marcion with the anonymous character of his work, arising from the omission of the expedient too well known in his time. "And here already I might make a stand," he exclaims, at the very opening of his attack on the Gospel of Pontus, "contending that a work is not to be recognized which does not hold its front erect . . . . which does not engage faith from the plenitude of its title, and the due profession of its author."<sup>2</sup> The spurious and pseudonymic literature of the first centuries of our era prove only too well how little scruple there was to support pious fraud by plenitude of title, and the "Great African" himself was not unfrequently a victim to the practice. Not only did Marcion himself not in any way connect the name of Luke with his Gospel, but his followers repudiated the idea that Luke was its author, and taunted the orthodox members of the Church for having their doctrines taught by four adulterated Gospels, whilst they received theirs from one, the Gospel of Christ.<sup>3</sup>

If we turn to the Epistles of Paul, which Marcion

i. p. 280 f., p. 261; *Scholten*, *Het Paulin. Evangelie*, p. 8; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 61; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 119 f.; *Hahn*, *Ev. M. in Thilo*, p. 403; *Das Ev. M.*, p. 132; *Neudecker*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 74, anm.

<sup>1</sup> *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 281.

<sup>2</sup> *Et possum hic jam gradum figere, non agnoscendum contendens opus, quod non erigat frontem, quod nullam constantiam præferat, nullam fidem repromittat de plenitudine tituli et professione debita auctoris. Tertullian, Adv. Marc., iv. 2.*

<sup>3</sup> *Dial. de recta fide*, § 1; *Bertholdt*, *Einl. iii.* p. 1295, 1218 ff.; *Bunsen*, *Bibelwerk*, viii. p. 563; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 79 f.; *Gieseler*, *Entst. schr. Evv.*, p. 25. The later Marcionites affirmed their Gospel to have

acknowledged, for some help in deciding the question as to his Gospel, we find that in many respects as to selection, order, and readings, Marcion's collection is remarkably in unison with the results of modern criticism.<sup>1</sup> The information which we have regarding his text is very defective, but it is sufficient to show that many of the alterations which he is accused by his uncritical and ignorant adversaries of making in the interest of his system are really original and correct readings, whilst others are either merely unimportant natural variations, or mere accidental omissions from the copy in the hands of the Fathers.<sup>2</sup> "Tertullian and Epiphanius," writes Canon Westcott, "agree in affirming that Marcion altered the texts of the books which he received to suit his own views; and they quote many various readings in support of the assertion. Those which they cite from the Epistles are certainly insufficient to prove the point; and on the contrary, they go far to show that Marcion preserved without alteration the text which he found in his manuscript. Of the seven readings noticed by Epiphanius only two are unsupported by other authority; and it is altogether unlikely that Marcion changed other passages, when, as Epiphanius himself shows, he left untouched those which are most directly opposed to his system."<sup>3</sup> Now the Epistles did not go through the process of development by which through successive additions were written by Christ himself, and the particulars of the Crucifixion, &c., to have been added by Paul.

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 420 ff.; *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 77 ff.; *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 286; *Ritschl*, *Das Ev. M.*, p. 153 ff., p. 166; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 273; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 274; cf. *De Wette*, *Einl. A. T.*, 1852, § 20, p. 25 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 411 ff.; *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kan.*, p. 160 ff.; *Reuss*, *Hist. du Canon*, p. 72, note 3; *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 370 cf.

<sup>3</sup> *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 274.

tions and alterations the Gospels attained their present form. We are, therefore, able to determine with considerable accuracy the original state of their text. We find, then, that not only does Marcion leave untouched, even by the showing of Epiphanius himself, the passages most opposed to him, but that the falsifications of which he is accused by the Fathers are often more original readings supported by the best authorities, and in fact that he evidently had in no way tampered with his manuscript. Is it not reasonable to suppose that he had equally preserved without alteration the text which he found in the manuscript of his Gospel? Any man of his eminence adopting and holding fast a comparatively primitive form of the Gospel found in circulation in a distant province like Pontus, and thus preserving it from the fate of other similar works, would soon find on comparing it with Gospels which had grown up and advanced with the progress of the Church, that it lacked many a passage which had crept into them. His Gospel had stood still on the outskirts of Christianity, whilst others in the more active religious centres had collected fresh matter and modified their original form. (We have no reason to believe the accusation of the Fathers in regard to the Gospel, which we cannot fully test, better founded than that in regard to the Epistles, which we can test, and find unfounded.) It is a significant fact that Justin Martyr, who attacks Marcion's system, never brings any accusation against him of mutilating or falsifying any Gospel, although, living at the time of the Heresiarch, he was in a position to know the facts much more certainly than Irenæus, Tertullian, and Epiphanius, who lived and wrote at a much later period. There is good reason to conclude that Marcion made use of a Gospel

in a more primitive and less mature state than our third Synoptic, and that, as he did with the Epistles, he preserved the text as he found it.

There is no evidence whatever that Marcion had any knowledge of the other canonical Gospels in any form.<sup>1</sup> None of his writings are extant, and no direct assertion is made even by the Fathers that he knew them, although from their dogmatic point of view they assume that these Gospels existed from the very first, and therefore insinuate that as he only recognized one Gospel, he rejected them.<sup>2</sup> When Irenæus says: "He persuaded his disciples that he himself was more veracious than are the apostles who handed down the Gospel; delivering to them not the Gospel, but part of the Gospel,"<sup>3</sup> it is quite clear that he speaks of the Gospel—the good tidings—Christianity—and not of specific written Gospels. In another passage which is referred to by Apologists, Irenæus says of the Marcionites that they have asserted: "That the apostles, forsooth, have proclaimed the Gospel still under the influence of Jewish prejudices; but that they themselves are more perfect and more judicious than the apostles. Wherefore also Marcion and his followers have had recourse to mutilating the Scriptures, not recognizing some books at all, but curtailing the Gospel according to Luke and the Epistles of Paul; these they say are alone authentic which they themselves have abbreviated."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 73 ff., 79, 84; *Gieseler*, *Entst. schr. Evv.*, p. 25; *Rumpf*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1867, p. 21; *Schleiermacher*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 214 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Irenæus*, *Adv. Hær.*, i. 27, § 2; cf. iii. 2; 12, § 12; *Tertullian*, *Adv. Marc.*, iv. 3; cf. *De Carne Christi*, 2, 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Semetipsum esse veraciorem, quam sunt hi, qui Evangelium tradiderunt, apostoli, suasit discipulis suis; non Evangelium, sed particulam Evangelii tradens eis.* *Adv. Hær.*, i. 27, § 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Et apostolos quidem adhuc quæ sunt Judæorum sentientes, annuntiasse Evangelium; se autem sinceriores, et prudentiores apostolis esse.*

These remarks chiefly refer to the followers of Marcion, and as we have shown, when treating of Valentinus, Irenæus is expressly writing against members of heretical sects living in his own day and not of the founders of those sects.<sup>1</sup> The Marcionites of the time of Irenæus no doubt rejected the Gospels, but although Marcion obviously did not accept any of the Gospels which have become canonical, it does not by any means follow that he knew anything of these particular Gospels. As yet we have not met with any evidence even of their existence at a much later period.

The evidence of Tertullian is not a whit more valuable. In the passage usually cited, he says: "But Marcion, lighting upon the Epistle of Paul to the Galatians, in which he reproaches even Apostles for not walking uprightly according to the truth of the Gospel, as well as accuses certain false Apostles of perverting the Gospel of Christ, tries with all his might to destroy the status of those Gospels which are promulgated legitimately and under the name of Apostles or also of apostolic men, in order, be it known, to confer upon his own the credit which he takes from them."<sup>2</sup> Now here again it is clear that Tertullian is simply applying, by inference, Marcion's views with regard to the preaching

Unde et Marcion, et qui ab eo sunt, ad intercidendas conversi sunt Scripturas, quasdam quidem in totum non cognoscentes, secundum Lucam autem Evangelium, et Epistolas Pauli decurtantes, hæc sola legitima esse dicunt, quæ ipsi minoraverunt. Adv. Hær., iii. 12, § 12.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Adv. Hær., i. Præf. § 2; iii. Præf., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Sed enim Marcion nactus epistolam Pauli ad Galatas, etiam ipsos apostolos suggillantem ut non recto pede incidentes ad veritatem evangelii, simul et accusantis pseudapostolos quosdam pervertentes evangelium Christi, connititur ad destruendum statum eorum evangeliorum, quæ propria et sub apostolorum nomine eduntur, vel etiam apostolicorum, ut scilicet fidem, quam illis adimit, suo conferat. Adv. Marc., iv. 3; cf. de Carne Christi, 2, 3.

of the Gospel by the two parties in the Church, represented by the Apostle Paul and the "pillar" Apostles whose leaning to Jewish doctrines he condemned, to the written Gospels recognized in his day though not in Marcion's. "It is uncertain," says even Canon Westcott, "whether Tertullian in the passage quoted speaks from a knowledge of what Marcion may have written on the subject, or simply from his own point of sight."<sup>1</sup> Any doubt is, however, removed on examining the context, for Tertullian proceeds to argue that if Paul censured Peter, John and James, it was for changing their company from respect of persons, and similarly, "if false apostles crept in," they betrayed their character by insisting on Jewish observances. "So that it was *not on account of their preaching*, but of their conversation that they were pointed out by Paul,"<sup>2</sup> and he goes on to argue that if Marcion thus accuses Apostles of having deprived the Gospel by their dissimulation, he accuses Christ accusing those whom Christ selected.<sup>3</sup> It is palpable, therefore, that Marcion, in whatever he may have written, referred to the preaching of the Gospel, or Christianity, by Apostles who retained their Jewish prejudices in favour of circumcision and legal observances, and not to written Gospels. Tertullian merely assumes, with his usual audacity, that the Church had the four Gospels from the very first, and therefore that Marcion, who had only one Gospel, knew the others and deliberately rejected them.

At the very best, even if the hypothesis that Marcion's Gospel was a mutilated Luke were established, Marcion

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 276, note 1.

<sup>2</sup> Adeo non de prædicatione, sed de conversatione a Paulo denotabantur. Adv. Marc., iv. 3.

<sup>3</sup> Adv. Marc., iv. 3.

affords no evidence in favour of the authenticity or trustworthy character of our third Synoptic. His Gospel was nameless, and his followers repudiated the idea of its having been written by Luke ; and regarded even as the earliest testimony for the existence of Luke's Gospel, that testimony is not in confirmation of its genuineness and reliability, but on the contrary condemns it as garbled and interpolated.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## TATIAN—DIONYSIUS OF CORINTH.

FROM Marcion we now turn to Tatian, another so-called heretic leader. Tatian, an Assyrian by birth,<sup>1</sup> embraced Christianity and became a disciple of Justin Martyr<sup>2</sup> in Rome, sharing with him, as it seems, the persecution excited by Crescens the Cynic<sup>3</sup> to which Justin fell a victim. After the death of Justin, Tatian, who till then had continued thoroughly orthodox, left Rome, and joined the sect of the Encratites, of which, however, he was not the founder,<sup>4</sup> and became the leading exponent of their austere and ascetic doctrines.<sup>5</sup>

The only one of his writings which is still extant is his "Oration to the Greeks" (*λόγος πρὸς Ἕλληνας*). This work was written after the death of Justin, for in it he refers to that event,<sup>6</sup> and it is generally dated between

<sup>1</sup> *Oratio ad Græcos*, ed Otto, § 42.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, § 18.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, § 19.

<sup>4</sup> *Anger*, *Synops. Ev. Proleg.*, p. xxviii.; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 437; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 34; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 277.

<sup>5</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 29; *Irenæus*, *Adv. Hær.*, i. 28; *Epiphanius*, *Hær.*, xlvi. 1; *Hieron.*, *De Vir. Illustr.*, 29; *Theodoret*, *Hær. fab.*, i. 20; *Beausobre*, *Hist. du Manichéisme*, i. p. 303 f.; *Matter*, *Hist. du Christianisme*, 2 ed., i. p. 172 f.; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 34; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 437 f.; *Bunsen*, *Bibelwerk*, viii. p. 562; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 3 ff.; *Lardner*, *Credibility, &c.*, Works, ii. p. 136 ff.

<sup>6</sup> *Orat. ad Gr.*, § 19; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. 438; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 93; *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, i. p. 145; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 16, anm. 1.

A.D. 170—175.<sup>1</sup> Tischendorf does not assert that there is any quotation in this address taken from the Synoptic Gospels;<sup>2</sup> and Canon Westcott only affirms that it contains a “clear reference” to “a parable recorded by St. Matthew,” and he excuses the slightness of this evidence by adding: “The absence of more explicit testimony to the books of the New Testament is to be accounted for by the style of his writing, and not by his unworthy estimate of their importance.”<sup>3</sup> This remark is without foundation, as we know nothing whatever with regard to Tatian’s estimate of any such books.

The supposed “clear reference” is as follows: “For by means of a certain hidden treasure (*ἀποκρύφου θησαυροῦ*) he has taken to himself all that we possess, for which while we are digging we are indeed covered with dust, but we succeed in making it our fixed possession.”<sup>4</sup> This is claimed as a reference to Matt. xiii. 44: “The kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hidden (*θησαυρῶ κεκρυμμένῳ*) in the field, which a man found and hid, and for his joy he goeth and selleth all that he hath and buyeth that field.” So faint a similarity could not prove anything, but it is evident that there are decided differences here. Were the probability

<sup>1</sup> *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, i. p. 145; *Tischendorf* (between 166—170), *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 16, ann. 1, p. 17; *Volkmar* (between 165—175), *Der Ursprung*, p. 163; cf. p. 34 ff.; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 438; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 93; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 10; *Lardner* (between 165—172), *Credibility, &c.*, Works, ii. p. 139; *De Wette* († 176), *Einl. A. T.*, 1852, p. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 16 f.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 278.

<sup>4</sup> *Διὰ τῶς γὰρ ἀποκρύφου θησαυροῦ τῶν ἡμετέρων ἐπεκράτησεν, ὃν ὀρύττοντες κοινοῦ μὲν ἡμεῖς ἐνεπλήσθημεν, τούτῳ δὲ τοῦ συνειστάναι τὴν ἀφορμὴν παρέχομεν.* *Orat. ad Gr.*, § 30.

fifty times greater than it is that Tatian had in his mind the parable, which is reported in our first Gospel, nothing could be more unwarrantable than the deduction that he referred to the passage in our Matthew, and not to any other of the numerous Gospels which we know to have early been in circulation. Ewald ascribes the parable in Matthew originally to the "Spruchsammlung" or collection of Discourses, the second of the four works out of which he considers our first Synoptic to have been compiled.<sup>1</sup> As evidence for the existence even of our first canonical Gospel no such reference could have the slightest value.

Although neither Tischendorf nor Canon Westcott think it worth while to refer to it, some apologists claim another passage in the Oration as a reference to our third Synoptic. "Laugh ye: nevertheless you shall weep."<sup>2</sup> This is compared with Luke vi. 25: "Woe unto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourn and weep."<sup>3</sup> Here again it is absurd to trace a reference in the words of Tatian specially to our third Gospel, and manifestly nothing could be more foolish than to build upon such vague similarity any hypothesis of Tatian's acquaintance with Luke. If there be one part of the Gospel which was more known than another in the first ages of Christianity it was the Sermon on the Mount, and there can be no doubt that many evangelical works now lost contained versions of it. Ewald likewise assigns this passage of Luke originally to the Spruchsammlung,<sup>4</sup> and no one can doubt that the saying was recorded long before the writer of the third Gospel

<sup>1</sup> Die drei ersten Evv., l. c.

<sup>2</sup> Γελάτε δὲ ὑμεῖς, ὡς καὶ κλαύσονται. Orat. ad Gr., § 32.

<sup>3</sup> οὐαὶ ὑμῖν οἱ γελῶντες νῦν ὅτι πενήσετε καὶ κλαύσετε. Luke vi. 25.

<sup>4</sup> Die drei ersten Evv., l. c.

undertook to compile evangelical history, as so many had done before him. It is one specially likely to have formed part of the Gospel according to the Hebrews.

Further on, however, Canon Westcott says: "it can be gathered from Clement of Alexandria . . . that he (Tatian) endeavoured to derive authority for his peculiar opinions from the Epistles to the Corinthians and Galatians, and probably from the Epistle to the Ephesians, and the Gospel of St. Matthew."<sup>1</sup> Allusion is here made to a passage in the Stromata of Clement, in which reference is supposed by the apologist to be made to Tatian. No person, however, is named, and Clement merely introduces his remark by the words: "a certain person (*τις*) inveighs, &c., applying the Saviour's words not to treasure upon earth where moth and rust corrupt" (*ἐπὶ γῆς μὴ θησαυρίζειν ὅπου σῆς καὶ βρῶσις ἀφανίζει*).<sup>2</sup> The parallel passage in Matthew vi. 19, reads: "Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt," &c. (*μὴ θησαυρίζετε ὑμῖν θησαυροὺς ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, κ.τ.λ.*). Canon Westcott, it is true, merely suggests that "probably" this may be ascribed to Tatian, but it is almost absolutely certain that it was not attributed to him by Clement. Tatian is several times referred to in the course of the same chapter, and his words are continued by the use of *φησὶ* or *γράφει*, and it is in the highest degree improbable that Clement should introduce another quotation from him in such immediate context by the vague and distant reference "a certain person" (*τις*). On the other hand reference is made in the chapter to other writers and sects, to one of whom with infinitely greater propriety this expression applies. No weight, therefore, could be

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 279.

<sup>2</sup> Strom. iii. 12, § 86.

attached to any such passage in connection with Tatian. Moreover the quotation not only does not agree with our Synoptic, but may much more probably have been derived from the Gospel according to the Hebrews.<sup>1</sup> It will be remembered that Justin Martyr quotes the same passage, with the same omission of “*θησαυρούς*,” from a Gospel different from our Synoptics.<sup>2</sup>

Tatian, however, is claimed by apologists as a witness for the existence of our Gospels—more than this he could not possibly be—principally on the ground that his Gospel was called by some Diatessaron (*διὰ τεσσάρων*) or “by four,” and it is assumed to have been a harmony of four Gospels. The work is no longer extant, and, as we shall see, our information regarding it is of the scantiest and most unsatisfactory description. Critics have arrived at very various conclusions with regard to the composition of the work. Some of course affirm, with more or less of hesitation nevertheless, that it was nothing else than a harmony of our four canonical Gospels;<sup>3</sup> many of these, however, are constrained to admit that it was also partly based upon the Gospel according to the Hebrews.<sup>4</sup> Others maintain that it was a harmony of our three Synoptics together with the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 445.

<sup>2</sup> *Justin*, Apol., i. 15, see Vol. i. p. 354 f., p. 376 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev. Proleg., p. xxviii.; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 231; *Bindemann*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1842, p. 471 ff.; *Celérier*, Essai d'une Introd. N. T., p. 21; *Delitzsch*, Urspr. Mt. Ev., p. 30; *Feilmoser*, Einl. N. B., p. 276; *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch. N. T., p. 227; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 40 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 43, anm. 1; *Neudecker*, Lehrb. Einl. N. T., p. 45 f.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 279 ff.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 16 f.; *Olshausen*, Echth. vier can. Evv. p. 336 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch., p. 227; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 44, anm. 1; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 116 f.; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 45 f.; cf. *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 1007 f., 1042; *Simon*, Hist. Crit. N. T., p. 74.

Gospel according to the Hebrews;<sup>1</sup> whilst many deny that it was composed of our Gospels at all,<sup>2</sup> and either declare it to have been a harmony of the Gospel according to the Hebrews with three other Gospels whose identity cannot be determined, or that it was simply the Gospel according to the Hebrews itself,<sup>3</sup> by which name, as Epiphanius states, it was called by many in his day.<sup>4</sup>

Tatian's Gospel, however, was not only called Diatesaron, but, according to Victor of Capua, it was also called Diapente (διὰ πέντε) "by five,"<sup>5</sup> a complication which shows the incorrectness of the ecclesiastical theory of its composition.

Tischendorf, anxious to date Tatian's Gospel as early as possible, says that in all probability it was composed earlier than the address to the Greeks.<sup>6</sup> Of this, however, he does not offer any evidence, and upon examination it is very evident that the work was on the contrary composed or adopted after the Oration and his avowal of heretical opinions. Theodoret states that Tatian had in

<sup>1</sup> *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 562; *Gratz*, Kr. Unters. Justin's Denkw.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 94; cf. 98.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 48, p. 443 f.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 120 ff.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 193; *Schmidt*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 125 ff.; *Wilke*, Tradition u. Mythe, p. 15.

<sup>3</sup> *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 573; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 444; *Gesch. N. T. Kanons*, p. 17 ff.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 123; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 193; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 235; *Nicolas*, Et. sur les Ev. apocr., p. 137.

<sup>4</sup> *Epiphanius*, Hær., xlvi. 1.

<sup>5</sup> *Pref. ad anon. Harm. Evang.*; cf. *Fabricius*, Cod. N. T., i. p. 378; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 44; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 193; *Schott*, Isagoge, p. 22, anm. 3; *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 1008; *Simon*, Hist. Crit. N. T., ch. vii.; *Beausobre*, Hist. du Manichéisme, i. p. 303 f.; *Nicolas*, Et. evang. apocr., p. 137; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 44 f., anm. p. 45 f., p. 47, anm. 2; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 397; *Lardner*, Credibility, &c., Works, ii. p. 138 f.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 282, note 1.

<sup>6</sup> *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 16, anm. 1.

it omitted the genealogies and all other passages showing that Christ was born of David according to the flesh, and he condemned the work, and caused it to be abandoned on account of its evil design.<sup>1</sup> If the assumption be correct, therefore, as Tischendorf maintains, that Tatian altered our Gospels, and did not merely from the first, like his master Justin, make use of Gospels different from those which afterwards became canonical, he must have composed the work after the death of Justin, up to which time he is stated to have remained quite orthodox.<sup>2</sup> The date may with much greater probability be set between A.D. 170—180.<sup>3</sup>

The earliest writer who mentions Tatian's Gospel is Eusebius,<sup>4</sup> who wrote some century and a half after its supposed composition, without, however, having himself seen the work at all, or being really acquainted with its nature and contents.<sup>5</sup> Eusebius says: "Tatian, however, their former chief, having put together a certain amalgamation and collection, I know not how, of the Gospels, named this the Diatessaron, which even now is current with some."<sup>6</sup> It is clear that this information is not to be relied on, for not only is it based upon mere hearsay,

<sup>1</sup> Heret. fab., i. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., i. 28; *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 29.

<sup>3</sup> *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 164, p. 35.

<sup>4</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 441; *Feilmoser*, Einl. N. B., p. 275; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 83, anm. 6; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 279.

<sup>5</sup> *Bunsen*, Bibelwerk, viii. p. 562; *Celérier*, Introd. N. T., p. 22; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 441 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 396; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 24; *Feilmoser*, Einl. N. B., p. 275; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 42; *Lardner*, Credibility, &c., Works, ii. p. 138; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 193; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 94; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 280 f., note 4.

<sup>6</sup> 'Ο μέντοι γε πρότερος αὐτῶν ἀρχηγὸς ὁ Τατιανὸς συνάφειάν τινα καὶ συναγωγὴν οὐκ οἶδ' ὅπως τῶν εὐαγγελίων συνθεῖς, τὸ διὰ τεσσάρων τοῦτο προσωνόμασεν 'Ο καὶ παρὰ τισιν εἰσέτι νῦν φέρεται. H. E., iv. 29.

but it is altogether indefinite as to the character of the contents, and the writer admits his own ignorance (οὐκ οἶδ' ὅπως) regarding them.

Neither Irenæus, Clement of Alexandria, nor Jerome, who refer to other works of Tatian, make any mention of this one. Epiphanius, however, does so, but, like Eusebius, without having himself seen it.<sup>1</sup> This second reference to Tatian's Gospel is made upwards of two centuries after its supposed composition. Epiphanius says: "It is said that he (Tatian) composed the Gospel by four, which is called by some the Gospel according to the Hebrews."<sup>2</sup> It must be observed that it is not said that Tatian himself gave this Gospel the name of Diatessaron,<sup>3</sup> but on the contrary the expression of Epiphanius implies that he did not do so,<sup>4</sup> and the fact that it was also called by some the Gospel according to the Hebrews, and Diapente, shows that the work had no superscription from Tatian of a contradictory character. Theodoret, Bishop of Cyrus (+457) is the next writer who mentions Tatian's Gospel, and he is the only one who had personally seen it. He says: "He (Tatian) also composed the Gospel which is called *Diatessaron*, excising the genealogies and all the other parts which declare that the Lord was born of the seed of David according to the flesh. This was used not only by those of his own sect, but also by those who held the apostolic doctrines, who did not perceive the evil of the composition, but made

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 442; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 396; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Λέγεται δὲ τὸ διὰ τεσσάρων εὐαγγελίων ὑπ' αὐτοῦ γεγενῆσθαι ὅπερ, κατὰ Ἑβραίους τινὲς καλοῦσι. *Epiph.*, Hær., xlv. 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 18; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 47, anm. 2; *Schotten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 95; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 34.

<sup>4</sup> *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 397.

use of the book in simplicity on account of its conciseness. I myself found upwards of two hundred such books held in honour among your churches, and collecting them all together, I had them put aside, and instead introduced the Gospels of the four Evangelists." Again it must be observed that Theodoret does not say that the Gospel of Tatian *was* a Diatessaron, but merely that it was called so (*διὰ τεσσάρων καλούμενον*).<sup>1</sup>

After quoting this passage, and that from Epiphanius, Canon Westcott says with an assurance which, considering the nature of the evidence, is singular:—"Not only then was the Diatessaron grounded on the four canonical Gospels, but in its general form it was so orthodox as to enjoy a wide ecclesiastical popularity. The heretical character of the book was not evident upon the surface of it, and consisted rather in faults of defect than in erroneous teaching. Theodoret had certainly examined it, and he, like earlier writers, regarded it as a compilation from the four Gospels. He speaks of omissions which were at least in part natural in a Harmony, but notices no such apocryphal additions as would have found place in any Gospel not derived from canonical sources."<sup>2</sup> Now it must be remembered that the evidence regarding Tatian's Gospel is of the very vaguest description. It is not mentioned by any writer until a century and a half after the date of its supposed

<sup>1</sup> Οὗτος καὶ τὸ διὰ τεσσάρων καλούμενον συντίθεικεν εὐαγγέλιον, τὰς τε γενεαλογίας περικόψας, καὶ τὰ ἄλλα ὅσα ἐκ σπέρματος Δαβὶδ κατὰ σάρκα γεγενημένον τὸν κύριον δείκνυσιν. Ἐχρήσαντο δὲ τούτῳ οὐ μόνον οἱ τῆς ἐκείνου συμμορίας, ἀλλὰ καὶ οἱ τοῖς ἀποστολικοῖς ἐπόμενοι δόγμασι, τὴν τῆς συνθήκης κακουργίαν οὐκ ἐγνωκότες, ἀλλ' ἀπλούστερον ὡς συντόμῳ τῷ βιβλίῳ χρησάμενοι. Εὐρον δὲ κατὰ πλείους ἢ διακοσίας βίβλους τοιαύτας ἐν ταῖς παρ' ἡμῖν ἐκκλησίαις τετιμημένας, καὶ πάσας συναγαγὼν ἀπεθέμην, καὶ τὰ τῶν τεττάρων εὐαγγελιστῶν ἀντεισήγαγον εὐαγγέλια. Hier. fab., i. 20.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 281.

composition, and then only referred to by Eusebius, who had not seen the work, and candidly confesses his ignorance with regard to it, so that a critic who is almost as orthodox as Canon Westcott himself acknowledges: "For the truth is that we know no more about Tatian's work than what Eusebius, who never saw it, knew."<sup>1</sup> The only other writer who refers to it, Epiphanius, had not seen it either, and while showing that the title of Diatessaron had not been given to it by Tatian himself, he states the important fact that some called it the Gospel according to the Hebrews. Theodoret, the last writer who mentions it, and of whom Dr. Donaldson also says: "Theodoret's information cannot be depended upon,"<sup>2</sup> not only does not say that it is based upon our four Gospels, but, on the contrary, points out that Tatian's Gospel did not contain the genealogies and passages tracing the descent of Jesus through the race of David, which our Synoptics possess, and he so much condemned the mischievous design of the work that he confiscated the copies in circulation in his diocese as heretical. Canon Westcott's assertion that Theodoret regarded it as a compilation of our four Gospels is most unfounded and arbitrary. Omissions, as he himself points out, are natural to a Harmony, and conciseness certainly would be the last quality for which it could have been so highly prized, if every part of the four Gospels had been retained. The omission of the parts referred to, which are equally omitted from the canonical fourth Gospel, could not have been sufficient to merit the condemnation of the work as heretical, and had Tatian's Gospel not been different in various respects from our

<sup>1</sup> *Donaldson, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 26.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, iii. p. 25.

four Gospels, such treatment would have been totally unwarrantable. The statement, moreover, that in place of Tatian's Gospel, Theodoret "introduced the Gospels of the four Evangelists," seems to indicate clearly that the displaced Gospel was not a compilation from them, but different.

Speaking of the difficulty of distinguishing Tatian's Harmony from others which must, the writer supposes, have been composed in his time, Dr. Donaldson admits: "And then we must remember that the Harmony of Tatian was confounded with the Gospel according to the Hebrews; and it is not beyond the reach of possibility that Theodoret should have made some such mistake."<sup>1</sup> That is to say, that the only writer who refers to Tatian's Gospel who professes to have seen the work is not only "not to be depended on," but may actually have mistaken for it the Gospel according to the Hebrews. There is, therefore, no authority for saying that Tatian's Gospel was a harmony of four Gospels at all, and the name Diatessaron was not only not given by Tatian himself to the work, but was merely the usual foregone conclusion of the Christians of the third and fourth centuries, that everything in the shape of evangelical literature must be dependent on the Gospels adopted by the Church. Those, however, who called the Gospel used by Tatian the Gospel according to the Hebrews, must have read the work, and all that we know confirms their conclusion. The work was, in point of fact, found in wide circulation precisely in the places in which, earlier, the Gospel according to the Hebrews was more particularly current.<sup>2</sup> The singular fact that the earliest reference

<sup>1</sup> *Donaldson, Hist. of Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 25.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner, Beiträge*, i. p. 445; cf. *Westcott, On the Canon*, p. 280, note 2.

to Tatian's "Harmony," is made a century and a half after its supposed composition, that no writer before the fifth century had seen the work itself, indeed that only two writers before that period mention it at all, receives its natural explanation in the conclusion that Tatian did not actually compose any Harmony at all, but simply made use of the same Gospel as his master Justin Martyr, namely, the Gospel according to the Hebrews,<sup>1</sup> by which name his Gospel had been called by those best informed.

Although Theodoret, writing in the fifth century, says in the usual arbitrary manner of early Christian writers, that Tatian "excised" from his Gospel the genealogies and certain passages found in the Synoptics, he offers no proof of his assertion, and the utmost that can be received is that Tatian's Gospel did not contain them.<sup>2</sup> Did he omit them or merely use a Gospel which never included them? The latter is the more probable conclusion. Now neither Justin's Gospel nor the Gospel according to the Hebrews contained the genealogies or references to the Son of David, and why, as Credner suggests, should Tatian have taken the trouble to prepare a Harmony with these omissions when he already found one such as he desired in Justin's Gospel? Tatian's Gospel, like that of his master Justin, or the Gospel according to the Hebrews, was different from, yet nearly related to, our canonical Gospels, and as we have already seen, Justin's Gospel, like Tatian's, was considered by many to be a harmony of our Gospels.<sup>3</sup> No

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 443 ff.; *Schmidt*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 124 ff.; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 96 f.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 121 f.; *Hug*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 42; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 35 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 443 ff.

one seems to have seen Tatian's "Harmony," for the very simple reason that there was no such work, and the real Gospel used by him was that according to the Hebrews, as many distinctly and correctly called it. The name Diatessaron is first heard of in a work of the fourth century, when it is naturally given by people accustomed to trace every such work to our four Gospels, but as we have clearly seen, there is not up to the time of Tatian any evidence even of the existence of any one of our Gospels, and much less of a collection of the four. Here is an attempt to identify a supposed, but not demonstrated, harmony of Gospels whose separate existence has not been heard of. Even Dr. Westcott states that Tatian's Diatessaron "is apparently the first recognition of a fourfold Gospel,"<sup>1</sup> but, as we have seen, that recognition emanates only from a writer of the fourth century who had not seen the work of which he speaks. No such modern ideas, based upon mere foregone conclusions, can be allowed to enter into a discussion regarding a work dating from the time of Tatian.

The fact that the work found by Theodoret in his diocese was used by orthodox Christians without consciousness of its supposed heterodoxy, is quite consistent with the fact that it was the Gospel according to the Hebrews, which at one time was exclusively used by the Fathers, but in later times became gradually an object of suspicion and jealousy in the Church as our canonical Gospels took its place. The manner in which Theodoret dealt with Tatian's Gospel, or that "according to the Hebrews," recalls the treatment by Serapion of another form of the same work: the Gospel according to Peter. He found that work in

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 279.

circulation and greatly valued amongst the Christians of Rhossus, and allowed them peaceably to retain it for a time, until, alarmed at the Docetic heresy, he more closely examined the Gospel, and discovered in it what he considered heretical matter.<sup>1</sup> The Gospel according to the Hebrews, once used by all the Fathers, and which indeed narrowly missed a permanent place in the Canon of the Church, might well seem orthodox to the simple Christians of Cyrus, yet as different from, though closely related to, the Canonical Gospels, it would seem heretical to their Bishop. As different from the Gospels of the four evangelists, it was suppressed by Theodoret with perfect indifference as to whether it were called Tatian's Gospel or the Gospel according to the Hebrews.

It is obvious that there is no evidence whatever connecting Tatian's Gospel with those in our Canon. We know so little about that last work, indeed, that as Dr. Donaldson frankly admits, "we should not be able to identify it, even if it did come down to us, unless it told us something reliable about itself."<sup>2</sup> Its earlier history is enveloped in obscurity, and as Canon Westcott observes: "The later history of the Diatessaron is involved in confusion."<sup>3</sup> We have seen that in the sixth century it was described by Victor of Capua as Diapente, "by five," instead of "by four." It was also confounded with another Harmony written not long after Tatian's day by Ammonius of Alexandria (†243). Dionysius Bar-Salibi,<sup>4</sup> a writer of the latter half of the twelfth century, mentions that the Syrian Ephrem, about the middle of the fourth century, wrote a commentary

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., vi. 12.

<sup>2</sup> *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 26.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 281.

<sup>4</sup> *Jos. Sim. Assemani*, *Bibl. Orient.*, ii. p. 159 f.

on the Diatessaron of Tatian, which Diatessaron commenced with the opening words of the fourth Gospel, "In the beginning was the word." The statement of Bar-Salibi, however, is contradicted by Gregory Bar-Hebræus, Bishop of Tagrit, who says that Ephrem Syrus wrote his Commentary on the Diatessaron of Ammonius, and that this Diatessaron commenced with the words of the fourth Gospel: "In the beginning was the word."<sup>1</sup> The Syrian Ebed-Jesu (†1308) held Tatian and Ammonius to be one and the same person; and it is more than probable that Dionysius mistook the Harmony of Ammonius for that of Tatian. It is not necessary further to follow this discussion, for it in no way affects our question, and all critics are agreed that no important deduction can be derived from it.<sup>2</sup> We allude to the point for the mere sake of showing that up to the last we have no information which throws further light on the composition of Tatian's Gospel. All that we know of it,—what it did not contain—the places where it largely circulated, and the name by which it was called, identifies it with the Gospel according to the Hebrews.

For the rest, Tatian had no idea of a New Testament Canon, and evidently did not recognize as inspired, any Scriptures except those of the Old Testament.<sup>3</sup> It is well known that the sect of the Encratites made use of apocryphal Gospels until a much later period, and rejected the authority of the Apostle Paul, and although

<sup>1</sup> *Assemani*, *Bibl. Orient.*, i. p. 57 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 446 ff.; *Gesch. N. T. Kan.*, p. 19 ff; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 25 f.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 397; *Fichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 120, anm.; *Gieseler*, *Entst. schr. Ewv.*, p. 17; *Hug*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 40 ff.; *Michaelis*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 898; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 95 f.; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 281 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 47 f., p. 441; *Gesch. N. T. Kanons*, p. 21; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 98; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 35.

Tatian may have been acquainted with some of his Epistles, it is certain that he did not hold the Apostle in any honour, and permitted himself the liberty of altering his phraseology.<sup>1</sup>

## 2.

DIONYSIUS of Corinth need not detain us long. Eusebius informs us that he was the author of seven Epistles addressed to various Christian communities, and also of a letter to Chrysochora, "a most faithful sister." Eusebius speaks of these writings as Catholic Epistles, and briefly characterizes each, but with the exception of a few short fragments preserved by him, none of these fruits of the "inspired industry" (*ἐνθέου φιλοπονίας*) of Dionysius are now extant.<sup>2</sup> These fragments are all from an Epistle said to have been addressed to Soter, Bishop of Rome, and give us a clue to the time at which they were written. The Bishopric of Soter is generally dated between A.D. 168—176,<sup>3</sup> during which years the Epistle must have been composed. It could not have been written, however, until after Dionysius became Bishop of Corinth in A.D. 170,<sup>4</sup> and it was probably written some years after.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Epiphanius*, Hær. xlvii. 1; *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 29; *Hieron.*, Præf. in Tit.; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 47, p. 438; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 97 f.; *Lardner*, Credibility, &c., Works, ii. p. 138; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 278, 280, note 1.

<sup>2</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 23; *Hieron.*, De Vir. Ill., 27; *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., ii. p. 217 f.; *Routh*, Reliq. Sacræ, i. p. 180 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 19.

<sup>4</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev. Proleg., p. xxxii.; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 479; *Lardner*, Credibility, &c., Works, ii. p. 133; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 77; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 290; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 107; *Tischenorff*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 18; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 164; cf. p. 37; *Eusebius* in his Chronicon sets it in A.D. 171.

<sup>5</sup> *Anger* places it between 173—177, Synops. Ev. Proleg., xxxii.; cf.

No quotation from, or allusion to, any writing of the New Testament occurs in any of the fragments of the Epistles still extant; nor does Eusebius make mention of any such reference in the Epistles which have perished, which he certainly would not have omitted to do had they contained any. As testimony for our Gospels, therefore, Dionysius is an absolute blank. Some expressions and statements, however, are put forward by apologists which we must examine. In the few lines which Tischendorf accords to Dionysius he refers to two of these. The first is an expression used, not by Dionysius himself, but by Eusebius, in speaking of the Epistles to the Churches at Amastris and at Pontus. Eusebius says that Dionysius adds some "expositions of Holy Scriptures" (*γραφῶν θείων ἐξηγήσεις*).<sup>1</sup> There can be no doubt that this refers to the Old Testament only, and Tischendorf himself does not deny it.<sup>2</sup>

The second passage which Tischendorf<sup>3</sup> points out, and which he claims with some other apologists as evidence of the actual existence of a New Testament Canon when Dionysius wrote, occurs in a fragment from the Epistle to Soter and the Romans which is preserved by Eusebius. It is as follows: "For the brethren having requested me to write Epistles, I write them. And the Apostles of the devil have filled these with tares, both taking away parts and adding others; for whom the woe is destined. It is not surprising then if some have reck-

*Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kan.*, p. 79. Jerome states that Dionysius flourished under M. Aurel. Verus and L. Aurel. Commodus. *De Vir. Ill.*, 27.

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, *H. E.*, iv. 23.

<sup>2</sup> *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 18 f.; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 38; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 217; Dr. Westcott's opinion is shown by his not even referring to the expression.

<sup>3</sup> *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 18 f.

lessly ventured to adulterate the Scriptures of the Lord when they have corrupted these which are not of such importance." <sup>1</sup> Regarding this passage, Canon Westcott, with his usual boldness, says: "It is evident that the 'Scriptures of the Lord'—the writings of the New Testament—were at this time collected, that they were distinguished from other books, that they were jealously guarded, that they had been corrupted for heretical purposes."<sup>2</sup> Canon Westcott's imagination runs away with him. We have seen that there has not been a trace of any New Testament Canon in the writings of the Fathers before and during this age, and it is really discreditable that any critic, even though an "Apologist," acquainted with the history of the Canon should make a statement like this, and put such an interpretation upon the remark of Dionysius. Dr. Donaldson, with greater critical justice and reserve, remarks regarding the expression "Scriptures of the Lord:" "It is not easy to settle what this term means," although he adds his own personal opinion, "but most probably it refers to the Gospels as containing the sayings and doings of the Lord. It is not likely, as Lardner supposes, that such a term would be applied to the whole of the New Testament."<sup>3</sup> The idea of our New Testament being referred to is simply preposterous, and although it is quite open to argument that Dionysius may have referred to evangelical works, it is obvious that there are no means of proving the fact, and much less that he referred to our Gospels specially;

<sup>1</sup> Ἐπιστολὰς γὰρ ἀδελφῶν ἀξιωσάντων με γράψαι, ἔγραψα. Καὶ ταύτας οἱ τοῦ διαβόλου ἀπόστολοι ζιζανίων γεγένικαν, ἃ μὲν ἐξαυροῦντες, ἃ δὲ προστιθέντες. Οἷς τὸ οὐαὶ κείται. Οὐ θαυμαστὸν ἦρα εἶ καὶ τῶν κυριακῶν ῥαδιουργησαί τινας ἐπιβεβληται γραφῶν, ὅποτε καὶ ταῖς οὐ τοιαύταις ἐπιβεβουλευκάσι. Eusebius, H. E., iv. 23.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 166.

<sup>3</sup> Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 217.

in fact the fragments of Dionysius present no evidence whatever of the existence of our Synoptics.

The term, however, does not of necessity apply to any Gospels or works of Christian history at all, and may with perfect propriety have indicated the Scriptures of the Old Testament. We find Justin Martyr complaining in the same spirit as Dionysius, through several chapters, that the Old Testament Scriptures, and more especially those relating to the Lord, had been adulterated, that parts had been taken away, and others added, with the intention of destroying or weakening their application to Christ.<sup>1</sup> Justin's argument throughout is, that the whole of the Old Testament Scriptures refer to Christ, and Tryphon, his antagonist, the representative of Jewish opinion, is made to avow that the Jews not only wait for Christ, but, he adds: "We admit that all the Scriptures which you have cited refer to him."<sup>2</sup> Not only, therefore, were the Scriptures of the Old Testament closely connected with their Lord by the Fathers, and, at the date of which we are treating, were the only 'Holy Scriptures' recognised, but they made the same complaints which we meet with in Dionysius that these Scriptures were adulterated by omissions and interpolations.<sup>3</sup> The expression of Eusebius regarding "expositions of Holy or Divine Scriptures" (*γραφῶν θείων ἐξηγήσεις*) added by Dionysius, which applied to the Old Testament, tends to connect the Old Testament also with this term "Scriptures of the Lord." It is certain that had Dionysius mentioned books of the New Testament, Eusebius would as usual have stated the fact.

<sup>1</sup> Dial. c. Tryph., lxx.—lxxv.

<sup>2</sup> Dial., lxxxix.

<sup>3</sup> This charge is made with insistence throughout the Clementine Homilies.

If the term "Scriptures of the Lord," however, be referred to Gospels, the difficulty of using it as evidence continues undiminished. We have no indication whatever what evangelical works were in the Bishop's mind. We have not yet met with any trace of our Gospels, whilst on the other hand we have seen other Gospels used by the Fathers, and in exclusive circulation amongst various communities, and even until much later times many works were regarded by them as divinely inspired which have no place in our Canon. The Gospel according to the Hebrews for instance was made use of by all the Apostolic Fathers, by pseudo-Ignatius, Polycarp, Papias, Hegesippus, Justin Martyr, and at least employed along with our Gospels by Clement of Alexandria, Origen, and Jerome, whilst Eusebius is in doubt whether to place it in the second class among the Antilegomena with the Apocalypse, or in the first, amongst the Homologomena.<sup>1</sup> The fact that Serapion, in the third century allowed the Gospel of Peter to be used in the church of Rhossus<sup>2</sup> shows at the same time the consideration in which it was held, and the incompleteness of the Canonical position of the New Testament writings. So does the circumstance that in the fifth century Theodoret found the Gospel according to the Hebrews, or Tatian's Gospel, widely circulated and held in honour amongst orthodox churches in his diocese.<sup>3</sup> The Pastor of Hermas, which was read in the Churches and nearly secured a permanent place in the Canon, was quoted as inspired by Irenæus.<sup>4</sup> The Epistle of Barnabas was held in similar

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 25.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, vi. 12.

<sup>3</sup> *Theodoret*, Hær. fab., i. 20; cf. *Epiph.*, Hær., xlv. 1; cf. *Theodoret*, Hær. fab., ii. 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Adv. Hær.*, iv. 20, § 2; *Euseb.*, H. E., v. 8; cf. iii. 3.

honour, and quoted as inspired by Clement of Alexandria<sup>1</sup> and by Origen,<sup>2</sup> as was likewise the Epistle of the Roman Clement. The Apocalypse of Peter was included by Clement of Alexandria in his account of the Canonical Scriptures and those which are disputed, such as the Epistle of Jude and the other Catholic Epistles,<sup>3</sup> and it stands side by side with the Apocalypse of John in the Canon of Muratori, being long after publicly read in the Churches of Palestine.<sup>4</sup> Tischendorf indeed conjectures that a blank in the Codex Sinaiticus after the New Testament was formerly filled by it. Justin, Clement of Alexandria, and Lactantius quote the Sibylline books as the Word of God, and pay similar honour to the Book of Hystaspes.<sup>5</sup> So great indeed was the consideration and use of the Sibylline Books in the Church of the second and third centuries, that Christians from that fact were nicknamed Sibyllists.<sup>6</sup> It is unnecessary to multiply, as might so easily be done, these illustrations; it is too well known that a vast number of Gospels and similar works which have been excluded from the Canon were held in the deepest veneration by the Church in the second century, to which the words of Dionysius may apply. So vague and indefinite an expression at any rate is useless as evidence for the existence of our Canonical Gospels.

Canon Westcott's deduction from the words of

<sup>1</sup> Strom., ii. 8, iv. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Philocal., 18.

<sup>3</sup> Eusebius, H. E., vi. 14.

<sup>4</sup> Sozom., H. E., vii. 19.

<sup>5</sup> Justin, Apol., i. 20, 44; Clem. Al., Strom., vi. 5, §§ 42, 43; Lactantius, Instit. Div., i. 6, 7, vii. 15, 19. Clement of Alexandria quotes with perfect faith and seriousness some apocryphal book, in which, he says, the Apostle Paul recommends the Hellenic books, the Sibyl and the books of Hystaspes as giving notably clear prophetic descriptions of the Son of God. Strom., vi. 5, § 42, 43.

<sup>6</sup> Origen, Contra Cels., γ. 6; cf. vii. 53.

Dionysius, that not only were the writings of the New Testament already collected, but that they were "jealously guarded," is imaginative indeed. It is much and devoutly to be wished that they had been as carefully guarded as he supposes, even at a much later period, but it is well known that this was not the case, and that numerous interpolations have been introduced into the text. The whole history of the Canon and of Christian literature in the second and third centuries displays the most deplorable carelessness and want of critical judgment on the part of the Fathers. Whatever was considered as conducive to Christian edification was blindly adopted by them, and a vast number of works were launched into circulation and falsely ascribed to Apostles and others likely to secure for them greater consideration. Such pious fraud was rarely suspected, still more rarely detected in the early ages of Christianity, and several of such pseudographs have secured a place in our New Testament. The words of Dionysius need not receive any wider signification than a reference to well-known Epistles. It is clear from the words of the Apostle Paul in 2 Thess. ii. 2, iii. 17, that his Epistles were falsified, and setting aside some of those which bear his name in our Canon, spurious Epistles were long ascribed to him, such as the Epistle to the Laodiceans and a third Epistle to the Corinthians. We need not do more than allude to the second Epistle falsely bearing the name of Clement of Rome, as well as the Clementine Homilies and Recognitions, the Apostolical Constitutions, and the spurious letters of Ignatius, the letters and legend of Abgarus quoted by Eusebius, and the Epistles of Paul and Seneca, in addition to others already pointed out, as instances of the wholesale falsification of that

period, many of which gross forgeries were at once accepted as genuine by the Fathers, so slight was their critical faculty and so ready their credulity.<sup>1</sup> In one case the Church punished the author who, from mistaken zeal for the honour of the Apostle Paul, fabricated the *Acta Pauli et Theclæ* in his name,<sup>2</sup> but the forged production was not the less made use of in the Church. There was, therefore, no lack of falsification and adulteration of works of Apostles and others of greater note than himself to warrant the remark of Dionysius, without any forced application of it to our Gospels or to a New Testament Canon, the existence of which there is nothing to substantiate, but on the contrary every reason to discredit.

Before leaving this passage we may add that although even Tischendorf does not, Canon Westcott does find in it references to our first Synoptic, and to the Apocalypse. "The short fragment just quoted," he says, "contains two obvious allusions, one to the Gospel of St. Matthew, and one to the Apocalypse."<sup>3</sup> The words: "the Apostles of the devil have filled these with tares," are, he supposes, an allusion to Matt. xiii. 24 ff. But even if the expression were an echo of the Parable of the Wheat and Tares, it is absurd to refer it in this arbitrary way to our first Gospel, to the exclusion of the numerous other works which existed, many of which doubtless contained it, and notably the Gospel according to the Hebrews. Obviously the words have no evidential value.

Continuing his previous assertions, however, Canon Westcott affirms with equal boldness: "The allusion in

<sup>1</sup> The Epistle of Jude quotes as genuine the Assumption of Moses, and also the Book of Enoch, and the defence of the authenticity of the latter by Tertullian (*de Cultu fem.*, i. 3) will not be forgotten.

<sup>2</sup> Tertullian, *De Baptismo*, 17.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 167.

the last clause"—to the "Scriptures of the Lord"—"will be clear when it is remembered that Dionysius 'warred against the heresy of Marcion and defended the rule of truth'" (*παρίστασθαι κανόνι ἀλ.*).<sup>1</sup> Tischendorf, who is ready enough to strain every expression into evidence, recognizes too well that this is not capable of such an interpretation. Dr. Westcott omits to mention that the words, moreover, are not used by Dionysius at all, but simply proceed from Eusebius.<sup>2</sup> Dr. Donaldson distinctly states the fact that, "there is no reference to the Bible in the words of Eusebius: he defends the rule of the truth"<sup>3</sup> (*τῷ τῆς ἀληθείας παρίσταται κανόνι*).

There is only one other point to mention. Canon Westcott refers to the passage in the Epistle of Dionysius, which has already been quoted in this work regarding the reading of Christian writings in churches. "To-day," he writes to Soter, "we have kept the Lord's holy day, in which we have read your Epistle, from the reading of which we shall ever derive admonition, as we do from the former one written to us by Clement."<sup>4</sup> It is evident that there was no idea, in selecting the works to be read at the weekly assembly of Christians, of any Canon of a New Testament. We here learn that the Epistles of Clement and of Soter were habitually read, and while we hear of this, and of the similar reading of Justin's "Memoirs of the Apostles,"<sup>5</sup> of the Pastor of Hermas,<sup>6</sup> of the Apocalypse of Peter,<sup>7</sup> and other apocryphal works, we do not at the same time hear of the public reading of our Gospels.

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 166 f.

<sup>2</sup> H. E., iv. 23.

<sup>3</sup> Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 217 f.

<sup>4</sup> Euseb., H. E., iv. 23.

<sup>5</sup> Justin, Apol., i. 67.

<sup>6</sup> Euseb., H. E., iii. 3; Hieron., De Vir. Ill., 10.

<sup>7</sup> Sozom., H. E., vii. 9.

## CHAPTER IX.

## MELITO OF SARDIS—CLAUDIUS APOLLINARIS—ATHENAGORAS—THE EPISTLE OF VIENNE AND LYONS.

WE might here altogether have passed over Melito, Bishop of Sardis in Lydia, had it not been for the use of certain fragments of his writings made by Canon Westcott. Melito, naturally, is not cited by Tischendorf at all, but the English Apologist, with greater zeal, we think, than critical discretion, forces him into service as evidence for the Gospels and a New Testament Canon. The date of Melito, it is generally agreed, falls after A.D. 176, a phrase in his apology presented to Marcus Antoninus preserved in Eusebius<sup>1</sup> (*μετὰ τοῦ παιδός*) indicating that Commodus had already been admitted to a share of the Government.<sup>2</sup>

Canon Westcott affirms that, in a fragment preserved by Eusebius, Melito speaks of the books of the New Testament in a collected form. He says: "The words of Melito on the other hand are simple and casual, and yet their meaning can scarcely be mistaken. He writes to Onesimus, a fellow-Christian who had urged him 'to

<sup>1</sup> H. E., iv. 26.

<sup>2</sup> *Basnage*, Ann. Polit. Eccles., 177, § 3; *Dupin*, Biblioth. des Auteurs Eccl., i. p. 63; *Lardner*, Credibility, &c., Works, ii. p. 147; *Tillemont*, Mém. Hist. Eccl., ii. p. 707, note 1 f.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 193, note 2; *Woolf*, De Melitone, § 5; cf. *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 229.

make selections for him from the Law and the Prophets concerning the Saviour and the faith generally, and furthermore desired to learn the accurate account of the Old (*παλαιῶν*) Books; 'having gone therefore to the East,' Melito says, 'and reached the spot where [each thing] was preached and done, and having learned accurately the Books of the Old Testament, I have sent a list of them.' The mention of 'the Old Books'—'the Books of the Old Testament,' naturally implies a definite New Testament, a written antitype to the Old; and the form of language implies a familiar recognition of its contents."<sup>1</sup> This is truly astonishing! The "form of language" can only refer to the words: "concerning the Saviour and the faith generally," which must have an amazing fulness of meaning to convey to Canon Westcott the implication of a "familiar recognition" of the contents of a supposed already collected New Testament, seeing that a simple Christian, not to say a Bishop, might at least know of a Saviour and the faith generally from the oral preaching of the Gospel, from a single Epistle of Paul, or from any of the *πολλοὶ* of Luke. This reasoning forms a worthy pendant to his argument that because Melito speaks of the books of the Old Testament he implies the existence of a definite collected New Testament. Such an assertion is calculated to mislead a large class of readers.<sup>2</sup>

The fragment of Melito is as follows: "Melito to his

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 193.

<sup>2</sup> It must be said, however, that Canon Westcott merely follows and exaggerates Lardner, here, who says: "From this passage I would conclude that there was then also a volume or collection of books called the New Testament, containing the writings of Apostles and Apostolical men, but we cannot from hence infer the names or the exact number of those books." *Credibility, &c., Works*, ii. p. 148.

brother Onesimus, greeting. As thou hast frequently desired in thy zeal for the word (λόγον) to have extracts made for thee, both from the law and the prophets concerning the Saviour and our whole faith; nay, more, hast wished to be informed with exactness of the old books (παλαιῶν βιβλίων), how many they are and what is their order, I have earnestly endeavoured to accomplish this, knowing thy zeal concerning the faith, and thy desire to be informed concerning the word (λόγον), and especially that thou preferrest these matters to all others from love towards God, striving to gain eternal salvation. Having, therefore, gone to the East, and reached the place where this was preached and done, and having accurately ascertained the books of the Old Testament (τὰ τῆς παλαιᾶς διαθήκης βιβλία), I have, subjoined, sent a list of them unto thee, and these are the names" — then follows a list of the books of the Old Testament omitting, however, Esther. He then concludes with the words: "Of these I have made the extracts dividing them into six books." <sup>1</sup>

Canon Westcott's assertion that the expression "Old Books," "Books of the Old Testament," involves here by antithesis a definite *written* New Testament, requires us to say a few words as to the name of "Testament" as applied to both divisions of the Bible. It is of course well known that this word came into use originally from the translation of the Hebrew word "covenant" (ברית), or compact made between God and the Israelites, <sup>2</sup> in the Septuagint version by the Greek word Διαθήκη, which in a legal sense also means a will or Testament, <sup>3</sup> and that word is adopted throughout the New Testa-

<sup>1</sup> Eusebius, H. E., iv. 26.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Exod. xxiv. 7.

<sup>3</sup> The legal sense of διαθήκη as a Will or Testament is distinctly in-

ment.<sup>1</sup> The Vulgate translation, instead of retaining the original Hebrew signification, translated the word in the Gospels and Epistles, "*Testamentum*," and ἡ παλαιὰ διαθήκη became "*Vetus Testamentum*," instead of "*Vetus Fœdus*," and whenever the word occurs in the English version it is almost invariably rendered "Testament" instead of covenant. The expression "Book of the Covenant," or "Testament," βίβλος τῆς διαθήκης, frequently occurs in the LXX version of the Old Testament and its Apocrypha,<sup>2</sup> and in Jeremiah xxxi. 31-34,<sup>3</sup> the prophet speaks of making a "new covenant" (καινὴ διαθήκη) with the house of Israel, which is indeed quoted in Hebrews viii. 8. It is the doctrinal idea of the new covenant, through Christ confirming the former one made to the Israelites, which has led to the distinction of the Old and New Testaments. Generally the Old Testament was, in the first ages of Christianity, indicated by the simple expressions "The Books" (τὰ βιβλία), "Holy Scriptures" (ἱερὰ γράμματα,<sup>4</sup> or γραφαὶ ἁγίαι),<sup>5</sup> or "The Scriptures" (αἱ γραφαὶ),<sup>6</sup> but the preparation for the distinction of "Old Testament" began very early in the development of the doctrinal idea of the New Testament of Christ, before there was any part of the New Testament books written at all. The expression "New Testament," derived thus

tended in Heb. ix. 16. "For where a Testament (διαθήκη) is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator" (διαθεμένου). The same word διαθήκη is employed throughout the whole passage. Heb. ix. 15-20.

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. iii. 14; Heb. viii. 6-13, xii. 24; Rom. ix. 4, xi. 26-28; Gal. iii. 14-17; Ephes. ii. 12, &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Exod. xxiv. 7; 2 Chron. xxxiv. 30; 2 Kings xxiii. 2; 1 Maccab. i. 57; Sirach, xxiv. 23, &c., &c.

<sup>3</sup> In the Septuagint version, xxxviii. 31-34.

<sup>4</sup> 2 Tim. iii. 15.

<sup>5</sup> Rom. i. 2.

<sup>6</sup> Matt. xxii. 29.

antithetically from the "Old Testament," occurs constantly throughout the second part of the Bible. In the Epistle to the Hebrews viii. 6-13, the Mosaic dispensation is contrasted with the Christian, and Jesus is called the Mediator of a better Testament (*διαθήκη*).<sup>1</sup> The first Testament not being faultless, is replaced by the second, and the writer quotes the passage from Jeremiah to which we have referred regarding a New Testament, winding up his argument with the words, v. 13: "In that he saith a new (Testament) he hath made the first old." Again, in our first Gospel, during the Last Supper, Jesus is represented as saying: "This is my blood of the New Testament" (*τῆς καινῆς διαθήκης*);<sup>2</sup> and in Luke he says: "This cup is the New Testament (*ἡ καινὴ διαθήκη*) in my blood."<sup>3</sup> There is, therefore, a very distinct reference made to the two Testaments as "New" and "Old," and in speaking of the books of the Law and the Prophets as the "Old Books" and "Books of the old Testament," after the general acceptance of the Gospel of Jesus as the New Testament or Covenant, there was no antithetical implication whatever of a written New Testament, but a mere reference to the doctrinal idea. We might multiply illustrations showing how ever-present to the mind of the early Church was the contrast of the Mosaic and Christian Covenants as Old and New. Two more we may venture to point out. In Romans ix. 4, and Gal. iv. 24, the two Testaments or Covenants (*αἱ δύο διαθήκαι*), typified by Sinai and the heavenly Jerusalem, are discussed, and the superiority of the latter asserted. There is, however, a passage, still more clear and decisive. Paul says in 2 Corinthians iii. 6: "Who also (God) made us sufficient to be ministers of the New

<sup>1</sup> Cf. ix. 15, xii. 24.<sup>2</sup> Matt. xxvi. 28.<sup>3</sup> Luke xxii. 20.

Testament (*καινῆς διαθήκης*) not of the letter, but of the spirit" (*οὐ γράμματος ἀλλὰ πνεύματος*). Why does not Canon Westcott boldly claim this as evidence of a definite written New Testament, when not only is there reference to the name, but a distinction drawn between the letter and the spirit of it, from which an apologist might make a telling argument? But proceeding to contrast the glory of the New with the Old dispensation, the Apostle, in reference to the veil with which Moses covered his face, says: "But their understandings were hardened: for until this very day remaineth the same veil in the reading of the Old Testament" (*ἐπὶ τῇ ἀναγνώσει τῆς παλαιᾶς διαθήκης*);<sup>1</sup> and as if to make the matter still clearer he repeats in the next verse: "But even unto this day when Moses is read, the veil lieth upon their heart." Now here the actual reading of the *Old Testament* (*παλαιᾶς διαθήκης*) is distinctly mentioned, and the expression quite as aptly as that of Melito, "implies a definite New Testament, a written antitype to the Old," but even Canon Westcott would not dare to suggest that when the second Epistle to the Corinthians was composed, there was a "definite written New Testament" in existence. This conclusively shows that the whole argument from Melito's mention of the books of the Old Testament is absolutely groundless.

On the contrary, Canon Westcott should know very well that the first general designation for the New Testament collection was "The Gospel" (*εὐαγγέλιον, εὐαγγελικόν, εὐαγγελικά*) and "The Apostle" (*ἀπόστολος, ἀποστολικόν, ἀποστολικά*), for the two portions of the collection, in contrast with the divisions of the Old Testament, the Law and the Prophets (*ὁ νόμος, οἱ*

<sup>1</sup> Verse 14.

προφήται),<sup>1</sup> and the name New Testament occurs for the very first time in the third century, when Tertullian called the collection of Christian Scriptures *Novum Instrumentum* and *Novum Testamentum*.<sup>2</sup> The term ἡ καινὴ διαθήκη is not, so far as we are aware, applied in the Greek to the "New Testament" collection in any earlier work than Origen's *De Principiis*, iv. 1. It was only in the second half of the third century that the double designation τὸ εὐαγγέλιον καὶ ὁ ἀπόστολος was generally abandoned.

As to the evidence for a New Testament Canon, which Dr. Westcott supposes he gains by his unfounded inference from Melito's expression, we may judge of its value from the fact that he himself, like Lardner, admits: "But there is little evidence in the fragment of Melito to show what writings he would have included in the new collection."<sup>4</sup> Little evidence? There is none at all.

There is, however, one singular and instructive point in this fragment to which Canon Westcott does not in any way refer, but which well merits attention as illus-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., i. 3, § 6; *Clemens Al.*, Strom., v. 5, § 31; *Tertullian*, De Præscr., 36; Adv. Marc., iv. 2, Apolog., 18; *Origen*, Hom. xix. in Jerem. T. iii. p. 364. The Canon of Muratori says that the Pastor of Hermas can neither be classed "inter Prophetas neque inter Apostolos." In a translation of the *Clavis*, a spurious work attributed to Melito himself—and Dr. Westcott admits it to be spurious (p. 198, note 1)—the Gospels are referred to simply by the formula "*in evangelio*," and the Epistles generally "*in apostolo*."

<sup>2</sup> Adv. Prax., 15, 20; Adv. Marc., iv. 1. He says in the latter place "instrumenti," referring to Old and New Testaments, "vel, quod magis usui est dicere, testamenti."

<sup>3</sup> *Bertholdt*, Einl. a. u. N. Test., i. p. 22; *Credner*, Gesch. N. T., p. 23 ff.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., iv. p. 25 ff., p. 38 ff.; *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch. N. T., p. 4 f.; *Reithmayr*, Einl. N. B., 1852, p. 22 ff.; *Scholz*, Einl. H. S. des A. u. N. T., 1845, i. p. 264; *De Wette*, Lehrb. Einl. A. T., 1852, p. 8 ff.

<sup>4</sup> On the Canon, p. 194.

trating the state of religious knowledge at that time, and, by analogy, giving a glimpse of the difficulties which beset early Christian literature. We are told by Melito that Onesimus had frequently urged him to give him exact information as to the number and order of the books of the Old Testament, and to have extracts made for him from them concerning the Saviour and the faith. Now it is apparent that Melito, though a Bishop, was not able to give the desired information regarding the number and order of the books of the Old Testament himself, but that he had to make a journey to collect it. If this was the extent of knowledge possessed by the Bishop of Sardis of what was to the Fathers the only Holy Scripture, how ignorant his flock must have been, and how unfitted, both, to form any critical judgment as to the connection of Christianity with the Mosaic dispensation. The formation of a Christian Canon at a period when such ignorance was not only possible but generally prevailed, and when the zeal of believers led to the composition of such a mass of pseudonymic and other literature, in which every consideration of correctness and truth was subordinated to a childish desire for edification, must have been slow indeed and uncertain ; and in such an age fortuitous circumstances must have mainly led to the canonization or actual loss of many a work. So far from affording any evidence of the existence of a New Testament Canon, the fragment of Melito only shows the ignorance of the Bishop of Sardis as to the Canon even of the Old Testament.

We have not yet finished with Melito in connection with Canon Westcott, however, and it is necessary to follow him further in order fully to appreciate the nature of the evidence for the New Testament Canon, which, in default

of better, he is obliged to offer. Eusebius gives what he evidently considers a complete list of the works of Melito, and in addition to the fragment already quoted, he extracts a brief passage from Melito's work on the Passion, and some much longer quotations from his Apology, to which we have in passing referred.<sup>1</sup> With these exceptions, none of Melito's writings are now extant. Dr. Cureton, however, has published a Syriac version, with translation, of a so-called "Oration of Meliton, the Philosopher, who was in the presence of Antoninus Cæsar," together with five other fragments attributed to Melito.<sup>2</sup> With regard to this Syriac Oration Canon Westcott says: "Though if it be entire, it is not the Apology with which Eusebius was acquainted, the general character of the writing leads to the belief that it is a genuine book of Melito of Sardis;"<sup>3</sup> and he proceeds to treat it as authentic. In the first place, we have so little of Melito's genuine compositions extant, that it is hazardous indeed to draw any positive deduction from the "character of the writing." Cureton, Bunsen, and others maintain that this Apology is not a fragment, and it cannot be the work mentioned by Eusebius, for it does not contain the quotation from the authentic Orations which he has preserved, and which are considerable. It is, however, clear from the substance of the composition that it cannot have been spoken before the Emperor,<sup>4</sup> and moreover, it has in no way the character of an "Apology," for there is not a single word in it about either Christianity or Christians. There is

<sup>1</sup> *Euseb.*, H. E., iv. 26.

<sup>2</sup> *Spicilegium Syriacum*, 1855, pp. 41-56; *Pitra*, *Spicil. Solesm.*, 1855. ii. Proleg. xxxviii. ff.

<sup>3</sup> *On the Canon*, p. 194.

<sup>4</sup> *Donalson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 234 f.

every reason to believe that it is not a genuine work of Melito.<sup>1</sup> There is no ground whatever for supposing that he wrote two Apologies, nor is this ascribed to him upon any other ground than the inscription of an unknown Syriac writer. This, however, is not the only spurious work attributed to Melito. Of this work Canon Westcott says: "Like other Apologies, this oration contains only indirect references to the Christian Scriptures. The allusions in it to the Gospels are extremely rare, and except so far as they show the influence of St. John's writings, of no special interest."<sup>2</sup> It would have been more correct to have said that there are no allusions in it to the Gospels at all.

Canon Westcott is somewhat enthusiastic in speaking of Melito and his literary activity as evinced in the titles of his works recorded by Eusebius, and he quotes with great zest a fragment, said to be from a treatise "On Faith," amongst these Syriac remains, and which he considers to be "a very striking expansion of the early historic creed of the Church."<sup>3</sup> As usual, we shall give the entire fragment: "We have made collections from the Law and the Prophets relative to those things which have been declared respecting our Lord Jesus Christ, that we may prove to your love that he is perfect Reason, the Word of God; who was begotten before the light; who was Creator together with the Father; who was the Fashioner of man; who was all in all; who among the Patriarchs was Patriarch; who in the Law was the Law; among the Priests chief Priest; among Kings Governor; among the Prophets the Prophet;

<sup>1</sup> *Donaldson, ib.*, iii. p. 234; *Freppel, Les Apologistes*, 2 ser. p. 374 f.; *Davidson, Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 478.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 194.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 196.

among the Angels Archangel; in the voice the Word; among Spirits Spirit; in the Father the Son; in God the King for ever and ever. For this was he who was Pilot to Noah; who conducted Abraham; who was bound with Isaac; who was in exile with Jacob; who was sold with Joseph; who was captain with Moses; who was the Divider of the inheritance with Jesus the son of Nun; who in David and the Prophets foretold his own sufferings; who was incarnate in the Virgin; who was born at Bethlehem; who was wrapped in swaddling clothes in the manger; who was seen of shepherds; who was glorified of angels; who was worshipped by the Magi; who was pointed out by John; who assembled the Apostles; who preached the kingdom; who healed the maimed; who gave light to the blind; who raised the dead; who appeared in the Temple; who was not believed by the people; who was betrayed by Judas; who was laid hold on by the Priests; who was condemned by Pilate; who was pierced in the flesh; who was hanged upon the tree; who was buried in the earth; who rose from the dead; who appeared to the Apostles; who ascended to heaven; who sitteth on the right hand of the Father; who is the Rest of those who are departed; the Recoverer of those who are in darkness; the Deliverer of those who are captives; the Finder of those who have gone astray; the Refuge of the afflicted; the Bridegroom of the Church; the Charioteer of the Cherubim; the Captain of the Angels; God who is of God; the Son who is of the Father; Jesus Christ, the King for ever and ever. Amen.”<sup>1</sup>

Canon Westcott commences his commentary upon

<sup>1</sup> *Cureton, Spicil. Syriacum*, p. 53 f.; *Westcott, On the Canon*, p. 196 f.; *Pitra, Spicil. Solesm.*, ii. Proleg. lix. f.

this passage with the remark: "No writer could state the fundamental truths of Christianity more unhesitatingly, or quote the Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments with more perfect confidence."<sup>1</sup> We need not do more than remark that there is not a single quotation in the fragment, and that there is not a single one of the references to Gospel history or to ecclesiastical dogmas which might not have been derived from the Epistles of Paul, from any of the forms of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, the Protevangelium of James, or from many another apocryphal Gospel, or the oral teaching of the Church. It is singular, however, that the only hint which Canon Westcott gives of the more than doubtful authenticity of this fragment consists of the introductory remark, after alluding to the titles of his genuine and supposititious writings: "Of these multifarious writings very few fragments remain in the original Greek, but the general tone of them is so decided in its theological character as to go far to establish the genuineness of those which are preserved in the Syriac translation."<sup>2</sup>

Now, the fragment "On Faith" which has just been quoted is one of the five Syriac pieces of Dr. Cureton to which we have referred, and which even Apologists agree "cannot be regarded as genuine."<sup>3</sup> It is well known that there were many writers in the early Church bearing the names of Melito and Miletius or Meletius,<sup>4</sup> which were frequently confounded. Of these five Syriac fragments one bears the superscription: "Of Meliton,

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 197.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 196.

<sup>3</sup> Donaldson, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 236.

<sup>4</sup> Hoog, *Dissert.*, i. § 2; cf. Donaldson, *ib.*, iii. p. 234, 236; Cureton, *Spicil. Syriac.*, p. 96 f.

Bishop of the city of Attica," and another, "Of the holy Meliton, Bishop of Utica," and Cureton himself evidently leant to the opinion that they are not by our Melito, but by a Meletius or Melitius, Bishop of Sebastopolis in Pontus.<sup>1</sup> The third fragment is said to be taken from a discourse "On the Cross," which was unknown to Eusebius, and from its doctrinal peculiarities was probably written after his time.<sup>2</sup> Another fragment purports to be from a work on the "Soul and Body;" and the last one from the treatise "On Faith," which we are discussing. The last two works are mentioned by Eusebius, but these fragments, besides coming in such suspicious company, must for every reason be pronounced spurious.<sup>3</sup> They have in fact no attestation whatever except that of the Syriac translator, who is unknown, and which therefore is worthless, and, on the other hand, the whole style and thought of the fragments are unlike anything else of Melito's time, and clearly indicate a later stage of theological development.<sup>4</sup> Moreover, in the Mechitarist Library at Venice there is a shorter version of the same passage in a Syriac MS., and an Armenian version of the extract as given above, in both of which the passage is distinctly ascribed to Irenæus.<sup>5</sup> Besides the Oration and the five Syriac fragments, we have other two works extant falsely attributed to Melito, one, "De Transitu Virginis Mariæ," describing the miraculous presence of the Apostles at the death of Mary;<sup>6</sup> and the other, "De Actibus Joannis Apostoli," relates the history of miracles

<sup>1</sup> *Spicil. Syriac.*, p. 96 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Donaldson, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 237.

<sup>3</sup> *Donaldson, ib.*, iii. p. 227.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, iii. p. 236.

<sup>5</sup> They are given by *Pitra, Spicil. Solesm.*, i. p. 3 ff.

<sup>6</sup> It is worthy of remark that the Virgin is introduced into all these fragments in a manner quite foreign to the period at which Melito lived.

performed by the Apostle John. Both are universally admitted to be spurious,<sup>1</sup> as are a few other fragments also bearing his name. Melito did not escape from the falsification to which many of his more distinguished predecessors and contemporaries were victims, through the literary activity and unscrupulous religious zeal of the first three or four centuries of our era.

## 2.

Very little is known regarding Claudius Apollinaris to whom we must now for a moment turn. Eusebius informs us that he was Bishop of Hierapolis,<sup>2</sup> and in this he is supported by the fragment of a letter of Serapion Bishop of Antioch preserved to us by him, which refers to Apollinaris as the "most blessed."<sup>3</sup> Tischendorf, without any precise date, sets him down as contemporary with Tatian and Theophilus (whom he calculates to have written his work addressed to Autolyceus about A.D. 180—181).<sup>4</sup> Eusebius<sup>5</sup> mentions that, like his somewhat earlier contemporary Melito of Sardis, Apollinaris presented an "Apology" to the Emperor Marcus Antoninus, and he gives us further materials for a date<sup>6</sup> by stating that Claudius Apollinaris, probably in his Apology, refers to the miracle of the "Thundering Legion," which is said

<sup>1</sup> Donaldson, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 238; *Woog*, *Dissert.*, ii. § 25; *Pitra*, *Spicil. Solesm.*, ii. Proleg. xxxi. f.

<sup>2</sup> *H. E.*, iv. 21, 26.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, v. 19.

<sup>4</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 16, ann. 1.

<sup>5</sup> *H. E.*, iv. 26, 27; cf. *Hieron.*, *De Vir.* III., 26.

<sup>6</sup> Eusebius himself sets him down in his *Chronicle* as flourishing in the eleventh year of Marcus, or A.D. 171, a year later than he dates Melito.

to have occurred during the war of Marcus Antoninus against the Marcomanni in A.D. 174.<sup>1</sup> The date of his writings may, therefore, with moderation be fixed between A.D. 177—180.<sup>2</sup>

Eusebius and others mention many works composed by him,<sup>3</sup> none of which, however, are extant; and we have only to deal with two brief fragments in connection with the Paschal controversy, which are ascribed to Apollinaris in the Paschal Chronicle of Alexandria. This controversy, as to the day upon which the Christian Passover should be celebrated, broke out about A.D. 170, and long continued to divide the Church.<sup>4</sup> In the preface to the Paschal Chronicle, a work of the seventh century, the unknown chronicler says: "But Apollinaris, the most holy Bishop of Hierapolis, in Asia, who lived near apostolic times, taught the same things in his work on the Passover, saying this: 'There are some, however, who through ignorance raise contentions regarding these matters in a way which

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 5; *Mosheim*, Inst. Hist. Eccles., Book i. cent. ii. part. i. ch. i. § 9. Apollinaris states that in consequence of this miracle, the Emperor had bestowed upon the Legion the name of the "Thundering Legion." We cannot here discuss this subject, but the whole story illustrates the rapidity with which a fiction is magnified into truth by religious zeal, and is surrounded by false circumstantial evidence. Cf. *Tertullian*, *Apol.* 5, ad Scapulam, 4; *Dion Cassius*, lib. 55; *Scaliger*, *Animadv.* in Euseb., p. 223 f.; cf. *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 241 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.* p. 356; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 240; *Lardner*, *Credibility, &c.*, Works, ii. p. 294; *Newman*, *Essays on Miracles*, 1870, p. 241; *Scholten*, *Das Evang. n. Johann.*, 1867, p. 14 ff.; *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 106; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 164, p. 31 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 27; cf. 26, v. 19; *Hieron.*, *Epist. ad Magnum Ep.*, 83; *Theodoret*, *Hær. Fab.* ii. 21, iii. 2; *Photius*, *Biblioth. Cod.* 14.

<sup>4</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Paschastreit*, p. 250 ff.; *Die Evangelien*, p. 344 ff.; *Baur*, *K. G. drei erst. Jahrh.*, p. 156 ff.; *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 340 f., p. 356 f.; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 31 f.

should be pardoned, for ignorance must not be pursued with accusation, but requires instruction. And they say that the Lord, together with his disciples, ate the lamb (τὸ πρόβατον) on the 14th Nisan, but himself suffered on the great day of unleavened bread. And they state (διηγούνται) that Matthew says precisely what they have understood; hence their understanding of it is at variance with the law, and according to them the Gospels seem to contradict each other."<sup>1</sup> The last sentence is interpreted as pointing out that the first synoptic Gospel is supposed to be at variance with our fourth Gospel. This fragment is claimed by Tischendorf<sup>2</sup> and others as evidence of the general acceptance at that time both of the Synoptics and the fourth Gospel. Canon Westcott, with obvious exaggeration, says: "The Gospels are evidently quoted as books certainly known and recognized; their authority is placed on the same footing as the Old Testament."<sup>3</sup> The Gospels are referred to merely for the settlement of the historical fact as to the day on which the last Passover had been eaten, a narrative of which they contained.

There are, however, very grave reasons for doubting the authenticity of the two fragments ascribed to Apolli-

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ Ἀπολινάριος δὲ ὁ ὁσιώτατος ἐπίσκοπος Ἱεραπόλεως τῆς Ἀσίας, ὁ ἐγγὺς τῶν ἀποστολικῶν χρόνων γεγονώς, ἐν τῷ περὶ τοῦ Πάσχα λόγῳ τὰ παραπλησία ἐδίδαξε, λέγων οὕτως· Εἰσὶ τοίνυν οἱ δι' ἄγνοιαν φιλονεικοῦσι περὶ τούτων, συγγνωστὸν πρᾶγμα πεπονηότες· ἄγνοια γάρ οὐ κατηγορίαν ἀναδέχεται, ἀλλὰ διδαχῆς προσδέεται. καὶ λέγουσιν ὅτι τῇ ιδ' τὸ πρόβατον μετὰ τῶν μαθητῶν ἔφαγεν ὁ Κύριος· τῇ δὲ μεγάλῃ ἡμέρᾳ τῶν ἀζύμων αὐτὸς ἔπαθεν· καὶ διηγούνται Ματθαῖον οὕτω λέγειν ὡς νενοήκασιν· ὅθεν ἀσύμφωνός τε νόμος ἢ νόησις αὐτῶν καὶ στασιάζειν δοκεῖ κατ' αὐτοὺς τὰ εὐαγγέλια. *Prefat. Chron. Pasch. sive Alex. ed. Duncanæ*, p. 6; *Routh, Reliq. Sacr.*, i. p. 160. We need not quote the second fragment here, as it has nothing to do with our Synoptics; but, indeed, neither of the passages being by Apollinaris, it is scarcely necessary to refer to the other at all.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 18.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 199.

naris, and we must mention that these doubts are much less those of German critics, who, on the whole, either do not raise the question at all, or hastily dispose of it, than doubts entertained by the most orthodox Apologists, who see little ground for accepting them as genuine.<sup>1</sup> Eusebius, who gives a catalogue of the works of Apollinaris which had reached him,<sup>2</sup> was evidently not acquainted with any writing of Apollinaris on the Passover. It is argued, however, that "there is not any sufficient ground for doubting the genuineness of these fragments 'On Easter,' in the fact that Eusebius mentions no such book by Apollinaris."<sup>3</sup> It is quite true that Eusebius does not pretend to give a complete list of these works, but merely says that there are many preserved by many, and that he mentions those with which he had met.<sup>4</sup> At the same time, entering with great interest, as he does, into the Paschal Controversy, and acquainted with the principal writings on the subject,<sup>5</sup> it would indeed have been strange had he not met with the work itself, or at least with some notice of it in the works of others. That he knew nothing of it, however, either directly or indirectly, is clear, for he states that "the Churches of all Asia"<sup>6</sup> kept the 14th Nisan, and Apollinaris as an eminent exception must have held a

<sup>1</sup> *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 247 f.; *Lardner*, *Credibility, &c.*, Works, ii. p. 296; *Tillemont*, *Mém. Hist. Eccles.*, ii. p. iii. p. 91; *Routh*, *Reliq. Sacræ*, i. p. 167 f.

<sup>2</sup> *H. E.*, iv. 27.

<sup>3</sup> *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 198, note 3; cf. *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 340 f. This is the only remark which Dr. Westcott makes as to any doubt of the authenticity of these fragments. Tischendorf does not mention a doubt at all.

<sup>4</sup> Τοῦ δὲ Ἀπολιναρίου πολλῶν παρὰ πολλοῖς σωζομένων, τὰ εἰς ἡμᾶς ἐλθόντα ἐστὶ τάδε· κ.τ.λ. *H. E.*, iv. 27.

<sup>5</sup> *Eusebius*, *H. E.*, v. 23, 24.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, v. 23.

prominent position, and must have been quoted in most controversial works on the subject, had he really written anything on the subject or taken any part in the discussion. Eusebius was acquainted with the work of Melito on the Passover, and quotes it,<sup>1</sup> which must have referred to his contemporary and antagonist,<sup>2</sup> Apollinaris, had he written such a work as this fragment denotes. Not only, however, does Eusebius know nothing of his having composed such a work, but neither do Theodoret,<sup>3</sup> Jerome,<sup>4</sup> Photius,<sup>5</sup> nor other writers who enumerate other of his works, nor is he mentioned in any way by Clement of Alexandria, Irenæus, nor by any of those who took part in the great controversy.<sup>6</sup>

It is stated that all the Churches of Asia, including some of the most distinguished members of the Church, such as Polycarp, and his own contemporary Melito, celebrated the Christian festival on the 14th Nisan, the practice almost universal, therefore, in the country in which Claudius Apollinaris is supposed to write this fragment.<sup>7</sup> How is it possible, therefore, that this isolated convert to the views of Victor and the Roman Church, could write of so vast and distinguished a majority as "some who through ignorance raised contentions" on the point, when not only all the Asiatic Churches at that time were agreed to keep the fourteenth of Nisan, and in doing so raised no new contention at all, but, as Polycrates represented, followed

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 26.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Paschastreit*, p. 256.

<sup>3</sup> *Hæret. Fab.*, ii. 21, iii. 2.

<sup>4</sup> *Epist. ad Magnum Ep.*, p. 83.

<sup>5</sup> *Biblioth. Cod.*, 14.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 23, 24; cf. iv. 26; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 247 ff.

<sup>7</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 23, 24; *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Paschastreit*, p. 274 ff.

the tradition handed down to them from their Fathers, and authorized by the practice of the Apostle John himself? <sup>1</sup> It is impossible that the "most holy Bishop of Hierapolis" could thus have written of the Bishops and Churches of Asia. There is literally no evidence whatever that Apollinaris sided in this discussion with the Roman party, and had he done so it is scarcely possible that so eminent an exception to the practice of the Asiatic Churches could have been passed over in total silence both by the advocates of the 14th Nisan and by those who opposed it. <sup>2</sup>

Whilst none of his contemporaries nor writers about his own time seem to have known that Apollinaris wrote any work from which these fragments can have been taken, or that he ever took any part in the Paschal controversy at all, the only ground we have for attributing them to him is the Preface to the Paschal Chronicle of Alexandria, written by an unknown author of the seventh century, some five hundred years after the time of Apollinaris, whose testimony has rightly been described as "worth almost nothing." <sup>3</sup> Most certainly many passages preserved by this author are inauthentic, and generally allowed to be so. <sup>4</sup> The two fragments have by many been conjecturally ascribed to Pierius of Alexandria, <sup>5</sup> a writer of the third century,

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 24; cf. *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Paschastreit*, p. 256; *Baur*, *K. G. d. drei ersten Jahrb.*, p. 157.

<sup>2</sup> *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 247 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Donaldson*, *ib.*, iii. p. 247; *Lardner*, *Credibility, &c.*, Works, ii. p. 296.

<sup>4</sup> Dr. Donaldson rightly calls a fragment in the Chronicle ascribed to Melito, "unquestionably spurious." *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 231.

<sup>5</sup> *Tillemont*, *Mém. Hist. Eccles.*, ii. part iii. p. 91; *Lardner*, *Credibility &c.*, Works, ii. p. 296; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 248 f.; *Routh*, *Reliq. Sacrae*, i. p. 167 f.

who composed a work on Easter, but there is no evidence on the point. On the other hand there is such exceedingly slight reason for attributing these fragments to Claudius Apollinaris, and so many strong grounds for believing that he cannot have written them, that they have no material value as evidence for the antiquity of the Gospels.

•  
3.

We know little or nothing of Athenagoras. He is not mentioned by Eusebius, and our only information regarding him is derived from a fragment of Philip Sidetes, a writer of the fifth century, first published by Dodwell.<sup>1</sup> Philip states that he was the first leader of the school of Alexandria during the time of Adrian and Antoninus, to the latter of whom he addressed his Apology, and he further says that Clement of Alexandria was his disciple, and that Pantænus was the disciple of Clement. Part of this statement we know to be erroneous, and the Christian History of Philip, from which the fragment is taken, is very slightly spoken of both by Socrates<sup>2</sup> and Photius.<sup>3</sup> No reliance can be placed upon this information.<sup>4</sup>

The only works ascribed to Athenagoras are an Apology—called an Embassy, *πρεσβεία*—bearing the inscription: “The Embassy of Athenagoras the Athenian, a philosopher and a Christian, concerning Christians, to

<sup>1</sup> Append. ad Diss. Iren., p. 488. The extract from Philip's History is made by an unknown author.

<sup>2</sup> H. E., vii. 27.

<sup>3</sup> Bibl. Cod., xxxv. p. 21.

<sup>4</sup> *Bosnage*, Ann. Polit. Eccl., 176, § 6; *Lardner*, Works, ii. p. 180; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 108 f.

the Emperors Marcus Aurelius Antoninus and Lucius Aurelius Commodus, Armeniaci Sarmatici and, above all, philosophers"; and further, a Treatise: "On the Resurrection of the Dead." A quotation from the Apology by Methodius in his work on the Resurrection of the Body, is preserved by Epiphanius<sup>1</sup> and Photius,<sup>2</sup> and this, the mention by Philip Sidetes, and the inscription by an unknown hand, just quoted, are all the evidence we possess regarding the Apology. We have no evidence at all regarding the treatise on the Resurrection, beyond the inscription. The authenticity of neither, therefore, stands on very sure grounds.<sup>3</sup> The address of the Apology and internal evidence furnished by it, into which we need not go, show that it could not have been written before A.D. 176—177, the date assigned to it by most critics,<sup>4</sup> although there are many reasons for dating it some years later.

In the six lines which Tischendorf devotes to Athenagoras, he says that the Apology contains "several quotations from Matthew and Luke,"<sup>5</sup> without, however, indicating them. In the very few sentences which Canon Westcott vouchsafes to him, he says: "Athenagoras quotes the words of our Lord as they stand in St. Matthew four times, and appears to allude to passages

<sup>1</sup> Hær., lxiv. 21.

<sup>2</sup> Bibl. Cod., cxxxiv. p. 908.

<sup>3</sup> Donaldson, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 114 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev. Proleg., xxxii.; *Basnage*, Annal. Polit. Eccles., 176, § 6; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 53; *Fabricius*, (A.D. 177—180), Bibl. Græc., vi. p. 86; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 111 f.; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 473; *Lardner*, (A.D. 177—178), Works, ii. p. 181; *Mosheim*, Diss. de vera ætat. Apol. Athenag.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 290; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 109; *Tillemont*, Mém. Hist. Eccles., t. ii. art. 8, note x.; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 19; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 34; *De Wette*. († 180), Einl. N. T., 1852. p. 25.

<sup>5</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 19.

in St. Mark and St. John, but he nowhere mentions the name of an Evangelist.”<sup>1</sup> Here the third Synoptic is not mentioned. In another place he says: “Athenagoras at Athens, and Theophilus at Antioch, make use of the same books generally, and treat them with the same respect;” and in a note: “Athenagoras quotes the Gospels of St. Matthew and St. John.”<sup>2</sup> Here it will be observed that also the Gospel of Mark is quietly dropped out of sight, but still the positive manner in which it is asserted that Athenagoras quotes from “the Gospel of St. Matthew,” without further explanation, is calculated to mislead. We shall refer to each of the supposed quotations.

Athenagoras not only does not mention any Gospel, but singularly enough he never once introduces the name of “Christ” into the works ascribed to him, and all the “words of the Lord” referred to are introduced simply by the indefinite “he says,” *φησί*, and without any indication whatever of a written source.<sup>3</sup> The only exception to this is an occasion on which he puts into the mouth of “the Logos” a saying which is not found in any of our Gospels. The first passage to which Canon Westcott alludes is the following, which we contrast with the supposed parallel in the Gospel:—

## ATHENAGORAS.

For we have learnt not only not to render a blow, nor to go to law (*δικάζεσθαι*) with those who spoil and plunder us, but to those who inflict a blow on one side (*κατὰ κόρυμης προσηλακίζωσι*) also to present the other side of the head in

## MATT. v. 39—40.

But I say unto you: that ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek (*σε βιάσει ἐπὶ τὴν δεξιάν σου σιαγόνα*) turn to him the other also. And if any man be minded to sue thee at the law (*κριθῆναι*) and take away

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 103.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 304, and note 2.

<sup>3</sup> *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Dit. and Doctr., iii. p. 172.

## ATHENAGORAS.

turn for smiting; and to those who take away (*ἀφαιροῦντο*) the coat, also to give besides (*ἐπιιδόναι*) the cloke.<sup>1</sup>

## MATT. V. 39—40.

(*λαβεῖν*) thy coat, let him have (*ἄφες αὐτῷ*) thy cloke also.<sup>2</sup>

It is scarcely possible to imagine a greater difference in language conveying a similar idea than that which exists between Athenagoras and the first Gospel, and the parallel passage in Luke is in many respects still more distant. No echo of the words in Matthew has lingered in the ear of the writer, for he employs utterly different phraseology throughout, and nothing can be more certain than the fact that there is not a linguistic trace in it of acquaintance with our Synoptics.

The next passage which is referred to is as follows:

## ATHENAGORAS.

What, then, are those precepts in which we are instructed?

I say unto you: love your enemies, bless them that curse,

pray for them that persecute you: that ye may be sons of your Father which is in the heavens who (*ὁς*) maketh his sun, &c.<sup>3</sup>

## MATT. V. 44—45.

But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you,<sup>4</sup> do good to them that hate you, and pray for them that<sup>5</sup> persecute you: That ye may be sons of your Father which is in heaven: for (*ὅτι*) he maketh his sun, &c.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> . . . οὐ μόνον τὸ ἀντιπαῖεν, οὐδὲ μὴν δικάζεσθαι τοῖς ἄγροισι καὶ ἀρπάξουσιν ἡμᾶς, μεμαθηκότες· ἀλλὰ τοῖς μὲν, κἂν κατὰ κήρῃς προσπηλακίζωσι, καὶ τὸ ἕτερον παῖεν παρέχειν τῆς κεφαλῆς μέρος· τοῖς δὲ, εἰ τὸν χιτῶνα ἀφαιροῦντο, ἐπιιδόναι καὶ τὸ ἱμάτιον, κ.τ.λ. Legatio pro Christianis, § 1.

<sup>2</sup> Ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν μὴ ἀντιστῆναι τῷ πονηρῷ· ἀλλ' ὅστις σε ῥάπισει ἐπὶ τὴν δεξιάν σου σαγόνα, στρέψον αὐτῷ καὶ τὴν ἄλλην· καὶ τῷ θέλοντι σοι κριθῆναι καὶ τὸν χιτῶνά σου λαβεῖν, ἄφες αὐτῷ καὶ τὸ ἱμάτιον. Matt. v. 39, 40; cf. Luke vi. 29.

<sup>3</sup> Λέγω ὑμῖν· Ἀγαπάτε τοὺς ἐχθροὺς ὑμῶν, εὐλογεῖτε τοὺς καταρωμένους, προσεύχεσθε ὑπὲρ τῶν διωκόντων ὑμᾶς, ὅπως γένησθε υἱοὶ τοῦ Πατρὸς ὑμῶν τοῦ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, ὃς τὸν ἥλιον αὐτοῦ ἀνατέλλει, κ.τ.λ. Leg. pro Christ., § 11.

<sup>4</sup> The expressions εὐλογεῖτε τοὺς καταρωμένους ὑμᾶς, καλῶς ποιεῖτε τοὺς μισοῦντας ὑμᾶς, "bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you," are omitted from some of the oldest MSS., but we do not know any in which the first of these two doubtful phrases is retained, as in Athenagoras, and the "do good to them that hate you," is omitted.

<sup>5</sup> The phrase ἐμπραεζόντων ὑμᾶς, "despitefully use you," is omitted from many ancient codices.

<sup>6</sup> Ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν, ἀγαπάτε τοὺς ἐχθροὺς ὑμῶν καὶ προσεύχεσθε ὑπὲρ

The same idea is continued in the next chapter, in which the following passage occurs :

ATHENAGORAS.

For if ye love (*ἀγαπάτε*), he says, (*φησί*) them which love, and lend to them which lend to you, what reward shall ye have ?<sup>1</sup>

MATT. v. 46.

For if ye should love (*ἀγαπήσητε*) them which love you, what reward have ye ?<sup>2</sup>

There is no parallel at all in the first Gospel to the phrase "and lend to them that lend to you," and in Luke vi. 34, the passage reads : and if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye ?" (*καὶ ἐὰν δανίζετε παρ' ὧν ἐλπίζετε λαβεῖν, ποία ὑμῖν χάρις ἐστίν*;) It is evident, therefore, that there are decided variations here, and that the passage of Athenagoras does not agree with either of the Synoptics. We have seen the persistent variation in the quotations from the "Sermon on the Mount" which occur in Justin,<sup>3</sup> and there is no part of the discourses of Jesus more certain to have been preserved by living Christian tradition, or to have been recorded in every form of Gospel. The differences in these passages from our Synoptic present the same features as mark the several versions of the same discourse in our first and third Gospels, and indicate a distinct source. The same remarks also apply to the next passage :

ATHENAGORAS.

For whosoever, he says (*φησί*), looketh on a woman to lust after

MATT. v. 28.

But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust

*τῶν διωκόντων ὑμᾶς ὅπως γένησθε υἱοὶ τοῦ Πατρὸς ὑμῶν τοῦ ἐν οὐρανοῖς, ὅτι τὸν ἥλιον αὐτοῦ ἀνατέλλει, κ.τ.λ. Matt. v. 44, 45.*

<sup>1</sup> *Ἐὰν γὰρ ἀγαπάτε, φησὶν, τοὺς ἀγαπῶντας, καὶ δανείζετε τοῖς δανείζουσιν ὑμῖν, τίνα μισθὸν ἔχετε;* Leg. pro Chr., § 12.

<sup>2</sup> *Ἐὰν γὰρ ἀγαπήσητε τοὺς ἀγαπῶντας ὑμᾶς, τίνα μισθὸν ἔχετε;* Matt. v. 46.

<sup>3</sup> Justin likewise has *ἀγαπάτε* for *ἀγαπήσητε* in this passage.

## ATHENAGORAS.

her, hath committed adultery (μεμοίχευεν) already in his heart.<sup>1</sup>

## MATT. v. 28.

after her, hath committed adultery with her (ἐμοίχευσεν αὐτήν) already in his heart.<sup>2</sup>

The omission of αὐτήν, "with her," is not accidental, but is an important variation in the sense, which we have already met with in the Gospel used by Justin Martyr.<sup>3</sup> There is another passage, in the next chapter, the parallel to which follows closely on this in the great Sermon as reported in our first Gospel, to which Canon Westcott does not refer, but which we must point out :

## ATHENAGORAS.

For whosoever, he says (φησι), putteth away his wife and marrieth another committeth adultery.<sup>4</sup>

## MATT. v. 32.

But I say unto you, That whosoever putteth away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her when divorced committeth adultery.<sup>5</sup>

It is evident that the passage in the Apology is quite different from that in the "Sermon on the Mount" in the first Synoptic. If we compare it with Matt. xix. 9, there still remains the express limitation *μη̄ ἐπὶ πορνείᾳ*, which Athenagoras does not admit, his own express doctrine being in accordance with the positive declaration in his text. In the immediate context, indeed, he insists that even to marry another wife after the death of the

<sup>1</sup> Ὁ γὰρ βλέπων, φησι, γυναῖκα πρὸς τὸ ἐπιθυμῆσαι αὐτῆς, ἤδη μεμοίχευεν ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτοῦ. Leg. pro Christ., § 32.

<sup>2</sup> Ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι πᾶς ὁ βλέπων γυναῖκα πρὸς τὸ ἐπιθυμῆσαι αὐτήν ἤδη ἐμοίχευσεν αὐτήν ἐν τῇ καρδίᾳ αὐτοῦ.

<sup>3</sup> Apol., i. 15.

<sup>4</sup> Ὁς γὰρ ἂν ἀπολύσῃ, φησι, τὴν γυναῖκα αὐτοῦ, καὶ γαμήσῃ ἄλλην, μοιχᾶται. Leg. pro Chr., § 33.

<sup>5</sup> Ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν ὅτι ὅς ἂν ἀπολύσῃ τὴν γυναῖκα αὐτοῦ παρὰ τὸν λόγον πορνείας ποιεῖ αὐτὴν μοιχευθῆναι, καὶ ὅς ἂν ἀπολελυμένην γαμήσῃ, μοιχᾶται. Matt. v. 32. πᾶς ὁ ἀπολύων is the older and better reading, but we give ὅς ἂν ἀπολύσῃ as favouring the similarity.

first is cloaked adultery. We find in Luke xvi. 18, the reading of Athenagoras,<sup>1</sup> but with important linguistic variations :

## ATHENAGORAS.

\*Ος γὰρ ἂν ἀπολύσῃ τὴν γυναῖκα  
αὐτοῦ, καὶ γαμήσῃ ἄλλην μοιχᾶται.

## LUKE XVI. 18.

Πᾶς ὁ ἀπολύων τὴν γυναῖκα  
αὐτοῦ καὶ γαμῶν ἑτέραν μοιχεύει.

Athenagoras clearly cannot have derived this from Luke, but the sense of the passage in that Gospel, compared with the passage in Matthew xix. 9, makes it certain that the reading of Athenagoras was derived from a source combining the language of the one and the thought of the other. In Mark x. 11, the reading is nearer that of Athenagoras and confirms our conclusion, but the addition there of ἐπ' αὐτήν "against her" after μοιχᾶται, proves that his source was not that Gospel.

We may at once give the last passage which is supposed to be a quotation from our Synoptics, and it is that which is affirmed to be a reference to Mark. Athenagoras states in almost immediate context with the above : "for in the beginning God made one man and one woman."<sup>2</sup> This is compared with Mark x. 6 : "But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female" :

## ATHENAGORAS.

\*Οτι ἐν ἀρχῇ ὁ Θεὸς ἕνα ἄνδρα ἔπλασε  
καὶ μίαν γυναῖκα.

## MARK X. 6.

\*Απὸ δὲ ἀρχῆς κτίσεως ἄρσεν καὶ  
θῆλυ ἐποίησεν αὐτοὺς ὁ Θεός.

Now this passage differs materially in every way from the second Synoptic. The reference to "one man" and "one woman" is used in a totally different sense, and enforces the previous assertion that a man may only marry one wife. Such an argument directly derived

<sup>1</sup> Lardner, indeed, points to the passage as a quotation from the third Gospel. Works, ii. p. 183.

<sup>2</sup> Leg. pro Chr., § 33.

from the old Testament is perfectly natural to one who, like Athenagoras, derived all his authority from it alone. It is simply absurd to claim it as evidence of the use of Mark.

Now we must repeat that Athenagoras does not name any source from which he derives his knowledge of the sayings of Jesus. These sayings are all from the Sermon on the Mount, and are introduced by the indefinite phrase *φησὶ*, and it is remarkable that all differ distinctly from the parallels in our Gospels. The whole must be taken together as coming from one source, and there is the clearest indication that his source was different from our Gospels. Dr. Donaldson states the case with great fairness: "Athenagoras makes no allusion to the inspiration of any of the New Testament writers. He does not mention one of them by name, and one cannot be sure that he quotes from any except Paul. All the passages taken from the Gospels are parts of our Lord's discourses, and may have come down to Athenagoras by tradition."<sup>1</sup> He might have added that they might also have been derived from the gospel according to the Hebrews or many another collection now unhappily lost.

One circumstance strongly confirming this conclusion is the fact already mentioned, that Athenagoras, in the same chapter in which one of these quotations occurs, introduces an apocryphal saying of the Logos, and connects it with previous sayings by the expression "The Logos *again* (*πάλιν*) saying to us." This can only refer to the sayings previously introduced by the indefinite

<sup>1</sup> Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 172.

*De Wette* says regarding Athenagoras: "The quotations of evangelical passages prove nothing." Einl. A. T., 1852, p. 25.

φησί. The sentence, which is in reference to the Christian salutation of peace, is as follows: "The Logos again saying to us: 'If any one kiss a second time because it has given him gratification (he sins);' and adding: 'Thus the kiss or rather the salutation must be used with care, as, if it be defiled even a little by thought, it excludes us from the life eternal.'" <sup>1</sup> This saying, which is directly attributed to the Logos, is not found in our Gospels. The only natural deduction is that it comes from the same source as the other sayings, and that source was not our synoptic Gospels. <sup>2</sup>

The total absence of any allusion to New Testament Scriptures in Athenagoras, <sup>3</sup> however, is rendered more striking and significant by the marked expression of his belief in the inspiration of the Old Testament. He appeals to the prophets for testimony as to the truth of the opinions of Christians: men, he says, who spoke by the inspiration of God, whose Spirit moved their mouths to express God's will as musical instruments are played upon: <sup>4</sup> "But since the voices of the prophets support our arguments, I think that you, being most learned and wise, cannot be ignorant of the writings of Moses, or of those of Isaiah and Jeremiah and of the other prophets, who being raised in ecstasy above the reasoning that was in themselves, uttered the things which were wrought in

<sup>1</sup> Πάλιν ἡμῖν λέγοντος τοῦ Λόγου· Ἐάν τις διὰ τοῦτο ἐκ δευτέρου καταφιλήσῃ, ὅτι ἤρρεσεν αὐτῷ· καὶ ἐπιφέροντος· Οὕτως οὖν ἀκριβώσασθαι τὸ φίλημα, μᾶλλον δὲ τὸ προσκύημα δεῖ· ὡς εἶπον μικρὸν τῇ διανοίᾳ παραβολῶθειν, ἕξω ἡμᾶς τῆς αἰωνίου τιθένης ζωῆς. Leg. pro Christ., § 32.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Volkmar, Der Ursprung, p. 34; Lardner, Works, ii. p. 187, § xx. f.; Reuss, Gesch. N. T., p. 290; Donaldson, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 172 f.

<sup>3</sup> Donaldson, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 172; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 54 f.; Volkmar, Der Ursprung, p. 34.

<sup>4</sup> Leg. pro Christ., § 7.

them, when the Divine Spirit moved them, the Spirit using them as a flute player would blow into the flute."<sup>1</sup> He thus enunciates the theory of the mechanical inspiration of the writers of the Old Testament, in the clearest manner,<sup>2</sup> and it would indeed have been strange, on the supposition that he extended his views of inspiration to any of the Scriptures of the New Testament, that he never names a single one of them, nor indicates to the Emperors in the same way, as worthy of their attention, any of these Scriptures along with the Law and the Prophets. There can be no doubt that he nowhere gives reason for supposing that he regarded any other writings than the Old Testament as inspired or "Holy Scripture."<sup>3</sup>

## 4.

IN the 17th year of the reign of Marcus Aurelius, between the 7th March, 177-178, a fierce persecution was, it is said,<sup>4</sup> commenced against the Christians in Gaul, and more especially at Vienne and Lyons, during the course of which the aged Bishop Pothinus, the predecessor of Irenæus, suffered martyrdom for the faith. The two communities some time after addressed an Epistle to their brethren in Asia and Phrygia, and also to Eleutherus, Bishop of Rome,<sup>5</sup> relating the events which had occurred, and the noble testimony which had been borne to Christ by the numerous martyrs who had been cruelly put

<sup>1</sup> *Leg. pro Christ.*, § 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Donaldson, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 171 f.; *Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 108 f.; *Credner, Beiträge*, i. p. 54 f.

<sup>3</sup> In the treatise on the Resurrection there are no arguments derived from Scripture.

<sup>4</sup> *Eusebius, H. E.*, v. Proem.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, H. E., v. 3.

to death. The Epistle has in great part been preserved by Eusebius,<sup>1</sup> and critics generally agree in dating it about A.D. 177,<sup>2</sup> although it was most probably not written until the following year.<sup>3</sup>

No writing of the New Testament is directly referred to in this Epistle,<sup>4</sup> but it is asserted that there are "unequivocal coincidences of language"<sup>5</sup> with the Gospel of Luke, and others of its books. The passage which is referred to as showing knowledge of our Synoptic, is as follows. The letter speaks of a certain Vettius Epagathus whose life was so austere that, although a young man, "he shared in the testimony (*μαρτυρία*) of the elder (*πρεσβυτέρου*) Zacharias. He had walked, of a truth, in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless, and was eager in kind offices towards his neighbours; he was very zealous for God and fervent in spirit."<sup>6</sup> This is compared with the description of Zacharias and Elizabeth in Luke i. 6: "And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the command-

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 1 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Anger*, Synops. Ev. Proleg., p. xxxii.; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 255 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 10, p. 32; *Lipsius*, Chronologie d. röm. Bischöfe, p. 185; *Lardner*, Works, ii. p. 149; *Mosheim*, Observ. Sacr. et Hist., i. 3, § 10; *Neander*, K. G., i. p. 190 f.; *Routh*, Reliq. Sacræ, i. p. 289 f., p. 326 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 110 f.; *Tillemont*, Mém. Hist. Eccl., iii. art. 2, et note 1; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 80 f., an. 1; *Folkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 164, p. 156; *Westcott*, on the Canon, p. 295.

<sup>3</sup> *Baronius* dates the death of Pothinus in A.D. 179; *Valesius*, ad Euseb. H. E., v. 5.

<sup>4</sup> *Westcott*, on the Canon, p. 295; *Lardner*, Works, ii. p. 153; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 285.

<sup>5</sup> *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 295.

<sup>6</sup> . . . . συνεξισούσθαι τῇ τοῦ πρεσβυτέρου Ζαχαρίου μαρτυρία. πεπόμεντο γοῦν ἐν πάσαις ταῖς ἐπιτολαῖς καὶ δικαίωμασι τοῦ Κυρίου ἀμειμπτος, καὶ πάση τῇ πρὸς τὸν πλησίον λειτουργία ἀοκνος, ζῆλον Θεοῦ πολὺν ἔχων, καὶ ζῶων τῷ πνεύματι, κ.τ.λ. *Euseb.*, H. E., v. 1.

ments and ordinances of the Lord blameless.”<sup>1</sup> A little further on in the Epistle it is said of the same person : “ And himself having the advocate (*παράκλητον*), the spirit (*τὸ πνεῦμα*), more abundantly than Zacharias,” &c.<sup>2</sup> which again is referred to Luke i. 67, “ And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Spirit and prophesied, saying,” &c.<sup>3</sup>

No written source is indicated in the Epistle for the reference to Zacharias, and, therefore, it cannot in any case be ascribed to one particular Gospel to the exclusion of others no longer extant. Let us, however, examine the matter more closely. Tischendorf does not make use of this Epistle at all as evidence for the Scriptures of the New Testament. He does, however, refer to it and to these very allusions in it to Zacharias, as testimony to the existence and use of the Protevangelium Jacobi, a work, it will be remembered, whose origin he dates so far back as the first three decades of the second century.<sup>4</sup> He points out that the first reference to the Protevangelium after Justin appears to be in this Epistle, as Hilgenfeld had already observed.<sup>5</sup> Tischendorf and Hilgenfeld, therefore, agree in affirming that the reference to Zacharias which we have quoted, indicates acquaintance with a different Gospel from our third Gospel, for it alludes to his martyrdom, which Luke does not

<sup>1</sup> ἦσαν δὲ δίκαιοι ἀμφοτέροι ἐνώπιον τοῦ θεοῦ, πορευόμενοι ἐν πάσαις ταῖς ἐντολαῖς καὶ δικαιομασίαις τοῦ κυρίου ἄμεμπτοι. Luke i. 6.

<sup>2</sup> ἔχων δὲ τὸν παράκλητον ἐν ἑαυτῷ, τὸ πνεῦμα πλείον τοῦ Ζαχαρίου. *Euseb.*, H. E., v. i.

<sup>3</sup> Καὶ Ζαχαρίας ὁ πατὴρ αὐτῷ ἐπλήσθη πνεύματος ἁγίου καὶ ἐπροφήτευσεν λέγων, κ.τ.λ. Luke i. 67.

<sup>4</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 76 ff., 80, anm. 1; cf. *Evang. Apocr. Proleg.*, p. xii. f.

<sup>5</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 80, anm. 1; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evng. Justin's*, p. 154 f.

mention. Hilgenfeld rightly maintains that the Protevangelium Jacobi in its present form is merely a version of an older work,<sup>1</sup> which he conjectures to have been the Gospel according to Peter, or the Gnostic work *Γέννα Μαρίας*.<sup>2</sup> Both Tischendorf and Hilgenfeld show that many of the Fathers<sup>3</sup> were either acquainted with the Protevangelium or the works on which it was based, and Tertullian refers to the martyrdom of Zacharias which it relates.<sup>4</sup> The first Gospel alludes to the same event<sup>5</sup> in a manner which indicates a well-known history, but of which, with the exception of the account in the Protevangelium, we have no written narrative extant. There can be no doubt that the reference to Zacharias in Matthew, in the Protevangelium and in this Epistle of Vienne and Lyons, is not based upon Luke, in which there is no mention of his death, and there can be just as little doubt, and the Protevangelium is absolute evidence of the fact, that other works existed which included the Martyrdom of Zacharias, as well as the tradition of the birth of John the Baptist, which latter part we find reproduced in our third Synoptic Gospel. Ewald, who asserts the mythical character of that history in Luke,<sup>6</sup> distinctly affirms that it is not a composition by the author of our third Synoptic, but is derived from a separate older work.<sup>7</sup>

The state of the case, then, is as follows: We find a coincidence in a few words in connection with Zacharias

<sup>1</sup> *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 154 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 160 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 76 ff.; cf. *Evang. Apoc. Proleg.*, p. xii. f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. J.*, p. 154 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Scorp. adv. Gnost.*, § 8. "Zacharias inter altare et ædem trucidatur perennes cruoris sui maculas silicibus adsignans." Cf. *Protev. Jac.*, xxiv.

<sup>5</sup> *Matt.* xxiii. 35.

<sup>6</sup> *Christus u. s. Zeit*, p. 230 ff.; *Gesch. des V. Israels*, 1867, v.

<sup>7</sup> *Ewald*, *Die drei erst. Evv.*, p. 97 f.; cf. i. p. 177 ff.

between the Epistle and our third Gospel, but so far from the Gospel being in any way indicated as their source, the words in question are, on the contrary, in association with a reference to events unknown to our Gospel, but which were indubitably chronicled elsewhere. It follows clearly, and few venture to doubt the fact, that the allusion in the Epistle is to a Gospel different from ours and not to our third Synoptic at all.

There is another point which may just be mentioned. In Luke i. 67, it is said that Zacharias "was filled with the Holy Spirit" (*ἐπλήσθη πνεύματος ἁγίου*). Now the Epistle which is supposed to recognise the Gospel as Holy Scripture says of Vettius Epagathus, that he was "more full of the Spirit than Zacharias" (*τὸ πνεῦμα πλεῖον τοῦ Ζαχαρίου*). Such an unnecessary and invidious comparison would scarcely have been made had the writer known our Gospel and regarded it as inspired Scripture.

## CHAPTER X.

PTOLEMÆUS AND HERACLEON—CELSUS—THE CANON OF  
MURATORI—RESULTS.

WE have now reached the extreme limit of time within which we think it in any degree worth while to seek for evidence as to the date and authorship of the synoptic Gospels, and we might now proceed to the fourth Gospel ; but before doing so it may be well to examine one or two other witnesses whose support has been claimed by apologists, although our attention may be chiefly confined to an inquiry into the date of such testimony, upon which its value, even if real, mainly depends so far as we are concerned. The first of these whom we must notice are the two Gnostic leaders, Ptolemæus and Heracleon.

Epiphanius has preserved a certain " Epistle to Flora " ascribed to Ptolemæus, in which, it is contended, there are " several quotations from Matthew, and one from the first chapter of John." <sup>1</sup> What date must be assigned to this Epistle ? In reply to those who date it about the end of the second century, Tischendorf produces the evidence for an earlier period to which he assigns it. He says : " He (Ptolemæus) appears in all the oldest sources

<sup>1</sup> *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 46. Canon Westcott with greater caution says : " He quoted words of our Lord recorded by St. Matthew, the prologue of St. John's Gospel, &c." On the Canon, p. 267.

as one of the most important, most influential of the disciples of Valentinus. As the period at which the latter himself flourished falls about 140, do we say too much when we represent Ptolemæus as working at the latest about 160? Irenæus (in the 2nd Book) and Hippolytus name him together with Heracleon; likewise pseudo-Tertullian (in the appendix to *De Præscriptionibus Hæreticorum*) and Philastrius make him appear immediately after Valentinus. Irenæus wrote the first and second books of his great work most probably (höchst wahrscheinlich) before 180, and in both he occupies himself much with Ptolemæus.”<sup>1</sup> Canon Westcott, beyond calling Ptolemæus and Heracleon disciples of Valentinus, does not assign any date to either, and does not of course offer any further evidence on the point, although, in regard to Heracleon, he admits the ignorance in which we are as to all points of his history,<sup>2</sup> and states generally, in treating of him, that “the exact chronology of the early heretics is very uncertain.”<sup>3</sup>

Let us, however, examine the evidence upon which Tischendorf relies for the date he assigns to Ptolemæus. He states in vague terms that Ptolemæus appears “in all the oldest sources” (in allen den ältesten Quellen) as one of the most important disciples of Valentinus. We shall presently see what these sources are, but must now follow the argument: “As the date of Valentinus falls about 140, do we say too much when we represent Ptolemæus as working at the latest about 160?” It is evident that there is no evidence here but merely assumption, and the manner in which the period “about 160” is begged, is a clear admission that there are no certain data. The year

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 46 f.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 263.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 264, note 2.

might with equal propriety upon those grounds have been put ten years earlier or ten years later. The deceptive and arbitrary character of the conclusion, however, will be more apparent when we examine the grounds upon which the relative dates 140 and 160 rest. Tischendorf here states that the time at which Valentinus flourished falls about A.D. 140, but the fact is that, as all critics are agreed,<sup>1</sup> and as even Tischendorf himself elsewhere states,<sup>2</sup> Valentinus came out of Egypt to Rome in that year, when his public career practically commenced, and he continued to flourish for at least twenty years after.<sup>3</sup> Tischendorf's pretended moderation, therefore, consists in dating the period when Valentinus flourished from the very year of his first appearance, and in assigning the active career of Ptolemæus to 160 when Valentinus was still alive and teaching. He might on the same principle be dated 180, and even in that case there could be no reason for ascribing the Epistle to Flora to so early a period of his career. Tischendorf never even pretends to state any ground upon which Ptolemæus must be connected with any precise part of the public life of Valentinus, and still less for discriminating the period of the career of Ptolemæus at which the Epistle may have been composed. It is obvious that a wide limit for date thus exists.

After these general statements Tischendorf details the only evidence which is available. (1) "Irenæus (in the 2nd Book) and Hippolytus name him together with Heracleon; likewise (2) pseudo-Tertullian (in the

<sup>1</sup> See authorities, Vol. ii. p. 55, note 3.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 43. "Valentinus, der um 140 aus Ægypten nach Rom kam und darauf noch 20 Jahre gelebt haben mag."

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 4, § 3; *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 11.

appendix to *De Præscriptionibus Hæreticorum*) and Philastrius make him appear immediately after Valentinus," &c. We must first examine these two points a little more closely in order to ascertain the value of such statements. With regard to the first (1) of these points, we shall presently see that the mention of the name of Ptolemæus along with that of Heracleon throws no light upon the matter from any point of view, inasmuch as Tischendorf has as little authority for the date he assigns to the latter, and is in as complete ignorance concerning him, as in the case of Ptolemæus. It is amusing, moreover, that Tischendorf employs the very same argument, which sounds well although it means nothing, inversely to establish the date of Heracleon. Here, he argues: "Irenæus and Hippolytus name him (Ptolemæus) together with Heracleon;"<sup>1</sup> there, he reasons: "Irenæus names Heracleon together with Ptolemæus,"<sup>2</sup> &c. As neither the date assigned to the one nor to the other can stand alone, he tries to get them into something like an upright position by propping the one against the other, an expedient which, naturally, meets with little success. We shall in dealing with the case of Heracleon show how absurd is the argument from the mere order in which such names are mentioned by these writers; meantime we may simply say that Irenæus only once mentions the name of Heracleon in his works, and that the occasion on which he does so, and to which reference is here made, is merely an allusion to the Æons "of Ptolemæus himself, and of Heracleon, and all the rest who hold these views."<sup>3</sup> This phrase might have been used, exactly as it stands, with

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 47.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 48.

<sup>3</sup> *Ipsius Ptolemæi et Heracleonis, et reliquis omnibus qui eadem opinantur. Adv. Hær.*, ii. 4, § 1.

perfect propriety even if Ptolemæus and Heracleon had been separated by a century. The only point which can be deduced from this mere coupling of names is that, in using the present tense, Irenæus is speaking of his own contemporaries. We may make the same remark regarding Hippolytus, for, if his mention of Ptolemæus and Heracleon has any weight at all, it is to prove that they were flourishing in his time: "Those who are of Italy, of whom *is* Heracleon and Ptolemæus, say . . ." <sup>1</sup> &c. We shall have to go further into this point presently. As to (2) pseudo-Tertullian and Philastrius we need only say that even if the fact of the names of the two Gnostics being coupled together could prove anything in regard to the date, the repetition by these writers could have no importance for us, their works being altogether based on those of Irenæus and Hippolytus,<sup>2</sup> and scarcely, if at all, conveying independent information.<sup>3</sup> We have merely indicated the weakness of these arguments in passing, but shall again take them up further on.

The next and final consideration advanced by Tischendorf is the only one which merits serious attention. "Irenæus wrote the first and second book of his great work most probably before 180, and in both he occupies himself much with Ptolemæus." Before proceeding to examine the accuracy of this statement regarding the time at which Irenæus wrote, we may ask what conclusion would be involved if Irenæus really did

<sup>1</sup> Οἱ μὲν ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰταλίας, ὧν ἐστὶν Ἡρακλέων καὶ Πτολεμαῖος . . . φασι. Ref. Omn. Hær., vi. 35.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Lipsius, Zur Quellenkritik des Epiphanius, 1865.

<sup>3</sup> Indeed the direct and avowed dependence of Hippolytus himself upon the work of Irenæus deprives the *Philosophumena*, in many parts, of all separate authority.

compose the two books in A.D. 180 in which he mentions our Gnostics in the present tense? Nothing more than the simple fact that Ptolemæus and Heracleon were promulgating their doctrines at that time. There is not a single word to show that they did not continue to flourish long after; and as to the "Epistle to Flora" Irenæus knows nothing of it, nor has any attempt been made to assign it to an early part of the Gnostics' career. Tischendorf, in fact, does not produce a single passage nor the slightest argument to show that Irenæus treats our two Gnostics as men of the past, or otherwise than as heretics then actively disseminating their heterodox opinions, and, even taken literally, the argument of Tischendorf would simply go to prove that about A.D. 180 Irenæus wrote part of a work in which he attacks Ptolemæus and mentions Heracleon.

When did Irenæus, however, really write his work against Heresies? Although our sources of reliable information regarding him are exceedingly limited, we are not without materials for forming a judgment on the point. Irenæus was born about A.D. 140, and is generally supposed to have died at the opening of the third century (A.D. 202).<sup>1</sup> We know that he was deputed by the Church of Lyons to bear to Eleutherus, then Bishop of Rome, the Epistle of that Christian community describing their sufferings during the persecution commenced against them in the seventeenth year of the reign of Marcus Aurelius Antoninus (7th March, 177—178).<sup>2</sup> It is very improbable that this journey was undertaken, in any case, before the spring of A.D. 178 at the earliest, and,

<sup>1</sup> *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 118 f.; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 11, 12; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 24.

<sup>2</sup> *Eusebius*, *H. E.*, v. 1; *Præf.* § 1, 3, 4.

indeed, in accordance with the given data, the persecution itself may not have commenced earlier than the beginning of that year, so that his journey need not have been undertaken before the close of 178 or the spring of 179, to which epoch other circumstances might lead us.<sup>1</sup> There is reason to believe that he remained some time in Rome. Baronius states that Irenæus was not appointed Bishop of Lyons till A.D. 180, for he says that the see remained vacant for that period after the death of Pothinus in consequence of the persecution. Now certain expressions in his work show that Irenæus certainly did not write it until he became Bishop.<sup>2</sup> It is not known how long Irenæus remained in Rome, but there is every probability that he must have made a somewhat protracted stay, for the purpose of making himself acquainted with the various tenets of Gnostic and other heretics then being actively taught, and the preface to the first Book refers to the pains he took. He wrote his work in Gaul, however, after his return from this visit to Rome. This is apparent from what he himself states in the Preface to the first Book: "I have thought it necessary," he says, "after having read the Memoirs (*ὑπομνήμασι*) of the disciples of Valentinus as they call themselves, and *having by personal intercourse with some of them* apprehended their opinions, to unfold to thee,"<sup>3</sup> &c. A little further on he claims from the friend to whom he addresses his work indulgence for any defects of style on the score of his being resident amongst the Keltæ.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Baronius (Ann. Eccles.) sets the death of Pothinus in A.D. 179.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Adv. Hær., v. Præf.; *Massuet*, Dissert. in Iren., ii. art. ii. § 49; *Lardner*, Works, ii. p. 157.

<sup>3</sup> Adv. Hær., i. Præf. § 2. See the passage quoted, vol. ii. p. 60.

<sup>4</sup> Οὐκ ἐπιζητήσεις δὲ παρ' ἡμῶν τῶν ἐν Κελτοῖς διατριβόντων, κ.τ.λ. Adv. Hær., i. Præf. § 3.

Irenæus no doubt during his stay in Rome came in contact with the school of Ptolemæus and Heracleon, if not with the Gnostic leaders themselves, and shocked as he describes himself as being at the doctrines which they insidiously taught, he undertook, on his return to Lyons, to explain them that others might be exhorted to avoid such an "abyss of madness and blasphemy against Christ."<sup>1</sup> Irenæus gives us other materials for assigning a date to his work. In the third Book he enumerates the bishops who had filled the Episcopal Chair of Rome, and the last whom he names is Eleutherus (A.D. 177—190), who, he says, "now in the twelfth place from the apostles, holds the inheritance of the episcopate."<sup>2</sup> There is, however, another clue which, taken along with this, leads us to a close approximation to the actual date. In the same Book, Irenæus mentions Theodotion's version of the Old Testament: "But not as some say," he writes, "who now (*νῦν*) presume to interpret the Scripture: 'Behold a young woman shall conceive, and bring forth a son,' as Theodotion, the Ephesian, has interpreted, and Aquila of Pontus, both Jewish proselytes."<sup>3</sup> Now we are informed by Epiphanius that Theodotion published his translation during the reign of the Emperor Commodus<sup>4</sup> (A.D. 180—192). The *Chronicon Paschale* adds that it was during the Consulship of Marcellus, or as Massuet<sup>5</sup> proposes to read Marullus, who, jointly with Ælianus, assumed office A.D. 184. These dates decidedly agree with the passage

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Hær., i. Præf. § 2.

<sup>2</sup> Adv. Hær., iii. 3, § 3; *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 6.

<sup>3</sup> 'Ἄλλ' οὐχ ὡς ἐνιοὶ φασὶ τῶν νῦν τολμῶντων μεθερμηνεύειν τὴν γραφὴν . . . ὡς Θεοδοσίῳν ἠρμήνευσεν ὁ Ἐφέσιος, καὶ Ἀκύλας ὁ Ποντικός, κ.τ.λ. Adv. Hær., iii. 21, § 1. *Euseb.*, H. E., v. 8.

<sup>4</sup> De Ponderib. et Mens., 17.

<sup>5</sup> Dissert. in Iren., ii. art. ii. xcvi. § 47.

of Irenæus and with the other data, all of which lead us to about the same period within the episcopate of Eleutherus († c. 190).<sup>1</sup> We have here, therefore, a reliable clue to the date at which Irenæus wrote. It must be remembered that at that period the multiplication and dissemination of books was a very slow process. A work published about 184 or 185 could scarcely have come into the possession of Irenæus in Gaul till some years later, and we are, therefore, brought towards the end of the episcopate of Eleutherus as the earliest date at which the first three books of his work against Heresies can well have been written, and the rest must be assigned to a later period under the episcopate of Victor († 198—199).<sup>2</sup>

At this point we must pause and turn to the evidence which Tischendorf offers regarding the date to be assigned to Heracleon.<sup>3</sup> As in the case of Ptolemæus, we shall give it entire and then examine it in detail. To the all-important question: "How old is Heracleon?" Tischendorf replies: "Irenæus names Heracleon, together with Ptolemæus II. 4, § 1, in a way which makes them

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, ii. p. 253 ff.; *De Wette*, Einl. A. T., 1852, p. 61 ff., p. 62, anm. d.; *Lardner*, "He also speaks of the translation of Theodotion, which is generally allowed to have been published in the reign of Commodus." Works, ii. p. 156 f.; *Massuet*, Dissert. in Iren., ii. art. ii. xcvii. § 47.

<sup>2</sup> *Massuet*, Dissert. in Iren., ii. art. ii. xcvii. (§ 47), xcix. (§ 50); *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 24; cf. *De Wette*, Einl. A. T., p. 62, anm. d. ("Er schrieb zw., 177—192"); cf. *Credner*, Beiträge, ii. p. 255. Jerome says: "Hoc ille scripsit ante annos circiter trecentos." Epist. ad Theod., § 53, al. 29. If instead of "trecentos," which is an evident slip of the pen, we read "ducentos," his testimony as to the date exactly agrees.

<sup>3</sup> Canon Westcott adds no separate testimony. He admits that: "The history of Heracleon, the great Valentinian Commentator, is full of uncertainty. Nothing is known of his country or parentage." On the Canon, p. 263, and in a note: "The exact chronology of the early heretics is very uncertain," p. 264, note 2.

appear as well-known representatives of the Valentinian school. This interpretation of his words is all the more correct because he never again mentions Heracleon. Clement, in the 4th Book of his *Stromata*, written shortly after the death of Commodus (193), recalls an explanation by Heracleon of Luke xii. 8, when he calls him the most noted man of the Valentinian school (*ὁ τῆς Οὐαλεντίνου σχολῆς δοκιμώτατος* is Clement's expression). Origen, at the beginning of his quotation from Heracleon, says that he was held to be a friend of Valentinus (*τὸν Οὐαλεντίνου λεγόμενον εἶναι γνώριμον Ἡρακλέωνα*). Hippolytus mentions him, for instance, in the following way: (vi. 29); 'Valentinus, and Heracleon, and Ptolemæus, and the whole school of these, disciples of Pythagoras and Plato. . . .' Epiphanius says (*Hær.* 41): 'Cerdo (the same who, according to Irenæus III. 4, § 3, was in Rome under Bishop Hyginus with Valentinus) follows these (the Ophites, Kainites, Sethiani), and Heracleon.' After all this Heracleon certainly cannot be placed later than 150 to 160. The expression which Origen uses regarding his relation to Valentinus must, according to linguistic usage, be understood of a personal relation."<sup>1</sup>

We have already pointed out that the fact that the names of Ptolemæus and Heracleon are thus coupled together affords no clue in itself to the date of either, and their being mentioned as leading representatives of the school of Valentinus does not in any way involve the inference that they were not contemporaries of Irenæus, living and working at the time he wrote. The way in which Irenæus mentions them in this the only passage throughout his whole work in which he names

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 48 f.

Heracleon, and to which Tischendorf pointedly refers, is as follows: "But if it was not produced, but was generated by itself, then that which is vacuum is both like, and brother to, and of the same honour with, that Father who was proclaimed by Valentinus; but it is really more ancient, and existent much before, and more exalted than the rest of the Æons of Ptolemæus himself, and of Heracleon, and all the rest who hold these views."<sup>1</sup> We fail to recognize anything special, here, of the kind inferred by Tischendorf, in the way in which mention is made of the two later Gnostics. . If anything be clear, on the contrary, it is that a distinction is drawn between Valentinus and Ptolemæus and Heracleon, and that Irenæus points out inconsistencies between the doctrines of the founder and those of his later followers. It is quite irrelevant to insist merely, as Tischendorf does, that Irenæus and subsequent writers represent Ptolemæus and Heracleon and other Gnostics of his time as of "the school" of Valentinus. The question simply is, whether in doing so they at all imply that these men were not contemporaries of Irenæus, or necessarily assign their period of independent activity to the lifetime of Valentinus, as Tischendorf appears to argue? Most certainly they do not, and Tischendorf does not attempt to offer any evidence that they do so. We may perceive how utterly worthless such a fact is for the purpose of affixing an early date by merely considering the quotation which Tischendorf himself makes from Hippolytus: "Valentinus and Heracleon and Ptolemæus, and the

<sup>1</sup> Si autem non prolatum est, sed a se generatum est; et simile est, et fraternum, et ejusdem honoris id quod est vacuum, ei Patri qui prædictus est a Valentino: antiquius autem et multo ante existens, et honorificentius reliquis Æonibus ipsius Ptolemæi et Heracleonis, et reliquis omnibus qui eadem opinantur. Adv. Hær., ii. 4, § 1.

whole school of these, disciples of Pythagoras and Plato. . . . "1 If the statement that men are of a certain school involve the supposition of coincidence of time, the three Gnostic leaders must be considered contemporaries of Pythagoras or Plato, whose disciples they are said to be. Again, if the order in which names are mentioned, as Tischendorf contends by inference throughout his whole argument, is to involve strict similar sequence of date, the principle applied to the whole of the early writers would lead to the most ridiculous confusion. Tischendorf quotes Epiphanius: "Cerdo follows these (the Ophites, Kainites, Sethiani), and Heracleon." Why he does so it is difficult to understand, unless it be to give the appearance of multiplying testimonies, for two sentences further on he is obliged to admit: "Epiphanius has certainly made a mistake, as in such things not unfrequently happens to him, when he makes Cerdo, who, however, is to be placed about 140, follow Heracleon."<sup>2</sup> This kind of mistake is, indeed, common to all the writers quoted, and when it is remembered that such an error is committed where a distinct and deliberate affirmation of the point is concerned, it will easily be conceived how little dependence is to be placed on the mere mention of names in the course of argument. We find Irenæus saying that "neither Valentinus, nor Marcion, nor Saturninus, nor Basilides" possesses certain knowledge,<sup>3</sup> and elsewhere: "of such an one as Valentinus, or Ptolemæus, or Basilides."<sup>4</sup> To base

<sup>1</sup> Οὐαλεντίνου τοίνυν καὶ Ἡρακλέων καὶ Πτολεμαῖος καὶ πᾶσα ἡ τοῦτων σχολή, οἱ Πυθαγόρου καὶ Πλάτωνος μαθηταί, κ.τ.λ. Ref. Omn. Hær., vi. 29.

<sup>2</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 49.

We do not here enter into the discussion of the nature of this error. (See *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 129 f.; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 91; *Riggenbach*, *Die Zeugn. f. d. Ev. Johan.*, 1866, p. 79.)

<sup>3</sup> Adv. Hær., ii. 28, § 6.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 28, § 9.

an argument as to date on the order in which names appear in such writers is preposterous.

Tischendorf draws an inference from the statement that Heracleon was said to be a *γνώριμος* of Valentinus, that Origen declares him to have been his friend, holding personal intercourse with him. Origen, however, evidently knew nothing individually on the point, and speaks upon mere hearsay, guardedly using the expression "said to be" (*λεγόμενον εἶναι γνώριμον*). But, according to the later and patristic use of the word, *γνώριμος* meant nothing more than a "disciple," and it cannot here be necessarily interpreted into a "contemporary."<sup>1</sup> Under no circumstances could such a phrase, avowedly limited to hearsay, have any weight. The loose manner in which the Fathers repeat each other, even in serious matters, is too well known to every one acquainted with their writings to require any remark. Their inaccuracy keeps pace with their want of critical judgment. We have seen one of the mistakes of Epiphanius, admitted by Tischendorf to be only too common with him, which illustrates how little such data are to be relied on. We may point out another of the same kind committed by him in common with Hippolytus, pseudo-Tertullian and Philastrius. Mistaking a passage of Irenæus,<sup>2</sup> regarding the sacred Tetrad (Kol-Arbas) of the Valentinian Gnosis, Hippolytus supposes Irenæus to refer to another heretic leader. He at once treats the Tetrad as such a leader named "Colarbasus," and after dealing (vi. 4) with the doctrines of Secundus, and Ptolemæus, and Heracleon, he proposes, § 5, to show "what are the opinions held by Marcus and

<sup>1</sup> *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 127; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 89; *cf. Lipsius*, *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1867, p. 82; *Stephanus*, *Thesaurus Ling. Gr.*; *Suidas*, *Lexicon*, in voce.

<sup>2</sup> *Adv. Her.*, i. 14.

Colarbasus.”<sup>1</sup> At the end of the same book he declares that Irenæus, to whom he states that he is indebted for a knowledge of their inventions, has completely refuted the opinions of these heretics, and he proceeds to treat of Basilides, considering that it has been sufficiently demonstrated “whose disciples are Marcus and Colarbasus, the successors of the school of Valentinus.”<sup>2</sup> At an earlier part of the work he had spoken in a more independent way in reference to certain who had promulgated great heresies: “Of these,” he says, “one is Colarbasus, who endeavours to explain religion by measures and numbers.”<sup>3</sup> The same mistake is committed by pseudo-Tertullian,<sup>4</sup> and Philastrius,<sup>5</sup> each of whom devotes a chapter to this supposed heretic. Epiphanius, as might have been expected, fell into the same error, and he proceeds elaborately to refute the heresy of the Colarbasians, “which is Heresy XV.” He states that Colarbasus follows Marcus and Ptolemæus,<sup>6</sup> and after discussing the opinions of this mythical heretic he devotes the next chapter, “which is Heresy XVI.,” to the Heracleonites, commencing it with the information that: “A certain Heracleon follows after Colarbasus.”<sup>7</sup> This absurd mistake<sup>8</sup> shows how little these writers

<sup>1</sup> Τίνα τὰ Μάρκω καὶ Κολαμβάσω νομισθέντα. Ref. Omn. Hær., vi. § 5. There can be no doubt that a chapter on Colarbasus is omitted from the MS. of Hippolytus which we possess. Cf. *Bunsen*, Hippolytus u. s. Zeit, 1852, p. 54 f.

<sup>2</sup> . . . τίνων εἶεν μαθηταὶ Μάρκος τε καὶ Κολάρβασος, οἱ τῆς Οὐαλεντίνου σχολῆς διάδοχοι γενόμενοι, κ.τ.λ. Ref. Omn. Hær., vi. § 55.

<sup>3</sup> Ὡν εἰς μὲν Κολάρβασος, ὃς διὰ μέτρων καὶ ἀριθμῶν ἐκτίθεσθαι θεοσίβειαν ἐπιχειρεῖ. Ref. Omn. Hær., iv. § 13.

<sup>4</sup> Hær., 15.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, 43.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, xxxv. § 1, p. 258.

<sup>7</sup> Ἡρακλέων τις τοῦτον τὸν Κολάρβασον διαδέχεται, κ.τ.λ. Hær., xxxvi. § 1, p. 262.

<sup>8</sup> *Volkmar*, Die Colarbasus-gnosis in *Niedner's Zeitschr. hist. Theol.*, 1855; *Der Ursprung*, p. 128 f.; *Baur*, K. G. d. drei erst. Jahrh., p. 204;

knew of the Gnostics of whom they wrote, and how the one ignorantly follows the other.

The order, moreover, in which they set the heretic leaders varies considerably. It will be sufficient for us merely to remark here that while pseudo-Tertullian<sup>1</sup> and Philastrius<sup>2</sup> adopt the following order after the Valentinians: Ptolemæus, Secundus, Heracleon, Marcus, and Colarbasus, Epiphanius<sup>3</sup> places them: Secundus, Ptolemæus, Marcians, Colarbasus, and Heracleon; and Hippolytus<sup>4</sup> again: Secundus, Ptolemæus, Heracleon, Marcus, and Colarbasus. The vagueness of Irenæus had left some latitude here, and his followers were uncertain. The somewhat singular fact that Irenæus only once mentions Heracleon whilst he so constantly refers to Ptolemæus, taken in connection with this order, in which Heracleon is always placed after Ptolemæus,<sup>5</sup> and by Epiphanius after Marcus, may be reasonably explained by the fact that whilst Ptolemæus had already gained considerable notoriety when Irenæus wrote, Heracleon may only have begun to come into notice. Since Tischendorf lays so much stress upon pseudo-Tertullian and Philastrius making Ptolemæus appear immediately after Valentinus, this explanation is after his own principle.

We have already pointed out that there is not a single passage in Irenæus, or any other early writer, assigning Ptolemæus and Heracleon to a period anterior to the time when Irenæus undertook to refute their opinions. Indeed, Tischendorf has not attempted to show that

ann. 1; *Lipsius*, *Der Gnosticismus*, in *Ersch. u. Grubers Real. Encykl. ; Zur Quellenkritik des Epiph.*, p. 166 f., 168 f.; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 91.

<sup>1</sup> *Hær.*, 13 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, 39 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, 32 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Ref. Omn. Hær.*, vi. § 3, 4, 5.

<sup>5</sup> Tertullian also makes Heracleon follow Ptolemæus. *Adv. Vul.*, 4.

they do, and he has merely, on the strength of the general expression that these Gnostics were of the school of Valentinus, boldly assigned to them an early date. Now, as we have stated, he himself admits that Valentinus only came from Egypt to Rome in A.D. 140, and continued teaching till 160,<sup>1</sup> and these dates are most clearly given by Irenæus himself.<sup>2</sup> Why then should Ptolemæus and Heracleon, to take an extreme case, not have known Valentinus in their youth, and yet have flourished chiefly during the last two decades of the second century? Irenæus himself may be cited as a parallel case, which Tischendorf at least cannot gainsay. He is never tired of telling us that Irenæus was the disciple of Polycarp,<sup>3</sup> whose martyrdom he sets about A.D. 165, and he considers that the intercourse of Irenæus with the aged Father must properly be put about A.D. 150,<sup>4</sup> yet he himself dates the death of Irenæus, A.D. 202,<sup>5</sup> and nothing is more certain than that the period of his greatest activity and influence falls precisely in the last twenty years of the second century. Upon his own data, therefore, that Valentinus taught for twenty years after his first appearance in Rome in A.D. 140—and there is no ground whatever for asserting that he did not teach for even a much longer period—Ptolemæus and Heracleon might well have personally sat at the feet of Valentinus in their youth, as Irenæus is said to have done about the very same period at those of Polycarp, and yet, like him, have flourished chiefly towards the end of the century.

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 43.

<sup>2</sup> Adv. Hær., iii. 4, § 3; Euseb., H. E., iv. 11.

<sup>3</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 25, p. 11.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 12.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, p. 11 f.

Although there is not the slightest ground for asserting that Ptolemæus and Heracleon were not contemporaries with Irenæus, flourishing like him towards the end of the second century, there are, on the other hand, many circumstances which altogether establish that conclusion. We have already shown, in treating of Valentinus,<sup>1</sup> that Irenæus principally directs his work against the followers of Valentinus living at the time he wrote, and notably of Ptolemæus and his school.<sup>2</sup> In the preface to the first book, after stating that he writes after personal intercourse with some of the disciples of Valentinus,<sup>3</sup> he more definitely states his purpose: "We will, then, to the best of our ability, clearly and concisely set forth the opinions of those who are *now* (*νῦν*) teaching heresy, *I speak particularly of those round Ptolemæus* (*τῶν περὶ Πτολεμαίου*) whose system is an offshoot from the school of Valentinus."<sup>4</sup> Nothing could be more explicit. Irenæus in this passage distinctly represents Ptolemæus as teaching at the time he is writing, and this statement alone is decisive, more especially as there is not a single known fact which is either directly or indirectly opposed to it.

Tischendorf lays much stress on the evidence of Hippolytus in coupling together the names of Ptolemæus and Heracleon with that of Valentinus; similar testimony of the same writer, fully confirming the above statement of Irenæus, will, therefore, have the greater force. Hippolytus says that the Valentinians differed materially among themselves regarding certain points which led to divisions, one party being called the

<sup>1</sup> Vol. ii. p. 60 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Canon Westcott admits this. On the Canon, p. 266 f.

<sup>3</sup> See passage quoted, vol. ii. p. 60.

<sup>4</sup> Adv. Hær., i. Præf. § 2. See Greek quoted, vol. ii. p. 60, note 1.

Oriental and the other the Italian. "They of the Italian party, of whom is Heracleon and Ptolemæus, say, &c. . . . They, however, who are of the Oriental party, of whom is Axionicus and Bardesanes, maintain," &c.<sup>1</sup> Now, Ptolemæus and Heracleon are here quite clearly represented as being contemporary with Axionicus and Bardesanes, and without discussing whether Hippolytus does not, in continuation, describe them as all living at the time he wrote,<sup>2</sup> there can be no doubt that some of them were, and that this evidence confirms again the statement of Irenæus. Hippolytus, in a subsequent part of his work, states that a certain Prepon, a Marcionite, has introduced something new, and "now in our own time (ἐν τοῖς καθ' ἡμᾶς χρόνοις νῦν) has written a work regarding the heresy in reply to Bardesanes."<sup>3</sup> The researches of Hilgenfeld have proved that Bardesanes lived at least over the reign of Heliogabalus (218—222), and the statement of Hippolytus is thus confirmed.<sup>4</sup> Axionicus again was still flourishing when Tertullian wrote his work against the Valentinians

<sup>1</sup> Οἱ μὲν ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰταλίας, ὧν ἐστὶν Ἡρακλέων καὶ Προλεμαῖος . . . φασι . . .

Οἱ δ' αὖ ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνατολῆς λέγουσιν, ὧν ἐστὶν Ἀξίουικός καὶ Βαρδησάνης, κ.τ.λ. Ref. Omn. Hær., vi. 35.

<sup>2</sup> Tischendorf did not refer to these passages at all originally, and only does so in the second and subsequent editions of this book, in reply to Volkmar and others in the Vorwort (p. ix. f.), and in a note (p. 49, note 2). Volkmar argues from the opening of the next chapter (36), Ταῦτα οὖν ἐκεῖνοι ζητήσωσαν καθ' αὐτοὺς (Let these heretics, therefore, discuss these points amongst themselves), that they are represented as contemporaries of Hippolytus himself at the time he wrote (A.D. 225—235), *Der Ursprung*, p. 23, p. 130 f. It is not our purpose to pursue this discussion, but whatever may be the conclusion as regards the extreme deduction of Volkmar, there can be no doubt that the passage proves at least the date which was assigned to them against Tischendorf.

<sup>3</sup> Ref. Omn. Hær., vii. 31.

<sup>4</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Bardesanes, 1864, p. 11 ff.; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 131, p. 23; *Lipsius*, *Zeitschr. wi-s. Theol.*, 1867, p. 80 f.; *Riggenbach*,

(201—226). Tertullian says: "Axionicus of Antioch alone to the present day (ad hodiernum) respects the memory of Valentinus, by keeping fully the rules of his system."<sup>1</sup> Although on the whole they may be considered to have flourished somewhat earlier, Ptolemæus and Heracleon are thus shown to have been for a time at least contemporaries of Axionicus and Bardesanes.<sup>2</sup>

Moreover, it is evident that the doctrines of Ptolemæus and Heracleon represent a much later form of Gnosticism than that of Valentinus. It is generally admitted that Ptolemæus reduced the system of Valentinus to consistency,<sup>3</sup> and the inconsistencies which existed between the views of the Master and these later followers, and which indicate a much more advanced stage of development, are constantly pointed out by Irenæus and the Fathers who wrote in refutation of heresy. Origen also represents Heracleon as amongst those who held opinions sanctioned by the Church,<sup>4</sup> and both he and Ptolemæus must indubitably be classed amongst the latest Gnostics.<sup>5</sup> It is clear, therefore, that Ptolemæus and Heracleon were contemporaries of Irenæus<sup>6</sup> at the time he composed his work against Heresies (185—195), both, and especially

Die Zeugnisse f. d. Ev. Johannis, 1866, p. 78 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 90.

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Val., 4; *Hilgenfeld*, Bardesanes, p. 15; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 130 f.; *Lipsius*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1867, p. 81.

<sup>2</sup> *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 23 f., p. 130 f.; *Lipsius*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1867, p. 82; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 90.

<sup>3</sup> *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 276.

<sup>4</sup> In Joh., T. xvi. p. 236 f.; *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., ii. p. 105.

<sup>5</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 346; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 89 ff.; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 127 ff.; *Lipsius*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1867, p. 82; *Riggenbach*, Die Zeugn. f. d. Ev. Johann., p. 78.

<sup>6</sup> *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 22 ff., p. 126 ff.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 88 ff.; *Lipsius*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1867, p. 81, 83; *Éllierier*, Essai d'Intro. N. T., p. 27 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 391, note 1; *Riggenbach*, Die Zeugn. f. d. Ev. Johann., p. 78.

the latter, flourishing and writing towards the end of the second century.<sup>1</sup>

We mentioned, in first speaking of these Gnostics, that Epiphanius has preserved an Epistle, attributed to Ptolemæus, which is addressed to Flora, one of his disciples.<sup>2</sup> This Epistle is neither mentioned by Irenæus nor by any other writer before Epiphanius. There is nothing in the Epistle itself to show that it was really written by Ptolemæus himself. Assuming it to be by him, however, the Epistle was in all probability written towards the end of the second century, and it does not, therefore, come within the scope of our inquiry. We may, however, briefly notice the supposed references to our Gospels which it contains. The writer of the Epistle, without any indication whatever of a written source from which he derived them, quotes sayings of Jesus for which parallels are found in our first Gospel. These sayings are introduced by such expressions as "he said," "our Saviour declared," but never as quotations from any Scripture. Now, in affirming that they are taken from the Gospel according to Matthew, Apologists exhibit their usual arbitrary haste, for we must clearly and decidedly state that there is not a single one of the passages which does not present decided variations from the parallel passages in our first Synoptic. We subjoin for comparison in parallel columns the passages from the Epistle and Gospel:—

EPISTLE.	MATT. XII. 25.
<p>Οἰκία γὰρ ἡ πόλις μερισθεῖσα ἐφ' ἑαυτὴν ὅτι μὴ δύναται στήναι, ὁ σωτὴρ ἡμῶν ἀπεφώνητο.<sup>3</sup> . . . .</p>	<p>. . . . πᾶσα πόλις ἢ οἰκία μερισθεῖσα καθ' ἑαυτῆς οὐ σταθίσειται.</p>

<sup>1</sup> *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 22 ff., 126 ff.; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 88 ff.; *Ebrard*, *Evang. Gesch.*, p. 874, § 142; *Lipsius*, *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1867, p. 81 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Epiphanius*, *Her.*, xxxiii. 3—7.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, § 3.

## EPISTLE.

ἔφη αὐτοῖς ὅτι, Μωϋσῆς πρὸς τὴν σκληροκαρδίαν ὑμῶν ἐπέτρεψε τὸ ἀπολύειν τὴν γυναῖκα αὐτοῦ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς γὰρ οὐ γέγονεν οὕτως. Θεὸς γὰρ, φησὶ, συνέζευξε ταύτην τὴν συζυγίαν, καὶ ὁ συνέζευξεν ὁ κύριος, ἄνθρωπος μὴ χωριζέτω, ἔφη.<sup>1</sup>

Ὁ γὰρ θεὸς, φησὶν, εἶπε, τίμα τὸν πατέρα σου καὶ τὴν μητέρα σου, ἵνα εὖ σοι γένηται. ὑμεῖς δέ, φησὶν, εἰρήκατε, τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις λέγων, δῶρω τῷ θεῷ ὁ ἐὰν ὠφελῆθῃς ἐξ ἐμοῦ,

καὶ ἠκυρώσατε τὸν νόμον τοῦ θεοῦ, διὰ τὴν παράδοσιν τῶν πρεσβυτέρων ὑμῶν.

Τοῦτο δὲ Ἡσαΐας ἐξεφώνησεν εἰπών,

Ὁ λαὸς οὗτος, κ.τ.λ.<sup>3</sup> . . . .

τὸ γὰρ, ὀφθαλμὸν ἀντὶ ὀφθαλμοῦ, καὶ ὀδόντα ἀντὶ ὀδόντος . . . ἐγὼ γὰρ λέγω ὑμῖν μὴ ἀντιστῆναι ὅλως τῷ πονηρῷ ἀλλὰ ἐάν τις σε βράσιση στρέψον αὐτῷ καὶ τὴν ἄλλην σιαγόνα.<sup>4</sup>

## ΜΑΤΤ. XIX. 8, and 6.

λέγει αὐτοῖς Ὅτι Μωϋσῆς πρὸς τὴν σκληροκαρδίαν ὑμῶν ἐπέτρεψεν ὑμῖν ἀπολύσαι τὰς γυναῖκας ὑμῶν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς δὲ οὐ γέγονεν οὕτως. 6. . . . ὁ οὖν ὁ θεὸς συνέζευξεν, ἄνθρωπος μὴ χωριζέτω.

## ΜΑΤΤ. XV. 4—8.

Ὁ γὰρ θεὸς ἐνετείλατο, λέγων· Τίμα τὸν πατέρα καὶ τὴν μητέρα, καί, Ὁ κακολογῶν, κ.τ.λ.<sup>2</sup> 5. ὑμεῖς δὲ λέγετε· Ὅς ἂν εἴπῃ τῷ πατρὶ ἢ τῇ μητρὶ, Δῶρον, ὁ ἐὰν ἐξ ἐμοῦ ὠφελῆθῃς, καὶ οὐ μὴ τιμήσει τὸν πατέρα αὐτοῦ, ἢ τὴν μητέρα αὐτοῦ.

6. καὶ ἠκυρώσατε τὸν νόμον τοῦ θεοῦ διὰ τὴν παράδοσιν ὑμῶν.

7. ὑποκριταί, καλῶς ἐπροφήτευσεν περὶ ὑμῶν Ἡσαΐας, λέγων,

8. Ὁ λαὸς οὗτος, κ.τ.λ.

## ΜΑΤΤ. V. 38—39.

Ἠκούσατε ὅτι ἐρρήθη· ὀφθαλμὸν ἀντὶ ὀφθαλμοῦ, καὶ ὀδόντα ἀντὶ ὀδόντος. 39. ἐγὼ δὲ λέγω ὑμῖν, μὴ ἀντιστῆναι τῷ πονηρῷ ἀλλ' ὅστις σε βράσιει ἐπὶ τὴν δεξιάν σου σιαγόνα, στρέψον αὐτῷ καὶ τὴν ἄλλην·

It must not be forgotten that Irenæus makes very explicit statements as to the recognition of other sources of evangelical truth than our Gospels by the Valentinians, regarding which we have fully written when discussing the founder of that sect.<sup>5</sup> We know that they professed to have direct traditions from the Apostles through Theodas, a disciple of the Apostle Paul,<sup>6</sup> and in the

<sup>1</sup> *Ephr.*, *Hæc.*, xxxiii. 4.

<sup>2</sup> This phrase, from Leviticus xx. 9, occurs further on in the next chapter.

<sup>3</sup> *Ephr.*, *Hæc.*, xxxiii. § 4.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, § 6. In the next chapter, § 7, there is *ἕνα γὰρ μόνον εἶναι ἀγαθὸν θεῶν τὸν ἐαυτοῦ πατέρα ὁ σωτὴρ ἡμῶν ἀπεφήματα*, κ.τ.λ. cf. Matt. xix. 17. . . . *εἰς ἐστὶν ὁ ἀγαθός.*

<sup>5</sup> See Vol. ii. p. 75 ff.

<sup>6</sup> *Clement Al.*, *Strom.*, vii. 17.

Epistle to Flora allusion is made to the succession of doctrine received by direct tradition from the Apostles.<sup>1</sup> Irenæus says that the Valentinians profess to derive their views from unwritten sources,<sup>2</sup> and he accuses them of rejecting the Gospels of the Church,<sup>3</sup> but, on the other hand, he states that they had many Gospels different from what he calls the Gospels of the Apostles.<sup>4</sup>

With regard to Heracleon, it is said that he wrote Commentaries on the third and fourth Gospels. The authority for this statement is very insufficient. The assertion with reference to the third Gospel is based solely upon a passage in the *Stromata* of the Alexandrian Clement. Clement quotes a passage found in Luke xii. 8, 11, 12, and says: "Expounding this passage, Heracleon, the most distinguished of the School of Valentinus, says as follows," &c.<sup>5</sup> This is immediately interpreted into a quotation from a Commentary on Luke.<sup>6</sup> We merely point out that from Clement's remark it by no means follows that Heracleon wrote a Commentary at all, and further there is no evidence that the passage commented upon was actually from our third Gospel.<sup>7</sup> The *Stromata* of Clement were not written until after A.D. 193, and in them we find the first and only reference to this supposed commentary. We need not here refer to the Commentary on the fourth Gospel, which is merely

<sup>1</sup> *Eriphanius*, Hær., xxxiii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> *Adv. Hær.*, i. 8, § 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 2, § 1.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 11, § 9.

<sup>5</sup> *Τούτων ἐξηγούμενος τὸν τόπον Ἡρακλείων, ὁ τῆς Οὐαλεντινίου σχολῆς δοκιμώτατος, κατὰ λέξιν φησὶν, κ.τ.λ.* *Strom.*, iv. 9, § 73.

<sup>6</sup> In *Lucæ igitur Evangelium Commentaria* edidit Heracleon, &c. *Grabe*, *Spicil. Patr.*, ii. p. 83.

<sup>7</sup> The second reference by Clement to Heracleon is in the fragment § 25; but it is doubted by apologists (cf. *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 264). It would, however, tend to show that the supposed Commentary could not be upon our Luke, as it refers to an apostolic injunction regarding baptism not found in our Gospels.

inferred from references in Origen (c. A.D. 225), but of which we have neither earlier nor fuller information.<sup>1</sup> We must, however, before leaving this subject, mention that Origen informs us that Heracleon quotes from the Preaching of Peter (*Κήρυγμα Πέτρου*, Prædicatio Petri), a work which, as we have already several times mentioned, was largely cited by Clement of Alexandria as authentic and inspired Holy Scripture.<sup>2</sup>

The epoch at which Ptolemæus and Heracleon flourished would in any case render testimony regarding our Gospels of little value. The actual evidence which they furnish, however, is not of a character to prove even the existence of our Synoptics, and much less does it in any way bear upon their character or authenticity.

## 2.

A similar question of date arises regarding Celsus, who wrote a work, entitled *Λόγος ἀληθής*, True Doctrine, which is no longer extant, against which Origen composed an elaborate refutation. The Christian writer takes the arguments of Celsus in detail, presenting to us, therefore, its general features, and giving many extracts; and as Celsus professes to base much of his accusation upon the writings in use amongst Christians, although he does not name a single one of them, it becomes important to ascertain what those works were, and the date at which

<sup>1</sup> Neither of the works, whatever they were, could have been written before the end of the second century. *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 22 f., 130 f., 165; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 91 f.; *Ebrard*, *Evang. Gesch.*, p. 874, § 142; *Lipsius*, *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1867, p. 81 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Clem. Al.*, *Strom.*, vi. 5, § 39, 6, § 48, 7, § 58, 15, § 128. Canon Westcott states of Ptolemæus: "Two statements however which he makes are at variance with the Gospels: that our Lord's ministry was completed in a year; and that He continued for eighteen months with his disciples after His Resurrection." On the Canon, p. 268.

Celsus wrote. As usual, we shall state the case by giving the reasons assigned for an early date.

Arguing against Volkmar and others, who maintain, from a passage at the close of his work, that Origen, writing about the second quarter of the third century, represents Celsus as his contemporary,<sup>1</sup> Tischendorf, referring to the passage, which we shall give in its place, proceeds to assign an earlier date upon the following grounds: "But indeed, even in the first book, at the commencement of the whole work, Origen says: 'Therefore, I cannot compliment a Christian whose faith is in danger of being shaken by Celsus, who yet does not even (οὐδέ) still (ἔτι) live the common life among men, but already and long since (ἤδη καὶ πάλαι) is dead.' . . . . In the same first book Origen says: 'We have heard that there were two men of the name of Celsus, Epicureans, the first under Nero; this one' (that is to say, ours) 'under Hadrian and later.' It is not impossible that Origen mistakes when he identified his Celsus with the Epicurean living 'under Hadrian and later;' but it is impossible to convert the same Celsus of whom Origen says this into a contemporary of Origen. Or would Origen himself in the first book really have set his Celsus 'under Hadrian (117—138) and later,' yet in the eighth have said: 'We will wait (about 225), to see whether he will still accomplish this design of making another work follow?' Now, until some better discovery regarding Celsus is attained, it will be well to hold to the old, with the acceptance that Celsus wrote his book about the middle of the second century, probably between 150—160," &c.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Volkmar, *Der Ursprung*, p. 80; Scholten, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 99 f.

<sup>2</sup> Aber auch schon im ersten Buche zu Anfang der ganzen Schrift sagt Origenes: "Daher kann ich mich nicht eines Christen freuen, dessen

It is scarcely necessary to point out that the only argument advanced by Tischendorf bears solely against the assertion that Celsus was a contemporary of Origen, "about 225," and leaves the actual date entirely unsettled. He not only admits that the statement of Origen regarding the identity of his opponent with the Epicurean of the reign of Hadrian "and later," may be erroneous, but he tacitly rejects it, and having abandoned the conjecture of Origen as groundless and untenable, he substitutes a conjecture of his own, equally unsupported by reasons, that Celsus probably wrote between 150—160. Indeed, he does not attempt to justify this date, but arbitrarily decides to hold by it until a better can be demonstrated. He is forced to admit the ignorance of Origen on the point, and he does not conceal his own.

Now it is clear that the statement of Origen in the preface to his work, quoted above, that Celsus, against whom he writes, is long since dead,<sup>1</sup> is made in the belief that this Celsus was the Epicurean who lived under Hadrian,<sup>2</sup> which Tischendorf, although he avoids explana-

Glaube Gefahr läuft durch Celsus wankend gemacht zu werden, der doch nicht einmal (οὐδέ) mehr (ἔτι) das gemeine Leben unter den Menschen lebt, sondern bereits und längst (ἤδη καὶ πάλαι) verstorben ist." . . . In demselben ersten Buche sagt Origenes: "Wir haben erfahren, dass zwei Männer Namens Celsus Epikuräer gewesen, der erste unter Nero, dieser" (d. h. der unsrige) "unter Hadrian und später." Es ist nicht unmöglich, dass sich Origenes irrte, wenn er in seinem Celsus den "unter Hadrian und später" lebenden Epikuräer wiederfand; aber es ist unmöglich, denselben Celsus, von welchem Origenes dies aussagt, zu einem Zeitgenossen des Origenes zu machen. Oder hätte wirklich gar Origenes selbst im 1. Buche seinen Celsus "unter Hadrian (117—138) und später" gesetzt, im 8. aber gesagt: "Wir wollen abwarten (um 225) ob er dieses Vorhaben, eine andere Schrift folgen zu lassen, noch ausführen werde? Nun so lange keine bessere Entdeckung über Celsus gelingt, wirds wol beim Alten bleiben mit der Annahme, dass Celsus um die Mitte des 2. Jahrhunderts, vielleicht zwischen 150 und 160 sein Buch verfasst, &c." Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 74.

<sup>1</sup> Contra Cels., præf., § 4.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, i. 8.

tion of the reason, rightly recognizes to be a mistake. Origen undoubtedly knew nothing of his adversary, and it obviously follows that, his impression that he is Celsus the Epicurean being erroneous, his statement that he was long since dead, which is based upon that impression, loses all its value. Origen certainly at one time conjectured his Celsus to be the Epicurean of the reign of Hadrian, for he not only says so directly in the passage quoted, but on the strength of his belief in the fact, he accuses him of inconsistency: "But Celsus," he says, "must be convicted of contradicting himself; for it is known from other of his works that he was an Epicurean, but here, because he considered that he could attack Christianity more effectively by not avowing the views of Epicurus, he pretends, &c. . . . Remark, therefore, the falseness of his mind," &c.<sup>1</sup> And from time to time he continues to refer to him as an Epicurean,<sup>2</sup> although it is evident that in the writing before him he constantly finds evidence that he is of a wholly different school. Beyond this belief, founded avowedly on mere hearsay, Origen absolutely knows nothing whatever as to the personality of Celsus, or the time at which he wrote,<sup>3</sup> and he sometimes very naïvely expresses his uncertainty regarding him. Referring in one place to certain passages which seem to imply a belief in magic on the part of Celsus, Origen adds: "I do not know whether he is the same who has written several books

<sup>1</sup> Ἐλεγκτέον δὴ ὡς τὰ ἐναντία ἑαυτῷ λέγοντα τὸν Κέλσον. Εὐρίσκεται μὲν γὰρ ἐξ ἄλλων συγγραμμάτων Ἐπικούρειος ὢν ἐνταῦθα δὲ, διὰ τὸ δοκεῖν εὐλογώτερον κατηγορεῖν τοῦ λόγου, μὴ ὁμολογῶν τὰ Ἐπικούρου, προσποιεῖται, κ.τ.λ. . .

<sup>2</sup> Ὅρα οὖν τὸ νόθον αὐτοῦ τῆς ψυχῆς, κ.τ.λ. *Contra Cels.*, i. 8.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *Contra Cels.*, i. 10, 21, iii. 75, 80, iv. 36.

<sup>4</sup> *Neander*, K. G., 1842, i. p. 274.

against magic.”<sup>1</sup> Elsewhere he says : “. . . the Epicurean Celsus (if he be the same who composed two other books against Christians),” &c.<sup>2</sup>

Not only is it apparent that Origen knows nothing of the Celsus with whom he is dealing, however, but it is almost impossible to avoid the conviction that during the time he was composing his work his impressions concerning the date and identity of his opponent became considerably modified. In the earlier portion of the first book<sup>3</sup> he has heard that his Celsus is the Epicurean of the reign of Hadrian, but a little further on,<sup>4</sup> as we have just seen, he confesses his ignorance as to whether he is the same Celsus who wrote against magic, which Celsus the Epicurean actually did. In the fourth book<sup>5</sup> as we have just seen, he expresses uncertainty as to whether the Epicurean Celsus had composed the work against Christians which he is refuting, and at the close of his treatise he treats him as a contemporary. He writes to his friend Ambrosius, at whose request the refutation of Celsus was undertaken : “Know, however, that Celsus has promised to write another treatise after this one. . . . If, therefore, he has not fulfilled his

<sup>1</sup> Οὐκ οἶδα, εἰ ὁ αὐτὸς ὢν τῷ γράψαντι κατὰ μαγείας βιβλία πλείονα. *Contra Cels.*, i. 68.

<sup>2</sup> . . . ὁ Ἐπικούρειος Κέλσος (εἰ γὰρ οὗτός ἐστι καὶ ὁ κατὰ Χριστιανῶν ἄλλα δύο βιβλία συντάξας,) κ.τ.λ. *Contra Cels.*, iv. 36. With regard to the word ἄλλα, the most competent critics have determined that the doubt expressed is whether the Epicurean Celsus wrote the work against Christians which Origen is here refuting. Such a remark applied to any books against Christians of which no information is given would be absurdly irrelevant. *Neander*, K. G., i. p. 273, anm. 2; *Baur*, K. G. d. drei erst. Jahrh., i. p. 383 f., anm. 1; *Schotten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 99. We may point out that the opening passage of the 4th book of Origen's work, as well as subsequent extracts, seems to indicate a distinct division of the treatise of Celsus into two parts which may fully explain the δύο βιβλία of this sentence.

<sup>3</sup> i. 8.

<sup>4</sup> i. 68.

<sup>5</sup> iv. 36.

promise to write a second book, we may well be satisfied with the eight books in reply to his Discourse. If, however, he has commenced and finished this work also, seek it and send it in order that we may answer it also, and confute the false teaching in it," &c.<sup>1</sup> From this passage, and supported by other considerations, Volkmar and others assert that Celsus was really a contemporary of Origen.<sup>2</sup> To this, as we have seen, Tischendorf merely replies by pointing out that Origen in the preface says that Celsus was already dead, and that he was identical with the Epicurean Celsus who flourished under Hadrian and later. The former of these statements, however, was made under the impression that the latter was correct, and as it is generally agreed that Origen was mistaken in supposing that Celsus the Epicurean was the author of the *Λόγος ἀληθής*,<sup>3</sup> and Tischendorf himself admits the fact, the two earlier statements, that Celsus flourished under Hadrian and consequently that he had long been dead, fall together, whilst the subsequent doubts regarding his identity not only stand, but rise into assurance at the close of the work in the final

<sup>1</sup> Ἰσθι μέντοι ἐπαγγελλόμενον τὸν Κέλσον ἄλλο σύνταγμα μετὰ τοῦτο ποιῆσειν, . . . . Εἰ μὲν οὖν οὐκ ἔγραψεν ὑποσχόμενος τὸν δεῦτερον λόγον, εὖ ἂν ἔχοι ἀρκεῖσθαι ἡμᾶς τοῖς ὀκτῶ πρὸς τὸν λόγον αὐτοῦ ὑπαγορευθεῖσι βιβλίοις. Εἰ δὲ κἀκεῖνον ἀρξάμενος συνετέλεσε, ζήτησον, καὶ πέμψον τὸ σύγγραμμα, ἵνα καὶ πρὸς ἐκεῖνο . . . . ὑπαγορεύσαντες, καὶ τὴν ἐν ἐκείνῳ ψευδοδοξίαν ἀνατρέψωμεν κ.τ.λ. *Contra Cels.*, viii. 76.

<sup>2</sup> *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 80, cf. 165; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 100; cf. *Riggenbach*, *Die Zeugn. f. d. Ev. Johann.*, p. 83; *Ueberweg*, *Grundriss der Gesch. der Philos. des Alterth.*, 1867, i. p. 237.

<sup>3</sup> *Neander*, *K. G.*, i. p. 273 f.; *Baur*, *K. G. d. drei erst. Jahrh.*, p. 383 f., anm. 1; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 80; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 99 f.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 398; *Mosheim*, *Instit. Hist. Eccles.*, P. i. lib. i. sæc. ii. cap. 2, § 8; *De Rebus Christ. sæc. ii.* § 19, note \*; cf. *Riggenbach*, *Die Zeugn. f. d. Ev. Johann.*, p. 83; *Keim*, *Celsus' Wahres Wort*, 1873, p. 275 ff.

request to Ambrosius.<sup>1</sup> There can be no doubt that the first statements and the closing paragraphs are contradictory, and whilst almost all critics pronounce against the accuracy of the former, the inferences from the latter retain full force, confirmed as they are by the intermediate doubts expressed by Origen himself.

Even those who, like Tischendorf, in an arbitrary manner assign an early date to Celsus, although they do not support their conjectures by any reliable reasons of their own, all tacitly set aside these of Origen.<sup>2</sup> It is generally admitted by these, with Lardner<sup>3</sup> and Michaelis,<sup>4</sup> that the Epicurean Celsus to whom Origen was at one time disposed to refer the work against Christianity, was the writer of that name to whom Lucian, his friend and contemporary, addressed his *Alexander* or *Pseudomantis*, and who really wrote against magic,<sup>5</sup> as Origen mentions.<sup>6</sup> But although on this account Lardner assigns to him the date of A.D. 176, the fact is that Lucian did not write his *Pseudomantis*, as Lardner is obliged to admit,<sup>7</sup> until the reign of the Emperor Commodus (180—193), and even upon the

<sup>1</sup> *Contra Cels.*, viii. 76.

<sup>2</sup> *Kirchhofer* says that Origen himself does not assign a date to the work of Celsus: "but as he (Celsus) speaks of the Marcionites, he must, in any case, be set in the second half of the second century." *Quellen-samml.*, p. 330, anm. 1; *Lardner* decides that Celsus wrote under *Marcus Aurelius*, and chooses to date him A.D. 176. *Works*, viii. p. 6. *Bindemann* dates between 170—180; *Zeitschr. f. d. Hist. Theol.*, 1842, H. 2, p. 60, 107 ff.; cf. *Michaelis*, *Einl. N. B.*, 1788, i. p. 41; *Anger*, *Synops. Ev. Proleg.*, p. xl.; *Riggenbach*, *Die Zeugn. f. d. Ev. Johan.*, p. 83. *Canon Westcott* dates Celsus "towards the close of the second century." On the *Canon*, p. 356. *Keim* in his very recent work on Celsus dates the work about A.D. 178. *Celsus' Wahres Wort*, 1873, p. 261 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Works*, viii. p. 6.      <sup>4</sup> *Einl. N. B.*, i. p. 41.      <sup>5</sup> *Ψευδομάντις*, § 21.

<sup>6</sup> *Contra Cels.*, i. 68; *Neander*, K. G., i. p. 275; *Daur*, K. G. drei erst. Jahrb., p. 383, anm. 1; cf. *Keim*, *Celsus' Wahres Wort*, 1873, p. 275 ff.

<sup>7</sup> *Works*, viii. p. 6; cf. *Bindemann*, *Zeitschr. hist. Theol.* 1842, H. 2, p. 107.

supposition that this Celsus wrote against Christianity, of which there is not the slightest evidence, there would be no ground whatever for dating the work before A.D. 180. On the contrary, as Lucian does not in any way refer to such a writing by his friend, there would be strong reason for assigning the work, if it be supposed to be written by him, to a date subsequent to the Pseudomantis. It need scarcely be remarked that the references of Celsus to the Marcionites,<sup>1</sup> and to the followers of Marcellina,<sup>2</sup> only so far bear upon the matter as to exclude an early date.<sup>3</sup>

It requires very slight examination of the numerous extracts from, and references to, the work which Origen seeks to refute, however, to convince any impartial mind that the doubts of Origen were well founded as to whether Celsus the Epicurean were really the author of the *Λόγος ἀληθής*. As many critics of all shades of opinion have long since determined, so far from being an Epicurean, the Celsus attacked by Origen, as the philosophical opinions which he everywhere expresses clearly show, was a Neo-Platonist.<sup>4</sup> Indeed, although Origen seems to retain some impression that his antagonist must be an Epicurean, as he had heard, and frequently refers to him as such, he does not point out Epicurean sentiments in his writings, but on the contrary, not only calls

<sup>1</sup> *Contra Cels.*, v. 62, vi. 53, 74.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, v. 62.

<sup>3</sup> *Irenæus* says that Marcellina came to Rome under Anicetus (157—168) and made many followers. *Adv. Hær.*, i. 25, § 6; cf. *Epiphanius*, *Hær.*, xxvii. 6.

<sup>4</sup> *Neander*, K. G., i. p. 273 ff., 278 f.; *Baur*, K. G. drei erst. Jahrh., p. 383 ff., anm. 1; *Mosheim*, *Instit. Hist. Eccles.*, lib. i. sæc. ii. p. i. cap. 2, § 8; *De Rebus Christ.*, sæc. ii. § 19, note \*; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 80; *Schotten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 99; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 398. Cf. *Keim*, *Celsus' Wahres Wort*, 1873, p. 286 f.; *Bindemann*, *Zeitschr. hist. Theol.* 1842, H. 2, p. 62 ff., 108 f.

upon him no longer to conceal the school to which he belongs and avow himself an Epicurean,<sup>1</sup> which Celsus evidently does not, but accuses him of expressing views inconsistent with that philosophy,<sup>2</sup> or of so concealing his Epicurean opinions that it might be said that he is an Epicurean only in name.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, Origen is clearly surprised to find that he quotes so largely from the writings, and shows such marked leaning towards the teaching, of Plato, in which Celsus indeed finds the original and purer form of many Christian doctrines,<sup>4</sup> and Origen is constantly forced to discuss Plato in meeting the arguments of Celsus.

The author of the work which Origen refuted, therefore, instead of being an Epicurean as Origen supposed merely from there having been an Epicurean of the same name, was undoubtedly a Neo-Platonist, as Mosheim long ago demonstrated, of the School of Ammonius, who founded the sect at the close of the second century.<sup>5</sup> The promise of Celsus to write a second book with practical rules for living in accordance with the philosophy he promulgates, to which Origen refers at the close of his work, confirms this conclusion, and indicates a new and recent system of philosophy.<sup>6</sup> An Epicurean would not have thought of such a work—it would have been both appropriate and necessary in connection with Neo-Platonism.

We are, therefore, constrained to assign the work of

<sup>1</sup> *Contra Cels.*, iii. 80, iv. 54.

<sup>2</sup> *Contra Cels.*, i. 8.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, iv. 54.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, i. 32, iii. 63, iv. 54, 55, 83, vi. 1, 6, 8, 9, 10, 12, 13, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 47, vii. 28, 31, 42, 58 f., &c., &c.

<sup>5</sup> *Inst. Hist. Eccles.*, lib. i. sæc. ii. p. i. cap. 2, § 8; *De Rebus Christ.*, sæc. ii. § 19, § 27.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. *Neander*, K. G., i. p. 278.

Celsus to at least the early part of the third century, and to the reign of Septimius Severus. Celsus repeatedly accuses Christians, in it, of teaching their doctrines secretly and against the law, which seeks them out and punishes them with death,<sup>1</sup> and this indicates a period of persecution. Lardner, assuming the writer to be the Epicurean friend of Lucian, from this clue supposes that the persecution referred to must have been that under Marcus Aurelius († 180), and practically rejecting the data of Origen himself, without advancing sufficient reasons of his own, dates Celsus A.D. 176.<sup>2</sup> As a Neo-Platonist, however, we are more accurately led to the period of persecution which, from embers never wholly extinct since the time of Marcus Aurelius, burst into fierce flame more especially in the tenth year of the reign of Severus<sup>3</sup> (A.D. 202), and continued for many years to afflict Christians.

It is evident that the dates assigned by apologists are wholly arbitrary, and even if the evidence we have produced were very much less conclusive than it is for the later epoch, the total absence of evidence for an earlier date would completely nullify any testimony derived from Celsus. It is sufficient for us to add that, whilst he refers to incidents of Gospel history and quotes some sayings which have parallels, with more or less of variation, in our Gospels, Celsus nowhere mentions the name of any Christian book, unless we except the Book of Enoch;<sup>4</sup> and he accuses Christians, not without reason, of interpolating the books of the Sibyl, whose authority, he states, some of them acknowledged.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Origen*, *Contra Cels.*, i. 1, 3, 7, viii. 69.

<sup>2</sup> *Works*, viii. p. 6.

<sup>4</sup> *Contra Cels.*, v. 54, 55.

<sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, *H. E.*, vi. 1, 2.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, vii. 53, 56.

## 3.

The last document which we need examine in connection with the synoptic Gospels is the list of New Testament and other writings held in consideration by the Church, which is generally called, after its discoverer and first editor, the Canon of Muratori. This interesting fragment, which was published in 1740 by Muratori in his collection of Italian antiquities,<sup>1</sup> at one time belonged to the monastery of Bobbio, founded by the Irish monk Columban, and was found by Muratori in the Ambrosian Library at Milan in a MS. containing extracts of little interest from writings of Eucherius, Ambrose, Chrysostom, and others. Muratori estimated the age of the MS. at about a thousand years, but so far as we are aware no thoroughly competent judge has since expressed any opinion upon the point. The fragment, which is defective both at the commencement and at the end, is written in an apologetic tone, and professes to give a list of the writings which are recognised by the Christian Church. It is a document which has no official character,<sup>2</sup> but which merely conveys the private views and information of the anonymous writer, regarding whom nothing whatever is known. From any point of view, the composition is of a nature permitting the widest differences of opinion. It is by some affirmed to be a complete treatise on the books received by the Church, from which fragments have been lost;<sup>3</sup> whilst

<sup>1</sup> *Antiquit. Ital. Med. Ævi*, iii. p. 851 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 303 f.; *Hist. du Canon*, p. 109; *Scholz*, *Einl. A. u. N. T.*, i. p. 272; *Tregelles*, *Canon Muratorianus*, 1867, p. 1 ff.; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 186.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 143; *Volkmar*, *Anhang*, p. 341 ff., p. 355.

others consider it a mere fragment in itself.<sup>1</sup> It is written in Latin which by some is represented as most corrupt,<sup>2</sup> whilst others uphold it as most correct.<sup>3</sup> The text is further rendered almost unintelligible by every possible inaccuracy of orthography and grammar, which is ascribed diversely to the transcriber, to the translator, and to both.<sup>4</sup> Indeed such is the elastic condition of the text, resulting from errors and obscurity of every imaginable description, that by means of ingenious conjectures critics are able to find in it almost any sense they desire.<sup>5</sup> Considerable difference of opinion exists as to the original language of the fragment, the greater number of critics maintaining that the composition is a translation from the Greek,<sup>6</sup> whilst others assert it to

<sup>1</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Kanon*, p. 39; *Mayerhoff*, *Einl. petr. Schr.*, p. 147; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 186, note 5; *Tregelles*, *Can. Murat.*, p. 29 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Bleek*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 640; *Credner*, *Zur Gesch. d. Kanons*, p. 72; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 205 ff.; *Guericke*, *Beiträge Einl. N. T.*, p. 13; *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 303; *Scholz*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 271 f.; *Tregelles*, *Can. Murat.*, p. 6 f., p. 27 f.; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 185.

<sup>3</sup> *Volkmar* considers it in reality the reverse of corrupt. After allowing for peculiarities of speech, and for the results of an Irish-English pronunciation by the monk who transcribed it, he finds the characteristic original Latin which is the old *lingua volgata* which in the Roman Provinces, such as Africa, &c., was the written as well as the spoken language. *Anhang zu Credner's Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 341 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Credner*, *Zur Gesch. d. Kanons*, p. 72; *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Kanon*, p. 39 f.; *Mayerhoff*, *Einl. petr. Schr.*, p. 147 f.; *Scholz*, *Einl. A. u. N. T.*, i. p. 271 f.; *Tregelles*, *Can. Murat.*, p. 2; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 185.

<sup>5</sup> *Reuss*, *Gesch. N. T.*, p. 303; *Hist. du Canon*, p. 101; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, iv. p. 34.

<sup>6</sup> *Bunsen*, *Analecta Ante-Nic.*, 1854, i. p. 137 f.; *Bötticher*, *Zeitschr. f. d. gesammte luth. Theol. u. Kirche*, 1854, p. 127 f.; *Ewald*, *Gesch. d. V. Isr.*, vii. p. 497; cf. p. 340, anm. 2; *Guericke*, *Gesamtgesch. N. T.*, p. 593, anm.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Kanon*, p. 39 f.; *Hug*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 106; *Murator*, *Antiq. Ital.*, iii. p. 851 ff.; *Nolte*, *Tüb. Quartalschr.*, 1860, p. 193 ff.; *Routh*, *Rel. Sacr.*, i. p. 402; *Scholz*, *Einl. A. u. N. T.*, i.

have been originally written in Latin.<sup>1</sup> Its composition is variously attributed to the Church of Africa<sup>2</sup> and to a member of the Church in Rome.<sup>3</sup>

The fragment commences with the concluding portion of a sentence. . . . “quibus tamen interfuit et ita posuit”—“at which nevertheless he was present, and thus he placed it.” The MS. then proceeds: “Third book of the Gospel according to Luke. Luke, that physician, after the ascension of Christ when Paul took him with him as studious of the right, wrote it in his name as he deemed best (ex opinione)—nevertheless he had not himself seen the Lord in the flesh, and followed him according as he was able. Thus also he began to speak from the nativity of John.” The text, at the sense of which this is a closely approximate guess, though

p. 271 f.; *Thiersch*, Versuch. u. s. w., p. 385; *Tregelles*, Can. Murat. p. 4; *Simon de Magistris*, Daniel sec. lxx. iv. p. 467; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 28; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 185; cf. *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 204, p. 210 f.

<sup>1</sup> *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 640; *Credner*, Zur. Gesch. d. Kanons, p. 93; *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 144; *Freindaller*, Apud *Routh*, Rel. Sacr., i. p. 401 f.; *Hesse*, Das Murat. Fragment, 1873, p. 25 ff.; *Laurent*, Neutest. Stud., 1866, p. 198 f.; *Mayerhuff*, Einl. petr. Schr., p. 147; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 305; *Stosch*, Comm. Hist. Crit. de Libr. N. T. Can., 1755, §§ lxi. f.; cf. *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 210 f. If the fragment, as there is good reason to believe, was originally written in Latin, it furnishes evidence that it was not written till the third century. Canon *Westcott*, who concludes from the order of the Gospels, &c., that it was not written in Africa, admits that: “There is no evidence of the existence of Christian Latin Literature out of Africa till about the close of the second century.”

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 141 ff., p. 168 ff.; *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr. iii. p. 211; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 303; *Hist. du Canon*, p. 109; cf. *Volkmar*, Anhang zu *Credner's* Gesch. N. T. Kan., p. 341 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Guericke*, Beiträge N. T., 1828, p. 7; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 39; *Meyer*, H'buch Hebräerbr., 1867, p. 7; *Reithmayr*, Einl. Can. B. N. B., p. 65; *Scholz*, Einl. A. u. N. T., i. p. 271; *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 9; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 27 f.; cf. *Anh. z. Credner's* Gesch. N. T. Kan., p. 341 f.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 186.

several other interpretations might be maintained, is as follows: *Tertio evangelii librum secundo* Lucan Lucas iste medicus post ascensum Christi cum eo Paulus quasi ut juris studiosum secundum adsumsisset numeni suo ex opinione concribset dominum tamen nec ipse vidit in carne et idem prout asequi potuit ita et ad nativitate Johannis incipet dicere.

The MS. goes on to speak in more intelligible language "of the fourth of the Gospels of John, one of the disciples." (*Quarti evangeliorum Johannis ex decipolis*) regarding the composition of which the writer relates a legend, which we shall quote when we come to deal with that Gospel. The fragment then goes on to mention the Acts of the Apostles,—which is ascribed to Luke—thirteen epistles of Paul in peculiar order, and it then refers to an Epistle to the Laodiceans and another to the Alexandrians, forged, in the name of Paul, after the heresy of Marcion, "and many others which cannot be received by the Catholic Church, as gall must not be mixed with vinegar." The Epistle to the Ephesians bore the name of Epistle to the Laodiceans in the list of Marcion, and this may be a reference to it.<sup>1</sup> The Epistle to the Alexandrians is generally identified with the Epistle to the Hebrews,<sup>2</sup> although some critics think this doubtful, or deny the fact, and consider both Epistles referred to pseudographs

<sup>1</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Kanon*, p. 42; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 129; *Westcott*, *On the Canon*, p. 190, note 1; cf. *Schneckenburger*, *Beitr. Einl. N. T.* 1832, p. 153 ff.; *Tertullian*, *Adv. Marc.*, v. 11, 17. It will be remembered that reference is made in the Epist. to the Colossians to an Epistle to the Laodiceans which is lost. Col. iv. 16.

<sup>2</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Kanon*, p. 42; *Köstlin*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1854, p. 416; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 129; *Wieseler*, *Th. Stud. u. Krit.*, 1847, p. 840, 1857, p. 97 f., and so also, *Eichhorn*, *Hug*, *Münster*, *Credner*, *Volkmar*, *Schleiermacher*, *Semler*, &c., &c.

attributed to the Apostle Paul.<sup>1</sup> The Epistle of Jude, and two (the second and third) Epistles of John are, with some tone of doubt, mentioned amongst the received books, and so is the Book of Wisdom. The Apocalypses of John and of Peter only are received, but some object to the latter being read in church.

The Epistle of James, both Epistles of Peter, the Epistle to the Hebrews (which is probably indicated as the Epistle to the Alexandrians), and the first Epistle of John are omitted altogether, with the exception of a quotation which is supposed to be from the last-named Epistle, to which we shall hereafter refer. Special reference is made to the Pastor of Hermas, which we shall presently discuss, regarding which the writer expresses his opinion that it should be read privately but not publicly in the church, as it can neither be classed amongst the prophets nor among the apostles. The fragment concludes with the rejection of the writings of several heretics.<sup>2</sup>

It is inferred that, in the missing commencement of the fragment, the first two Synoptics must have been mentioned. This, however, cannot be ascertained, and so far as these Gospels are concerned, therefore, the "Canon of Muratori" furnishes no evidence stronger than mere conjecture. The statement regarding the third Synoptic merely proves the existence of that Gospel at the time the fragment was composed, and we shall presently

<sup>1</sup> *Guericke*, Beiträge, N. T., p. 7 f.; *Thiersch*, Versuch, u. s. w., p. 385; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 190, note 1.

<sup>2</sup> The text of the fragment may be found in the following amongst many other books, of which we only mention some of the more accessible. *Gredner*, Zur Gesch. d. Kanons, p. 73 ff.; *Gesh. N. T. Kanon*, p. 153 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Kanon, p. 40 ff.; *Routh*, Reliq. Sacr., i. p. 394 ff.; *Kirchhofer*, Quellensamml., p. 1 ff.; *Tregelles*, Canon Murat., p. 17 ff.; *Bunsen*, Analecta Ante-Nic., i. p. 125 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 467 ff.

endeavour to form some idea of that date, but beyond this fact the information given anything but tends to establish the unusual credibility claimed for the Gospels. It is declared by the fragment, as we have seen, that the third Synoptic was written by Luke, who had not himself seen the Lord, but narrated the history as best he was able. It is worthy of remark, moreover, that even the Apostle Paul, who took Luke with him after the ascension, had not been a follower of Jesus either, nor had seen him in the flesh, and certainly he did not, by the showing of his own Epistles, associate much with the other Apostles, so that Luke could not have had much opportunity while with him of acquiring from them any intimate knowledge of the events of Gospel history. It is undeniable that the third Synoptic is not the narrative of an eye-witness, and the occurrences which it records did not take place in the presence, or within the personal knowledge, of the writer, but were derived from tradition, or other written sources. Such testimony, therefore, could not in any case be of much service to our third Synoptic ; but when we consider the uncertainty of the date at which the fragment was composed, and the certainty that it could not have been written at an early period, it will become apparent that the value of the evidence is reduced to a minimum.

We have already incidentally mentioned that the writer of this fragment is totally unknown, nor does there exist any clue by which he can be identified. All the critics who have assigned an early date to the composition of the fragment have based their conclusion, almost solely, upon one statement made by the Author regarding the Pastor of Hermas. He says : " Hermas in

truth composed the Pastor very recently in our times in the city of Rome, the Bishop Pius his brother, sitting in the chair of the church of the city of Rome. And certainly it should be read, but not published in church to the people, neither can it be classed among the prophets, whose number is complete, nor amongst the apostles to the end of time."

"Pastorem vero nuperrime temporibus nostris in urbe Roma Herma conscripsit sedente cathedra urbis Romæ ecclesiæ Pio episcopus fratre ejus et ideo legi eum quidem oportet se publicare vero in ecclesia populo neque inter prophetas completum numero neque inter apostolos in fine temporum potest."<sup>1</sup>

Muratorì, the discoverer of the MS., conjectured for various reasons, which need not be here detailed, that the fragment was written by Caius the Roman Presbyter, who flourished at the end of the second (c. A.D. 196) and beginning of the third century, and in this he was followed by a few others.<sup>2</sup> The great mass of critics, however, have rejected this conjecture, as they have likewise negatived the fanciful ascription of the composition by Simon de Magistris to Papias of Hierapolis,<sup>3</sup> and by Bunsen to Hegesippus.<sup>4</sup> Such attempts to identify the unknown author are obviously mere speculation, and it is impossible to suppose that, had Papias, Hegesippus, or any other well-known writer of the same period composed such a list, Eusebius could have failed to refer to

<sup>1</sup> With the exception of a few trifling alterations we give these quotations as they stand in the MS.

<sup>2</sup> *Antiq. Ital.*, iii. p. 854 ff.; *Gallandi*, *Bibl. Vet. Patr.*, 1788, ii. p. xxxiii.; *Freindaller*, apud *Routh*, *Rel. Sacr.*, i. p. 401; cf. *Hefele*, *Patr. Ap. Proleg.* p. lxiii.

<sup>3</sup> *Daniel secundum LXX.* 1772; *Dissert.*, iv. p. 467 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Analecta Ante-Nic.*, 1854, i. p. 125; *Hippolytus and his Age*, i. p. 314.

it, as so immediately relevant to the purpose of his work. Thiersch even expressed a suspicion that the fragment was a literary mystification on the part of Muratori himself.<sup>1</sup>

The mass of critics, with very little independent consideration, have taken literally the statement of the author regarding the composition of the Pastor "very recently in our times" (*nuperrime temporibus nostris*), during the Episcopate of Pius (A.D. 142—157), and have concluded the fragment to have been written towards the end of the second century.<sup>2</sup> We need scarcely say that a few writers would date it even earlier.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, and we consider with reason, many critics, including men who will not be accused of opposition to an early Canon, assign the composition to a later period,

<sup>1</sup> Versuch, u. s. w., p. 387.

<sup>2</sup> *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 640; Einl. z. Hebräerbr., p. 121, anm.; *Credner*, Zur Gesch. d. Kan., p. 84, p. 92 f., Gesch. N. T. Kanon, p. 167; *Corradi*, Versuch ein. Beleucht. d. Gesch. jüd. u. chr. Bibel-Kanons, 1792, ii. p. 219 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 7; *Feilmoser*, Einl. N. T., p. 203, anm.; *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch. N. T., p. 587 f.; Beiträge N. T., p. 7; *Hilgenfeld*, Der Canon, p. 39; *Lumpfer*, Hist. de Vita, Script., &c., SS. Patr., vii. 1790; p. 26 ff.; *Lücke*, Einl. Offenb. Joh., 1852, ii. p. 595; *Mosheim*, De Rebus Christ., p. 164 ff.; *Meyer*, Krit., ex. H'buch. üb. d. Hebräerbr., 1867, p. 7; *Olshausen*, Echth. d. vier kan. Evv., p. 281 ff.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 303, p. 305; Hist. du Canon, p. 108; *Reithmayr*, Einl. N. B., p. 65, anm. 1; *Routh*, Reliq. Sacr., i. p. 397 ff.; *Chr. F. Schmid*, Unters. Offenb. Joh., u. s. w., 1771, p. 101 ff.; Hist. Antiq. et Vindic. Canonis, 1775, p. 308 f.; *Schröckh*, Chr. K. G., iii. 1777, p. 426 ff.; *Stosch*, Comment. Hist. Crit. de libris N. T. Can., 1755, §§ lxi. ff.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 127; *Scholz*, Einl. A. u. N. T., i. p. 272; *Thiersch* (if not spurious), Versuch, u. s. w., p. 384 f., cf. 315; *Volkmar*, (A.D. 190—200) Anh. zu *Credner's* Gesch. N. T. Kan., p. 359; *Wieseler*, Th. Stud. u. Krit., 1847, p. 815 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Hesse* (before *Ironæus*, *Clement Al.*, and *Tertullian*), Das Muratori'sche Fragment, 1873, p. 48; *Ewald* (in late middle of 2nd century), Gesch. d. V. Isr., vii. p. 497; *Tischendorf* (A.D. 160—170), Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 9; *Tregelles* (c. A.D. 170), Canon Murat., p. 1 f., p. 4, note c.; *Westcott* (not much later than A.D. 170), On the Canon, p. 185; *Laurent* (c. A.D. 0), Neutest, Studien, p. 198.

between the end of the second or beginning of the third century and the fourth century.<sup>1</sup>

When we examine the ground upon which alone an early date can be supported, it becomes apparent how impossible it is to defend it. The only argument of any weight is the statement with regard to the composition of the Pastor, but with the exception of the few apologists who do not hesitate to assign a date totally inconsistent with the state of the Canon described in the fragment, the great majority of critics feel that they are forced to place the composition at least towards the end of the second century, at a period when the statement in the composition may agree with the actual opinions in the Church, and yet in a sufficient degree accord with the expression "very recently in our times," as applied to the period of Pius of Rome, 142—157. It must be evident that, taken literally, a very arbitrary interpretation is given to this indication, and in supposing that the writer may have appropriately used the phrase thirty or forty years after the time of Pius, so much licence is taken that there is absolutely no reason why a still greater interval may not be allowed. With this sole exception, there is not a single word or statement in the fragment which would oppose our assigning the composition to a late period of the third century. Volkmar has very justly pointed out, however, that in saying "very recently in our times" the writer merely

<sup>1</sup> *Donaldson* (end of first half of 3rd century), *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 212; *Hug* (beginning 3rd century), *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 105 f.; end of 2nd, or beginning of 3rd century: *Mayerhoff*, *Einl. petr. Schr.*, p. 147; *Keil ad Fabric. Bibl. Græcæ*, vii. 1801, p. 285; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, iv. p. 34; *Taylor*, *The Fourth Gospel*, 1867, p. 38; *Zimmermann*, *Diss. Crit. Script.*, &c. &c., a Murat. rep. exhib., 1805, and to these may be added all those who assign the fragment to Caius.

intended to distinguish the Pastor of Hermas from the writings of the Prophets and Apostles: It cannot be classed amongst the Prophets whose number is complete, nor amongst the Apostles, inasmuch as it was only written in our post-apostolic time. This is an accurate interpretation of the expression,<sup>1</sup> which might with perfect propriety be used a century after the time of Pius. We have seen that there has not appeared a single trace of any Canon in the writings of any of the Fathers whom we have examined, and that the Old Testament has been the only Holy Scripture they have acknowledged; and it is inadmissible to date this anonymous fragment, regarding which we know nothing, earlier than the very end of the second or beginning of the third century, upon the interpretation of a phrase which would be equally applicable even a century later. There is, however, as we have said, nothing whatever requiring so early a date as that, and it is probable that the fragment was not written until an advanced period of the third century.<sup>2</sup> The expression used with regard to Pius: "Sitting in the chair of the church," is quite unprecedented in the second century or until a very much later date.<sup>3</sup> It is argued that the fragment is imperfect, and that sentences have fallen out; and in regard to this, and to the assertion that it is a transla-

<sup>1</sup> *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 28; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 212; *Lomann*, *Bijdragen ter Inleid. op de Joh. Schr.*, p. 29; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 127.

<sup>2</sup> If the fragment, as there is good reason to believe, was originally written in Latin, this fact, we repeat, would point to the conclusion that it was composed in the third century. Dr. Westcott, who with so many others considers that it emanates from the Roman Church, himself says as an argument for a Greek original: "There is no evidence of the existence of Christian Latin Literature out of Africa till about the close of the second century." On the Canon, p. 188, note 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 212.

tion from the Greek, it has been well remarked by a writer whose judgment on the point will scarcely be called prejudiced : " If it is thus mutilated, why might it not also be interpolated ? If moreover the translator was so ignorant of Latin, can we trust his translation ? and what guarantee have we that he has not paraphrased and expanded the original ? The force of these remarks is peculiarly felt in dealing with the paragraph which gives the date. The Pastor of Hermas was not well known to the Western Church, and it was not highly esteemed. It was regarded as inspired by the Eastern, and read in the Eastern Churches. We have seen, moreover, that it was extremely unlikely that Hermas was a real personage. It would be, therefore, far more probable that we have here an interpolation, or addition by a member of the Roman or African Church, probably by the translator, made expressly for the purpose of serving as proof that the Pastor of Hermas was not inspired. The paragraph itself bears unquestionable mark of tampering,"<sup>1</sup> &c.

It would take us too far were we to discuss the various statements of the fragment as indications of date, and the matter is not of sufficient importance. It contains nothing involving an earlier date than the third century. The facts of the case may be briefly summed up as follows, so far as our object is concerned. The third Synoptic is mentioned by a totally unknown writer, at an unknown, but certainly not early, date, in all probability during the third century, in a fragment which we possess in a very corrupt version very far from free from suspicion of interpolation in the precise part from which the early date is inferred. The Gospel is attributed to

<sup>1</sup> *Donaldson, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 209.*

Luke, who was not one of the followers of Jesus, and of whom it is expressly said that "he himself had not seen the Lord in the flesh," but wrote "as he deemed best (ex opinione)," and followed his history as he was able (et idem prout assequi potuit).<sup>1</sup> If the evidence, therefore, even came within our limits as to date, which it does not, it could be of no value for establishing the trustworthiness and absolute accuracy of the narrative of the third Synoptic, but on the contrary it would distinctly tend to destroy its evidence, as the composition of one who undeniably was not an eye-witness of the miracles reported, but collected the materials, long after, as best he could.<sup>2</sup>

## 4.

We may now briefly sum up the results of our examination of the evidence for the synoptic Gospels. After having exhausted the literature and the testimony bearing on the point, we have not found a single distinct trace of any one of those Gospels during the first century and a half after the death of Jesus. Only once during the whole of that period do we find any tradition even, that any one of our Evangelists composed a Gospel at all, and that tradition, so far from favouring our Synoptics, is fatal to the claims of the first and second. Papias,

<sup>1</sup> The passage is freely rendered thus by Canon Westcott: "The Gospel of St. Luke, it is then said, stands third in order [in the Canon], having been written by 'Luke the physician,' the companion of St. Paul, who, not being himself an eye-witness, based his narrative on such information as he could obtain, beginning from the birth of John." On the Canon, p. 187.

<sup>2</sup> We do not propose to consider the Ophites and Peratici, obscure Gnostic sects towards the end of the second century. There is no direct evidence regarding them, and the testimony of writers in the third century, like Hippolytus, is of no value for the Gospels.

about the middle of the second century, on the occasion to which we refer, records that Matthew composed the Discourses of the Lord in the Hebrew tongue, a statement which totally excludes the claim of our Greek Gospel to apostolic origin. Mark, he said, wrote down from the casual preaching of Peter the sayings and doings of Jesus, but without orderly arrangement, as he was not himself a follower of the Master, and merely recorded what fell from the Apostle. This description, likewise, shows that our actual second Gospel could not, in its present form, have been the work of Mark. There is no other reference during the period to any writing of Matthew or Mark, and no mention at all of any work ascribed to Luke. If it be considered that there is any connection between Marcion's Gospel and our third Synoptic, any evidence so derived is of an unfavourable character for that Gospel, as it involves a charge against it, of being interpolated and debased by Jewish elements. Any argument for the mere existence of our Synoptics based upon their supposed rejection by heretical leaders and sects has the inevitable disadvantage, that the very testimony which would show their existence would oppose their authenticity. There is no evidence of their use by heretical leaders, however, and no direct reference to them by any writer, heretical or orthodox, whom we have examined. We need scarcely add that no reason whatever has been shown for accepting the testimony of these Gospels as sufficient to establish the reality of miracles and of a direct Divine Revelation.<sup>1</sup> It is not pretended that more than one of the synoptic Gospels

<sup>1</sup> A comparison of the contents of the three Synoptics would have confirmed this conclusion, but this is not at present necessary, and we must hasten on.

was written by an eye-witness of the miraculous occurrences reported, and whilst no evidence has been, or can be, produced even of the historical accuracy of the narratives, no testimony as to the correctness of the inferences from the external phenomena exists, or is now even conceivable. The discrepancy between the amount of evidence required and that which is forthcoming, however, is greater than under the circumstances could have been thought possible.

## PART III.

### THE FOURTH GOSPEL.

#### CHAPTER I.

##### THE EXTERNAL EVIDENCE.

WE shall now examine, in the same order, the witnesses already cited in connection with the Synoptics, and ascertain what evidence they furnish for the date and authenticity of the fourth Gospel.

Apologists do not even allege that there is any reference to the fourth Gospel in the so-called Epistle of Clement of Rome to the Corinthians.<sup>1</sup>

A few critics<sup>2</sup> pretend to find a trace of it in the Epistle of Barnabas, in the reference to the brazen Serpent as a type of Jesus. Tischendorf states the case as follows:—

<sup>1</sup> Canon Westcott, however, cannot resist the temptation to press Clement into service. He says: "In other passages it is possible to trace the influence of St. John, 'The blood of Christ hath gained for the whole world the offer of the grace of repentance.' 'Through Him we look steadfastly on the heights of heaven; through Him we view as in a glass (ἐνοπτριζόμεθα) His spotless and most excellent visage; through Him the eyes of our heart were opened; through Him our dull and darkened understanding is quickened with new vigour on turning to his marvellous light.'" He does not indicate more clearly the nature and marks of the "influence" to which he refers. As he also asserts that the Epistle "affirms the teaching of St. Paul and St. James," and that the Epistle to the Hebrews is "wholly transfused into Clement's mind," such an argument does not require a single remark. On the Canon, p. 23 f.

<sup>2</sup> Lardner, Canon Westcott, and others do not refer to it at all.

“And when in the same chapter xii. it is shown how Moses made the brazen serpent a type of Jesus ‘who should suffer (die) and yet himself make living,’ the natural inference is that Barnabas refers to John iii. 14, f. even if the use of this passage in particular cannot be proved. Although this connection cannot be affirmed, since the author of the Epistle, in this passage as in many others, may be independent, yet it is justifiable to ascribe the greatest probability to its dependence on the passage in John, as the tendency of the Epistle in no way required a particular leaning to the expression of John. The disproportionately more abundant use of express quotations from the Old Testament in Barnabas is, on the contrary, connected most intimately with the tendency of his whole composition.”<sup>1</sup>

It will be observed that the suggestion of reference to the fourth Gospel is here advanced in a very hesitating way, and does not indeed go beyond an assertion of probability. We might, therefore, well leave the matter without further notice, as the reference in no case could be of any weight as evidence. On examination of the context, however, we find that there is every reason to conclude that the reference to the brazen serpent is made direct to the Old Testament. The author who delights in typology is bent upon showing that the cross is pre-figured in the Old Testament. He gives a number of instances, involving the necessity for a display of ridiculous ingenuity of explanation, which should prepare us to find the comparatively simple type of the brazen serpent naturally selected. After pointing out that Moses, with his arms stretched out in prayer that the Israelites might prevail in the fight, was a type of the

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., 96 f.

cross, he goes on to say: "Again Moses made a type of Jesus that he must suffer and himself make alive (καὶ αὐτὸς ζωοποιήσει) whom they thought to have destroyed on the cross when Israel was falling;"<sup>1</sup> and connecting the circumstance that the people were bit by serpents and died with the transgression of Eve by means of the serpent, he goes on to narrate minutely the story of Moses and the brazen serpent, and then winds up with the words: "Thou hast in this the glory of Jesus; that in him are all things and for him."<sup>2</sup> It is impossible for any one to read the whole passage without seeing that the reference is direct to the Old Testament.<sup>3</sup> There is no ground for supposing that the author was acquainted with the fourth Gospel.

To the *Pastor of Hermas* Tischendorf devotes only two lines, in which he states that "it has neither quotations from the Old nor from the New Testament."<sup>4</sup> Canon Westcott makes the same statement,<sup>5</sup> but, unlike the German apologist, he proceeds subsequently to affirm that Hermas makes "clear allusions to St. John;" which few

<sup>1</sup> Πάλιν Μωϋσῆς ποιεῖ τύπον τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, ὅτι δεῖ αὐτὸν παθεῖν, καὶ αὐτὸς ζωοποιήσει, ὃν δόξουσιν ἀπολωλέκεναι ἐν σημεῖω, πίπτοντος τοῦ Ἰσραὴλ. Ch. xii.

<sup>2</sup> Ἐχεις πάλιν καὶ ἐν τούτοις τὴν δόξαν τοῦ Ἰησοῦ, ὅτι ἐν αὐτῷ πάντα καὶ εἰς αὐτόν. Ch. xii.; cf. Heb. ii. 10; Rom. xi. 36.

<sup>3</sup> Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 14; Volkmar, Der Ursprung, p. 66 ff.; Müller, Das Barnabasbr., p. 281; Hilgenfeld, Die ap. Väter, p. 50, ann. 8; Theol. Jahrb., 1850, p. 396; Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1868, p. 215; Scholten rightly points out that the distinguishing ὑψοῦσθαι of the fourth Gospel is totally lacking in the Epistle. Die ält. Zeugn., p. 14. The brazen serpent is also referred to in the Wisdom of Solomon, xvi. 5, 6, and by Philo, Leg. Alleg., ii. § 20; De Agricultura, § 22; cf. Volkmar, Der Ursprung, p. 67 f.; Tobler, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1860, p. 190 f. Justin Martyr also refers to the type of the brazen serpent without any connection with the fourth Gospel, Dial., 91, 94.

<sup>4</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 20, ann. 1; Lücke makes no claim to its testimony, the analogies being "too slight and distant." Comment. Ev. Joh., 1840, i. p. 44, ann. 2.

<sup>5</sup> On the Canon, p. 175.

or no apologists support. This assertion he elaborates and illustrates as follows :—

“The view which Hermas gives of Christ’s nature and work is no less harmonious with apostolic doctrine, and it offers striking analogies to the Gospel of St. John. Not only did the Son ‘appoint angels to preserve each of those whom the Father gave to him;’ but ‘He himself toiled very much and suffered very much to cleanse our sins. . . . And so when he himself had cleansed the sins of the people, he showed them the paths of life by giving them the Law which he received from his Father.’<sup>1</sup> He is ‘a Rock higher than the mountains, able to hold the whole world, ancient, and yet having a new gate.’<sup>2</sup> ‘His name is great and infinite, and the whole world is supported by him.’<sup>3</sup> ‘He is older than Creation, so that he took counsel with the Father about the creation which he made.’<sup>4</sup> ‘He is the sole way of access to the Lord; and no one shall enter in unto him otherwise than by his Son.’”<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Καὶ αὐτὸς τὰς ἁμαρτίας αὐτῶν ἐκαθάρισε πολλὰ κοπιάσας καὶ πολλοὺς κόπους ἠντληκῶς. . . . αὐτὸς οὖν καθάρισας τὰς ἁμαρτίας τοῦ λαοῦ ἔδειξεν αὐτοῖς τὰς τριβόλους τῆς ζωῆς, δοὺς αὐτοῖς τὸν νόμον ὃν ἔλαβε παρὰ τοῦ πατρὸς αὐτοῦ. Sim., v. 6.

<sup>2</sup> εἰς μέσον δὲ τοῦ πεδίου ἔδειξέ μοι πέτραν μεγάλην λευκὴν ἐκ τοῦ πεδίου ἀναβεβηκυῖαν. ἡ δὲ πέτρα ἰψηλοτέρα ἦν τῶν ὄρεων, τετράγωνος ὥστε δύνασθαι ὄλον τὸν κόσμον χωρῆσαι· παλαιὰ δὲ ἦν ἡ πέτρα ἐκείνη, πύλην ἐκκεκομμένην ἔχουσα· ὡς πρόσφατος δὲ ἐδόκει μοι εἶναι ἡ ἐκκόλαψις τῆς πύλης. ἡ δὲ πύλη οὕτως ἔστιδβεν ὑπὲρ τὸν ἥλιον, ὥστε με θαυμάζειν ἐπὶ τῇ λαμπηδόνι τῆς πύλης· Simil., ix. 2.

ἡ πέτρα, φησίν, αὕτη καὶ ἡ πύλη ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ ἐστί. Πῶς, φημί, κύριε, ἡ πέτρα παλαιὰ ἐστίν, ἡ δὲ πύλη καινὴ; “Ἀκουε, φησί, καὶ σύνιε, ἀσύνητε. Ὁ μὲν υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ πάσης τῆς κτίσεως αὐτοῦ προγενέστερός ἐστιν, ὥστε σύμβουλον αὐτῶν γενέσθαι τῷ πατρὶ τῆς κτίσεως αὐτοῦ· διὰ τοῦτο καὶ παλαιὸς ἐστίν. ἡ δὲ πύλη διὰ τί καινὴ, φημί, κύριε; “Ὅτι, φησίν, ἐπ’ ἐσχάτων τῶν ἡμερῶν τῆς συντελείας φανερὸς ἐγένετο, διὰ τοῦτο καινὴ ἐγένετο ἡ πύλη, ἵνα οἱ μέλλοντες σώξῃσθαι δι’ αὐτῆς εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν εἰσεέλθωσι τοῦ θεοῦ. Simil., ix. 12.

<sup>3</sup> τὸ ὄνομα τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ θεοῦ μέγα ἐστί καὶ ἀχώρητον καὶ τὸν κόσμον ὄλον βαστάζει. Simil., ix. 14.

<sup>4</sup> Simil., ix. 12, quoted above.

<sup>5</sup> ἡ δὲ πύλη ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ ἐστίν. αὕτη μία εἰσοδὸς ἐστί πρὸς τὸν κύριον. ἄλλως οὖν οὐδεὶς εἰσελεύσεται πρὸς αὐτὸν εἰ μὴ διὰ τοῦ υἱοῦ αὐτοῦ. Sim., ix. 12.

This is all Canon Westcott says on the subject.<sup>1</sup> He does not attempt to point out any precise portions of the fourth Gospel with which to compare these "striking analogies," nor does he produce any instances of similarity of language, or of the use of the same terminology as the Gospel in this apocalyptic allegory. It is evident that such evidence could in no case be of any value for the fourth Gospel.

When we examine more closely, however, it becomes certain that these passages possess no real analogy with the fourth Gospel, and were certainly not derived from it. There is no part of them that has not close parallels in writings antecedent to our Gospel, and there is no use of terminology peculiar to it. He does not even once use the term *Logos*. Canon Westcott makes no mention of the fact that the doctrine of the *Logos* and of the pre-existence of Jesus was enunciated long before the composition of the fourth Gospel, with almost equal clearness and fulness, and that its development can be traced through the Septuagint translation, the "Proverbs of Solomon," some of the Apocryphal works of the Old Testament, the writings of Philo, and in the Apocalypse, Epistle to the Hebrews, as well as the Epistles of Paul. To any one who examines the passages cited from the works of Hermas, and still more to any one acquainted with the history of the *Logos* doctrine, it will, we fear, seem wasted time to enter upon any minute refutation of such imaginary "analogies." We shall, however, as briefly as possible refer to each passage quoted.

The first is taken from an elaborate similitude with regard to true fasting, in which the world is likened to a

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 177 f. We give the Greek quotations as they stand in Canon Westcott's notes: and also the translations in his text, without, however, adopting them.

vineyard, and in explaining his parable the Shepherd says: "God planted the vineyard, that is, he created the people and gave them to his Son: and the Son appointed his angels over them to keep them: and he himself cleansed their sins, having suffered many things and endured many labours. . . . He himself, therefore, having cleansed the sins of the people, showed them the paths of life by giving them the Law which he received from his Father."<sup>1</sup>

It is difficult indeed to find anything in this passage which is in the slightest degree peculiar to the fourth Gospel, or apart from the whole course of what is taught in the Epistles, and more especially the Epistle to the Hebrews. We may point out a few passages for comparison: Heb. i. 2—4; ii. 10—11; v. 8—9; vii. 12, 17—19; viii. 6—10; x. 10—16; Romans viii. 24—17; Matt. xxi. 33; Mark xii. 1; Isaiah v. 7, liii.

The second passage is taken from an elaborate parable on the building of the Church: (a) "And in the middle of the plain he showed me a great white rock which had risen out of the plain, and the rock was higher than the mountains, rectangular so as to be able to hold the whole world, but that rock was old having a gate (πύλη) hewn out of it, and the hewing out of the gate (πύλη) seemed to me to be recent."<sup>2</sup> Upon this rock the tower of the Church is built. Further on an explanation is given of the similitude, in which occurs another of the passages referred to. (β) "This rock (πέτρα) and this gate (πύλη) are the Son of God. 'How, Lord,' I said, 'is the rock old and the gate new?' 'Listen,' he said, 'and understand, thou ignorant man. (γ) The Son of God is older than all of his creation (ὁ μὲν υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ πάσης

<sup>1</sup> Simil., v. 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, ix. 2.

τῆς κτίσεως αὐτοῦ προγενέστερός ἐστιν), so that he was a councillor with the Father in his work of creation ; and for this is he old.' (δ) 'And why is the gate new, Lord?' I said ; 'Because,' he replied, 'he was manifested at the last of the days (ἐπ' ἐσχάτων τῶν ἡμερῶν) of the dispensation ; for this cause the gate was made new, in order that they who shall be saved might enter by it into the kingdom of God.'"<sup>1</sup>

And a few lines lower down the Shepherd further explains, referring to entrance through the gate, and introducing another of the passages cited : (ε) " 'In this way,' he said, 'no one shall enter into the kingdom of God unless he receive his holy name. If, therefore, you cannot enter into the City unless through its gate, so also,' he said, 'a man cannot enter in any other way into the kingdom of God than by the name of his Son beloved by him' . . . 'and the gate (πύλη) is the Son of God. This is the one entrance to the Lord.' In no other way, therefore, shall any one enter in to him, except through his Son."<sup>2</sup>

Now with regard to the similitude of a rock we need scarcely say that the Old Testament teems with it ; and we need not point to the parable of the house built upon a rock in the first Gospel.<sup>3</sup> A more apt illustration is the famous saying with regard to Peter : "And upon this rock (πέτρα) I will build my Church," upon which indeed the whole similitude of Hermas turns ; and in 1 Cor. x. 4, we read : "For they drank of the Spiritual Rock accompanying them ; but the Rock was Christ" (ἡ πέτρα δὲ ἦν ὁ Χριστός). There is no such similitude in the fourth Gospel at all.

<sup>1</sup> Simil., ix. 12. *Philo* represents the Logos as a Rock (πέτρα). Quod det. potiori insid., § 31, *Mangy*, i. 213.

<sup>2</sup> Simil., ix. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. vii. 24.

We then have the "gate," on which we presume Canon Westcott chiefly relies. The parable in John x. 1—9 is quite different from that of Hermas,<sup>1</sup> and there is a persistent use of different terminology. The door into the sheepfold is always *θύρα*, the gate in the rock always *πύλη*. "I am the door,"<sup>2</sup> (*ἐγὼ εἰμι ἡ θύρα*) is twice repeated in the fourth Gospel. "The gate is the Son of God" (*ἡ πύλη ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ θεοῦ ἐστίν*) is the declaration of Hermas. On the other hand, there are numerous passages, elsewhere, analogous to that in the Pastor of Hermas. Every one will remember the injunction in the Sermon on the Mount: Matth. vii. 13, 14. "Enter in through the strait gate (*πύλη*), for wide is the gate (*πύλη*), &c., 14. Because narrow is the gate (*πύλη*) and straitened is the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it."<sup>3</sup> The limitation to the one way of entrance into the kingdom of God: "by the name of his Son," is also found everywhere throughout the Epistles, and likewise in the Acts of the Apostles; as for instance: Acts iv. 12, "And there is no salvation in any other: for neither is there any other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved."

The reasons given why the rock is old and the gate new (*γ, δ*) have anything but special analogy with the fourth Gospel. We are, on the contrary, taken directly to the Epistle to the Hebrews in which the pre-existence of Jesus is prominently asserted, and between which and the Pastor, as in a former passage, we find singular linguistic analogies. For instance, take the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Heb. ix. 24, 11—12, &c.

<sup>2</sup> John x. 7, 9.

<sup>3</sup> Compare the account of the new Jerusalem, Rev. xxi. 12 ff.; cf. xxii. 4, 14. In Simil. ix. 13, it is insisted that, to enter into the kingdom, not only "his name" must be borne, but that we must put on certain clothing.

whole opening portion of Heb. i. 1 : " God who at many times and in many manners spake in times past to the fathers by the prophets, 2. At the end of these days (*ἐπ' ἐσχάτου τῶν ἡμερῶν τούτων*) hath spoken to us by the Son whom he appointed heir (*κληρονόμος*)<sup>1</sup> of all things, by whom he also made the worlds, 3. Who being the brightness of his glory and the express image of his substance, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had made a cleansing of our sins sat down at the right hand of Majesty on high, 4. Having become so much better than the angels,"<sup>2</sup> &c., &c. ; and if we take the different clauses we may also find them elsewhere constantly repeated, as for instance : (*γ*) The son older than all his creation : compare 2 Tim. i. 9, Colossians i. 15 (" who is . . . the first born of all creation"—*ὁς ἐστὶν . . . πρωτότοκος πάσης κτίσεως*), 16, 17, 18, Rev. iii. 14, x. 6. The works of Philo are full of this representation of the Logos. For example : " For the Word of God is over all the universe, and the oldest and most universal of all things created " (*καὶ ὁ Λόγος δὲ τοῦ θεοῦ ὑπεράνω παντός ἐστι τοῦ κόσμου, καὶ πρεσβύτατος καὶ γενικώτατος τῶν ὅσα γέγονε*).<sup>3</sup> Again, as to

<sup>1</sup> We may remark that in the parable Hermas speaks of the son as the heir (*κληρονόμος*), and of the slave—who is the true son—also as co-heir (*συγκληρονόμος*), and a few lines below the passage above quoted, of the heirship (*κληρονομίας*). This is another indication of the use of this Epistle, the peculiar expression in regard to the son " whom he appointed heir (*κληρονόμος*) of all things " occurring here. Cf. *Simil.*, v. 2, 6.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. i. 1. Πολυμερῶς καὶ πολυτρόπως πάλαι ὁ θεὸς λαλήσας τοῖς πατρίσιν ἐν τοῖς προφήταις ἐπ' ἐσχάτου τῶν ἡμερῶν τούτων ἐλάλησεν ἡμῖν ἐν ὄψι, (2) ὅν ἔθηκεν κληρονόμον πάντων, δι' οὗ καὶ ἐποίησεν τοὺς αἰῶνας, (3) ὅς ὢν ἀπαύγασμα τῆς δόξης καὶ χαρακτῆρ τῆς ὑποστάσεως αὐτοῦ φέρων τε τὰ πάντα τῷ ῥήματι τῆς δυναμείας αὐτοῦ, δι' ἑαυτοῦ καθαρισμόν ποιησάμενος τῶν ἀμαρτιῶν ἐκάθισεν ἐν δεξιᾷ τῆς μεγαλωσύνης ἐν ὑψηλοῖς, (4) τοσοῦτῳ κρείττων γενόμενος τῶν ἀγγέλων, κ.τ.λ.

<sup>3</sup> *Log. Alleg.*, iii. § 61, *Mangey*, i. p. 121 ; cf. *De Confus. Ling.*, § 28, *Mang.*, i. p. 427, § 14, *ib.* i. p. 414 ; *De Profugis*, § 19, *Mang.*, i. 561 ; *De Caritate*, § 2, *Mang.*, ii. 385, &c., &c. The Logos is constantly called

the second clause, that he assisted the Father in the work of creation, compare Heb. ii. 10, i. 2, xi. 3, Rom. xi. 36, 1 Cor. viii. 6, Coloss. i. 15, 16.<sup>1</sup>

The only remaining passage is the following: "The name of the Son of God is great and infinite and supports the whole world." For the first phrase, compare 2 Tim. iv. 18, Heb. i. 8; and for the second part of the sentence, Heb. i. 3, Coloss. i. 17, and many other passages quoted above.<sup>2</sup>

The whole assertion<sup>3</sup> is simply absurd, and might well have been left unnoticed. The attention called to it, however, may not be wasted in observing the kind of evidence with which apologists are compelled to be content.

Tischendorf points out two passages in the Epistles of pseudo-Ignatius which, he considers, show the use of the fourth Gospel.<sup>4</sup> They are as follows—Epistle to the Romans vii.: "I desire the bread of God, the bread of heaven, the bread of life, which is the flesh of Jesus Christ the son of God, who was born of the seed of David and Abraham; and I desire the drink of God (πρόμα θεοῦ), that is his blood, which is love incorruptible, and eternal life" (ἀένναος ζωῆ).<sup>5</sup> This is compared

by *Philo* "the first-begotten of God" (πρωτόγονος Θεοῦ Λόγος); "the most ancient son of God" (πρεσβύτατος υἱὸς Θεοῦ).

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Philo*, Leg. Alleg., iii. § 31, *Mangey*, i. 106; De Cherubim, § 35, *Mang.*, i. 162, &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Philo*, De Profugis, § 20, *Mangey*, i. 562; *Frag. Mangey*, ii. 655; De Somniis, i. § 41, *Mang.*, i. 656.

<sup>3</sup> Canon Westcott also says: "In several places also St. John's teaching on 'the Truth' lies at the ground of Hermas' words," and in a note he refers to "Mand. iii.=1 John ii. 27; iv. 6," without specifying any passage of the book. (On the Canon, p. 176, and note 4.) Such unqualified assertions unsupported by any evidence cannot be too strongly condemned. This statement is quite unfounded.

<sup>4</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 22 f. *Lücke* does not attach much weight to any of the supposed allusions in these Epistles. Comm. Ev. Joh., i. p. 43.

<sup>5</sup> Ἄρτον Θεοῦ θέλω, ἄρτον οὐράνιον, ἄρτον ζωῆς, ὅς ἐστιν σὰρξ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ

with John vi. 41: "I am the bread which came down from heaven" 48. . . . "I am the bread of life," 51 . . . "And the bread that I will give is my flesh;" 54. "He who eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood hath everlasting life" (*ζωὴν αἰώνιον*). Scholten has pointed out that the reference to Jesus as "born of the seed of David and Abraham" is not in the spirit of the fourth Gospel; and the use of *πόμα θεοῦ* for the *πόσις* of vi. 55, and *ἀένναος ζωὴ* instead of *ζωὴ αἰώνιος* are also opposed to the connection with that Gospel.<sup>1</sup> On the other hand, in the institution of the Supper the bread is described as the body of Jesus, and the wine as his blood; and reference is made there, and elsewhere, to eating bread and drinking wine in the kingdom of God,<sup>2</sup> and the passage seems to be nothing but a development of this teaching.<sup>3</sup> Nothing could be proved by such an analogy.<sup>4</sup>

The second passage referred to by Tischendorf is in the Epistle to the Philadelphians vii.: "For if some would have seduced me according to the flesh, yet the Spirit is not seduced, being from God, for it knoweth whence it cometh and whither it goeth, and detects the secrets."<sup>5</sup> Tischendorf considers that these words are based upon John iii. 6—8, and the last phrase: "And

τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ, τοῦ γενομένου ἐν υστέρῳ ἐκ σπέρματος λαβὶδ καὶ Ἀβραάμ· καὶ πόμα Θεοῦ θέλω, τὸ αἶμα αὐτοῦ, ὃ ἐστὶν ἀγάπη ἄφθαρτος, καὶ ἀένναος ζωὴ. Ad Rom., vii.

<sup>1</sup> Dio ält. Zeugnisse, p. 54.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xxvi. 26—29; Mark xiv. 22—25; Luke xxii. 17—20; 1 Cor. xi. 23—25; cf. Luke xiv. 15.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Scholten, Dio ält. Zeugnisse, p. 54.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. De Wette, Einl. N. T., p. 225 f.; Scholten, Dio ält. Zeugnisse, p. 54.

<sup>5</sup> Εἰ γὰρ καὶ κατὰ σάρκα μέ τινες ἠθέλησαν πλανῆσαι, ἀλλὰ τὸ πνεῦμα οὐ πλανᾶται, ἀπὸ Θεοῦ ὄν· οἶδεν γὰρ πόθεν ἔρχεται, καὶ ποῦ ἵπάγει, καὶ τὰ κρυπτὰ ἐλέγχει. Ad Philadelph., vii.

detects the secrets," upon verse 20. The sense of the Epistle, however, is precisely the reverse of that of the Gospel, which reads: "The wind bloweth where it listeth; and thou hearest the sound thereof but *knowest not* whence it cometh and whither it goeth; so is every one that is born of the Spirit;"<sup>1</sup> whilst the Epistle does not refer to the wind at all, but affirms that the Spirit of God does know whence it cometh, &c. The analogy in verse 20 is still more remote: "For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be detected."<sup>2</sup> In 1 Cor. ii. 10, the sense is more closely found: "For the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, even the deep things of God."<sup>3</sup> It is evidently absurd to assert from such a passage the use of the fourth Gospel.<sup>4</sup> Even Tischendorf recognizes that in themselves the phrases which he points out in pseudo-Ignatius could not, unsupported by other corroboration, possess much weight as testimony for the use of our Gospels. He says: "Were these allusions of Ignatius to Matthew and John a wholly isolated phenomenon, and one which perhaps other undoubted results of inquiry wholly contradicted, they would hardly have any conclusive weight. But——."<sup>5</sup> Canon Westcott says: "The Ignatian writings, as might be expected, are not without traces of the influence of St. John. The circumstances in which he was placed required a special enunciation of Pauline doctrine; but this is not so

<sup>1</sup> τὸ πνεῦμα ὅπου θέλει πνεῖ, καὶ τὴν φωνὴν αὐτοῦ ἀκούεις, ἀλλ' οὐκ οἶδας πόθεν ἔρχεται καὶ ποῦ ἰπάγει· οὕτως ἐστὶν πᾶς ὁ γεγεννημένος ἐκ τοῦ πνεύματος. John iii. 8.

<sup>2</sup> πᾶς γὰρ ὁ φαῦλα πράσων μισεῖ τὸ φῶς καὶ οὐκ ἔρχεται πρὸς τὸ φῶς, ἵνα μὴ ἐλεγχθῇ τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ. John iii. 20.

<sup>3</sup> τὸ γὰρ πνεῦμα πάντα ἐραυνᾷ, καὶ τὰ βῆθη τοῦ θεοῦ. 1 Cor. ii. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 225 f.

<sup>5</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 23.

expressed as to exclude the parallel lines of Christian thought. Love is 'the stamp of the Christian.' (Ad Magn. v.) 'Faith is the beginning and love the end of life.' (Ad Ephes. xiv.) 'Faith is our guide upward' (*ἀναγωγεύς*), but love is the road that 'leads to God' (Ad Eph. ix.) 'The Eternal (*ἄιδιος*) Word is the manifestation of God' (Ad Magn. viii.), 'the door by which we come to the Father' (Ad Philad. ix., cf. John x. 7), 'and without Him we have not the principle of true life' (Ad Trall. ix.: *οὐ χωρὶς τὸ ἀληθινὸν ζῆν οὐκ ἔχομεν.* cf. Ad Eph. iii.: *Ἰ.Χ. τὸ ἀδιάκριτον ἡμῶν ζῆν*). The true meat of the Christian is the 'bread of God, the bread of heaven, the bread of life, which is the flesh of Jesus Christ,' and his drink is 'Christ's blood, which is love incorruptible' (Ad Rom. vii., cf. John vi. 32, 51, 53). He has no love of this life; 'his love has been crucified, and he has in him no burning passion for the world, but living water (as the spring of a new life) speaking within him, and bidding him come to his Father' (Ad Rom. i. c.). Meanwhile his enemy is the enemy of his Master, even the 'ruler of this age.' (Ad Rom. i. c., *ὁ ἄρχων τοῦ αἰῶνος τούτου.* Cf. John xii. 31, xvi. 11: *ὁ ἄρχων τοῦ κόσμου τούτου.* and see 1 Cor. ii. 6, 8.<sup>1</sup>)"

Part of these references we have already considered; others of them really do not require any notice whatever, and the only one to which we need to direct our attention for a moment may be the passage from the Epistle to the Philadelphians ix., which reads: He is the door of the Fathers, by which enter in Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and the prophets, and the apostles, and the

<sup>1</sup> *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 32 f., and notes. We have inserted in the text the references given in the notes.

Church.”<sup>1</sup> This is compared with John x. 7. “Therefore said Jesus again: Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the Sheep” (ἐγὼ εἰμι ἡ θύρα τῶν προβάτων). We have already referred, a few pages back,<sup>2</sup> to the image of the door. Here again it is obvious that there is a marked difference in the sense of the Epistle from that of the Gospel. In the latter Jesus is said to be the door into the Sheepfold;<sup>3</sup> whilst in the Epistle, he is the door into the Father, through which not only the patriarchs, prophets, and apostles enter, but also the Church itself. Such distant analogy cannot warrant the conclusion that the passage shows any acquaintance with the fourth Gospel.<sup>4</sup> As for the other phrases, they are not only without special bearing upon the fourth Gospel, but they are everywhere found in the canonical Epistles, as well as elsewhere. Regarding love and faith, for instance, compare Gal. v. 6, 14, 22; Rom. xii. 9, 10, viii. 39, xiii. 9; 1 Cor. ii. 9, viii. 3; Ephes. iii. 17, v. 1, 2, vi. 23; Philip. i. 9, ii. 2; 2 Thess. iii. 5; 1 Tim. i. 14, vi. 11; 2 Tim. i. 13; Heb. x. 38 f., xi., &c., &c.

We might point out many equally close analogies in the works of Philo,<sup>5</sup> but it is unnecessary to do so, although we may indicate one or two which first present

<sup>1</sup> Αὐτὸς ὢν θύρα τοῦ πατρὸς, δι' ἧς εἰσέρχονται Ἀβραὰμ καὶ Ἰσαὰκ καὶ Ἰακώβ καὶ οἱ προφῆται, καὶ οἱ ἀπόστολοι, καὶ ἡ ἐκκλησία. Ad Philad., ix.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. ii. p. 256 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Compare the whole passage, John x. 1—16.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 225 f.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 54 f.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 368 f.; *Lücke*, Com. Ev. Joh., i. p. 44, anm. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Philo's birth is dated at least 20 to 30 years before our era, and his death about A.D. 40. His principal works were certainly written before his embassy to Caius. *Delanunay*, Philon d'Alexandrie, 1867, p. 11 f.; *Ewald*, Gesch. d. V. Isr., vi. p. 239; *Gfrörer*, Gesch. des Urchristenthums I., i. p. 5, p. 37 ff., p. 45; *Dähne*, Gesch. Darstell. jüd. alex. Religions Philos., 1834, 1 abth. p. 98, anm. 2.

themselves. Philo equally has "the Eternal Logos" (ὁ αἰδιος Λόγος),<sup>1</sup> whom he represents as the manifestation of God in every way. "The Word is the likeness of God, by which the universe was created" (Λόγος δέ ἐστιν εἰκὼν θεοῦ, δι' οὗ σύμπας ὁ κόσμος ἐδημιουργεῖτο).<sup>2</sup> He is "the substitute" (ὑπαρχος) of God,<sup>3</sup> "the heavenly incorruptible food of the soul," "the bread (ἄρτος) from heaven." In one place he says: "and they who inquire what nourishes the soul . . . learnt at last that it is the Word of God, and the Divine Reason. . . . . This is the heavenly nourishment to which the holy Scripture refers . . . . saying, 'Lo! I rain upon you bread (ἄρτος) from heaven.' (Exod. xvi. 4.) 'This is the bread (ἄρτος) which the Lord has given them to eat'" (Exod. xvi. 15).<sup>4</sup> And again: "For the one indeed raises his eyes towards the sky, perceiving the manna, the divine Word, the heavenly incorruptible food of the longing soul."<sup>5</sup> Elsewhere: ". . . . but it is taught by the initiating priest and prophet Moses, who declares: 'This is the bread (ἄρτος), the nourishment which God has given to the soul'—his own Reason and his own Word which he has offered; for this bread (ἄρτος) which he has given us to eat is Reason."<sup>6</sup> He

<sup>1</sup> De plant. Noe, § 5, *Maney.*, i. 332; De Mundo, § 2, *Maney.*, ii. 604.

<sup>2</sup> De Monarchia, ii. § 5; *Maney.*, ii. 225.

<sup>3</sup> De Agricult., § 12, *Maney.*, i. 308; De Somniis, i. § 41, *Maney.*, i. 656; cf. Coloss. i. 15; Heb. i. 3; 2 Cor. iv. 4.

<sup>4</sup> Ζητήσαντες καὶ τί τὸ τρέφον ἐστὶ τὴν ψυχὴν . . . εἶρον μαθόντες ῥῆμα θεοῦ καὶ Λόγον θεῖον . . . . "Ἡ δ' ἐστὶν ἡ οὐράνιος τροφή, μνησεται δὲ ἐν ταῖς ἱεραῖς ἀναγραφαῖς . . . λέγοντος. "Ἴδου ἐγὼ ὡς ὑμῖν ἄρτους ἐκ τοῦ οὐρανοῦ." De Profugis, § 25, *Maney.*, i. 566.

<sup>5</sup> Ὁ μὲν γὰρ τὰς ὄψεις ἀναστεινὴ πρὸς αἰθέρα, ἀφορῶν τὸ μάννα, τὸν θεῖον Λόγον, τὴν οὐράνιον φιλοθεάμονος ψυχῆς ἀφθαρτον τροφήν. Quis rerum Div. Hieros., § 15, *Maney.*, i. 484; Quod det. potiori insid., § 31, *Maney.*, i. 213 . . . Μάννα, τὸν πρεσβύτατον τῶν ὄντων Λόγον θεῖον, κ.τ.λ.

<sup>6</sup> διδάσκεται δὲ ὑπὸ τοῦ ἱεροφάντου καὶ προφήτου Μωϋσέως, ὡς ἐρεῖ: "Οὗτός

also says: "Therefore he exhorts him that can run swiftly to strain even breathless towards the highest Word of God who is the fountain of Wisdom, in order that by drinking of that stream, instead of death he may obtain eternal life"<sup>1</sup> It is the Logos who guides us to the Father, God "Having both created all things and led (*ἀνάγων*) the perfect man from the things of earth to himself by his Word."<sup>2</sup> These are very imperfect examples, but it may be asserted that there is not a representation of the Logos in the fourth Gospel which has not close parallels in the works of Philo.

We have given these passages of the pseudo-Ignatian Epistles which are pointed out as indicating acquaintance with the fourth Gospel, in order that the whole case might be stated and appreciated. The analogies are too distant to prove anything, but were they fifty times more close, they could do little or nothing to establish an early origin for the fourth Gospel, and nothing at all to elucidate the question as to its character and authorship.<sup>3</sup> The Epistles in which the passages occur are spurious and of no value as evidence for the fourth Gospel. They are not found in the three Syriac Epistles, which alone have some claim to authenticity. We have already stated the facts connected with the so-called Epistles of

*ἔστιν ὁ ἄρτος, ἡ τροφή, ἣν ἔδωκεν ὁ θεὸς τῇ ψυχῇ," προσενέγκασθαι τὸ ἑαυτοῦ μῆμα καὶ τὸν ἑαυτοῦ Λόγον· οὗτος γὰρ ὁ ἄρτος, ὃν δέδωκεν ἡμῖν φαγεῖν, τοῦτο τὸ μῆμα. Leg. Alleg., iii. § 60, *Μαργ.*, i. 121; cf. *ib.*, §§ 61, 62.*

<sup>1</sup> Προτρρέπει δὲ οὖν τὸν μὲν ὠκυδρομεῖν ἱκανὸν συντείνειν ἀπνευστὶ πρὸς τὸν ἀνωτάτω Λόγον θεῖον, ὃς σοφίας ἐστὶ πηγή, ἵνα ἀρυσάμενος τοῦ νάματος ἀντὶ θανάτου ζωὴν αἰδίου ἄθλου εὕρηται. De Profugis, § 18, *Μαργ.*, i. 560.

<sup>2</sup> . . . τῷ αὐτῷ Λόγῳ καὶ τὸ πᾶν ἐργαζόμενος καὶ τὸν τέλειον ἀπὸ τῶν περιγείων ἀνάγων ὡς ἑαυτὸν. De Sacrif. Abolis et Caini, § 3; *Μαργ.*, i. 165.

<sup>3</sup> In general the Epistles follow the Synoptic narratives, and not the account of the fourth Gospel. See for instance the reference to the anointing of Jesus, Ad Eph. xvii., cf. Matt. xxvi. 7 ff.; Mark xiv. 3 ff.; cf. John xii. 1 ff.

Ignatius,<sup>1</sup> and no one who has attentively considered them can fail to see that the testimony of such documents cannot be considered of any historic weight.<sup>2</sup>

There are fifteen Epistles ascribed to Ignatius—of these eight are universally recognized to be spurious. Of the remaining seven, there are two Greek and Latin versions, the one much longer than the other. The longer version is almost unanimously rejected as interpolated. The discovery of a still shorter Syriac version of “the three Epistles of Ignatius,” convinced the majority of critics that even the shorter Greek version of seven Epistles must be condemned, and that whatever matter could be ascribed to Ignatius himself, if any, must be looked for in these three Epistles alone. The three martyrologies of Ignatius are likewise universally repudiated as mere fictions. Amidst such a mass of ⤵ forgery, in which it is impossible to identify even a kernel of truth, it would be preposterous to seek testimony to establish the authenticity of our Gospels.

It is not pretended that the so-called Epistle of Polycarp to the Philippians contains any references to the fourth Gospel. Tischendorf, however, affirms that it is weighty testimony for that Gospel, inasmuch as he discovers in it a certain trace of the first “Epistle of John,” and as he maintains that the Epistle and the Gospel are the works of the same author, any evidence for the one is at the same time evidence for the other.<sup>3</sup> We shall hereafter consider the point of the common

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i. p. 258 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Weizsäcker*, *Unters. evang. Gesch.*, p. 234; *Bleek*, *Beiträge*, p. 224, p. 257 f.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 368; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 50 ff.; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 39 ff.; cf. *Riggenbach*, *Die Zeugn. Ev. Johannis*, p. 101 f.; *Böhringer*, *Die Kirche Chr. u. ihre Zeugn.*, I. i. 1860, p. 46.

<sup>3</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 24 f.

authorship of the Epistles and fourth Gospel, and here confine ourselves chiefly to the alleged fact of the reference.

The passage to which Tischendorf alludes we subjoin, with the supposed parallel in the Epistle.

EPISTLE OF POLYCARP, VII.

For whosoever doth not confess Jesus Christ hath come in the flesh is Antichrist, and whosoever doth not confess the martyrdom of the cross is of the devil, and whosoever perverteth the oracles of the Lord to his own lusts, and saith that there is neither resurrection nor judgment, he is the firstborn of Satan.

Πᾶς γὰρ, ὃς ἂν μὴ ὁμολογῇ, Ἰησοῦν Χριστὸν ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθῆναι, ἀντί-χριστός ἐστιν· καὶ ὃς ἂν μὴ ὁμολογῇ τὸ μαρτύριον τοῦ σταυροῦ, ἐκ τοῦ διαβόλου ἐστίν· καὶ ὃς ἂν μεθοδεύῃ τὰ λόγια τοῦ κυρίου πρὸς τὰς ἰδίας ἐπιθυμίας, καὶ λέγῃ μῆτε ἀνάστασιν μῆτε κρίσιν εἶναι, οὗτος πρωτότοκός ἐστι τοῦ Σατανᾶ.

1 EPISTLE OF JOHN, IV. 3.

And every spirit that confesseth not the Lord Jesus come in the flesh is not of God, and this is the (*spirit*) of Antichrist of which we have heard that it should come, and now already is in the world.

Καὶ πᾶν πνεῦμα ὃ μὴ ὁμολογῇ Ἰησοῦν κύριον ἐν σαρκὶ ἐληλυθῆναι, ἐκ τοῦ θεοῦ οὐκ ἔστιν, καὶ τοῦτο ἐστὶν τὸ τοῦ ἀντιχρίστου, ὃ τι ἀκηκόαμεν ὅτι ἔρχεται, καὶ νῦν ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ ἐστὶν ἤδη.<sup>1</sup>

This passage does not occur as a quotation, and the utmost that can be said of the few words with which it opens is that a phrase somewhat resembling, but at the same time materially differing from, the Epistle of John is interwoven with the text of the Epistle to the Philippians. If this were really a quotation from the canonical Epistle, it would indeed be singular that, considering the supposed relations of Polycarp and John, the name of the apostle should not have been mentioned, and a quotation have been distinctly and correctly made.<sup>2</sup> On the

<sup>1</sup> We give the text of the Sinaitic Codex as the most favourable. The great majority of the other MSS., and all the more important, present very marked difference from this reading.

<sup>2</sup> Schotten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 46.

other hand, there is no earlier trace of the canonical Epistle, and, as Volkmar argues, it may well be doubted whether it may not rather be dependent on the Epistle to the Philippians, than the latter upon the Epistle of John.<sup>1</sup>

We believe with Scholten that neither is dependent on the other, but that both adopted a formula in use in the early Church against various heresies,<sup>2</sup> the superficial coincidence of which is without any weight whatever as evidence for the use of either Epistle by the writer of the other. Moreover, it is clear that the writers refer to different classes of heretics. Polycarp attacks the Docetæ who deny that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh, that is with a human body of flesh and blood; whilst the Epistle of John is directed against those who deny that Jesus who has come in the flesh is the Christ the Son of God.<sup>3</sup> Volkmar points out that in Polycarp the word "Antichrist" is made a proper name, whilst in the Epistle the expression used is the abstract "Spirit of Antichrist." Polycarp in fact says that whoever denies the flesh of Christ is no Christian but Antichrist, and Volkmar finds this direct assertion more original than the assertion of the Epistle; "Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God,"<sup>4</sup> &c. In any case it seems to us clear that in both writings we have only the independent

<sup>1</sup> Volkmar, *Der Ursprung*, p. 48 f.

<sup>2</sup> Scholten, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 45 f.; cf. Volkmar, *Der Ursprung*, p. 48 f.; cf. *Irenæus*, *Adv. Hær.*, i. 24, § 4; *pseudo-Ignatius*, *Ad Smyrn.*, v., vi.

<sup>3</sup> Scholten, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 46 ff.; Volkmar, *Der Ursprung*, p. 48 ff.; cf. 1 John ii. 22; iv. 2, 3; v. 1, 5 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Volkmar, *Der Ursprung*, p. 49 ff.; Scholten, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 46 ff.

enunciation, with decided difference of language and sense, of a formula current in the Church, and that neither writer can be held to have originated the condemnation, in these words, of heresies which the Church had begun vehemently to oppose, and which were merely an application of ideas already well known, as we see from the expression of the Epistle in reference to the "Spirit of Antichrist, of which ye have heard that it cometh." Whether this phrase be an allusion to the Apocalypse xiii., or to 2 Thessalonians ii., or to traditions current in the Church, we need not inquire; it is sufficient that the Epistle of John avowedly applies a prophecy regarding Antichrist already known amongst Christians, which was equally open to the other writer and probably familiar in the Church. This cannot under any circumstances be admitted as evidence of weight for the use of the 1st Epistle of John. There is no testimony whatever of the existence of the Epistles ascribed to John previous to this date, and that fact would have to be established on sure grounds before the argument we are considering can have any value.

On the other hand we have already seen<sup>1</sup> that whilst there is strong reason to doubt the authenticity of the Epistle attributed to Polycarp, and a certainty that in any case it is, in its present form, considerably interpolated, it cannot, even if genuine in any part, be dated earlier than the last years of that Father, and it is apparent, therefore, that the use of the 1st Epistle of John, even if established, could not be of value for the fourth Gospel, of which the writing does not show a trace. So far indeed from there being any evidence that  
— Polycarp knew the fourth Gospel, everything points to

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i. p. 274 ff.

the opposite conclusion. In A.D. 160 we find him taking part in the Paschal controversy, contradicting the statements of the fourth Gospel,<sup>1</sup> and supporting the Synoptic view, contending that the Christian festival should be celebrated on the 14th Nisan, the day on which he affirmed that the Apostle John himself had observed it.<sup>2</sup> Irenæus, who represents Polycarp as the disciple of John, says of him: "For neither was Anicetus able to persuade Polycarp not to observe it (on the 14th) because he had always observed it with John the disciple of our Lord, and with the rest of the apostles with whom he consorted."<sup>3</sup> Not only, therefore, does Polycarp not refer to the fourth Gospel, but he is on the contrary a very important witness against it as the work of John, for he represents that apostle as practically contradicting the Gospel of which he is said to be the author.

The fulness with which we have discussed the character of the evangelical quotations of Justin Martyr renders the task of ascertaining whether his works indicate any acquaintance with the fourth Gospel comparatively easy. The detailed statements already made enable us without preliminary explanation directly to attack the problem, and we are freed from the necessity of making extensive quotations to illustrate the facts of the case.

Whilst apologists assert with some boldness that Justin made use of our Synoptics, they are evidently, and with good reason, less confident in maintaining his

<sup>1</sup> John xiii. 1, xvii. 28, xix. 14, 31; cf. Matt. xxvi. 17; Mark xiv. 12; Luke xxii. 8.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 3, § 4; *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 14, v. 24.

<sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 24.

acquaintance with the fourth Gospel. Canon Westcott states : " His references to St. John are uncertain ; but this, as has been already remarked, follows from the character of the fourth Gospel. It was unlikely that he should quote its peculiar teaching in apologetic writings addressed to Jews and heathens ; and at the same time he exhibits types of language and doctrine which, if not immediately drawn from St. John, yet mark the presence of his influence and the recognition of his authority."<sup>1</sup> This apology for the neglect of the fourth Gospel seems based upon a consciousness of its unhistorical character ; but we may merely remark that where such a writer is reduced to so obvious an admission of the scantiness of evidence furnished by Justin, his case is indeed weak.

Tischendorf, however, with his usual temerity, claims Justin as a powerful witness for the fourth Gospel. He says : " According to our judgment there are convincing grounds of proof for the fact that John also was known and used by Justin, provided a prejudiced consideration of antagonistic predilection against the Johannine Gospel be set aside." In order fully and fairly to state the case which he puts forward, we shall quote his own words, but in order to avoid repetition we shall permit ourselves to interrupt him by remarks and by parallel passages from other writings for comparison with Justin. Tischendorf says : " The representation of the person of Christ altogether peculiar to John as it is

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 145. In a note Canon Westcott refers to *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 253 ff. *Credner*, however, pronounces against the use of the fourth Gospel by Justin. Dr. Westcott adds the singular argument : " Justin's acquaintance with the Valentinians proves that the Gospel could not have been unknown to him." (Dial. 35.) We have already proved that there is no evidence that Valentinus and his earlier followers knew anything of our Synoptics, and we shall presently show that this is likewise the case with the fourth Gospel.

given particularly in his Prologue i. 1 ("In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God, and God was the Word"), and verse 14 ("and the word became flesh"), in the designation of him as Logos, as the Word of God, immediately re-echoes to not a few passages in Justin; for instance: <sup>1</sup> 'And Jesus Christ is alone the special Son begotten by God, being his Word and first-begotten and power.'<sup>2</sup>

With this we may compare another passage of Justin from the second Apology. "But his son, the alone rightly called Son, the Word before the works of creation, who was both with him and begotten when in the beginning he created and ordered all things by him,"<sup>3</sup> &c.

Now the same words and ideas are to be found throughout the Canonical Epistles and other writings, as well as in earlier works. In the Apocalypse,<sup>4</sup> the only book of the New Testament mentioned by Justin, and which is directly ascribed by him to John,<sup>5</sup> the term Logos is applied to Jesus "the Lamb," (xix. 13): "and his name is called the Word of God" (*καὶ κέκληται τὸ*

<sup>1</sup> Tischendorf uses great liberty in translating some of these passages, abbreviating and otherwise altering them as it suits him. We shall therefore give his German translation below, and we add the Greek which Tischendorf does not quote—indeed he does not, in most cases, even state where the passages are to be found.

<sup>2</sup> "Und Jesus Christus ist allein in einzig eigenthümlicher Weise als Sohn Gottes gezeugt worden, indem er das Wort (Logos) desselben ist." Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 32.

*Καὶ Ἰησοῦς Χριστὸς μόνος ἰδίως υἱὸς τῷ θεῷ γεγέννηται, Λόγος αὐτοῦ ὑπάρχων καὶ πρωτότοκος καὶ δύναμις.* Apol., i. 23.

<sup>3</sup> 'Ὁ δὲ υἱὸς ἐκείνου, ὁ μόνος λεγόμενος κυρίως υἱὸς, ὁ Λόγος πρὸ τῶν ποιημάτων, καὶ συνῶν καὶ γεννόμενος, ὅτε τὴν ἀρχὴν δι' αὐτοῦ πάντα ἔκτισε καὶ ἐκόσμησε. Apol. ii. 6.

<sup>4</sup> Written c. A.D. 68—69; *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 704 f.; *Beiträge*, ii. p. 294; *Lücke*, Comm. Offenb. Joh., 1852, ii. p. 840 ff.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1852—53, p. 182; *Gesch. d. V. Isr.*, vi. p. 643, &c. &c.

<sup>5</sup> Dial., 81.

ὄνομα αὐτοῦ ὁ Λόγος τοῦ θεοῦ). Elsewhere (iii. 14) he is called “the Beginning of the Creation of God” (ἡ ἀρχὴ τῆς κτίσεως τοῦ θεοῦ); and again in the same book (i. 5) he is “the first-begotten of the dead” (ὁ πρωτότοκος τῶν νεκρῶν). In Heb. i. 6 he is the “first-born” (πρωτότοκος), as in Coloss. i. 15 he is “the first-born of every creature” (πρωτότοκος πάσης κτίσεως); and in 1 Cor. i. 24 we have: “Christ the Power of God and the Wisdom of God” (Χριστὸν θεοῦ δύναμιν καὶ θεοῦ σοφίαν), and it will be remembered that “Wisdom” was the earlier term which became an alternative with “Word” for the intermediate Being. In Heb. i. 2, God is represented as speaking to us “in the Son . . . . by whom he also made the worlds” (ἐν υἱῷ, . . . . δι’ οὗ καὶ ἐποίησεν τοὺς αἰῶνας). In 2 Tim. i. 9, he is “before all worlds” (πρὸ χρόνων αἰωνίων), cf. Heb. i. 10, ii. 10, Rom. xi. 36, 1 Cor. viii. 6, Ephes. iii. 9.

The works of Philo are filled with similar representations of the Logos, but we must restrict ourselves to a very few. God as a Shepherd and King governs the universe “appointing his true Logos, his first begotten Son, to have the care of this sacred flock, as the substitute of the great King.”<sup>1</sup> In another place Philo exhorts men to strive to become like God’s “first begotten Word” (τὸν πρωτόγονον αὐτοῦ Λόγον),<sup>2</sup> and he adds, a few lines further on: “for the most ancient Word is the image of God” (θεοῦ γὰρ εἰκὼν Λόγος ὁ πρεσβύτατος). The high priest of God in the world is “the divine Word his first-

<sup>1</sup> . . . . προστησάμενος τὸν ὀρθὸν αὐτοῦ Λόγον, πρωτόγονον υἱόν, ὃς τὴν ἐπιμέλειαν τῆς ἱερᾶς ταύτης ἀγέλης οἶα τις μεγάλου βασιλέως ὑπαρχος διαδέξεται. De Agricult., § 12, *Mangey*, i. 308.

<sup>2</sup> De Confus. ling., § 28, *Mang.*, i. 427, cf. § 14, *ib.*, i. 414; cf. De Migrat. Abrahami, § 1, *Mang.*, i. 437; cf. Heb. i. 3; 2 Cor. iv. 4.

begotten son" (ὁ πρωτόγονος αὐτοῦ θεῖος Λόγος).<sup>1</sup> Speaking of the creation of the world Philo says: "The instrument by which it was formed is the Word of God" (ὄργανον δὲ Λόγον θεοῦ, δι' οὗ κατεσκευάσθη).<sup>2</sup> Elsewhere: "For the Word is the image of God by which the whole world was created" (Λόγος δὲ ἔστω εἰκὼν θεοῦ, δι' οὗ σύμπας ὁ κόσμος ἐδημιουργεῖτο).<sup>3</sup> These passages might be indefinitely multiplied.

Tischendorf's next passage is: "The first power (δύναμις) after the Father of all and God the Lord is the Son, the Word (Logos); in what manner having been made flesh (σαρκοποιηθεὶς) he became man, we shall in what follows relate."<sup>4</sup>

We find everywhere parallels for this passage without seeking them in the fourth Gospel. In 1 Cor. i. 24, "Christ the Power (δύναμις) of God and the Wisdom of God;" cf. Heb. i. 2, 3, 4, 6, 8; ii. 8. In Heb. ii. 14—18, there is a distinct account of his becoming flesh; cf. verse 7. In Phil. ii. 6—8: "Who (Jesus Christ) being in the form of God, deemed it not grasping to be equal with God, (7) But gave himself up, taking the form of a servant, being made in the likeness of men," &c. In Rom. viii. 3 we have: "God sending his own Son in the likeness of the flesh of sin," &c. (ὁ θεὸς

<sup>1</sup> De Somniis, i. § 37, *Mang.*, i. 653.

<sup>2</sup> De Cherubim, § 35, *Mang.*, i. 162.

<sup>3</sup> De Monarchia, ii. § 5, *Mang.*, ii. 225.

<sup>4</sup> "Die erste Urkraft (δύναμις) nach dem Vater des Alles und Gott dem Herrn ist der Sohn, ist das Wort (Logos); wie derselbe durch die Fleischwerdung (σαρκοποιηθεὶς) Mensch geworden, das werden wir im folgenden darthun." Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 32.

Ἡ δὲ πρώτη δύναμις μετὰ τὸν Πατέρα πάντων καὶ Δεσπότην Θεὸν, καὶ υἱὸς, ὁ Λόγος ἔστιν' ὃς τὴν τρέπον σαρκοποιηθεὶς ἄνθρωπος γέγονεν, ἐν τοῖς ἑξῆς ἐροῦμεν. *Apol.*, i. 32.

τὸν ἑαυτοῦ υἱὸν πέμψας ἐν ὁμοιώματι σαρκὸς ἁμαρτίας.) It must be borne in mind that the terminology of John i. 14, "and the word became flesh" (σὰρξ ἐγένετο) is different from that of Justin, who uses the word *σαρκοποιηθεῖς*. The sense and language here is, therefore, quite as close as that of the fourth Gospel. We have also another parallel in 1 Tim. iii. 16, "Who (God) was manifested in the flesh" (ὃς ἐφανερώθη ἐν σαρκί), cf. 1 Cor. xv. 4, 47.

In like manner we find many similar passages in the Works of Philo. He says in one place that man was not made in the likeness of the most high God the Father of the universe, "but in that of the Second God who is his Word" (ἀλλὰ πρὸς τὸν δεύτερον θεόν, ὃς ἐστὶν ἐκείνου Λόγος).<sup>1</sup> In another place the Logos is said to be the interpreter of the highest God, and he continues: "that must be God of us imperfect beings" (Οὗτος γὰρ ἡμῶν τῶν ἀτελῶν ἂν εἴη θεός).<sup>2</sup> Elsewhere he says: "But the divine Word which is above these (the Winged Cherubim) . . . but being itself the image of God, the most ancient of all intelligent things, and the one placed nearest to the only existing God without any separation or distance between them";<sup>3</sup> and a few lines further on he explains the cities of refuge to be: "The Word of the Governor (of all things) and his creative and kingly power, for of these are the heavens and the whole

<sup>1</sup> *Philo*, *Fragm.* i. ex. *Euseb.*, *Præpar. Evang.*, vii. 13, *Mang.*, ii. 625; cf. *De Somniis*, i. § 41, *Mang.*, i. 656; *Leg. Alleg.*, ii. § 21, *ib.*, i. 83.

<sup>2</sup> *Leg. Alleg.*, iii. § 73, *Mang.*, i. 128.

<sup>3</sup> Ὁ δὲ ὑπεράνω τούτων Λόγος θεῖος. . . . ἀλλ' αὐτὸς εἰκὼν ὑπάρχων θεοῦ, τῶν νοητῶν ἀπαξ ἀπάντων ὁ πρεσβύτατος, ὁ ἐγγυτάτω, μηδεὸς ὄντος μεθορίου διαστήματος, τοῦ μόνου ὃ ἐστὶν ἀψευδῶς ἀφιδρυμένος. *De Profugis*, § 19, *Mang.*, i. 561.

world.”<sup>1</sup> “The Logos of God is above all things in the world, and is the most ancient and the most universal of all things created.”<sup>2</sup> The Word is also the “Ambassador sent by the Governor (of the universe) to his subject (man)” (*πρεσβευτῆς δὲ τοῦ ἡγεμόνος πρὸς τὸ ὑπήκοον*).<sup>3</sup> Such views of the Logos are everywhere met with in the pages of Philo.

Tischendorf continues: “The word (Logos) of God is his Son.”<sup>4</sup> We have already in the preceding paragraphs abundantly illustrated this sentence, and may proceed to the next: “But since they did not know all things concerning the Logos, which is Christ, they have frequently contradicted each other.”<sup>5</sup> These words are used with reference to Lawgivers and philosophers. Justin, who frankly admits the delight he took in the writings of Plato<sup>6</sup> and other Greek philosophers, was well aware how Socrates and Plato had enunciated the doctrine of the Logos,<sup>7</sup> although he contends that they borrowed it from the writings of Moses, and with a largeness of mind very uncommon in the early Church, and indeed, we might add, in any age, he held Socrates and such philosophers to have been Christians, even

<sup>1</sup> ‘Ο τοῦ ἡγεμόνος Λόγος, καὶ ἡ ποιητικὴ καὶ βασιλικὴ δύναμις αὐτοῦ’ τοῦτων γὰρ ὅ τε οὐρανὸς καὶ σύμπας ὁ κόσμος ἐστί. De Profugis, § 19.

<sup>2</sup> Καὶ ὁ Λόγος δὲ τοῦ θεοῦ ὑπεράνω παντός ἐστι τοῦ κόσμου, καὶ πρεσβύτατος καὶ γενικώτατος τῶν ὕσα γέγονε. Leg. Alleg., iii. § 61, *Mang.*, i. 121; cf. De Somniis, i. § 41, *Mang.*, i. 656.

<sup>3</sup> Quis rerum div. Heres., § 42, *Mang.*, i. 501.

<sup>4</sup> “Das Wort (Logos) Gottes ist der Sohn desselben.” Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 32.

<sup>5</sup> ‘Ο Λόγος δὲ τοῦ θεοῦ ἐστὶν ὁ υἱὸς αὐτοῦ. Apol., i. 63.

<sup>6</sup> “Da sie nicht alles was dem Logos, welcher Christus ist, angehört erkannten, so haben sie oft einander widersprechendes gesagt.”

<sup>7</sup> Ἐπειδὴ δὲ οὐ πάντα τὰ τοῦ Λόγου ἐγνώρισαν, ὅς ἐστι Χριστὸς, καὶ ἐναντία ἑαυτοῖς πολλάκις εἶπον. Apol., ii. 10.

<sup>6</sup> Apol., ii. 12; cf. Dial., 2 ff.

<sup>7</sup> Apol., i. 60, &c., &c.; cf. 5.

although they had been considered Atheists.<sup>1</sup> As they did not of course know Christ to be the Logos, he makes the assertion just quoted. Now the only point in the passage which requires notice is the identification of the Logos with Jesus, which has already been dealt with, and as this was asserted in the Apocalypse xix. 13, before the fourth Gospel was written, no evidence in its favour is deducible from the statement. We shall have more to say regarding this presently.

Tischendorf continues: "But in like manner through the Word of God, Jesus Christ our Saviour having been made flesh,"<sup>2</sup> &c.

It must be apparent that the doctrine here is not that of the fourth Gospel which makes "the word become flesh" simply, whilst Justin, representing a less advanced form, and more uncertain stage, of its development, draws a distinction between the Logos and Jesus, and describes Jesus Christ as being made flesh by the power of the Logos. This is no accidental use of words, for he repeatedly states the same fact, as for instance: "But why through the power of the Word, according to the will of God the Father and Lord of all, he was born a man of a Virgin,"<sup>3</sup> &c.

Tischendorf continues: "To these passages out of the short second Apology we extract from the first (cap. 33).<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Apol., i. 46.

<sup>2</sup> "Vormittels des Worts (Logos) Gottes ist Jesus Christus unser Heiland Fleisch geworden (σαρκοποιηθείς)." Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 32.

ἀλλ' ὅν τρόπον διὰ Λόγου θεοῦ σαρκοποιηθείς Ἰησοῦς Χριστός ὁ Σωτήρ ἡμῶν, κ.τ.λ. Apol. i. 66.

<sup>3</sup> Δι' ἣν δ' αἰτίαν διὰ δυνάμεως τοῦ Λόγου κατὰ τὴν τοῦ Πατρὸς πάντων καὶ δεσπότητος Θεοῦ βουλήν, διὰ παρθένου ἀνθρώπου ἀπεκινήθη, κ.τ.λ. Apol., i. 46.

<sup>4</sup> This is an error. Several of the preceding passages are out of the first Apology. No references, however, are given to the source of any of them. We have added them.

By the Spirit, therefore, and power of God (in reference to Luke i. 35: 'The Holy Spirit shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee') we have nothing else to understand but the Logos, which is also the first-born of God."<sup>1</sup>

Here again we have the same difference from the doctrine of the fourth Gospel which we have just pointed out, which is, however, so completely in agreement with the views of Philo,<sup>2</sup> and characteristic of a less developed form of the idea. We shall further refer to the terminology hereafter, and meantime we proceed to the last illustration given by Tischendorf.

"Out of the Dialogue (c. 105): 'For that he was the only-begotten of the Father of all, in peculiar wise begotten of him as Word and Power (*δύναμις*), and afterwards became man through the Virgin, as we have learnt from the Memoirs, I have already stated.'"<sup>3</sup>

The allusion here is to the preceding chapters of the Dialogue, wherein, with special reference (c. 100) to the passage which has a parallel in Luke i. 35, quoted by Tischendorf in the preceding illustration, Justin narrates the birth of Jesus.

<sup>1</sup> "Unter dem Geiste nun und der Kraft von Gott (zu Luk. i. 35, 'der heilige Geist wird über dich kommen und die Kraft des Höchsten wird dich überschatten,') haben wir nichts anders zu verstehen als den Logos, welcher der Erstgeborne Gottes ist." Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 32.

Τὸ πνεῦμα οὖν καὶ τὴν δύναμιν τὴν παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ οὐδὲν ἄλλο νοῆσαι θέμις, ἢ τὸν Λόγον, ὃς καὶ πρωτότοκος τῷ θεῷ ἐστὶ, κ.τ.λ. Apol., i. 33.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Gfrörer*, *Gesch. des Urchristenthums*, 1835, I. i. pp. 229—243.

<sup>3</sup> Aus dem Dialog (Kap. 105): "Dass derselbe dem Vater des Alls eingeboren in einziger Weise aus ihm heraus als Wort (Logos) und Kraft (*δύναμις*) gezeugt worden und hernach Mensch vermittle der Jungfrau Maria geworden, wie wir aus den Denkwürdigkeiten gelernt haben, das habe ich vorher dargelegt." Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 32.

Μονογενὴς γὰρ ὅτι ἦν τῷ Πατρὶ τῶν ὄλων οὗτος, ἰδίως ἐξ αὐτοῦ Λόγος καὶ δύναμις γεγεννημένος, καὶ ὕστερον ἄνθρωπος διὰ τῆς παρθένου γεγόμενος, ὡς ἀπὸ τῶν ἀπομνημονευμάτων ἐμάθομεν, προεδήλωσα. Dial. c. Tryph., 105.

This reference very appropriately leads us to a more general discussion of the real source of the terminology and Logos doctrine of Justin. We do not propose, in this work, to enter fully into the history of the Logos doctrine, and we must confine ourselves strictly to showing, in the most simple manner possible, that not only is there no evidence whatever that Justin derived his ideas regarding it from the fourth Gospel, but that, on the contrary, his terminology and doctrine can be traced to another source. Now, in the very chapter (100) from which this last illustration is taken, Justin shows clearly whence he derives the expression: "only-begotten." In chap. 97 he refers to the Ps. xxii. (Sept. xxi.) as a prophecy applying to Jesus, quotes the whole Psalm, and comments upon it in the following chapters; refers to Ps. ii. 7: "Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee," uttered by the voice at the baptism, in ch. 103, in illustration of it; and in ch. 105 he arrives, in his exposition of it, at Verse 20: "Deliver my soul from the sword, and my<sup>1</sup> only-begotten (*μονογενῆ*) from the hand of the dog." Then follows the passage we are discussing, in which Justin affirms that he has proved that he was the only-begotten (*μονογενής*) of the Father, and at the close he again quotes the verse as indicative of his sufferings. The Memoirs are referred to in regard to the fulfilment of this prophecy, and his birth as man through the Virgin. The phrase in Justin is quite different from that in the fourth Gospel, i. 14: "And the Word became flesh (*σὰρξ ἐγένετο*) and tabernacled among us, and we beheld his glory, glory as of the only-begotten from the Father" (*ὡς μονογενοῦς παρὰ πατρός*), &c. In Justin he is "the only-begotten of the

<sup>1</sup> This should probably be "thy."

Father of all" (*μονογενῆς τῷ Πατρὶ τῶν ὄλων*), and he "became man (*ἄνθρωπος γενόμενος*) through the Virgin," and Justin never once employs the peculiar terminology of the fourth Gospel, *σὰρξ ἐγένετο*, in any part of his writings.

There can be no doubt that, however the Christian doctrine of the Logos may at one period of its development have been influenced by Greek philosophy, it was in its central idea mainly of Jewish origin, and the mere application to an individual of a theory which had long occupied the Hebrew mind. After the original simplicity which represented God as holding personal intercourse with the Patriarchs, and communing face to face with the great leaders of Israel, had been outgrown, an increasing tendency set in to shroud the Divinity in impenetrable mystery, and to regard him as unapproachable and undiscernible by man. This led to the recognition of a Divine representative and substitute of the Highest God and Father, who communicated with his creatures, and through whom alone he revealed himself. A new system of interpretation of the ancient traditions of the nation was rendered necessary, and in the Septuagint translation of the Bible we are fortunately able to trace the progress of the theory which culminated in the Christian doctrine of the Logos. Wherever in the sacred records God had been represented as holding intercourse with man, the translators either symbolized the appearance or interposed an angel, who was afterwards understood to be the Divine Word. The first name under which the Divine Mediator was known in the Old Testament was Wisdom (*Σοφία*), although in its Apocrypha the term Logos was not unknown. The personification of the idea was very rapidly effected, and

in the Book of Proverbs, as well as in the later Apocrypha based upon it: the Wisdom of Solomon, and the Wisdom of Sirach: "Ecclesiasticus," we find it in ever increasing clearness and concreteness. In the School of Alexandria the active Jewish intellect eagerly occupied itself with the speculation, and in the writings of Philo especially we find the doctrine of the Logos—the term which by that time had almost entirely supplanted that of Wisdom—elaborated to almost its final point, and wanting little or nothing but its application in an incarnate form to an individual man to represent the doctrine of the earlier Canonical writings of the New Testament, and notably the Epistle to the Hebrews,—the work of a Christian Philo,<sup>1</sup>—the Pauline Epistles, and lastly the fourth Gospel.<sup>2</sup>

In Proverbs viii. 22 ff., we have a representation of Wisdom corresponding closely with the prelude to the fourth Gospel, and still more so with the doctrine enunciated by Justin: 22. "The Lord created me the Beginning of his ways for his works. 23. Before the ages he established me, in the beginning before he made the earth. 24. And before he made the abysses, before the springs of the waters issued forth. 25. Before the mountains were settled, and before all the

<sup>1</sup> *Ewald* freely recognises that the author of this Epistle, written about A.D. 66, transferred Philo's doctrine of the Logos to Christianity. Apollos, whom he considers its probable author, impregnated the Apostle Paul with the doctrine. *Gesch. des V. Isr.*, vi., p. 474 f., p. 638 ff.; *Das Sendschr. an d. Hebräer*, p. 9 f.

<sup>2</sup> Compare generally *Gfrörer*, *Gesch. des Urchristenthums*, i. 1, 1 und 2 Abth., 1835; *Keserstein*, *Philo's Lehre v. d. göttl. Mittelwesen*, 1846; *Vacherot*, *Hist. crit. de l'Ecole d'Alexandrie*, 1846, i. p. 125 ff.; *Delaunay*, *Philon d'Alexandrie*, 1867, i. p. 40 ff.; *Franck*, *La Kabbale*, 1843, p. 269 ff., 293 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 292 ff.; *Niedner*, *Zeitschr. f. hist. Theol.*, 1849, h. 3, p. 337—381; *Lücke*, *Comm. Evang. Joh.*, i. p. 283 ff.; cf. p. 210 ff.

hills he begets me. 26. God made the country and the desert and the highest places which are inhabited under the sky. 27. When he prepared the heavens I was present with him, and when he set his throne upon the winds, 28, and made strong the high clouds, and the deeps under the heaven made secure, 29, and made strong the foundations of the earth, 30, I was with him adjusting, I was that in which he delighted; daily I rejoiced in his presence at all times.”<sup>1</sup> In the “Wisdom of Solomon” we find the writer addressing God: ix. 1 . . . “Who hast made all things by thy Word” (ὁ ποιήσας τὰ πάντα ἐν Λόγῳ σου); and further on in the same chapter, v. 9, “And Wisdom was with thee who knoweth thy works, and was present when thou madest the world, and knew what was acceptable in thy sight, and right in thy commandments.”<sup>2</sup> In verse 4, the writer prays: “Give me Wisdom that sitteth by thy throne” (Δός μοι τὴν τῶν σῶν θρόνων πάρεδρον σοφίαν).<sup>3</sup> In a similar way the son of Sirach makes Wisdom say (Ecclesiast. xxiv. 9): “He (the Most High) created me from the beginning before the world, and as long as the world I shall not fail.”<sup>4</sup> We have already

<sup>1</sup> Proverbs viii. 22. Κύριος ἔκτισέ με ἀρχὴν ὁδῶν αὐτοῦ εἰς ἔργα αὐτοῦ, 23. πρὸ τοῦ αἰῶνος ἐθεμελίωσέ με, ἐν ἀρχῇ πρὸ τοῦ τὴν γῆν ποιῆσαι, 24. καὶ πρὸ τοῦ τὰς ἀβύσσους ποιῆσαι, πρὸ τοῦ προελθεῖν τὰς πηγὰς τῶν ὑδάτων 25. πρὸ τοῦ ὄρη ἐδρασθῆναι, πρὸ δὲ πάντων βουνῶν, γεννᾷ με. 26. Κύριος ἐποίησε χάρας καὶ ἀουκῆτους, καὶ ἄκρα οἰκούμενα τῆς ὑπ’ οὐρανῶν. 27. Ἠνίκα ἠτοίμαζε τὸν οὐρανὸν, συμπάρημην αὐτῷ, καὶ ὅτε ἀφώριζε τὸν ἑαυτοῦ θρόνον ἐπ’ ἀνέμων, 28. καὶ ὡς ἰσχυρὰ ἐποίησε τὰ ἄνω νέφη, καὶ ὡς ἀσφαλεῖς ἐτίθει πηγὰς τῆς ὑπ’ οὐρανῶν, 29. καὶ ὡς ἰσχυρὰ ἐποίησε τὰ θεμέλια τῆς γῆς, 30. ἤμην παρ’ αὐτῷ ἀρμόζουσα· ἐγὼ ἤμην ἢ προσέχαιρε· καθ’ ἡμέραν δὲ εὐφρανόμην ἐν προσώπῳ αὐτοῦ ἐν παντὶ καιρῷ, κ.τ.λ. Sept. vers.

<sup>2</sup> Καὶ μετὰ σοῦ ἡ σοφία ἡ εἰδυία τὰ ἔργα σου, καὶ παρούσα ὅτε ἐποίησες τὸν κόσμον, καὶ ἐπισταμένη τί ἀρεστὸν ἐν ὀφθαλμοῖς σου, καὶ τί εὐθὲς ἐν ἐντολαῖς σου. Wisdom of Solom., ix. 9.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. ch. viii.—xi.

<sup>4</sup> Πρὸ τοῦ αἰῶνος ἀπ’ ἀρχῆς ἔκτισέ με, καὶ ἕως αἰῶνος οὐ μὴ ἐκλίπω. Ecclesiastic. xxiv. 9.

incidentally seen how these thoughts grew into an elaborate doctrine of the Logos in the works of Philo.

Now Justin, whilst he nowhere adopts the terminology of the fourth Gospel, and nowhere refers to its introductory condensed statement of the Logos doctrine, closely follows Philo and, like him, traces it back to the Old Testament in the most direct way, accounting for the interposition of the divine Mediator in precisely the same manner as Philo, and expressing the views which had led the Seventy to modify the statement of the Hebrew original in their Greek translation. He is, in fact, thoroughly acquainted with the history of the Logos doctrine and its earlier enunciation under the symbol of Wisdom, and his knowledge of it is clearly independent of, and antecedent to, the statements of the fourth Gospel.

Referring to various episodes of the Old Testament in which God is represented as appearing to Moses and the Patriarchs, and in which it is said that "God went up from Abraham,"<sup>1</sup> or "The Lord spake to Moses,"<sup>2</sup> or "The Lord came down to behold the town," &c.,<sup>3</sup> or "God shut Noah into the ark,"<sup>4</sup> and so on, Justin warns his antagonist that he is not to suppose that "the unbegotten God" (*ἀγέννητος θεός*) did any of these things, for he has neither to come to any place, nor walks, but from his own place, wherever it may be, knows everything although he has neither eyes nor ears. Therefore he could not talk with anyone, nor be seen by anyone, and none of the Patriarchs saw the Father at all, but they saw "him who was according to his will both his Son (being God) and the Angel, in that he ministered to

<sup>1</sup> Gen. xviii. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Gen. xi. 5.

<sup>3</sup> Exod. vi. 29.

<sup>4</sup> Gen. vii. 16.

his purpose, whom also he willed to be born man by the Virgin, who became fire when he spoke with Moses from the bush."<sup>1</sup> He refers throughout his writings to the various appearances of God to the Patriarchs, all of which he ascribes to the pre-existent Jesus, the Word,<sup>2</sup> and in the very next chapter, after alluding to some of these, he says: "he is called Angel because he came to men, since by him the decrees of the Father are announced to men . . . At other times he is also called Man and human being, because he appears in such forms as the Father wills, and they call him Logos because he bears the communications of the Father to mankind."<sup>3</sup>

Justin, moreover, repeatedly refers to the fact that he was called Wisdom by Solomon, and quotes the passage we have indicated in Proverbs. In one place he says, in proof of his assertion that the God who appeared to Moses and the Patriarchs was distinguished from the Father, and was in fact the Word (ch. 66—70): "Ano-

<sup>1</sup> ἀλλ' ἐκείνον τὸν κατὰ βουλήν τὴν ἐκείνου καὶ θεὸν ὄντα υἱὸν αὐτοῦ, καὶ ἄγγελον ἐκ τοῦ ὑπηρετεῖν τῇ γνώμῃ αὐτοῦ· ὃν καὶ ἄνθρωπον γεννηθῆναι διὰ τῆς παρθένου βεβούληται· ὃς καὶ πῦρ ποτε γέγονε τῇ πρὸς Μωϋσεία ὁμιλίᾳ τῇ ἀπὸ τῆς βάτου. Dial. 127; cf. 128, 63; cf. *Philo*, De Somniis, i. §§ 11 f., *Mang.*, i. 630 f.; § 31. *ib.*, i. 648; §§ 33 ff., *ib.*, i. 649 ff.; §§ 39 ff., *ib.*, i. 655 ff. Nothing in fact could show more clearly the indebtedness of Justin to Philo than this argument (Dial. 100) regarding the inapplicability of such descriptions to the "unbegotten God." Philo in one treatise from which we are constantly obliged to take passages as parallels for those of Justin (de Confusione linguarum) argues from the very same text: "The Lord went down to see that city and tower," almost in the very same words as Justin, § 27. The passage is unfortunately too long for quotation.

<sup>2</sup> Dial. 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 126, 127, 128, &c., &c.; *Apol.*, i. 62, 63; cf. *Philo*, Vita Mosis, §§ 12 ff., *Mang.*, i. 91 ff.; *Leg. Alleg.*, iii. §§ 25 ff., *ib.*, i. 103 f., &c., &c.

<sup>3</sup> . . . "Ἄγγελον καλεῖσθαι ἐν τῇ πρὸς ἀνθρώπους προόδῳ, ἐπειδὴ δι' αὐτῆς τὰ παρὰ τοῦ Πατρὸς τοῖς ἀνθρώποις ἀγγέλλεται· . . . ἄνδρα δέ ποτε καὶ ἄνθρωπον καλεῖσθαι, ἐπειδὴ ἐν μορφαῖς τοιαύταις σχηματιζόμενος φαίνεται, αἷσπερ βούλεται ὁ Πατήρ· καὶ Λόγον καλοῦσιν, ἐπειδὴ καὶ τὰς παρὰ τοῦ Πατρὸς ὁμιλίας φέρει τοῖς ἀνθρώποις. Dial. 128; cf. *Apol.* i. 63; Dial. 60.

ther testimony I will give you, my friends, I said, from the Scriptures that God begat before all of the creatures (πρὸ πάντων τῶν κτισμάτων) a Beginning (ἀρχήν),<sup>1</sup> a certain rational Power (δύναμιν λογικὴν) out of himself, who is called by the Holy Spirit, now the Glory of the Lord, then the Son, again Wisdom, again Angel, again God, and again Lord and Logos ;” &c., and a little further on : “The Word of Wisdom will testify to me, who is himself this God begotten of the Father of the universe, and Word, and Wisdom, and Power (δύναμις), and being the Glory of the Begetter,” &c.,<sup>2</sup> and he quotes, from the Septuagint version, Proverbs viii. 22—36, part of which we have given above, and indeed, elsewhere (ch. 129), he quotes the passage a second time as evidence, with a similar context. Justin refers to it again in the next chapter, and the peculiarity of his terminology in all these passages, so markedly different and indeed opposed to that of the fourth Gospel, will naturally strike the reader : “But this offspring (γέννημα) being truly brought forth by the Father was with the Father before all created beings (πρὸ πάντων τῶν ποιημάτων), and the Father communed with him, as the Logos has declared through Solomon, that also a Beginning (ἀρχή) before all of the created beings (πρὸ πάντων τῶν ποιημάτων) was begotten, the offspring (γέννημα) of the Father, who is called Wisdom by Solomon,” &c.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Αποκ., iii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Μαρτύριον δὲ καὶ ἄλλο ὑμῖν, ὦ φίλοι, ἔφην, ἀπὸ τῶν γραφῶν δώσω, ὅτι Ἀρχὴν πρὸ πάντων τῶν κτισμάτων ὁ Θεὸς γεγέννηκε δύναμιν τινα ἐξ ἑαυτοῦ λογικὴν, ἣτις καὶ Δόξα Κυρίου ὑπὸ τοῦ Πνεύματος τοῦ ἁγίου καλεῖται, ποτὲ δὲ Υἱὸς, ποτὲ δὲ Σοφία, ποτὲ δὲ Ἄγγελος, ποτὲ δὲ Θεὸς, ποτὲ δὲ Κύριος καὶ Λόγος . . .

Μαρτυρήσει δὲ μοι ὁ λόγος τῆς σοφίας, αὐτὸς ὡν οὗτος ὁ Θεὸς ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς τῶν ὄλων γεννηθεὶς, καὶ Λόγος, καὶ Σοφία, καὶ Δύναμις, καὶ Δόξα τοῦ γεννησαντος ὑπάρχων, κ.τ.λ. Dial. 61.

<sup>3</sup> Ἄλλὰ τοῦτο τὸ τῶν ὄντων ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς προβληθὲν γέννημα, πρὸ πάντων τῶν

In another place after quoting the words: "No man knoweth the Father but the Son, nor the Son but the Father, and they to whom the Son will reveal him," Justin continues: "Therefore he revealed to us all that we have by his grace understood out of the Scriptures, recognizing him to be indeed the first-begotten (*πρωτότοκος*) of God, and before all of the creatures (*πρὸ πάντων τῶν κτισμάτων*) . . . and calling him Son, we have recognized that he proceeded from the Father by his power and will before all created beings (*πρὸ πάντων ποιημάτων*), for in one form or another he is spoken of in the writings of the prophets as Wisdom," &c. ;<sup>1</sup> and again, in two other places he refers to the same fact.<sup>2</sup>

On further examination, we find on every side still stronger confirmation of the conclusion that Justin derived his Logos doctrine from the Old Testament and Philo, together with early New Testament writings. We have quoted several passages in which Justin details the various names of the Logos, and we may add one more. Referring to Ps. lxxii., which the Jews apply to Solomon, but which Justin maintains to be applicable to Christ, he says: "For Christ is King, and Priest, and God, and Lord, and Angel, and Man, and Captain, and Stone, and a Son born (*παιδίον γενόμενον*), &c. &c., as I prove by all of the Scriptures."<sup>3</sup> Now these representa-

*ποιημάτων συνῆν τῷ Πατρὶ, καὶ τούτῳ ὁ Πατὴρ προσομιλεῖ, ὡς ὁ Λόγος διὰ τοῦ Σολομῶντος ἐδήλωσεν, ὅτι καὶ Ἀρχὴ πρὸ πάντων τῶν ποιημάτων τούτ' αὐτὸ καὶ γέννημα ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐγενήνητο, ὁ Σοφία διὰ Σολομῶντος καλεῖται, κ.τ.λ. Dial. 62.*

<sup>1</sup> Ἀπεκάλυψεν οὖν ἡμῖν πάντα ὅσα καὶ ἀπὸ τῶν γραφῶν διὰ τῆς χάριτος αὐτοῦ νενοήκαμεν, γνόντες αὐτὸν πρωτότοκον μὲν τοῦ Θεοῦ, καὶ πρὸ πάντων τῶν κτισμάτων . . . καὶ Υἱὸν αὐτὸν λέγοντες, νενοήκαμεν, καὶ πρὸ πάντων ποιημάτων, ἀπὸ τοῦ Πατρὸς δυνάμει αὐτοῦ καὶ βουλῇ προελθύντα ὡς καὶ Σοφία, κ.τ.λ. Dial. 100.

<sup>2</sup> Dial., 126, 129.

<sup>3</sup> Ὁ γὰρ Χριστὸς Βασιλεὺς, καὶ Ἱερεὺς, καὶ Θεὸς, καὶ Κύριος, καὶ Ἄγγελος, καὶ Ἄνθρωπος, καὶ Ἀρχιστράτηγος, καὶ Λίθος, καὶ Παιδίον γενόμενον, κ.τ.λ. Dial. 34.

tions, which are constantly repeated throughout Justin's writings, are quite opposed to the Spirit of the fourth Gospel, but are on the other hand equally common in the works of Philo, and many of them also to be found in the Philonian Epistle to the Hebrews. Taking the chief amongst them we may briefly illustrate them. The Logos as King, Justin avowedly derives from the Ps. lxxii., in which he finds that reference is made to the "Everlasting King, that is to say Christ."<sup>1</sup> We find this representation of the Logos throughout the writings of Philo. In one place already briefly referred to,<sup>2</sup> but which we shall now more fully quote, he says: "For God as Shepherd and King governs according to Law and justice like a flock of sheep, the earth, and water, and air, and fire, and all the plants and living things that are in them, whether they be mortal or divine, as well as the course of heaven, and the periods of sun and moon, and the variations and harmonious revolutions of the other stars; appointing his true Word (τὸν ὀρθὸν αὐτοῦ Λόγον) his first-begotten Son (πρωτόγονον υἱόν) to have the care of this sacred flock as the substitute of the great King;"<sup>3</sup> and a little further on, he says: "very reasonably, therefore, he will assume the name of a King, being addressed as a Shepherd."<sup>4</sup> In another place, Philo speaks of the "Logos, governor of the world, and his

<sup>1</sup> Dial., 34.

<sup>2</sup> p. 274.

<sup>3</sup> καθάπερ γάρ τινα ποιμνὴν γῆν καὶ ὕδωρ καὶ ἀέρα καὶ πῦρ καὶ ὅσα ἐν τούτοις φητά τε αὐτὸ καὶ ζῶα, τὰ μὲν θηγά, τὰ δὲ θεία, ἔτι δὲ οὐρανοῦ φύσιν καὶ ἡλίου καὶ σελήνης περιόδους καὶ τῶν ἄλλων ἀστέρων τροπὰς τε αὐτὸ καὶ χορείας ἐναρμονίους ὡς ποιμνὴν καὶ βασιλεὺς ὁ θεὸς ἄγει κατὰ δίκην καὶ νόμον, προστησάμενος τὸν ὀρθὸν αὐτοῦ Λόγον, πρωτόγονον υἱόν, ὃς τὴν ἐπιμέλειαν τῆς ἱερᾶς ταύτης ἀγέλης οἶά τις μεγάλου βασιλέως ἕπαρχος διαδέξεται. De Agricult., § 12, *Mangey*, i. 308.

<sup>4</sup> Εἰκότως τοίνυν ὁ μὲν βασιλέως ὄνομα ἰποδύσεται, ποιμὴν προσαγορευθεὶς, κ.τ.λ. § 14, cf. De Profugis, § 20, *Mang.*, i. 562; De Somniis, ii. § 37, *Mang.*, i. 691.

creative and kingly power, for by them the heaven and the whole world were made.”<sup>1</sup>

Then if we take the second epithet, the Logos as Priest (*ιερεύς*), which is quite foreign to the fourth Gospel, we find it repeated by Justin, as for instance: “Christ the eternal Priest” (*ιερεύς*),<sup>2</sup> and it is not only a favourite representation of Philo, but is almost the leading idea of the Epistle to the Hebrews, in connection with the episode of Melchisedec, in whom also both Philo,<sup>3</sup> and Justin,<sup>4</sup> recognize the Logos. In the Epistle to the Hebrews, vii. 3, speaking of Melchisedec: “but likened to the Son of God, abideth a Priest for ever.”<sup>5</sup> again in iv. 14: “Seeing then that we have a great High Priest that is passed through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God,” &c.;<sup>6</sup> ix. 11: “Christ having appeared a High Priest of the good things to come;”<sup>7</sup> xii. 21: “Thou art a Priest for ever.”<sup>8</sup> The passages are indeed far too numerous to quote.<sup>9</sup> They are equally numerous in the writings of Philo. In one place already quoted,<sup>10</sup> he says: “For there are as it seems two temples of God, one of which is the world, in which the High Priest is the divine Word, the first-begotten Son of God” (*Δύο γάρ,*

<sup>1</sup> Ὁ τοῦ ἡγεμόνος Λόγος, καὶ ἡ ποιητικὴ καὶ βασιλικὴ δύναμις αὐτοῦ· τούτων γὰρ ὁ τε οὐρανὸς καὶ σύμπας ὁ κόσμος ἐστί. De Profugis, § 19, *Mang.*, i. 561; cf. de Migrat. Abrahami, § 1, *Mang.*, i. 437.

<sup>2</sup> Dial., 42.

<sup>3</sup> Legis Alleg., § 26, *Mang.*, i. 104, &c., &c.

<sup>4</sup> Dial., 34, 83, &c., &c.

<sup>5</sup> . . . ἀφομοιωμένος δὲ τῷ υἱῷ τοῦ θεοῦ, μένει ἱερεὺς εἰς τὸ διηνεκές. Heb. vii. 3.

<sup>6</sup> Ἐχόντες οὖν ἀρχιερέα μέγαν διεληλυθότα τοὺς οὐρανοὺς, Ἰησοῦν τὸν υἱὸν τοῦ θεοῦ, κ.τ.λ. Heb. iv. 14.

<sup>7</sup> Χριστὸς δὲ παραγενόμενος ἀρχιερεὺς τῶν μελλόντων ἀγαθῶν, κ.τ.λ. Heb. ix. 11.

<sup>8</sup> Σὺ ἱερεὺς εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα. Heb. vii. 21.

<sup>9</sup> Heb. vii. 11, 15, 17, 21 f., 26 ff.; viii. 1 ff.; ii. 6, 17; v. 5, 6, 10.

<sup>10</sup> p. 274.

VOL. II.

ὡς ἔοικεν, ἱερά θεοῦ, ἐν μὲν ὄδε ὁ κόσμος, ἐν ᾧ καὶ ἀρχιερεὺς, ὁ πρωτόγονος αὐτοῦ θεῖος Λόγος).<sup>1</sup> Elsewhere, speaking of the period for the return of fugitives, the death of the high priest, which taken literally would embarrass him in his allegory, Philo says: "For we maintain the High Priest not to be a man, but the divine Word, who is not only without participation in voluntary but also free from involuntary sins,"<sup>2</sup> and he goes on to speak of this priest as "the most sacred Word" (ὁ ἱερώτατος Λόγος).<sup>3</sup> Indeed, in many long passages he descants upon the "high priest Word" (ὁ ἀρχιερεὺς Λόγος).<sup>4</sup>

Proceeding to the next representations of the Logos as "God and Lord," we meet with the idea everywhere, In Hebrews i. 8: "But regarding the Son he saith: Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever" (πρὸς δὲ τὸν υἱὸν Ὁ θρόνος σου, ὁ Θεός, εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα τοῦ αἰῶνος), &c., and again in the Epistle to the Philippians, ii. 6, "Who (Jesus Christ) being in the form of God, deemed it not grasping to be equal with God" (ὃς ἐν μορφῇ θεοῦ ὑπάρχων οὐχ ἀρπαγμὸν ἠγήσατο τὸ εἶναι ἴσα θεῷ), &c. &c.<sup>5</sup> Philo, in the fragment preserved by Eusebius, to which we have already referred,<sup>6</sup> calls the Logos the "Second God" (δεύτερος θεός).<sup>7</sup> In another

<sup>1</sup> *Philo*, De Somniis, i. § 37, *Mangey*, i. 653.

<sup>2</sup> Λέγομεν γάρ, τὸν ἀρχιερέα οὐκ ἄνθρωπον, ἀλλὰ Λόγον θεῖον εἶναι, πάντων οὐχ ἑκουσίων μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἀκουσίων ἀδικημάτων ἀμέτοχον. De Profugis, § 20, *Mang.*, i. 562. Philo continues: that this priest, the Logos, must be pure, "God indeed being his Father, who is also the Father of all things, and Wisdom his mother, by whom the universe came into being." (πατὴρ μὲν θεοῦ, ὅς καὶ τῶν συμπάντων ἐστὶ πατήρ, μητὴρ δὲ Σοφίας, δι' ἧς τὰ ἅλα ἦλθεν εἰς γένεσιν.)

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, § 21.

<sup>4</sup> De Migrat. Abrahami, § 18, *Mang.*, i. 452.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. verse 11.

<sup>6</sup> p. 276.

<sup>7</sup> *Fragm. i.*, *Mang.*, ii. 625; cf. *Leg. Alleg.*, ii. § 21, *Mang.*, i. 83.

passage he has : " But what he here calls God is his most ancient Word," &c. (*καλεῖ δὲ θεὸν τὸν πρεσβύτατον αὐτοῦ νυνὶ Λόγον*) ;<sup>1</sup> and a little further on, speaking of the inability of men to look on the Father himself : " thus they regard the image of God, his Angel Word, as himself" (*οὕτως καὶ τὴν τοῦ θεοῦ εἰκόνα, τὸν ἄγγελον αὐτοῦ Λόγον, ὡς αὐτὸν κατανοοῦσιν*).<sup>2</sup> Elsewhere discussing the possibility of God's swearing by himself, which he applies to the Logos, he says : " For that must be God of us imperfect beings, but the first God of wise and perfect men. And Moses, adoring the superiority of the unbegotten (*ἀγεννήτου*) God, says : ' And thou shalt swear by his name,' not by himself ; for it is sufficient for the creature to receive assurance and testimony from the Word of God."<sup>3</sup>

It is certain, however, that both Justin and Philo, unlike the prelude to the fourth Gospel i. 1, place the Logos in a secondary position to God the Father, another point indicating a less advanced stage of the doctrine. Both Justin and Philo apply the term *θεός* to the Logos without the article. Justin distinctly says that Christians worship Jesus Christ as the Son of the true God, holding him in the second place (*ἐν δευτέρᾳ χώρᾳ ἔχοντες*),<sup>4</sup> and this secondary position is systematically defined through Justin's writings in a very decided way, as it is in the works of Philo by the contrast of the begotten Logos with the unbegotten God. Justin speaks of the Word

<sup>1</sup> *Philo*, De Somniis, i. 39, *Mang.*, i. 655.

<sup>2</sup> De Somniis, i. § 41, *Mang.*, i. 656.

<sup>3</sup> Οὗτος γὰρ ἡμῶν τῶν ἀτελῶν ἂν εἴη θεός, τῶν δὲ σοφῶν καὶ τελείων ὁ πρῶτος. Καὶ Μωϋσῆς μέντοι τὴν ὑπερβολὴν θαυμάσας τοῦ ἀγεννήτου φησὶν " Καὶ τῷ ὀνόματι αὐτοῦ ὀμῆ," οὐχὶ αὐτῷ· ἱκανὸν γὰρ τῷ γεννητῷ πιστοῦσθαι καὶ μαρτυρεῖσθαι Λόγῳ θείῳ. *Leg. Alleg.*, iii. § 73, *Mang.*, i. 129.

<sup>4</sup> *Apol.*, i. 13, cf. 60, where he shows that Plato gives the second place to the Logos.

as "the first-born of the unbegotten God" (*πρωτότοκος τῷ ἀγεννήτῳ θεῷ*),<sup>1</sup> and the distinctive appellation of the "unbegotten God" applied to the Father is most common throughout his writings.<sup>2</sup> We may in continuation of this remark point out another phrase of Justin which is continually repeated, but is thoroughly opposed both to the spirit and to the terminology of the fourth Gospel, and which likewise indicates the secondary consideration in which he held the Logos. He calls the Word constantly "the first-born of all created beings" (*πρωτότοκος τῶν πάντων ποιημάτων*,<sup>3</sup> or *πρωτότοκος πρὸ πάντων τῶν κτισμάτων*,<sup>4</sup> or *πρωτότοκος πάσης κτίσεως*,<sup>5</sup> "the first-born of all creatures," echoing the expression of Col. i. 15. (The Son) "who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of all creatures" (*πρωτότοκος πάσης κτίσεως*). This is a totally different view from that of the fourth Gospel, which in so emphatic a manner enunciates the doctrine: "In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God, and God was the Word," a statement which Justin, with Philo, only makes in a very modified sense.

To return, however, the next representation of the Logos by Justin is as "Angel." This perpetually recurs in his writings.<sup>6</sup> In one place, to which we have already referred, he says: "The Word of God is his Son, as we have already stated, and he is also called Angel and Apostle, for he declares whatever we ought to know, and is sent to declare whatever is disclosed."<sup>7</sup> In the same

<sup>1</sup> Apol., i. 53, compare quotation from Philo, p. 291, note 2.

<sup>2</sup> Apol., i. 49, Apol., ii. 6, 13; Dial., 126, 127.

<sup>3</sup> Dial., 62, 84, 100, &c., &c.

<sup>4</sup> Dial., 61, 100, 125, 129, &c., &c.

<sup>5</sup> Dial., 85, 138, &c.

<sup>6</sup> Apol., i. 63; Dial., 34, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 127; cf. Apol., i. 6.

<sup>7</sup> Ὁ Λόγος δὲ τοῦ θεοῦ ἐστὶν ὁ υἱὸς αὐτοῦ, ὡς προέφημεν καὶ ἄγγελοι δὲ

chapter reference is again made to passages quoted for the sake of proving: "that Jesus Christ is the Son and Apostle of God, being first the Word and appearing sometimes in the form of fire, and sometimes in incorporeal shapes;"<sup>1</sup> and he gives many illustrations.<sup>2</sup> The passages, however, in which the Logos is called Angel, are too numerous to be more fully dealt with here. It is scarcely necessary to point out that this representation of the Logos as Angel, is not only foreign to, but opposed to the spirit of, the fourth Gospel, although it is thoroughly in harmony with the writings of Philo. Before illustrating this, however, we may incidentally remark that the ascription to the Logos of the name "Apostle" which occurs in the two passages just quoted above, as well as in other parts of the writings of Justin,<sup>3</sup> is likewise opposed to the fourth Gospel, although it is found in earlier writings, exhibiting a less developed form of the Logos doctrine; for the Epistle to the Hebrews iii. 1, has: "Consider the Apostle and High Priest of our confession, Jesus," &c. (κατανοήσατε τὸν ἀπόστολον καὶ ἀρχιερέα τῆς ὁμολογίας ἡμῶν Ἰησοῦν). We are, in fact, constantly directed by the remarks of Justin to other sources of the Logos doctrine, and never to the fourth Gospel, with which his tone and terminology in no way agree. Everywhere in the writings of Philo we meet with the Logos as Angel. He speaks "of the Angel Word of God" in a sentence already quoted,<sup>4</sup> and elsewhere in a passage, one of many others, upon which the

καλεῖται, καὶ Ἀπόστολος. Αὐτὸς γὰρ ἀπαγγέλλει ὅσα δεῖ γνωσθῆναι, καὶ ἀποστέλλεται μηνύσων ὅσα ἀγγέλλεται, κ.τ.λ. Apol., i. 63.

<sup>1</sup> ὅτι υἱὸς θεοῦ καὶ Ἀπόστολος Ἰησοῦς ὁ Χριστὸς ἐστὶ, πρότερον Λόγος ὢν, καὶ ἐν ἰδέᾳ πρὸς ποτὲ φανεῖς, ποτὲ δὲ καὶ ἐν εἰκόνι ἀσωμάτων, κ.τ.λ. Apol., i. 63.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Dial., 56—60, 127, 128.

<sup>3</sup> Apol., i. 12, &c.

<sup>4</sup> Philo, De Somniis, i. § 41, *Manly*, i. 656, see p. 291.

lines of Justin which we are now considering (as well as several similar passages)<sup>1</sup> are in all probability moulded. Philo calls upon men to "strive earnestly to be fashioned according to God's first-begotten Word, the eldest Angel, who is the Archangel bearing many names, for he is called the Beginning (*ἀρχή*), and Name of God, and Logos, and the Man according to his image, and the Seer of Israel.<sup>2</sup> Elsewhere, in a remarkable passage, he says: "To his Archangel and eldest Word, the Father, who created the universe, has given the supreme gift that he should stand on the confines separating the creature from the Creator, and this Word is for ever an intercessor before the immortal God for mortal man who is in affliction; he is also the ambassador of the Ruler to his subjects. And he rejoices in the gift, and the majesty of it he describes, saying: 'And I stood in the midst between the Lord

<sup>1</sup> For instance, in the quotations at p. 286 f. from Dial. 61, and also that from Dial. 62, in which the Logos is also called the Beginning (*ἀρχή*). Both Philo and Justin, no doubt, had in mind Prov. viii. 22. In Dial. 100, for example, there is a passage, part of which we have quoted, which reads as follows: "for in one form or another he is spoken of in the writings of the prophets as Wisdom, and the Day, and the East, and a Sword, and a Stone, and a Rod, and Jacob, and Israel, &c." Now in the writings of Philo these passages in the Old Testament are discussed, and applied to the Logos, and one in particular we may refer to as an illustration. Philo says: "I have also heard of a certain associate of Moses having pronounced the following saying: 'Behold a man whose name is the East.' (Zech. vi. 12.) A most novel designation if you consider it to be spoken regarding one composed of body and soul, but if regarding that incorporeal Being who does not differ from the divine image, you will agree that the name of the East is perfectly appropriate to him. For indeed the Father of the Universe has caused this eldest son (*πρεσβύτατον υἱόν*) to rise (*ἀνέτειλε*), whom elsewhere he names his first-begotten (*πρωτόγονον*), &c." De Confus. Ling., § 14. Can it be doubted that Justin follows Philo in such exegesis?

<sup>2</sup> . . . σπουδαζέτω κοσμίεσθαι κατὰ τὸν πρωτόγονον αὐτοῦ Λόγον, τὸν ἄγγελον πρεσβύτατον, ὡς ἀρχάγγελον πολυώνυμον ὑπάρχοντα· καὶ γὰρ ἀρχή, καὶ ὄνομα θεοῦ, καὶ Λόγος, καὶ ὁ κατ' εἰκόνα ἄνθρωπος, καὶ ὄρων Ἰσραὴλ· προσταγορεύεται. De Confus. Ling., § 28, *Mang.*, i. 427; cf. De Migrat. Abrahami, § 31, *Mang.*, i. 463.

and you' (Numbers xvi. 48). For he was neither unbegotten like God, nor begotten like you, but between the two extremes," &c.<sup>1</sup> We have been tempted to give more of this passage than is necessary for our immediate purpose, because it affords the reader another glimpse of Philo's doctrine of the Logos, and generally illustrates its position in connection with the Christian doctrine.

The last of Justin's names which we shall here notice is the Logos as "Man" as well as God. In another place Justin explains that he is sometimes called a Man and human being, because he appears in such forms as the Father wills.<sup>2</sup> But here confining ourselves merely to the concrete idea, we find a striking representation of it in 1 Tim. ii. 5: "For there is one God and one mediator between God and man, the Man Christ Jesus" (εἰς γὰρ θεός, εἰς καὶ μεσίτης θεοῦ καὶ ἀνθρώπων, ἄνθρωπος Χριστὸς Ἰησοῦς); and again in Rom. v. 15: ". . . by the grace of the one man Christ Jesus" (τοῦ ἑνὸς ἀνθρώπου Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ), as well as other passages.<sup>3</sup> We have already seen in the passage quoted above from "De Confus. Ling." § 28, that Philo mentions, among the many names of the Logos, that of "the Man according to God's image" (ὁ κατ' εἰκόνα ἀνθρώπου,<sup>4</sup> or "the typical man"). If, however, we pass to the

<sup>1</sup> Τῷ δὲ ἀρχαγγέλῳ καὶ πρεσβυτάτῳ Λόγῳ δωρεὰν ἐξαιρέτων ἔδωκεν ὁ τὰ ὅλα γεννήσας πατήρ, ἵνα μεθίριος στὰς τὸ γενόμενον διακρίνη τοῦ πεποικίτου. 'Ο δ' αὐτὸς ἰκέτης μὲν ἐστὶ τοῦ θνητοῦ κηραίνοντος αἰὶ πρὸς τὸ ἄφθαρτον, πρεσβευτὴς δὲ τοῦ ἡγεμόνος πρὸς τὸ ὑπήκοον. Ἀγάλλεται δὲ ἐπὶ τῇ δωρεᾷ, καὶ σεμνυόμενος αἰτὴν ἐκδιηγείται φάσκων· "Καὶ ἐγὼ εἰστήκειν ἀνὰ μέσον κυρίου καὶ ὑμῶν" (Num. xvi. 48), οὔτε ἀγέννητος ὡς ὁ θεὸς ὢν, οὔτε γεννητὸς ὡς ὑμεῖς, ἀλλὰ μέσος τῶν ἄκρων, κ.τ.λ. Quis rerum div. Heres., § 42, *Mang.*, i. 501 f.

<sup>2</sup> Dial., 128, see the quotation, p. 285.

<sup>3</sup> Phil. ii. 8; 1 Cor. xv. 47.

<sup>4</sup> Elsewhere Philo says that the Word was the archetypal model after which man and the human mind were formed. De Exsecrat., § 8, *Mang.*, i. 436; De Mundi Opificio, § 6, *Mang.*, i. 6.

application of the Logos doctrine to Jesus, we have the strongest reason for concluding Justin's total independence from the fourth Gospel. We have already pointed out that the title of Logos is given to Jesus in New Testament writings earlier than the fourth Gospel, and we must see that Justin's terminology, as well as his views of the Word become man, is thoroughly different from that Gospel. We have remarked that, although the passages are innumerable in which Justin speaks of the Word having become man through the Virgin, he never once throughout his writings makes use of the peculiar expression of the fourth Gospel: "the Word became flesh" (ὁ Λόγος σὰρξ ἐγένετο). On the few occasions on which he speaks of the Word having been *made* flesh, he uses the term *σαρκοποιηθεῖς*.<sup>1</sup> In one instance he has *σάρκα ἔχει*,<sup>2</sup> and speaking of the Eucharist Justin once explains that it is in memory of Christ's being made *body*, *σωματοποιήσασθαι*.<sup>3</sup> Justin's most common phrase, however, and he repeats it in numberless instances, is that the Logos submitted to be born, and become man (*γεννηθῆναι ἄνθρωπον γενόμενον ὑπέμεινεν*), by a Virgin, or he uses variously the expressions: *ἄνθρωπος γέγονε*, *ἄνθρωπος γενόμενος*, *γενέσθαι ἄνθρωπον*.<sup>4</sup> In several places he speaks of him as the first production or offspring (*γέννημα*) of God before all created beings, as, for instance: "The Logos . . . who is the first offspring of God" (ὁ ἐστὶ πρῶτον γέννημα τοῦ θεοῦ);<sup>5</sup> and again, "and that this offspring was really begotten of the Father before all of the creatures Scripture declares" (*καὶ ὅτι γεγενῆσθαι ὑπὸ τοῦ πατρὸς τοῦτο τὸ γέννημα*

<sup>1</sup> Apol., i. 66 (twice); Dial., 45, 100.

<sup>2</sup> Dial., 48.

<sup>3</sup> Dial., 70.

<sup>4</sup> Apol., i. 5, 23, 63; Apol., ii. 6, 13; Dial., 34, 45, 48, 57, 63, 75, 84, 85, 105, 113, 125, 127, &c., &c.

<sup>5</sup> Apol., i. 21.

πρὸ πάντων ἀπλῶς τῶν κτισμάτων ὁ λόγος ἐδήλου).<sup>1</sup> We need not say more of the expressions: "first-born" (πρωτότοκος), "first-begotten" (πρωτόγονος), so constantly applied to the Logos by Justin, in agreement with Philo; nor to "only begotten" (μονογενής), directly derived from the Ps. xxii. 20 (Ps. xxi. 20, Sept.).

It must be apparent to everyone who seriously examines the subject, that Justin's terminology is thoroughly different from, and in spirit opposed to, that of the fourth Gospel, and in fact that the peculiarities of the Gospel are not found in Justin's writings at all.<sup>2</sup> On the other hand, his doctrine of the Logos is precisely that of Philo,<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dial., 129. cf. 62.

<sup>2</sup> A passage is sometimes quoted in which Justin reproaches the Jews for spreading injurious and unjust reports "concerning the only blameless and righteous Light sent by God to man," (κατὰ οὖν τοῦ μόνου ἀμώμου καὶ δικαίου φωτὸς τοῖς ἀνθρώποις πεμφθέντος παρὰ τοῦ θεοῦ κ.τ.λ. Dial. 17), and this is claimed as an echo of the Gospel; cf. John i. 9, viii. 12, xii. 46, &c. Now here again we have in Philo the elaborate representation of the Logos as the sun and Light of the world; as for instance in a long passage in the treatise De Somniis, i. §§ 13 ff., *Mang.*, i. 631 ff., of which we can only give the slightest quotation. Philo argues that Moses only speaks of the sun by symbols, and that it is easy to prove this; "since God is the first Light. For the Lord is my Light and my Saviour," it is said in the Psalms (xxvi. 1), and not only Light, but the archetype of all other lights, indeed much more ancient and more perfect than the archetype, being termed the model. For indeed the model was his most perfect Word, the Light," &c. (. . . ἐπειδὴ πρῶτον μὲν ὁ θεὸς φῶς ἐστὶν. "Κύριος γὰρ φῶς μου καὶ σωτήρ μου" ἐν ὑμῖνοις ἄδεται. Καὶ οὐ μόνον φῶς, ἀλλὰ καὶ παντὸς ἑτέρου φωτὸς ἀρχέτυπον, μᾶλλον δὲ ἀρχέτυπου πρεσβύτερον καὶ ἀνώτερον, λόγον ἔχον παραδείγματος· τὸ μὲν γὰρ παράδειγμα ὁ πληρέστατος ἦν αὐτοῦ λόγος, φῶς, κ.τ.λ. De Somniis, i. § 13, *Mang.*, i. 632). And again: "But according to the third meaning, he calls the divine Word the sun" (κατὰ δὲ τρίτον σημαίνωμενον ἥλιον καλεῖ τὸν θεῖον λόγον), and proceeds to show how by this sun all wickedness is brought to light, and the sins done secretly and in darkness are made manifest. De Somniis, i. § 15, *Mang.*, i. 634; cf. *ib.*, § 19.

<sup>3</sup> If the Cohort. ad Græcos be assigned to Justin, it directly refers to Philo's works, c. ix.

and of writings long antecedent to the fourth Gospel, and there can be no doubt, we think, that it was derived from them.<sup>1</sup>

We may now proceed to consider other passages adduced by Tischendorf to support his assertion that Justin made use of the fourth Gospel. He says: "Passages of the Johannine Gospel, however, are also not wanting to which passages in Justin refer back. In the Dialogue, ch. 88, he writes of John the Baptist: 'The people believed that he was the Christ, but he cried to them: I am not the Christ, but the voice of a preacher.' This is connected with John i. 20 and 23; for no other Evangelist has reported the first phrase of the reply."<sup>2</sup> Now the passage in Justin, with its context,

<sup>1</sup> *Volkmar*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1860, p. 300; *Der Ursprung*, p. 92 ff.; *Scholten*, Das Ev. n. Johann., p. 9 f.; *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 24 ff.; *Réville*, Hist. du Dogme de la Div. de J. C., 1869, p. 45 ff.; *Vacherot*, Hist. de l'École d'Alexandrie, i. p. 230 ff.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 380 ff.; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 251 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 298 ff.; *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 351; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1857, p. 223 ff.; cf. *Dörner*, Die Lehre v. d. Pers. Christi, 1845, i. p. 414 ff.; *Bretschneider*, Probabilia de Ev. et Ep. Joan. Apost., p. 191 f.; *J. T. Tobler* derives the Johannine Logos doctrine from Philo, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1860, p. 180 ff.; *Ewald* holds that the Epistle to the Hebrews transfers the Logos doctrine of Philo to Christianity. The Apostle Paul's mind was filled with it from the same sources. *Gesch. d. Volkes Isr.*, vi. p. 474 f., p. 638 ff.; *Das Sendschr. a. d. Hebräer*, p. 9 ff.; cf. *Köstlin*, Joh. Lehrbegriff, p. 357 ff., p. 392 ff.; cf. *Lücke*, Comment. Ev. Joh., i. p. 284 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 286 ff., pp. 298, 313, 365; *Der Montanismus*, 1841, p. 155; cf. *Holsten*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1861, p. 233 f., anm. 2; *Hilgenfeld*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1871, p. 189 ff.; *Pfleiderer*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1869, p. 400 ff. That the doctrine of the Logos was enunciated in the *Κήρυγμα Πέτρου* we know from the quotations of Clement of Alexandria. *Strom.*, vi. 5, § 39, 7, § 58.

<sup>2</sup> Es fehlt aber auch nicht an einzelnen Stellen des Johanneischen Evangeliums, auf welche sich Stellen bei Justin zurückbeziehen. Im Dialog Kap. 88 schreibt er von Johannes dem Täufer: "Die Leute glaubten dass er der Christ sei; aber er rief ihnen zu: Ich bin nicht Christus, sondern Stimme eines Predigers." Dies lehnt sich an Joh. i. 20 und 23 an; denn die ersten Worte in der Antwort des Täufers hat kein anderer Evangelist berichtet. Wann wurden, u. s. w. . 33.

reads as follows: "For John sat by the Jordan (*καθεζομένου ἐπὶ τοῦ Ἰορδάνου*) and preached the Baptism of repentance, wearing only a leathern girdle and raiment of camel's hair, and eating nothing but locusts and wild honey; men supposed (*ὑπελάμβανον*) him to be the Christ, wherefore he cried to them: 'I am not the Christ but the voice of one crying: For he cometh (*ἥξει*) who is stronger than I, whose shoes I am not meet (*ικανός*) to bear.'" <sup>1</sup> Now the only ground upon which this passage can be compared with the fourth Gospel is the reply: "I am not the Christ" (*οὐκ εἰμι ὁ Χριστός*), which in John i. 20 reads: *ὅτι ἐγὼ οὐκ εἰμι ὁ Χριστός*: and it is perfectly clear that, if the direct negation occurred in any other Gospel, the difference of the whole passage in the Dialogue would prevent even an apologist from advancing any claim to its dependence on that Gospel. In order to appreciate the nature of the two passages, it may be well to collect the nearest parallels in the Gospel, and compare them with Justin's narrative.

## JUSTIN, DIAL. 88.

Men (*οἱ ἄνθρωποι*) supposed him to be the Christ;

wherefore he cried to them: I am not the Christ (*οὐκ εἰμι ὁ Χριστός*),

## JOHN I. 19—27.

19. And this is the testimony of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him: Who art thou?

24. And they were sent by the Pharisees.

20. And he confessed, and denied not: and confessed<sup>2</sup> that: I am not the Christ (*ὅτι ἐγὼ οὐκ εἰμι ὁ Χριστός*).

<sup>1</sup> Ἰωάννου γὰρ καθεζομένου ἐπὶ τοῦ Ἰορδάνου, καὶ κηρύσσοντος βάπτισμα μετανοίας, καὶ ζῶνῃν δερματίνῃν καὶ ἔνδυμα ἀπὸ τριχῶν καμήλου μόνον φοροῦντος, καὶ μηδὲν ἐσθίουτος πλὴν ἀκρίδας καὶ μέλι ἄγριον, οἱ ἄνθρωποι ὑπελάμβανον αὐτὸν εἶναι τὸν Χριστόν· πρὸς οὓς καὶ αὐτὸς ἐβόα· Οὐκ εἰμι ὁ Χριστός, ἀλλὰ φωνὴ βοῶντος· Ἦξει γὰρ ὁ ἰσχυρότερός μου· οὐ οὐκ εἰμι ἱκανὸς τὰ ὑποδήματα βαστάσαι. Dial. 88.

<sup>2</sup> The second καὶ ὠμολογήσεν is omitted by the Cod. Sin.

JUSTIN, DIAL. 88.

but the voice, of one crying :

For he cometh (ἤξει) who is stronger than I (ὁ ἰσχυρότερός μου), whose shoes I am not meet (ικανός) to bear.<sup>1</sup>

The introductory description of John's dress and habits is quite contrary to the fourth Gospel, but corresponds to some extent with Matt. iii. 4. It is difficult to conceive two accounts more fundamentally different, and the discrepancy becomes more apparent when we consider the scene and actors in the episode. In Justin, it is evident that the hearers of John had received the impression that he was the Christ, and the Baptist becoming aware of it voluntarily disabused their minds of this idea. In the fourth Gospel the words of John are extracted from him ("he confessed and denied not") by emissaries sent by the Pharisees of Jerusalem specially to question him on the subject. The account of Justin betrays no knowledge of any such interrogation. The

<sup>1</sup> Matt. iii. 11 reads: "but he that cometh after me is stronger than I whose shoes I am not worthy to bear." (ὁ δὲ ὀπίσω μου ἐρχόμενος ἰσχυρότερός μου ἐστίν, οὗ οὐκ εἰμὶ ἱκανὸς τὰ ὑποδήματα βαστάσαι.) The context is quite different. Luke iii. 16, more closely resembles the version of the fourth Gospel in this part with the context of the first Synoptic.

<sup>2</sup> The Cod. Sinaiticus, as well as most other important MSS., omits this phrase.

JOHN I. 19—27.

21. And they asked again: Who then? Art thou, Elias? &c. &c.

22. . . . Who art thou? &c. &c.

23. He said: I am the voice of one crying in the desert: Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Isaiah.

25. . . . Why baptisest thou? &c., &c.

26. John answered them, saying: I baptise with water, but in the midst of you standeth one whom ye know not.

27. Who cometh after me (ὁ ὀπίσω μου ἐρχόμενος) who is become before me (ὅς ἔμπροσθέν μου γέγονεν),<sup>2</sup> the thong of whose shoes I am not worthy (ἄξιος) to unloose.

utter difference is brought to a climax by the concluding statement of the fourth Gospel:—

JUSTIN.

For John sat by the Jordan and preached the Baptism of repentance, wearing, &c.

JOHN I. 28.

These things were done in Bethany beyond the river Jordan, where John was baptising.

In fact the scene in the two narratives is as little the same as their details. One can scarcely avoid the conclusion, in reading the fourth Gospel, that it quotes some other account and does not pretend to report the scene direct. For instance, i. 15, "John beareth witness of him, and cried, saying: 'This was he of whom I said: He that cometh after me is become before me, because he was before me,'" &c. V. 19: "And this is the testimony of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him: Who art thou? and he confessed and denied not, and confessed that I am not the Christ," &c. Now, as usual, the Gospel which Justin uses more nearly approximates to our first Synoptic than the other Gospels, although it differs in very important points from that also—still, taken in connection with the third Synoptic, and Acts xiii. 25, this indicates the great probability of the existence of other writings combining the particulars as they occur in Justin. Luke iii. 15, reads: "And as the people were in expectation, and all mused in their hearts concerning John whether he were the Christ, 16. John answered, saying to them all: I indeed baptize you with water, but he that is stronger than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Spirit and with fire," &c.

Whilst, however, with the sole exception of the simple

statement of the Baptist that he was not the Christ, which in all the accounts is clearly involved in the rest of the reply, there is no analogy whatever between the parallel in the fourth Gospel and the passage in Justin, many important circumstances render it certain that Justin did not derive his narrative from that source. We have already<sup>1</sup> fully discussed the peculiarities of Justin's account of the Baptist, and in the context to the very passage before us there are details quite foreign to our Gospels which show that Justin made use of another and different work. When Jesus stepped into the water to be baptized a fire was kindled in the Jordan, and the voice from heaven makes use of words not found in our Gospels; but both the incident and the words are known to have been contained in the Gospel according to the Hebrews and other works. Justin likewise states, in immediate continuation of the passage before us, that Jesus was considered the son of Joseph the carpenter, and himself was a carpenter and accustomed to make ploughs and yokes.<sup>2</sup> The Evangelical work of which Justin made use was obviously different from our Gospels, therefore, and the evident conclusion to which any impartial mind must arrive is, that there is not only not the slightest ground for affirming that Justin quoted the passage before us from the fourth Gospel, from which he so fundamentally differs, but every reason on the contrary to believe that he derived it from a particular Gospel, in all probability the Gospel according to the Hebrews, different from ours.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i. p. 316 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Dial., 88.

<sup>3</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, ii. p. 218; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 162 ff.; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 33; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 377 f.

The next point advanced by Tischendorf is, that on two occasions he speaks of the restoration of sight to persons born blind,<sup>1</sup> the only instance of which in our Gospels is that recorded, John ix. 1. The references in Justin are very vague and general. In the first place he is speaking of the analogies in the life of Jesus with events believed in connection with mythological deities, and he says that he would appear to relate acts very similar to those attributed to Æsculapius when he says that Jesus "healed the lame and paralytic, and the blind from birth (ἐκ γενετῆς πονηροῦς), and raised the dead."<sup>2</sup> In the Dialogue, again referring to Æsculapius, he says that Christ "healed those who were from birth and according to the flesh blind (τοὺς ἐκ γενετῆς καὶ κατὰ τὴν σάρκα πηροῦς), and deaf, and lame."<sup>3</sup> In the fourth Gospel the born-blind is described as (ix. 1) ἄνθρωπος τυφλὸς ἐκ γενετῆς. There is a variation it will be observed in the term employed by Justin, and that such a remark should be seized upon as an argument for the use of the fourth Gospel serves to show the poverty of the evidence for the existence of that work. Without seeking any further, we might at once reply that such general references as those of Justin might well be referred to the common tradition of the Church, which certainly ascribed all kinds of marvellous cures and miracles to Jesus. It is moreover unreasonable to suppose that the only Gospel in which the cure of one born blind was narrated was

*Bretschneider*, Probabilia, p. 192; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 97, p. 156; *Zeller*, Theol. Jahrb., 1845, p. 613 f., 1847, p. 150 ff.; cf. *Ebrard*, who thinks it a combination of Matt. iii. 11, and John i. 19, but admits that it may be from oral tradition. Die evang. Gesch., p. 843.

<sup>1</sup> Apol., i. 22, Dial., 69. On the second occasion Justin seems to apply the "from their birth" not only to the blind, but to the lame and deaf.

<sup>2</sup> Apol., i. 22.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. 69.

that which is the fourth in our Canon. Such a miracle may have formed part of a dozen similar collections extant at the time of Justin, and in no case could such an allusion be recognized as any evidence of the use of the fourth Gospel. But in the Dialogue, along with this remark, Justin couples the statement that although the people saw such cures: "They asserted them to be magical art; for they also ventured to call him a magician and deceiver of the people."<sup>1</sup> This is not found in our Gospels, but traces of the same tradition are met with elsewhere, as we have already mentioned;<sup>2</sup> and it is probable that Justin either found all these particulars in the Gospel of which he made use, or that he refers to traditions familiar amongst the early Christians.

Tischendorf's next point is that Justin quotes the words of Zechariah xii. 10, with the same variation from the text of the Septuagint as John xix. 37—"They shall look on him whom they pierced" (*ὄψονται εἰς ὃν ἐξεκέντησαν*<sup>3</sup> instead of *ἐπιβλέφονται πρὸς μὲ, ἀνθ' ὃν κατωρχήσαντο*), arising out of an emendation of the translation of the Hebrew original. Tischendorf says: "nothing can be more opposed to probability, than the acceptance that John and Justin have here, independently of each other, followed a translation of the Hebrew text which elsewhere has remained unknown to us."<sup>4</sup> The fact is, however, that the translation which has been fol-

<sup>1</sup> . . . φαντασίαν μαγικὴν γίνεσθαι ἔλεγον. Καὶ γὰρ μίγον εἶναι αὐτὸν ἐτόλμων λέγειν καὶ λαοπλάνον. Dial. 69.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. i. p. 324 f.

<sup>3</sup> Justin has, Apol. i. 52, *ὄψονται εἰς ὃν ἐξεκέντησαν*. Dial. 14, καὶ ὄψεται ὁ λαὸς ἑμῶν καὶ γνωριεὶ εἰς ὃν ἐξεκέντησαν, and, Dial. 32, speaking of the two comings of Christ; the first, in which he was pierced, (*ἐξεκεντήθη*), "and the second in which ye shall know whom ye have pierced;" *δευτέραν δὲ ὅτε ἐπιγνώσεσθε εἰς ὃν ἐξεκέντησατε*.

<sup>4</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 34.

lowed is not elsewhere unknown: We meet with the same variation, much earlier, in the only book of the New Testament which Justin mentions, and with which, therefore, he was beyond any doubt well acquainted, Rev. i. 7: "Behold he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him (*ὄψεται αὐτόν*), and they which pierced (*ἔξεκέντησαν*) him, and all the tribes of the earth shall bewail him. Yea, Amen." This is a direct reference to the passage in Zech. xii. 10. If Justin derived his variation from either of the Canonical works, there can be no doubt that it must have been from the Apocalypse. It will be remembered that the quotation in the Gospel: "They shall look upon him whom they pierced," is made solely in reference to the thrust of the lance in the side of Jesus, while that of the Apocalypse is a connection of the prophecy with the second coming of Christ, which, except in a spiritual sense, is opposed to the fourth Gospel. Now, Justin upon each occasion quotes the whole passage also in reference to the second coming of Christ as the Apocalypse does, and this alone settles the point so far as these two sources are concerned. The correction of the Septuagint version, which has thus been traced back as far as A.D. 68 when the Apocalypse was composed, was noticed by Jerome in his Commentary on the text;<sup>1</sup> and Aquila, a contemporary of Irenæus, and later Symmachus and Theodotion, as well as others, corrected the error and adopted *ἔξεκέντησαν*. Ten important MSS., at least, have the reading of Justin and the Apocalypse, and these MSS. likewise frequently agree with the

<sup>1</sup> "Quod ibi (1 Regg. ii. 18) errore interpretationis accidit, etiam hic factum deprehendimus. Si enim legatur *Ducaru*, *ἔξεκέντησαν*, i.e., compunxerunt sive confixerunt accipitur: sin autem contrario ordine, literis commutatis *Rucadu*, *ὠρχήσαντο*, i.e., saltaverunt intelligitur et ob similitudinem literarum error est natus."

other peculiar readings of Justin's text. In all probability, as Credner, who long ago pointed out all these circumstances which are lost upon Tischendorf, conjectured, an emendation of the version of the LXX. had early been made, partly in Christian interest and partly for the critical improvement of the text, and this amended version was used by Justin and earlier Christian writers.<sup>1</sup>

Every consideration is opposed to the dependence of Justin upon the fourth Gospel for this variation. His reading existed long before that Gospel was written in a work with which he declared himself acquainted, whilst not only is his use of the Gospel in any case unproved, but in this instance the quotation is applied by the Gospel in a different connection from Justin's, who in this also agrees with the earlier Apocalypse. The whole argument based on this text falls to the ground.

The next and last point advanced by Tischendorf is a passage in Apol. i. 61, which is compared with John iii. 3—5, and in order to show the exact character of the two passages, we shall at once place them in parallel columns :—

## JUSTIN, APOL. I. 61.

For the Christ also said :

Unless ye be born again (*ἀναγεννηθήτε*) ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Now that it is impossible for those who have once been born to go (*ἐμβῆναι*) into the matrices of the parents<sup>2</sup> (*εἰς τὰς μήτρας τῶν τεκουσῶν*) is evident to all.

## JOHN III. 3—5.

3. Jesus answered and said unto him: Verily, verily, I say unto thee: Except a man be born from above (*γεννηθῆ ἄνωθεν*) he cannot see the kingdom of God.

4. Nicodemus saith unto him: How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter (*εἰσελθεῖν*) a second time into his mother's womb (*εἰς τὴν κοιλίαν τῆς μητρὸς αὐτοῦ*) and be born?

<sup>1</sup> Credner, Beiträge, ii. p. 293 ff.; Hilgenfeld, Dio Evv. Justins, p. 49 ff.; Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 37; Davidson, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 378.

<sup>2</sup> Τεκούσα; a mother, instead of μήτηρ.

JUSTIN, APOL. I. 61.

Καὶ γὰρ ὁ Χριστὸς εἶπεν Ἄν μὴ ἀναγεννηθῆτε, οὐ μὴ εἰσέλθητε εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν. Ὅτι δὲ καὶ ἀδύνατον εἰς τὰς μήτρας τῶν τεκουσῶν τοὺς ἀπαξ γεννωμένους ἐμβῆναι, φανερὸν πᾶσιν ἐστί.

JOHN III. 3—5.

5. Jesus answered: Verily, verily, I say unto thee: Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.<sup>2</sup>

3. Ἀπεκρίθη Ἰησοῦς καὶ εἶπεν αὐτῷ Ἀμὴν ἀμὴν λέγω σοι, ἐὰν μὴ τις γεννηθῆ ἄνωθεν, οὐ δύναται ἰδεῖν τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ.

4. Λέγει πρὸς αὐτὸν ὁ Νικόδημος Πῶς δύναται ἄνθρωπος γεννηθῆναι γέροντων; μὴ δύναται εἰς τὴν κοιλίαν τῆς μητρὸς αὐτοῦ δεῦτερον εἰσελθεῖν καὶ γεννηθῆναι;

5. Ἀπεκρίθη Ἰησοῦς Ἀμὴν ἀμὴν λέγω σοι, ἐὰν μὴ τις γεννηθῆ ἐξ ὕδατος καὶ πνεύματος, οὐ δύναται εἰσελθεῖν εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τοῦ θεοῦ.<sup>4</sup>

This is the most important passage by which apologists endeavour to establish the use by Justin of the fourth Gospel, and it is that upon which the whole claim may be said to rest. We shall be able to appreciate the nature of the case by the weakness of its strongest evidence. The first point which must have struck any attentive reader, must have been the singular difference of the language of Justin, and the absence of the characteristic peculiarities of the Johannine Gospel. The double "verily, verily," which occurs twice even in these three verses, and constantly throughout the Gospel,<sup>5</sup> is absent in Justin; and apart from the total difference of the form

<sup>1</sup> The Cod. Sinaiticus reads: "he cannot see."

<sup>2</sup> The Cod. Sinaiticus has been altered here to "of heaven."

<sup>3</sup> The Cod. Sinaiticus reads ἰδεῖν for εἰσελθεῖν εἰς here.

<sup>4</sup> The Cod. Sin. has τῶν οὐρανῶν substituted for τοῦ θεοῦ by a later hand, but this is only supported by a very few obscure and unimportant codices. The Codices Alex. (A) and Vatic. (U), as well as all the most ancient MSS., read τοῦ θεοῦ.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. i. 51; iii. 11; v. 19, 24, 25; vi. 26, 32, 47, 53; viii. 34, 51, 58; x. 1, 7; xii. 24; xiii. 16, 20, 21, 38; xiv. 12; xvi. 20, 23; xxi. 18, &c., &c.

in which the whole passage is given (the episode of Nicodemus being entirely ignored), and omitting minor differences, the following linguistic variations occur :

Justin has :

ἀν μὴ ἀναγεννηθῆτε	instead of	ἐὰν μὴ τις γεννηθῆ ἄνωθεν
οὐ μὴ εἰσελθῆτε εἰς	„	οὐ δύναται ἰδεῖν <sup>1</sup>
βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν	„	βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ
ἀδύνατον	„	μὴ δύναται
τὰς μήτρας	„	τὴν κοιλίαν
τῶν τεκουσῶν	„	τῆς μητρὸς αὐτοῦ
ἐμβῆναι	„	εἰσελθεῖν
τοὺς ἀπαξ γεννωμένους	„	ἄνθρωπος γεννηθῆναι γέροντων

Indeed it is impossible to imagine a more complete difference, both in form and language, and it seems to us that there does not exist a single linguistic trace by which the passage in Justin can be connected with the fourth Gospel. The fact that Justin knows nothing of the expression *γεννηθῆ ἄνωθεν* (“born from above”), upon which the whole statement in the fourth Gospel turns, but uses a totally different word, *ἀναγεννηθῆτε* (born again), is of great significance. Tischendorf wishes to translate *ἄνωθεν* “anew” (or again), as the version of Luther and the authorised English translation read, and thus render the *ἀναγεννηθῆναι* of Justin a fair equivalent for it; but even this would not alter the fact that so little does Justin quote the fourth Gospel, that he has not even the test word of the passage. In no case can *ἄνωθεν*, however, here signify anything but “from above,” and this is not only its natural meaning, but it is confirmed by the equivalent Syriac expression in the Peschito version, the nearest language to that originally used.<sup>2</sup> The word is

<sup>1</sup> It is very forced to jump to the end of the fifth verse to get *εἰσελθεῖν εἰς* and even in that case the Cod. Sin. reads again precisely as in the third *ἰδεῖν*.

<sup>2</sup> *Suicer*, Thesaurus s. v. *ἄνωθεν*; *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 253; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Ev. Justin's, p. 214; *Lightfoot*, Horæ Hebr. et Talm. on John

repeatedly used in the fourth Gospel, and always with the same sense, "from above," "from heaven,"<sup>1</sup> and it is repeated in confirmation, and marking how completely the emphasis of the saying rests upon the expression, in the seventh verse: "Marvel not that I said unto thee: ye must be born from above" (*γεννηθῆναι ἄνωθεν*). This signification, moreover, is manifestly confirmed by the context, and intended as the point of the whole lesson. The explanation of the term "born from above" is given in verses 5, 6. "Except a man be born of water and of Spirit<sup>2</sup> he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. 6. That which hath been born of the flesh is flesh, and that which hath been born of the Spirit is Spirit." The birth "of the Spirit" is the birth "from above," which is essential to entrance into the kingdom of God.<sup>3</sup> The sense of the passage in Justin is different and much more simple. He is speaking of regeneration through baptism, and the manner in which converts are consecrated to God when they are made new (*καινοποιηθέντες*) through Christ. After they are taught to fast and pray for the remission of their sins, he says: "They are then taken by us where there is water, that they may be regenerated ("born again," *ἀναγεννώνται*), by the same manner of regeneration (being born again, *ἀναγεννήσεως*) by which we also were regenerated (born again, *ἀναγεννήθημεν*). For in the name of the Father of the Universe the Lord God, and of our Saviour Jesus Christ, and of the Holy

iii. 3; Works, xii. p. 254 ff.; Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 36; Davidson, Introd. N. T., iii. p. 375; Bretschneider, Probabilia, p. 193; Weizsäcker does not deny this. Unters. evang. Gesch., p. 228; Lücke, Comment. Ev. Joh., i. p. 516 ff.; Zeller, Theol. Jahrb., 1855, p. 140.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. i. 31; xix. 11, 23.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Ezekiel xxxvi. 25—27.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Lightfoot, Horæ Hebr. et Talm. Works, xii. p. 256.

Spirit they then make the washing with the water. For the Christ also said, ‘unless ye be born again (*ἀναγεννηθῆτε*), ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.’ Now that it is impossible for those who have once been born to go into the matrices of the parents is evident to all.” And then he quotes Isaiah i. 16—20, “Wash you, make you clean, &c.,” and then proceeds: “And regarding this (Baptism) we have been taught this reason. Since at our first birth we were born without our knowledge, and perforce, &c., and brought up in evil habits and wicked ways, therefore in order that we should not continue children of necessity and ignorance, but become children of election and knowledge, and obtain in the water remission of sins which we had previously committed, the name of the Father of the Universe and Lord God is pronounced over him who desires to be born again (*ἀναγεννηθῆναι*), and has repented of his sins, &c.”<sup>1</sup> Now it is clear that whereas Justin speaks simply of regeneration by baptism, the fourth Gospel indicates a later development of the doctrine by spiritualizing the idea, and requiring not only regeneration through the water (“Except a man be born of water”), but that a man should be born from above (“and of the Spirit”), not merely *ἀναγεννηθῆναι*, but *ἀνωθεν γεννηθῆναι*. The word used by Justin is that which was commonly employed in the Church for regeneration, and other instances of it occur in the New Testament.<sup>2</sup>

The idea of regeneration or being born again, as essential to conversion, was quite familiar to the Jews themselves, and Lightfoot gives instances of this from Talmudic writings: “If any one become a proselyte he is like a child ‘new born.’ The Gentile that is

<sup>1</sup> Apol. i. 61.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. 1 Peter i. 3, 28.

made a proselyte and the servant that is made free he is like a child new born."<sup>1</sup> This is, of course, based upon the belief in special privileges granted to the Jews, and the Gentile convert admitted to a share in the benefits of the Messiah became a Jew by spiritual new birth. It must be remembered, however, that Justin is addressing the Roman emperors, who would not understand the expression that it was necessary to be "born again" in order to enter the kingdom of heaven. He, therefore, explains that he does not mean a physical new birth by men already born; and we contend that not only may this explanation be regarded as natural, under the circumstances, and independent of any written source, but the absolute and entire difference of his language from that of the fourth Gospel renders it certain that it could not in any case be derived from that Gospel.

Justin in giving the words of Jesus clearly professed to make an exact quotation:<sup>2</sup> "For Christ also said: Unless ye be born again, &c.," and as the expressions which he quotes differ in every respect, in language and sense, from the parallel in the fourth Gospel, it seems quite absurd to argue that they must be derived from that Gospel. Such an argument assumes the utterly untenable premiss that sayings of Jesus which are maintained to be historical were not recorded in more than four Gospels, and indeed in this instance were limited to one. This is not only in itself preposterous, but historically untrue,<sup>3</sup> and a moment of consideration must convince every impartial mind that an express quotation of a supposed historical saying cannot reasonably be asserted to be taken from a parallel in one of our Gospels, from which

<sup>1</sup> *Lightfoot, Works*, xii. p. 255 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Bretschneider, Probabilia*, p. 193.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Luke i. 1.

it differs in every particular of language and circumstance, simply because that Gospel happens to be the only one now surviving which contains particulars somewhat similar.<sup>1</sup> The express quotation fundamentally differs from the fourth Gospel, and the natural explanation of Justin which follows is not a quotation at all, and likewise fundamentally differs from the Johannine parallel. Justin not only ignores here the whole episode in the fourth Gospel in which the passage occurs, but both here and throughout the whole of his writings knows nothing whatever of Nicodemus, and all the characteristic points are wanting which could constitute a *prima facie* case for examination. The accident of survival is almost the only justification of the claim in favour of the fourth Gospel to be the source of Justin's quotation. On the other hand, we have many strong indications of another source. In our first Synoptic (xviii. 3), we find the traces of another version of the saying of Jesus, much more nearly corresponding with the quotation of Justin: "And he said, verily I say unto you: Except ye be turned and become as the little children ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."<sup>2</sup> The last phrase of this saying is literally the same as the quotation of Justin, and gives his expression, "kingdom of heaven," so characteristic of his Gospel, and so foreign to the Johannine. We meet with a similar quotation in connection with baptism, still more closely agreeing with Justin, in the Clementine Homilies, xi. 26: "Verily I say unto you: Except ye be born again (*ἀναγεννηθῆτε*) by living water in the name of Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, ye shall not

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 253 f.

<sup>2</sup> καὶ εἶπεν Ἀμὴν λέγω ὑμῖν, εἰ μὴ στραφῆτε καὶ γίνεσθε ὡς τὰ παιδία, οὐ μὴ εἰσελθῆτε εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν. *Matt.* xviii. 3.

enter into the kingdom of heaven."<sup>1</sup> Here again we have both the ἀναγεννηθῆτε, and the βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν, as well as the reference only to water in the baptism, and this is strong confirmation of the existence of a version of the passage, different from the Johannine, from which Justin quotes. As both the Clementines and Justin made use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, the most competent critics have, with reason, adopted the conclusion that the passage we are discussing was derived from that Gospel; at any rate it cannot for a moment be maintained as a quotation from our fourth Gospel,<sup>2</sup> and it is of no value as evidence for its existence.

If we turn for a moment from this last of the points of evidence adduced by Tischendorf for the use of the fourth Gospel by Justin, to consider how far the circumstances of the history of Jesus narrated by Justin bear upon this quotation, we have a striking confirmation of the results we have otherwise attained. Not only is there a total absence from his writings of the peculiar terminology and characteristic expressions of the fourth Gospel, but there

<sup>1</sup> Ἀμὴν ὑμῖν λέγω, εἰ μὴ ἀναγεννηθῆτε ὕδατι ζῶντι, εἰς ὄνομα Πατρὸς, Υἱοῦ, ἀγίου Πνεύματος, οὐ μὴ εἰσέλθητε εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν τῶν οὐρανῶν. Hom. xi. 26. Cf. *Recogn.* vi. 9: "Amen dico vobis, nisi quis denuo renatus fuerit ex aqua, non introibit in regna caelorum." Cf. *Clem. Hom. Epitome*, § 18. In this much later compilation the passage, altered and manipulated, is of no interest. *Uhlhorn*, *Die Homilien u. Recogn.*, 1854, p. 43 ff.; *Schlicmann*, *Die Clementinen*, 1844, p. 334 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 352; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1857, p. 230 ff.; *Bretschneider*, *Probabilia*, p. 179 ff., p. 192 f.; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 252 ff.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 374 f.; *Gieseler*, *Enst. schr. Evv.*, p. 14, cf. p. 145 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evv. Justins*, p. 214 ff., p. 358 ff.; *Das Evang. Joh. u. s. w.*, 1849, p. 151, anm. 1; *Lützelberger*, *Die kirchl. Tradition üb. Ap. Joh.*, u. s. w., 1840, p. 122 ff.; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 34 ff.; *Das Ev. Joh.*, p. 8 f.; *Schwegler*, *Der Montanismus*, p. 184, anm. 86; *Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 218 ff.; *Volkmar*, *Justin d. Märt.*, 1853, p. 18 ff.; *Zeller*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1845, p. 614; 1847, p. 152; 1855, p. 138 ff.

is not an allusion made to any one of the occurrences exclusively narrated by that Gospel, although many of these, and many parts of the Johannine discourses of Jesus, would have been peculiarly suitable for his purpose. We have already pointed out the remarkable absence of any use of the expressions by which the Logos doctrine is stated in the prologue. We may now point out that Justin knows nothing whatever of the special miracles of the fourth Gospel. He is apparently quite ignorant even of the raising of Lazarus: on the other hand, he gives representations of the birth, life, and death of Jesus, which are ignored by the Johannine Gospel, and are indeed opposed to its whole conception of Jesus as the Logos; and when he refers to circumstances which are also narrated in that Gospel, his account is different from that which it gives. Justin perpetually refers to the birth of Jesus by the Virgin of the race of David and the Patriarchs; his Logos thus becomes man,<sup>1</sup> (not "*flesh*,"—*ἄνθρωπος*, not *σὰρξ*); he is born in a cave in Bethlehem;<sup>2</sup> he grows in stature and intellect by the use of ordinary means like other men; he is accounted the son of Joseph the carpenter and Mary: he himself works as a carpenter, and makes ploughs and yokes.<sup>3</sup> When Jesus is baptized by John, a fire is kindled in Jordan; and Justin knows nothing of John's express declaration in the fourth Gospel, that Jesus is the Messiah, the Son of God.<sup>4</sup> Justin refers to the change of name of Simon in connection with his recognition of the Master as "Christ the Son of God,"<sup>5</sup> which is narrated quite differently in the fourth Gospel (i. 40—42), where, indeed, such a declaration is put into the mouth of

<sup>1</sup> Dial., 100, &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Dial., 88.

<sup>4</sup> Dial., 88.

<sup>2</sup> Dial., 78.

<sup>5</sup> Dial., 100.

Nathaniel (i. 49), of which Justin knows nothing. Justin knows nothing of Nicodemus, either in connection with the statement regarding the necessity of being "born from above," or with the entombment (xix. 39). He has the prayer and agony in the garden,<sup>1</sup> of which the fourth Gospel knows nothing, as well as the cries on the cross, which the Gospel ignores. Then, according to Justin, the last supper takes place on the 14th Nisan,<sup>2</sup> whilst the fourth Gospel, ignoring the Passover and last supper, makes the last meal be eaten on the 13th Nisan (John xiii. 1f., cf. xviii. 28). He likewise contradicts the fourth Gospel, in limiting the work of Jesus to one year. In fact, it is impossible for writings, so full of quotations of the words of Jesus and of allusions to the events of his life, more completely to ignore or vary from the fourth Gospel throughout; and if it could be shown that Justin was acquainted with such a work, it would follow certainly that he did not consider it an Apostolical or authoritative composition.

We may add that as Justin so distinctly and directly refers to the Apostle John as the author of the Apocalypse,<sup>3</sup> there is confirmation of the conclusion, otherwise arrived at, that he did not, and could not, know the Gospel and also ascribe it to him. Finally, the description which Justin gives of the manner of teaching of Jesus excludes the idea that he knew the fourth Gospel. "Brief and concise were the sentences uttered by him: for he was no Sophist, but his word was the power of God."<sup>4</sup> No

<sup>1</sup> Dial., 99, 103.

<sup>2</sup> "And it is written that on the day of the Passover you seized him, and likewise during the Passover you crucified him." Dial., 111; cf. Apol. i. 67; Matt. xxvi. 2, 17 ff., 30, 57.

<sup>3</sup> Dial., 81.

<sup>4</sup> Βραχείς δὲ καὶ σύντομοι παρ' αὐτοῦ λόγοι γεγόνασιν. Οὐ γὰρ σοφιστῆς ἱπῆρχεν, ἀλλὰ δύναμις θεοῦ ὁ λόγος αὐτοῦ ἦν. Apol. i. 14.

one could for a moment assert that this description applies to the long and artificial discourses of the fourth Gospel, whilst, on the other hand, it eminently describes the style of teaching with which we are acquainted in the Synoptics, with which the Gospel according to the Hebrews, in all its forms, was so nearly allied.

The inevitable conclusion at which we must arrive is that, so far from indicating any acquaintance with the fourth Gospel, the writings of Justin not only do not furnish the slightest evidence of its existence, but offer presumptive testimony against its Apostolical origin.

Tischendorf only devotes a short note to Hegesippus,<sup>1</sup> and does not pretend to find in the fragments of his writings, preserved to us by Eusebius, or the details of his life which he has recorded, any evidence for our Gospels. Apologists generally admit that this source, at least, is dry of all testimony for the fourth Gospel, but Canon Westcott cannot renounce so important a witness without an effort, and he therefore boldly says: "When he, (Hegesippus) speaks of 'the door of Jesus' in his account of the death of St. James, there can be little doubt that he alludes to the language of our Lord recorded by St. John."<sup>2</sup> The passage to which Canon Westcott refers, but which he does not quote, is as follows:—"Certain, therefore, of the seven heretical parties amongst the people, already described by me in the Memoirs, inquired of him, what was the door of Jesus; and he declared this (*τοῦτον*—Jesus) to be the Saviour. From which some believed that Jesus is the Christ. But the aforementioned heretics did not believe either a resurrection, or a coming to render to every one

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 19, anm. 1.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 182 f.

according to his works. As many as believed, however, did so, through James." The rulers fearing that the people would cause a tumult, from considering Jesus to be the Messiah (*Χριστός*), entreat James to persuade them concerning Jesus, and prevent their being deceived by him; and in order that he may be heard by the multitude, they place James upon a wing of the temple, and cry to him: "O just man, whom all ought to believe, inasmuch as the people are led astray after Jesus, the crucified, declare plainly to us what is the door of Jesus."<sup>1</sup> To find in this a reference to the fourth Gospel, requires a good deal of ignorant ingenuity, or apologetic partiality. It is perfectly clear that, as an allusion to John x. 7, 9: "I am the door," the question: "What is the door of Jesus?" is mere nonsense, and the reply of James totally irrelevant. Such a question in reference to the discourse in the fourth Gospel, moreover, in the mouths of the antagonistic Scribes and Pharisees, is an interpretation which is obviously too preposterous. Various emendations of the text have been proposed to obviate what has been regarded as a difficulty in the passage, but none of these have been adopted, and it has now been generally accepted, that *θύρα* is used in an idiomatic sense. The word is very frequently employed in such a manner, or symbolically, in the New Testament,<sup>2</sup> and by the Fathers.

<sup>1</sup> Τινές οὖν τῶν ἐπτὰ αἰρέσεων τῶν ἐν τῷ λαῷ, τῶν προγεγραμμένων μοι ἐν τοῖς ὑπομνήμασιν, ἐπυνθάνοντο αὐτοῦ, τίς ἡ θύρα τοῦ Ἰησοῦ. Καὶ ἔλεγε τοῦτον εἶναι τὸν Σωτῆρα. Ἐξ ὧν τινές ἐπίστευσαν, ὅτι Ἰησοῦς ἐστὶν ὁ Χριστός. Αἱ δὲ αἰρέσεις αἱ προειρημέται οὐκ ἐπίστευον οὔτε ἀνάστασιν, οὔτε ἐρχόμενον ἀποδοῦναι ἐκάστω πατὰ τὰ ἔργα αὐτοῦ. Ὅσοι δὲ καὶ ἐπίστευσαν, διὰ Ἰάκωβον. . . . . Δίκαιε, ᾧ πάντες πείθεσθαι ὀφείλομεν, ἐπεὶ ὁ λαὸς πλανᾶται ὀπίσω Ἰησοῦ τοῦ σταυρωθέντος, ἀπιγγεῖλον ἡμῖν τίς ἡ θύρα τοῦ Ἰησοῦ. *Eusebius*, II. E., ii. 23.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Acts xiv. 27; 1 Cor. xvi. 9; 2 Cor. ii. 12; Col. iv. 3; James v. 9; Rev. iii. 8, 20; iv. 1.

The Jews were well acquainted with a similar use of the word in the Old Testament, in some of the Messianic Psalms, as for instance : Ps. cxviii. 19, 20 (cxvii. 19, 20 Sept.). 19, "Open to me the gates (πύλας) of righteousness; entering into them, I will give praise to the Lord;" 20, "This is the gate (ἡ πύλη) of the Lord, the righteous shall enter into it."<sup>1</sup> Quoting this passage, Clement of Alexandria remarks: "But explaining the meaning of the prophet, Barnabas adds: Many gates (πυλών) being open, that which is in righteousness is in Christ, in which all those who enter are blessed."<sup>2</sup> Grabe explains the passage of Hegesippus, by a reference to the frequent allusions in Scripture to the two ways: one of light, the other of darkness; the one leading to life, the other to death; as well as the simile of two gates which is coupled with them, as in Matt. vii. 13 ff. He, therefore, explains the question of the rulers: "What is the door of Jesus?" as an inquiry into the judgment of James concerning him: whether he was a teacher of truth or a deceiver of the people; whether belief in him was the way and gate of life and salvation, or of death and perdition.<sup>3</sup> He refers as an illustration to the Epistle of Barnabas, xviii.: "There are two ways of doctrine and authority: one of light, the other of darkness. But there is a great difference between the two ways."<sup>4</sup> The Epistle, under the symbol of the two ways, classifies the whole of the moral

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Ps. xxiv. 7—8 (xxiii. 7—8 Sept.)

<sup>2</sup> ἐξηγούμενος δὲ τὸ ῥητὸν τοῦ προφήτου Βαρνάβας ἐπιφέρει· "πολλῶν πυλῶν ἀνεφνευμένων, ἡ ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ αὐτῇ ἐστὶν ἡ ἐν Χριστῷ, ἐν ᾗ μακάριοι πάντες οἱ εἰσελθόντες." Strom. vi. 8, § 64. This passage is not to be found in the Epistle of Barnabas.

<sup>3</sup> Spicil. Patr., ii. p. 254.

<sup>4</sup> Ὅδοι δύο εἰσὶν διδασχῆς καὶ ἐξουσίας, ἡ τε τοῦ φωτὸς, καὶ ἡ τοῦ σκότους. Διαφορὰ δὲ πολλὴ τῶν δύο ὁδῶν. Barnabæ Ep. xviii.

law.<sup>1</sup> In the Clementine Homilies, xviii. 17, there is a version of the saying, Matt. vii. 13 f., derived from another source, in which "way" is more decidedly even than in our first Synoptic made the equivalent of "gate:" "Enter ye through the narrow and straightened way (ὁδός) through which ye shall enter into life." Eusebius himself, who has preserved the fragment, evidently understood it distinctly in the same sense, and he gave its true meaning in another of his works, where he paraphrases the question into an enquiry, as to the opinion which James held concerning Jesus (τίνα περὶ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἔχοι δόξαν).<sup>2</sup> This view is supported by many learned men, and Routh has pointed out that Ernesti considered he would have been right in making διδαχὴ, doctrine, teaching, the equivalent of θύρα, although he admits that Eusebius does not once use it in his history, in connection with Christian doctrine.<sup>3</sup> He might, however, have instanced this passage, in which it is clearly used in this sense, and so explained by Eusebius. In any other sense the question is simple nonsense. There is evidently no intention on the part of the Scribes and Pharisees here to ridicule, in asking: "What is the door of Jesus?" but they desire James to declare plainly to the people, what is the teaching of

<sup>1</sup> In like manner the Clementine Homilies give a peculiar version of Dout. xxx. 15: "Behold I have set before thy face the way of life, and the way of death." Ἴδὸν τέθεικα πρὸ προσώπου σου τὴν ὁδὸν τῆς ζωῆς, καὶ τὴν ὁδὸν τοῦ θανάτου. Hom. xviii. 17, cf. vii. 7.

<sup>2</sup> Præp. Evang. iii. 7. Routh, Rel. Sacr. i. p. 235.

<sup>3</sup> Si ego in Glossis ponerem: θύρα, διδαχὴ, rectum esset. Sed respicerem ad loca Græcorum theologorum γ. c. Eusebii in Hist. Eccl. ubi non semel θύρα Χριστοῦ (sic) de doctrina Christiana dicitur." *Dissert. De Usu Glossariorum.* Routh, Reliq. Sacræ. i. p. 236. Donaldson gives as the most probable meaning: "To what is it that Jesus is to lead us? And James' answer is therefore: 'To salvation.'" Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 190, note.

Jesus, and his personal pretension. To suppose that the rulers of the Jews set James upon a wing of the temple, in order that they might ask him a question, for the benefit of the multitude, based upon a discourse in the fourth Gospel, unknown to the Synoptics, and even in relation to which such an inquiry as: "What is the door of Jesus?" becomes mere ironical nonsense, surpasses all that we could have imagined, even of apologetic zeal.

We have already<sup>1</sup> said all that is necessary with regard to Hegesippus, in connection with the Synoptics, and need not add more here. It is certain that had he mentioned our Gospels, and we may say particularly the fourth, the fact would have been recorded by Eusebius. This first historian of the Christian Church, whose *ὑπομνήματα* were composed during the time of the Roman Bishop Eleutherus, "A.D. 177 (182?), 193,"<sup>2</sup> presents the suggestive phenomenon of a Christian of learning and extensive observation, even at that late date, who had travelled throughout the Christian communities with a view to ascertaining the state of the Church, who made exclusive use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, displayed no knowledge of our Gospels, and whose only Canon was the Law, the Prophets, and the words of the Lord, which he derived from the Hebrew Gospel, and probably from oral tradition.

In Papias of Hierapolis<sup>3</sup> we have a similar phenomenon: a Bishop of the Christian Church, flourishing in the second half of the second century, who recognized

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i. p. 429 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 19, anm. 1.

<sup>3</sup> See vol. i. p. 444 ff.

none of our Gospels, made use of the Gospel according to the Hebrews, and set oral tradition above all written documents with which he was acquainted. It is perfectly clear that the works of Matthew and Mark, regarding which he records such important particulars, are not the Gospels in our Canon, which pass under their names, and there is no reason to suppose that he referred to the fourth Gospel or made use of it. He is, therefore, at least, a total blank so far as the Johanneine Gospel and our third Synoptic are concerned, but he is more than this, and it may, we think, be concluded that Papias was not acquainted with any Gospels which he regarded as Apostolic compositions, or authoritative documents. It is impossible that, knowing, and recognizing the Apostolic origin and authority of, such Gospels, he could have spoken of them in such terms, and held them so cheap in comparison with tradition, or that he should have undertaken, as he undoubtedly did, to supplement and correct them by his work, which Eusebius describes. "For I have not, like the multitude," he says, "taken pleasure in those who spoke much, but in those who taught the truth; neither in those who recorded alien commandments, but in those who recall those delivered by the Lord to the faith, and which proceed from the truth itself. If it happened that any one came, who had associated with the Presbyters, I inquired minutely after the words of the Presbyters, what Andrew or what Peter said, or what Philip or what Thomas or James, or what John or Matthew, or what any other of the disciples of the Lord said; what Aristion and the Presbyter John, the disciples of the Lord, say. For I hold that what was to be derived from books was not so profitable as that from the living and

abiding voice (of tradition)."<sup>1</sup> This depreciation of books, and anxiety to know "what John or Matthew, or the other disciples of the Lord said," is incompatible with the supposition that he was acquainted with Gospels<sup>2</sup> which he attributed to those Apostles. Had he expressed any recognition of the fourth Gospel, Eusebius would certainly have mentioned the fact, and this silence of Papias is strong presumptive evidence against the Johanne Gospel.<sup>3</sup>

Tischendorf's main argument in regard to the Phrygian Bishop is, that his silence does not make Papias a witness against the fourth Gospel, and he maintains that the omission of any mention by Eusebius of the use of this Gospel in the work of Papias is not singular, and does not involve the conclusion that he did not know it, inasmuch as it was not, he affirms, the purpose of Eusebius to record the mention or use of the books of the New Testament which were not disputed.<sup>4</sup> This reasoning, however, is opposed to the practice and express declaration of Eusebius himself, who says: "But in the course of the history I shall, with the successions (from the Apostles), carefully intimate what ecclesiastical writers according to the time made use of the Antilegomena (or disputed

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 39.

<sup>2</sup> It is evident that Papias did not regard the works by "Matthew" and "Mark" which he mentions, as of any authority. Indeed, all that he reports regarding the latter is merely apologetic, and in deprecation of criticism.

<sup>3</sup> *Zeller*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1845, p. 652 ff.; 1847, p. 148 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 344; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1865, p. 334; *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 23 f.; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 16 ff.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 371; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 61; *Renan*, *Vie de Jésus*, xiii<sup>me</sup> ed., 1867, p. lviii. f.; *Strauss*, *Das Leben Jesu*, 1861, p. 62; *Lützelberger*, *Die kirchl. Tradition üb. Ap. Joh.*, u. s. w., 1840, p. 89 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 112 ff.

writings), and what has been stated as well regarding the collected (*ἐνδιαθήκοι*) and Homologoumena (or accepted writings), as regarding those which are not of this kind.”<sup>1</sup> The presumption, therefore, naturally is that, as Eusebius did not mention the fact, he did not find any reference to the fourth Gospel in the work of Papias. This presumption is confirmed by the circumstance that when Eusebius writes, elsewhere (H. E. iii. 24), of the order of the Gospels, and the composition of John’s Gospel, he has no greater authority to give for his account than mere tradition: “they say” (*φασί*). It is scarcely probable that when Papias collected from the Presbyter the facts concerning Matthew and Mark he would not also have inquired about the Gospel by John, had he known it, and recorded what he had heard, or that Eusebius would not have quoted the account.

Proceeding from this merely negative argument, Tischendorf endeavours to show that not only is Papias not a witness against the fourth Gospel, but that he presents testimony in its favour. The first reason he advances is that Eusebius states: “The same (Papias) made use of testimonies out of the first Epistle of John, and likewise of Peter.”<sup>2</sup> On the supposed identity of the authorship of the Epistle and Gospel, Tischendorf, as in the case of Polycarp, claims this as evidence for the fourth Gospel. Eusebius, however, does not quote the passages upon which he bases this statement, and knowing his inaccuracy and the hasty and uncritical manner in which he

<sup>1</sup> Προϊούσης δὲ τῆς ἱστορίας, προὔργου ποιήσομαι σὺν ταῖς διαδοχαῖς ὑποσημῆσθαι, τίνες τῶν κατὰ χρόνους ἐκκλησιαστικῶν συγγραφεῶν ὁποῖαις κέχρηται τῶν ἀντιλεγομένων, τίνα τε περὶ τῶν ἐνδιαθῆκων καὶ ὁμολογουμένων γραφῶν, καὶ ὅσα περὶ τῶν μὴ τοιούτων αὐτοῖς εἴρηται. *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 3.

<sup>2</sup> Κέχρηται δ' ὁ αὐτὸς μαρτυρίας ἀπὸ τῆς Ἰωάννου προτέρας ἐπιστολῆς, καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς Πέτρου ὁμοίως. *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 39.

and the Fathers generally jump at such conclusions, we must reject this as sufficient evidence that Papias really did use the Epistle, and that Eusebius did not adopt his opinion from a mere superficial analogy of passages.<sup>1</sup> The fact of his reference to the Epistle at all is therefore doubtful, and, even if really made, the argument remains open as to how far it bears upon the Gospel, which we shall have hereafter to consider.

The next testimony advanced by Tischendorf is indeed of an extraordinary character. There is a Latin MS. (Vat. Alex. 14) in the Vatican, which Tischendorf assigns to the ninth century, in which there is a preface by an unknown hand to the Gospel according to John, which commences as follows: "Evangelium iohannis manifestatum et datum est ecclesiis ab iohanne adhuc in corpore constituto, sicut papias nomine hierapolitanus discipulus iohannis carus in exotericis id est in extremis quinque libris retulit." "The Gospel of John was published and given to the churches by John whilst he was still in the flesh, as Papias, by name Hierapolis, an esteemed disciple of John, relates at the end of the fifth book." Tischendorf says: "There can, therefore, be no more decided declaration made of the testimony of Papias for the Johannine Gospel."<sup>2</sup> He wishes to end the quotation here, and only refers to the continuation, which he is obliged to admit to be untenable, in a note. The passage proceeds: "Disscripsit vero evangelium dictante iohanne recte." "He (Papias) indeed wrote out the Gospel, John duly dictating;" then follows another passage regarding

<sup>1</sup> *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 17; *Das Evang. Johan.*, p. 8; *Zeller*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1845, p. 652 ff., 1847, p. 148 f.; *Lützelberger*, *Die kirchl. Tradition üb. Ap. Joh.*, p. 92 ff.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 373.

<sup>2</sup> *Waun wurden*, u. s. w., p. 119.

Marcion, representing him also as a contemporary of John, which Tischendorf likewise confesses to be untrue.<sup>1</sup> Now Tischendorf admits that the writer desires it to be understood that he derived the information that Papias wrote the fourth Gospel at the dictation of John likewise from the work of Papias, and as it is perfectly impossible, by his own admissions, that Papias, who was not a contemporary of the Apostle, could have stated this, the whole passage is clearly fabulous and written by a person who never saw the book at all. This extraordinary piece of evidence is so obviously absurd that it is passed over in silence by other critics, even of the strongest apologetic tendency, and it stands here a pitiable instance of the arguments to which destitute criticism can be reduced.

In order to do full justice to the last of the arguments of Tischendorf, we shall give it in his own words: "Before we separate from Papias, we have still to think of one testimony for the Gospel of John which Irenæus, v. 36, § 2, quotes even out of the mouth of the Presbyters, those high authorities of Papias: 'And therefore, say they, the Lord declared: In my Father's house are many mansions' (John xiv. 2). As the Presbyters set this declaration in connection with the blessedness of the righteous in the City of God, in Paradise, in Heaven, according as they bear thirty, sixty, or one hundred-fold fruit, nothing is more probable than that Irenæus takes this whole declaration of the Presbyters, which he gives, §§ 1-2, like the preceding description of the thousand years' reign, from the work of Papias. But whether they are derived from thence or not, the authority of the Presbyters is in any case higher than

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 119, anm. 1.

that of Papias," &c.<sup>1</sup> Now in the quotation from Irenæus given in this passage, Tischendorf deliberately falsifies the text by inserting "say they," and, as he does not give the original, the great majority of readers could never detect how he thus adroitly contrives to strengthen his argument. As regards the whole statement of the case, we must affirm that it misrepresents the facts. We shall endeavour as briefly as possible to state the matter fairly.

Irenæus, with many quotations from Scripture, is arguing that our bodies are preserved, and that the Saints who have suffered so much in the flesh shall in that flesh receive the fruits of their labours. In v. 33, § 2, he refers to the saying given in Matt. xix. 29 (Luke xviii. 29, 30) that whosoever has left lands, &c., because of Christ shall receive a hundred-fold in this world, and in the next, eternal life; and then, enlarging on the abundance of the blessings in the Millennial kingdom, he affirms that Creation will be renovatèd, and the Earth acquire wonderful fertility, and he adds: § 3, "As the Presbyters who saw John the disciple of the Lord, remember that they heard from him, that the Lord taught concerning those times and said:" &c. ("Quemadmodum pres-

<sup>1</sup> Ehe wir aber von Papias scheidèn, haben wir noch eines Zeugnisses für das Johannesevangelium zu gedenken, das Irenæus, v. 36, 2 sogar aus dem Munde der Presbyter, jener hohen Autoritäten des Papias anführt. "Und deshalb sagen sie habe der Herr den Ausspruch gethan: In meines Vaters Hause sind viele Wohnungen" (Joh. 14, 2). Da die Presbyter diesen Ausspruch in Verbindung setzten mit den Seligkeitsstufen der Gerechten in der Gottesstadt, im Paradiese, im Himmel, je nachdem sie dreissig- oder sechzig- oder hundertfältig Frucht tragen, so ist nichts wahrscheinlicher als dass Irenæus diese ganze Aussage der Presbyter, die er a. a. O. 1—2 gibt, gleich der vorhergegangenen Schilderung des tausendjährigen Reichs, dem Werke des Papias entlehnte. Mag sie aber daher stammen oder nicht, jedenfalls steht die Autorität der Presbyter höher als die des Papias; u. s. w. Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 119 f.

byteri meminerunt, qui Joannem discipulum Domini viderunt, audisse se ab eo, quemadmodum de temporibus illis docebat Dominus, et dicebat," &c.), and then he quotes the passage: "The days will come in which vines will grow each having ten thousand Branches," &c.; and "In like manner that a grain of wheat would produce ten thousand ears," &c. With regard to these he says, at the beginning of the next paragraph, v. 33, § 4, "These things are testified in writing by Papias, a hearer of John and associate of Polycarp, an ancient man, in the fourth of his books: for there were five books composed by him.<sup>1</sup> And he added saying: 'But these things are credible to believers. And Judas the traitor not believing, and asking how shall such growths be effected by the Lord, the Lord said: They shall see who shall come to them.' Prophesying of these times, therefore, Isaiah says: 'The Wolf also shall feed with the Lamb,' &c. &c. (quoting Isaiah xi. 6—9), and again he says, recapitulating: 'Wolves and lambs shall then feed together,' " &c. (quoting Isaiah lxxv. 25), and so on, continuing his argument. It is clear that Irenæus introduces the quotation from Papias, and ending his reference at: "They shall see who shall come to them," he continues, with a quotation from Isaiah, his own train of reasoning, and it might just as well be affirmed that Irenæus found the quotation from the Prophet in Papias as that which we are considering. However, we are anticipating. We give this passage to show the manner in which Irenæus proceeds. He then continues with the same subject, quoting (v. 34, 35) Isaiah, Ezekiel, Jeremiah,

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius* has preserved the Greek of this passage (II. E., iii. 39), and goes on to contradict the statement of Irenæus that Papias was a hearer and contemporary of the Apostles. *Eusebius* states that Papias in his preface by no means asserts that he was.

Daniel, the Apocalypse, and sayings found in the New Testament bearing upon the Millennium. In c. 35 he argues that the prophecies he quotes of Isaiah, Jeremiah, and the Apocalypse must not be allegorized away, but that they literally describe the blessings to be enjoyed, after the coming of Antichrist and the resurrection, in the New Jerusalem on earth, and he quotes Isaiah vi. 12, lx. 5, 21, and a long passage from Baruch iv. 36, v. 9 (which he ascribes to Jeremiah), Isaiah xlix. 16, Galatians iv. 26, Rev. xxi. 2, xx. 2—15, xxi. 1—6, all descriptive, as he maintains, of the Millennial kingdom prepared for the Saints; and then in v. 36, the last chapter of his work on Heresies, as if resuming his previous argument, he proceeds:<sup>1</sup> § 1. “And that these things shall ever remain without end Isaiah says: ‘For like as the new heaven and the new earth which I make remain before me, saith the Lord, so shall your seed and your name continue,’<sup>2</sup> and as the Presbyters say, then those who have been deemed worthy of living in heaven shall go thither, and others shall enjoy the delights of Paradise, and others shall possess the glory of the City; for everywhere the Saviour shall be seen as those who see him shall be worthy. § 2. But<sup>3</sup> there is to be this distinction of dwelling (εἶναι δὲ τὴν διαστολὴν ταύτην τῆς οἰκήσεως)<sup>4</sup> of those bearing fruit the hundred fold, and of the (bearers) of the sixty fold, and of the (bearers

<sup>1</sup> We have the following passage only in the old Latin version, with fragments of the Greek preserved by Andrew of Cæsarea in his *Comment. in Apoc.*, xviii., lxiv., and elsewhere.

Isaiah lxvi. 22, Sept.

<sup>2</sup> Here begins a new §.

<sup>4</sup> Canon Westcott, who quotes this passage in a note (On the Canon, p. 61, note 2), translates here: “This distinction of dwelling, they taught, exists,” &c. The introduction of “they taught” here is most unwarrantable, and being inserted, without a word of explanation or mark showing

of) the thirty fold : of whom some indeed shall be taken up into the heavens, some shall live in Paradise, and some shall inhabit the City, and for this reason (διὰ τοῦτο —propter hoc) the Lord declared many mansions to be in the (heavens) of my Father (ἐν τοῖς τοῦ πατρός μου μονὰς εἶναι πολλάς).<sup>1</sup> For all things are of God, who prepares for all a fitting habitation as his Word says, to be allotted to all by the Father according as each is or shall be worthy. And this is the couch upon which they recline who are invited to banquet at the Wedding. The Presbyters disciples of the Apostles state this to be the order and arrangement of those who are saved, and that by such steps they advance,"<sup>2</sup> &c. &c.

Now it is impossible for any one who attentively considers the whole of this passage, and who makes himself acquainted with the manner in which Irenæus conducts

its addition by the translator, in a passage upon whose interpretation there is difference of opinion, and whose origin is in dispute, it amounts to a falsification of the text. Dr. Westcott neither gives the Greek nor the ancient Latin version for comparison.

<sup>1</sup> With this may be compared John xiv. 2, ἐν τῇ οἰκίᾳ τοῦ πατρός μου μοναὶ πολλαὶ εἰσιν. If the passage be maintained to be from the Presbyters, the variations from the text of the Gospel are important.

<sup>2</sup> . . . φησὶν γὰρ Ἡσαΐας "Ὁν τρόπον γὰρ ὁ οὐρανὸς καινὸς καὶ ἡ γῆ καινὴ, ἃ ἐγὼ ποιῶ, μένει ἐνώπιον ἐμοῦ, λέγει Κύριος, οὕτω στήσεται τὸ σπέρμα ὑμῶν καὶ τὸ ὄνομα ὑμῶν . . ." ὡς οἱ πρεσβύτεροι λέγουσι, τότε καὶ οἱ μὲν καταξιοθέντες τῆς ἐν οὐρανῷ διατριβῆς ἐκέεισε χωρήσουσιν, οἱ δὲ τῆς τοῦ παραδείσου τρυφῆς ἀπολαύσουσιν, οἱ δὲ τὴν λαμπρότητα τῆς πόλεως καθέξουσιν· πανταχοῦ γὰρ ὁ Σωτὴρ ὀραθήσεται, καθὼς ἄξιοι ἔσονται οἱ ὀρώντες αὐτόν.

2. Εἶναι δὲ τὴν διαστολὴν ταύτην τῆς οἰκίσεως τῶν τὰ ἑκατὸν καρποφορούντων, καὶ τῶν τὰ ἐξήκοντα, καὶ τῶν τὰ τριάκοντα· ὧν οἱ μὲν εἰς τοὺς οὐρανοὺς ἀναληφθήσονται, οἱ δὲ ἐν τῷ παραδείσῳ διατρίψουσιν, οἱ δὲ τὴν πόλιν κατοικήσουσιν· καὶ διὰ τοῦτο εἰρηκέναι τὸν Κύριον, ἐν τοῖς τοῦ πατρός μου μονὰς εἶναι πολλάς· τὰ πάντα γὰρ τοῦ θεοῦ, ὃς τοῖς πᾶσι τὴν ἀρμόζουσαν οἰκίαν παρέχει. Quomadmodum Verbum ejus ait, omnibus divisum esse a Patre secundum quod quis est dignus, aut erit. Et hoc est triclinium, in quo recumbent ii qui epulantur vocati ad nuptias. Hanc esse ad ordinationem et dispositionem eorum qui salvantur, dicunt presbyteri apostolorum discipuli, et per hujusmodi gradus proficere, &c., &c. *Irenæus*, Adv. Hæc., v. 36, §§ 1, 2.

his argument, and interweaves it with texts of Scripture, to doubt that the phrase we are considering is introduced by Irenæus himself, and is in no case a quotation from the work of Papias. The passage from the commencement of the second paragraph (§ 2) is an enlargement or comment on what the Presbyters say regarding the blessedness of the Saints, and Irenæus illustrates the distinction between those bearing fruit thirty fold, sixty fold, and one hundred fold, so often represented in the Gospel,<sup>1</sup> by the saying regarding "many mansions" being prepared in heaven. He introduces the text in the same manner in which he constantly brings in such references: "For this reason" (*διὰ τοῦτο*—*propter hoc*) "the Lord declared." Numberless instances could be given of this characteristic manner, but a few must suffice: "And for this reason (*διὰ τοῦτο*—*propter hoc*) the Apostle said: . . ." and there follows 2 Thess. ii. 10—12.<sup>2</sup> "And *διὰ τοῦτο*—*propter hoc*—Scripture says: . . . (Gen. ii. 2)"<sup>3</sup>; "And for this reason he said: 'Blessed are the meek,'"<sup>4</sup> &c.; "And for this reason . . . Christ taking the cup said: . . . (Matt. xxvii. 27)"<sup>5</sup>; "And for this reason the Lord said: . . . (Luke xiv. 12, 13, and Matt. xix. 29; Luke xviii. 29, 30)."<sup>6</sup> These are all direct quotations by Irenæus, as is most certainly that which we are considering, which is introduced in precisely the same way. That this is the case is further shown by the continuation: "And this is the Couch upon which they recline who are invited to banquet at the Wedding"—an allu-

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xiii. 8; Mark iv. 20; cf. Matt. xxv. 14—29; Luke xix. 12—26; xii. 47, 48.

<sup>2</sup> Adv. Hær., v. 28, § 2.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, v. 28, § 3.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, v. 32, § 2.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, v. 33, § 1.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, v. 33, § 2; also v. 28, § 4; 29, §§ 1, 2; 30, § 2; 36, § 1, &c., &c.

sion to the marriage supper upon which Irenæus had previously enlarged; <sup>1</sup> and it is rendered quite certain by the fact that Irenæus immediately after again refers to the Presbyters: "The Presbyters, the disciples of the apostles, state this to be the order and arrangement of those who are saved," &c. Now, if the preceding sentences had been mere quotations, such a remark would have been out of place and useless, but the previous passage being the view adopted and expressed by Irenæus, he confirms it by an appeal to the Presbyters, and says that they state this to be the order and arrangement of those who are saved, and that by such steps they advance and ascend through the Spirit to the Son, and through the Son to the Father, &c.

In no case, however, can it be affirmed that the citation of "the Presbyters," and the "Presbyters, disciples of the Apostles," is a reference to the work of Papias. When quoting "the Presbyters who saw John the disciple of the Lord," three chapters before, Irenæus distinctly states that Papias testifies what he quotes in writing in the fourth of his books, but there is nothing whatever to indicate that "the Presbyters," and "the Presbyters, disciples of the Apostles," subsequently referred to, after a complete change of context, have anything to do with Papias. The references to Presbyters in this work of Irenæus are very numerous, and when we remember the importance which the Bishop of Lyons attached to "that tradition which comes from the Apostles, which is preserved in the churches by a succession of Presbyters," <sup>2</sup> the reference before us assumes a very different complexion. In one place, Irenæus

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Hær., iv. 36, §§ 5, 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 2, § 2; cf. i. 10, § 1; 27, § 1, 2; ii. 22, § 5; iii. præf. 3, § 4; 21, § 3; iv. 27, § 1; 32, § 1; v. 20, § 2; 30, § 1.

quotes "the divine Presbyter" (ὁ θεῖος πρεσβύτερος), "the God-loving Presbyter" (ὁ θεοφιλὴς πρεσβύτερος),<sup>1</sup> who wrote verses against the heretic Marcus. Elsewhere he supports his extraordinary statement that the public career of Jesus, instead of being limited to a single year, extended over a period of twenty years, and that he was nearly fifty when he suffered,<sup>2</sup> by the appeal: "As the gospel and all the Presbyters testify, those of Asia, who had met with John the disciple of the Lord (stating) that these things were transmitted to them by John. For he continued among them till the times of Trajan."<sup>3</sup> That these Presbyters are not quoted from the work of Papias is evident from the fact that Eusebius, who had his work, quotes the passage from Irenæus without allusion to Papias, and as he adduces two witnesses only, Irenæus and Clement of Alexandria, to prove the assertion regarding John, he would certainly have referred to the earlier authority, had the work of Papias contained the statement, as he does for the stories regarding the daughters of the Apostle Philip; the miracle in favour of Justus, and other matters.<sup>4</sup> We need not refer to Clement, nor to Polycarp, who had been "taught by Apostles," and the latter of whom Irenæus knew in his youth.<sup>5</sup> Irenæus in one place also gives a long account

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Hær., i. 15, § 6.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 22, §§ 4, 6.

<sup>3</sup> . . . sicut Evangelium, καὶ πάντες οἱ πρεσβύτεροι μαρτυροῦσιν, οἱ κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν Ἰωάννη τῷ τοῦ κυρίου μαθητῇ συμβεβληκότες, παραδεδωκέαι ταῦτα τὸν Ἰωάννην. Παρέμεινε γὰρ αὐτοῖς μέχρι τῶν Τραϊανου χρόνων. Adv. Hær., ii. 22, § 5. Cf. Eusebius, H. E., iii. 23. "Those of Asia" evidently refers chiefly to Ephesus, as is shown by the passage immediately after quoted by Eusebius from Adv. Hær., iii. 3, § 4, "the Church in Ephesus also . . . where John continued until the times of Trajan, is a witness to the truth of the apostolic tradition."

<sup>4</sup> Eusebius, H. E., iii. 39.

<sup>5</sup> Adv. Hær., iii. 3, §§ 3, 4. Fragment from his work *De Ophiteis* preserved by Eusebius, H. E., v. 20.

of the teaching of some one upon the sins of David and other men of old, which he introduces: "As I have heard from a certain Presbyter, who had heard it from those who had seen the Apostles, and from those who learnt from them,"<sup>1</sup> &c. Further on, speaking evidently of a different person, he says: "In this manner also a Presbyter disciple of the Apostles, reasoned regarding the two Testaments:"<sup>2</sup> and quotes fully. In another place Irenæus, after quoting Gen. ii. 8, "And God planted a Paradise eastward in Eden," &c., states: "Wherefore the Presbyters who are disciples of the Apostles (οἱ πρεσβύτεροι, τῶν ἀποστόλων μαθηταὶ), say that those who were translated had been translated thither," there to remain till the consummation of all things awaiting immortality, and Irenæus explains that it was into this Paradise that Paul was caught up (2 Cor. xii. 4).<sup>3</sup> It seems highly probable that these "Presbyters the disciples of the Apostles" who are quoted on Paradise, are the same "Presbyters the disciples of the Apostles" referred to on the same subject (v. 36, §§ 1, 2) whom we are discussing, but there is nothing whatever to connect them with Papias. On the contrary, the Presbyters whose sayings Irenæus quotes from the work of Papias are specially distinguished as "the Presbyters who saw John the disciple of the Lord," a distinction made upon another occasion, quoted above, in connection with the age of Jesus.<sup>4</sup> He also speaks of the Septuagint

<sup>1</sup> Quemadmodum audiivi a quodam presbytero, qui audierat ab his qui apostolos viderant, et ab his qui didicerant, &c. Adv. Hær., iv. 27, § 1, cf. § 2; 30, § 1. This has been variously conjectured to be a reference to Polycarp, Papias, and Pothinus his predecessor at Lyons, but it is admitted by all to be impossible to decide upon the point.

<sup>2</sup> Hujusmodi quoque de duobus testamentis senior apostolorum discipulus disputabat, &c. Adv. Hær., iv. 32, § 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, v. 3, § 1.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 22, § 5.

translation of the Bible as the version of the "Presbyters,"<sup>1</sup> and on several occasions he calls Luke "the follower and disciple of the Apostles" (Sectator et discipulus apostolorum)<sup>2</sup>, and characterizes Mark as "the interpreter and follower of Peter" (interpretet et sectator Petri)<sup>3</sup>, and refers to both as having learnt from the words of the Apostles.<sup>4</sup> Here is, therefore, a wide choice of Presbyters, including even Evangelists, to whom the reference of Irenæus may with equal right be ascribed,<sup>5</sup> so that it is unreasonable to claim it as an allusion to the work of Papias.<sup>6</sup> Tischendorf, however, does not connect the passage with much assurance with Papias,<sup>7</sup> and Riggenbach fairly admits that the evidence fails,<sup>8</sup> and few, if any, now think it worth while to advance it. From no point can it be considered of any value as testimony for the fourth Gospel.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Hær., iii. 21, §§ 3, 4.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, i. 23, § 1; iii. 10, § 1; 14, § 1.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 10, § 6.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 15, § 3.

<sup>5</sup> In the New Testament the term Presbyter is even used in reference to Patriarchs and Prophets. Heb. xi. 2; cf. Matt. xv. 2; Mark vii. 3, 5.

<sup>6</sup> With regard to the Presbyters quoted by Irenæus generally. Cf. *Routh, Reliq. Sacræ*, i. p. 47 ff.

<sup>7</sup> We have disposed of his alternative that the quotation being by "the Presbyters" was more ancient even than Papias, by showing that it must be referred to Irenæus himself, and that there is no ground for attributing it to the Presbyters at all. Most critics admit the uncertainty.

<sup>8</sup> *Die Zeugnisse f. d. Ev. Johannes*, 1866, p. 116.

<sup>9</sup> Canon Westcott boldly affirms: "In addition to the Gospels of St. Matthew and St. Mark, Papias appears to have been acquainted with the Gospel of St. John."<sup>(3)</sup> He says no more, and offers no evidence whatever for this assertion in the text. There are two notes, however, on the same page, which we shall now quote, the second being that to which<sup>(3)</sup> above refers. "<sup>2</sup> No conclusion can be drawn from Eusebius' silence as to express testimonies of Papias to the Gospel of St. John, as we are ignorant of his special plan, and the title of his book shows that it was not intended to include 'all the oracles of the Lord,' see p. 61, note 2." The second note is: "<sup>3</sup> There is also (!?) an allusion to it in the quotation from the 'Elders' found in Irenæus (lib. v. ad. f.) which probably was taken from Papias (fr. v. Routh et Nott.). The Latin passage containing

Before passing on there is one other point to mention: Andrew of Cæsarea, in the preface to his Commentary on the Apocalypse, mentions that Papias maintained "the credibility" (τὸ ἀξιόπιστον) of that book, or in other words, its apostolic origin.<sup>1</sup> His strong Millenarian opinions would naturally make such a composition stand high in his esteem, if indeed it did not materially contribute to the formation of his views, which is still more probable. Apologists admit the genuineness of this statement, nay, claim it as undoubted evidence of the acquaintance of Papias with the Apocalypse.<sup>2</sup> Canon Westcott, for instance, says: "He maintained, moreover, 'the divine inspiration' of the Apocalypse, and commented, at least, upon part of it."<sup>3</sup> Now, he must, therefore, have recognized the book as the work of the Apostle John, and we shall, hereafter, show that it is impossible that the author of the Apocalypse is the author of the Gospel; therefore, in this way also, Papias

a reference to the Gospel which is published as a fragment of 'Papias' by Grabe and Routh (fr. xi.), is taken from the 'Dictionary' of a mediæval Papias quoted by Grabe upon the passage, and not from the present Papias. The 'Dictionary' exists in MS. both at Oxford and Cambridge. I am indebted to the kindness of a friend for this explanation of what seemed to be a strange forgery." On the Canon, p. 65. The note 2, p. 61, referred to in note 2 quoted above, says on this subject: "The passage quoted by Irenæus from 'the Elders' may probably be taken as a specimen of his style of interpretation" (!) and then follows a quotation: "as the Presbyters say:" down "to many mansions." Dr. Westcott then continues: "Indeed from the similar mode of introducing the story of the vine which is afterwards referred to Papias, it is reasonable to conjecture that this interpretation is one from Papias' 'Exposition.'" We have given the whole of the passages to show how unwarrantable is the statement which is made. The isolated assertion in the text, which is all that most readers would see, is supported by no better evidence than the preceding note inserted at the foot of an earlier page.

<sup>1</sup> *Andreas*, Proleg. in Apocalypsin; *Routh*, *Rel. Sacræ*, i. p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> *Lücke*, *Einl. Offenb. Joh.*, 1852, ii. p. 526; *Ewald*, *Die Joh. Schriften*, ii. p. 371 f.; *Guericke*, *Gesamtgesch. N. T.*, p. 536; *Tischendorf*, *Wann wurden*, u. s. w., p. 116, &c., &c.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 65.

is a witness against the Apostolic origin of the fourth Gospel.

We must now turn to the Clementine Homilies, although, as we have shown,<sup>1</sup> the uncertainty as to the date of this spurious work, and the late period which must undoubtedly be assigned to its composition, render its evidence of very little value for the canonical Gospels. The passages pointed out in the Homilies as indicating acquaintance with the fourth Gospel were long advanced with hesitation, and were generally felt to be inconclusive, but on the discovery of the concluding portion of the work and its publication by Dressel in 1853, it was found to contain a passage which apologists now claim as decisive evidence of the use of the Gospel, and which even succeeded in converting some independent critics.<sup>2</sup> Tischendorf<sup>3</sup> and Canon Westcott,<sup>4</sup> in the few lines devoted to the Clementines, do not refer to the earlier proof passages, but rely entirely upon that last discovered. With a view, however, to making the whole of the evidence clear, we shall give all of the supposed allusions to the fourth Gospel, confronting them with the text. The first is as follows:—

HOM. III. 52.

Wherefore he, being the true prophet, said :

I am the gate of life : he coming in through me cometh in unto life, as there is no other teaching which is able to save.

JOHN X. 9.

I am the door (of the sheepfold), if anyone enter through me he shall be saved, and shall go in and shall go out and shall find pasture.

<sup>1</sup> Vol. ii. p. 1 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, who had maintained that the Clementines did not use the fourth Gospel, was induced by the passage to which we refer to admit its use. Cf. *Die Evv. Justin's*, p. 385 ff.; *Die Evangelien*, p. 346 f.; *Der Kanon*, p. 29; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1865, p. 338; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1854, p. 534, ann. 1; *Volkmar* is inclined to the same opinion, although not with the same decision. *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1854, p. 448 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 90 f.

<sup>4</sup> On the Canon, p. 252.

HOM. III. 52.

Διὰ τοῦτο αὐτὸς ἀληθῆς ὢν προφήτης  
ἔλεγεν

Ἐγὼ εἰμι ἡ πύλη τῆς ζωῆς· ὁ δὲ ἐμοῦ  
εἰσερχόμενος εἰσέρχεται εἰς τὴν ζωὴν·  
ὡς οὐκ οὔσης ἐτέρας τῆς σώζειν δυνα-  
μῆνης διδασκαλίας.

JOHN X. 9.

Ἐγὼ εἰμι ἡ θύρα· δι' ἐμοῦ ἐάν τις  
εἰσέλθῃ, σωθήσεται, καὶ εἰσελεύσεται  
καὶ ἐξελεύσεται καὶ νομὴν εὐρήσει.

The first point which is apparent here is that there is a total difference both in the language and real meaning of these two passages. The Homily uses the word *πύλη* instead of the *θύρα* of the Gospel, and speaks of the gate of life, instead of the door of the Sheepfold. We have already<sup>1</sup> discussed the passage in the Pastor of Hermas in which similar reference is made to the gate (*πύλη*) into the kingdom of God, and need not here repeat our argument. In Matt. vii. 13, 14, we have the direct description of the gate (*πύλη*) which leads to life (*εἰς τὴν ζωὴν*), and we have elsewhere quoted the Messianic Psalm cxviii. 19, 20: "This is the gate of the Lord (*αὐτὴ ἡ πύλη τοῦ Κυρίου*),<sup>2</sup> the righteous shall enter into it." In another place, the author of the Homilies, referring to a passage parallel to, but differing from, Matt. xxiii. 2, which we have elsewhere considered,<sup>3</sup> and which is derived from a Gospel different from ours, says: "Hear *them* (Scribes and Pharisees who sit upon Moses' seat), he said, as entrusted with the key of the kingdom which is knowledge, which alone is able to open the gate of life (*πύλη τῆς ζωῆς*), through which alone is the entrance to Eternal life."<sup>4</sup> Now in the very next chapter to that in which the saying which we are discussing occurs, a very few lines after it indeed, we have the following passage: "Indeed he said further: 'I am he concern-

<sup>1</sup> p. 257 f.<sup>2</sup> Ps. cxvii. 20, Sept.<sup>3</sup> p. 18 ff. •<sup>4</sup> Hom. iii. 18.

ing whom Moses prophesied, saying: 'a prophet shall the Lord our God wake up to you from among your brethren like also unto me; hear ye him regarding all things, but whosoever will not hear that prophet he shall die.'"<sup>1</sup> There is no such saying in the canonical Gospels or other books of the New Testament attributed to Jesus, but a quotation from Deuteronomy xviii. 15 f., materially different from this, occurs twice in the Acts of the Apostles, once being put into the mouth of Peter applied to Jesus,<sup>2</sup> and the second time also applied to him, being quoted by Stephen.<sup>3</sup> It is quite clear that the writer is quoting from uncanonical sources, and here is another express declaration regarding himself: "I am he," &c., which is quite in the spirit of the preceding passage which we are discussing, and probably derived from the same source. In another place we find the following argument: "But the way is the manner of life, as also Moses says: 'Behold I have set before thy face the way of life, and the way of death'<sup>4</sup> and in agreement the teacher said: 'Enter ye through the narrow and straitened way through which ye shall enter into life;' and in another place a certain person inquiring: 'What shall I do to inherit eternal life?' he intimated the Commandments of the Law."<sup>5</sup> It has to be observed that the Homilies teach the doctrine

<sup>1</sup> "Ἐτι μὴν ἔλεγεν· Ἐγὼ εἶμι περὶ οὗ Μωϋσῆς προεφήτευσεν εἰπὼν· Προφήτην ἐγερεῖ ὑμῖν Κύριος ὁ θεὸς ἡμῶν, ἐκ τῶν ἀδελφῶν ὑμῶν, ὡσπερ καὶ ἐμέ, αὐτοῦ ἀκούετε κατὰ πάντα· ὅς ἂν δὲ μὴ ἀκούσῃ τοῦ προφήτου ἐκείνου, ἀποθαναίεται. Hom. iii. 53. This differs from the text of the Sept.

<sup>2</sup> Acts iii. 22.

<sup>3</sup> Acts vii. 37.

<sup>4</sup> Deut. xxx. 15.

<sup>5</sup> Ὁδὸς δὲ ἡ πολιτεία ἐστίν, τῷ καὶ τὸν Μωϋσῆν λέγειν· Ἴδου τέθεικα πρὸ προσώπου σου τὴν ὁδὸν τῆς ζωῆς, καὶ τὴν ὁδὸν τοῦ θανάτου. Καὶ ὁ διδάσκαλος συμφώνως εἶπεν· Εἰσελθετε διὰ τῆς στενῆς καὶ τεθλιμμένης ὁδοῦ, δι' ἧς εἰσελεύσεσθε εἰς τὴν ζωὴν. Καὶ ἀλλαχοῦ πού, ἐρωτήσαντός τινος· Τί ποιήσας ζωὴν αἰώνιον κληρονομήσω; τὰς τοῦ νόμου ἐντολὰς ἐπέδειξεν. Hom. xviii. 17,

that the spirit in Jesus Christ had already appeared in Adam, and by a species of transmigration passed through Moses and the Patriarchs and prophets: "which from the beginning of the world, changing names as well as forms, has traversed the present order of nature (*τὸν αἰῶνα τρέχει*) until, attaining his own times, being anointed with mercy for the works of God, he shall have rest for ever."<sup>1</sup> Just in the same way, therefore, as the Homilies represent Jesus as quoting a prophecy of Moses, and altering it to a personal declaration: "I am the prophet," &c., so here again they make him adopt this saying of Moses and, "being the true prophet," declare: "I am the gate or the way of life,"—the same commandments of the law which the Gospel of the Homilies represents Jesus as coming to confirm and not to abolish. The whole system of doctrine of the Clementines, as we shall presently see, indicated here even by the definition of "the true prophet," is so fundamentally opposed to that of the fourth Gospel that it is impossible that the author can have derived this brief saying, varying moreover as it does in language and sense, from that work. There is good reason to believe that the author of the fourth Gospel, who most undeniably derived materials from earlier Evangelical works, may have drawn from a source likewise used by the Gospel according to the Hebrews, and thence many analogies might well be presented with quotations from that or kindred Gospels.<sup>2</sup> We find, further, this community of source in the fact, that in the

<sup>1</sup> . . . ὅς ἀπ' ἀρχῆς αἰῶνος ἄμα τοῖς ὀνόμασι μορφὰς ἀλλάσσω τὸν αἰῶνα τρέχει, μέχρις ὅτε ἰδίων χρόνων τυχῶν, διὰ τοὺς καμάτους θεοῦ ἐλεῖι χρισθεῖς, εἰς αἰεὶ ἔξει τὴν ἀνάπαυσιν. Hom. iii. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Neander, K. G., 1843, ii. p. 624 f., anm. 1; Credner, Beiträge, i. p. 326; Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 59 f.; Das Ev. Johan., p. 12.

fourth Gospel, without actual quotation, there is a reference to Moses, and, no doubt, to the very passage (Deut. xviii. 15), which the Gospel of the Clementines puts into the mouth of Jesus, John v. 46 : "For had ye believed Moses ye would believe me, for he wrote of me." Whilst the Ebionitic Gospel gave prominence to this view of the case, the dogmatic system of the Logos Gospel did not permit of more than mere reference to it. There are abundant indications in this case that the fourth Gospel was not the source of this saying, and every probability that the Ebionitic author of the Clementines made use of the Ebionitic Gospel.

The same remarks fully apply to the next passage pointed out as derived from the Johannine Gospel, which occurs in the same chapter : "My sheep hear my voice."

HOM. III. 52. Τὰ ἐμὰ πρόβατα ἀκούει τῆς ἐμῆς φωνῆς.		JOHN X. 27. Τὰ πρόβατα τὰ ἐμὰ τῆς φωνῆς μου ἀκούει.
---	--	---

There was no more common representation amongst the Jews of the relation between God and his people than that of Shepherd and his Sheep,<sup>1</sup> and the brief saying was in all probability derived from the same source as the preceding.<sup>2</sup>

We have already discussed the third passage regarding the new birth in connection with Justin,<sup>3</sup> and may therefore pass on to the last and most important passage, to which we have referred as contained in the concluding portion of the Homilies first published by Dressel in 1853. We subjoin it in contrast with the parallel in the fourth Gospel.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Isaiah xl. 11; liii. 6; Ezek. xxxiv.; Zech. xi.; Hebrews xiii. 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, *Beiträge*, i. p. 326; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 60; *Das Evang. Johan.*, p. 12.

<sup>3</sup> p. 312 f.

## HOM. XIX. 22.

Wherefore also our Teacher when he inquired regarding the man blind from birth and whose sight was restored by him, if this man had sinned or his parents that he should be born blind, answered: Neither this man sinned at all nor his parents, but that through him the power of God might be made manifest who heals the sins of ignorance.

Ὅθεν καὶ διδάσκαλος ἡμῶν περὶ τοῦ ἐκ γενετῆς πηροῦ καὶ ἀναβλέψαιτος παρ' αὐτοῦ ἐξετάζων ἐρωτήσασιν, εἰ οὗτος ἤμαρτεν ἢ οἱ γονεῖς αὐτοῦ, ἵνα τυφλὸς γεννηθῆ, ἀπεκρίνατο· οὔτε οὗτός τε ἤμαρτεν, οὔτε οἱ γονεῖς αὐτοῦ, ἀλλ' ἵνα δι' αὐτοῦ φανερωθῇ ἡ δύναμις τοῦ θεοῦ τῆς ἀγνοίας ἰωμένη τὰ ἁμαρτήματα.

## JOHN IX. 1—3.

And as he was passing by, he saw a man blind from birth.

2. And his disciples asked him saying: Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents that he should be born blind?

3. Jesus answered, Neither this man sinned, nor his parents, but that the works of God might be made manifest in him.

1. Καὶ παράγων εἶδεν ἄνθρωπον τυφλὸν ἐκ γενετῆς. 2. Καὶ ἠρώτησαν αὐτὸν οἱ μαθηταὶ αὐτοῦ λέγοντες· Ῥαββί, τίς ἤμαρτεν, οὗτος ἢ οἱ γονεῖς αὐτοῦ, ἵνα τυφλὸς γεννηθῆ; 3. Ἀπεκρίθη Ἰησοῦς· Οὔτε οὗτος ἤμαρτεν οὔτε οἱ γονεῖς αὐτοῦ, ἀλλ' ἵνα φανερωθῇ τὰ ἔργα τοῦ θεοῦ ἐν αὐτῷ.

It is necessary that we should consider the context to this passage in the Homily, which, we must affirm, bears positive characteristics which render it impossible that it can have been taken from the fourth Gospel, and lead to the clear conclusion that, at the most, the Johannine Gospel derived it from the same source as the Gospel of the Clementines, if not from that Gospel itself. We must mention that in the Clementines, the Apostle Peter is represented as maintaining that the Scriptures are not all true, but are mixed up with what is false, and that on this account, and in order to inculcate the necessity of distinguishing between the true and the false, Jesus taught his disciples, "Be ye approved money changers,"<sup>1</sup> an injunction not found in our Gospels.

One of the points which Peter denies is the fall of Adam, a doctrine which, as Neander remarked, "he must

<sup>1</sup> Hom. iii. 50, cf. 9, 42 ff.; ii. 38. The author denies that Moses wrote the Pentateuch, Hom. iii. 47 ff.

combat as blasphemy."<sup>1</sup> At the part we are considering he is discussing with Simon,—under whose detested personality, as we have elsewhere shown, the Apostle Paul is really attacked,—and refuting the charges he brings forward regarding the origin and continuance of evil. The Apostle Peter in the course of the discussion asserts that evil is the same as pain and death, but evil does not exist eternally, and, indeed, does not really exist at all, for pain and death are only accidents without permanent force—pain is merely the disturbance of harmony, and death nothing but the separation of soul from body.<sup>2</sup> The passions also must be classed amongst the things which are accidental, and are not always to exist; but these, although capable of abuse, are in reality beneficial to the soul when properly restrained, and carry out the will of God. The man who gives them unbridled course ensures his own punishment.<sup>3</sup> Simon inquires why men die prematurely and periodical diseases come, and also, indeed, visitations of demons and of madness and other afflictions, in reply to which Peter explains that parents by following their own pleasure in all things and neglect-

<sup>1</sup> Hom. iii. 20 ff., 42 ff., viii. 10. "Die Lehre von einem Sündenfalle des ersten Menschen musste der Verfasser der Clementinen als Gotteslästerung bekämpfen." *Neander*, K. G., ii. p. 612 f. The Jews at that period held a similar belief. *Eisemann*, *Entd. Judenthum*, i. p. 336. Adam, according to the Homilies not only did not sin, but as a true prophet possessed of the Spirit of God which afterwards was in Jesus, he was incapable of sin. *Schliemann*, *Die Clementinen*, p. 130, p. 176 f., p. 178 f.

<sup>2</sup> Hom. xix. 20.

<sup>3</sup> Hom. xix. 21. According to the author of the Clementines, Evil is the consequence of sin, and is on one hand necessary for the punishment of sin, but on the other beneficial as leading men to improvement and upward progress. Suffering is represented as wholesome, and intended for the elevation of man. Cf. Hom., ii. 13; vii. 2; viii. 11. Death was originally designed for man, and was not introduced by Adam's "fall," but is really necessary to nature, the Homilist considers. Cf. *Schliemann*, *Die Clementinen*, p. 177, p. 168 f.

ing proper sanitary considerations, produce a multitude of evils for their children, and this either through carelessness or ignorance.<sup>1</sup> And then follows the passage we are discussing: "Wherefore also our Teacher," &c., and at the end of the quotation he continues: "and truly such afflictions ensue in consequence of ignorance," and giving an instance,<sup>2</sup> he proceeds: "Now the afflictions which you before mentioned are the consequence of ignorance, and certainly not of wickedness, which has been committed,"<sup>3</sup> &c. Now it is quite apparent that the peculiar variation from the parallel in the fourth Gospel in the latter part of the quotation is not accidental, but is the point upon which the whole propriety of the quotation depends. In the Gospel of the Clementines the man is not blind from his birth, "that the works of God might be made manifest in him,"—a doctrine which would be revolting to the author of the Homilies,—but the calamity has befallen him in consequence of some error of ignorance on the part of his parents which brings its punishment; but "the power of God" is made manifest in healing the sins of ignorance. The reply of Jesus is a professed quotation, and it varies very substantially from the parallel in the Gospel, presenting evidently a distinctly different version of the episode. The substitution of *πηρός* for *τυφλός* in the opening is also significant, more especially as Justin likewise in his general remark, which we have discussed, uses the same word. Assuming the passage in the fourth Gospel to be the account of a historical episode, as apologists, of

<sup>1</sup> Hom. xix. 22.

<sup>2</sup> Καὶ ἀληθῶς ἀγνοίας αἰτία τὰ τοιαῦτα γίνεται, ἥτοι τῷ μὴ εἰδέναι πότε δεῖ κοινωνεῖν τῇ γαμετῇ, εἰ καθαρὰ ἐξ ἀφένδρου τυγχάνει. Hom. xix. 22.

<sup>3</sup> Πλὴν ἂν προτίρηκας πάθη ἀξ ἀγνοίας ἀστί, οὐ μέντοι ἐκ ποιηροῦ εἰργασμέου. Hom. xix. 22.

course, maintain, the case stands thus:—The author of the Homilies introduces a narrative of a historical incident in the life of Jesus, which may have been, and probably was, reported in many early gospels in language which, though analogous to, is at the same time decidedly different, in the part which is a professed quotation, from that of the fourth Gospel, and presents another and natural comment upon the central event. The reference to the historical incident is, of course, no evidence whatever of dependence on the fourth Gospel, which, although it may be the only accidentally surviving work which contains the narrative, had no prescriptive and exclusive property in it, and so far from the partial agreement in the narrative proving the necessary use of the fourth Gospel, the only remarkable point is, that all narratives of the same event and reports of words actually spoken do not more perfectly agree, while, on the other hand, the very decided variation in the reply of Jesus, according to the Homily, from that given in the fourth Gospel leads to the distinct presumption that it is not the source of the quotation. It is perfectly preposterous to assert that a reference to an actual occurrence, without the slightest indication by the author of the source from which he derived his information, must be dependent on one particular work, more especially when the part which is given as distinct quotation substantially differs from the record in that work. We have already illustrated this on several occasions, and may once more offer an instance. If the first Synoptic had unfortunately perished, like so many other gospels of the early Church, and in the Clementines we met with the quotation: “Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven” (*Μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοὶ τῷ πνεύματι, ὅτι αὐτῶν*

ἐστὶν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν), apologists would certainly assert, upon the very principle upon which they act in the present case, that this quotation was clear evidence of the use of Luke vi. 20: "Blessed are ye poor, for yours is the kingdom of God" (Μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοί, ὅτι ὑμετέρα ἐστὶν ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ θεοῦ), more especially as a few codices actually insert τῷ πνεύματι, the slight variations being merely ascribed to free quotation from memory. In point of fact, however, the third Synoptic might not at the time have been in existence, and the quotation might have been derived, as it is, from Matt. v. 3. Nothing is more certain and undeniable than the fact that the author of the fourth Gospel made use of materials derived from oral tradition and earlier records for its composition.<sup>1</sup> It is equally undeniable that other gospels, such as the Gospel according to the Hebrews and our Synoptics, had access to the same materials, and made use of them; and a comparison of our first three Gospels renders very evident the community of materials, including the use of the one by the other, as well as the diversity of literary handling to which those materials were subjected. It is impossible with reason to deny that the Gospel according to the Hebrews, for instance, as well as other earlier evangelical works now lost, drew from the same sources as the fourth Gospel, and that narratives derived from the one may, therefore, present analogies with the other whilst still perfectly independent.<sup>2</sup> Such evidence as that which apologists attempt to deduce from the Clementine Homilies totally

<sup>1</sup> *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., 1849, p. 196 ff., 1851, p. 164, p. 166, ann. 2; *Die Joh. Schriften.*, 1861, i. p. 24 f.; *Bleek*, Beiträge, 1846, p. 268 f.; *Einl. N. T.*, p. 308 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 325 ff.; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 209 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Neander*, K. G., ii. p. 624 f., ann. 1.

fails to prove even the existence of the fourth Gospel, and were it fifty times more powerful, it could do nothing towards establishing its historical character and apostolic origin.

Leaving, however, these few and feeble analogies by which apologists vainly seek to establish the existence of the fourth Gospel and its use by the author of the pseudo-Clementine Homilies, and considering the question for a moment from a wider point of view, the results already attained are more than confirmed. The doctrines held and strongly enunciated in the Clementines seem to us to render it impossible that the author can have made use of a work so fundamentally at variance with all his views as the fourth Gospel, and it is absolutely certain that, holding those opinions, he could not in any case have regarded such a Gospel as an apostolic and authoritative document. Space will not permit our entering adequately into this argument, and we must refer our readers to works more immediately devoted to the examination of the Homilies for a close analysis of their dogmatic teaching,<sup>1</sup> but we may in the briefest manner point out some of their more prominent doctrines in contrast with those of the Johannine Gospel.

One of the leading and most characteristic ideas of the Clementine Homilies is the essential identity of Judaism and Christianity. Christ revealed nothing new

<sup>1</sup> *Schliemann*, Die Clementinen, 1844, p. 130—229; *Uhlhorn*, Die Homilien und Recogn., 1854, p. 153—230; *Credner*, Winer's Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1829, i. h. 2, p. 237 ff.; *Dorner*, Entw. Gesch. der Lehre v. d. Person Christi, i. p. 324 ff.; *Baur*, Gesch. chr. Kirche, i. p. 85 ff., p. 218 ff.; *Chr. Gnosis*, p. 300 ff.; *Tüb. Zeitschr.*, 1831, iv. p. 114 ff., p. 174 ff., 1836, iii. p. 123 ff., p. 182 ff.; *Neander*, K. G., ii. p. 610 ff., Genet. Entw. d. Gnost. Systeme, Beilage, p. 361 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 363 ff.; *Der Montanismus*, 1841, p. 145 ff.

with regard to God, but promulgated the very same truth concerning him as Adam, Moses, and the Patriarchs, and in fact the right belief is that Moses and Jesus were essentially one and the same.<sup>1</sup> Indeed it may be said that the teaching of the Homilies is more Jewish than Christian.<sup>2</sup> In the preliminary Epistle of the Apostle Peter to the Apostle James, when sending the book, Peter entreats that James will not give it to any of the Gentiles,<sup>3</sup> and James says: "Strictly and rightly our Peter reminded us, regarding the establishment of the truth, that we should not communicate the books of his preachings sent to us to any one at random, but to him who is good and pious and desires to teach, and who is *circumcised*,<sup>4</sup> being faithful,"<sup>5</sup> &c. Clement also is represented as describing his conversion to Christianity in the following terms: "For this cause I fled for refuge to the Holy God and Law of the Jews, with faith in the certain conclusion that the Law was established out of the righteous judgment of God, and that every soul must hereafter receive according to its deserts."<sup>6</sup> Peter recommends the inhabitants of Tyre to follow what are really Jewish rites, and to hear

<sup>1</sup> Hom. xvii. 4; xviii. 14; viii. 6; *Schliemann*, Die Clem., p. 215 ff.; *Dorner*, Lehre Pers. Christi, i. p. 325, p. 343 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 365 ff., p. 379 ff.; *Baur*, K. G., i. p. 85 ff.; *Uhlhorn*, Die Homilien, p. 212; *Neander*, K. G., ii. p. 611 ff., p. 621 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Dorner*, Lehre Pers. Christi, i. p. 325; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 365.

<sup>3</sup> Ep. Petri ad Jacob. § 1.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Galatians, ii. 7.

<sup>5</sup> Ἀναγκαιώς καὶ πρεπόντως περὶ τῆς ἀληθείας ἀσφαλιζέσθαι ὁ ἡμέτερος ὑπέμνησε Πέτρος, ὅπως τὰς τῶν αὐτοῦ κηρυγμάτων διαπεμφθείσας ἡμῖν βίβλους μηδεὶ μεταδώσωμεν ὡς ἔτυχεν, ἢ ἀγαθῷ τινι καὶ εὐλαβεῖ, τῷ καὶ διδάσκειν αἰρουμένῳ ἐμπεριτόμῳ τε ὄντι πιστῷ, κ.τ.λ. *Contestatio*, § 1.

<sup>6</sup> Διὰ τοῦτο ἐγὼ τῷ ἁγίῳ τῶν Ἰουδαίων θεῷ καὶ νόμῳ προσέφυγον, ἀποδεδωκὸς τὴν πίστιν ἀσφαλεῖ τῇ κρίσει, ὅτι ἐκ τῆς τοῦ θεοῦ δικαίας κρίσεως καὶ νόμος ὤρισται, καὶ ἡ ψυχὴ πάντως τὸ κατ' ἀξίαν ὧν ἔπραξεν ὀποδῆποτε ἀπολαμβάνει. *Hom. iv.*

“as the God-fearing Jews have heard.”<sup>1</sup> The Jew has the same truth as the Christian: “For as there is one teaching by both (Moses and Jesus), God accepts him who believes either of these.”<sup>2</sup> The Law was in fact given by Adam as a true prophet knowing all things, and it is called “Eternal,” and neither to be abrogated by enemies nor falsified by the impious.<sup>3</sup> The author, therefore, protests against the idea that Christianity is any new thing, and insists that Jesus came to confirm, not abrogate, the Mosaic Law.<sup>4</sup> On the other hand the author of the fourth Gospel represents Christianity in strong contrast and antagonism to Judaism.<sup>5</sup> In his antithetical system, the religion of Jesus is opposed to Judaism as well as all other belief, as Light to Darkness and Life to Death.<sup>6</sup> The Law which Moses gave is treated as merely national, and neither of general application nor intended to be permanent, being only addressed to the Jews. It is perpetually referred to as the “Law of the Jews,” “your Law,”—and the Jewish festivals as Feasts of the Jews, and Jesus neither

<sup>1</sup> ὡς οἱ θεὸν σέβοντες ἤκουσαν Ἰουδαῖοι. Hom. vii. 4; cf. ii. 19, 20; xiii. 4; *Schliemann*, Die Clementinen, p. 221 f.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 368 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Μίας γὰρ δι' ἀμφοτέρων διδασκαλίας οὔσης τὸν τοῦτων τινὶ πεπιστευκότα ὁ θεὸς ἀποδέχεται. Hom. viii. 6, cf. 7; *Uhlhorn*, Die Homilien, p. 212; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 366 f.; *Schliemann*, Die Clementinen, p. 221 f.

<sup>3</sup> Hom. viii. 10.

<sup>4</sup> Hom. iii. 51; *Dorner*, Lehre Pers. Christi, i. p. 325; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 366.

<sup>5</sup> *Köstlin*, Lehrbegriff des Ev. u. Br. Johannes, 1843, p. 40 ff., p. 48 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 330 ff.; Das Evang. u. d. Br. Joh., p. 188 ff.; *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 311 ff., p. 327; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 292 f., p. 359 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 276, note 1.

<sup>6</sup> John xii. 46; i. 4, 5, 7 ff.; iii. 19—21; v. 24; viii. 12; ix. 5; xii. 35 ff.; xiv. 6; *Köstlin*, Lehrb. Ev. Joh., p. 40 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 330 f.

held the one in any consideration nor did he scruple to shew his indifference to the other.<sup>1</sup> The very name of "the Jews" indeed is used as an equivalent for the enemies of Christ.<sup>2</sup> The religion of Jesus is not only absolute, but it communicates knowledge of the Father which the Jews did not previously possess.<sup>3</sup> The inferiority of Mosaism is everywhere represented: "and out of his fulness all we received, and grace for grace. *Because the Law was given through Moses; grace and truth came through Jesus Christ.*"<sup>4</sup> "Verily verily I say unto you: Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven."<sup>5</sup> The fundamental difference of Christianity from Judaism will further appear as we proceed.

The most essential principle of the Clementines, again, is Monotheism,—the absolute oneness of God,—which the author vehemently maintains as well against the ascription of divinity to Christ as against heathen Polytheism and the Gnostic theory of the Demiurge as distinguished from the Supreme God.<sup>6</sup> Christ not only is not God, but he never asserted himself to be so.<sup>7</sup> He knows

<sup>1</sup> John ii. 13; iv. 20 ff; v. 1, 16, 18; vi. 4; vii. 2, 19, 22; viii. 17; ix. 16, 28, 29; x. 34; xv. 25, &c. *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 330 ff. *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 364 f.; *Baur*, Theol. Jahrb., 1844, 4, p. 624.

<sup>2</sup> John vi. 42, 52, &c., &c. *Fischer*, Tüb. Zeitschr., 1840, h. 2, p. 96 f.; *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 163, p. 317 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evang. Joh., p. 193 f.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 360 f.

<sup>3</sup> John i. 18; viii. 19, 31 ff., 54, 55; xv. 21 f.; xvii. 25, 26.

<sup>4</sup> John i. 16, 17; cf. x. 1, 8.

<sup>5</sup> John vi. 32 ff.

<sup>6</sup> Hom. xvi. 15 ff.; ii. 12; iii. 57, 59; x. 19; xiii. 4; *Schliemann*, Die Clementinen, p. 130, p. 134 ff.; 144 f., 200; *Dorner*, Lehre Pers. Christi, i. p. 296 ff., p. 325 f., p. 343 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 367, p. 376 f.; cf. ii. p. 270 ff.; *Der Montanismus*, p. 148 ff.; *Baur*, Gnosis, p. 380 ff.; *Uhlhorn*, Die Hom. u. Recogn., p. 167 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, Das Ev. Johan., p. 286 f.

<sup>7</sup> Hom. xvi. 15 f.

nothing of the doctrine of the Logos, but his speculation is confined to the *Σοφία*, the Wisdom of Proverbs viii., &c., and is, as we shall see, at the same time a less developed and very different doctrine from that of the fourth Gospel.<sup>1</sup> The idea of a hypostatic Trinity is quite unknown to him, and would have been utterly abhorrent to his mind as sheer Polytheism. On the other hand, the fourth Gospel proclaims the doctrine of a hypostatic Trinity in a more advanced form than any other writing of the New Testament. It is, indeed, the fundamental principle of the work,<sup>2</sup> as the doctrine of the Logos is its most characteristic feature. In the beginning the Word not only was with God, but "God was the Word" (*θεὸς ἦν ὁ Λόγος*).<sup>3</sup> He is the "only begotten God" (*μονογενῆς θεός*),<sup>4</sup> equivalent to the "Second God" (*δεύτερος θεός*) of Philo, and, throughout, his absolutely divine nature is asserted both by the Evangelist, and in express terms in the discourses of Jesus.<sup>5</sup> Nothing could be more opposed to the principles of the Clementines.

According to the Homilies, the same Spirit, the *Σοφία*, appeared in Adam, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses, and finally in Jesus, who are the only "true prophets" and are called the seven Pillars (*ἑπτὰ στῦλοι*) of

<sup>1</sup> *Dorner*, *Lehre Pers. Christi*, i. p. 334; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, ii. p. 294 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Köstlin*, *Lehrbegriff*, p. 56 f., 83 ff.; *Reuss*, *Hist. de la Théol. Chrétienne au siècle apost.*, 1864, ii. p. 435 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Das Ev. Joh.*, p. 113 ff.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, ii. p. 369 ff.

<sup>3</sup> John i. 1.

<sup>4</sup> John i. 18. This is the reading of the Cod. Sinaiticus, of the Cod. Vaticanus, and Cod. C., as well as of other ancient MSS., and it must be accepted as the best authenticated.

<sup>5</sup> John i. 2; v. 17 ff.; x. 30 ff., 38; xiv. 7 f., 23; xvii. 5, 21 f., &c.; *Köstlin*, *Lehrbegriff*, p. 45 f., 55, 89 ff.; *Ewald*, *Die Joh. Schriften*, i. p. 116 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Das Ev. Joh.*, p. 84 ff.; *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 312 ff.; *Reuss*, *Hist. Théol. Chrét.*, ii. p. 435.

the world.<sup>1</sup> These seven<sup>2</sup> persons, therefore, are identical, the same true Prophet and Spirit "which from the beginning of the world, changing names as well as forms, has traversed the present order of nature"<sup>3</sup> and these men were thus essentially the same as Jesus.<sup>4</sup> As Neander rightly observes, the author of the Homilies "saw in Jesus a new appearance of that Adam whom he had ever venerated as the source of all the true and divine in man."<sup>5</sup> We need scarcely point out how different these views are from the Logos doctrine of the fourth Gospel.<sup>6</sup> In other points there is an equally wide gulf between the Clementines and the fourth Gospel. According to the author of the Homilies, the chief dogma of true Religion is Monotheism. Belief in Christ, in the specific Johannine sense, is nowhere inculcated, and where belief is spoken of, it is merely belief in God. No dogmatic importance whatever is attached to faith in Christ or to his sufferings, death, and resurrection, and of the

<sup>1</sup> Hom. iii. 20 f.; ii. 15; viii. 10; xvii. 4; xviii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner* considers that only Adam, Moses, and Christ are recognized as identical (*W. Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1829, 1 h. 2, p. 247 ff.), and so also *Uhlhorn* (*Die Homilien*, p. 164 ff.); *Gfrörer* thinks the idea limited to Adam and Christ (*Jahrh. des Heils*, i. p. 337). The other authorities referred to below in note 4 hold to the seven.

<sup>3</sup> Hom. iii. 20.

<sup>4</sup> *Schliemann*, *Die Clementinen*, pp. 130, 141 ff., 176, 194 ff., 199 f.; *Dorner*, *Lehre Pers. Christi*, i. pp. 332, 335 ff.; *Neander*, *K. G.*, ii. pp. 612 ff., 621; *Genet. Entw. Gnost. Syst.*, p. 380; as also, with the sole difference as to number, the authorities quoted in note 2.

<sup>5</sup> *K. G.*, ii. p. 622; cf. Hom. iii. 18 ff.

<sup>6</sup> It is very uncertain by what means the author of the Homilies considered this periodical reappearance to be effected, whether by a kind of transmigration or otherwise. Critics consider it very doubtful whether he admitted the supernatural birth of Jesus (though some hold it to be probable), but at any rate he does not explain the matter. *Uhlhorn*, *Die Homilien*, p. 209 f.; *Neander*, *K. G.*, ii. p. 618, ann. 1; *Credner* thought that he did not admit it, l. c. p. 253; *Schliemann*, whilst thinking that he did admit it, considers that in that case he equally attributed a supernatural birth to the other seven prophets. *Die Clementinen*, p. 207 ff.

doctrines of Atonement and Redemption there is nothing in the Homilies,<sup>1</sup>—every one must make his own reconciliation with God, and bear the punishment of his own sins. On the other hand, the representation of Jesus as the Lamb of God taking away the sins of the world,<sup>3</sup> is the very basis of the fourth Gospel. The passages are innumerable in which belief in Jesus is insisted upon as essential. “He that believeth in the Son hath eternal life, but he that believeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him”<sup>4</sup> . . . . “for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.”<sup>5</sup> In fact, the whole of Christianity according to the author of the fourth Gospel is concentrated in the possession of faith in Christ.<sup>6</sup> Belief in God alone is never held to be sufficient; belief in Christ is necessary for salvation; he died for the sins of the world, and is the object of faith, by which alone forgiveness and justification before God can be secured.<sup>7</sup> The same discrepancy is apparent in smaller details. In the Clementines the Apostle Peter is the principal actor, and is represented as the chief amongst the Apostles. In the Epistle of Clement to James, which precedes the Homilies, Peter is described in the following terms: “Simon, who, on account of the true faith and of the most immoveable establishment of

<sup>1</sup> *Schliemann, ib.*, p. 217 ff.; *Uhlhorn, ib.*, p. 211 f.; *Dorner, Lehre Pers. Chr.*, i. p. 338 f.; *Schwegler, Das nachap. Zeit.*, i. p. 367 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Hom. iii.* 6 f.; *Uhlhorn, ib.*, p. 212.

<sup>3</sup> *John i.* 29; cf. *iii.* 14 ff., *iv.* 42, &c., &c.

<sup>4</sup> *John iii.* 36; cf. 16 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, viii. 24.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 14 ff.; v. 24 ff.; vi. 29, 35 ff., 40, 47, 65; vii. 38; viii. 24, 51; ix. 35 ff.; x. 9, 28; xi. 25 ff.; xii. 47; xiv. 6; xv. 5 f.; xvi. 9; xvii. 2 ff.; xx. 31.

<sup>7</sup> *Köstlin, Lehrbegriff*, pp. 57, 178 ff.; *Reuss, Hist. Théol. Chrét.*, ii. pp. 427 f., 491 ff., 508 ff.; *Baur, Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 312; *Hilgenfeld, Das Ev. Joh.*, pp. 256 ff., 285 ff.

his doctrine, was appointed to be the foundation of the Church, and for this reason his name was by the truthful voice of Jesus himself changed to Peter, the first-fruit of our Lord: the first of the Apostles to whom first the Father revealed the Son; whom the Christ as worthy of praise blessed; the called and elect and companion at table and in journeying (of Jesus); the admirable and approved disciple, who as fittest of all was commanded to enlighten the darker path of the world, and was able rightly to do so," &c.<sup>1</sup> He is here represented as the Apostle to the Heathen, the hated Apostle Paul being robbed of that honourable title, and he is, in the spirit of this introduction, made to play, throughout, the first part amongst the Apostles.<sup>2</sup> In the fourth Gospel, however, he is assigned quite a secondary place to John,<sup>3</sup> who is the disciple whom Jesus loved and who leans on his bosom.<sup>4</sup> We shall only mention one other point. The Homilist, when attacking the Apostle Paul, under the name of Simon the Magician, for his boast that he had not been taught by man, but by a revelation of Jesus Christ,<sup>5</sup> whom he had only seen in a vision, inquires: "Why, then, did the Teacher remain and discourse a whole year

<sup>1</sup> Σίμων, ὁ διὰ τὴν ἀληθῆ πίστιν καὶ τὴν ἀσφαλεστάτην αὐτοῦ τῆς διδασκαλίας ὑπόθεσιν τῆς Ἐκκλησίας θεμέλιος εἶναι ὀρίσθεις καὶ δι' αὐτὸ τοῦτο ὑπ' αὐτοῦ τοῦ Ἰησοῦ ἀψευδεῖ στόματι μετονομασθεῖς Πέτρος· ἡ ἀπαρχὴ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν· ὁ πάντων ἀποστόλων πῶτος, ᾧ πρῶτον ὁ Πατὴρ τὸν Υἱὸν ἀπεκάλυψεν· ὃν ὁ Χριστὸς εὐλόγως ἐμακάρισεν· ὁ κλητὸς καὶ ἐκλεκτὸς καὶ συνέστιος καὶ συνοδοίπορος· ὁ καλὸς καὶ δόκιμος μαθητὴς· ὁ τῆς δύσεως τὸ σκοτεινότερον τοῦ κόσμου μέρος ὡς πάντων ἰκανώτερος φωτίζσαι κελευσθεῖς καὶ κατορθῶσαι δυνηθεῖς, κ.τ.λ. Ep. Clem. ad Jacobum, § 1.

<sup>2</sup> Baur, K. G., i. p. 104 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Baur, Theol. Jahrb., 1844, 4, p. 627 ff.; Unters. Kan. Evv., p. 320 ff.; Hilgenfeld, Die Evangelien, p. 335; Schweigler, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 355 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. John xiii. 23—25; xix. 26 f.; xx. 2 f.; xxi. 3 ff., 7, 20 ff.

<sup>5</sup> Gal. i. 12 f.

to those who were awake, if you become his Apostle after a single hour of instruction?"<sup>1</sup> As Neander aptly remarks: "But if the author had known from the Johannine Gospel that the teaching of Christ had continued for *several years*, he would certainly have had particularly good reason instead of one year to set *several*."<sup>2</sup> It is obvious that an author with so vehement an animosity against Paul would assuredly have strengthened his argument, by adopting the more favourable statement of the fourth Gospel as to the duration of the ministry of Jesus, had he been acquainted with that work.

We have only mentioned in the briefest manner a few of the discrepancies between the Clementines and the fourth Gospel, but those to which we have called attention suffice to show that it is impossible that an author exhibiting such fundamental differences of religious belief can have known the fourth Gospel, or considered it a work of Apostolic origin or authority.

Our attention must now be turned to the anonymous composition, known as the "Epistle to Diognetus," general particulars regarding which we have elsewhere given.<sup>3</sup> This epistle, it is admitted, does not contain any quotation from any evangelical work, but on the strength of some supposed references it is claimed by apologists as evidence for the existence of the fourth Gospel. Tischendorf, who only devotes a dozen lines to this work, states his case as follows: "Although this short apologetic epistle does not contain anywhere any precise quotation from a gospel, yet it contains repeated references to evangelical, and particularly to Johannine,

<sup>1</sup> Hom., xvii. 19.

<sup>2</sup> K. G., ii. p. 624, ann. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Vol. ii. p. 37 ff.

passages. For when the author writes, ch. 6 : 'Christians dwell in the world, but they are not of the world ;' and in ch. 10 : 'For God has loved men, for whose sakes he made the world . . . to whom he sent his only begotten Son,' the reference to John xvii. 11 ('But they are in the world '); 14 ('The world hateth them, for they are not of the world '); 16 ('They are not of the world as I am not of the world '); and to John iii. 16 ('God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son '), is hardly to be mistaken."<sup>1</sup>

Dr. Westcott still more emphatically claims the epistle as evidence for the fourth Gospel, and we shall, in order impartially to consider the question, likewise quote his remarks in full upon the point, but as he introduces his own paraphrase of the context in a manner which does not properly convey to a reader who has not the epistle before him the nature of the context, we shall take the liberty of putting the actual quotations in italics, and the rest must be taken as purely the language of Canon Westcott. We shall hereafter show also the exact separation which exists between phrases which are here, with the mere indication of some omission, brought together to form the supposed references to the fourth Gospel. Canon Westcott says : "In one respect the two parts of the book are united,<sup>2</sup> inasmuch as they both exhibit a combination of the teaching of St. Paul and St. John. The love of God, it is said in the letter to Diognetus, is the source of love in the Christian, who must needs

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 40. We may mention that neither Tischendorf nor Dr. Westcott gives the Greek of any of the passages pointed out in the Epistle, nor do they give the original text of the parallels in the Gospel.

<sup>2</sup> This is a reference to the admitted fact that the first ten chapters are by a different author from the writer of the last two.

'love God who thus first loved him' (*προαγαπήσαντα*), and find an expression for this love by loving his neighbour, whereby he will be 'an imitator of God.' 'For God loved men, for whose sakes He made the world, to whom He subjected all things that are in the earth . . . unto whom (*πρός*) He sent His only begotten Son, to whom He promised the kingdom in heaven (*τὴν ἐν οὐρανῷ βασιλείαν*), and will give it to those who love Him.' God's will is mercy; 'He sent His Son as wishing to save (*ὡς σώζων*) . . . and not to condemn,' and as witnesses of this, 'Christians dwell in the world, though they are not of the world.'<sup>1</sup> At the close of the paragraph he proceeds: "The presence of the teaching of St. John is here placed beyond all doubt. There are, however, no direct references to the Gospels throughout the letter, nor indeed any allusions to our Lord's discourses."<sup>2</sup>

It is clear that as there is no direct reference to any Gospel in the Epistle to Diognetus, even if it were ascertained to be a composition dating from the middle of the second century, which it is not, and even if the indirect allusions were ten times more probable than

<sup>1</sup> On the Canon, p. 77. Dr. Westcott continues, referring to the later and more recent part of the Epistle: "So in the conclusion we read that 'the Word who was from the beginning . . . at His appearance speaking boldly manifested the mysteries of the Father to those who were judged faithful by Him.' And these again to whom the Word speaks 'from love of that which is revealed to them,' share their knowledge with others." It is not necessary to discuss this, both because of the late date of the two chapters, and because there is certainly no reference at all to the Gospel in the words. We must, however, add, that as the quotation is given it conveys quite a false impression of the text. We may just mention that the phrase which Dr. Westcott quotes as: "the Word who was from the beginning," is in the text: "This is he who was from the beginning" (*οὗτος ὁ ἀπ' ἀρχῆς*) although "the Word" is in the context, and no doubt intended.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, p. 78.

they are, this anonymous work could do nothing towards establishing the apostolic origin and historical character of the fourth Gospel.

We shall, however, for those who may be interested in more minutely discussing the point, at once proceed to examine whether the composition even indicates the existence of the Gospel, and for this purpose we shall take each of the passages in question and place them with their context before the reader; and we only regret that the examination of a document which, neither from its date nor evidence can be of any real weight, should detain us so long. The first passage is: "Christians dwell in the world but are not of the world" (*χριστιανοὶ ἐν κόσμῳ οἰκοῦσιν, οὐκ εἰσὶ δὲ ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου*). Dr. Westcott, who reverses the order of all the passages indicated, introduces this sentence (which occurs in chapter vi.) as the consequence of a passage following it in chapter vii. by the words "and as witnesses of this: Christians," &c. . . . The first parallel which is pointed out in the Gospel reads, John xvii. 11: "And I am no more in the world, and these are in the world (*καὶ οὗτοι ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ εἰσὶν*), and I come to thee, Holy Father keep them," &c. Now it must be evident that in mere direct point of language and sense there is no parallel here at all. In the Gospel the disciples are referred to as being left behind in the world by Jesus who goes to the Father, whilst in the Epistle the object is the antithesis that while Christians *dwell* in the world they are not of the world. In the second parallel, which is supposed to complete the analogy, the Gospel reads: v. 14, "I have given them thy word: and the world hated them because they are not of the world, (*καὶ ὁ κόσμος ἐμίσησεν αὐτούς, ὅτι οὐκ εἰσὶν ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου*) even as I am not of the world." Here, again, the parallel words are merely introduced as a reason why the world hated them, and not antithetically, and from this very connection we shall see that the resemblance between the Epistle and the Gospel is merely superficial and accidental.

In order to form a correct judgment regarding the nature of the passage in the Epistle, we must carefully examine the context. In chapter v. the author is speaking of the manners of Christians, and he says that they are not distinguished from others either

by country or language or by their customs, for they have neither cities nor speech of their own, nor do they lead a singular life. They dwell in their native countries, but only as sojourners (*παρόικοι*), and the writer proceeds by a long sequence of antithetical sentences to depict their habits. "Every foreign land is as their native country, yet the land of their birth is a foreign land" (*πᾶσα ξένη, πατρίς ἐστὶν αὐτῶν καὶ πᾶσα πατρίς, ξένη*), and so on. Now this epistle is in great part a mere plagiarism of the Pauline and other canonical epistles, whilst professing to describe the actual life of Christians, and the fifth and sixth chapters, particularly, are based upon the epistles of Paul and notably the 2d Epistle to the Corinthians, from which even the antithetical style is derived. We may give a specimen of this in referring to the context of the passage before us, and it is important that we should do so. After a few sentences like the above the fifth chapter continues: "They are in the flesh, but do not live according to the flesh. They continue on earth, but are citizens of heaven" (*ἐπὶ γῆς διατρίβουσιν ἀλλ' ἐν οὐρανῷ πολιτεύονται*).<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The whole passage in the Epistle recalls many passages in the works of Philo, with which the writer was evidently well acquainted. One occurs to us. Speaking of Laban and his family, that "they dwelt as in their native country, not as in a foreign land" (*ὡς ἐν πατρίδι, οὐχ ὡς ἐπὶ ξένης παρῴκησαν*), he continues after a few reflections: "For this reason all the wise men according to Moses are represented as sojourners, (*παροικοῦντες*), for their souls are indeed sent to earth as to a colony from heaven. . . . they return thither again whence they first proceeded, regarding indeed as their native land the heavenly country in which they are citizens, but as a foreign land the earthly dwelling in which they sojourn" (*πατρίδα μὲν τὸν οὐράνιον χώρον ἐν ᾧ πολιτεύονται, ξέρον δὲ τὸν περίγειον ἐν ᾧ παρῴκησαν νομίζουσαι*). And a little further on: "But Moses saith: 'I am a stranger in a foreign land,' regarding with perfect distinction the abiding in the body not only as a foreign land, as sojourners do, but also as worthy of estrangement, not considering it one's own home." De Confus. Ling., § 17, *Mangey*, i. 416. One more instance: "First that God does not grant to the lover of virtue to dwell in the body as in his own native land, but only permits him to sojourn in it as in a strange country. . . . But the country of the body is kindred to all of the wicked, in which he is careful to dwell, not to sojourn," &c. Quis Rerum Div. Heres, § 54, *Mang.*, i. 512, cf. § 55; De Confus. Ling., § 22, *ib.*, i. 421; De Migrat. Abrahami, § 2, *ib.*, i. 438, § 28, *ib.*, i. 460.

## EPISTLE TO DIOGNETUS, V.

They obey the prescribed laws and exceed the laws by their own lives. They love all and are persecuted by all.

They are unknown and are condemned.

They are put to death and are made alive.

They are poor and make many rich; they are in need of all things and in all abound.

They are dishonoured and in the dishonour honoured; they are profanely reported<sup>1</sup> and are justified.

They are reviled and they bless,<sup>2</sup> &c., &c.

## 2ND EP. TO CORINTHIANS.

A paraphrase of vi. 3—6 (cf. iv. 2, 8—9).

vi. 9. As unknown and well known; as dying and behold we live; as chastened and not put to death.

10. . . . As poor yet making many rich; as having nothing and possessing all.

8. Through honour and dishonour; through evil report and good report; as deceivers; and true.

1 Cor. iv. 12. Being reviled we bless.<sup>3</sup>

It is very evident here, and throughout the Epistle, that the Epistles of Paul chiefly, together with the other canonical Epistles, are the sources of the writer's inspiration. The next chapter (vi.) begins and proceeds as follows: "To say all in a word: what the soul is in the body, that Christians are in the world. The soul is dispersed throughout all the members of the body, and Christians throughout all the cities of the world. The soul dwells in the body but is not of the body, and Christians dwell in the world, but are not of the world. (Οἰκεῖ μὲν ἐν τῷ σώματι ψυχὴ, οὐκ ἔστι δὲ ἐκ τοῦ σώματος· καὶ Χριστιανοὶ ἐν κόσμῳ οἰκοῦσιν, οὐκ εἰσὶ δὲ ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου.)" The invisible soul is kept in the visible body, and Christians are known, indeed, to be in the world, but their worship of God remains invisible. The flesh hates the soul and wages war against it, although unjustly, because it is restrained from indulgence in sensual pleasures, and the world hates Christians,

<sup>1</sup> Cf. 1 Cor. iv. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Ἀγροῦνται, καὶ κατακρίνονται. Θανατοῦνται, καὶ ζωοποιοῦνται· πτωχεύουσι, καὶ πλουτίζουσι πολλοὺς. Πάντων ὑστεροῦνται, καὶ ἐν πᾶσι περισσεύουσιν. Ἄτιμοῦνται, καὶ ἐν ταῖς ἀτιμίαις δοξάζονται· βλασφημοῦνται, καὶ δικαιοῦνται· λοιδοροῦνται, καὶ εὐλογοῦσιν· κ.τ.λ. Ep. ad Diogn. v.

<sup>3</sup> 2 Cor. vi. 9, ὡς ἀγρούμενοι καὶ ἐπιγνωσκόμενοι, ὡς ἀποθνήσκοντες καὶ ἰδοὺ ζῶμεν, ὡς παιδευόμενοι καὶ μὴ θανατούμενοι, 10 . . . ὡς πτωχοὶ πολλοὺς δὲ πλουτίζοντες, ὡς μηδὲν ἔχοντες καὶ πάντα κατέχοντες. 8. διὰ δόξης καὶ ἀτιμίας, διὰ δυσφημίας καὶ εὐφημίας· ὡς πλάνοι καὶ ἀληθεῖς. 1 Cor. iv. 12 . . . λοιδορούμενοι εὐλογοῦμεν, κ.τ.λ.

although unjustly, because they are opposed to sensual pleasures (*μισεῖ καὶ Χριστιανοὺς ὁ κόσμος μηδὲν ἀδικούμενος, ὅτι ταῖς ἡδοναῖς ἀντιτάσσονται*). The soul loves the flesh that hates it, and the members, and Christians love those who hate them" (*καὶ Χριστιανοὶ τοὺς μισοῦντας ἀγαπῶσω*). And so on with three or four similar sentences, one of which, at least, is taken from the Epistle to the Corinthians,<sup>1</sup> to the end of the chapter.

Now the passages pointed out as references to the fourth Gospel, it will be remembered, distinctly differ from the parallels in the Gospel, and it seems to us clear that they arise naturally out of the antithetical manner which the writer adopts from the Epistles of Paul, and are based upon passages in those Epistles closely allied to them in sense and also in language. The simile in connection with which the words occur is commenced at the beginning of the preceding chapter, where Christians are represented as living as strangers even in their native land, and the very essence of the passage in dispute is given in the two sentences: "They are in the flesh, but do not live according to the flesh" (*ἐν σαρκὶ τυγχάνουσιν, ἀλλ' οὐ κατὰ σάρκα ζῶσιν*), which is based upon 2 Cor. x. 3, "For we walk in the flesh, but do not war<sup>2</sup> according to the flesh" (*ἐν σαρκὶ γὰρ περιπατοῦντες οὐ κατὰ σάρκα στρατευόμεθα*), and similar passages abound; as for instance, Rom. viii. 4 . . . "in us who walk not according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit; 9. But ye are not in the flesh but in the Spirit (*ὑμεῖς δὲ οὐκ ἐστὲ ἐν σαρκὶ ἀλλὰ ἐν πνεύματι*): 12 . . . So then, brethren, we are debtors not to the flesh, that we should live after the flesh" (*οὐ τῇ σαρκὶ τοῦ κατὰ σάρκα ζῆν*) &c., &c., (cf. 4, 14). And the second: "They continue on earth but are citizens of heaven" (*ἐπὶ γῆς διατρίβουσιν, ἀλλ' ἐν οὐρανῷ πολιτεύονται*), which recalls Philip. iii. 20: "For our country (our citizenship) is in heaven" (*ἡμῶν γὰρ τὸ πολίτευμα ἐν οὐρανοῖς ὑπάρχει*).<sup>3</sup> The sense of the passage is everywhere found, and nothing is more natural than the use of the words arising both out of the previous reference

<sup>1</sup> "The immortal soul dwells in a mortal tabernacle, and Christians dwell as strangers incorruptible, awaiting the incorruption in the heavens (*καὶ Χριστιανοὶ παροικοῦσιν ἐν φθαρτοῖς, τὴν ἐν οὐρανοῖς ἀφθαρσίαν προσδεχόμενοι*). Ep. ad Diogn. vi. cf. 1 Cor. xv. 53, 54; 2 Cor. v. 1 ff.

<sup>2</sup> The preceding verse has "walk," instead of "war."

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Ephes. ii. 19; Heb. xii. 22; xiii. 14.

to the position of Christians as mere sojourners in the world, and as the antithesis to the preceding part of the sentence: "The soul dwells in the body, but is not of the body," and: "Christians dwell in the world but are not of the world," cf. 1 Cor. ii. 12; vii. 31; 2 Cor. i. 12. Gal. iv. 29, v. 16 ff. 24, 25, vi. 14. Rom. viii. 3 ff. Ephes. ii. 2, 3, 11 ff. Coloss. iii. 2 ff: Titus ii. 12. James i. 27. There is one point, however, which we think shows that the words were not derived from the fourth Gospel. The parallel with the Epistle can only be made by taking a few words out of xvii. 11 and adding to them a few words in verse 14, where they stand in the following connection "And the world hated them, *because they are not of the world*" (καὶ ὁ κόσμος ἐμίσησεν αὐτούς, ὅτι οὐκ εἰσὶν ἐκ τοῦ κόσμου). In the Epistle, in a passage quoted above, we have: "The flesh hates the soul, and wages war against it, although unjustly, because it is restrained from indulgence in sensual pleasures, and the world hates Christians, *although unjustly, because they are opposed to sensual pleasures.*" (Μισεῖ τὴν ψυχὴν ἡ σὰρξ, καὶ πολεμεῖ, μηδὲν ἀδικουμένη, διότι ταῖς ἡδοναῖς κωλύεται χρῆσθαι· μισεῖ καὶ Χριστιανούς ὁ κόσμος μηδὲν ἀδικούμενος, ὅτι ταῖς ἡδοναῖς ἀντιτάσσονται.)

Now nothing could more clearly show that these analogies are mere accidental coincidence, and not derived from the fourth Gospel, than this passage. If the writer had really had the passage in the Gospel in his mind, it is impossible that he could in this manner have completely broken it up and changed its whole context and language. The phrase: "they are not of the world" would have been introduced here as the reason for the hatred, instead of being used with quite different context elsewhere in the passage. In fact, in the only place in which the words would have presented a true parallel with the Gospel, they are not used. Not the slightest reference is made throughout the Epistle to Diognetus to any of the discourses of Jesus. On the other hand, we have seen that the whole of the passage in the Epistle in which these sentences occur is based both in matter, and in its peculiar antithetical form, upon the Epistles of Paul, and in these and other canonical Epistles, again, we find the source of the sentence just quoted: Gal. vi. 29. "But as then, he that was born after the flesh persecuted him (that was born) after the Spirit, even so it is

now."<sup>1</sup> v. 16. "Walk by the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. 17. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit and the Spirit against the flesh : for these are contrary the one to the other, that ye may not do the things that ye would."<sup>2</sup> There are innumerable passages in the Pauline Epistles to the same effect.

We pass on now to the next passage in the order of the Epistle. It is not mentioned at all by Tischendorf : Dr. Westcott introduces it with the words : "God's will is mercy," by which we presume that he means to paraphrase the context. "He sent his Son as wishing to save (*ὡς σώζων*) . . . and not to condemn."<sup>3</sup> This sentence, however, which is given as quotation without any explanation, is purely a composition by Canon Westcott himself out of different materials which he finds in the Epistle, and is not a quotation at all. The actual passage in the Epistle, with its immediate context, is as follows : "This (Messenger—the Truth, the holy Word) he sent to them; now, was it, as one of men might reason, for tyranny and to cause fear and consternation? Not so, but in clemency and gentleness, as a King sending his Son (*πέμπων υἱὸν*) a king, he sent (*ἐπεμψεν*); as God he sent (him); as towards men he sent; as saving he sent (*ὡς σώζων ἐπεμψεν*) (him); as persuading (*ὡς πείθων*), not forcing, for violence has no place with God. He sent as inviting, not vindictively pursuing; he sent as loving, not condemning (*ἐπεμψεν ὡς ἀγαπῶν, οὐ κρίνων*). For he will send him to judge, and who shall abide his coming."<sup>4</sup> The supposed parallel in the Gospel is as follows (John iii. 17) : "For God sent not his Son into the world that he might condemn the

<sup>1</sup> Ἄλλ' ὡς περ τότε ὁ κατὰ σάρκα γεννηθεὶς εἰδὼκεν τὸν κατὰ πνεῦμα, οὕτως καὶ νῦν. Gal. iv. 29.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. v. 16, πνεύματι περιπατεῖτε καὶ ἐπιθυμίαν σαρκὸς οὐ μὴ τελήσητε· 17, ἡ γὰρ σὰρξ ἐπιθυμεῖ κατὰ τοῦ πνεύματος, τὸ δὲ πνεῦμα κατὰ τῆς σαρκὸς· ταῦτα δὲ ἀλλήλοις ἀντίκειται, ἵνα μὴ ἂν θέλητε ταῦτα ποιῆτε. Cf. 18—25; Titus ii. 12.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 77.

<sup>4</sup> Τοῦτον πρὸς αὐτοὺς ἀπέστειλεν, ἀρὰ γε, ὡς ἀνθρώπων ἂν τις λογίσατο, ἐπὶ τυραννίδι καὶ φόβῳ καὶ καταπλήξει; Οὐ μὲν οὖν, ἀλλ' ἐν ἐπιεικείᾳ, πρᾶτῆτι· ὡς βασιλεὺς πέμπων υἱὸν βασιλείᾳ ἐπεμψεν· ὡς θεὸν ἐπεμψεν, ὡς πρὸς ἀνθρώπους ἐπεμψεν, ὡς σώζων ἐπεμψεν· ὡς πείθων, οὐ βιαζόμενος· βία γὰρ οὐ πρόσσεστι τῷ θεῷ. Ἐπεμψεν ὡς καλῶν, οὐ δικῶν· ἐπεμψεν ὡς ἀγαπῶν, οὐ κρίνων. Πέμψει γὰρ αὐτὸν κρίνοντα, καὶ τίς αὐτοῦ τὴν παρουσίαν ὑποστήσεται. C. vii.

world, but that the world through him might be saved"<sup>1</sup> (οὐ γὰρ ἀπέστειλεν ὁ Θεὸς τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἵνα κρίνῃ τὸν κόσμον, ἀλλ' ἵνα σωθῇ ὁ κόσμος δι' αὐτοῦ). Now, it is obvious at a glance that the passage in the Epistle is completely different from that in the Gospel in every material point of construction and language, and the only similarity consists in the idea that God's intention in sending his Son was to save and not to condemn, and it is important to notice that the letter does not, either here or elsewhere, refer to the condition attached to salvation so clearly enunciated in the preceding verse: "That whosoever believeth in him might not perish." The doctrine enunciated in this passage is the fundamental principle of much of the New Testament, and it is expressed with more especial clearness and force, and close analogy with the language of the letter, in the Epistles of Paul, to which the letter more particularly leads us, as well as in other canonical Epistles, and in these we find analogies with the context quoted above, which confirm our belief that they, and not the Gospel, are the source of the passage—Rom. v. 8: "But God proveth his own love towards us, in that while we were yet sinners Christ died for us. 9. Much more then . . . . shall we be saved (σωθησόμεθα) through him from the wrath (to come)." Cf. 16, 17. Rom. viii. 1: "There is, therefore, now no condemnation (κατάκριμα) to them which are in Christ Jesus.<sup>2</sup> 3 . . . . God sending his own Son" (ὁ θεὸς τὸν ἑαυτοῦ υἱὸν πέμψας),<sup>3</sup> &c. And coming to the very 2nd Epistle to the Corinthians, from which we find the writer borrowing wholesale, we meet with the different members of the passage we have quoted: v. 19 . . . . "God was reconciling the world unto himself in Christ, not reckoning unto them their trespasses . . . . 20. On Christ's behalf, then, we are ambassadors, as though God were entreating by us; we pray on Christ's behalf: Be reconciled to God. v. 10. For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, &c. 11. Knowing, then, the fear of

<sup>1</sup> The previous verse which we shall more particularly have to consider with the next passage, reads: 16. "For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten son, that whosoever believeth in him might not perish, but have eternal life."

<sup>2</sup> The Cod. Alex., and some other ancient MSS. add: "who walk not after the flesh," μὴ κατὰ σάρκα περιπατοῦσιν.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. v. 32—35, 39.

the Lord, we persuade (*πείθομεν*) men," &c. Galatians iv. 4. "But when the fulness of time came, God sent out his Son (*ἔξαπέστειλεν ὁ θεὸς τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ*), 5. That he might redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons,"<sup>1</sup> &c. Ephes. ii. 4. "But God being rich in mercy because of his great love wherewith he loved us, 5. Even when we were dead in our trespasses, quickened us together with Christ—by grace ye have been saved"—cf. verses 7, 8. 1 Thess. : v. 9. "For God appointed us not to wrath, but to the obtaining salvation (*σωτηρίας*) through our Lord Jesus Christ." 1 Tim. i. 15. "This is a faithful saying . . . that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners" (*ἁμαρτωλοὺς σῶσαι*). 1 Tim. ii. 3. "For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour (*τοῦ σωτήρος ἡμῶν θεοῦ*). 4. Who willeth all men to be saved" (*ὃς πάντας ἀνθρώπους θέλει σωθῆναι*), cf. v. 5, 6. 2 Tim. i. 9. "Who saved us (*σῶσαντος ἡμᾶς*), and called us with a holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose, and the grace which was given to us in Christ Jesus before eternal times; 10. But hath been made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour (*σωτήρος*) Jesus Christ."<sup>2</sup> These passages might be indefinitely multiplied; and they contain the sense of the passage, and in many cases the language, more closely than the fourth Gospel, with which the construction and form of the sentence has no analogy.

Now, with regard to the Logos doctrine of the Epistle to

<sup>1</sup> The letter to Diognetus may further be connected with the Ep. to Galatians in the remarks which the writer makes (iv.) on the observance of days, &c., by the Jews: "But regarding their attending to the stars and moon, observing the months and days," &c. (*παρατήρησιν τῶν μηνῶν καὶ τῶν ἡμερῶν, κ.τ.λ.*). Cf. Gal. iv. 10. "Ye are observing days and months, and times and years," &c. (*ἡμέρας παρατηρεῖσθε καὶ μῆνας καὶ καιροὺς καὶ ἐνιαυτοὺς*);

<sup>2</sup> In Ch. xi. which, it will be remembered, is acknowledged to be of later date, and not by the writer of the earlier part, the author, an admitted falsifier therefore, represents himself, as the writer of the letter, as: "having been a disciple of the Apostles, I am become a teacher of the Gentiles." (*ἀποστόλων γενόμενος μαθητῆς, γίνομαι διδάσκαλος ἐθνῶν* c. xi.) Having observed the imitation in the earlier part of the letter of the Pauline Epistles, the writer of the last two chapters is induced to make this statement after an Epistle ascribed to Paul: 2 Tim. i. 11: "For which I was appointed a herald, and an Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles." (*καὶ ἀπόστολος καὶ διδάσκαλος ἐθνῶν*.)

Diognetus, to which we may appropriately here refer, although we must deal with it in the briefest manner possible, so far is it from connecting the Epistle with the fourth Gospel, that it much more proves the writer's ignorance of that Gospel. The peculiar terminology of the prologue to the Gospel is nowhere found in the Epistle, and we have already seen that the term *Logos* was applied to Jesus in works of the New Testament, acknowledged by all to have been written long before the fourth Gospel. Indeed, it is quite certain, not only historically, but also from the abrupt enunciation of the doctrine in the prologue, that the theory of the *Logos* was well known and already applied to Jesus before the Gospel was composed. The author knew that his statement would be understood without explanation. Although the writer of the Epistle makes use of the designation "*Logos*," he shows his Greek culture by giving the precedence to the term Truth or Reason. It has indeed been remarked<sup>1</sup> that the name Jesus or Christ does not occur anywhere in the Epistle. By way of showing the manner in which "the Word" is spoken of, we will give the entire passage, part of which is quoted above; the first and only one in the first ten chapters in which the term is used: "For, as I said, this was not an earthly invention which was delivered to them (Christians), neither is it a mortal system which they deem it right to maintain so carefully; nor is an administration of human mysteries entrusted to them, but the Almighty and invisible God himself, the Creator of all things (*ἀλλ' αὐτὸς ὁ παντοκράτωρ καὶ παντοκτίστης καὶ ἀόρατος θεὸς*) has implanted in men, and established in their hearts from heaven, the Truth and the Word, the holy and incomprehensible (*τὴν Ἀλήθειαν καὶ τὸν Λόγον τὸν ἅγιον καὶ ἀπεριόρητον*), not as one might suppose, sending to men some servant or angel or ruler (*ἄρχοντα*), or one of those ordering earthly affairs, or one of those entrusted with the government of heavenly things, but the artificer and creator of the universe (*τὸν τεχνίτην καὶ δημιουργὸν τῶν ὅλων*) himself, by whom he created the heavens (*ὧς τοὺς οὐρανοὺς ἐκτίσεν*);<sup>2</sup> by

<sup>1</sup> *Donaldson*, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr. ii. p. 127.

<sup>2</sup> John i. 3. "All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that hath been made (*πάντα δι' αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο, καὶ χωρὶς αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο οὐδὲ ἓν ὃ γέγονεν.*) The difference of this language will be remarked.

whom he confined the sea within its own bounds; whose commands (*μυστήρια*—mysteries) all the stars (*στοιχεῖα*—elements) faithfully observe; from whom (the sun) has received the measure of the daily course to observe; whom the moon obeys, being bidden to shine at night; whom the stars obey, following in the course of the moon; by whom all things have been arranged and limited and subjected, the heavens and the things in the heavens, the earth and the things in the earth, the sea and the things in the sea (*οὐρανοὶ καὶ τὰ ἐν οὐρανοῖς, γῆ καὶ τὰ ἐν τῇ γῆ, θάλασσα καὶ τὰ ἐν τῇ θαλάσῃ*), fire, air, abyss, the things in the heights, the things in the depths, the things in the space between. This (Messenger—the truth, the Word) he sent to them. Now, was it, as one of men might reason, for tyranny and to cause fear and consternation? Not so, but in clemency and gentleness, as a King sending his Son, a king, he sent; as God he sent (him); as towards men he sent, as saving he sent (him); as persuading," &c., &c.<sup>1</sup> The description here given, how God in fact by Reason or Wisdom created the Universe, has much closer analogy with earlier representations of the doctrine than with that in the fourth Gospel, and if the writer does also represent the Reason in a hypostatic form, it is by no means with the concreteness of the Gospel doctrine of the Logos, with which linguistically, moreover, as we have observed, it has no similarity. There can be no doubt that his Christology presents differences from that of the fourth Gospel.<sup>2</sup>

We have already seen how Jesus is called the Word in works of the New Testament earlier than the fourth Gospel,<sup>3</sup> and how the doctrine is constantly referred to in the Pauline Epistles and the Epistle to the Hebrews, and it is to these, and not to the fourth Gospel, that the account in the Epistle to Diognetus may be more properly traced. Heb. i. 2. "The Son of God by whom also he made the worlds. 10. The heavens are works of thy hands" (*ἔργα τῶν χειρῶν σου εἰσὶν οἱ οὐρανοί*). xi. 3. "By faith we understand that the worlds were framed (*κατηρτίσθαι*), by the word of God" (*ῥήματι θεοῦ*). 1 Cor. viii. 6. "Jesus Christ by whom are all things" (*δι' οὗ τὰ πάντα*). Coloss. i. 13. ". . . The

<sup>1</sup> Ep. ad Diogn., vii.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Dorner*, *Lehre Pers. Christi*, i. p. 413 ff.; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, ii. p. 127 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Rev. xix. 13; vi. 9; xx. 4; Heb. iv. 12, 13; xi. 3.

Son of his love: 15. Who is the image of the invisible God (τοῦ θεοῦ τοῦ ἀοράτου) the first-born of all creation; 16. Because in him are all things created, the things in the heavens, and the things in the earth, the things visible and the things invisible (ὅτι ἐν αὐτῷ ἐκτίσθη τὰ πάντα τὰ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς καὶ τὰ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, τὰ ὄρατὰ, καὶ τὰ ἀόρατα) whether they be thrones or dominions, or principalities, or powers; All things have been created by him and for him (τὰ πάντα δι' αὐτοῦ καὶ εἰς αὐτὸν ἐκτίσται). 17. And he is before all things, and in him all things subsist. 18. And he is the head of the body, the Church, who is the Beginning<sup>1</sup> (ὅς ἐστιν ἀρχή); the first-born from the dead; that in all things he might be the first. 19. Because he was well pleased that in him should all the fulness dwell. 20. And through him to reconcile all things unto himself," &c., &c. These passages might be greatly multiplied, but it is unnecessary, for the matter of the letter is substantially here. As to the titles of King and God they are everywhere to be found. In the Apocalypse the Lamb whose name is "The Word of God" (ὁ Λόγος τοῦ θεοῦ), (xix. 13) has also his name written (xix. 16), "King of kings and Lord of lords" (Βασιλεὺς βασιλέων καὶ Κύριος κυρίων).<sup>2</sup> We have already quoted the views of Philo regarding the Logos, which also merit comparison with the passage of the Epistle, but we cannot repeat them here.

The last passage to which we have to refer is the following: "For God loved men, for whose sakes He made the world, to whom He subjected all things that are in the earth . . . Unto whom (πρός) He sent his only-begotten Son, to whom He promised the kingdom in heaven (τὴν ἐν οὐρανῷ βασιλείαν) and will give it to those who love Him."<sup>3</sup> The context is as follows: "For God loved men (ὁ γὰρ θεὸς τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἠγάπησεν) for whose sake he made the world, to whom he subjected all things that are in it, to whom he gave reason and intelligence, to whom alone he granted the right of looking towards him, whom he formed after his own image, to whom he sent his only begotten son (πρὸς οὗς ἀπέστειλε τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ τὸν μονογενῆ), to whom he has promised the kingdom in heaven, and will give it to those

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Rev. iii. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Rev. xvii. 14; Coloss. i. 15; Phil. ii. 6; 2 Cor. iv. 4; Heb. i. 8, 2 f.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 77.

who have loved him. And when you know this, with what gladness, think you, you will be filled? Or how will you love him, who beforehand loved you? (*προαγαπήσαντά σε*). But if you love, you will be an *imitator of his kindness*," &c. (*μιμητῆς ἔση αὐτοῦ τῆς χρηστότητος*).<sup>1</sup> This is claimed as a reference to John iii. 16 f. "For God so loved the world (*οὕτως γὰρ ἠγάπησεν ὁ θεὸς τὸν κόσμον*) that he gave his only begotten son (*ὥστε τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ τὸν μονογεῆ ἔδωκεν*) that whosoever believeth in him might not perish," &c. 17. "For God sent not his son into the world that he might judge the world," &c. (*οὐ γὰρ ἀπέστειλεν ὁ θεὸς τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ εἰς τὸν κόσμον ἵνα κρίνῃ τὸν κόσμον*). Here, again, a sentence is patched together by taking fragments from the beginning and middle of a passage, and finding in them a superficial resemblance to words in the Gospel. We find parallels for the passage, however, in the Epistles from which the unknown writer obviously derives so much of his matter. Rom. v. 8: "But God giveth proof of his love towards us, in that while we were yet sinners Christ died for us. 10. . . . through the death of his son." Chap. viii. 3, "God sending his son, &c. 29. . . . Them he also foreordained to bear the likeness of the image of his son, &c. 32. He that spared not his own son, but delivered him up for us all," &c. 39. (Nothing can separate us) "from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord." Gal. ii. 20. . . . "by the faith of the Son of God who loved me and gave himself for me." Chap. iv. 4. "God sent out his son (*ἐξαπέστειλεν ὁ θεὸς τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ*). 5. . . . that he might redeem," &c. Ephes. ii. 4. "But God being rich in mercy because of his great love where-with he loved us. 5. Even when we were dead in our trespasses hath quickened us together with Christ. 7. That he might show forth the exceeding riches of his grace in *kindness* (*χρηστότης*) towards us in Christ Jesus." Chap. iv. 32. "Be ye *kind* (*χρηστοί*) one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another, even as God also in Christ forgave you."<sup>2</sup> Chap. v. 1. "Be ye therefore

<sup>1</sup> Ep. ad Diogn. x., 'Ο γὰρ θεὸς τοὺς ἀνθρώπους ἠγάπησε, δι' οὓς ἐποίησε τὸν κόσμον, οἷς ὑπέταξε πάντα τὰ ἐν . . . οἷς λόγιον ἔδωκεν, οἷς νοῦν· οἷς μόνοις πρὸς αὐτὸν ἀρᾶν ἐπέτρεψε· οὓς ἐκ τῆς ἰδίας εἰκόνας ἔπλασε· πρὸς οὓς ἀπέστειλε τὸν υἱὸν αὐτοῦ τὸν μονογεῆ. οἷς τὴν ἐν οὐρανῷ βασιλείαν ἐπηγγειλατο, καὶ δώσει τοῖς ἀγαπήσασιν αὐτόν. Ἐπιγνοὺς δέ, τίνας οἶει πληρωθήσεσθαι χαρᾶς; ἢ πῶς ἀγαπήσεις τὸν οὕτως προαγαπήσαντά σε; ἀγαπήσας δέ, μιμητῆς ἔση αὐτοῦ τῆς χρηστότητος· κ.τ.λ.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Coloss. iii. 12—14.

imitators (*μιμηταί*) of God as beloved children. 2. And walk in love (*ἐν ἀγάπῃ*) even as Christ also loved us (*ὁ Χριστὸς ἠγάπησεν ὑμᾶς*), and gave himself for us," &c., &c. Titus iii. 4. "But when the kindness (*χρηστότης*) and love towards men (*φιλανθρωπία*) of our Saviour God was manifested. 5. . . according to his mercy he saved us. . . . 6. . . . through Jesus Christ our Saviour. 7. That being justified by his grace, we should become heirs according to the hope of Eternal life."<sup>1</sup>

The words: "Or how will you love him who beforehand loved you?" (*ἢ πῶς ἀγαπήσεις τὸν οὕτως προαγαπήσαντά σε*); Canon Westcott refers to 1 John iv. 19, "We love God" because he first loved us" (*ἡμεῖς ἀγαπῶμεν, ὅτι αὐτὸς πρῶτος ἠγάπησεν ἡμᾶς*.) The linguistic differences, however, and specially the substitution of *προαγαπήσαντα* for *πρῶτος ἠγάπησεν*, distinctly oppose the claim. The words are a perfectly natural comment upon the words in Ephesians, from which it is obvious the writer derived other parts of the sentence, as the striking word "kindness" (*χρηστότης*), which is commonly used in the Pauline Epistles, but nowhere else in the New Testament,<sup>3</sup> shows.

Dr. Westcott "cannot call to mind a parallel to the phrase 'the kingdom in heaven'"<sup>4</sup> which occurs above in the phrase "to whom he has promised the kingdom in heaven, and will give it to those who have loved him" (*οἷς τὴν ἐν οὐρανῷ βασιλείαν ἐπηγγέλατο, καὶ δώσει τοῖς ἀγαπήσασιν αὐτόν*). This also we find in the Epistles to which the writer exclusively refers in this letter: James ii. 5, "heirs of the kingdom which he promised to them that love him" (*τῆς βασιλείας ἧς ἐπηγγέλατο τοῖς ἀγαπῶσιν αὐτόν*) i. 12. ". . . he shall receive the crown of life which he promised to them that love him" (*ὃν ἐπηγγέλατο τοῖς ἀγαπῶσιν αὐτόν*). In 2 Tim. iv. 18, we have: "The Lord . . . shall preserve me safe unto his heavenly kingdom" (*εἰς τὴν βασιλείαν αὐτοῦ τὴν ἐπουράνιον*).<sup>5</sup> It is very possible that all of

<sup>1</sup> Cf. 2 Thess. ii. 16; 1 Thess. ii. 12, iv. 9.

<sup>2</sup> We quote the reading of the Cod. Sinaiticus as most favourable to Dr. Westcott; the Alexandrian and Vatican MSS. have simply: "we love," omitting both "God" and "him."

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Rom. ii. 4; iii. 12; xi. 22 (thrice); 2 Cor. vi. 6; Gal. v. 22; Ephes. ii. 7; cf. iv. 32; Coloss. iii. 12; Titus, iii. 4; cf. 1 Peter, ii. 3.

<sup>4</sup> On the Canon, p. 77, note 4.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. 2 Tim. iv. 8; 2 Thess. i. 5.

these passages may refer to words of Jesus not contained in our Gospel, but which the writer of the Epistle may have found in some other evangelical work. The expression "kingdom of heaven" is not found in the fourth Gospel at all, but is characteristic of the first Synoptic, and traces are not wanting in this Epistle of the use of a Gospel akin to, but differing from, the first; we cannot, however, go into this matter.

We have devoted too much time already to this Epistle, the evidence of which could not in any case be of value to the fourth Gospel. The writer of the Epistle to Diognetus is unknown; Diognetus, the friend to whom it is addressed, is equally unknown; the letter is neither mentioned nor quoted by any of the Fathers, nor by any ancient writer, and there is no external evidence as to the date of the composition. It exists only in one codex, the handwriting of which is referred to the thirteenth or fourteenth century, but it is by no means certain that it is even so old. The last two chapters are a falsification by a later writer than the author of the first ten. There is no internal evidence whatever in this brief didactic composition which would render its assignment to the third or fourth centuries incongruous, or which demands an earlier date. Apart from the uncertainty of date, however, there is no allusion in it to any Gospel. Even if there were, the testimony of a letter by an unknown writer at an unknown period could not have much weight, but under the actual circumstances the Epistle to Diognetus furnishes absolutely no testimony at all for the apostolical origin and historical character of the fourth Gospel.

The fulness with which we have discussed the supposed testimony of Basilides<sup>1</sup> renders it unnecessary for

<sup>1</sup> Vol. ii. p. 41 ff.

us to re-enter at any length into the argument as to his knowledge of the fourth Gospel. Tischendorf<sup>1</sup> and Canon Westcott<sup>2</sup> assert that two passages, namely: "The true light which lighteth every man came into the world," corresponding with John i. 9, and: "mine hour is not yet come," agreeing with John ii. 4, which are introduced by Hippolytus in his work against Heresies<sup>3</sup> with a subjectless *φησί* "he says," are quotations made in some lost work by Basilides. We have shown that Hippolytus and other writers of his time were in the habit of quoting, indifferently, passages from works by the founders of sects and by their later followers without any distinction, an utterly vague *φησί* doing service equally for all. This is the case in the present instance, and there is no legitimate reason for assigning these passages to Basilides himself,<sup>4</sup> but on the contrary many considerations which forbid our doing so, which we have elsewhere detailed.

These remarks most fully apply to Valentinus, whose supposed quotations we have exhaustively discussed,<sup>5</sup> as well as the one passage given by Hippolytus containing a sentence found in John x. 8,<sup>6</sup> the only one which can be pointed out. We have distinctly proved that the quotations in question are not assignable to Valentinus himself, a fact which even apologists admit. There is no just ground for asserting that his terminology was

<sup>1</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 52.

<sup>2</sup> On the Canon, p. 256, note 3.

<sup>3</sup> vii. 22, 27.

<sup>4</sup> Hilgenfeld, Die Evangelien, p. 345, ann. 5; Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1862, p. 400 ff.; Davidson, Introd. N. T., ii. p. 388 f.; Volkmar, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1860, p. 295; Der Ursprung, p. 69 f.; Rumpf, Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 18 ff., p. 366; Scholten, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 65 f.; Zeller, Theol. Jahrb., 1853, p. 148 ff.; Guericke, H'buch. K. G., i. p. 184; Strauss, Das Leben Jesu, 1864, p. 67 f.

<sup>5</sup> Vol. ii. p. 56 ff.

<sup>6</sup> Adv. Hær., vi. 35.

derived from the fourth Gospel, the whole having been in current use long before that Gospel was composed. There is no evidence whatever that Valentinus was acquainted with such a work.<sup>1</sup>

We must generally remark, however, with regard to Basilides, Valentinus and all such Heresiarchs and writers, that, even if it could be shown, as actually it cannot, that they were acquainted with the fourth Gospel, the fact would only prove the mere existence of the work at a late period in the second century, but would furnish no evidence of the slightest value regarding its apostolic origin, or towards establishing its historical value. On the other hand, if, as apologists assert, these heretics possessed the fourth Gospel, their deliberate and total rejection of the work furnishes evidence positively antagonistic to its claims. It is difficult to decide whether their rejection of the Gospel, or their ignorance of its existence is the more unfavourable alternative.

The dilemma is the very same in the case of Marcion. We have already fully discussed his knowledge of our Gospels,<sup>2</sup> and need not add anything here. It is not pretended that he made any use of the fourth Gospel, and the only ground upon which it is argued that he supplies evidence even of its existence is the vague general statement of Tertullian, that Marcion rejected the Gospels "which are legitimately promulgated, and under the name

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Ev.*, p. 357 f.; *Bretschneider*, *Probabilia*, p. 212 ff.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 390; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 345; *Scholten*, *Die ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 67 ff.; *Rumpf*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1867, p. 17; *Zeller*, *Die Apostelgesch.*, p. 65 ff.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1853, p. 151 f.; *Volkmar*, *Der Ursprung*, p. 69 ff.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1854, p. 108 ff.; *Weizsäcker*, *Unters. Evang. Gesch.*, p. 234; *Strauss*, *Das Leben Jesu*, 1864, p. 67.

<sup>2</sup> *Vol. ii. p. 79 ff.*

of Apostles and Apostolic men," denying their truth and integrity, and maintaining the sole authority of his own Gospel.<sup>1</sup> We have shown<sup>2</sup> how unwarrantable it is to affirm from such data that Marcion knew, although he repudiated, the four canonical Gospels. The Fathers, with uncritical haste and zeal, assumed that the Gospels adopted by the Church at the close of the second and beginning of the third centuries must equally have been invested with canonical authority from the first, and Tertullian took it for granted that Marcion, of whom he knew very little, must have deliberately rejected the four Gospels of his own Canon. Even Canon Westcott admits that: "it is uncertain whether Tertullian in the passage quoted speaks from a knowledge of what Marcion may have written on the subject, or simply from his own point of sight."<sup>3</sup> There is not the slightest evidence that Marcion knew the fourth Gospel,<sup>4</sup> and if he did, it is perfectly inexplicable that he did not adopt it as peculiarly favourable to his own views.<sup>5</sup> If he was acquainted with the work and, nevertheless, rejected it as false and adulterated, his testimony is obviously opposed to the Apostolic origin and historical accuracy of the fourth Gospel, and the critical acumen which he exhibited in his selection of the Pauline Epistles renders his judgment of greater weight than that of most of the Fathers.

We have now reached an epoch when no evidence

<sup>1</sup> Adv. Marc., iv. 3, 4.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. ii. p. 144 ff.

<sup>3</sup> On the Canon, p. 276, note 1.

<sup>4</sup> *Credner*, Beiträge, i. p. 45, ann. 1; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. pp. 73 ff., 79, 84; *Gieseler*, Entst. schr. Evv., p. 25; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 474; *Schleiermacher*, Einl. N. T., 1845, p. 214 f.; *Rumppf*, Rev. de Théol., 1867, p. 21; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 76 ff.; *Schwegler*, Das nachap. Zeit., i. p. 282; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 76.

<sup>5</sup> *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evv. Justin's, p. 474; *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 77; *Volkmar*, Der Ursprung, p. 76 ff.

regarding the fourth Gospel can have much weight, and the remaining witnesses need not detain us long. We have discussed at length the Diatessaron of Tatian,<sup>1</sup> and shown that whilst there is no evidence that it was based upon our four Gospels, there is reason to believe that it may have been identical with the Gospel according to the Hebrews, by which name, as Epiphanius states,<sup>2</sup> it was actually called. We have only now briefly to refer to the address to the Greeks (*Λόγος πρὸς Ἑλληνας*), and to ascertain what testimony it bears regarding the fourth Gospel. It was composed after the death of Justin, and scarcely dates earlier than the beginning of the last quarter of the second century. No Gospel and no work of the New Testament is mentioned in this composition, but Tischendorf<sup>3</sup> and others point out one or two supposed references to passages in the fourth Gospel. The first of these in order, is one indicated by Canon Westcott,<sup>4</sup> but to which Tischendorf does not call attention: "God was in the beginning, but we have learned that the beginning is the power of Reason (*Θεὸς ἦν ἐν ἀρχῇ, τὴν δὲ ἀρχὴν λόγου δύναμιν παρειλήφαμεν*). For the Lord of the Universe (*δεσπότης τῶν ὄλων*) being himself the substance (*ὑπόστασις*) of all, in that creation had not been accomplished was alone, but inasmuch as he was all power, and himself the substance of things visible and invisible, all things were with him (*σὺν αὐτῷ τὰ πάντα*). With him by means of rational power the Reason (*Λόγος*) itself also which was in him subsisted. But by the will of his simplicity, Reason (*Λόγος*) springs forth; but the Reason (*Λόγος*) not

<sup>1</sup> Vol. ii. p. 152 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Haer.*, xlv. § 1.

<sup>3</sup> Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 17.

<sup>4</sup> On the Canon, p. 278, note 2.

proceeding in vain, became the first-born work (ἔργον πρωτότοκον) of the Father. Him we know to be the Beginning of the world (Τούτον ἴσμεν τοῦ κόσμου τὴν ἀρχήν). But he came into existence by division, not by cutting off, for that which is cut off is separated from the first: but that which is divided, receiving the choice of administration, did not render him defective from whom it was taken, &c., &c. And as the Logos (Reason), in the beginning begotten, begat again our creation, himself for himself creating matter (Καὶ καθάπερ ὁ Λόγος, ἐν ἀρχῇ γεννηθεὶς, ἀντεγέννησε τὴν καθ' ἡμᾶς ποιήσιω, αὐτὸς ἑαυτῷ τὴν ὕλην δημιουργήσας), so I," &c., &c.<sup>1</sup>

It is quite evident that this doctrine of the Logos is not that of the fourth Gospel, from which it cannot have been derived. Tatian himself<sup>2</sup> seems to assert that he derived it from the Old Testament. We have quoted the passage at length that it might be clearly under-

<sup>1</sup> Orat. ad Græcos, § 5. As this passage is of some obscurity, we subjoin, for the sake of impartiality, an independent translation taken from Dr. Donaldson's able History of Christ. Lit. and Doctrine, iii. p. 42: "God was in the beginning, but we have understood that the beginning was a power of reason. For the Lord of all, Himself being the substance of all, was alone in so far as the creation had not yet taken place, but as far as He was all power and the substance of things seen and unseen, all things were with Him: along with Him also by means of rational power, the reason which was in Him supported them. But by the will of his simplicity, the reason leaps forth; but the reason, not having gone from one who became empty thereby, is the first-born work of the Father. Him we know to be the beginning of the world. But He came into existence by sharing (μερισμός) not by cutting off; for that which is cut off is separated from the first; but that which is shared, receiving a selection of the work, did not render Him defective from whom it was taken, &c., &c. And as the Word begotten in the beginning begot in his turn our creation, He Himself fashioning the material for Himself, so I, &c., &c." Cf. *Dorner, Lehre Pers. Christi*, i. p. 437 ff.

<sup>2</sup> § 12, cf. § 20; cf. *Donaldson, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 32; *Bretschneider, Probabilia*, p. 193 ff.

stood ; and with the opening words, we presume, for he does not quote at all but merely indicates the chapter, Canon Westcott compares John i. 1 : “ In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and God was the Word ” (Ἐν ἀρχῇ ἦν ὁ Λόγος, κ.τ.λ.). The statement of Tatian is quite different : “ *God* was in the beginning ” (Θεὸς ἦν ἐν ἀρχῇ), and he certainly did not identify the Word with God, so as to transform the statement of the Gospel into this simple affirmation. In all probability his formula was merely based upon Genesis i. 1 : “ In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth ” (ἐν ἀρχῇ ἐποίησεν ὁ Θεὸς, κ.τ.λ.).<sup>1</sup> The expressions : “ But we have learned that the Beginning (ἀρχή) was the power of Reason,” &c., “ but the Reason (Λόγος) not proceeding in vain became the first-born work (ἔργον πρωτότοκον) of the Father. Him we know to be the Beginning (ἀρχή) of the world,” recall many early representations of the Logos, to which we have already referred : Prov. viii. 22 : “ The Lord created me the Beginning (ἀρχή) of his ways for his works (ἔργα). 23, Before the ages he established me, in the beginning (ἐν ἀρχῇ) before he made the earth,” &c., &c. In the Apocalypse also the Word is called “ the Beginning (ἀρχή) of the creation of God,” and it will be remembered that Justin gives testimony from Prov. viii. 21 ff. “ that God begat before all the creatures a Beginning (ἀρχήν) a certain rational Power (δύναμις λογικὴν), out of himself,<sup>2</sup> ” &c., &c., and elsewhere : “ As the Logos has declared through Solomon, that also a Beginning (ἀρχή) before all of the created beings was begotten,” &c.<sup>3</sup> We need not, however, refer to the

<sup>1</sup> Donaldson, Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr., iii. p. 43.

<sup>2</sup> Dial. 61, see vol. ii. p. 286.

<sup>3</sup> Dial. 62, see vol. ii. p. 286.

numerous passages in Philo and in Justin, not derived from the fourth Gospel, which point to a different source for Tatian's doctrine. It is sufficient that both his opinions and his terminology differ distinctly from that Gospel.<sup>1</sup>

The next passage we at once subjoin in contrast with the parallel in the fourth Gospel :

<p>ORAT. AD GRÆCOS, § XIII.          And this, therefore, is (the meaning of) the saying :          The darkness comprehends not the light.          Καὶ τοῦτο ἔστιν ἄρα τὸ εἰρημένον          Ἡ σκοτία τὸ φῶς οὐ καταλαμβάνει.</p>	<p>JOHN I. 5.          And the light shineth in the darkness ;          and the darkness comprehended it not.          Καὶ τὸ φῶς ἐν τῇ σκοτίᾳ φαίνει, καὶ ἡ σκοτία αὐτὸ οὐ κατέλαβεν.</p>
---	--

The context to this passage in the Oration is as follows : Tatian is arguing about the immortality of the soul, and he states that the soul is not in itself immortal but mortal, but that nevertheless it is possible for it not to die. If it do not know the truth it dies, but rises again at the end of the world, receiving eternal death as a punishment. "Again, however, it does not die, though it be for a time dissolved, if it has acquired knowledge of God ; for in itself it is darkness, and there is nothing luminous in it, and this, therefore, is (the meaning of) the saying : The darkness comprehends not the light. For the soul (*ψυχῆ*) did not itself save the spirit (*πνεῦμα*), but was saved by it, and the light comprehended the darkness. The Logos (Reason) truly is the light of God, but the ignorant soul is darkness (*Ὁ Λόγος μὲν ἔστι τὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ φῶς, σκοτός δὲ ἡ ἀνεπιστήμων ψυχῆ*). For this reason if it remain

<sup>1</sup> We have already mentioned that the Gospel according to Peter contained the doctrine of the Logos.

alone it tends downwards to matter, dying with the flesh," &c., &c.<sup>1</sup> The source of "the saying" is not mentioned, and it is evident that even if it be taken to be a reference to the fourth Gospel, nothing would thereby be proved but the mere existence of the Gospel. "The saying," however, is distinctly different in language from the parallel in the Gospel, and it may be from a different Gospel. We have already remarked that Philo calls the Logos "the Light,"<sup>2</sup> and quoting in a peculiar form Ps. xxvi. 1: "For the Lord is my light (*φῶς*) and my Saviour," he goes on to say that, as the sun divides day and night, so, Moses says, "God divides light and darkness" (*τὸν θεὸν φῶς καὶ σκότος διατεχνίσει*).<sup>3</sup> When we turn away to things of sense we use "another light," which is in no way different from "darkness."<sup>4</sup> The constant use of the same similitude of Light and darkness, in the Canonical Epistles,<sup>5</sup> shows how current it was in the Church; and nothing is more certain than the fact that it was neither originated by, nor confined to, the fourth Gospel.

The third and last passage is as follows :

ORAT. AD GRÆCOS, XIX.

We being such as this, do not pursue us with hatred, but, rejecting the Demons, follow the one God.

All things were by (*ὑπ'*) him, and without him was not anything made.

Πάντα ὑπ' αὐτοῦ, καὶ χωρὶς αὐτοῦ  
γένονεν οὐδὲ ἓν.

JOHN I. 3.

All things were made by (*δι'*) him, and without him was not anything made that was made.

Πάντα δι' αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο, καὶ χωρὶς  
αὐτοῦ ἐγένετο οὐδὲ ἓν ὃ γέγονεν.

<sup>1</sup> Orat. ad Græcos, § 13.

<sup>2</sup> De Somniis, i. § 13, *Mangey*, i. 632; cf. §§ 14 ff., *De Mundi op.* § 9, *ib.*, i. 7. See vol. ii. p. 297, note 2.

<sup>3</sup> De Somniis, i. § 13.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, i. § 14.

<sup>5</sup> 11 Cor. iv. 6; Ephes. v. 8—14; Coloss. i. 12, 13; 1 Thess. v. 5; 1 Tim. vi. 16; 1 Pet. ii. 9; cf. Rev. xxi. 23, 24; xxii. 5.

Tatian here speaks of God, and not of the Logos, and in this respect, as well as language and context, the passage differs from the fourth Gospel. The phrase is not introduced as a quotation, and no reference is made to any Gospel. The purpose for which the words are used, again, rather points to the first chapters of Genesis than to the dogmatic prologue enunciating the doctrine of the Logos.<sup>1</sup> Under all these circumstances, the source from which the expression may have been derived cannot with certainty be ascertained, and, as in the preceding instance, even if it be assumed that the words show acquaintance with the fourth Gospel, nothing could be proved but the mere existence of the work about a century and a half after the events which it records. It is obvious that in no case does Tatian afford the slightest evidence of the Apostolic origin or historical veracity of the fourth Gospel.

We have generally discussed the testimony of Dionysius of Corinth,<sup>2</sup> Melito of Sardis,<sup>3</sup> and Claudius Apollinaris,<sup>4</sup> and need not say more here. The fragments attributed to them neither mention nor quote the fourth Gospel, but in no case could they furnish evidence to authenticate the work. The same remarks apply to Athenagoras.<sup>5</sup> Canon Westcott only ventures to say, that he "appears to allude to passages in St. Mark and St. John, but they are all anonymous."<sup>6</sup> The passages in which he speaks of the Logos, which are those referred to here, are certainly not taken from the fourth Gospel, and his doctrine is expressed in terminology

<sup>1</sup> Cf. 1 Cor. viii. 6; Ephes. iii. 9; Heb. i. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. ii. p. 163 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, p. 172 ff.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, p. 185 ff.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, p. 191 ff.

<sup>6</sup> On the Canon, p. 103.

which is different from that of the Gospel, and is deeply tinged with Platonism.<sup>1</sup> He appeals to Proverbs viii. 22, already so frequently quoted by us, for confirmation by the Prophetic Spirit of his exposition of the Logos doctrine.<sup>2</sup> He nowhere identifies the Logos with Jesus :<sup>3</sup> indeed he does not once make use of the name of Christ in his works. He does not show the slightest knowledge of the doctrine of salvation so constantly enunciated in the fourth Gospel. There can be no doubt, as we have already shown,<sup>4</sup> that he considered the Old Testament to be the only inspired Holy Scriptures. Not only does he not mention nor quote any of our Gospels, but the only instance in which he makes any reference to sayings of Jesus, otherwise than by the indefinite *φησί* : "he says," is one in which he introduces a saying which is not found in our Gospels by the words : "The Logos again saying to us : " (*πάλιν ἡμῶν λέγοντος τοῦ Λόγου*), &c. From the same source, which was obviously not our Canonical Gospels, we have, therefore, reason to conclude that Athanasius derived all his knowledge of Gospel history and doctrine. We need scarcely add that this writer affords no testimony whatever as to the origin or character of the fourth Gospel.

It is scarcely worth while to refer to the Epistle of Vienne and Lyons, a composition dating at the earliest A.D. 177-178, in which no direct reference is made to any writing of the New Testament.<sup>5</sup> Acquaintance with the fourth Gospel is argued from the following passage :

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Dorner*, *Lehre Pers. Christi*, i. p. 440 ff.; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 149 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Leg. pro Christ.*, § 10.

<sup>3</sup> *Dorner*, *ib.*, i. p. 442; *Donaldson*, *ib.*, iii. p. 154.

<sup>4</sup> Vol. ii. p. 199 f.

<sup>5</sup> Vol. ii. p. 201 ff.

## EPISTLE, § IV.

And thus was fulfilled the saying of our Lord :

The time shall come in which every one that killeth you shall think that he offereth a service unto God.

Ἐλεύσεται καιρὸς ἐν ᾧ πᾶς ὁ ἀποκτείνας ὑμᾶς, δόξει λατρίαν προσφέρειν τῷ θεῷ.

## JOHN XVI. 2.

But the hour cometh that every one that killeth you may think that he offereth a service unto God.

ἀλλ' ἔρχεται ὥρα ἵνα πᾶς ὁ ἀποκτείνας ὑμᾶς δόξη λατρίαν προσφέρειν τῷ θεῷ,

Now such a passage cannot prove the use of the fourth Gospel. No source is indicated in the Epistle from which the saying of Jesus, which of course apologists assert to be historical, was derived. It presents decided variations from the parallel in the fourth Gospel; and in the Synoptics we find sufficient indications of similar discourses<sup>1</sup> to render it very probable that other Gospels may have contained the passage quoted in the Epistle. In no case could an anonymous reference like this be of any weight as evidence for the Apostolic origin of the fourth Gospel.

We need not further discuss Ptolemæus and Heracleon. We have shown<sup>2</sup> that the date at which these heretics flourished places them beyond the limits within which we proposed to confine ourselves. In regard to Ptolemæus all that is affirmed is that, in the Epistle to Flora ascribed to him, expressions found in John i. 3 are used. The passage as it is given by Epiphanius is as follows : " Besides, that the world was created by the same, the Apostle states (saying all things have been made (γεγονέναι) by him and without him nothing was made)." ("Ἐτι γε τὴν τοῦ κόσμου δημιουργίαν ἰδίαν λέγει εἶναι (ἅτε πάντα δι' αὐτοῦ γεγονέναι, καὶ χωρὶς αὐτοῦ γέγονεν οὐδέν) ὁ ἀπόστολος)<sup>3</sup> Now the supposed quotation is

<sup>1</sup> Matt. x. 16—22, xxiv. 9 f. ; Mark xiii. 9—13 ; Luke xxi. 12—17.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. ii. p. 205 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Epiphanius, Hær., xxxiii. § 3.

introduced here in a parenthesis interrupting the sense, and there is every probability that it was added as an illustration by Epiphanius, and was not in the Epistle to Flora at all. Omitting the parenthesis, the sentence is a very palpable reference to the Apostle Paul, and Coloss. i. 16.<sup>1</sup> In regard to Heracleon, it is asserted from the unsupported references of Origen<sup>2</sup> that he wrote a commentary on the fourth Gospel. Even if this be a fact, there is not a single word of it preserved by Origen which in the least degree bears upon the Apostolic origin and trustworthiness of the Gospel. Neither of these heresiarchs, therefore, is of any value as a witness for the authenticity of the fourth Gospel.

The heathen Celsus, as we have shown,<sup>3</sup> wrote at a period when no evidence which he could well give of his own could have been of much value in supporting our Gospels. He is pressed into service,<sup>4</sup> however, because after alluding to various circumstances of Gospel history he says: "These things, therefore, being taken out of your own writings, we have no need of other testimony, for you fall upon your own swords,"<sup>5</sup> and in another place he says that certain Christians "have altered the Gospel from its first written form in three-fold, four-fold, and many-fold ways, and have re-moulded it in order to have the means of contradicting the arguments (of opponents)."<sup>6</sup> This is supposed to refer to the four Canonical

<sup>1</sup> *Scholten*, Die ält. Zeugnisse, p. 88, anm. 4.

<sup>2</sup> The passages are quoted by *Grabe*, Spicil. Patr., ii. p. 85 ff.

<sup>3</sup> Vol. ii. p. 227 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. *Tischendorf*, Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 71 ff.; *Westcott*, On the Canon, p. 356.

<sup>5</sup> Ταῦτα μὲν οὖν ὑμῖν ἐκ τῶν ὑμετέρων συγγραμμάτων, ἐφ' οἷς οὐδενὸς ἄλλου μάρτυρος χρῆζομεν· αὐτοὶ γὰρ ἐαντοῖς περιπίπτετε. *Origen*, Contra Cels., ii. 74.

<sup>6</sup> Ὡς ἐκ μήθης ἤκοντας εἰς τὸ ἐφροσάναυ αὐτοῖς, μεταχαράπτειν ἐκ τῆς πρώτης

Gospels. Apart from the fact that Origen replies to the first of these passages, that Celsus has brought forward much concerning Jesus which is not in accordance with the narratives of the Gospels, it is absurd to limit the accusation of "many-fold" corruption to four Gospels, when it is undeniable that the Gospels and writings long current in the Church were very numerous. In any case, what could such a statement as this do towards establishing the Apostolic origin and credibility of the fourth Gospel?

We might pass over the *Canon of Muratori* entirely, as being beyond the limit of time to which we confine ourselves,<sup>1</sup> but the unknown writer of the fragment gives a legend with regard to the composition of the fourth Gospel which we may quote here, although its obviously mythical character renders it of no value as evidence regarding the authorship of the Gospel. The writer says:

Quarti euangeliorum Iohannis ex decipolis  
Cohortantibus condiscipulis et episcopis suis  
dixit conieiunate mihi hodie triduo et quid  
cuique fuerit reuelatum alterutrum  
nobis ennarremus eadem nocte reue  
latum Andreæ ex apostolis ut recognis  
centibus cunctis Iohannis suo nomine  
cuncta describeret et ideo (2) licit uaria sin  
culis euangeliorum libris principia  
doceantur nihil tamen differt creden  
tium fidei cum uno ac principali spiritu de  
clarata sint in omnibus omnia de natiui  
tate de passione de resurrectione  
de conuersatione cum decipulis suis

γραφῆς τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τριχῆ καὶ τετραχῆ καὶ πολλαχῆ, καὶ μεταπλάττειν, ἢ ἔχοιεν  
πρὸς τοὺς ἐλέγχους ἀρνεῖσθαι. *Contra Cels.*, ii. 27.

<sup>1</sup> Vol. ii. p. 244 ff.

<sup>2</sup> It is admitted that the whole passage from this point to "futurum est" is abrupt and without connection with the context, as well as most confused. Cf. *Tregelles*, *Can. Murat.*, p. 36; *Donaldson*, *Hist. Chr. Lit. and Doctr.*, iii. p. 205.

ac de gemino eius aduentu  
 primo in humilitate dispectus quod fo . . .  
 .u (1) secundum potestate regali . . . pre  
 clarum quod foturum est (2) quid ergo  
 mirum si Iohannes tam constanter  
 sincula etiam in epistulis suis proferat  
 dicens in someipsu quæ uidimus oculis  
 nostris et auribus audiimus et manus  
 nostræ palpauerunt hæc scripsimus uobis  
 sic enim non solum uisurum sed et auditorem  
 sed et scriptorem omnium mirabilium domini per ordi  
 nem profetetur

“The fourth of the Gospels, of John, one of the disciples. To his fellow disciples and bishops (Episcopis) urging him he said: ‘Fast with me to-day for three days, and let us relate to each other that which shall be revealed to each.’ On the same night it was revealed to Andrew, one of the Apostles, that, with the supervision of all, John should relate all things in his own name. And, therefore, though various principles (principia) are taught by each book of the Gospels, nothing nevertheless differs in the faith of believers, for, in all, all things are declared by one ruling Spirit concerning the nativity, concerning the passion, concerning the resurrection, concerning the intercourse with the disciples, and concerning his double advent; the first in despised humility which has taken place, the second in regal power and splendour, which is still future. What wonder, therefore, if John should so constantly bring forward each thing (singula) also in his

<sup>1</sup> Credner reads here “quod ratum est.” Zur Gesch. d. Kan., p. 74. Dr. Westcott reads: “quod fuit.” On the Canon, p. 478.

<sup>2</sup> Dr. Tregelles calls attention to the resemblance of this passage to one of Tertullian (Apol. § 21). “Duobus enim adventibus eius significatis, primo, qui iam expunctus est in humilitate conditionis humanæ; secundo, qui concludendo seculo imminet in sublimitate divinitatis exsertæ: primum non intelligendo, secundum, quem manifestius predicatum sperant unum existimaverunt.” Can. Murat., p. 36. This is another reason for dating the fragment in the third century.

Epistles, saying in regard to himself: The things which we have seen with our eyes, and have heard with our ears, and our hands have handled, these things have we written unto you. For thus he professes himself not only an eye-witness and hearer, but also a writer of all the wonders of the Lord in order."

It is obvious that in this passage we have an apologetic defence of the fourth Gospel,<sup>1</sup> which necessarily implies antecedent denial of its authority and apostolic origin. The writer not only ascribes it to John, but he clothes it with the united authority of the rest of the Apostles, in a manner which very possibly aims at explaining the supplementary chapter xxi., with its testimony to the truth of the preceding narrative. In his zeal the writer goes so far as to falsify a passage of the Epistle, and convert it into a declaration that the author of the letter had written the Gospel. " 'The things which we have seen, &c., these things have we written unto you' (*hæc scripsimus vobis*).<sup>2</sup> For thus he professes himself not only an eye-witness and hearer, but also a writer of all the wonders of the Lord in order." Credner argues that in speaking of John as "one of the disciples" (*ex discipulis*), and of Andrew as "one of the Apostles," the writer intends to distinguish between John the disciple, who wrote the Gospel and Epistle, and John the Apostle, who wrote the Apocalypse, as was done by Papias and Eusebius,<sup>3</sup> and that it was for this reason that he sought to dignify him by a special revelation, through the Apostle Andrew, selecting him to write the Gospel. Credner, therefore,

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kanon*, p. 158 f. und *Volkmar*, *Anhang*, p. 360; *Der Ursprung*, p. 28; *Scholten*, *Dio ält. Zeugnisse*, p. 150 f.; *Davidson*, *Introd. N. T.*, ii. p. 402; *Hilgenfeld*, *Der Kanon*, pp. 41, 43; *Lomann*, *Bijdragen*, p. 66 ff.

<sup>2</sup> 1 John i. 1—3.

<sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, *II. E.*, iii. 39.

concludes that here we have an ancient ecclesiastical tradition ascribing the Gospel and first Epistle to one of the disciples of Jesus different from the Apostle John.<sup>1</sup> Into this, however, we need not enter, nor is it necessary for us to demonstrate the mythical nature of this narrative regarding the origin of the Gospel. We have merely given this extract from the fragment to make our statement regarding it complete. Not only is the evidence of the fragment of no value, from the lateness of its date, and the uncritical character of its author, but a vague and fabulous tradition recorded by an unknown writer could not, in any case, furnish testimony calculated to establish the Apostolic origin and trustworthiness of the fourth Gospel.

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kan.*, p. 158 ff.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1857, p. 301.

## CHAPTER II.

## AUTHORSHIP AND CHARACTER OF THE FOURTH GOSPEL.

THE result of our inquiry into the evidence for the fourth Gospel is sufficiently decided to render further examination unnecessary. We have seen that for some century and a half, after the events recorded in the work, there is not only no testimony whatever connecting the fourth Gospel with the Apostle John, but no certain trace even of the existence of the Gospel. There has not been the slightest evidence in any of the writings of the Fathers which we have examined even of a tradition that the Apostle John had composed any evangelical work at all, and the claim advanced in favour of the Christian miracles to contemporaneous evidence of extraordinary force and veracity by undoubted eye-witnesses so completely falls to the ground, that we might here well bring this part of our inquiry to a close. There are, however, so many peculiar circumstances connected with the fourth Gospel, both in regard to its authorship and to its relationship to the three Synoptics, which invite further attention, that we propose briefly to review some of them. We must, however, carefully restrict ourselves to the limits of our inquiry, and resist any temptation to enter upon an exhaustive discussion of the problem presented by the fourth Gospel from a more general literary point of view.

The endeavour to obtain some positive, or at least negative, information regarding the author of the fourth Gospel is facilitated by the fact that in the New Testament Canon several other works are ascribed to him. These works present such marked and distinct characteristics that, apart from the fact that their number extends the range of evidence, they afford an unusual opportunity of testing the tradition which assigns them all to the Apostle John, by comparing the clear indications which they give of the idiosyncrasies of their author with the independent data which we possess regarding the history and character of the Apostle. It is asserted by the Church that John the son of Zebedee, one of the disciples of Jesus, is the composer of no less than five of our canonical writings, and it would be impossible to select any books of our New Testament presenting more distinct features, or more widely divergent views, than are to be found in the Apocalypse on the one hand, and the Gospel and three Epistles on the other. Whilst a strong family likeness exists between the Epistles and the Gospel, and they exhibit close analogies both in thought and language, the Apocalypse, on the contrary, is so different from them in language, in style, in religious views and terminology, that it is impossible to believe that the writer of the one could be the author of the other. The translators of our New Testament have laboured, and not in vain, to eliminate as far as possible all individuality of style and language, and to reduce the various books of which it is composed to one uniform smoothness of composition. It is, therefore, impossible for the mere English reader to appreciate the immense difference which exists between the harsh and Hebraistic Greek of the Apocalypse and the polished

elegance of the fourth Gospel, and it is to be feared that the rarity of critical study has prevented any general recognition of the almost equally striking contrast of thought between the two works. The very remarkable peculiarities which distinguish the Apocalypse and Gospel of John, however, were very early appreciated, and almost the first application of critical judgment to the Canonical books of the New Testament is the argument of Dionysius, Bishop of Alexandria, about the middle of the third century, that the author of the fourth Gospel could not be the writer of the Book of Revelation.<sup>1</sup> The dogmatic predilections which at that time had begun to turn against the Apocalypse, the non-fulfilment of the prophecies of which disappointed and puzzled the early Church, led Dionysius to solve the difficulty by deciding in favour of the authenticity of the Gospel, but at least he recognized the dilemma which has since occupied so much of biblical criticism.

It is not necessary to enter upon any exhaustive analysis of the Apocalypse and Gospel to demonstrate anew that both works cannot have emanated from the same mind. This has already been conclusively done by others. Some apologetic writers,—greatly influenced, no doubt, by the express declaration of the Church, and satisfied by the analogies which could scarcely fail to exist between two works dealing with a similar theme,—together with a very few independent critics, have asserted the authenticity of both works.<sup>2</sup> The great majority of

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., vii. 25.

<sup>2</sup> *Alford*, Greek Testament, 1868, iv. pp. 198 ff., 229; *Bertholdt*, Einl. A. u. N. T., iv. p. 1800 ff.; cf. iii. p. 1299 ff.; *Ebrard*, Die evang. Gesch., p. 858 ff.; *Das evang. Johannis*, 1845, p. 137 ff.; *Eichhorn*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 375 ff., cf. p. 223 ff.; *Feilmoser*, Einl. N. T., p. 569 ff., cf. p. 199 ff.; *Hase*, Die Tüb. Schule, 1855, p. 25 ff.; *Huy*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 496 ff., cf.

critics, however, have fully admitted the impossibility of recognizing a common source for the fourth Gospel and the Apocalypse of John.<sup>1</sup> The critical question regarding the two works has, in fact, reduced itself to the dilemma which may be expressed as follows, in the words of Lücke: "Either the Gospel and the first Epistle are genuine writings of the Apostle John, and in that case the Apocalypse is no genuine work of that Apostle, or the inverse."<sup>2</sup> After an elaborate comparison of the two writings, the same writer, who certainly will not be suspected of wilfully subversive criticism, resumes: "The difference between the language, way of expression, and mode of thought and doctrine of the Apocalypse and the rest of the Johannine writings, is so

p. 160 ff.; *Lechler*, Das ap. u. nachap. Zeit., p. 195 ff.; *Niemeyer*, Verhandl. over de echtheid der Johann. Schr., 1852; *Reithmayr*, Einl. N. T., p. 774 ff.; *Thiersch*, Die Kirche im. ap. Zeit., pp. 245 f., 267—274; *Tholuck*, Glaubw. evang. Gesch., p. 280 ff., &c., &c.

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, Unters. kan. Ev., p. 345 ff.; K. G. drei erst. Jahrh., 1863, p. 146 ff.; *Bleek*, Beiträge, p. 190—200; *Bretschneider*, Probabilia, p. 150 ff.; *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. pp. 724 ff., 732 ff.; *Davidson*, Introd. N. T., i. p. 313 ff.; ii. p. 441; *Dionysius*, in *Euseb.*, H. E., vii. 24, 25; *Erasmus*, Annot. in Apoc. Johannis N. Test., p. 625; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., v. 1852—3, p. 179 ff.; x. 1859—60, p. 85 f.; Die Joh. Schr., ii. p. 59 ff.; Com. in Apoc. Joh., 1828, p. 67 ff.; *Evanson*, Dissonance of the four generally received Evangelists, 1792; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 338 ff.; *Hitzig*, Ueber Johannes Marcus u. s. Schriften, 1843; *Kayser*, Rev. de Théol., 1856, xiii. p. 80 ff.; *Köstlin*, Lehrb., Ev. u. Br. Joh., p. 1 ff.; *Lücke*, Einl. Offenb. Joh., ii. pp. 659 ff., 680 ff., 744 ff.; *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., p. 1636; *Nicholas*, Et. Cr. sur la Bible N. T., p. 183 ff.; *Renan*, L'Antechrist, 1873, p. xxv.; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 152 f.; *Révillé*, Rev. de Théol., 1854, ix. pp. 332 ff., 354 ff., 1855, x. p. 1 ff.; Rev. des deux Mondes, Oct., 1863, p. 633 ff.; cf. La Vie de Jésus de M. Renan, 1864, p. 42, note 1; *Scholten*, Das Ev. Joh., p. 401 ff.; *Schützer*, Theol. Jahrb., 1842, p. 451 ff.; *Schleiermacher*, Einl. N. T., pp. 317, 449 ff., 466 ff.; *Schweyler*, Das nachap. Zeit., ii. p. 372 f.; *Taylor*, The Fourth Gospel, 1867, p. 14; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 422; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. evang. Gesch., p. 237, p. 295; *Zeller*, Theol. Jahrb., 1845, p. 654 f., &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Einl. Offenb. Johannes, ii. p. 504.

comprehensive and intense, so individual, and even so radical; the affinity and agreement, on the contrary, either so general, or in details so fragmentary and uncertain (*zurückweichend*), that the Apostle John, if he really is the author of the Gospel and of the Epistle—which we here advance—cannot have composed the Apocalypse either *before* or *after* the Gospel and the Epistle. If all critical experience and rules in such literary questions do not deceive, it is certain that the Evangelist and Apocalyptist are two different persons of the name of John,"<sup>1</sup> &c.

De Wette, another conservative critic, speaks with equal decision. After an able comparison of the two works, he says: "From all this it follows (and in New Testament criticism no result is more certain than this), that the Apostle John, if he be the author of the fourth Gospel and of the Johannine Epistles, did not write the Apocalypse, or, if the Apocalypse be his work, he is not the author of the other writings."<sup>2</sup> Ewald is equally positive: "Above all," he says, "should we be in error as to the descent of this work (the Gospel) from the Apostle, if the Apocalypse of the New Testament were by him. That this much earlier writing cannot have been composed by the author of the later is an axiom which I consider I have already, in 1826-28, so convincingly demonstrated, that it would be superfluous now to return to it, especially as, since then, all men capable of forming a judgment are of the same opinion, and what has been brought forward by a few writers against it too clearly depends upon—influences foreign to science."<sup>3</sup> We may, therefore, consider the point generally admitted, and

<sup>1</sup> Einl. Offenb. Joh., ii. p. 744 f.

<sup>2</sup> Einl. N. T., § 189 e., p. 422.

<sup>3</sup> Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., v. p. 179.

proceed very briefly to discuss the question upon this basis.

The external evidence that the Apostle John wrote the Apocalypse is more ancient than that for the authorship of any book of the New Testament, excepting some of the Epistles of Paul. This is admitted even by critics who ultimately deny the authenticity of the work.<sup>1</sup> Passing over the very probable statement of Andrew of Caesarea,<sup>2</sup> that Papias recognized the Apocalypse as an inspired work, and the inference drawn from this fact that he referred it to the Apostle, we at once proceed to Justin Martyr, who affirms in the clearest and most positive manner the Apostolic origin of the work. He speaks to Tryphon of "a certain man whose name was John, one of the Apostles of Christ, who prophesied by a revelation made to him," of the Millennium, and subsequent general resurrection and judgment.<sup>3</sup> The statement of Justin is all the more important from the fact that he does not name any other writing of the New Testament, and that the Old Testament was still for him the only Holy Scripture. The genuineness of this testimony is not called in question by any one. Eusebius states that Melito of Sardis wrote a work on the Apo-

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, *Gesch. N. T. Kan.*, pp. 97, 180; *Baur*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1844, p. 660; *Ebrard*, *Die evang. Gesch.*, p. 854 f.; *Davidson*, *Int. N. T.*, i. p. 318; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 339 f.; *Lechler*, *Das ap. u. nachap. Zeit.*, p. 197 f.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, ii. p. 249; *Feilmoser*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 578; *Lücke*, *Einl. Offenb. Joh.*, ii. p. 657; *Révillle*, *Rev. des deux Mondes*, Oct. 1863, p. 632; *Kayser*, *Rev. de Théol.*, 1856, xiii. p. 80 f., &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> It is generally asserted both by Apologists and others that this testimony is valid in favour of the recognition by Papias of the authenticity of the Apocalypse.

<sup>3</sup> *Dial.* 81; cf. *Eusebius*, *H. E.*, iv. 18: Καὶ ἐπειδὴ καὶ παρ' ἡμῶν ἀνὴρ τις, φῶν ὄνομα Ἰωάννης, εἰς τῶν ἀποστόλων τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ἐν ἀποκαλύψει γενομένη αὐτῷ χιλία ἔτη ποιήσειεν ἐν Ἱερουσαλήμ, κ.τ.λ.

calypse of John,<sup>1</sup> and Jerome mentions the treatise.<sup>2</sup> There can be no doubt that had Melito thrown the slightest doubt on the Apostolic origin of the Apocalypse, Eusebius, whose dogmatic views led him to depreciate that writing, would have referred to the fact. Eusebius also mentions that Apollonius, a Presbyter of Ephesus, quoted the Apocalypse against the Montanists, and there is reason to suppose that he did so as an Apostolic work.<sup>3</sup> Eusebius further states that Theophilus of Antioch made use of testimony from the Apocalypse of John ;<sup>4</sup> but although, as Eusebius does not mention anything to the contrary, it is probable that Theophilus really recognized the book to be by John the Apostle, the uncritical haste of Eusebius renders his vague statement of little value. We do not think it worth while to quote the evidence of later writers. Although Irenæus, who repeatedly assigns the Apocalypse to John, the disciple of the Lord,<sup>5</sup> is cited by Apologists as a very important witness, more especially from his intercourse with Polycarp, we do not attribute any value to his testimony, both from the late date at which he wrote, and from the singularly uncritical and credulous character of his mind. Although he appeals to the testimony of those " who saw John face to face " with regard to the number of the name of the Beast, his own utter ignorance of the interpretation shows how little information he can have derived from Polycarp.<sup>6</sup> The same remarks apply still more strongly to Tertullian, who, however, most unhesitatingly assigns the Apocalypse to the Apostle John.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 26.

<sup>2</sup> De Vir. Ill., 24.

<sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., v. 18.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, H. E., iv. 24.

<sup>5</sup> Adv. Hær., iv. 20, § 11, 21, § 3, 30, § 4, &c., &c.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, v. 30.

<sup>7</sup> Adv. Marc., iii. 14, 24, &c., &c.

It would be useless more particularly to refer to later evidence, however, or quote even the decided testimony in its favour of Clement of Alexandria,<sup>1</sup> or Origen.<sup>2</sup>

The first doubt cast upon the authenticity of the Apocalypse occurs in the argument of Dionysius of Alexandria, one of the disciples of Origen, in the middle of the third century. He mentions that some had objected to the whole work as without sense or reason, and as displaying such dense ignorance, that it was impossible that an apostle or even one in the Church, could have written it, and they assigned it to Cerinthus, who held the doctrine of the reign of Christ on earth.<sup>3</sup> These objections, it is obvious, are merely dogmatic, and do not affect to be historical. They are in fact a good illustration of the method by which the Canon was formed. If the doctrine of any writing met with the approval of the early Church it was accepted with unhesitating faith, and its pretension to Apostolic origin was admitted as a natural consequence; but if, on the other hand, the doctrine of the writing was not clearly that of the community, it was rejected without further examination. It is an undeniable fact that not a single trace exists of the application of historical criticism to any book of the New Testament in the early ages of Christianity. The case of the Apocalypse is most intelligible:—so long as the expectation and hope of a second advent and of a personal reign of the risen and glorified Christ, of the prevalence of which we have abundant testimony in the Pauline Epistles and other early works, continued to animate the Church, the

<sup>1</sup> *Stromata*, vi. 13, §§ 106, 141.

<sup>2</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., vi. 25, in Joann. Opp. iv. p. 17.

<sup>3</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., vii. 24.

Apocalypse which excited and fostered them was a popular volume: but as years passed away and the general longing of Christians, eagerly marking the signs of the times, was again and again disappointed, and the hope of a Millennium began either to be abandoned or indefinitely postponed, the Apocalypse proportionately lost favour, or was regarded as an incomprehensible book, misleading the world by illusory promises. Its history is that of a highly dogmatic treatise esteemed or contemned in proportion to the ebb and flow of opinion regarding the doctrines which it expresses.

The objections of Dionysius, arising first from dogmatic grounds and his inability to understand the Apocalyptic utterances of the book, took the shape we have mentioned of a critical dilemma:—The author of the Gospel could not at the same time be the author of the Apocalypse. Dogmatic predilection decided the question in favour of the fourth Gospel, and the reasoning by which that decision is arrived at has, therefore, no critical force or value. The fact still remains that Justin Martyr distinctly refers to the Apocalypse as the work of the Apostle John and, as we have seen, no similar testimony exists in support of the claims of the fourth Gospel.

As another most important point, we may mention that there is probably not another work of the New Testament the precise date of the composition of which, within a very few weeks, can so positively be affirmed. No result of criticism rests upon a more secure basis and is now more universally accepted by all competent critics than the fact that the Apocalypse was written in A.D. 68-69.<sup>1</sup> The writer distinctly and repeatedly mentions

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 705 ff.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., v. p. 181 ff.; *Gesch. V. Isr.*, vii. p. 227; *Comment. in Apoc. Joh.*, 1828,

his name: i. 1, "The revelation of Jesus Christ . . . . unto his servant John;"<sup>1</sup> i. 4, "John to the seven churches which are in Asia,"<sup>2</sup> and he states that the work was written in the island of Patmos where he was "on account of the Word of God and the testimony of Jesus."<sup>3</sup> Ewald, who decides in the most arbitrary manner against the authenticity of the Apocalypse and in favour of the Johannine authorship of the Gospel, objects that the author, although he certainly calls himself John, does not assume to be an Apostle, but merely terms himself the servant (δοῦλος) of Christ like other true Christians, and distinctly classes himself amongst the Prophets<sup>4</sup> and not amongst the Apostles.<sup>5</sup> We find, however, that Paul, who was not apt to waive his claims to the Apostolate, was content to call himself: "Paul a servant (δοῦλος) of Jesus Christ, called to be an Apostle," in writing to the Romans; (i. 1) and the superscription of the Epistle to the Philippians is: "Paul and Timothy servants (δοῦλοι) of Christ Jesus."<sup>6</sup> There was, moreover, reason why the author of the Book of Revelation, a work the form of which was decidedly based upon that of Daniel and other Jewish Apocalyptic writings, should rather adopt

δουλος (δουλος) τοου θεου  
 δουλος (δουλος) του κυριου  
 δουλος (δουλος) του βασιλεως

Die Joh. Schr., ii. p. 62; *Guericke*, Gesamtgesch., p. 171, p. 522 f.; *Volkmar*, Comment. zur Offenb. Joh., 1862, p. 7 ff.; Die Religion Jesu, p. 148; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 338; *Davidson*, Int. N. T., i. p. 347 ff.; *Lützelberger*, Die kirchl. Trad. Joh., p. 234; *Renan*, Vie de Jésus xiii<sup>me</sup>. ed. p. lxxi. f.; L'Antechrist, p. 340 ff.; *Réville*, Rev. des deux Mondes, Oct. 1863, p. 623; Rev. de Théol., 1855, x. p. 4; *Scholten*, Das Ev. Joh., p. 401; *Kayser*, Rev. de Théol., 1856. xiii. p. 80.

<sup>1</sup> Ἀποκάλυψις Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ . . . . τῷ δούλῳ αὐτοῦ Ἰωάννῃ.

<sup>2</sup> Ἰωάννης ταῖς ἑπτὰ ἐκκλησίαις ταῖς ἐν τῇ Ἀσίᾳ. Cf. i. 9; xxii. 8.

<sup>3</sup> i. 9, δια τὸν λόγον τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τὴν μαρτυρίαν Ἰησοῦ . . . .

<sup>4</sup> Cf. i. 1—3, 9 f.; xix. 9 f.; xxii. 6—9, 10, 16 f., 18 f.

<sup>5</sup> *Ewald*, Die Joh. Schr., ii. p. 55 ff.; Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., v. p. 179 ff.

<sup>6</sup> We do not refer to the opening of the Epistle to Titus, nor to that which commences, "James a servant (δοῦλος) of God," &c., nor to the so-called "Epistle of Jude," all being too much disputed or apocryphal.

the character of Prophet than the less suitable designation of Apostle upon such an occasion. It is clear that he counted fully upon being generally known under the simple designation of "John," and when we consider the unmistakable terms of authority with which he addresses the Seven Churches, it is scarcely possible to deny that the writer either was the Apostle, or distinctly desired to assume his personality. It is not necessary for us here to enter into any discussion regarding the "Presbyter John," for it is generally admitted that even he could not have had at that time any position in Asia Minor which could have warranted such a tone. If the name of Apostle, therefore, be not directly assumed—and it was not necessary to assume it—the authority of one is undeniably inferred.

Ewald, however, argues: "On the contrary, indeed, the author could not more clearly express that he is not one of the Twelve, than when he imagines (Apoc. xxi. 14) the names of the 'twelve apostles of the Lamb' shining upon the twelve foundation stones of the wall of the future heavenly Jerusalem. He considered that he could not sufficiently elevate the names and the lustre of these Twelve, and he gave them in his own mind the highest external honour which he could confer upon them. No intelligent person ever gives such extreme honour and such sparkling lustre to himself, still less does he determine himself to give them, or himself actually anticipates the eternal glorification which God alone can give to him, and boasts of it before men. And could one seriously believe that one of the Twelve, yea, that even he whom we know as the most delicate and fine minded amongst them, could have written this of himself?"<sup>1</sup> Now,

<sup>1</sup> In making these translations from German writers, and more especi-

in the first place, we must remark that in this discussion it is quite absurd to speak of our knowing John the Apostle as distinguished above all the rest of the Twelve for such qualities. Nowhere do we find such a representation of him except in the fourth Gospel, if even there, but, as we shall presently see, rather the contrary, and the fourth Gospel cannot here be received as evidence. It is the misfortune of this whole problem that many critics are so fascinated by the beauty of the fourth Gospel that they sacrifice sense and reason in order to support it. Returning to these objections, however, we might by way of retort point out to those who assert the inspiration of the Apocalypse, that the symbolical representation of the heavenly Jerusalem is objective, and not a mere subjective sketch coloured according to the phantasy of the writer. Passing on, however, it must be apparent that the whole account of the heavenly city is typical, and that in basing its walls upon the Twelve, he does not glorify himself personally, but simply gives its place to the idea which was symbolized when

ally from Ewald, we have preferred to adhere closely to the sense and style of the original, however involved and laboured, rather than secure a more smooth and elegant English version, at the risk of misrepresentation, by a mere paraphrase of the German. "Vielmehr kann ja der Verfasser dass er keiner der Zwölfe war nicht deutlicher ausdrücken als indem er Apoc. 21, 14, die namen der 'zwölf Apostel des Lammes,' auf den 12 grundsteinen der mauer des künftigen himmlischen Jerusalems prangend sich denkt. Er meinte also die namen und den glanz dieser Zwölfe nicht genug erheben zu können und gab ihnen im eigenen geiste die höchste äussere ehre welche er ihnen zuweisen konnte. Solche höchste ehre und solchen funkelnden glanz gibt kein irgend verständiger sich selbst, noch weniger beschliesst er sich selbst sie zu geben, oder nimmt gar die ewige verherrlichung welche ihm allein Gott geben kann sich selbst vorweg und rühmt sich ihrer vor den menschen. Und man könnte sich ernstlich einbilden, einer der Zwölfe, ja sogar der welchen wir sonst unter ihnen als den zartesten und feinsten kennen, werde dies von sich selbst geschrieben haben?" Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., v. p. 180 f.; cf. Die Joh. Schr., ii. p. 56 f.

Jesus is represented as selecting twelve disciples, the number of the twelve tribes, upon whose preaching the spiritual city was to be built up. The Jewish belief in the special preference of the Jews before all nations led up to this, and it forms part of the strong Hebraistic form of the writer's Christianity. The heavenly city is simply a glorified Jerusalem; the twelve Apostles, representatives of the twelve tribes, set apart for the regeneration of Israel—as the seventy disciples, the number of the nations of the earth, are sent out to regenerate the Gentiles—are the foundation-stones of the New City with its twelve gates, on which are written the names of the twelve tribes of Israel,<sup>1</sup> for whom the city is more particularly provided. For 144,000 of Israel are first sealed, 12,000 of each of the twelve tribes, before the Seer beholds the great multitude of all nations and tribes and peoples.<sup>2</sup> The whole description is a mere allegory of the strongest Jewish dogmatic character, and it is of singular value for the purpose of identifying the author. ' /

Moreover, the apparent glorification of the Twelve is more than justified by the promise which Jesus is represented by the Synoptics<sup>3</sup> as making to them in person. When Peter, in the name of the Twelve, asks what is reserved for them who have forsaken all and followed him, Jesus replies: "Verily I say unto you that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of Man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall be set upon twelve thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel."<sup>4</sup> Ewald himself, in his distribution to the supposed original sources of the materials of our

<sup>1</sup> Apoc. xxi. 12.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. xix. 27, 28; Luke xii. 28—30.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, vii. 4—9.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. xix. 28.

existing first Synoptic, assigns this passage to the very oldest Gospel.<sup>1</sup> What impropriety is there, and what improbability, therefore, that an Apostle in an ecstatic and dogmatic allegory of the spiritual Jerusalem should represent the names of the twelve Apostles as inscribed upon the twelve foundation stones, as the names of the twelve tribes of Israel were inscribed upon the twelve gates of the City? On the contrary, we submit that it is probable under the circumstances that an Apostle should make such a representation, and in view of the facts regarding the Apostle John himself which we have from the Synoptics, it is particularly in harmony with his character, and these characteristics, we shall see, directly tend to establish his identity with the author.

“How much less, therefore, is it credible of the Apostle John,” says Ewald, elsewhere, in pursuing the same argument, “who as a writer is so incomparably modest and delicate in feeling, that he does not in a single one of his genuine published writings name himself as the author, or at all proclaim his own praise.”<sup>2</sup> This is merely sentimental assumption of facts to which we shall hereafter allude, but if the “incomparable modesty” of which he speaks really existed, nothing could more conclusively separate the author of the fourth Gospel from the son of Zebedee whom we know in the Synoptics, or more support the claims of the Apocalypse. Now, in the first place, we must assert that, in writing a serious history of the life and teaching of Jesus, full of marvellous events and astounding doctrines, the omission of his name by an Apostle can not only not be recognized as genuine modesty, but must be condemned as culpable neglect. It is perfectly incredible that an Apostle could

<sup>1</sup> Die drei ersten Evv.

<sup>2</sup> Die Joh. Schr., ii. p. 56 f.

have written such a work without attaching his name as the guarantee of his intimate acquaintance with the events and statements he records. What would be thought of a historian who published a history without a single reference to recognized authorities, and yet who did not declare even his own name as some evidence of his truth? The fact is, that the first two Synoptics bear no author's name because they are not the work of any one man, but the collected materials of many ; the third Synoptic only pretends to be a compilation for private use ; and the fourth Gospel bears no simple signature because it is neither the work of an Apostle, nor of an eye-witness of the events and hearer of the teaching it records.

If it be considered incredible, however, that an Apostle could, even in an Allegory, represent the names of the Twelve as written on the foundation stones of the New Jerusalem, and the incomparable modesty and delicacy of feeling of the assumed author of the fourth Gospel be contrasted with it so much to the disadvantage of the writer of the Apocalypse, we ask whether this reference to the collective Twelve can be considered at all on a par with the self-glorification of the disguised author of the Gospel, who, not content with the simple indication of himself as John a servant of Jesus Christ, and with sharing distinction equally with the rest of the Twelve, assumes to himself alone a pre-eminence in the favour and affection of his Master, as well as a distinction amongst his fellow disciples, of which we first hear from himself, and which is anything but corroborated by the three Synoptics ? The supposed author of the fourth Gospel, it is true, does not plainly mention his name, but he distinguishes himself as "the disciple whom Jesus loved," and represents himself as "leaning on Jesus' breast at

(coc)  
o

supper."<sup>1</sup> This distinction assumed to himself, and this preference over the other disciples in the love of him whom he represents as God, is much greater self-glorification than that of the author of the Apocalypse. We shall presently see how far Ewald is right in saying, moreover, that the author does not clearly indicate the person for whom at least he desires to be mistaken.

We must conclude that these objections have no weight, and that there is no internal evidence whatever against the supposition that the "John" who announces himself as the author of the Apocalypse was the Apostle. On the contrary the tone of authority adopted throughout, and the evident certainty that his identity would everywhere be recognized, denote a position in the Church which no other person of the name of John could possibly have held at the time when the Apocalypse was written. The external evidence, therefore, which indicates the Apostle John as the author of the Apocalypse is quite in harmony with the internal testimony of the book itself. We have already pointed out the strong colouring of Judaism in the views of the writer. Its imagery is thoroughly Jewish, and its allegorical representations are entirely based upon Jewish traditions, and hopes. The heavenly City is a New Jerusalem; its twelve gates are dedicated to the twelve tribes of Israel; God and the Lamb are the Temple of it; and the sealed of the twelve tribes have the precedence over the nations, and stand with the Lamb on Mount Zion (xiv. 1) having his name and his Father's written on their foreheads. We have already stated that the language in which the book is written is the most Hebraistic Greek of the New Testament, as its contents are the most deeply tinged

<sup>1</sup> John xiii. 23; xix. 26, 27; xx. 2 f.; cf. xxi. 20 ff.

with Judaism. If, finally, we seek for some traces of the character of the writer, we see in every page the impress of an impetuous fiery spirit, whose symbol is the Eagle, breathing forth vengeance against the enemies of the Messiah, and impatient till it be accomplished, and the whole of the visions of the Apocalypse proceed to the accompaniment of the rolling thunders of God's wrath.

We may now turn to examine such historical data as exist regarding John the son of Zebedee, and to inquire whether they accord better with the character and opinions of the author of the Apocalypse or of the Evangelist. John and his brother James are represented by the Synoptics as being the sons of Zebedee and Salome. They were fishermen on the sea of Galilee, and at the call of Jesus they left their ship and their father and followed him.<sup>1</sup> Their fiery and impetuous character led Jesus to give them the surname of *Βοωνηρυές*: "Sons of thunder,"<sup>2</sup> an epithet justified by several incidents which are related regarding them. Upon one occasion, John sees one casting out devils in his master's name, and in an intolerant spirit forbids him because he did not follow them, for which he is rebuked by Jesus.<sup>3</sup> Another time, when the inhabitants of a Samaritan village would not receive them, John and James angrily turn to Jesus and say: "Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elijah did?"<sup>4</sup> One remarkable episode will have presented itself already to the mind of every reader, which the second Synoptic Gospel narrates as follows: Mark x. 35, "And James and John the sons of Zebedee come unto him saying unto him: Teacher, we

<sup>1</sup> Matt. iv. 21 f.; Mark i. 19 f.; Luke v. 19 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Mark ix. 38 f.; Luke ix. 49 f.

<sup>3</sup> Mark iii. 17.

<sup>4</sup> Luke ix. 54 ff.

would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall ask thee. 36. And he said unto them : What would ye that I should do for you ? 37. They said unto him : Grant that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand in thy glory. 38. But Jesus said to them : Ye know not what ye ask : can ye drink the cup that I drink ? or be baptised with the baptism that I am baptized with ? 39. And they said unto him : We can. And Jesus said unto them : The cup that I drink ye shall drink ; and the baptism that I am baptised withal shall ye be baptised : 40. But to sit on my right hand or on my left hand is not mine to give, but for whom it is prepared. 41. And when the ten heard it they began to be much displeased with James and John." It is difficult to say whether the effrontery and selfishness of the request, or the assurance with which the brethren assert their power to emulate the Master is more striking in this scene. Apparently the grossness of the proceeding already began to be felt when our first Gospel was edited, for it represents the request as made by the mother of James and John ; but that is a very slight decrease of the offence, inasmuch as the brethren are obviously consenting, if not inciting parties in the prayer, and utter their " We can " with the same absence of " incomparable modesty."<sup>1</sup> After the death of Jesus, John remained in Jerusalem,<sup>2</sup> and chiefly confined his ministry to the city and its neighbourhood.<sup>3</sup> The account which Hegesippus gives of James the brother of Jesus who was appointed overseer of the Church in Jerusalem, will not be forgotten,<sup>4</sup> and we refer to it merely in illustration of primitive Chris-

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xx. 20 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Acts i. 13 ; iii. 1.

<sup>3</sup> Acts viii. 25 ; xv. 1 ff. <sup>4</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., ii. 23 ; cf. vol. i. p. 435 f.

tianity. However mythical elements are worked up into the narrative, one point is undoubted fact, that the Christians of that community were but a sect of Judaism, merely superadding to Mosaic doctrines belief in the actual advent of the Messiah whom Moses and the prophets had foretold ; and we find, in the Acts of the Apostles, Peter and John represented as "going up into the Temple at the hour of prayer,"<sup>1</sup> like other Jews. In the Epistle of Paul to the Galatians, we have most valuable evidence with regard to the Apostle John. Paul found him still in Jerusalem on the occasion of the visit referred to in that letter, about A.D. 50—53. We need not quote at length the important passage Gal. ii. 1 ff., but the fact is undeniable, and stands upon stronger evidence than almost any other particular regarding the early Church, being distinctly and directly stated by Paul himself : that the three "pillar" Apostles representing the Church there were James, Peter, and John. Peter is markedly termed the Apostle of the circumcision, and the differences between him and Paul are evidence of the opposition of their views. James and John are clearly represented as sharing the views of Peter, and whilst Paul finally agrees with them that he is to go to the Gentiles, the three *στῦλοι* elect to continue their ministry to the circumcision.<sup>2</sup> Here is John, therefore, clearly devoted to the Apostleship of the circumcision as opposed to Paul, whose views, we may gather from the whole of Paul's account, were little more than tolerated by the *στῦλοι*. Before leaving New Testament data we may here point out the statement in the Acts of the Apostles that Peter and John were known to be "unlettered and ignorant men"<sup>3</sup> (*ἄνθρωποι ἀγράμματοι καὶ ἰδιῶται*).

<sup>1</sup> Acts iii. 1. f.<sup>2</sup> Gal. ii. 8—9.<sup>3</sup> Acts iv. 13.

Later tradition mentions one or two circumstances regarding John to which we may briefly refer. Irenæus states : "There are those who heard him (Polycarp) say that John, the disciple of the Lord, going to bathe at Ephesus and perceiving Cerinthus within rushed forth from the bath-house without bathing, but crying out : ' Let us fly lest the bath-house fall down : Cerinthus, the enemy of the truth, being within it.' . . . So great was the aversion which the Apostles and their disciples had to holding any intercourse with any of the corrupters of the truth,"<sup>1</sup> &c. Polycrates, who was Bishop of Ephesus about the beginning of the third century, also states that the Apostle John wore the mitre and petalon of the high priest (ὁς ἐγενήθη ἱερεὺς τὸ πέταλον πεφορηκῶς ),<sup>2</sup> a tradition which agrees with the Jewish tendencies of the Apostle of the circumcision as Paul describes him.<sup>3</sup>

Now if we compare these data regarding John the son of Zebedee with the character of John the author of the Apocalypse as we trace it in the work itself, it is impossible not to be struck by the singular agreement. The barbarous Hebraistic Greek and abrupt inelegant diction are natural to the unlettered fisherman of Galilee, and the fierce and intolerant spirit which pervades the book is precisely that which formerly forbade the working of

<sup>1</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 3, § 4; *Eusebius*, H. E., iv. 14.

<sup>2</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 31.

<sup>3</sup> We need not refer to any of the other legends regarding John, but it may be well to mention the tradition common amongst the Fathers which assigned to him the cognomen of "the Virgin." One Codex gives as the superscription of the Apocalypse : " τοῦ ἁγίου ἐνδοξοτάτου ἀποστόλου καὶ εὐαγγελιστοῦ παρθένου ἡγαπημένου ἐπιστηθίου Ἰωάννου θεολόγου," and we know that it is reported in early writings that, of all the Apostles, only John and the Apostle Paul remained unmarried, whence probably, in part, this title. In connection with this we may point to the importance attached to virginity in the Apocalypse, xiv. 4; cf. *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, ii. p. 254; *Lücke*, *Comm. üb. d. Br. Joh.*, 1836, p. 32 f.; *Credner*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 21.

miracles even in the name of the Master by any not of the immediate circle of Jesus, and which desired to consume an inhospitable village with fire from heaven.<sup>1</sup> The Judaistic form of Christianity which is represented throughout the Apocalypse, and the Jewish elements which enter so largely into its whole composition, are precisely those which we might expect from John the Apostle of the circumcision and the associate of James and of Peter in the very centre of Judaism, as we find him described by Paul. Parts of the Apocalypse, indeed, derive a new significance when we remember the opposition which the Apostle of the Gentiles met with from the Apostles of the circumcision, as plainly declared by Paul in his Epistle to the Galatians ii. 1 ff., and apparent in other parts of his writings.

We have already seen the scarcely disguised attack which is made on Paul in the Clementine Homilies under the name of Simon the Magician, the Apostle Peter following him from city to city for the purpose of denouncing and refuting his teaching. There can be no doubt that the animosity against Paul which was felt by the Ebionitic party, to which John as well as Peter belonged, was extreme, and when the novelty of the doctrine of justification by faith alone, taught by him, is considered, it is very comprehensible. In the Apocalypse, we find undeniable traces of it which accord with what Paul himself says, and with the undoubted tradition of the early Church. Not only is Paul silently excluded from the number of the Apostles, which might be intelligible

<sup>1</sup> The very objection of Ewald regarding the glorification of the Twelve, if true, would be singularly in keeping with the audacious request of John and his brother, to sit on the right and left hand of the glorified Jesus, for we find none of the "incomparable modesty" which the imaginative critic attributes to the author of the fourth Gospel in the John of the Synoptics.

when the typical nature of the number twelve is considered, but allusion is undoubtedly made to him, in the Epistles to the Churches. It is clear that Paul is referred to in the address to the Church of Ephesus: "And thou didst try them which say that they are Apostles and are not, and didst find them false;"<sup>1</sup> and also in the words to the Church of Smyrna: "But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumbling block before the sons of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols,"<sup>2</sup> &c., as well as elsewhere. Without dwelling on this point, however, we think it must be apparent to every unprejudiced person that the Apocalypse singularly corresponds in every respect—language, construction, and thought—with what we are told of the character of the Apostle John by the Synoptic Gospels and by tradition, and that the internal evidence, therefore, accords with the external, in attributing the composition of the Apocalypse rather than the Gospel to that Apostle.<sup>3</sup> We may without hesitation

<sup>1</sup> Apoc., ii. 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, ii. 14, cf. 9, 20 f. iii. 9.

<sup>3</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, pp. 345 ff., 376 ff.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1844, p. 661 ff.; *Bertholdt*, *Einl. A. u. N. T.*, iv. p. 1800—1875; *A. C. Danne-mann*, *Wer ist der Verfasser. der Offenb. Johannis?* 1841; *Ebrard*, *Das Ev. Johann*, p. 137 ff.; *Die evang. Gesch.*, p. 847 ff.; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, ii. p. 375 ff.; *Evanson*, *Dissonance*, &c., 1792; *Feilmoser*, *Einl. N. B.*, p. 569 ff.; *Guericke*, *Gesammtgesch.*, p. 498 ff.; *Beiträge*, p. 181 ff.; *Hase*, *Die Tüb. Schule*, p. 25 ff.; *Hänlein*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 220 ff.; *Hartwig*, *Apol. d. Apoc.*, u. s. w., 1780; *Hüvernick*, *Lucubr. crit. ad Apoc. spectantur*, 1842; *Hengstenberg*, *Die Offenb. d. heil. Johann.*, 1849; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 338; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1868, p. 203, anm. 1; *Hug*, *Einl. N. T.*, ii. p. 496 ff.; *Kleuker*, *Urspr. u. Zweck Offenb. Joh.*, 1799; *F. A. Knittel*, *Beitrag z. Krit. Joh. Offenb.*, 1773; *Kotthof*, *Apoc. Joanni apost. vindicata*, 1834; *J. P. Lange*, in *Tholuck's Lit. Anzeiger*, 1838, No. 20 ff.; *Vermischt. Schr.*, ii. p. 173 ff.; *Lechler*, *Das ap. u. nachap. Zeit.*, p. 197 ff.; *Lüderwald*, *Beurth. u. Erkl. Offenb. Johann.*, 1788; *Niermeyer*, *Verhandel. over Echth. Joh. Schr.*, 1852; *Olshausen*, *Echtheit. d. v. kan. Evv.*, 1832; *Renan*, *Vie de Jésus*, xiii<sup>m</sup>

affirm, at least, that with the exception of one or two of the Epistles of Paul there is no work of the New Testament which is supported by such close evidence.

We need not discuss the tradition as to the residence of the Apostle John in Asia Minor, regarding which much might be said. Those who accept the authenticity of the Apocalypse of course admit its composition in the

ed. p. lxxi. f.; *L'Antechrist*, 1873, p. xxii. ff., p. 340 ff.; *Reithmayr*, Einl. N. T., p. 774 ff.; *Réville* (doubtful), *Rev. des Deux Mondes*, Octr. 1863, p. 633; *Riggenbach*, *Die Zeugn. Evang. Joh.*, p. 30 ff.; *Scholten*, *Das Evang. Joh.*, p. 399 ff.; *Schwegler*, *Das nachap. Zeit.*, ii. p. 249 ff.; *Schnitzer*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1842, p. 451 ff.; *Storr*, *N. Apol. d. Offenb. Joh.* 1783; *Zweck d. evang. Gesch. u. Br. Joh.*, 1786, pp. 70 ff., 83, 163; *C. F. Schmidt*, *Unters. Offenb. Joh.*, 1771; *Thiersch*, *Die Kirche im. ap. Zeit.*, p. 245 f.; *Tholuck*, *Glaubw. evang. Gesch.*, p. 280 ff.; *Volkmar*, *Comment. Offenb. Joh.*, 1862, p. 38 ff.; *Weisse*, *Die evang. Gesch.*, i. p. 98, anm. 3; *Zeller*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1842, p. 654 ff., &c., &c.

We do not of course pretend to give a complete list of those who assert or deny the apostolic authorship of the Apocalypse, but merely refer to those whom we have noted down. The following deny the apostolic authorship: *Bleek*, *Beiträge*, p. 190–200; *Bullenstedt*, *Philo u. Johannes*, u. s. w., 1812; *Bretschneider*, *Probabilia*, p. 150 ff.; *Credner*, *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 732 ff.; *Corrodi*, *Versuch Belucht. d. Gesch. Bibelkanons*, 1792, ii. p. 303 ff.; *Cludius*, *Uransichten d. Christenth. Alt.*, 1808, p. 312 ff.; *Düsterdieck*, *H'buch. Offenb. Joh.*, 1859; *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, v. 1852–53, p. 179 ff.; *Comment. in Apoc. Joh.*, 1829, proleg. § 8; *Die Joh. Schr.*, ii. p. 55 ff.; *Gesch. V. Isr.*, vi. p. 694, vii. p. 227; *Hitzig*, *Ueber Johan. Marcus u. s. Scrifton*; *Kayser* (doubtful), *Rev. de Théol.*, 1856, xiii. p. 85; *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, i. p. 159 f.; *Lücke*, *Einl. Offenb. Joh.*, ii. pp. 491 ff., 802; *Th. Studien u. Krit.*, 1836, p. 654 ff.; *Luther*, *Præf. in Apoc.*, 1552; *Lützelberger*, *Die kirchl. Trad. ap. Joh.*, 1840, pp. 198 f., 210 ff.; *Michaelis*, *Einl. N. T.*, ii. p. 1573 ff.; *Neander*, *Gesch. Pflanz. u. s. w. Chr. Kirche*, 1862, p. 481 f.; *Neudecker*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 757 ff.; *Senler*, *Neue Unters. über Apoc.*, 1776; *Abhandl. Unters. d. Kanons*, i. *Anhang*; *Stroth*, *Freimüthige Unters. Offenb. Joh. betreffend*, 1771; *Schott*, *Isagoge*, §§ 114 ff., p. 473 ff.; *Schleiermacher*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 470 f.; *Weizsäcker*, *Unters. evang. Gesch.*, pp. 195, 234 ff.

Although many of those who assign the Apocalypse to the Apostle John are apologists who likewise assert that he wrote the Gospel, very many accept the authenticity of the Apocalypse as opposed to that of the Gospel in the dilemma which we have stated. On the other hand not a few of those who reject the Apocalypse equally reject the Gospel, and consider that neither the one nor the other is apostolic.

neighbourhood of Ephesus,<sup>1</sup> and see in this the confirmation of the wide-spread tradition that the Apostle spent a considerable period of the latter part of his life in that city. We may merely mention, in passing, that a historical basis for the tradition has occasionally been disputed, and has latterly again been denied by some able critics.<sup>2</sup> The evidence for this as for everything else connected with the early ages of Christianity is extremely unsatisfactory. Nor need we trouble ourselves with the dispute as to the Presbyter John, to whom many ascribe the composition, on the one hand, of the Apocalypse, and, on the other, of the Gospel, according as they finally accept the one or the other alternative of the critical dilemma which we have explained. We have only to do with the Apostle John and his connection with either of the two writings.

If we proceed to compare the character of the Apostle John, as we have it depicted in the Synoptics and other writings to which we have referred, with that of the author of the fourth Gospel, and to contrast the peculiarities of both, we have a very different result. Instead of the Hebraistic Greek and harsh diction which might be expected from the unlettered and ignorant fisherman of Galilee, we find, in the fourth Gospel, the purest and least Hebraistic Greek of any of the Gospels (some parts of the third Synoptic, perhaps, alone excepted), and a refinement and beauty of composition whose charm has captivated the world, and in too many cases overpowered the calm exercise of judgment. Instead of the fierce and intolerant temper of the Son of thunder, we find a

<sup>1</sup> Apoc. i. 9.

<sup>2</sup> *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, i. p. 162 ff.; *Scholten*, *Do Apostel Johannes in Klein-Azië*, 1871.

spirit breathing forth nothing but gentleness and love. Instead of the Judaistic Christianity of the Apostle of Circumcision, who merely tolerates Paul, we find a mind which has so completely detached itself from Judaism that the writer makes the very appellation of "Jew" equivalent to that of an enemy of the truth. Not only are the customs and feasts of the Jews disregarded and spoken of as observances of a people with whom the writer has no concern, but he anticipates the day when neither on Mount Gerizim nor yet at Jerusalem men shall worship the Father, but when it shall be recognized that the only true worship is that which is offered in spirit and in truth. Faith in Jesus Christ and the merits of his death is the only way by which man can attain to eternal life, and the Mosaic Law is practically abolished. We venture to assert that, taking the portrait of John the son of Zebedee, which is drawn in the Synoptics and the Epistle of Paul to the Galatians, supplemented by later tradition, to which we have referred, and comparing it with that of the writer of the fourth Gospel, no unprejudiced mind can fail to recognize that there are not two features alike.

It is the misfortune of this case, that the beauty of the Gospel under trial has too frequently influenced the decision of the judges, and men who have, in other matters, exhibited sound critical judgment, in this abandon themselves to sheer sentimentality, and indulge in rhapsodies when reasons would be more appropriate. Bearing in mind that we have given the whole of the data regarding John the son of Zebedee, furnished by New Testament writings,—excluding merely the fourth Gospel itself, which, of course, cannot at present be received in evidence,—as well as the only traditional

information which, from its date and character, possesses the smallest value, it will become apparent that every argument which proceeds on the assumption that John was the beloved disciple, and possessed of characteristics quite different from what we meet with in the writings to which we have referred, is worthless and a mere *petitio principii*. We can, therefore, appreciate the state of the case when, for instance, we find an able man like Credner commencing his inquiry as to who was the author of the fourth Gospel with such words as the following: "Were we entirely without historical data regarding the author of the fourth Gospel, who is not named in the writing itself, we could still from internal grounds lying in the Gospel itself—from the nature of the language, from the freshness and intuitive perception of the narrative, from the exactness and precision of the statements, from the peculiar manner of the mention of the Baptist and of the sons of Zebedee, from that which the writer brings to light for the inspiration of increasing love and fervour towards Jesus, from the irresistible charm which is poured out over the whole ideally-composed evangelical history, from the philosophical considerations with which the Gospel begins—be led to the result: that the author of such a Gospel can only be a native of Palestine, can only be a direct eye-witness, can only be an Apostle, can only be a favourite of Jesus, can only be that John whom Jesus held captivated to himself by the whole heavenly spell of his teaching, that John who rested on the bosom of Jesus, stood beneath his cross, and whose later residence in a city like Ephesus proves that philosophical speculation not merely attracted him, but that he also knew how to maintain his place amongst philosophically cultivated

Greeks."<sup>1</sup> It is almost impossible to proceed further in building up theory upon baseless assumption; but we shall hereafter see that he is kept in countenance by Ewald, who outstrips him in the boldness and minuteness of his conjectures. We must now more carefully examine the details of the case.

The language in which the Gospel is written, as we have already mentioned, is much less Hebraic than that of the other Gospels, with the exception, perhaps, of parts of the Gospel according to Luke, and its Hebraisms are not on the whole greater than was almost invariably the case with Hellenic Greek, but its composition is distinguished by peculiar smoothness, grace, and beauty, and in this respect it is assigned the first rank amongst the Gospels. It may be remarked that the connection which Credner finds between the language and the Apostle John arises out of the supposition, that long residence in Ephesus had enabled him to acquire that facility of composition in the Greek language which is one of its characteristics. Ewald, who exaggerates the Hebraism of the work, resorts nevertheless to the conjecture, which we shall hereafter more fully consider, that the Gospel was written from dictation by young friends of John in Ephesus, who put the aged Apostle's thoughts in many places into purer Greek as they wrote them down.<sup>2</sup> The arbitrary nature of such an explanation, adopted in one shape or another by many apologists, requires no remark, but we shall at every turn meet with similar assumptions advanced to overcome difficulties. Now, although there is no certain information as to the time when, if ever, the Apostle removed into Asia Minor, it is pretty certain that he did not leave

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 208.

<sup>2</sup> *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 50 f.

Palestine before A.D. 60.<sup>1</sup> We find him still at Jerusalem about A.D. 50—53, when Paul went thither, and he had not at that time any intention of leaving, but, on the contrary, his dedication of himself to the ministry of the circumcision is distinctly mentioned by the Apostle.<sup>2</sup> The “unlettered and ignorant” fisherman of Galilee, therefore, had obviously attained an age when habits of thought and expression have become fixed, and when a new language cannot without great difficulty be acquired. If we consider the Apocalypse to be his work, we find positive evidence of such markedly different thought and language actually existing when the Apostle must have been at least between sixty and seventy years of age, that it is quite impossible to conceive that he could have subsequently acquired the language and mental characteristics of the fourth Gospel.<sup>3</sup> It would be perfectly absurd, so far as language goes, to find in the fourth Gospel the slightest indication of the Apostle John, of whose language indeed we have no information whatever except from the Apocalypse, a composition which, if accepted as written by the Apostle, would at once exclude all consideration of the Gospel as his work.

There are many circumstances, however, which seem clearly to indicate that the author of the fourth Gospel was neither a native of Palestine nor a Jew, and to some of these we must briefly refer. The philosophical statements with which the Gospel commences, it will be admitted, are anything but characteristic of the Son of

<sup>1</sup> It is certain that John did not remove to Asia Minor during Paul's time. There is no trace of him in the Pauline Epistles. Cf. *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 221.

<sup>2</sup> Gal. ii. 9.

<sup>3</sup> *Ewald*, *Die Joh. Schr.*, ii. p. 62 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 340 f.; *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, i. p. 159; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 419, anm. d.

thunder, the ignorant and unlearned fisherman of Galilee who, to a comparatively advanced period of life, continued preaching in his native country to his brethren of the circumcision. Attempts have been made to trace the Logos doctrine of the fourth Gospel to the purely Hebraic source of the Old Testament, but every impartial mind must perceive that here there is no direct and simple transformation of the theory of Wisdom of the Proverbs and Old Testament Apocrypha, and no mere development of the later Memra of the Targums, but a very advanced application to Christianity of Alexandrian philosophy, with which we have become familiar through the writings of Philo, to which reference has so frequently been made. It is quite true that a decided step beyond the doctrine of Philo is made when the Logos is represented as *σὰρξ ἐγένετο* in the person of Jesus, but this argument is equally applicable to the Jewish doctrine of Wisdom, and that step had already been taken before the composition of the Gospel. In the Alexandrian philosophy everything was prepared for the final application of the doctrine, and nothing is more clear than the fact that the writer of the fourth Gospel was well acquainted with the teaching of the Alexandrian school, from which he derived his philosophy, and its elaborate and systematic application to Jesus alone indicates a late development of Christian doctrine, which we maintain could not have been attained by the Judaistic son of Zebedee.<sup>1</sup>

We have already on several occasions referred to the attitude which the writer of the fourth Gospel assumes towards the Jews. Apart from the fact that he places

<sup>1</sup> Most critics agree that the characteristics of the fourth Gospel render the supposition that it was the work of an old man untenable.

Christianity generally in strong antagonism to Judaism, as light to darkness, truth to a lie, and presents the doctrine of a hypostatic Trinity in the most developed form to be found in the New Testament, in striking contrast to the three Synoptics, and in contradiction to Hebrew Monotheism, he writes at all times as one who not only is not a Jew himself, but has nothing to do with their laws and customs. He speaks everywhere of the feasts "of the Jews," "the passover of the Jews," "the manner of the purifying of the Jews," "the Jews' feast of tabernacles," "as the manner of the Jews is to bury," "the Jews' preparation day," and so on.<sup>1</sup> The Law of Moses is spoken of as "your law," "their law," as of a people with which the writer was not connected.<sup>2</sup> Moreover, the Jews are represented as continually in virulent opposition to Jesus, and seeking to kill him; and the word "Jew" is the unfailing indication of the enemies of the truth, and the persecutors of the Christ.<sup>3</sup> The Jews are not once spoken of as the favoured people of God, but they are denounced as "children of the devil," who is "the father of lies and a murderer from the beginning."<sup>4</sup> The author shows in a marked way that he was not a Jew, by making Caiaphas, and the chief priests and Pharisees speak of the Jewish nation and the people not as *ὁ λαός*, like the Synoptics and other New Testament writings,<sup>5</sup> but as *τὸ ἔθνος*, the term always employed by the Jews to designate the Gentiles.<sup>6</sup> A

<sup>1</sup> John ii. 6, 13; v. 1; vi. 4; vii. 2; xix. 40, 42, &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, viii. 17; x. 34; xv. 25, &c., &c.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, v. 16, 18; vii. 13, 19 f.; viii. 40, 59; ix. 22, 28; xviii. 31 ff.; xix. 12 ff.

<sup>4</sup> John viii. 44.

<sup>5</sup> Matt. i. 21; ii. 6; iv. 6; xiii. 15; xv. 8; xxi. 23, &c., &c. Mark vii. 6; xi. 32; xiv. 2, &c. Luke i. 10, 17, 21, 68, 77; ii. 10; iii. 15; vi. 17; vii. 16; xviii. 43, &c., &c.

<sup>6</sup> John xi. 48, 50, 51, 52; cf. xviii. 35. The word *λαός* is only twice

single instance of the distinctive use of these words may be given. Luke ii. 32 : " A light to lighten the Gentiles (*ἔθνος*) and the glory of thy people (*λαός*) Israel."<sup>1</sup> We need scarcely point out that the Jesus of the fourth Gospel is no longer of the race of David, but the Son of God. The expectation of the Jews that the Messiah should be of the seed of David is entirely set aside, and the genealogies of the first and third Synoptics tracing his descent are not only ignored, but the whole idea absolutely excluded.

Throughout the fourth Gospel a number of mistakes of various kinds occur which clearly point to the fact that the author was neither a Palestinian nor a Jew at all. For instance, the writer calls Annas the high priest, although at the same time Caiaphas is represented as also holding that office.<sup>2</sup> The expression which he uses is : " Caiaphas being the high priest that year " (*ἀρχιερεὺς ὦν τοῦ ἐνιαυτοῦ ἐκείνου*). This statement, made more than once, would indicate the belief that the office was merely annual, which is erroneous. Josephus states with regard to Caiaphas, that he was high priest for ten years from A.D. 25—36.<sup>3</sup> Ewald and others argue that the expression "that

used in the fourth Gospel, once in xi. 50, where *ἔθνος* occurs in the same verse, and again in xviii. 14, where the same words of Caiaphas, xi. 50, are quoted. It is found in viii. 2, but that episode does not belong to the fourth Gospel, but is taken from the Gospel according to the Hebrews.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Matt. iv. 15 ; vi. 32 ; x. 5 ; Mark, x. 42 ; xiii. 10 ; Luke xxi. 10, 24, 25, &c., &c. ; Rom. ii. 14 ; iii. 29 ; ix. 24 ; Gal. ii. 2, 8, 9, 12, &c., &c. Ewald himself points out that the saying of Caiaphas is the purest Greek, and this is another proof that it could not proceed from the son of Zebedee. It could still less be, as it stands, an original speech in Greek of the high priest to the Jewish Council, a point which does not require remark. Cf. *Ewald*, *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 325, ann. 1.

<sup>2</sup> John xi. 49, 51 ; xviii. 13, 16, 19, 22, 24.

<sup>3</sup> *Antiq.* xviii. 2, § 2 ; 4, § 3 ; cf. Matt. xxvi. 3, 37.

year" refers to the year in which the death of Jesus, so memorable to the writer, took place, and that it does not exclude the possibility of his having been high priest for successive years also.<sup>1</sup> This explanation, however, is quite arbitrary and insufficient, and this is shown by the additional error in representing Annas as also high priest at the same time. The Synoptics know nothing of the preliminary examination before Annas, and the reason given by the writer of the fourth Gospel why the soldiers first took Jesus to Annas: "for he was father-in-law to Caiaphas, who was high priest that same year,"<sup>2</sup> is absurd. The assertion is a clear mistake, and it probably originated in a stranger, writing of facts and institutions with which he was not well acquainted, being misled by an error equally committed by the author of the third Gospel and of the Acts of the Apostles. In Luke iii. 2, the word of God is said to come to John the Baptist: "in the high priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas" (*ἐπὶ ἀρχιερέως Ἄννα καὶ Καϊάφα*), and again, in Acts iv. 6, Annas is spoken of as the high priest when Peter and John healed the lame man at the gate of the Temple which was called "Beautiful," and Caiaphas is mentioned immediately after: "and Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest." Such statements, erroneous in themselves and not understood by the author of the fourth Gospel, may have led to the confusion in the narrative. Annas had previously been high priest, as we know from Josephus,<sup>3</sup> but nothing is more certain than the fact that the title was not continued after the office was resigned; and Ishmael, Eleazar,

<sup>1</sup> Die Joh. Schr., i. p. 326, anm. 1; *Lücke*, Comment. Ev. Joh., ii. p. 484.

<sup>2</sup> John xviii. 13

<sup>3</sup> Antiq., xviii. 2, § 1.

and Simon, who succeeded Annas and separated his term of office from that of Caiaphas, did not subsequently bear the title. The narrative is a mistake, and such an error could not have been committed by a native of Palestine,<sup>1</sup> and much less by an acquaintance of the high priest.<sup>2</sup>

The author says, in relating the case of restoration of sight to a blind man, that Jesus desired him: (ix. 7) "Go wash in the pool of Siloam," and adds: "which is by interpretation: Sent." This is a distinct error arising out of ignorance of the real signification of the name of the Pool, which means a spring, a fountain, a flow of water. The writer evidently wishes to give a prophetic character to the name, and thus increase the importance of the miracle. The explanation is a mere conceit in any case, and a foreigner with a slight knowledge of the language is misled by the superficial analogy of sound.<sup>3</sup> Lücke refuses to be persuaded that the parenthesis is by John at all, and evades the difficulty by conjecturing that it is a gloss of some ancient allegorical interpreter.<sup>4</sup>

There are also several geographical errors committed which denote a foreigner. In i. 28, the writer speaks of a "Bethany beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing." The substitution of "Bethabara," mentioned by Origen, which has erroneously crept into the vulgar text, is of course repudiated by all critics, "Bethany" standing in

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 332 f.; *Scholten*, *Das Ev. Johannes*, p. 300 ff.; *Bretschneider*, *Probabilia*, p. 93 f.; *Davidson*, *Int. N. T.*, ii. p. 429 f.; *Nicolas*, *Et. sur la Bible*, N. T., p. 198 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 297, anm. 1; *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, iii. p. 321 ff.; *Volkmar*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 586 f.; *Schenkel*, *Das Charakt. Jesu*, p. 355.

<sup>2</sup> *John xviii. 15.*

<sup>3</sup> *Bretschneider*, *Probabilia*, p. 93; *Davidson*, *Int. N. T.*, ii. p. 428.

<sup>4</sup> *Comment. Ev. Joh.*, ii. p. 381.

all the older codices. The alteration was evidently proposed to obviate the difficulty that there did not exist any + Bethany beyond Jordan in Peræa. The place could not be the Bethany near Jerusalem, and it is scarcely possible that there could have been a second village of the name; no trace of it existed even in Origen's time, and it is utterly unknown now.<sup>1</sup> Again, in iii. 23, the writer says that "John was baptizing in Ænon, near to Salim, because there was much water there." This Ænon near to Salim was in Judæa, as is clearly stated in the previous verse. The place, however, was quite unknown even in the third century, and the nearest locality which could be indicated as possible was in the north of Samaria, and, therefore, differing from the statements in iii. 22, iv. 3. Ænon, however, signifies "springs," and the question arises whether the writer of the fourth Gospel, not knowing the real meaning of the word, did not simply mistake it for the name of a place.<sup>2</sup> In any case it is a geographical error into which the author of the fourth Gospel, had he been the Apostle John, could not have fallen.<sup>3</sup> The account of the miracle of the pool of Bethesda is a remarkable one for many reasons. The words which most pointedly relate the miraculous phenomena - characterizing the pool do not appear in the oldest MSS., and are consequently rejected. In the following extract we put them in italics: v. 3.—"In these (five porches)

<sup>1</sup> *Bretschneider*, *Probabilia*, p. 95 f.; *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 331; *Davidson*, *Int. N. T.*, ii. p. 427; *Schenkel*, *Das Charakt. Jesu*, p. 351; cf. *Ewald*, *Gesch. V. Isr.*, p. 62, anm. 1; *Lücke*, *Comm. Ev. Joh.*, i. p. 391 ff.; *Bleek*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 210 f.; *Beiträge*, p. 256 f.

<sup>2</sup> *Scholten*, *Das Ev. Joh.*, p. 409 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Scholten*, *Das Ev. Joh.*, p. 409 f.; *Bretschneider*, *Probabilia*, p. 96 f.; *Nicolas*, *Et. sur la Bible, N. T.*, p. 199 f.; *Schenkel*, *Das Charakt. Jesu*, p. 355; cf. *Ewald*, *Gesch. V. Isr.*, v. p. 262, anm. 2; *Lücke*, *Comm. Ev. Joh.*, i. p. 553 ff.

lay a multitude of the sick, halt, withered, *waiting for the moving of the water.* 4. *For an angel went down at certain seasons into the pool and troubled the water: he, therefore, who first went in after the troubling of the water was made whole of whatsoever disease he had."*

We must believe, however, that this passage did originally belong to the text, and has, from an early period, been omitted from MSS. on account of the difficulty it presents; and one of the reasons which points to this is the fact that verse 7, which is not questioned and has the authority of all codices, absolutely implies the existence of the previous words, without which it has no sense. Now, not only is the pool of Bethesda totally unknown at the present day, but although possessed of such miraculous properties, it was unknown even to Josephus, or any other writer of that time. It is impossible, were the narrative genuine, that the phenomena could have been unknown and unmentioned by the Jewish historian,<sup>1</sup> and there is here evidently neither the narrative of an Apostle nor of an eye-witness.

Another very significant mistake occurs in the account of the conversation with the Samaritan woman, which is said to have taken place (iv. 5) near "a city of Samaria which is called Sychar." It is admitted that there was no such place—and apologetic ingenuity is severely taxed to explain the difficulty. The common conjecture has been that the town of Sichem is intended, but this is rightly rejected by Delitzsch,<sup>2</sup> and Ewald.<sup>3</sup> Credner,<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Lücke*, *Comm. Ev. Joh.*, ii. p. 16 ff.; *Ewald*, *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 200 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Talmudische Stud. Zeitschr. gesamt. luth. Theol. u. Kirche*, 1856, p. 240 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 181, anm. 1; *Gesch. V. Isr.*, v. p. 348, anm. 1; *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, viii. p. 255 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Einl. N. T.*, i. p. 264.

not unsupported by others, and borne out in particular by the theory of Ewald, conjectures that Sychar is a corruption of Sichem, introduced into the Gospel by a Greek secretary to whom this part of the Gospel was dictated, and who mistook the Apostle's pronunciation of the final syllable. We constantly meet with this elastic explanation of difficulties in the Gospel, but its mere enunciation displays at once the reality of the difficulties and the imaginary nature of the explanation. Hengstenberg adopts the view, and presses it with pious earnestness, that the term is a mere nickname for the city of Sichem, and that, by so slight a change in the pronunciation, the Apostle called the place a city of Lies (לִישָׁרָא a lie), a play upon words which he does not consider unworthy.<sup>1</sup> The only support which this latter theory can secure from internal evidence is to be derived from the fact that the whole discourse with the woman is evidently ideal, and as Hengstenberg himself conjectures further on,<sup>2</sup> the five husbands of the woman are typical of the Gods of the five nations with which the King of Assyria peopled Samaria, II. Kings, xvii. 24—41, and which they worshipped instead of the God of Israel, and the actual God of the Samaritans was not recognized as the true God by the Jews, nor their worship of him on Mount Gerizim held to be valid, therefore, he considers, under the name of the City of Sychar, their whole religion, past and present, was denounced as a lie. There can be little doubt that the episode is allegorical, but such a defence of the geographical error, the reality of which is everywhere felt, whilst it is quite insufficient on the one hand, effectually destroys the historical character of the Gospel on the other.

<sup>1</sup> Das Ev. des heil. Joh., 1867, i. p. 244.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, i. p. 262 f.

The inferences from all of the foregoing examples are strengthened by the fact that, in the quotations from the Old Testament, the fourth Gospel in the main follows the Septuagint version, or shows its influence, and nowhere can be shown directly to translate from the Hebrew.

These instances might be multiplied, but we must proceed to examine more closely the indications given in the Gospel itself as to the identity of its author. We need not point out that the writer nowhere clearly states who he is, nor mentions his name, but expressions are frequently used which evidently show the desire that a particular person should be understood. He generally calls himself "the other disciple," or "the disciple whom Jesus loved."<sup>1</sup> It is universally admitted that he represents himself as having previously been a disciple of John the Baptist (i. 35 ff.),<sup>2</sup> and also that he is "the other disciple" who was acquainted with the high priest (xviii. 15, 16),<sup>3</sup> if not an actual relative as Ewald and others assert.<sup>4</sup> The assumption that the disciple thus indicated is John, rests principally on the fact that whilst the author mentions the other Apostles, he seems studiously to avoid directly naming John, and also that he only once distinguishes John the Baptist by the

<sup>1</sup> John i. 35 ff.; xiii. 23; xix. 26, 35; xx. 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 209; *Ewald*, *Gesch. V. Isr.*, v. p. 323; *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 141 f.; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 229; *Thiersch*, *Die Kirche im ap. Zeit.*, p. 265 f.; *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 1127; *Schotten*, *Das Ev. Joh.*, p. 378; *Lücke*, *Comm. Ev. Joh.*, i. p. 443 f.; *Hengstenberg*, *Das Ev. d. heil. Joh.*, i. p. 106 f.

<sup>3</sup> *Ewald*, *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 400; *Lücke*, *Comm. Ev. Joh.*, ii. p. 703 f.; *Hengstenberg*, *Das Ev. heil. Joh.*, iii. p. 196 f.; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 151 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Ewald*, *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 400; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 151; *Ewald* considers the relationship to have been on the mother's side. *Hengstenberg* contradicts that strange assumption, *Das Ev. heil. Joh.* iii. p. 196.

appellation *ὁ βαπτιστής*, whilst he carefully distinguishes the two disciples of the name of Judas, and always speaks of the Apostle Peter as "Simon Peter," or "Peter," but rarely as "Simon" only.<sup>1</sup> Without pausing to consider the slightness of this evidence, it is obvious that, supposing the disciple indicated to be John the son of Zebedee, the fourth Gospel gives a representation of him quite different from the Synoptics and other writings. In the fourth Gospel (i. 35 ff.) the calling of the Apostle is described in a peculiar manner. John (the Baptist) is standing with two of his disciples, and points out Jesus to them as "the Lamb of God," whereupon the two disciples follow Jesus, and, finding out where he lives, abide with him that day and subsequently attach themselves to his person. In verse 40 it is stated: "One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother." We are left to imagine who was the other, and the answer of critics is: John. Now, the "calling" of John is related in a totally different manner in the Synoptics—Jesus, walking by the Sea of Galilee, sees "two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew, his brother, casting a net into the sea, for they were fishers, and he saith unto them: Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men. And they straightway left their nets and followed him. And when he had gone on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets; and he called them. And they immediately left the ship and their father and followed him."<sup>2</sup> These

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 209 f.; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 230; *Bleek*, Beiträge, p. 178; Einl. N. T., p. 150 f.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. iv. 18—22; Mark i. 16—20.

accounts are in complete contradiction to each other, and both cannot be true. We see from the first introduction of "the other disciple" on the scene in the fourth Gospel the evident design to give him the precedence before Peter and the rest of the Apostles. We have above given the account of the first two Synoptics of the calling of Peter. He is the first of the disciples who is selected, and he is directly invited by Jesus to follow him and become, with his brother Andrew, "fishers of men." James and John are not called till later in the day, and without the record of any special address. In the third Gospel the calling of Peter is introduced with still more important details. Jesus enters the boat of Simon and bids him push out into the Lake and let down his net, and the miraculous draught of fishes is taken: "When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying: Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord. For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of fishes which they had taken." The calling of the sons of Zebedee becomes even less important here, for the account simply continues: "And so was also James and John, the sons of Zebedee, who were partners with Simon." Jesus then addresses his invitation to Simon, and the account concludes: "And when they had brought their boats to land, they forsook all, and followed him."<sup>1</sup> In the fourth Gospel the calling of the two disciples of John is first narrated, as we have seen and the first call of Peter is from his brother Andrew, and not from Jesus himself. "He (Andrew) first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him: We have found the Messiah (which is, being interpreted, Christ), and he brought him to Jesus. Jesus looked on

<sup>1</sup> Luke v. 1—11.

him and said: Thou art Simon, the son of Jonas; thou shalt be called Cephas (which is by interpretation, Peter)."<sup>2</sup> This explanation of the manner in which the cognomen Peter is given, we need not point out, is likewise contradictory to the Synoptics, and betrays the same purpose of suppressing the prominence of Peter.

The fourth Gospel states that "the other disciple," who is declared to be John, the author of the Gospel, was known to the high priest, another trait amongst many others elevating him above the son of Zebedee as he is depicted elsewhere in the New Testament. The account which the fourth Gospel gives of the trial of Jesus is in very many important particulars at variance with that of the Synoptics. We need only mention here the point that the latter know nothing of the preliminary examination by Annas. We shall not discuss the question as to where the denial of Peter is represented as taking place in the fourth Gospel, but may merely say that no other disciple but Peter is mentioned in the Synoptics as having followed Jesus; and Peter enters without difficulty into the high priest's palace.<sup>3</sup> In the fourth Gospel, Peter is made to wait without at the door until John, who is a friend of the high priest and freely enters, obtains permission for Peter to go in, another instance of the precedence which is systematically given to John. The Synoptics do not in this particular case give any support to the state-

<sup>1</sup> The author apparently considered that Jonas and John were the same name, another indication of a foreigner. Although some of the oldest Codices read John here and in xxi. 15—17, there is great authority for the reading Jona, which is considered by a majority of critics the original.

<sup>2</sup> John i. 41—42.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. xxvi. 58, 69; Mark xiv. 54, 56; Luke xxii. 54 ff.

ment in the fourth Gospel, and certainly in nothing that is said of John do they elsewhere render his acquaintance with the high priest in the least degree probable. It is, on the contrary, improbable in the extreme that the young fisherman of Galilee, who shows very little enlightenment in the anecdotes told of him in the Synoptics, and who is described as an "unlettered and ignorant" man in the Acts of the Apostles, could have any acquaintance with the high priest. Ewald, who, on the strength of the word *γνωστός*,<sup>1</sup> at once elevates him into a relation of the high priest, sees in the statement of Polycrates that late in life he wore the priestly *πέταλον*, a confirmation of the supposition that he was of the high priest's race and family.<sup>2</sup> The evident Judaistic tendency, however, which made John wear the priestly mitre may distinguish him as author of the Apocalypse, but it is fatal to the theory which makes him author of the fourth Gospel, in which there is so complete a severance from Judaism.

A much more important point, however, is the designation of the author of the fourth Gospel, who is identified with the Apostle John, as "the disciple whom Jesus loved." It is scarcely too much to say, that this suggestive appellation alone has done more than any arguments to ensure the recognition of the work, and to overcome the doubts as to its authenticity. Religious sentimentality, evoked by the influence of this tender epithet, has been blind to historical incongruities, and has been willing to accept with little question from the "beloved disciple" a portrait of Jesus totally unlike that of the Synoptics, and to elevate the dogmatic mysticism and

<sup>1</sup> John xviii. 15.

<sup>2</sup> Die Joh. Schr., i. p. 400, anm. 1; *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 151.

artificial discourses of the one over the sublime morality and simple eloquence of the other. It is impossible to reflect seriously upon this representation of the relations between one of the disciples and Jesus without the conviction that every record of the life of the great Teacher must have borne distinct traces of the preference, and that the disciple so honoured must have attracted the notice of every early writer acquainted with the facts. If we seek for any evidence, however, that John was distinguished with such special affection—that he lay on the breast of Jesus at supper—that even the Apostle Peter recognised his superior intimacy and influence<sup>1</sup>—and that he received at the foot of the cross the care of his mother from the dying Jesus<sup>2</sup>—we seek in vain. The Synoptic Gospels, which minutely record the details of the last supper and of the crucifixion, so far from mentioning any such circumstances or such distinction of John, do not even mention his name, and Peter everywhere has precedence before the sons of Zebedee. Almost the only occasions upon which any prominence is given to them are episodes in which they incur the Master's displeasure, and the cognomen of "Sons of thunder" has certainly no suggestion in it of special affection, nor of personal qualities likely to attract the great Teacher. The selfish ambition of the brothers who desire to sit on thrones on his right and on his left, and the intolerant temper which would have called down fire from heaven to consume a Samaritan village, much rather contradict than support the representation of the fourth Gospel. Upon one occasion, indeed, Jesus in rebuking them, adds: "Ye know not what manner of

<sup>1</sup> John xiii. 23—26.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.* xix. 25—27.

spirit ye are of.”<sup>1</sup> It is perfectly undeniable that John nowhere has any such position accorded to him in the Synoptics as this designation in the fourth Gospel implies. In the lists of the disciples he is always put in the fourth place,<sup>2</sup> and in the first two Gospels his only distinguishing designation is that of “the brother of James,” or one of the sons of Zebedee. The Apostle Peter in all of the Synoptics is the leader of the disciples. He it is who alone is represented as the mouth-piece of the twelve or as holding conversation with Jesus; and the only occasions on which the sons of Zebedee address Jesus are those to which we have referred, upon which his displeasure was incurred. The angel who appears to the women after the resurrection desires them to tell his disciples “and Peter” that Jesus will meet them in Galilee,<sup>3</sup> but there is no message for any “disciple whom he loved.” If Peter, James, and John accompany the Master to the mount of transfiguration and are witnesses of his agony in the garden, regarding which, however, the fourth Gospel is totally silent, the two brethren remain in the back ground, and Peter alone acts a prominent part. If we turn to the Epistles of Paul, we do not find a single trace of acquaintance with the fact that Jesus honoured John with any special affection, and the opportunity of referring to such a distinction was not wanting when he writes to the Galatians of his visit to the “Pillar” Apostles in Jerusalem. Here again, how-

<sup>1</sup> Luke ix. 55. These words are omitted from some of the oldest MSS., but they are in Cod. D (Bezae) and many other very important texts, as well as in some of the oldest versions, besides being quoted by the Fathers. They were probably omitted after the claim of John to be the “beloved disciple” became admitted.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. x. 2—4; Mark, iii. 16—19; Luke vi. 14—16.

<sup>3</sup> Mark xvi. 7.

ever, we find no prominence given to John, but the contrary, his name still being mentioned last and without any special comment. In none of the Pauline, or other Epistles, is there any allusion, however distant, to any disciple whom Jesus specially loved. The Apocalypse, which, if any book of the New Testament can be traced to him, must be ascribed to the Apostle John, makes no claim whatever to such a distinction. In none of the Apocryphal Gospels is there the slightest indication of knowledge of the fact, and if we come to the Fathers even, it is a striking circumstance that there is not a trace of it in any early work, and not the most remote indication of any independent tradition that Jesus distinguished John or any other individual disciple with peculiar friendship. The Roman Clement, in referring to the example of the Apostles, only mentions Peter and Paul.<sup>1</sup> Polycarp, who is described as a disciple of the Apostle John, knows nothing of his having been especially loved by Jesus. Pseudo-Ignatius does not refer to him at all in the Syriac Epistles, or in either version of the seven Epistles.<sup>2</sup> Papias, in describing his interest in hearing what the Apostles said, gives John no prominence: "I enquired minutely after the words of the Presbyters: What Andrew, or what Peter said, or what Philip or what Thomas or James, or what John or Matthew, or what any other of the disciples of the Lord, and what Aristion and the Presbyter John, the disciples of the Lord, say,"<sup>3</sup> &c.

<sup>1</sup> Ad Corinth., v.

<sup>2</sup> Indeed in the universally repudiated Epistles, beyond the fact that two are addressed to John, in which he is not called "the disciple whom Jesus loved," the only mention of him is the statement, "John was banished to Patmos." Ad Tars., iii.

<sup>3</sup> Eusebius, H. E., iii. 39.

As a fact, it is undenied and undeniable that the representation of John, or of any other disciple, as specially beloved by Jesus, is limited solely and entirely to the fourth Gospel, and that there is not even a trace of independent tradition to support the claim, whilst on the other hand the total silence of the earlier Gospels and of the other New Testament writings on the point, and indeed their data of a positive and contradictory character, oppose rather than support the correctness of the later and mere personal assertion. Those who abandon sober criticism, and indulge in mere sentimental rhapsodies on the impossibility of the author of the fourth Gospel being any other than "the disciple whom Jesus loved," strangely ignore the fact that we have no reason whatever, except the assurance of the author himself, to believe that Jesus specially loved any disciple, and much less John the Son of Zebedee. Indeed, the statements of the fourth Gospel itself on the subject are so indirect and intentionally vague that it is not absolutely clear what disciple is indicated as "the beloved," and it has even been maintained that, not John the son of Zebedee, but Andrew the brother of Simon Peter was "the disciple whom Jesus loved," and consequently the supposed author of the fourth Gospel.<sup>1</sup>

We have hitherto refrained from referring to one of the most singular features of the fourth Gospel, the chapter **xxi.**, which is by many cited as the most ancient testimony for the authenticity of the work, and which requires particular consideration. It is obvious that the Gospel is brought to a conclusion by verses 30, 31 of chapter **xx.**, and critics are universally agreed at least that, whoever may be its author, chapter **xxi.** is a supple-

<sup>1</sup> *Lützelberger*, Die kirchl. Tradition über d. Apost. Joh., p. 199 ff.

ment only added after an interval. By whom was it written? As may be supposed, critics have given very different replies to this important question. Many affirm, and with much probability, that chapter xxi. was subsequently added to the Gospel by the author himself.<sup>1</sup> A few, however, exclude the last two verses, which they consider to have been added by another hand.<sup>2</sup> A much larger number assert that the whole chapter is an ancient appendix to the Gospel by a writer who was not the author of the Gospel.<sup>3</sup> A few likewise reject the last two verses of the preceding chapter.<sup>4</sup> In this supplement (v. 20) "the disciple whom Jesus loved, who also leaned on his breast at the supper and said: Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?" is (v. 24) identified with the author of the Gospel.

<sup>1</sup> *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 222 f.; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 317 ff.; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1868, p. 435 ff.; *Weitzel*, Stud. u. Krit., 1849, p. 596 ff.; *Schleiermacher*, Einl. N. T., p. 331; *J. P. Lange*, Gesch. chr. Kirche, 1854, ii. p. 421; *Luthardt*, Das Joh. Evang., i. p. 17 f., ii. p. 458 f.; *Weyscheider*, Einl. Ev. Joh., p. 173; *Michaelis*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 1170 f.; *Westcott*, Int. to the Study of the Gospels, 1872, p. 254; *Renan*, Vie de Jésus, xiii<sup>me</sup> 6d., p. lxxiii.; *Hengstenberg*, Das Ev. d. heil. Joh., p. 322 ff.; *Tholuck*, Glaubw. ev. Gesch., p. 274; *Guericke*, Beiträge, p. 68; *Hug*, Einl. N. T., ii. p. 250 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Credner*, Einl. N. T., i. p. 232; *J. P. Lange*, Gesch. d. Kirche, ii. p. 418; *Tholuck*, Glaubw. ev. Gesch., p. 274; *Guericke*, Beiträge, p. 68; *Hug*, Einl. N. T. ii. p. 250 ff.

<sup>3</sup> *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 219 f.; *Bertholdt*, Einl. A. u. N. T., iii. p. 1326 ff.; *Clericus*, Ad Hammondi in Ev. Joh. annot.; *Davidson*, Int. N. T., ii. pp. 339, 426 f.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., iii., 1850—51, p. 171 f.; x. 1859—60, p. 87; *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 54 ff.; *Grotius*, Annot. ad Joh., xx. 30, xxi. 24; *Keim*, Jesu v. Nazara, i. p. 157 f.; *Lücke*, Comm. Ev. Joh., ii. p. 826 ff.; *Neudecker*, Einl. N. T., p. 334 f., anm. 4; *Paulus*, Repert. ii. p. 327; *Réville*, Rev. de Théol., 1854, ix. p. 345; *Schott*, Comment. de origine et indole cap. ult. Ev. Joh., 1825; *Isagoge*, § 43. p. 155; *Schenkel*, Das Charakt. Jesu, p. 32; *Schotten*, Das Ev. Johan., pp. 4 ff., 57 ff.; *Späth*, Zeitschr. wiss. Theol., 1868, p. 192 ff.; *Semler*, Hist. Einl. Baumgarten's Unters. theol. Streitigk., p. 62; *Volkmar*, Die Evangelien, p. 641 f.; *Weisse*, Die evang. Gesch., i. p. 99; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. evang. Gesch., p. 301 f.

<sup>4</sup> *Baur*, Unters. kan. Evv., p. 235 ff.

† We may here state the theory of Ewald with regard to the composition of the fourth Gospel, which is largely deduced from considerations connected with the last chapter, and which, although more audaciously minute in its positive and arbitrary statement of details than any other with which we are acquainted, introduces more or less the explanations generally given regarding the composition of chapter xxi. Out of all the indications in the work, Ewald decides :

“ 1. That the Gospel, completed at the end of chapter xx., was composed by the Apostle about the year 80, with the free help of friends, not to be immediately circulated throughout the world, but intended to remain limited to a narrow circle of friends until his death, and only then to be published as his legacy to the whole of Christendom. In this position it remained ten years, or even longer.

2. As that preconceived opinion regarding the life or death of the Apostle (xxi. 23) had perniciously spread itself throughout the whole of Christendom, the Apostle himself decided even before his death to counteract it in the right way by giving a correct statement of the circumstances. The same friends, therefore, assisted him to design the very important supplement, chapter xxi., and this could still be very easily added, as the book was not yet published. His friends proceeded, nevertheless, somewhat more freely, in its composition, than previously in writing the book itself, and allowed their own hand more clearly to gleam through, although here, as in the rest of the work, they conformed to the will of the Apostle, and did not, even in the supplement, openly declare his name as the author. As the supplement, however, was to form a closely connected part of the whole work, they gave at its end (verses 24 f.), as it

now seemed to them suitable, a new conclusion to the augmented work.

3. As the Apostle himself desired that the preconceived opinion regarding him, which had been spread abroad to the prejudice of Christendom, should be contradicted as soon as possible, and even before his death, he now so far departed from his earlier wish, that he permitted the circulation of his Gospel before his death. We can accept this with all certainty, and have therein a trustworthy testimony regarding the whole original history of our book.

4. When the Gospel was thus published, it for the first time was gradually named after our Apostle, even in its external superscription : a nomination which had then become all the more necessary and durable for the purpose of distinction, as it was united in one whole with the other Gospels. The world, however, has at all times known it only under this wholly right title, and could in no way otherwise know it and otherwise name it.<sup>1</sup>

In addressing ourselves to each of these points in detail, we shall be able to discuss the principal questions connected with the fourth Gospel.

The theory of Ewald, that the fourth Gospel was written down with the assistance of friends in Ephesus, has been imagined solely to conciliate certain phenomena presented throughout the Gospel, and notably in the last chapter, with the foregone conclusion that it was written by the Apostle John. It is apparent that there is not a single word in the work itself explaining such a mode of composition, and that the hypothesis proceeds purely from the ingenious imagination of the critic. The nature of the language in which the Gospel is composed, the

<sup>1</sup> Die Joh. Schr., i. p. 56 f. ; cf. Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., iii. p. 171 ff.

manner in which the writer is indirectly indicated in the third person, and even in the body of the work (xix. 35) reference is made to the testimony of a third person, combined with the similarity of the style of the supplementary chapter, which is an obvious addition intended, however, to be understood as written by a different hand, have rendered these conjectures necessary to reconcile such obvious incongruities with the ascription of the work to the Apostle. The substantial identity of the style and vocabulary of chapter xxi. with the rest of the Gospel is asserted by a multitude of the most competent critics. Ewald, whilst he recognizes the great similarity, maintains at the same time a real dissimilarity, for which he accounts in the manner just quoted. The language, Ewald admits, agrees fully in many rare nuances with that of the rest of the Gospel, but he does not take the trouble to prove the decided dissimilarities which, he asserts, likewise exist. A less difference than that which he finds might, he thinks, be explained by the interval which had elapsed between the writing of the work and of the supplement, but "the wonderful similarity, in the midst of even greater dissimilarity, of the whole tone and particularly of the style of the composition is not thereby accounted for. This, therefore, leads us," he continues, "to the opinion : The Apostle made use, for writing down his words, of the hand and even of the skill of a trusted friend who later on his own authority (für sich allein) wrote the supplement. The great similarity, as well as dissimilarity, of the style of both parts in this way becomes intelligible : the trusted friend (probably a Presbyter in Ephesus) adopted much of the language and mode of expression of the youthful old Apostle, without, how-

ever, where he wrote more in his own person, being carefully solicitous of imitating them. But even through this contrast, and the definite declaration in v. 24, the Apostolical origin of the book itself becomes all the more clearly apparent; and thus the supplement proves from the most diverse sides how certainly this Gospel was written by the trusted disciple.”<sup>1</sup> Elsewhere, Ewald more clearly explains the share in the work which he assigns to the Apostle’s disciple: “The proposition that this Apostle composed in a unique way our likewise unique Gospel is to be understood only with that important limitation upon which I always laid so much stress: for John himself did not compose this work quite so directly as Paul did most of his Epistles, but the young friend who wrote it down from his lips, and who, in the later appendix, chapter xxi., comes forward in the most open way without desiring in the slightest to conceal his separate identity, does his work at other times somewhat freely, in that he never introduces the narrator speaking of himself and his participation in the events with ‘I’ or ‘we,’ but only indirectly indicates his presence at such events, and, towards the end, in preference refers to him, from his altogether peculiar relation to Christ, as ‘the disciple whom the Lord loved,’ so that, in one passage, he even speaks of him, in regard to an important historical testimony (xix. 35), as of a third person.” Ewald then maintains that the agreement between the Gospel and the Epistles, and more especially the first, which he affirms, without vouchsafing a word of evidence, to have been written down by a different hand, proves that we have substantially only the Apostle’s very peculiar com-

<sup>1</sup> Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., iii. 1850—51, p. 173.

position, and that his friend as much as possible gave his own words.<sup>1</sup>

It is obvious from this elaborate explanation, which we need scarcely say is full of mere assumptions, that, in order to connect the Apostle John with the Gospel, Ewald is obliged to assign him a very peculiar position in regard to it: he recognizes that some of the characteristics of the work exclude the supposition that the Apostle could himself have written the Gospel, so he represents him as dictating it, and his Secretary as taking considerable liberties with the composition as he writes it down, and even as introducing references of his own; as, for instance, in the passage to which he refers, where, in regard to the statement that at the Crucifixion a soldier pierced the side of the already dead Jesus and that forthwith there came out blood and water (xix. 35), it is said: "And he that saw it hath borne witness, and his witness is true; and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye may believe."<sup>2</sup> It is perfectly clear that the writer refers to the testimony of another person<sup>3</sup>—the friend who is writing down the narrative, says Herr Ewald, refers to the Apostle who is actually dictating it. Again, in the last chapter, as elsewhere throughout the work, "the disciple whom Jesus loved," who is the author, is spoken

<sup>1</sup> Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., x. 1859—60, p. 87 f.

<sup>2</sup> We do not go into any discussion on the use of the word *ἐκείνος*. We believe that the reference is distinctly to another, but even if taken to be to himself in the third person, the passage is not less extraordinary, and the argument holds.

<sup>3</sup> *Weisse*, Die ev. Gesch., i. p. 101 ff., ii. p. 327 ff.; *Lützelberger*, Die kirchl. Trad. Ap. Joh., p. 205 ff.; *Köstlin*, Theol. Jahrb., 1851, p. 207; *Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 341; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1859, p. 414 f., 1861, p. 313 ff.; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. ev. Gesch., p. 300; *Davidson*, Int. N. T., ii. p. 436 f.; *Schenkel*, Das Charakt. Jesu, 1864, p. 32; *Tobler*, Evangelienfrage, p. 33 ff.; *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1860, p. 177 f.; *Scholten*, Das Ev. Joh., p. 385.

of in the third person, and also in verse 24 : " This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things " (*καὶ γράψας ταῦτα*). This, according to Ewald, is the same secretary, now writing in his own person. The similarity between this declaration and the appeal to the testimony of another person in xix. 35, is certainly complete, and there can be no doubt that both proceed from the same pen ; but beyond the assertion of Herr Ewald there is not the slightest evidence that a secretary wrote the Gospel from the dictation of another, and ventured to interrupt the narrative by such a reference to testimony, which, upon the supposition that the Apostle John was known as the actual author, is singularly out of place. If John wrote the Gospel, why should he appeal in utterly vague terms to his own testimony, and upon such a point, when the mere fact that he himself wrote the statement was the most direct testimony in itself ? An author who composed a work which he desired to ascribe to a " disciple whom Jesus loved " might have made such a reference as xix. 35, in his anxiety to support such an affirmation, without supposing that he had really compromised his design, and might have naturally added such a statement as that in the last two verses, but nothing but the foregone conclusion that the Apostle John was the real author could have suggested such an explanation of these passages. It is throughout assumed by Ewald and others, that John wrote in the first instance, at least, specially for a narrow circle of friends, and the proof of this is considered to be the statement of the object with which it was written : " that ye may believe, " <sup>1</sup> &c., a phrase, we may remark,

<sup>1</sup> John xx. 31 ; *Ewald*, *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 56 f. ; *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, iii. p. 171 ; *Bleek*, *Einkl. N. T.*, p. 303.

which is identical with that of the very verse (xix. 35) with which the secretary is supposed to have had so much to do. It is very remarkable, upon this hypothesis, that in xix. 35, it is considered necessary even for this narrow circle, who knew the Apostle so well, to make such an appeal, as well as to attach at its close (xxi. 24), for the benefit of the world in general as Ewald will have it, a certificate of the trustworthiness of the Gospel.

Upon no hypothesis which supposes the Apostle John the author of the fourth Gospel is such an explanation credible. That the Apostle himself could have written of himself the words in xix. 35 is impossible. After having stated so much that is much more surprising and contradictory to all experience without reference to any witness, it would indeed have been strange had he here appealed to himself as to a separate individual, and on the other hand it is quite inadmissible to assume that a friend to whom he is dictating should interrupt the narrative to introduce a passage so inappropriate to the work, and so unnecessary for any circle acquainted with the Apostolic author. If, as Ewald argues, the peculiarities of his style of composition were so well known that it was unnecessary for the writer more clearly to designate himself either for the first readers, or for the Christian world, the passages we are discussing are all the more inappropriate. That any guarantee of the truth of the Gospel should have been thought desirable for readers who knew the work to be composed by the Apostle John, and who believed him to be "the disciple whom Jesus loved," is inconceivable, and that any anonymous and quite indirect testimony to its genuineness should either have been considered necessary, or of any value, is still more incredible. It is impossible that

nameless Presbyters of Ephesus could venture to accredit a Gospel written by the Apostle John ; and any intended attestation must have taken the simple and direct course of stating that the work had been composed by the Apostle. The peculiarities we are discussing seem to us explicable only upon the supposition that the writer of the Gospel desired that it should be understood to be written by a certain disciple whom Jesus loved, but did not choose distinctly to name him or directly to make such an affirmation.

It is, we assert, impossible that an Apostle who composed a history of the life and teaching of Jesus could have failed to attach his name, naturally and simply, as testimony of the trustworthiness of his statements, and of his fitness as an eye-witness to compose such a record. As the writer of the fourth Gospel does not state his name, Herr Ewald ascribes the omission to the "incomparable modesty and delicacy of feeling" of the Apostle John. We must briefly examine the validity of this explanation. It is universally admitted, and by Ewald himself, that although the writer does not directly name himself, he very clearly indicates that he is "the other disciple" and "the disciple whom Jesus loved." We must affirm that such a mode of indicating himself is incomparably less modest than the simple statement of his name, and it is indeed a glorification of himself beyond anything in the Apocalypse. But not only is the explanation thus discredited but, in comparing the details of the Gospel with those of the Synoptics, we find still more certainly how little modesty had to do with the suppression of his name. In the Synoptics a very marked precedence of the rest of the disciples is ascribed to the Apostle Peter ; and the sons of Zebedee

are represented in all of them as holding a subordinate place. This representation is confirmed by the Pauline Epistles and by tradition. In the fourth Gospel, a very different account is given, and the author studiously elevates the Apostle John,—that is to say, according to the theory that he is the writer of the Gospel, himself,—in every way above the Apostle Peter. Apart from the general pre-eminence claimed for himself in the very name of “the disciple whom Jesus loved,” we have seen that he deprives Peter in his own favour of the honour of being the first of the disciples who was called; he suppresses the account of the circumstances under which that Apostle was named Peter, and gives another and trifling version of the incident, reporting elsewhere indeed in a very subdued and modified form, and without the commendation of the Master, the recognition of the divinity of Jesus, which in the first Gospel is the cause of his change of name.<sup>1</sup> He is the intimate friend of the Master, and even Peter has to beg him to ask at the Supper who was the betrayer. He describes himself as the friend of the High Priest, and while Peter is excluded, he not only is able to enter into his palace, but he is the means of introducing Peter. The denial of Peter is given without mitigation, but his bitter repentance is not mentioned. He it is who is singled out by the dying Jesus and entrusted with the charge of his mother. He outruns Peter in their race to the Sepulchre, and in the final appearance of Jesus (xxi. 15) the more important position is assigned to the disciple whom Jesus loved. It is, therefore, absurd to speak of the incomparable modesty of the writer, who, if he does not give his name, not only clearly indicates himself, but throughout

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xvi. 13—19; cf. Mark viii. 29; Luke ix. 20.

assumes a pre-eminence which is not supported by the authority of the Synoptics and other writings, but is heard of alone from his own narrative.

Ewald argues that chapter xxi. must have been written, and the Gospel as we have it, therefore, have been completed, before the death of the Apostle John. He considers the supplement to have been added specially to contradict the report regarding John (xxi. 23). "The supplement must have been written whilst John still lived," he asserts, "for only before his death was it worth while to contradict such a false hope; and if his death had actually taken place, the result itself would have already refuted so erroneous an interpretation of the words of Christ, and it would then have been much more appropriate to explain afresh the sense of the words 'till I come.' Moreover, there is no reference here to the death as having already occurred, although a small addition to that effect in ver. 24 would have been so easy. If we were even to accept that John had long been dead when this was written, the whole rectification as it is given would be utterly without sense."<sup>1</sup> On the contrary, we affirm that the whole history of the first two centuries renders it certain that the Apostle was already dead, and that the explanation was not a rectification of false hopes during his lifetime, but an explanation of the failure of expectations which had already taken place, and probably excited some scandal. We know how the early Church looked for the immediate coming of the glorified Christ, and how such hopes sustained persecuted Christians in their sorrow and suffering. This is very clearly expressed in 1 Thess. iv. 15—18, where the expectation of the second coming within the lifetime of the

<sup>1</sup> Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., iii. 1850—51, p. 173.

writer and readers of the Epistle is confidently stated, and elsewhere, and even in 1 John ii. 18, the belief that the "last times" had arrived is expressed. The history of the Apocalypse in relation to the Canon illustrates the case. So long as the belief in the early consummation of all things continued strong the Apocalypse was the favourite writing of the early Church, but when time went on, and the second coming of Christ did not take place, the opinion of Christendom regarding the work changed, and disappointment as well as the desire to explain the nonfulfilment of prophecies upon which so much hope had been based, led many to reject the Apocalypse as an unintelligible and fallacious book. We venture to conjecture that the tradition that John should not die until the second coming of Jesus may have originated with the Apocalypse where that event is announced to John as immediately to take place, xxii. 7, 10, 12, and the words with which the book ends are of this nature, and express the expectation of the writer, 20 : "He which testifieth these things saith : Surely I come quickly. Amen. Come, Lord Jesus." It was not in the spirit of the age to hesitate about such anticipations, and so long as the Apostle lived, such a tradition would scarcely have required or received contradiction from any one, the belief being universal that the coming of Jesus might take place any day, and assuredly would not be long delayed. When, however, the Apostle was dead, and the tradition that it had been foretold that he should live until the coming of the Lord exercised men's minds, and doubt and disappointment at the non-fulfilment of what may have been regarded as prophecy produced a prejudicial effect upon Christendom, it seemed to the writer of this Gospel a desirable thing to point out that too

much stress had been laid upon the tradition, and that the words which had been relied upon in the first instance, did not justify the expectations which had been formed from them. This also contradicts the hypothesis that the Apostle John was the author of the Gospel.

Such a passage as xix. 35, received in any natural sense, or interpreted in any way which can be supported by evidence, shows that the writer of the Gospel was not an eye-witness of the events recorded, but appeals to the testimony of others. It is generally admitted that the expressions in ch. i. 14 are of universal application, and capable of being adopted by all Christians, and, consequently, that they do not imply any direct claim on the part of the writer to personal knowledge of Jesus. We must now examine whether the Gospel itself bears special marks of having been written by an eye-witness, and how far in this respect it bears out the assertion that it was written by the Apostle John. It is constantly asserted that the minuteness of the details in the fourth Gospel indicates that it must have been written by one who was present at the scenes he records. With regard to this point we need only generally remark, that in the works of imagination of which the world is full, and the singular realism of many of which is recognized by all, we have the most minute and natural details of scenes which never occurred, and of conversations which never took place, the actors in which never actually existed. Ewald admits that it is undeniable that the fourth Gospel was written with a fixed purpose, and with artistic design, and, indeed, he goes further and recognizes that the Apostle could not possibly so long have recollected the discourses of Jesus and verbally reproduced them, so that, in fact, we have only, at best, a

substantial report of the matter of those discourses coloured by the mind of the author himself.<sup>1</sup> Details of scenes at which we were not present may be admirably supplied by imagination, and as we cannot compare what is described as taking place with what actually took place, such an argument as the identification of an eye-witness by details is absurd. Moreover, the details of the fourth Gospel in many cases do not agree with those of the three Synoptics, and it is an undoubted fact that the author of the fourth Gospel gives the details of scenes at which the Apostle John was not present, and reports the discourses and conversations on such occasions, with the very same minuteness as those at which he is said to have been present; as, for instance, the interview between Jesus and the woman of Samaria. It is perfectly undeniable that the writer had other Gospels before him when he composed his work, and that he made use of other materials than his own.<sup>2</sup>

It is by no means difficult, however, to point out very clear indications that the author was not an eye-witness but constructed his scenes and discourses artistically and for effect. We shall not, at present, dwell upon the almost uniform artifice adopted in most of the dialogues, in which the listeners either misunderstand altogether the words of Jesus, or interpret them in a foolish and material way, and thus afford him an opportunity of

<sup>1</sup> *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, x. p. 91 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *Ewald*, *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, iii. p. 161; *Die Joh. Schr.*, i. p. 7 ff.; *De Wette*, *Einl. N. T.*, p. 209 f.; *Bertholdt*, *Einl. A. u. N. T.*, iii. p. 1302; *Lessing*, *Neue Hypothese*, § 51; *Eichhorn*, *Einl. N. T.*, ii. p. 127 ff.; *Lücke*, *Comm. Ev. Joh.*, i. p. 197; *Weisse*, *Die ev. Gesch.*, i. p. 118 ff.; *Hilgenfeld*, *Die Evangelien*, p. 329; *Keim*, *Jesu v. Nazara*, i. p. 118 ff.; *Weizsäcker*, *Unters. evang. Gesch.*, p. 270; *Hug*, *Einl. N. T.*, ii. p. 191 ff.; *Holtzmann*, *Zeitschr. wiss. Theol.*, 1869, pp. 62 ff., 155 ff.; *Schwegler*, *Der Montanismus*, p. 205, anm. 137.

enlarging upon the theme. For instance, Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews, misunderstands the expression of Jesus, that in order to see the kingdom of God a man must be born from above, and asks: "How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born?"<sup>1</sup> Now, as it is well known and as we have already shown, the common expression used in regard to a proselyte to Judaism was that of being born again, with which every Jew, and more especially every "ruler of the Jews," must have been well acquainted. The stupidity which he displays in his conversation with Jesus, and with which the author endowed all who came in contact with him, in order, by the contrast, to mark more strongly the superiority of the Master, even draws from Jesus the remark: "Art thou the teacher of Israel and understandest not these things?"<sup>2</sup> There can be no doubt that the scene was ideal, and it is scarcely possible that a Jew could have written it. In the Synoptics, Jesus is reported as quoting against the people of his own city, Nazareth, who rejected him, the proverb: "A prophet has no honour in his own country."<sup>3</sup> The appropriateness of the remark here is obvious. The author of the fourth Gospel, however, shows clearly that he was neither an eye-witness nor acquainted with the subject or country when he introduces this proverb in a different place. Jesus is represented as staying two days at Sychar after his conversation with the Samaritan woman. "Now after the two days he departed thence into Galilee. For  $(\gamma\acute{\alpha}\rho)$  Jesus himself testified that a prophet hath no honour in his own country. When, therefore ( $\omicron\delta\upsilon\nu$ ), he came into

<sup>1</sup> John iii. 4.

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*, iii. 10.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. xiii. 57; Mark vi. 4; Luke iv. 24.

Galilee, the Galilæans received him, having seen all the things that he did in Jerusalem, at the feast—for they also went unto the feast.”<sup>1</sup> Now it is manifest that the quotation here is quite out of place, and none of the ingenious but untenable explanations of apologists can make it appropriate. He is made to go into Galilee, which was his country, because a prophet has no honour in his country, and the Galilæans are represented as receiving him, which is a contradiction of the proverb. The writer evidently misunderstood the facts of the case or deliberately desired to deny the connection of Jesus with Nazareth and Galilee, in accordance with his evident intention of associating the Logos only with the Holy City. We must not pause to show that the author is generally unjust to the Galilæans, and displays an ignorance regarding them very unlike what we should expect from the fisherman of Galilee.<sup>2</sup> We have already alluded to the artificial character of the conversation with the woman of Samaria, which, although given with so much detail, occurred at a place totally unknown (perhaps allegorically called the “City of Lies”), at which the Apostle John was not present, and the substance of which was typical of Samaria and its five nations and false gods. The continuation in the Gospel is as unreal as the conversation. Another instance displaying personal ignorance is the insertion into a discourse at the Last Supper, and without any appropriate connection with the context, the passage “Verily, verily, I say unto

<sup>1</sup> John iv. 43—45.

<sup>2</sup> We may merely refer to the remark of the Pharisees: search the Scriptures and see, “for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet” (vii. 52). The Pharisees could not have been ignorant of the fact that the prophets Jonah and Nahum were Galileans, and the son of Zebedee could not have committed such an error; cf. *Bretschneider*, *Probabilia*, p. 99 f.

you : he that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me."<sup>1</sup> In the Synoptics this sentence is naturally represented as part of the address to the disciples who are to be sent forth to preach the Gospel ;<sup>2</sup> but it is clear that its insertion here is a mistake.<sup>3</sup> Again, a very obvious slip, which betrays that what was intended for realistic detail is nothing but a reminiscence of some earlier Gospel misapplied, occurs in a later part of the discourses very inappropriately introduced as being delivered on the same occasion. At the end of xiv. 31, Jesus is represented, after saying that he would no more talk much with the disciples, as suddenly breaking off with the words : " Arise, let us go hence " (*Ἐγείρεσθε, ἄγωμεν ἐντεῦθεν*). They do not, however, arise and go thence, but, on the contrary, Jesus at once commences another long discourse : " I am the true vine," &c. The expression is merely introduced artistically to close one discourse, and enable the writer to begin another, and the idea is taken from some earlier work ; for, in our first Synoptic, at the close of the Agony in the Garden which the fourth Gospel ignores altogether, Jesus says to the awakened disciples : " Rise, let us go " (*Ἐγείρεσθε ἄγωμεν*).<sup>4</sup> We need not go on with these illustrations, but the fact that the author is not an eye-witness recording scenes which he beheld and discourses which he heard, but a writer composing an ideal Gospel on a fixed plan, will become more palpable as we proceed.

It is not necessary to enter upon any argument to

<sup>1</sup> John xiii. 20.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. x. 40 ; cf. xviii. 5 ; Luke x. 16, cf. ix. 48.

<sup>3</sup> This is recognised by *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 211 c.

<sup>4</sup> Matt. xxvi. 46 ; Mark xiv. 42 ; *De Wette* likewise admits this mistaken reminiscence. Einl. N. T., p. 211 c.

prove the fundamental difference which exists in every respect between the Synoptics and the fourth Gospel. This is admitted even by apologists, whose efforts to reconcile the discordant elements are totally unsuccessful. "It is impossible to pass from the Synoptic Gospels to that of St. John," says Canon Westcott, "without feeling that the transition involves the passage from one world of thought to another. No familiarity with the general teaching of the Gospels, no wide conception of the character of the Saviour is sufficient to destroy the contrast which exists in form and spirit between the earlier and later narratives."<sup>1</sup> The difference between the fourth Gospel and the Synoptics, not only as regards the teaching of Jesus but also the facts of the narrative, is so great that it is impossible to harmonize them, and no one who seriously considers the matter can fail to see that both cannot be accepted as correct. If we believe that the Synoptics give a truthful representation of the life and teaching of Jesus, it follows of necessity that, in whatever category we may decide to place the fourth Gospel, it must be rejected as a historical work. The theories which are most in favour as regards it may place the Gospel in a high position as an ideal composition, but sober criticism must infallibly pronounce that they exclude it altogether from the province of history. There is no option but to accept it as the only genuine report of the sayings and doings of Jesus, rejecting the Synoptics, or to remove it at once to another department of literature. The Synoptics certainly contradict each other in many minor details, but they are not in fundamental disagreement with each other, and evidently

<sup>1</sup> Introd. to Study of the Gospels, p. 249.

present the same portrait of Jesus, and the same view of his teaching derived from the same sources.

The vast difference which exists between the representation of Jesus in the fourth Gospel and in the Synoptics is too well recognized to require minute demonstration. We must, however, point out some of the distinctive features. We need not do more here than refer to the fact that whilst the Synoptics relate the circumstances of the birth of Jesus, two of them at least, and give some history of his family and origin, the fourth Gospel, ignoring all this, introduces the great Teacher at once as the Logos who from the beginning was with God and was himself God. The key-note is struck from the first, and in the philosophical prelude to the Gospel we have the announcement to those who have ears to hear, that here we need expect no simple history, but an artistic demonstration of the philosophical postulate. According to the Synoptics, Jesus is baptized by John, and as he goes out of the water the Holy Ghost descends upon him like a dove. The fourth Gospel knows nothing of the baptism, and makes John the Baptist narrate vaguely that he saw the Holy Ghost descend like a dove and rest upon Jesus, as a sign previously indicated to him by God by which to recognize the Lamb of God.<sup>1</sup> From the very first, John the Baptist, in the fourth Gospel, recognizes and declares Jesus to be "the only-begotten God which is in the bosom of the Father,"<sup>2</sup> the Christ,<sup>3</sup> the Lamb of God which taketh away the sins of the world.<sup>4</sup> According to the Synoptics, John comes preaching the baptism of repentance, and so far is he from making such

<sup>1</sup> John i. 32—33.

<sup>3</sup> *Ib.*, i. 17.

<sup>2</sup> John i. 18.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, i. 29.

declarations, or forming such distinct opinions concerning Jesus, that even after he has been cast into prison and just before his death,—when in fact his preaching was at an end,—he is represented as sending disciples to Jesus, on hearing in prison of his works, to ask him : “ Art thou he that should come, or look we for another ? ”<sup>1</sup> Jesus carries on his ministry and baptizes simultaneously with John, according to the fourth Gospel, but his public career, according to the Synoptics, does not begin until after the Baptist’s has concluded, and John is cast into prison.<sup>2</sup> The Synoptics clearly represent the ministry of Jesus as having been limited to a single year, and his preaching is confined to Galilee and Jerusalem, where his career culminates at the fatal Passover. The fourth Gospel distributes the teaching of Jesus between Galilee, Samaria, and Jerusalem, makes it extend at least over three years, and refers to three Passovers spent by Jesus at Jerusalem.<sup>3</sup> The Fathers felt this difficulty and expended a good deal of apologetic ingenuity upon it ; but no one is now content with the explanation of Eusebius, that the Synoptics merely intended to write the history of Jesus during the one year after the imprisonment of the Baptist, whilst the fourth Evangelist recounted the events of the time not recorded by the others, a theory which is totally contradicted by the four Gospels themselves.<sup>4</sup> The fourth Gospel represents the expulsion of the money-changers by Jesus as taking place at the very outset of his career,<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xi. 2 ff. ; cf. Luke vii. 18 ff.

<sup>2</sup> John iii. 22 ; Matt. iv. 12, 17 ; Mark i. 14 ; Luke iii. 20, 23 ; iv. 1 ff.

<sup>3</sup> John ii. 13 ; vi. 40 f. ; vii. 2 ; xiii. 1.

<sup>4</sup> *Eusebius*, H. E., iii. 24. We have already referred to the theory of Irenæus, which is at variance with all the Gospels, and extends the career of Jesus to many years of public life.

<sup>5</sup> John ii. 14 ff.

when he could not have been known, and when such a proceeding is incredible ; whilst the Synoptics place it at the very close of his ministry after his triumphal entry into Jerusalem, when, if ever, such an act, which might have contributed to the final catastrophe, first became either probable or possible.<sup>1</sup> Upon the occasion of this episode, the fourth Gospel represents Jesus as replying to the demand of the Jews for a sign why he did such things : “ Destroy this temple, and within three days I will raise it up,” which the Jews understand very naturally only in a material sense, and which even the disciples only comprehended and believed “ after the resurrection.” The Synoptics not only know nothing of this, but represent the saying as the false testimony which the false witnesses bare against Jesus.<sup>2</sup> No such charge is brought against Jesus at all in the fourth Gospel. So little do the Synoptics know of the conversation of Jesus with the Samaritan woman, and his sojourn for two days at Sychar, that in his instructions to his disciples, in the first Gospel, Jesus positively forbids them either to go to the Gentiles or to enter into any city of the Samaritans.<sup>3</sup>

The fourth Gospel has very few miracles in common with the Synoptics, and those few present notable variations. After the feeding of the five thousand, Jesus, according to the Synoptics, constrains his disciples to enter a ship and to go to the other side of the Lake of Gennesaret, whilst he himself goes up a mountain apart to pray. A storm arises, and Jesus appears walking to them over the sea, whereat the disciples are troubled, but

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxi. 12 ff. ; Mark xi. 15 ff. ; Luko xix. 45 ff.

<sup>2</sup> John ii. 18 ff. ; Matt. xxvi. 60 ff. ; cf. xxvii. 39 f. ; Mark xiv. 57 f. ; xv. 29.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. x. 5.

Peter says to him: "Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee over the water," and on his going out of the ship over the water, and beginning to sink, he cries: "Lord save me;" Jesus stretched out his hand and caught him, and when they had come into the ship, the wind ceased, and they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying: "Of a truth thou art the Son of God."<sup>1</sup> The fourth Gospel, instead of representing Jesus as retiring to the mountain to pray, which would have been opposed to the author's idea of the Logos, makes the motive for going thither the knowledge of Jesus that the people "would come and take him by force that they might make him a king."<sup>2</sup> The writer altogether ignores the episode of Peter walking on the sea, and adds a new miracle by stating that, as soon as Jesus was received on board, "the ship was at the land whither they were going."<sup>3</sup> The Synoptics go on to describe the devout excitement and faith of all the country round, but the fourth Gospel, limiting the effect on the multitude in the first instance to curiosity as to how Jesus had crossed the Lake, represents Jesus as upbraiding them with following him, not because they saw miracles, but because they had eaten of the loaves and been filled,<sup>4</sup> and makes him deliver one of those long dogmatic discourses, interrupted by, and based upon, the remarks of the crowd, which so peculiarly distinguish the fourth Gospel.

Without dwelling upon such details of miracles, however, we proceed with our slight comparison. Whilst the fourth Gospel from the very commencement asserts the foreknowledge of Jesus as to who should betray him, and makes him inform the Twelve that one of them is a

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xiv. 22, 23; cf. Mark vi. 46 ff.

<sup>2</sup> John vi. 17—21.

<sup>3</sup> John vi. 15.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, vi. 26.

devil, alluding to Judas Iscariot,<sup>1</sup> the Synoptics represent Jesus as having so little foreknowledge that Judas should betray him, that, shortly before the end, and, indeed, according to the third Gospel, only at the last supper, Jesus promises that the disciples shall sit upon twelve thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel,<sup>2</sup> and it is only at the last supper, after Judas has actually arranged with the chief priests, and apparently from knowledge of the fact, that Jesus for the first time speaks of his betrayal by him.<sup>3</sup> On his way to Jerusalem, two days before the Passover,<sup>4</sup> Jesus comes to Bethany where, according to the Synoptics, being in the house of Simon the leper, a woman with an alabaster box of very precious ointment came, and poured the ointment upon his head, much to the indignation of the disciples, who say: "To what purpose is this waste? For this might have been sold for much, and given to the poor."<sup>5</sup> In the fourth Gospel the episode takes place six days before the Passover,<sup>6</sup> in the house of Lazarus, and it is his sister Mary who takes a pound of very costly ointment, but she anoints the feet of Jesus and wipes his feet with her hair. It is Judas Iscariot, and not the disciples, who says: "Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence and given to the poor?" And Jesus makes a similar reply to that in the Synoptics, showing the identity of the occurrence described so differently.<sup>7</sup>

The Synoptics represent most clearly that Jesus on

<sup>1</sup> John vi. 64, 70, 71; cf. ii. 25.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xix. 28; cf. xvii. 22 f.; cf. Mark ix. 30 f., x. 32 f.; Luke xxii. 30; cf. ix. 22 f., 44 f.; xviii. 31 f.

<sup>3</sup> Matt. xxvi. 21 f., cf. 14 ff.; Mark xiv. 18 f., cf. 10 f.; Luke xxii. 21 f., cf. 3 ff.

<sup>4</sup> Mark xiv. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Matt. xxvi. 6—13; Mark xiv. 3—9.

<sup>6</sup> John xii. 1.

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, xii. 1 ff.; cf. xi. 2.

the evening of the 14th Nisan, after the custom of the Jews, ate the Passover with his disciples,<sup>1</sup> and that he was arrested in the first hours of the 15th Nisan, the day on which he was put to death. Nothing can be more distinct than the statement that the last supper was the Paschal feast. "They made ready the Passover (*ἡτοιμάσαν τὸ πάσχα*), and when the hour was come, he sat down and the Apostles with him, and he said to them: With desire I have desired to eat this Passover with you before I suffer" (*Ἐπιθυμία ἐπεθύμησα τοῦτο τὸ πάσχα φαγεῖν μεθ' ὑμῶν πρὸ τοῦ με παθεῖν*).<sup>2</sup> The fourth Gospel, however, in accordance with the principle which is dominant throughout, represents the last repast which Jesus eats with his disciples as a common supper (*δείπνον*), which takes place, not on the 14th, but on the 13th Nisan, the day "before the feast of the Passover" (*πρὸ τῆς ἑορτῆς τοῦ πάσχα*),<sup>3</sup> and his death takes place on the 14th, the day on which the Paschal lamb was slain. Jesus is delivered by Pilate to the Jews to be crucified about the sixth hour of "the preparation of the Passover" (*ἡν παρασκευὴ τοῦ πάσχα*),<sup>4</sup> and because it was "the preparation," the legs of the two men crucified with Jesus were broken, that the bodies might not remain on the cross on the great day of the feast.<sup>5</sup> The fourth Gospel knows nothing of the institution of the Christian festival at the last supper, but instead, represents Jesus as washing the feet of the disciples, enjoining them also to wash each other's feet: "For I gave you an example that ye should do according as I did to you."<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxvi. 17 f., 19, 36 ff., 47 ff.; Mark xiv. 12 ff., 16 ff.; Luke xxii. 7 ff., 13 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Luke xxii. 13, 15; cf. Matt. xxvi. 19 ff.; Mark xiv. 16 ff.

<sup>3</sup> John xiii. 1.

<sup>4</sup> John xix. 14.

<sup>5</sup> *Ib.*, xix. 31 ff.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, xiii. 12, 15.

The Synoptics have no knowledge of this incident. Immediately after the warning to Peter of his future denial, Jesus goes out with the disciples to the Garden of Gethsemane, and, taking Peter and the two sons of Zebedee apart, began to be sorrowful and very depressed, and as he prayed in his agony that if possible the cup might pass from him, an angel comforts him. Instead of this, the fourth Gospel represents Jesus as delivering, after the warning to Peter, the longest discourses in the Gospel: "Let not your heart be troubled," &c.; "I am the true vine,"<sup>1</sup> &c.; and, although said to be written by one of the sons of Zebedee who were with Jesus on the occasion, the fourth Gospel totally ignores the agony in the garden, and, on the contrary, makes Jesus utter the long prayer xvii. 1—26, in a calm and even exulting spirit very far removed from the sorrow and depression of the more natural scene in Gethsemane. The prayer, like the rest of the prayers in the Gospel, is a mere didactic and dogmatic address for the benefit of the hearers. The arrest of Jesus presents a similar contrast. In the Synoptics, Judas comes with a multitude from the chief priests and elders of the people armed with swords and staves, and, indicating his Master by a kiss, Jesus is simply arrested and, after the slight resistance of one of the disciples, is led away.<sup>2</sup> In the fourth Gospel the case is very different. Judas comes with a band of men from the chief priests and Pharisees, with lanterns and torches and weapons, and Jesus—"knowing all things which were coming to pass"—himself goes towards them and asks: "Whom seek ye?" Judas plays no active part, and no kiss is given. The fourth Evangelist

<sup>1</sup> John xiv. 1—31; xv. 1—27; xvi. 1—33; xvii. 1—26.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xxvi. 47 ff.; Mark xiv. 43 ff.; Luke xxii. 47 ff.

is, as ever, bent on showing that all which happens to the Logos is predetermined by himself and voluntarily encountered. As soon as Jesus replies: "I am he," the whole band of soldiers go backwards and fall to the ground; an incident thoroughly in the spirit of the early apocryphal Gospels still extant, and of an evidently legendary character. He is then led away first to Annas, who sends him to Caiaphas, whilst the Synoptics naturally know nothing of Annas, who was not the high priest and had no authority. We need not follow the trial, which is fundamentally different in the Synoptics and fourth Gospel; and we have already pointed out that in the Synoptics Jesus is crucified on the 15th Nisan, whereas in the fourth Gospel he is put to death—the spiritual Paschal lamb—on the 14th Nisan. According to the fourth Gospel, Jesus bears his own cross to Calvary,<sup>1</sup> but the Synoptics represent it as being borne by Simon of Cyrene.<sup>2</sup> As a very singular illustration of the inaccuracy of all the Gospels, we may point to the circumstance that no two of them agree even about so simple a matter of fact as the inscription on the cross, assuming that there was one at all. They give it respectively as follows: "This is Jesus the King of the Jews;" "The King of the Jews;" "This (is) the King of the Jews;" and the fourth Gospel: "Jesus the Nazarene the King of the Jews."<sup>3</sup> The occurrences during the Crucifixion are profoundly different in the fourth Gospel from those narrated in the Synoptics. In the latter, only the

<sup>1</sup> John xix. 17.

<sup>2</sup> Matt. xxvii. 32; Mark xv. 21; Luke xxii. 26.

<sup>3</sup> Οὗτός ἐστιν Ἰησοῦς ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων. Matt. xxvii. 37; Ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων. Mark xv. 26; Ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων οὗτος. Luke xxiii. 38; Ἰησοῦς ὁ Ναζωραῖος ὁ βασιλεὺς τῶν Ἰουδαίων. John xix. 19.

women are represented as beholding afar off,<sup>1</sup> but "the beloved disciple" is added in the fourth Gospel, and instead of being far off, they are close to the cross; and for the last cries of Jesus reported in the Synoptics we have the episode in which Jesus confides his mother to the disciple's care. We need not compare the other details of the Crucifixion and Resurrection, which are differently reported by each of the Gospels.

We have only pointed out a few of the more salient differences between the fourth Gospel and the Synoptics, which are rendered much more striking, in the Gospels themselves, by the profound dissimilarity of the sentiments uttered by Jesus. We merely point out, in passing, the omission of important episodes from the fourth Gospel, such as the Temptation in the wilderness, the Transfiguration, at which, according to the Synoptics, the sons of Zebedee were present, the last Supper, the agony in the garden, the mournful cries on the cross, and, we may add, the Ascension; and if we turn to the miracles of Jesus, we find that almost all of those narrated by the Synoptics are ignored, whilst an almost entirely new series is introduced. There is not a single instance of the cure of demoniacal possession in any form recorded in the fourth Gospel. Indeed the number of miracles is reduced in that Gospel to a few typical cases; and although at the close it is generally said that Jesus did many other signs in the presence of his disciples, these alone are written with the declared purpose: "that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God."<sup>2</sup> Without examining the miracles of the fourth Gospel in detail, we may briefly refer to one—the raising

<sup>1</sup> Matt. xxvii. 55 f.; Mark xv. 40 f.; Luke xxiii. 49. In this last place all his acquaintance are added.

<sup>2</sup> John xx. 30 f.

of Lazarus. The extraordinary fact that the Synoptics are utterly ignorant of this the greatest of the miracles attributed to Jesus has been too frequently discussed to require much comment here. It will be remembered that, as the case of the daughter of Jairus is, by the express declaration of Jesus, one of mere suspension of consciousness,<sup>1</sup> the only instance in which a dead person is said to have been restored to life by Jesus in any of the Synoptics is that of the son of the widow of Nain.<sup>2</sup> It is, therefore, quite impossible to suppose that the Synoptists could have known of the raising of Lazarus, and wilfully omitted it. It is equally impossible to believe that the authors of the Synoptic Gospels, from whatever sources they may have drawn their materials, could have been ignorant of such a miracle had it really taken place. This astounding miracle, according to the fourth Gospel, created such general excitement that it was one of the leading events which led to the arrest and crucifixion of Jesus.<sup>3</sup> If, therefore, the Synoptics had any connection with the writers to whom they are referred, the raising of Lazarus must have been personally known to their reputed authors either directly or through the Apostles who are supposed to have inspired them, or even upon any theory of contemporary origin the tradition of the greatest miracle of Jesus must have been fresh throughout the Church, if such a wonder had ever been performed. The total ignorance of such a miracle displayed by the whole of the works of the New Testament, therefore, forms the strongest presumptive evidence that the narrative in the fourth Gospel is a mere imaginary scene, illustrative of the dogma: "I am

<sup>1</sup> Matt. ix. 24; Mark v. 39; Luke viii. 52.

<sup>2</sup> Luke vii. 11 ff.

<sup>3</sup> John xi. 45 ff., 53; xii. 9 ff., 17 ff.

the resurrection and the life," upon which it is based. This conclusion is confirmed by the peculiarities of the narrative itself. When Jesus first hears, from the message of the sisters, that Lazarus whom he loved was sick, he declares, xi. 4 : " This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified thereby ; " and v. 6 : " When, therefore ( $\sigma\upsilon\nu$ ), he heard that he was sick, at that time he continued two days in the place where he was." After that time he proposes to go into Judæa, and explains to the disciples, v. 11 : " Our friend Lazarus is fallen asleep ; but I go that I may awake him out of sleep." The disciples reply, with the stupidity with which the fourth Evangelist endows all those who hold colloquy with Jesus, v. 12 : " Lord, if he is fallen asleep, he will recover. Howbeit, Jesus spake of his death ; but they thought that he was speaking of the taking of rest in sleep. Then said Jesus unto them plainly : Lazarus is dead, and I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent that ye may believe." The artificial nature of all this introductory matter will not have escaped the reader, and it is further illustrated by that which follows. Arrived at Bethany, they find that Lazarus has lain in the grave already four days. Martha says to Jesus (v. 21 f.) : " Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. And I know that even now whatsoever thou shalt ask of God, God will give thee. Jesus saith unto her : Thy brother shall rise again." Martha, of course, as usual, misunderstands this saying as applying to " the resurrection at the last day," in order to introduce the reply : " I am the resurrection and the life," &c. When they come to the house, and Jesus sees Mary and the Jews weeping, " he groaned in spirit and troubled him-

self," and on reaching the grave itself (v. 35 f.), "Jesus wept : Then said the Jews : Behold how he loved him !" Now this representation, which has ever since been the admiration of Christendom, presents the very strongest marks of unreality. Jesus, who loves Lazarus so much, disregards the urgent message of the sisters and, whilst openly declaring that his sickness is not unto death, intentionally lingers until his friend dies. When he does go to Bethany, and is on the very point of restoring Lazarus to life and dissipating the grief of his family and friends he actually weeps, and groans in his spirit. There is so total an absence of reason for such grief that these tears, to any sober reader, are seen to be the theatrical adjuncts of a dramatic scene elaborated out of the imagination of the writer. The suggestion of the bystanders (v. 37), that he might have prevented the death, is not more probable than the continuation (v. 38) : "Jesus, therefore, again groaning in himself cometh to the grave." Then, having ordered the stone to be removed, he delivers a prayer avowedly intended merely for the bystanders (v. 41 ff.) : "And Jesus lifted up his eyes and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me, and I knew that thou hearest me always : but for the sake of the multitude which stand around I said this, that they may believe that thou hast sent me." This prayer is as evidently artificial as the rest of the details of the miracle, but like other elaborately arranged scenic representations the charm is altogether dispelled when closer examination shows the character of the dramatic elements. A careful consideration of the narrative and of all the facts of the case must, we think, lead to the conclusion that this miracle is not even a historical tradition of the life of Jesus, but is wholly an ideal composition by

the author of the fourth Gospel. This being the case, the other miracles of the Gospel need not detain us.

If the historical part of the fourth Gospel be in irreconcilable contradiction to the Synoptics, the didactic is infinitely more so. The teaching of the one is totally different from that of the others, in spirit, form, and terminology; and in the prolix discourses of the fourth Gospel there is not a single characteristic of the simple eloquence of the Sermon on the Mount. In the diffuse mysticism of the Logos we cannot recognise a trace of the terse practical wisdom of Jesus of Nazareth. It must, of course, be apparent even to the most superficial observer that, in the fourth Gospel, we are introduced to a perfectly new system of instruction, and to an order of ideas of which there is not a vestige in the Synoptics. Instead of short and concise lessons full of striking truth and point, we find nothing but long and involved dogmatic discourses of little practical utility. The limpid spontaneity of that earlier teaching, with its fresh illustrations and profound sentences uttered without effort and untinged by art, is exchanged for diffuse addresses and artificial dialogues, in which labour and design are everywhere apparent. From pure and living morality couched in brief incisive sayings, which enter the heart and dwell upon the ear, we turn to elaborate philosophical orations without clearness or order, and to doctrinal announcements unknown to the Synoptics. To the inquiry: "What shall I do to inherit eternal life?" Jesus replies, in the Synoptics: "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself, . . . . this do, and thou shalt live."<sup>1</sup> In the fourth

<sup>1</sup> Luke x. 25—28; cf. Mark xix. 16 ff.; xxii. 36—40.

Gospel, to the question: "What must we do, that we may work the works of God?" Jesus answers, "This is the work of God, that ye should believe in him whom he sent."<sup>1</sup> The teaching of Jesus, in the Synoptics, is almost wholly moral, but, in the fourth Gospel, it is almost wholly dogmatic. If Christianity consist of the doctrines preached in the fourth Gospel, it is not too much to say that the Synoptics do not teach Christianity at all. The extraordinary phenomenon is presented of three Gospels, each professing to be complete in itself and to convey the good tidings of salvation to man, which have actually omitted the doctrines which are the condition of that salvation. The fourth Gospel practically expounds a new religion. It is undeniable that morality and precepts of love and charity for the conduct of life are the staple of the teaching of Jesus in the Synoptics, and that dogma occupies so small a place that it is regarded as a subordinate and secondary consideration. In the fourth Gospel, however, dogma is the one thing needful, and forms the whole substance of the preaching of the Logos. The burden of his teaching is: "He that believeth on the Son, hath eternal life, but he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him."<sup>2</sup> It is scarcely possible to put the contrast between the Synoptics and the fourth Gospel in too strong a light. If we possessed the Synoptics without the fourth Gospel, we should have the exposition of the most sublime morality based on perfect love to God and man. If we had the fourth Gospel without the Synoptics, we should have little more than a system of dogmatic mysticism without Christian morality. Not only is the doctrine and the terminology of the Jesus

<sup>1</sup> John vi. 28, 29.

<sup>2</sup> John iii. 36.

of the fourth Gospel quite different from that of the Jesus of the Synoptics, but so is the teaching of John the Baptist. In the Synoptics, he comes preaching the baptism of repentance,<sup>1</sup> and, like the Master, inculcating principles of morality;<sup>2</sup> but in the fourth Gospel he has adopted the peculiar views of the author, proclaims "the Lamb of God which taketh away the sins of the world,"<sup>3</sup> and bears witness that he is "the Son of God."<sup>4</sup> We hear of the Paraclete for the first time in the fourth Gospel.

In a word, the Synoptics unfold a teaching of sublime morality, for which the fourth Gospel substitutes a scheme of dogmatic theology of which the others know nothing.

It is so impossible to ignore the distinct individuality of the Jesus of the fourth Gospel, and of his teaching, that even apologists are obliged to admit that the peculiarities of the author have coloured the portrait, and introduced an element of subjectivity into the discourses. It was impossible, they confess, that the Apostle could remember verbally such long orations for half a century, and at best that they can only be accepted as substantially correct reports of the teaching of Jesus.<sup>5</sup> "The

<sup>1</sup> Matt. iii. 1 ff.; Mark i. 4 ff.; Luke iii. 2 ff.

<sup>2</sup> Luke iii. 8, 10 ff.

<sup>3</sup> John i. 29, 36.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, i. 34.

<sup>5</sup> *Bleek*, Einl. N. T., p. 200; Beiträge, p. 242 ff.; *Ewald*, Jahrb. bibl. Wiss., x. p. 91 ff.; *Gfrörer*, Allg. K. G., i. p. 172 ff.; *Das Heiligthum u. d. Wahrheit*, 1838, p. 331; *Lücke*, Comment. Ev. Joh., i. p. 242; *Weizsäcker*, Unters. evang. Gesch., pp. 238 ff., 253 ff., 265; *Reuss*, Gesch. N. T., p. 215 ff.; *Baur*, Theol. Jahrb., 1844, p. 452 ff.; *B. Bauer*, Krit. d. ev. Gesch. d. Johan., 1840; *Colani*, Rev. d. Théol. 1851, ii. p. 38 ff.; *Weisse*, Die evang. Gesch., i. p. 105 ff.; *Scholten*, Das Ev. Johan., p. 186; *Davidson*, Int. N. T., ii. p. 439 f.; *Bretschneider*, Probabilia, pp. 31 ff., 113 f.; *Renan*, Vie de Jésus, xiii<sup>me</sup> éd., p. lxix. ff.; *De Wette*, Einl. N. T., p. 212 ff., p. 232 ff.; *Kaysers*, Rev. de Théol., 1856, xiii. p. 74 f., &c., &c.

discourses of Christ and of others in this Gospel, pre-eminently," says Ewald, "are clothed as by an entirely new colour: on this account also scepticism has desired to conclude that the Apostle cannot have composed the Gospel; and yet no conclusion is more unfounded. When the Apostle at so late a period determined to compose the work, it was certainly impossible for him to reproduce all the words exactly as they were once spoken, if he did not perhaps desire not merely to recall a few memorable sentences, but, in longer discussions of more weighty subjects, to charm back all the animation with which they were once given. So he availed himself of that freedom in their revivification which is both quite intelligible of itself, and sufficiently warranted by the precedent of so many greater examples of all antiquity: and where the discourses extend to greater length, there flowed involuntarily in their composition much of that intuitive conception and form of expression regarding the manifestation of Christ which had long become deeply rooted in the Apostle's soul. But as certainly as these discourses bear upon them the colouring of the Apostle's mind, so certainly do they agree in their substantial contents with his best recollections—because the *Spruchsammlung* proves that the discourses of Christ in certain moments really could elevate themselves to the full height, which in John only throughout surprises us more than in Matthew(!). To deny the Gospel to the Apostle for such reasons were, therefore, pure folly, and in the highest degree unjust. Moreover the circumstance that we sometimes in the design of such discourses again meet with, or even see further developed, expressions which had been already noted down in the older Gospels, can prove nothing against

the apostolical origin of the Gospel, as it was indeed fully open to him to make use of the contents of such older writings, if it pleased him, when he considered it desirable, and when they came to the help of his own memory of those long passed days: for he certainly retained many or all of such expressions also in his own memory.”<sup>1</sup> Elsewhere, he describes the work as “glorified Gospel history,” composed out of “glorified recollection.”<sup>2</sup>

Another strenuous defender of the authenticity of the fourth Gospel wrote of it as follows: “Nevertheless everything is reconciled,” says Gfrörer, “if one accepts that testimony of the elders as true. For as John must have written the Gospel as an old man, that is to say not before the year 90—95 of our era, there is an interval of more than half a century between the time when the events which he relates really happened, and the time of the composition of his book,—space enough certainly to make a few mistakes conceivable even presupposing a good memory and unshaken love of truth. Let us imagine for instance that to-day (in 1841) an old man of eighty to ninety years of age should write down from mere memory the occurrences of the American War (of Independence), in which he himself in his early youth played a part. Certainly many passages in his narrative would be found, even though they might otherwise be true, which would not agree with the original event. Moreover another particular circumstance must be added in connection with the fourth Gospel. Two-thirds of it consist of discourses, which John places in the mouth of Jesus Christ. Now every day’s ex-

<sup>1</sup> *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, x. p. 91.

<sup>2</sup> “*Verklärte Evangelische Geschichte*,” — “*verklärte Erinnerung*.” *Jahrb. bibl. Wiss.*, iii. p. 163, p. 166.

perience proves that oral impressions are much more fleeting than those of sight. The happiest memory scarcely retains long orations after three or four years: how, then, could John with verbal accuracy report the discourses of Jesus after fifty or sixty years! We must be content if he truly render the chief contents and spirit of them, and that, as a rule, he does this, can be proved. It has been shown above that already, before Christ, a very peculiar philosophy of religion had been formed among the Egyptian Jews, which found its way into Palestine through the Essenes, and also numbered numerous adherents amongst the Jews of the adjacent countries of Syria and Asia Minor. The Apostle Paul professed this: not less the Evangelist John. Undoubtedly the latter allowed this Theosophy to exercise a strong influence upon his representation of the life-history of Jesus,"<sup>1</sup> &c.

Now all such admissions, whilst they are absolutely requisite to explain the undeniable phenomena of the fourth Gospel, have one obvious consequence: The fourth Gospel, by whomsoever written,—even if it could be traced to the Apostle John himself,—has no real historical value, being at best the "glorified recollections" of an old man written down half a century after the events recorded. The absolute difference between the teaching of this Gospel and of the Synoptics becomes perfectly intelligible, when the long discourses are recognized to be the result of Alexandrian Philosophy artistically interwoven with developed Pauline Christianity, and put into the mouth of Jesus. It will have been remarked that along with the admission of great subjectivity in the report of the discourses, and that nothing beyond the

<sup>1</sup> *Gfrörer*, *Allg. K. G.*, 1841, i. p. 172 f.

mere substance of the original teaching can reasonably be looked for, there is, in the extracts we have given, an assertion that there actually is a faithful reproduction in this Gospel of the original substance. Now there is not a shadow of proof of this, but on the contrary the strongest reason for denying the fact; for, unless it be accepted that the Synoptics have so completely omitted the whole doctrinal part of the teaching of Jesus, have so carefully avoided the very peculiar terminology of the Logos Gospel, and have conveyed so unhistorical and erroneous an impression of the life and religious system of Jesus that, without the fourth Gospel, we should not actually have had an idea of his fundamental doctrines, we must inevitably recognize that the fourth Gospel cannot possibly be a true reproduction of his teaching. It is impossible that Jesus can have had two such diametrically opposed systems of teaching,—one purely moral, the other wholly dogmatic; one expressed in wonderfully terse, clear, brief sayings and parables, the other in long, involved, and diffuse discourses; one clothed in the great language of humanity, the other concealed in obscure philosophic terminology;—and that these should have been kept so distinct as they are in the Synoptics, on the one hand, and the fourth Gospel, on the other. The tradition of Justin Martyr applies solely to the system of the Synoptics: “Brief and concise were the sentences uttered by him: for, he was no Sophist, but his word was the power of God.”<sup>1</sup>

We have already pointed out the evident traces of artificial construction in the discourses and dialogues of the fourth Gospel, and the more closely these are examined, the more clear does it become that they are not genuine

<sup>1</sup> Apol., i. 14, see vol. ii. p. 47.

reports of the teaching of Jesus, but mere ideal compositions by the author of the fourth Gospel. The speeches of John the Baptist, the discourses of Jesus, and the reflections of the Evangelist himself,<sup>1</sup> are marked by the same peculiarity of style and proceed from the same mind. It is scarcely possible to determine where the one begins and the other ends.<sup>2</sup> It is quite clear, for instance, that the author himself, without a break, continues the words which he puts into the mouth of Jesus, in the colloquy with Nicodemus, but it is not easy to determine where. The whole dialogue is artificial in the extreme, and is certainly not genuine, and this is apparent not only from the replies attributed to the "teacher of Israel," but to the irrelevant manner in which the reflections loosely ramble from the new birth to the dogmatic statements in the thirteenth and following verses, which are the never-failing resource of the Evangelist when other subjects are exhausted. The sentiments and almost the words either attributed to Jesus, or added by the writer, to which we are now referring, iii. 12 ff., we find again in the very same chapter, either put into the mouth of John the Baptist, or as reflections of the author, verses 31—36, for again we add that it is difficult anywhere to discriminate the speaker. Indeed, while the Synoptics are rich in the abundance of practical counsel and profound moral insight, as well as in variety of illustrative parables, it is remarkable how much sameness there is in all the discourses of the fourth Gospel, a very few ideas being constantly reproduced. Whilst the teaching of Jesus in the Synoptics is singularly universal and impersonal, in the fourth Gospel it is purely personal, and rarely passes

<sup>1</sup> John i. 1—18, &c., &c.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *ib.*, i. 15 ff., iii. 27 ff., 10—21.

beyond the declaration of his own dignity, and the inculcation of belief in him as the only means of salvation. A very distinct trace of ideal composition is found in xvii. 3: "And this is eternal life, to know thee the only true God, and him whom thou didst send, even Jesus Christ." Even apologists admit that it is impossible that Jesus could speak of himself as "Jesus Christ." We need not, however, proceed further with such analysis. We believe that no one can calmly and impartially examine the fourth Gospel without being convinced of its artificial character. If some portions possess real beauty, it is of a purely ideal kind, and their attraction consists chiefly in the presence of a certain vague but suggestive mysticism. The natural longing of humanity for any revelation regarding a future state has not been appealed to in vain. That the diffuse and often monotonous discourses of this Gospel, however, should ever have been preferred to the sublime simplicity of the teaching of the Synoptics, illustrated by such parables as the wise and foolish virgins, the sower, and the Prodigal Son, and culminating in the Sermon on the Mount, each sentence of which is so full of profound truth and beauty, is little to the credit of critical sense and judgment.

The elaborate explanations, however, by which the phenomena of the fourth Gospel are reconciled with the assumption that it was composed by the Apostle John are in vain, and there is not a single item of evidence within the first century and a half which does not agree with internal testimony in opposing the supposition. To one point, however, we must briefly refer in connection with this statement. It is asserted that the Gospel and Epistles—or at least the first Epistle—of the Canon

ascribed to the Apostle John are by one author, although this is not without contradiction,<sup>1</sup> and very many of those who agree as to the identity of authorship by no means admit the author to have been the Apostle John. It is argued, therefore, that the use of the Epistle by Polycarp and Papias is evidence of the apostolic origin of the Gospel. We have, however, seen, that not only is it very uncertain that Polycarp made use of the Epistle at all, but that he does not in any case mention its author's name. There is not a particle of evidence that he ascribed the Epistle, even supposing he knew it, to the Apostle John. With regard to Papias, the only authority for the assertion that he knew the Epistle is the statement of Eusebius already quoted and discussed, that: "He used testimonies out of John's first Epistle."<sup>2</sup> There is no evidence, however, even supposing the statement of Eusebius to be correct, that he ascribed it to the Apostle. The earliest undoubted references to the Epistle, in fact, are by Irenæus and Clement of Alexandria, so that this evidence is of little avail for the Gospel. There is no name attached to the first Epistle, and the second and third have the superscription of "the Presbyter," which, applying the argument of Ewald regarding the author of the Apocalypse, ought to be conclusive against their being written by an Apostle. As all three are evidently by the same writer, and intended to be understood as by the author of the Gospel, and that writer does not pretend to be an Apostle, but calls himself a simple Presbyter, the Epistles likewise give

<sup>1</sup> *Baur*, *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1844, p. 666 f., 1848, pp. 293—337; *Unters. kan. Evv.*, p. 350; *Davidson*, *Int. N. T.*, ii. p. 293 ff.; *Zeller*, *Theol. Jahrb.* 1845, p. 588 f., 1847, p. 137. *Credner* assigns the second and third Epistle not to the Apostle but to the Presbyter John. *Eint. N. T.*, i. p. 687 ff.

<sup>2</sup> *H. E.*, v. 8.

presumptive evidence against the apostolic authorship of the Gospel

There is another important testimony against the Johannine origin of the fourth Gospel to which we must briefly refer. We have pointed out that, according to the fourth Gospel, Jesus did not eat the Paschal Supper with his disciples, but that being arrested on the 13th Nisan, he was put to death on the 14th, the actual day upon which the Paschal lamb was sacrificed. The Synoptics, on the contrary, represent that Jesus ate the Passover with his disciples on the evening of the 14th, and was crucified on the 15th Nisan. The difference of opinion indicated by these contradictory accounts actually prevailed in various Churches, and in the second half of the second century a violent discussion arose as to the day upon which "the true Passover of the Lord" should be celebrated, the Church in Asia Minor maintaining that it should be observed on the 14th Nisan,—the day on which, according to the Synoptics, Jesus himself celebrated the Passover and instituted the Christian festival,—whilst the Roman Church as well as most other Christians,—following the fourth Gospel, which represents Jesus as not celebrating the last Passover, but being himself slain upon the 14th Nisan, the true Paschal lamb,—had abandoned the day of the Jewish feast altogether, and celebrated the Christian festival on Easter Sunday, upon which the Resurrection was supposed to have taken place. Polycarp, who was sent to Rome to represent the Churches of Asia Minor in the discussions upon the subject, could not be induced to give up the celebration on the 14th Nisan, the day which, according to tradition, had always been observed, and he appealed to the practice of the Apostle John himself in support of

that date. Eusebius quotes from Irenæus the statement of the case : " For neither could Anicetus persuade Polycarp not to observe it (the 14th Nisan), because he had ever observed it with John the disciple of our Lord, and with the rest of the Apostles with whom he consorted." <sup>1</sup> Towards the end of the century, Polycrates, the Bishop of Ephesus, likewise appeals to the practice of " John who reclined upon the bosom of the Lord," as well as of the Apostle Philip and his daughters, and of Polycarp and others in support of the same day : " All these observed the 14th day of the Passover, according to the Gospel, without variation, but following according to the rule of faith." <sup>2</sup> Now it is evident that, according to this undoubted testimony, the Apostle John by his own practice ratified the account of the Synoptics, and contradicted the data of the fourth Gospel, and upon the supposition that he so long lived in Asia Minor it is probable that his authority largely contributed to establish the observance of the 14th Nisan there. We must, therefore, either accept that the Apostle John by his practice reversed the statement of his own Gospel, or that he was not its author, which of course is the natural conclusion. Without going further into the discussion, which would detain us too long, it is clear that the Paschal controversy is opposed to the supposition that the Apostle John was the author of the fourth Gospel. <sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Οὗτε γὰρ ὁ Ἀνίκητος τὸν Πολύκαρπον πείσαι ἐδύνατο μὴ τηρεῖν, ἅτε μετὰ Ἰωάννου τοῦ μαθητοῦ τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν, καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν ἀποστόλων οἷς συνδιέτριψεν, ἀεὶ τετηρηκότα, κ.τ.λ. *Irenæus*, *Adv. Hæc.*, iii. 3, § 4; *Eusebius*, *H. E.*, v. 24.

<sup>2</sup> Οὗτοι πάντες ἐτήρησαν τὴν ἡμέραν τῆς τεσσαρεσκαίδεκάτης τοῦ πάσχα κατὰ τὸ εὐαγγέλιον, μηδὲν παρεκβαίνοντες, ἀλλὰ κατὰ τὸν κανόνα τῆς πίστεως ἀκολουθοῦντες. *Eusebius*, *H. E.*, v. 24.

<sup>3</sup> *Baur*, *Unters. kan. Evng.*, p. 334 ff.; *Theol. Jahrb.*, 1857, p. 242 ff.; *G. drei erst. Jahrh.*, p. 156 ff.; *Davidson*, *Int. N. T.*, ii. p. 403 ff.;

We have seen that, whilst there is not one particle of evidence during a century and a half after the events recorded in the fourth Gospel that it was composed by the son of Zebedee, there is, on the contrary, the strongest reason for believing that he did not write it. The first writer who quotes a passage of the Gospel with the mention of his name is Theophilus of Antioch, who gives the few words: "In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God," as spoken by "John," whom he considers amongst the divinely inspired (*οἱ πνευματοφόροι*),<sup>1</sup> though even he does not distinguish him as the Apostle. We have seen the legendary nature of the late traditions regarding the composition of the Gospel, of which a specimen was given in the defence of it in the Canon of Muratori, and we must not further quote them. The first writer who distinctly classes the four Gospels together is Irenæus; and the reasons which he gives for the existence of precisely that number in the Canon of the Church illustrate the thoroughly uncritical character of the Fathers, and the slight dependence which can be placed upon their judgments. "But neither can the Gospels be more in number than they are," says Irenæus, "nor, on the other hand, can they be fewer. For as there are four quarters of the world in which we are, and four general winds (*καθολικὰ πνεύματα*), and the Church is disseminated throughout all the world, and the Gospel is the pillar and prop of the Church and the spirit of life, it is right that she should

*Hilgenfeld*, Die Evangelien, p. 341 ff.; Der Paschastreit, u. s. w., Theol. Jahrb., 1849, p. 209 f.; Der Paschastreit, 1860; *Scholten*, Das Ev. Johan., p. 387 ff. De sterfdag van Jezus volgens het vierde Evangelie, 1856; *Schwegler*, Der Montanismus, p. 191 ff.

<sup>1</sup> Ad Autolyc., ii. 22. *Tischendorf* dates this work about A.D. 180. Wann wurden, u. s. w., p. 16, ann. 1.

have four pillars, on all sides breathing out immortality and revivifying men. From which it is manifest that the Word, the maker of all, he who sitteth upon the Cherubim and containeth all things, who was manifested to man, has given to us the Gospel, four-formed but possessed by one spirit; as David also says, supplicating his advent: 'Thou that sittest between the Cherubim, shine forth.' For the Cherubim also are four-faced, and their faces are symbols of the working of the Son of God . . . . and the Gospels, therefore, are in harmony with these amongst which Christ is seated. For the Gospel according to John relates his first effectual and glorious generation from the Father, saying: 'In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and God was the Word,' and 'all things were made by him, and without him nothing was made.' On this account also this Gospel is full of all assurance, for such is his person.<sup>1</sup> But the Gospel according to Luke, being as it were of priestly character, opened with Zacharias the priest sacrificing to God . . . . . But Matthew narrates his generation as a man, saying: 'The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham,' and 'the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise.' This, therefore, is the Gospel of his humanity, and on this account a man, humble and mild in character, is presented throughout the Gospel. But Mark makes his commencement after a prophetic Spirit coming down from on high unto men, saying: 'The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, as it is written in Isaiah the prophet;' indicating the winged form of the Gospel; and

<sup>1</sup> The Greek of this rather unintelligible sentence is not preserved. The Latin version reads as follows: Propter hoc et omni fiducia plenum est Evangelium istud; talis est enim persona ejus.

for this reason he makes a compendious and precursory declaration, for this is the prophetic character. . . . . Such, therefore, as was the course of the Son of God, such also is the form of the living creatures ; and such as is the form of the living creatures, such also is the character of the Gospel. For quadriform are the living creatures, quadriform is the Gospel, and quadriform the course of the Lord. And on this account four covenants were given to the human race . . . . These things being thus ; vain and ignorant, and, moreover, audacious are those who set aside the form of the Gospel, and declare the aspects of the Gospels as either more or less than has been said."<sup>1</sup> As such principles of criticism presided over the formation of the Canon, it is not singular that so many of the decisions of the Fathers have been reversed. Irenæus himself mentioned the existence of heretics who rejected the fourth Gospel,<sup>2</sup> and Epiphanius<sup>3</sup> refers to the Alogi, who equally denied its authenticity, but it is not needful for us further to discuss this point. Enough has been said to show that the testimony of the fourth Gospel is of no value towards establishing the truth of miracles and the reality of Divine Revelation.

<sup>1</sup> *Irenæus*, Adv. Hær., iii. 11, §§ 8, 9.

<sup>2</sup> Adv. Hær., iii. 2, § 9.

<sup>3</sup> Hær., li. 3, 4, 28.

## CHAPTER III.

## CONCLUSIONS.

WE may now briefly sum up the conclusions to which we are led by our inquiry into the reality of Divine Revelation, although we shall carefully confine ourselves within certain limits, in order that we may not too far anticipate the fuller observations which we shall have to make at the close of the second portion of this work, when we find the results at which we now arrive confirmed by more comprehensive examination of the subject. It is impossible to refrain from some anticipation of final reflections, nor would it be right to delay a clear statement of what we believe to be the truth and its consequences.

We have seen that a Divine Revelation is such only by virtue of communicating to us something which we could not know without it, and which is in fact undiscoverable by human reason; and that miraculous evidence is absolutely requisite to establish its reality. It is admitted that no other testimony could justify our believing the specific revelation which we are considering, the very substance of which is supernatural and beyond the criterion of reason, and that its astounding announcements, if not demonstrated to be miraculous truths, must inevitably be pronounced "the wildest delusions." On examining the supposed miraculous evidence, however,

we find that not only is it upon general grounds antecedently incredible, but that the testimony by which its reality is supported, so far from establishing the inferences drawn from the supposed supernatural phenomena, is totally insufficient even to certify the actual occurrence of the events narrated. The history of miraculous pretension in the world, and the circumstances attending this special exhibition of it, suggest natural explanations of the reported facts which rightly and infallibly remove them from the region of the supernatural.

Even if the reality of miracles could be substantiated, their value as evidence for the Divine Revelation is destroyed by the necessary admission that miracles are not limited to one source, but that there are miracles Satanic which are to be disbelieved, as well as Divine and evidential. As the doctrines supposed to be revealed are beyond Reason, and cannot in any sense, therefore, be intelligently approved by the human intellect, no evidence which is of so double and inconclusive a nature could sufficiently attest them. This alone would disqualify the Christian miracles for the duty which miracles alone are considered capable of performing.

The supposed miraculous evidence for the Divine Revelation, moreover, is not only without any special divine character, being avowedly common also to Satanic agency, but it is not original either in conception or details. Similar miracles to those which are supposed to attest it are reported long antecedent to the promulgation of Christianity, and continued to be performed for centuries after it. A stream of miraculous pretension, in fact, has flowed through all human history, deep and broad as it has passed through the darker ages, but dwindling down to a thread as it has entered days of

enlightenment. The evidence was too hackneyed and commonplace to make any impression upon those before whom the Christian miracles are said to have been performed, and it altogether failed to convince the people to whom the Revelation was primarily addressed. The selection of such evidence for such a purpose is much more characteristic of human weakness than of divine power.

The true character of miracles is at once betrayed by the fact that their supposed occurrence has been confined to ages of ignorance and superstition, and that they are absolutely unknown in any time or place where science has provided witnesses fitted to appreciate and ascertain the nature of such exhibitions of supernatural power. There is not the slightest evidence that any attempt was made to investigate the supposed miraculous occurrences, or to justify the inferences so freely drawn from them, nor is there any reason to believe that the witnesses possessed in any considerable degree the fulness of knowledge and sobriety of judgment requisite for the purpose. No miracle has yet established its claim to the rank even of apparent reality, and all such phenomena must remain in the dim region of imagination. The test applied to the largest class of miracles, connected with demoniacal possession, discloses the falsity of all miraculous pretension.

There is no uncertainty as to the origin of belief in supernatural interference with nature. The assertion that spurious miracles have sprung up round a few instances of genuine miraculous power has not a single valid argument to support it. History clearly demonstrates that wherever ignorance and superstition have prevailed every obscure occurrence has been attributed to supernatural agency, and it is freely acknowledged that, under their influence, inexplicable and miraculous

are convertible terms. On the other hand, in proportion as knowledge of natural laws has increased, the theory of supernatural interference with the order of nature has been dispelled, and miracles have ceased. The effect of science, however, is not limited to the present and future, but its action is equally retrospective, and phenomena which were once ignorantly isolated from the great sequence of natural cause and effect, are now restored to their place in the unbroken order. Ignorance and superstition created miracles; knowledge has for ever annihilated them.

Miracles, of the reality of which there is no evidence worthy of the name, are not only contradictory to complete induction, but even on the avowal of those who affirm them, they only cease to be incredible upon certain assumptions with regard to the Supreme Being which are equally opposed to Reason. These assumptions, it is not denied, are solely derived from the Revelation which miracles are intended to attest, and the whole argument, therefore, ends in the palpable absurdity of making the Revelation rest upon miracles which have nothing to rest upon themselves but the Revelation. The antecedent assumption of the Divine design of Revelation and of the necessity for it stands upon no firmer foundation, and it is emphatically excluded by the whole constitution of the order of nature, whose imperative principle is progressive development. Upon all grounds of Reason and experience the supposed miraculous evidence, by which alone we could be justified in believing in the reality of the Divine Revelation, must be pronounced mere human delusion, and the result thus attained is confirmed by every external consideration.

When we turn from more general arguments to examine the documentary evidence for the reality of the

supposed miraculous occurrences, and of the Divine Revelation which they accredit, we meet with the characteristics which might have been expected. We do not find any real trace even of the existence of our Gospels for a century and a half after the events they record. They are anonymous narratives, and there is no evidence of any value connecting these works with the writers to whom they are popularly attributed. On the contrary, the facts stated by Papias fully justify the conclusion that our first and second Synoptics cannot be the works said to have been composed by Matthew and Mark. The third Synoptic is an avowed compilation by one who was not an eye-witness of the occurrences narrated, and the identity of the writer cannot be established. As little was the supposed writer of the second Synoptic a personal witness of the scenes of his history. The author of the fourth Gospel is unknown, and no impartial critic can assert the historical character of his narrative. Apart from continual minor contradictions throughout all of these narratives, it is impossible to reconcile the markedly different representations of the fourth and of the Synoptic Gospels. They mutually destroy each other as evidence. These Gospels themselves do not pretend to be inspired histories, and they cannot upon any ground be regarded as more than mere human compositions. As evidence for miracles and the reality of Divine Revelation they have no weight, being merely narratives, written long after the events recorded, by unknown persons who were neither eye-witnesses of the supposed miraculous occurrences, nor hearers of the statements they profess to report. Contemporary testimony of such character would have possessed little force against the opposing weight of complete induction, but still smaller is the evidential value of such narratives as these, which are

largely or wholly based upon pious tradition, and which could not, in that superstitious age, have excluded the mythical elements which are so palpably incorporated in our Gospels. The world is full of illustrations of the rapid growth of legendary matter, and it would indeed have been little short of miraculous had these narratives been exceptions to the universal rule, written as they were under the strongest religious excitement at a time "when almost every ordinary incident became a miracle," and in that "mythic period in which reality melted into fable, and invention unconsciously trespassed on the province of history." Tradition, in other forms, to which appeal is sometimes made, is still more worthless, and, opposed to the result of universal experience, it is unworthy of a moment's consideration.

The miraculous evidence upon which alone, it is admitted, we could be justified in believing its astounding doctrines being thus nugatory, the claims of Christianity to be considered a Divine Revelation must necessarily be disallowed, and its supernatural elements, which are, in fact, the very substance of the system, inevitably sharing the same fate as the supposed miraculous evidence, must, therefore, be rejected as incredible and opposed to Reason and complete induction.

It must be remembered that the claim to direct Divine origin, so far from being peculiar to Christianity, has been equally advanced by all the great systems of Religion which have ever been promulgated and taken root in the world. In this, as in all other respects, Christianity can be fitly classified, and assigned its place in natural sequence with other historical creeds, by the rapidly maturing Science of Religion. The character of Divine Revelation, in any supernatural sense, cannot be accorded to any of the Religions which have succes-

sively laid claim to it; and whilst in one sense Christianity is the most divine of all human systems, it must be remarked that this is solely due to its noble morality, and not to its supernatural dogmas, which are not more original than the evidence by which they are supposed to be attested. The so-called Divine Revelation in fact is both in conception and details supremely anthropomorphic. There is not one of its dogmas which does not find parallels in antecedent religions, and although the same may be said of its isolated precepts, it is, notwithstanding, in the completeness and perfection of its elevated morality that its only true and undeniable originality consists.

*a. 1.*

Christianity takes a higher position when recognized to be the most perfect development of human morality than it could do as an abortive pretendent to divine honours. There is little indeed in its history and actual achievements to support the claim made on its behalf to the character of a scheme Divinely revealed for the salvation of the human race. Primarily communicated to a favoured race, which almost unanimously rejected it then, and whose descendants still continue almost unanimously to confirm the original judgment, it has not, after upwards of 1800 years, obtained even the nominal adherence of more than a third of the human race.<sup>1</sup> Chākya-

*good.*

<sup>1</sup> The different creeds may be roughly estimated as follows:—

Christians . . . . .	340 millions.
Other creeds . . . . .	660 „

The last item is composed as follows:—

Mahomedans . . . . .	124 millions.
Buddhists . . . . .	300 „
Brahmins . . . . .	130 „
Other Pagans . . . . .	100 „
Jews . . . . .	6 „

Cf. *A. K. Johnston*, *Physical Atlas*, 1856, Chart xxxiv., p. 111.

mouni, a teacher only second in nobility of character to Jesus, who, like him, proclaimed a system of elevated morality, has even now almost as many followers, although his missionaries have never penetrated the West, and his creed is much less adapted for general acceptance. Such results attained by a Religion specially claiming the character of direct Divine Revelation cannot be called supernatural, although they may not be disproportionate for a human system of pure spiritual morality.

In considering the actual position of Christianity, however, and what it may have done for the world as a religious system, its supernatural dogmas become a mere question of detail. The Divine origin attributed to its founder, the miraculous circumstances represented as attending his birth and subsequent career, as well as the hope of reward in a future life, and the fear of eternal punishment, undoubtedly exercised a certain influence in ages of darkness and superstition, to which the lofty morality of Jesus might have appealed in vain, and, therefore, they may have contributed towards the propagation of Christianity. The supernatural dogmas, however, have no virtue in themselves. We shall not here inquire how much or how little of civilization in Europe has been due to the influence of Christianity, but we may assert that whatever beneficial effect has been produced by it has been solely attributable to its morality. It is an undoubted fact that wherever, as in the Eastern Church, dogmatic theology has been dominant, civilization has declined. Theological bigotry rapidly extinguishes Christian virtues. But for the filtration of morality through doctrinal obstructions the dogmas of ecclesiastical Christianity would have produced little or nothing but evil for the world. They have been the

fruitful source of "hatred, malice, and all uncharitableness," and their propagation by sword and stake has ensanguined many a page of history. Whatever service the supernatural dogmas may have rendered in securing authority for the sublime Religion of Jesus in ages of barbarism incapable of understanding its elevated purity, their influence and utility can only be regarded as temporary. Their abandonment can have no prejudicial effect upon the power of Religion. No one who pretends to make the moral teaching of Jesus the rule of life merely from dogmatic obligation can have understood that morality at all, or penetrated beyond the mere letter of its precepts. On the other hand, weighted as Christian morality has been by supernatural dogmas, which are felt to be incredible, doubt and hesitation with regard to these more or less paralyzes its practical authority.

Even Bishop Butler acknowledges that the importance of Christianity primarily arises from its being a distinct declaration and institution of natural morality; and he only accords to its supernatural dogmas<sup>1</sup> a secondary rank. No one can have attentively studied the subject without being struck by the absence of any such dogmas from the earlier records of the teaching of Jesus. We shall probably never be able to determine now how far the great Teacher may, through his own speculations or misunderstood spiritual utterances, have originated the supernatural doctrines subsequently attributed to him, and by which his whole history and system soon became suffused. There can be little doubt that in great part the miraculous elements of Christianity are due to the profound and excited veneration of uninstructed and superstitious

<sup>1</sup> Analogy, part ii., ch. 1.

ages for the elevated character of Jesus. The history of the world is not without instances of similar phenomena, but as a slight illustration of the tendency we may, in passing, merely point to the case of the excited and superstitious populace of Lystra, who with less reason are described as hailing Paul and Barnabas as gods. Whatever explanation may be given, however, it is undeniable that the earliest teaching of Jesus recorded in the Gospel which can be regarded in any degree as historical is pure morality almost, if not quite, free from theological dogmas. Morality was the essence of his system; theology was an after-thought. It is to the followers of Jesus, and not to the Master himself, that we owe the supernatural elements so characteristic of the age and people. We may look in vain in the Synoptic Gospels for the doctrines elaborated in the Pauline Epistles and the Gospel of Ephesus. The great transformation of Christianity was thus effected by men who had never seen Jesus, and who were only acquainted with his teaching when already transmuted by tradition. The fervid imagination of the East constructed Christian theology. It is not difficult to follow the gradual development of the creeds of the Church, and it is certainly most instructive to observe the progressive boldness with which its dogmas were expanded by pious enthusiasm. The New Testament alone represents several stages of dogmatic evolution. Before his first followers had passed away, intricate systems of dogma and mysticism began to prevail. The disciples who had so often misunderstood the teaching of Jesus during his life, piously distorted it after his death. His simple lessons of meekness and humility were soon forgotten. With lamentable rapidity the elaborate structure of ecclesiastical Christianity,

following stereotyped lines of human superstition, and deeply coloured by Alexandrian philosophy, displaced the simple morality of Jesus. Doctrinal controversy, which commenced amongst the very apostles, has ever since divided the unity of the Christian body. The perverted ingenuity of successive generations of Churchmen has filled the world with theological quibbles which have naturally enough culminated of late in doctrines of Immaculate Conception and Papal Infallibility.

It must be admitted that Christian ethics were not in their details either new or original. The precepts which distinguish the system may be found separately in early religions, in ancient philosophies, and in the utterances of the great poets and seers of Israel. The teaching of Jesus, however, carried morality to the sublimest point attained, or even attainable, by humanity. The influence of his spiritual religion has been rendered doubly great by the unparalleled purity and elevation of his own character. Surpassing in his sublime simplicity and earnestness the moral grandeur of Çhâkyâ-mouni, and putting to the blush the sometimes sullied, though generally admirable, teaching of Socrates and Plato, and the whole round of Greek philosophers, he presented the rare spectacle of a life, so far as we can estimate it, uniformly noble and consistent with his own lofty principles, so that the "imitation of Christ" has become almost the final word in the preaching of his religion, and must continue to be one of the most powerful elements of its permanence. His system might not be new, but it was in a high sense the perfect development of natural morality, and it was final in this respect amongst others, that, superseding codes of law and elaborate rules of life, it confined itself to two funda-

mental principles: Love to God and love to man. //  
 Whilst all previous systems had merely sought to purify the stream, it demanded the purification of the fountain. It placed the evil thought on a par with the evil action. Such morality, based upon the intelligent and earnest acceptance of Divine Law, and perfect recognition of the brotherhood of man, is the highest conceivable by humanity, and although its power and influence must augment with the increase of enlightenment, it is itself beyond development, consisting as it does of principles unlimited in their range, and inexhaustible in their application. Its perfect realization is that true spiritual Nirvāna which Çhākya-mouni less clearly conceived, and obscured with Oriental mysticism: extinction of rebellious personal opposition to Divine order, and the attainment of perfect harmony with the will of God.

Such a system can well afford to abandon claims to a supernatural character which have been raised for it in ages of superstitious ignorance, but which now do it but little honour, and to purge itself of dogmas devised by pious fanaticism against which reason and morality revolt. It is obvious that such morality must be embraced for its own excellence alone. It requires no miraculous evidence, and it is independent of supernatural dogma. We cannot in any high sense receive it at all except for its own sake, with earnest appreciation of its truth, and love of its perfect principles; and any argument that Christian Morality would not possess authority and influence apart from Christian Theology is degrading to the very religion it pretends to uphold. No practice of Christian ethics for any ulterior object whatever can be more than mere formality. Mosaism might be content with observance of Law secured by a promise of length

of days in the land, or a threat of death to the offender, but the great Teacher demanded holiness for itself alone. The morality of Jesus lays absolute claim to the whole heart and mind, and they cannot be bribed by hopes of heaven, or coerced by fears of hell. The purity of heart which alone "sees God" is not dependent on views of the Trinity, or belief in a miraculous birth and incarnation. On the contrary, the importance which has been attached to Theology by the Christian Church, almost from its foundation, has been subversive of Christian morality. In surrendering its miraculous element, and its claims to supernatural origin, therefore, the religion of Jesus does not lose its virtue or the qualities which have made it a blessing to humanity. It sacrifices none of that elevated character which has distinguished and raised it above all human systems: it merely relinquishes a claim which it has shared with all antecedent religions, and severs its connection with ignorant superstition. It is too divine in its morality to require the aid of miraculous attributes. No supernatural halo can heighten its spiritual beauty, and no mysticism deepen its holiness. In its perfect simplicity it is sublime, and in its profound wisdom it is eternal.

We gain infinitely more than we lose in abandoning belief in the reality of Divine Revelation. Whilst we retain pure and unimpaired the light of Christian Morality, we relinquish nothing but the debasing elements added to it by human superstition. We are no longer bound to believe a theology which outrages Reason and moral sense. We are freed from base anthropomorphic views of God and his government of the universe; and from Jewish mythology we rise to higher conceptions of an infinitely wise and beneficent

Being, hidden from our finite minds it is true in the impenetrable glory of Divinity, but whose Laws of wondrous comprehensiveness and perfection we ever perceive in operation around us. We are no longer disturbed by visions of fitful interference with the order of Nature, but we recognize that the Being who regulates the universe is without variableness or shadow of turning. It is singular how little there is in the supposed Revelation of alleged information, however incredible, regarding that which is beyond the limits of human thought, but that little is of a character which reason declares to be the "wildest delusion." Let no man whose belief in the reality of Divine Revelation may be destroyed by such inquiry complain that he has lost a precious possession, and that nothing is left but a blank.

{ The Revelation not being a reality, that which he has lost was but an illusion, and that which is left is the Truth. If he be content with illusions he will speedily be consoled; if he be a lover only of truth, instead of a blank he will recognize that the reality before him is full of great peace.

If we know less than we have supposed of man's destiny, we may at least rejoice that we are no longer compelled to believe that which is unworthy. The limits of thought once attained, we may well be unmoved in the assurance that, all that we do know of the regulation of the universe being so perfect and wise, all that we do not know must be equally so. Here enters the true and noble Faith, which is the child of Reason. If we have believed a system, the details of which must at one time or another have shocked the mind of every intelligent man, and believed it simply because it was supposed to be revealed, we may equally believe in

the wisdom and goodness of what is not revealed. The mere act of communication to us is nothing: Faith in the perfect ordering of all things is independent of revelation. *eed*

The argument so often employed by theologians that Divine Revelation is necessary for man, and that certain views contained in that Revelation are required by our moral consciousness, is purely imaginary and derived from the Revelation which it seeks to maintain. The only thing absolutely necessary for man is Truth; and to that, and that alone, must our moral consciousness adapt itself. Reason and experience forbid the expectation that we can acquire any knowledge otherwise than through natural channels. To complain that we do not know all that we desire to know is foolish and unreasonable. It is tantamount to complaining that the mind of man is not differently constituted. All of which the human mind is capable we may, now or hereafter, know. The limits of the Knowable are not yet finally determined, but they alone are the bounds of thought, although even there the eye of Reason may glance into the distance beyond. To attain the full altitude of the Knowable, whatever that may be, should be our earnest aim, and more than this is not for humanity. We might as well expect to be supernaturally nourished as supernaturally informed. It is as irrational to expect or demand knowledge unattainable naturally by man's intellect as it is for a child to cry for the moon. We may be certain that information which is beyond the ultimate reach of Reason is as unnecessary as it is inaccessible. Man knows, or may know, all that man requires to know. To deny this is to deny the perfection of the Laws which regulate the Universe. *Butler*

The necessity of Divine Revelation is a pure theological figment utterly opposed to Reason.

Escaping from it we exchange a Jewish anthropomorphic Divinity made after our image, for an omnipresent God under whose beneficent government we know that all that is consistent with wise and omnipotent Law is prospered and brought to perfection, and all that is opposed to Divine order is mercifully frustrated and brought to naught. The man who is truly inspired by the morality of Jesus and penetrated by that love of God and of man which is its living principle, cheerfully ratifies the fiat which thus maintains the order of Nature, and recognizes its ultimate transcendence and good, for by virtue of that noble morality we cease to be mere units seeking only individual or selfish advantage. <It is manifestly our first duty, as it should be our supremest pleasure, to apprehend as clearly as we may the laws by which the Supreme Being governs the Universe, and to bring ourselves and our actions into reverent harmony with them, conforming ourselves to their teaching, and learning wisdom from their decrees.> Thus making the Divine Will our will we shall recognize in the highest sense that God is ever with us, that his good providence controls our slightest actions; that we are not the sport of Satanic malice nor the victims of fitful caprice, but are eternally cared for and governed by an omnipresent immutable power for which nothing is too great, nothing too insignificant, and in whose Divine order a fitting place is found for the lowest as well as the highest in the palpitating life of the Universe.

## INDEX.

- ACTA PILATI**, *see* Nicodemus, Gospel of.  
**Ænon** near Salim, ii. 420.  
**Agbarus**, Prince of Edessa, Letter of Jesus to, i. 264 f.  
**Agrippa Castor**, ii. 41, 43, 45.  
**Alexandrians**, Epistle to the, ii. 240 f.  
**Alexandrinus**, Codex, i. 215, 217 f., 243, 439; ii. 26 note 3.  
**Alogi**, ii. 476.  
**Alpiel**, Angel, i. 108.  
**Ambrose**, St., miracles of, i. 170.  
**Amulets**, Jewish, i. 116.  
**Ammonius of Alexandria**, ii. 161, 162.  
**Anabaptists**, i. 476.  
**Anacletus**, Bishop of Rome, i. 218.  
**Andrew of Cæsarea**, Apocalypse considered by Papias to be inspired, i. 483 f.; ii. 335.  
**Anpiel**, Angel, i. 108.  
**Anthony**, St., Miracles of, i. 167 ff.  
**Antichrist**, ii. 268 ff.  
**Antipodes**, i. 136 f.  
**Antithesis**, Marcion's work, ii. 84, 88, 93, 94, 105 f.  
**Apocalypse of John**, i. 296, 299; ii. 167, 170, 241, 273, 305 f., 315, 335 f. Writer of, could not be author of Gospel, 389 ff.; external evidence that Apostle John wrote, 392 ff.; Dionysius of Alex. the first who doubted it, 394; his reasons purely dogmatic, 394 f.; date of, 395; writer calls himself John, 396; was he the Apostle? 396 f.; Ewald's argument that he was not, 397 ff.; glorification of the Twelve, 398 f.; an allegory, 398 ff.; justified by words of Jesus, 399 f.; no modesty for historian to withhold his name, 400 f.; compared with author of Gospel, 401 f.; no internal evidence opposes ascription to Apostle, 402; character of son of Zebedee, 403 f.; agrees with indications in Apocalypse, 406 ff.; Judaistic Christianity and opposition to Paul, 407 ff.; external and internal evidence agrees in ascribing it to Apostle, 408 f.  
**Apocryphal works**, quoted as Holy Scripture, i. 103, 238 f., 240, 255, 256, 257, 273, 458; ii. 167 ff., 198 f. read in churches, i. 295 f.; ii. 167 f., 171.  
**Apollinaris**, Claudius, date of, ii. 185 f.; his works, 186; Fragment on Paschal Controversy ascribed to him, 186 f.; reasons for considering this spurious, 187 ff.  
**Apollonius of Ephesus**, ii. 393.  
**Apollos**, ii. 38, 282 note 1.  
**Apostles**, Gospel according to the, i. 293 f., 427.  
**Aquila's version of O. T.**, ii. 212, 305.  
**Aquinas**, St. Thomas, disease and tempests direct work of Devil, i. 131.  
**Aristion**, i. 445, 446.  
**Arneth**, ii. 84.  
**Arnold, Dr.**, Miracles objects of faith, i. 18. We must judge a revelation by its substance, not by its evidence, 18; miracles common to God and to the Devil, 18.  
**Asa**, Demon, i. 118.  
**Asael**, Demon, i. 118.  
**Asaph**, ii. 10 f.  
**Ashbeël**, a fallen angel, i. 103.  
**Asmodeus**, Demon, i. 102, 103, 112 note 1, 114 f., 118.  
**Athanasius**, St., accused of sorcery, i. 147; Miracles of St. Anthony, 167 ff.; Ep. of Ignatius, 262; mentions Clementines, ii. 41.  
**Athenagoras**, angelic agency in natural phenomena, i. 122 f.; on demons, 123; account of him, ii. 191; works and date, 191 f.; alleged quotations from our Gospels, 192 ff.; quotation of apocryphal work, 193 f.; on inspiration O. T., 199 f.; alleged reference to Fourth Gospel, 379 f.; his Logos doctrine, 379 f.; uncanonical quotation in mouth of Logos, 380.  
**Atterbury**, Bishop; necessity of miraculous evidence, i. 5; the truths requiring such attestation beyond Reason, 22.  
**Augustine**, St., on demons, i. 135; angels and demons assume bodies, 135; Incubi and Succubi, 135, and notes 4, 5; Dusii, 135; Antipodes, 136; on

- miracles, 170 ff.; miracles related by, 170 ff.; his arguments regarding, and guarantee of, miracles reported, 180 ff.; on Luke iii. 22, 323; on Mark, 456 note 1; on Matthew, 472. Axionicus, ii. 70, 222, 223.
- Azael, a fallen angel, i. 103 note 4, 104.
- BARCABBAS**, ii. 45.
- Barcoph, ii. 45.
- Bardesanes, ii. 70, 222, 223.
- Barnabas, Epistle of; clean and unclean beasts, i. 133; superstition regarding the hare, 138; the hyena, 138; author of, 232 f.; early references to, 233; date of, 234 ff.; found in Cod. Sinaiticus, 235 f.; supposed quotation of Matt. xxii. 14; as H. S., 236 ff.; Orelli's explanation, 240; quotations compared with Synoptic Gospels and book of Ezra, 249 ff.; evidence for Fourth Gospel—type of brazen serpent, ii. 251 ff.; on the two ways, 318.
- Barnabas, Gospel according to, i. 233, 293.
- Baronius, ii. 201 note 3, 211.
- Bartholomew, Apostle, i. 471.
- Basilides, date and writings, ii. 41 ff.; made use of Apocryphal Gospel, 42 ff.; claimed to have received his knowledge from Glaucias, "interpreter of Peter," 44; quoted apocryphal works, 45 f.; nature of his "Gospel," 42 f.; 45, 46 f.; alleged references to our Gospels, 48 ff.; alleged reference to Fourth Gospel, 371.
- Baur, F. C., on Clementines, ii. 4; on Marcion's Gospel, 85, 86, 114.
- Bertholdt, ii. 83.
- Bethabara, ii. 419.
- Bethany, ii. 419.
- Bethesda, Pool of, ii. 420 f.
- Bezae, Codex (D), i. 355 note 3, 356 note 3, 357 note 3, 393, 439; ii. 429 note 1.
- Bleek, i. 458 note 2.
- Bollandist Collection of Lives of Saints, i. 187.
- Bolten, ii. 83.
- Bretschneider, i. 240.
- Browne, Sir Thomas, on witches, i. 148.
- Buckle, relation between ignorance and superstition, i. 149, 204 note 1.
- Bunsen, i. 439 note; ii. 243.
- Burton, Anatomy of Melancholy on Incubi and Succubi, i. 136 note 1.
- Butler, Miracles proof of Divine Revelation, i. 4; Christianity beyond reason, 23 n. 2; Christianity primarily important as declaration of natural morality, ii. 485.
- CÆSAREA PHILIPPI**, Miracles at, i. 165.
- Caiaphas, high priest, ii. 416 ff.
- Cajetan, i. 476.
- Calvin, on Eps. of Ignatius, i. 259 f.; our Gospel of Matt. shows no trace of Hebrew original, 476.
- Carpocrates, i. 421.
- Celsus, on demons, i. 128 f.; on Phomix; 138; Jesus accused of magic, 325; his work against Christians, ii. 227, 231 note 2; date of Celsus, 228 ff.; was he the Epicurean, 229 ff.; he was a Neo-Platonist, 234 ff.; mentions only Book of Enoch and Sibylline books, 236; accusation against Christians of altering Gospel, 382 f.
- Centuriators, Magdeburg, on Eps. of Ignatius, i. 259.
- Cerdo, ii. 214, 216.
- Cerinthus, i. 421; ii. 394, 406.
- Cham, ii. 45 note 3.
- Charms, Jewish, i. 116.
- Christianity, supernatural or untenable, i. 1 ff.; claim to be Divine Revelation not original, 2; character of earlier and later ages of, 198 ff.; affirmed to be believed upon miraculous evidence by the thinking and educated, 205 f.; fallacy of the argument, 206 f.; comparative position of Christianity, ii. 483; takes a higher place as perfect development of morality than as pretendent to be a supernatural religion, 483 f.; the influence of supernatural dogmas in extending Christianity temporarily, 484 ff.; its primary importance as declaration of morality, 485; supernatural elements introduced by followers and not by Jesus, 485 f.; Christian ethics not new or original, 486 f.; but teaching of Jesus carried morality to highest point attainable by man, 486 ff.; his religion is independent of supernatural dogmas, 487 f.; the effect of Christianity on civilization almost solely due to its morality, 489 f.; Christian Theology where dominant has led to debasement of morals, 489 f.; in surrendering miraculous elements the religion of Jesus does not lose any of its virtue, 491; we gain more than we lose by abandoning theory of Divine Revelation, 491 ff.
- Chrysostom, on angels, i. 128, place where Mark was written, 452 note 1; on Matthew, 472.
- Claromontanus, Codex, i. 295 note 9.
- Claudius, Apollinaris, *see* Apollinaris.
- Clement of Alexandria, quotes Xenophanes, i. 76 note 5; on angels, 122; angelic agency in Nature, 122; Greeks

- plagiarize miracles from Bible, 122; the Son gave philosophy to Greeks by inferior angels, 122; tempests, &c., produced by evil angels, 131; calls Roman Clement "Apostle," 217; Epistle of Barnabas, 232; calls author "Apostle Barnabas," 232; variation from Matt. v. 16, 353 note 3; variation from Matt. v. 37, 354 note 1; variation from Luke xii. 48, 357 note 4; variation from Matt. xi. 27, 408 f.; quotes Gospel of Hebrews, 422; on composition of Mark, 449, 451; used *Κήρυγμα Πέτρου*, 458, ii. 227; references to Basilides and followers, ii. 43; quotations from Valentinus, 56, 62 f.; variation from Matt. xix. 17, 65; Valentinus professed to have traditions from Apostles, 75; alleged quotation of Tatian, 151 f.; does not mention Tatian's Diatessaron, 155; quotes Sibylline books and Book of Hystaspes as inspired, 168; quotation from Apocryphal book regarding Paul, 168 note 5; does not mention work on Passover by Apollinaris, 189; mentions Heracleon, 214, 226; date of Stromata, 226; Logos doctrine in *Κήρυγμα Πέτρου*, 293 note 1; on a passage from Barnabas, 318; on Ps. cxviii. 19 f., 318; Apocalypse, 394.
- Clementine Homilies, quote Apocryphal work, i. 231; combination similar to a passage in Justin, 350 note 4; varied quotations agreeing with Justin, 354 note 1, 356 note 1, 376, 377 note, 410, 412, 413, 416, ii. 312; supposed to use Gospel of Hebrews, 426; variation from Luke xxiii. 34, 444 note 1; analogy of, with work of Mark, described in Papias, 463 f.; date and character, ii. 1 ff.; Ebionitic, 2 f.; their nature, 3; only internal evidence as to date and origin, 3 ff.; quotations generally put into mouth of Peter, 6; number of evangelical quotations, 6; theories as to source of the quotations, 7 f.; comparison of quotations with Synoptics, 8 ff.; quotation from Apocryphal Gospel, 15, 27, 30 ff.; Codex Ottonianus, 26; quotations with persistent variation, 27 ff.; on true and false Scriptures, 30 f.; result of examination of quotations in, 32 f.; no trace of N. T. Canon, 33 f.; animosity against Apostle Paul, 34 ff., 353 f.; Paul attacked under disguise of Simon the Magician, 34 ff., 353 f.; variation from Matt. xix. 17, 65; variation from Matt. vii. 13 f., 319; variation Deut. xxx. 15, 319 note 1; alleged references to Fourth Gospel, 336 ff.; uncanonical quotations, 347 ff., 341; alleged reference to John ix. 1—3, 341 ff.; the fall denied in, 341 f.; deny that Moses wrote the Pentateuch, 341 note 1; on evil, 342 f.; alleged reference not to Fourth Gospel, 344 f.; dogmatic teaching totally different from Fourth Gospel, 346 ff.; identity of Judaism and Christianity maintained, 346 ff.; denied in Gospel, 348 f.; Monotheism maintained as opposed to the divinity of Christ, 349 f.; does not know Logos doctrine, 349 f.; *Σοφία* appeared in Adam and others before Jesus, 350 ff.; total absence of Johannine dogmas, 351 f.; Peter, the chief of the Apostles, 352 f.; the career of Jesus limited to one year, 353 f.
- Clementine Recognitions, on the giants, i. 123 note 3; on angels and demons, 132; Jesus accused of magic, 324 f.; variation from Matt. xi. 27, 410; passage compared with Justin, 414 f.; date and character, ii. 1 ff.; Ebionitic, 2 f.; only known through a Latin version, 3.
- Clement of Rome, on Phœnix, i. 137; antipodes, 137 note 1; Epistle to Corinthians, 215 ff.; 2nd Epistle spurious, 215 f.; identity of author, 216 f.; called "Apostle," 217; Epistle to Hebrews ascribed to him, 217; Acts of Apostles ascribed to him, 217; Epistle to Corinthians read in Churches, 217; amongst Apocrypha in Stichometry of Nicephorus, 218; date, 218 ff.; Epistle mentioned by Dionysius of Corinth, 218; by Hegesippus, 218; order of succession to Bishopric of Rome, 218; mentions Paul's Epistle to Corinthians, 221, 222; supposed references to Gospels, 223 ff.; quotes Apocryphal Gospels, 231 ff.; no use of our Gospels, 231 ff.; passage in Epistle similar to one in Ep. of Polycarp, 279; Epistle read in Churches, 295; quotation 2nd Epistle to Corinthians, compared with Justin, 378; passage of Epistle of Clement, compared with Justin, 414; spurious works ascribed to, ii. 1 ff.; Epistle to Diognetus erroneously ascribed to him, 33; no evidence for Fourth Gospel, 251.
- Colarbasus, ii. 217 ff.
- Constitutions, the Apostolic, i. 138, 354 note 1, 414.
- Coponius, i. 308.
- Corinthians, 3rd Epistle to the, ii. 169.
- Corrodi, ii. 83.
- Cotelerius, ii. 25 note 4.

- Credner, on Stichometry of Nicephorus, i. 218; Justin's Memoirs, 290, 294 note 6; birth of Jesus in a cave, 312 note 4; use of lights at Baptism, 323; on a supposed quotation by Justin of Matt. xvii. 13, 396 ff.; on statements of Fathers regarding Matt. xiii. 35, ii. 11 note 3; on quotations in Clementines, 16 f.; Marcion's Gospel, 84; on Tatian's Diatessaron, 159; on emendation Sept. version, 306; on descent of same spirit from Adam to Jesus in Clementines, 351 note 1; on supernatural birth in Clementines, 351 note 6; on passage in Canon of Muratori, 384 note 1; distinction in Canon of Muratori between John the disciple and John the apostle, 385 f.; on fourth Gospel and its authorship, 412 ff.; on Sychar, John iv. 5, 421 f.**
- Crescens, Cynic, i. 283; ii. 148.**
- Cross, Inscription on, in Gospels, ii. 457.**
- Cureton, Dr., Syriac Epistles of Ignatius, i. 259 ff.; Syriac fragments ascribed to Melito of Sardis, ii. 180 ff., 183 f.**
- Cyprian, of Carthage, on demons, i. 124; demoniacal origin of disease, 124; accused of magic, 147; miracles in his day, 164.**
- Cyrenius, i. 285, 306 ff.**
- Cyril, of Jerusalem, quotes story of Phoenix, i. 138; on Gospel of Matthew, 472.**
- DALLÆUS, i. 260, 276.**
- Death, Angels of, i. 108.**
- Deity, Argument of miracles begins and ends with assumption of Personal, i. 62 ff.; assumption of Personal, 63 ff.**
- Deliel, Angel, i. 108.**
- Delitzsch, on quotations by Justin from the Memoirs, i. 374 note 2, 379 note 1; finds traces of Gospel of Hebrews in Talmud, 421; on Sychar, 416.**
- Demoniacs of Gadarenes, i. 142 f.**
- Demonology, of Book of Tobit, i. 102; of Book of Enoch, 103 ff.; of Jews at time of Jesus, 111 ff.; of Fathers, 121 ff.**
- Demons, heathen gods considered by Jews to be, i. 100 f., 124, 134, and by N. T. writers, 101; Book of Tobit on, 102; Book of Enoch on, 103 ff.; belief in, at time of Jesus, 111 ff.; number of, 111; work and habits, 111 ff.; how to see them, 112; have cock's feet, 112; possession by, 114 ff.;**
- Josephus on, 120; Justin Martyr on, 121 f., 158; Theophilus of Antioch on, 122, 159; Athenagoras on, 123; Tatian on, 123 f.; Cyprian of Carthage on, 124; Tertullian on, 124 ff.; Origen on, 1 27 ff., Celsus on, 128 f.; 131; Jerome on, 128; St. Thomas Aquinas on, 131; Clementine Recognitions on, 131; Lactantius on, 132 ff.; Eusebius on, 134 f.; St. Augustine on, 135; belief in, dispelled, 149 ff.**
- Diatessaron, *see* Tatian.**
- Diognetus, Epistle to, i. 219; authorship and date, ii. 38 ff.; integrity, 38 f.; does not quote Synoptics, 40; alleged references to Fourth Gospel, 354 ff.; recalls passages in Philo, 353 note 1; this Epistle a plagiarism of Pauline Epistles, 358 ff.; comparison with 2nd Epistle to Corinthians, 359 f.; Logos doctrine of Epistle different from that of the Gospel, 364 ff.; of no value as evidence for Fourth Gospel, 370 f.**
- Dionysius, of Alexandria, on tomb of two Johns at Ephesus, i. 447; on Gospel and Apocalypse of John ii. 389 ff., 395.**
- Dionysius, Bar-Salibi, i. 161.**
- Dionysius, of Corinth, mentions Clement of Rome, i. 218; Epistle of Clement read in Churches, 295; Epistle of Soter read in Churches, 295; account of him, ii. 163 ff.; Epistle to Soter, 163; date, 163; expressions claimed as evidence for Gospels, 164 ff.; what were the "Scriptures of the Lord?" 165 ff.; alleged references to Matthew and the Apocalypse, 170 ff.; uncanonical works read in Churches, 171 f.**
- Docete, ii. 53, 269.**
- Dodwell, ii. 191.**
- Donaldson, Dr., on Epistle to Diognetus, ii. 39 note 3; on Tatian's Diatessaron, 157; Diatessaron may have been confounded with Gospel of Hebrews, by Theodoret, 158; we could not identify it by our actual information concerning it, 161; on "Scriptures of the Lord," referred to by Dionysius of Corinth, 165; on his "rule of truth," 171; fragment ascribed to Melito, spurious, 190 note 4; on Athenagoras, 198; on expression of Hegesippus, "the door of Jesus," 319 note 3; passage by Tatian, 375 note 1.**
- Dreams, Rules in Talmud regarding, i. 116; fasts to obtain good, 116.**
- Dressel, Clementines, ii. 1, 26, 300, 340.**

Duncker, ii. 71.  
 Dusi, St. Augustine on, i. 135.

**EBED-JESU**, ii. 162.

**Ebionites**, Gospel of the, i. 296, 321, 420 f., 423; ii. 32.

**Egyptians**, Gospel according to the, i. 378, 420 f.; ii. 43.

**Fichhorn**, ii. 83.

**Eldad and Modat**, Prophecy of, i. 257.

**Elias**, Revelation of, i. 240, 435, 441.

**Eleutherus**, Bishop of Rome, i. 429, 432; ii. 200, 210, 212, 213.

**Eneratites**, ii. 148, 162.

**Enoch**, Book of, quoted by Epistle of Jude, i. 103; considered inspired by Fathers, 103; Tertullian on, 103 f.; Angelology and Demonology of, 103; quoted by Epistle of Barnabas, 237; referred to by Celsus, ii. 236.

**Ephesians**, Epistle to the, ii. 62, 72 f., 210 f.

**Ephrem**, Syrus, ii. 161 f.

**Epiphanius**, Epistle of Clement, i. 295; fire and voice at baptism of Jesus, from Gospel according to Hebrews, 322; combination of passages similar to quotation in Justin, 350 note 4; variation from Matt. v. 37, 354 note 1; variation from Matt. xi. 27, 404 f., 408 ff.; on Gospel of Hebrews, 423, 472; on James as High Priest, 431 note 2; on language of Gospel of Matthew, 472; alleged references of Basilides and his school to our Gospels, ii. 49 f.; variation from Matt. xix. 17 from Gospel of the Marcionites, 65; bitterness against Marcion, 89; charge of mutilating Luke, 80 ff.; his plan in attacking Marcion, 92; had not Marcion's Gospel before him while writing, 99 ff.; reproaches Marcion with erasing passages from Luke not in that Gospel, 101; undertakes to refute Marcion out of his own Gospel, 109 f.; on Tatian's Diatessaron, 153, 155 f.; fragment of Athenagoras, 192; Epistle to Flora of Ptolemaeus, 205 f., 381 f.; Theodotion's version, O. T., 212; on Cerdo, 214, 216; refers to Alogi, who reject fourth Gospel, 476.

**Erasmus**, i. 476.

**Ernesti**, ii. 319.

**Essenes**, ii. 467.

**Eusebius**, on demons, i. 134 f.; Greek gods demons, 134; demons introduced magic, 134; miracle of Natalius, 134; on statement of Irenaeus regarding continuance miraculous gifts, 160; miracles related by, 164 ff.; on succession to Bishopric, Clement of

Rome, 218; Epistle of Barnabas, 232; classes it amongst spurious books, 233; Epistles of Ignatius, 261 f.; letter to Agbarus, 264 f.; Justin's Apologies, 284; Apocryphal works read in Churches, 295; birth of Jesus in a cave, 312; classes Gospel of Hebrews amongst Antilegomena, 422; on Gospel of Hebrews, 423, 433 f.; on Hegesippus, 429 f., 432 ff.; on Proverbs, 433; on Papias, 447; on connection of Peter with Gospel of Mark, 450 f.; his depreciation of Papias, 469 f.; on Pantænus, 471; on composition and language of Gospel of Matthew, 472; use of Epistles of John and Peter by Papias, 483 f.; Papias uses Gospel of Hebrews, 484; on Basilides, ii. 41; on Tatian's Diatessaron, 154 f., 157; on Dionysius of Corinth, 163 ff.; on Melito of Sardis, 172 ff.; list of Melito's works, 180 f.; on Claudius Apollinaris, 185 ff.; does not mention a work on Passover by Apollinaris, 189; passage from Hegesippus, 316 f.; paraphrase of Hegesippus, 319; plan of Eusebius regarding references to books of N. T., 322 f.; reference to tradition regarding John not connected with Papias, 332; contradicts statement of Irenaeus regarding Papias, 327 note 1; his explanation of difference between fourth and Synoptic Gospels, 451 f.

**Evidence**, miraculous, necessary to establish reality of Divine Revelation, i. 1 ff.; error of supposing that nothing supported by credible testimony should be disbelieved, 94; evidence for the miraculous evidence required, 94.

**Ewald**, his views on miracles, i. 28 f. note 1; Spruchsammlung, 243, 252, 271, ii. 135, 150, 465; on Justin's Memoirs, birth in cave, i. 311; on Matt. xvii. 13, 397, 399; source of Synoptic Gospels, ii. 134 ff.; mythical character of first chapters of Luke, 203; Apollos author of Epistle to Hebrews, 282 note 1; it transferred Philo's doctrine of Logos to Christianity, 282 note 1; Apollos impregnated Paul with Logos doctrine, 282 note 1, 293 note 1; Apocalypse and Gospel cannot have been written by same author, 391; against Apostolic origin of Apocalypse, 397 f.; on modesty of Apostle John, 400, 440 ff.; the fourth Gospel written by Presbyter, of Ephesus, at dictation of Apostle John, 413, 433 f., 435 ff.; speech of Caiaphas in purest Greek, 417 note 1; on Sychar, 421;

K K

- asserts John to have been relative of the High Priest, 423, 427; theories as to the composition of fourth Gospel to explain its peculiarities, 433 ff.; on chapter xxi., 435 ff.; the Apostle's share in the composition of the Gospel, 436 f.; on xix. 35, 436 f.; assumed that John wrote first in narrow circle of friends, 433 f., 438 ff.; explanation of anonymity on ground of "incomparable modesty" examined, 440 ff.; assertion that ch. xxi. must have been written before Apostle's death discussed, 442 ff.; on discourses in fourth Gospel, 465 f.; his argument regarding John of Apocalypse applied to Epistles, 471 f.
- Exorcism of Demons, i. 102 f.; forms of, by Solomon, 115 ff.; account of, by Josephus, 119; Rabbinic powerful in, 119; Justin Martyr on, 119; potent root for, 120; Tatian on, 123 f.; Origen on, 127; Lactantius on, 133 f.; asserted by Jesus, 152 f.; continuance of power of, in Church, 153 ff.
- Experience, the argument from, i. 55 ff.; Hume's argument, 79 ff.
- Ezra, Book of, i. 231, 240 ff., 244 ff., 253 ff., 255.
- FABIANUS of Rome, miracle at his election, i. 165.
- Faniel, Angel, i. 105.
- Farrar, Dr., Hulsean lecturer; miracles inseparable from Christianity, i. 10; on Hume's Argument from Experience, 79; misconception of Mill's criticism on Hume, 79, ff.; credibility of miracles a question of evidence, mainly depending on character of Gospels, 208, n. 1.
- Fathers, cosmical theories of, i. 121 ff.; uncritical and credulous character of, 460 ff., 472; ii. 91 f., 169; testimony of, regarding original language of Gospel of Matthew, 475 ff.
- Fian, Dr., burnt for sorcery, i. 148.
- Flavia Neapolis, i. 284.
- GABRIEL, Angel, over serpents, Paradise, and the Cherubim, i. 104; over thunder, fire, and ripening of fruit, 107 f.; taught Joseph the seventy languages of earth, 108 f.; over wars, 130.
- Gadreel, a fallen angel, seduced Eve, i. 103; taught use of weapons of war, 103.
- Galatians, Epistle to the, ii. 34, 36 note 3, 37, 104, 405.
- Gelasius, Decretal of, condemns Gospel according to Barnabas, i. 233.
- Gerizim, Mount, ii. 411, 422.
- Gervasius, St., miracles by relics of, i. 169 ff.
- Gesta Pilati, *see* Nicodemus, Gospel according to.
- Gfrörer, Descent of Spirit from Adam to Jesus, in Clementines, ii. 351 note 2; on fourth Gospel, 466 f.
- Giants, the offspring of fallen angels, i. 103 f., 123, 127.
- Gieseler, ii. 83.
- Glaucias, the "interpreter of Peter," ii. 45.
- Gnosticism, ii. 4, 41, 54, 60, 61.
- Gnostics, variation of, from Matt. xi. 27, i. 403 ff., ii. 29.
- Gospels, Apocryphal, number of in early Church, i. 212 ff., 292 f.
- Gospel, the fourth, viii. 1—11, i. 421 note 4, viii. 1—11 derived from Gospel of Hebrews, 484; alleged quotation by Valentinus, ii. 56 f.; the external evidence for, 251 ff.; Clement of Rome, 251; Epistle of Barnabas, 251 ff.; Pastor of Hermas, 253 ff.; Ignatian Epistles, 260 ff.; alleged evidence in Epistle of Polycarp, 267 ff.; the Logos doctrine in Justin, 272 ff.; alleged references in Justin 293 ff.; alleged reference of Hege-sippus to x. 7, 9, 316 ff.; Papias, presumptive evidence against, 321 ff., 335 f.; alleged quotation by Presbyters in work of Papias, 325 ff., is a quotation by Irenæus himself, 329 ff., and no evidence that the Presbyters are connected with Papias, 331 ff.; alleged reference in Clementines to x. 9, 337 ff., to x. 27, 340, to ix. 1—3, 341 ff.; fundamental difference of doctrines of Clementines, 346 ff.; alleged references to, in Epistle to Diognetus, 354 ff., of no value as evidence, 370; alleged references by Basilidea, 370 f.; alleged reference by Valentinus, 56 f., 68 f., 371 f.; Dilemma of the argument from Heresiarchs, 372; alleged reference by Tatian, 374 ff.; by Athenagoras, 379 f.; by Epistle of Vienne and Lyons, 380 f.; by Ptolemæus, 381 f.; alleged testimony of Celsus, 382 f.; legendary account of its composition in Canon of Muratori, 383 ff.; authorship and character of, 387 ff.; the five Canonical works attributed to John, 388; writer of Apocalypse cannot be writer of Gospel, 389 ff.; characteristics of, 410 ff.; language of, 413 f.; theories to account for it, 413; author not a Jew, 414 ff.; Logos doctrine, 414 f.; attitude towards Jews, 415 f.; mistakes denoting foreigner, 417 ff., 426 note 1; Annas and Caiaphas,

- 417 ff.; Pool of Siloam, 419; Bethany beyond Jordan, 419 f.; Ænon, 420; Pool of Bethesda, 420 f.; Sychar, a city of Samaria, 421 f.; chiefly follows Septuagint version, 423; John, of fourth Gospel and of Synoptics, 423 ff.; John, the beloved disciple, limited to fourth Gospel, 427 ff.; theories regarding chap. xxi., 431 ff.; theory of Ewald regarding composition of Gospel, 433 ff.; on xix., 35 f., 436, 437, 439, 444 f.; extraordinary phenomena of Gospel only explained by unsubstantiated assumption, 437 ff.; peculiarities of Gospel render hypothesis that it was written by the Apostle John incredible, 439 ff.; modesty of the supposed author examined, 440 ff.; Ewald's argument that chap. xxi. was written before death of Apostle John, 433 ff., 442 f., refuted, 442 ff.; author was not an eye-witness, 444 ff.; fundamental difference between Jesus of Synoptics and of, 450 ff.; historical differences, 450 ff.; raising of Lazarus, 458 ff.; difference of teaching between Synoptics and, 462 ff.; theories to account for subjectivity in discourses, 464 ff.; impossibility of remembering long discourses so long, 465 ff.; explanations destroy historical character of, 467 ff.; discourses in, ideal, 468 ff.; argument from Epistles, 471 ff.; Paschal controversy, 472 ff.; results, 474, 481 f.
- Gospels, the Synoptic, i. 212 ff.; supposed use of, by Clement of Rome, 223 ff.; passages resembling parallels in, not necessarily from, 281 f.; actual agreement of quotations from unnamed source no proof of use of, 365 ff.; theories as to the order of, ii. 137; results of examination regarding date and origin of, 218 ff.; Justin's description of system of Jesus applicable to, 315 f.; contrast between fourth Gospel and the Synoptics, 450 ff.; superiority of teaching of, over fourth Gospel, 470; result of examination of, 481 f.
- Grabe, ii. 226 note 6, 318, 335 note.
- Gratz, ii. 84.
- Gregory, Bar-Hebraeus, Bishop of Tagrit, ii. 162.
- Gregory, of Neo-Cæsarea, Thaumaturgus, miracles of, i. 165 ff.
- Gregory, of Nyssa, account of miracles, i. 165 ff.
- Griesbach, ii. 82.
- HAWKINS, Dr., complains of those who judge Revelation by substance, and not evidence, i. 18.
- Hahn, ii. 83, 84, 87, 96, 99, 101, 110 ff.
- Hale, Sir Thomas, on witches, i. 149.
- Ham, supposed to have discovered magic, i. 132.
- Hamilton, Sir William, on Unknowable God, i. 73 note 1; class of phenomena requiring that cause called Deity confined to phenomena of mind, 75.
- Hare, superstition regarding the, i. 138.
- Hariel, Angel, i. 108.
- Hebrew, the original language of Matthew's Gospel, i. 461 ff.; Paul represents the Jesus of his vision speaking, 474, note 6.
- Hebrews, Gospel according to, mentioned earlier than our Gospels, i. 213; quotation from, in Epistles of Ignatius, 270, 272, 273, 332; Justin's Memoirs, 288; public reading, 296; birth of Jesus, 313; fire and voice at baptism, 320 ff.; Gospel of Egyptians a version of, 378; used by Hegesippus, 414, 421, 433 ff.; Justin supposed to refer to, 439; relation between it and Gospel of; Peter, 419 ff. various forms of, 420 ff.; identity of, with Memoirs of the Apostles discussed, 419 ff.; quoted by Papias, 421, 484; used by Clementines, 421 used by Cerinthus and Carpocrates, 421; Diatessaron of Tatian called, 422; quoted by Clement of Alexandria, 422; used by Origen, 422; found in circulation by Theodoret, 422; classed by Eusebius in second class, 422; also by Nicephorus, 422 f.; value attached to it by Ebionites, 423; believed to be original of Matt., 423; translated by Jerome, 423 ff.; relation between it and Matthew, 425 f.; its antiquity, 426 f.; called Gospel according to the Apostles, 427; the two opening chapters, 436; Epiphanius on, 472; supposed use by author of Clementines, ii. 7, 30 f.; supposed to be Gospel of Basilides, 43; alleged to have formed part of Tatian's Diatessaron, 152 f.; was called Diatessaron, 153, 185 f., 158 ff.
- Hebrews, Epistle to the, ascribed to Clement of Rome, i. 217, 233; Origen on, 290; in Muratorian Canon, ii. 240 f.; Logos doctrine of, 259 f.; 274 ff.; work of a Christian Philo-282; transferred Philo's doctrine of Logos to Christianity, 282 note 1; ascribed to Apollon, 282 note 1.
- Hefele, date of Epistle of Clement of Rome, i. 220.
- Hegesippus, refers to Epistle of Clement of Rome, i. 218; quotation from, 231;

- Gospel of Hebrews, 414, 433f.; passage from, 414; account of him, and date, 430 f.; considered James chief of Apostles, 430; his account of James, 430 f.; his rule of faith, 431 f.; his reference to Apocrypha discussed, 433 ff.; surviving members of family of Jesus, 436; supposed reference to Matthew, 436; supposed reference to Luke, 438 ff.; fragment in Stephen Gobarus, 441; on heresies in early Church, 442; opposition to Paul, 441 ff.; did not know any N. T. Canon, 443; Canon of Muratori ascribed to him, ii. 243; alleged reference to fourth Gospel, 316 ff.; expression "door of Jesus" used by, 316 ff.; did not know our Gospels, 320.
- Hegrin, Angel, i. 131.
- Hengstenberg, on Sychar, John iv. 5, ii. 422; the husbands of Samaritan woman typical of gods of Samaria, 422; contradicts assertion that John was related to high priest, 423 note 4.
- Heracleon, used *Κήρυγμα Πέτρου*, i. 458, ii. 227; views regarding Jesus, ii. 69 ff.; date, 208 ff.; alleged commentary on Luke, 226; inference that he wrote commentary on the fourth Gospel considered, 382.
- Hermas, Pastor of, i. 131; Hegrin, angel of beasts, 131; author, 256 f.; date, 256 f.; no quotations from Synoptics, 257; read in churches, 295, ii. 167, 171; alleged allusion to fourth Gospel, 253 ff.
- Heurtley, Dr., miracles necessary to prove Revelation, i. 5 f., 9.
- Hug, ii. 84.
- Hume, his argument from Experience, i. 79 ff., attacked by Dr. Farrar, 79; Mill's criticism on, 79 ff., 93 f.; Paley's argument against, 88 ff.
- Hyena, superstition regarding, i. 138.
- Hyginus, ii. 214.
- Hystaspes, Book of, quoted as Holy Scripture, ii. 168.
- Hilarion, St., miracles of, i. 169.
- Hilgenfeld, on quotation in Epistle of Barnabas i. 255; on Epistle of Polycarp, 277 note 4, 278; on Protevangelium of James, 303 note 5; quotation on baptism of Jesus from Gospel according to Hebrews, 321; Petrine tendency in Justin's Memoirs, 332; Justin quotes from Gospel of Hebrews or Peter, 333; on Justin's quotations from Sermon on the Mount, 359; on use of Luke by Hegesippus, 438 f.; on Clementines, ii. 4; author of Clementines used same Gospel as Justin, 7 note 5; on Epistle of Peter attached to Clem.
- Homilies, 21; on Basilides in Hippolytus, 54; on Marcion's Gospel, 86 f.; on procedure of Tertullian and Epiphanius against Marcion, 98 ff.; insufficiency of data for the reconstruction of text of Marcion's Gospel, 101 ff.; on passages in Marcion's Gospel, 114, 117 notes 3 and 5, 118, 120, 123 notes 4, 5, and 7, 129; reference to Zacharias in Epistle of Vienne and Lyons, 202 f.; on Protevangel. Jacobi, 203; date of Bardesanes, 222; admits use by Clementines of fourth Gospel, 336 note 2.
- Hippolytus, supposed quotations from Synoptics by Basilides in work of, ii. 42; his mode of quoting, 51, 52 ff.; derived views of Basilides from works of followers, 54; on Valentinus, 56 f.; alleged quotations from Valentinus, 66 f.; his system of quotation, 67 ff.; on views of Valentinians, 69 ff.; on Heracleon and Ptolemæus, 69 ff., 222; on Axionicus and Bardesanes, 70, 222; is writing of school and not of founder, 71 f.; source of system of Valentinus, 75 f.; Ptolemæus and Heracleon, 206, 207 ff., 214 f., 222; dependence on Irenæus, 209 note 3; on Colarbasus, 217 ff.
- Hitzig, date of Book of Judith, i. 222.
- IGNATIUS, Epistles of, i. 258 ff.; Syriac version, 259, 262 ff.; Medicean MSS., 265; journey to martyrdom, 267 f.; date and place of martyrdom of Ignatius, 268 f.; martyrologies spurious, 268 f.; supposed references to Matt., 269 ff.; use of Gospel according to Hebrews, 270, 272 f., 332 f.; alleged references to the fourth Gospel, ii. 260 ff.; generally follow Synoptics and not fourth Gospel narrative, 266 note 3; alleged references do not occur in Syriac Epistles, 266; all spurious or without evidential value, 267.
- Incubi, i. 135.
- Infancy, Arabic Gospel of, i. 312.
- Irenæus, on Septuagint version, O. T., i. 101; continuance of miraculous power in Church, 159 ff.; on miracles of Simon and Carpocrates, 159; dead raised in his day, 159; succession of Clement of Rome, 218; reference to passage in Ignatian Epistles, 261; on Polycarp, 274 f.; memoirs of Presbyter, 290; quotations of Justin against Marcion, 297; Davidic descent through Mary, 303 note 6; variations from Matt. xi. 27, 404 f.; on Gospels of Marcosians, 406 ff.; on Gospel of Ebionites, 423; on Pro-

- verbs, 433; on Papias, 446 f., 450, ii. 327; on connection of Peter with Gospel of Mark, 454, 456; date and place where Mark was written, 456, 457 note 1; his quotation of Papias, 475; on original language of Gospel of Matthew, 475; on Valentinus, ii. 57 ff.; does not quote Valentinus, but later followers, 60 ff.; quotation varying from Matt. xix. 17 from Gospel of Marcians, 65; on Valentinians, 76 f., their Gospel, 76 ff., 225 f.; charge against Marcion, 90 f.; childish reasoning, 91; on Marcion's Gospel, 144; does not mention Tatian's Diatessaron, 155; Syriac fragment ascribed to him and Melito of Sardis, 184; does not mention work on Passover by Apollinaris, 189; on Ptolemaeus and Heracleon, 206, 207 f., 213 f., 215; date of his work adv. Har., 209 ff.; bearer of Epistle of Vienne and Lyons, 210 f.; mistake regarding his passage on Tetrads of Valentinian Gnosis, 217 f.; Ptolemaeus and Heracleon his contemporaries, 219 ff.; regarding Polycarp, 220; on Gospels of Valentinians, 225 f.; quotation from fourth Gospel, 325, alleged to be made by Presbyters, and taken from work of Papias, 325 ff., actually by Irenæus himself, 326 ff., and not a reference to work of Papias, 329 ff.; refers to many Presbyters, 331 ff.; on Apocalypse, 393; tradition regarding Polycarp and Apostle John, 406; Polycarp and Paschal controversy, 473; reasons why Gospels cannot be more or less than four, 474 ff.; mentions heretics who reject fourth Gospel, 476.
- Irons, Dr.**, on miracles and evidence of Revelation, i. xvii.; on Old Testament miracles, 95 note 1.
- Isaiah**, Ascension of, i., 332 note 5, 435, 441.
- Isaiah**, Prophet, i. 232, 311, 441; ii. 10 f.
- Isidorus**, ii. 45 note 3, 48, 53
- Itala Version**, i. 323.
- JAMES**, Apostle, i. 430 ff., 431 note 2, 473; ii. 1 f., 316 f.
- James**, Epistle of, i. 354 note 1, 376; ii. 32, 241.
- James**, Gospel according to, i. 292, 302 f., 303 note 5, 304 ff., 309 f., 310 f., 312 f.; ii. 202 ff.
- Jews**, credulous fickleness of, i. 99 f.; Monotheism of the, 100; superstitions of the, 101 ff.
- Jechiel**, Angel, i. 108.
- Jehuel**, Angel, i. 107 f.
- Jequ**, a fallen angel, seduced the holy angels, i. 103.
- Jerome**, on Demons, i. 128; Angel Hegrin, 131; miracles of St. Hilarion, 169; Epistle of Barnabas, 233; Rev. of Elias quoted by 1 Cor. ii. 9, 240, 441; Gospel according to Hebrews, quoted by Epistle of Ignatius, 270, 273, 333; Epistle of Clement read in Churches, 295; Gospel of Hebrews on voice, &c., at Baptism of Jesus, 321 f.; considered Gospel of Hebrews original of Matt., 424 f., 473; translated it, 423 ff.; language of Gospel of Hebrews, 434; on connection of Peter with Gospel of Mark, 451; on original language of Gospel of Matthew, 471; who translated Hebrew original, 473; on Matt. xiii. 35, ii. 11; does not mention Tatian's Diatessaron, 155; does not mention work on Passover, by Claudius Apollinaris, 189; date of Irenæus, 213 note 2; variation from Sept. of Zach. xiii. 10 as quoted Apoc. i. 7, and by Justin, 305.
- John**, Apostle, i. 445, 473, ii. 190; kept 14 Nisan, ii. 271; writings ascribed to, 388; if he wrote Apocalypse could not have written Gospel, 388 ff.; external evidence that he wrote Apocalypse, 392 ff.; internal, 395 ff.; character author of Apocalypse, 402 f.; character, son of Zebedee, 403 ff.; called the Virgin, 406 note 3; author of Apocalypse, 408 f.; residence in Ephesus, 409 f.; character son of Zebedee compared with author of Gospel, 410 ff.; John of fourth Gospel different from John of Synoptics, 423 ff.
- John**, Epistle of, first, said to have been referred to by Papias, i. 483, ii. 470 ff.; in Canon of Muratori, 241 f.; alleged quotation of first, in Epistle of Polycarp, 267 ff.; Crederer assigns second and third, to Presbyter John, 471 note 1; earliest references to, by Irenæus and Clement of Alex., 471; writer of last two, calls himself Presbyter, 471.
- John**, Presbyter, i. 445, 446 ff.; ii. 397.
- Josephus**, on exorcism, i. 108 ff.; on demons, 110; portents of fall of Jerusalem, 110 f.; regarding Caiaphas, high priest, ii. 417 f.; Annas, high priest, 418; Pool of Bethesda and its miraculous properties unknown to, 421.
- Judas** Iscariot, account of his death by Papias, i. 482.
- Judas**, Gospel according to, i. 292.
- Jude**, Epistle of, quotes Book of Enoch i. 103; disputed, ii. 168, 241.

- Judith, Book of, date, i. 222; mentioned by Clement of Rome, 222.
- Justin the Syrophenician, ii. 23 ff.
- Justin Martyr, on exorcism, i. 119, 158; cosmical theories of, 121 f.; on demons, 121; on demoniacs, 122, 158; continuance of miracles, 158 f.; quotation apocryphal works, 231; Ascension day, 256; date and history of, 283 f.; his two Apologies, 284 f.; Dial. with Trypho, 286; number of Scriptural quotations, 286; Memoirs of Apostles, 286 ff., theories with regard to them, 287 ff.; Memoirs how quoted, 291 f., read in churches, 295, ii. 171; Memoirs not inspired, i. 296 f.; quotation from lost work against Marcion, 297; quotations with name and without from O. T., 298; contents of Memoirs, 300 ff.; genealogy of Jesus, 300 ff.; events preceding birth of Jesus, 303 ff.; removal to Bethlehem, 306 ff.; dwelling place of Joseph and Mary, 308 ff.; birth of Jesus, 310 ff.; Magi from Arabia, 313 ff.; Jesus works as a carpenter, 314 ff.; baptism by John, 316 ff.; miracles of Jesus attributed to Magic, 324 f.; trial, &c., Jesus, 325 f.; agony in the Garden, 328 ff.; Jesus forsaken by all, 330 ff.; Crucifixion, 333 ff.; mission of the Jews after resurrection, 340 f.; difference of the Memoirs from the Gospels, 340 ff.; style of teaching of Jesus, 346; quotations from Memoirs of Sermon on the Mount compared with Synoptics, 346 ff.; difference of professed quotations, 369 ff.; result of examination of quotations from Sermon on the Mount, 383 f.; express quotations from Memoirs compared with Synoptics, 389 ff.; quotations of sayings of Jesus foreign to our Gospels, 412 ff.; apparent ascription of Memoirs to Peter, 417 ff.; identity of the Memoirs of the Apostles with Gospel of the Hebrews or of Peter discussed, 419 ff.; no evidence he used our Gospels, 427 f.; Epistle to Diognetus, once ascribed to him erroneously, ii. 38; variation from Matt. xix. 17, 65; does not accuse Marcion of mutilating Gospel, 143; complains of adulteration of O. T. Scriptures, 166; used Gospel of Hebrews, 167; type of brazen serpent, 253 note 3; as witness for fourth Gospel, 272 ff.; Apocalypse only book in N. T. mentioned by him, 273, 292; the Logos doctrine of Justin, 273 ff.; same representation in Epistles and Philo, 273 ff.; knew Logos doctrine of Plato 277; held Plato and Socrates to be Christians, 277 f.; his doctrine less developed than that of fourth Gospel, 278 f.; real source of his terminology, 280 ff.; his terminology different from that of fourth Gospel, 280 ff., 286 ff., 296 ff.; Psalm xxii. 20, 280; origin of Logos doctrine, 281 f.; Justin follows Philo, and traces Logos doctrine to O. T., 284 ff., 287 ff.; Logos as "Wisdom," 285; quotes Proverbs viii. 22 ff., 282 f., 285 ff.; evidence of his indebtedness to Philo, 285 note 1, 287 ff., 294 note 1; his representations of Logos also found in Epistle to Hebrews, 288 ff., and early N. T. Epistles, 289 ff.; Justin and Philo place Logos in secondary position, 291 ff.; alleged references to fourth Gospel, 298 ff.; peculiarities of account of baptism, 302 f.; variation from Zechariah xii. 10 with fourth Gospel, 304 f., likewise found in Apocalypse, 305; Justin derived his reading from Apocalypse or its source, 305 f.; alleged quotation from John iii. 3-5, 306 ff., derived from different source, 307 ff.; Justin displays no knowledge of fourth Gospel, 313 ff.; his description of teaching of Jesus does not apply to fourth Gospel, 315 f., 468.
- KAODEJA, a fallen angel, taught magic and exorcism, i. 104.
- Keim, ii. 233 note 2.
- Kirchhofer, ii. 233 note 2.
- Köstlin, ii. 85 f.
- LACTANTIUS, on angels and demons, i. 132 ff.; fall of angels, 133; exorcism, 133 f., 164; antipodes, 136; Jesus accused of magic, 325; quotes Sibylline books and Hyastaspes as inspired, ii. 168.
- Laodiceans, Epistle to the, ii. 81, 169, 240.
- Lardner, on passage in Eusebius regarding Gospel of Hebrews, i. 434; on "Scriptures of the Lord" referred to by Dionysius of Corinth, ii. 165; on Melito of Sardis, 173 note 2, 178; alleged quotation by Athenagoras from Luke, 197 note 1; date of Celsus, 233 note 2, 236.
- Law, miracles ascribed to unknown, i. 34 f., to unknown connection with known, 35 f.; higher, 35 f.; will of man subject to, 38 ff.; sense in which term used, 38 note i.; progressive succession of, 39 f.; invariability of 41 ff.
- Lazarus, raising of, ii. 459 ff.

Lecky, History of Rationalism, i. 149 n. 2.  
 Legion, an unclean company, i. 114 n. 5.  
 Liddon, Canon, on evidential purpose of miracles and their nature, i. 33 note 2.  
 Lightfoot, on Jewish superstition, i. 99 f.; idea of regeneration attached by Jews to conversion, ii. 310 f.  
 Lilith, she-devil, i. 112.  
 Löffler, ii. 83.  
 Logos, doctrine of, in Septuagint version, ii. 255, 281 f., 284 f.; in Proverbs, 255, 282 f., 285 f.; in Psalms, 280, 287 f., 297; in O. T. Apocrypha, 255, 281 ff., 285 f.; in Apocalypse, 273, 278; in Epistle to Hebrews, 258 ff., 274, 289 f., 293, 366 ff.; in Philo, 255, 257 note 1, 259, 274 f., 276 f., 279, 290 ff., 293 f., 295 f., 297; in *Κήρυγμα Πέτρου* 298 note 1; in Pauline Epistles, 259 f., 274 ff., 290, 292, 295, 311 ff.; in Plato, 277 f.; in Justin Martyr, 273 ff.; transferred from Philo to Christianity by the author of Epistle to Hebrews, 282 note 1, 298 note 1; in Clementines, 350 ff.; in Epistle to Diognetus, 356 note 1, 364 ff.; in Tatian's work, 374 ff.; in work of Athenagoras, 379 f.  
 Lucian, ii. 233, 234, 236.  
 Lücke, on Pastor of Hermas, ii. 253 note 4; Ignatian Epistles, 260 note 4; Apocalypse and fourth Gospel cannot have been written by same author, 390 f.; considers interpretation of Siloam, John ix. 7, a gloss, 419.  
 Luke, Gospel according to, private document written for Theophilus, i. 152 note 1, ii. 134; many Gospels previously written, i. 213; genealogy of Jesus, 301 f.; events preceding birth, 304; removal to Bethlehem, 306 ff.; dwelling-place, 308 ff.; birth, 310 ff.; Magi, 313 f.; ch. iii. 22, 323; agony in the Garden, 328 ff.; the Crucifixion, 336 ff.; passages compared with Justin, 343 ff.; "Sermon on the Mount" compared with Justin's quotations, 346 ff.; danger of inferences from similarity of quotations, 360 ff., 397 ff., ii. 344; alleged quotations by Justin from, i. 387 ff.; admitted express quotations by Justin compared with, 389 ff.; Gnostic and other variations from Luke, x. 22, 403 ff.; alleged references by Hegesippus to, 438 ff.; on xxiii. 34, 439 f.; alleged reference by Papias to it unfounded, 483; alleged quotations in Clementines, ii. 16, 18 f.; alleged references of Basilides to, 42 ff.; alleged references by Va-

lentinus, 57 ff.; relation of Marcion's Gospel to, 82 ff.; dependent on Mark and Matthew, 86; comparison of Marcion's Gospel with, 110 ff.; comparison of opening chapters with Matthew and Marcion, 130 ff.; alleged reference by Tatian to, 150; alleged quotations by Athenagoras, 197; reference to Zacharias in Epistle of Vienne and Lyons, 201 ff.; alleged commentary on, and references by Heracleon, 226; Canon of Muratori on the, 239 f. 242; result of examination of evidence regarding, 249, ch. iii. 15 f., 300 note 1, 301; Irenaeus on, 475; result of examination of evidence for, 481 f.

MACARIUS, St., miracles of, i. 169.  
 Magia Jesu Christi, i. 325.  
 Magic, fallen angels, taught, i. 104, 105; Jews addicted to, 115 ff.; discovered by Ham, 132; invented and sustained by demons, 133, 134; universality of belief in, 145 ff.  
 Magistris, Simon de, ii. 243.  
 Mahomet claims Divine inspiration, i. 2; his religion pronounced irrational as without miraculous evidence, 3.  
 Makturiel, Angel, i. 108.  
 Manicheans, i. 476.  
 Mansel, Dean:—Miracles necessary to Christianity, i. 6, 8; but cannot compel belief, 17 f.; demands scientific accuracy of evidence, 37; argument for miracles from efficient cause as represented by will of man, 37 f.; assumption of Personal Deity, 68 ff.  
 Marcion, i. 229, 277, 285, 397, 410, ii. 4, 38, 53, 74; account of him, 79 ff.; date, 80; his collection of Christian writings, 80 ff.; his Gospel, 81 ff.; theories regarding it, 82 ff., 84 note 12; insecure data, 87 f.; sources of information, 88 ff.; dependent on statements of dogmatic enemies, 89; object of Fathers in refuting Marcion entirely dogmatic, 91 f.; his alleged aim in mutilating Luke, 92; value of materials supplied by Fathers estimated, 92 ff.; Tertullian and Epiphanius on, 93 ff.; imperfect data of Fathers, 94 ff.; had they his Gospel or only the Antithesis before them, 99 ff.; accused of erasing passages not in Luke at all, 100 f.; data for reconstruction of text insufficient, 101 ff.; his system and character, 102 ff.; his work, "Antithesis," 105 f.; hypothesis that his Gospel was a mutilated Luke rests upon Tertullian's accusation, 108; the

- hypothesis tested, 109 ff.; result, 124 ff., 249; the "Lord's Prayer," 126; opening chapters of Luke, 127 ff.; his Gospel, probably an earlier Gospel than our Luke, 139 ff.; *Evangelium Ponticum*, 140; had no author's name, 140 ff.; argument from state of his Epistles of Paul, 141 ff.; Justin does not accuse him of mutilating Gospel, 148; did he know other Gospels? 144 ff.; statement of Latin MS. quoted by Tischendorf, 324 f.; on his knowledge of fourth Gospel, 372 f.
- Marcosians**, Gospel of the, i. 406 ff.; ii. 65.
- Mark**, Gospel according to, i. 290; Jesus, the carpenter, 314 f.; quotations of Justin from Sermon on the Mount compared with, 347 note 4; danger of inferences from similarity of quotations, 362 ff., 397 ff.; ii. 17 f.; supposed quotations by Justin from, i. 384 ff., 417; connection of Mark with Apostle Peter, 417 ff., 448 ff.; Papias on, 444, 446, 448 ff.; are there traces of Petrine influence in? 452 ff.; when and where written, 451, 452 note 1; growth of tradition regarding, 451 f.; was our Gospel the work of Mark described by Papias? 455 ff.; supposed quotations in Clementines, ii. 23 ff., 26 f.; alleged quotations by Athenagoras, 197 f.; result of examination of evidence regarding date and origin, 249 f.; Irenæus on, 475 f.; result of examination of evidence for, 481.
- Martin**, St., miracles of, i. 169.
- Martyrdom**, value of, as evidence, i. 195 f.
- Mary**, Gospel of Nativity of, i. 303, 309 f., 410 notes 2 and 3.
- Massuet**, ii. 212.
- Matthew**, Gospel according to: supposed references to it by Clement of Rome, i. 223 ff.; supposed quotation as H. S. by Epistle of Barnabas, 236 ff., xx. 16, 243; supposed references to, in Epistle of Barnabas, 250 ff.; supposed references to, in Epistle of Polycarp, 278 ff.; genealogy of Jesus, 301 f.; events preceding birth, 304 ff.; dwelling-place, 308 ff.; quotes apocryphal work, 309 note 1; Magi, 313 ff.; baptism by John, 316 ff., ch. iii. 15, 323; agony in the Garden, 29 f.; Crucifixion, 336 ff.; quotations affirmed to be made by Justin, 341 ff.; quotations of Justin from Sermon on the Mount compared, 346 ff.; danger of inferences from similarity of quotations, 360 ff., 397 ff.; ii. 17 f., 344 f.; admitted express quotations by Justin compared with, i. 389 ff.; Gnostic and other variations from xi. 27, 403 ff., ii. 29; Gospel of Hebrews supposed to be original of, i. 423 f.; relation to Gospel of Hebrews, 425 f.; supposed reference of Hegesippus to, 436 ff.; Papias on, 444 f., 461 ff., interpretation of and application of the account to, 462 ff.; original language of our, 468 ff.; critical dilemma involved from account of Papias, 468 f.; testimony of the Fathers that work of Matthew was written in Hebrew, 470 ff.; who translated it? 473; no evidence except of a Hebrew work, 475 ff.; Matthew cannot be author of the Greek, 475 f.; apostolical authority of Greek, gone, 476; canonical, an original Greek work, 476 f.; result of evidence of Papias, 478 ff.; facts confirming conclusion that work of Matthew known to Papias was not our, 481 ff.; different account of death of Judas by Papias, 482, and in Acts, 482 note 1; supposed quotations in Clementines, ii. 9 ff.; regarding xii. 35, 10 ff.; alleged references in Basilides, 42 ff., 48 ff.; alleged references by Valentinus, 57 ff., 62 ff.; comparison with opening chapters Luke, 130 ff.; alleged reference by Tatian to, 149 ff.; alleged reference to, by Dionysius of Corinth, 170; alleged quotations by Athenagoras, 192 ff.; alleged quotations by Ptolemæus, 224 f.; result of examination of date and origin, 249 f.; ch. iii. 4, p. 300; iii. 11, 300 note 1; Irenæus on, 475; result of examination of evidence for, 481 f.
- Matthew**, Gospel of pseudo-, i. 303.
- Matthias**, Gospel according to, i. 293.
- Maury**, on connection between ignorance and miracles, i. 204.
- Mechitavist Library**, ii. 184.
- Melito of Sardis**, date, ii. 172; fragment in Eusebius, 172 ff.; alleged reference to New Testament, 173 ff.; list of books of O. T. and difficulty of obtaining it, 174 ff.; alleged evidence for a N. T. Canon, 174 ff.; could not even state Canonical Books of O. T. without research, 178 ff.; Syriac fragments ascribed to him, 179 ff.; list of his works, 180 f.; fragment on Faith, 181 ff.; alleged quotations from New Testament, 183 f.; fragment is spurious, 183 ff., also ascribed to Irenæus, 184; other works ascribed to Melito, 184 f.; on Apocalypse, 392 f.
- Memoirs of the Apostles**, Justin's, i. 286 ff.
- Memra**, ii. 415.

- Messannahel, Angel, i. 108.
- Methodius, ii. 192.
- Michael, Archangel, presents prayers of saints to God, i. 102 note 7, 130; angel of Israel, 104, 109 f.; over fire, 107; over water, 108; high priest of heaven, 110.
- Michaelis, If our Gospel of Matthew a translation, its authority gone, i. 476; on Celsus, ii. 233.
- Mill, John Stuart: criticism on Hume's argument regarding miracles, i. 79 ff., 93 f.
- Milman, Dean:—On spirit of early Christian times, i. 98 f.; on demoniacal possession, 142 f.; explanation of apparent belief of Jesus in demoniacal possession, 143 f.; character of early ages of Christianity, 198 f.; Ignatian Epistles, 273 f.; on Marcion, ii. 107.
- Miracle of multiplication of loaves and fishes, i. 32 f.; of country of Gadarenes, 142; of Thundering Legion, 163, ii. 185 f.; raising of Lazarus, ii. 459 ff.
- Minucius Felix, exorcism in his day, i. 164.
- Miracles, as evidence, i. 1 ff.; as objects of faith, 7 ff.; Satanic as well as Divine, 11 ff., 15 ff., 153 ff., ii. 478 f.; credited because of Gospel, i. 18; true and false, 11 f.; in relation to the order of nature 27 ff.; German critics generally reject, 28 ff.; analysis of, 29 ff.; referred to unknown law, 34 f.; argument of, begins and ends with an assumption, 102 ff.; the age of, 95 ff.; character of original witnesses of, 96 ff.; permanent stream of, 140 f.; miracles arising out of demoniacal possession shown to be imaginary, 149 ff.; Christian and Pagan 153 ff.; Satanic, recognised by Old and New Testament, 152 ff.; when did they cease? 153 ff.; Gospel, not original, 154 ff.; claim of special distinction of Gospel, 155 ff.; ecclesiastical, 158 ff.; miracles of Simon and Carpocrates attributed to magic, 159; reported by Papias, 158; by Justin, 153; reported by Irenæus, 159 ff.; reported by Tertullian, 161 ff.; reported by Cyprian, 164; reported by Origen, 164; reported by Eusebius, 164; of Gregory Thaumaturgus, 165 ff.; of St. Anthony, 167 ff.; of Hilarion, 169; of St. Macarius, 169; of St. Martin, 169; by relics of Protavius and Gervasius, 169 ff.; of St. Ambrose, 170; reported by St. Augustine, 170 ff.; facts not verified, 179; argument of St. Augustine, and affirmation regarding, 180 ff.; comparative evidence of, recorded by St. Augustine and Gospels, 185 ff.; miracles of saints, 187; classification of, 188 ff.; Christian miracles not original, 188 ff., ii. 478 f.; absence of distinctive character, i. 191 ff.; comparison of evidence for Gospel and ecclesiastical, 193 ff.; of Gospel sink in the stream, 196 ff.; none recorded by actual workers, 201; confined to periods of ignorance, 202 f., ii. 479 f.; ceased on diffusion of knowledge, i. 203 f., ii. 479 f.; at present day argument refers to narrative and not to actual, i. 207 f.; the literary evidence for, 226 ff.; miracles are incredible antecedently, and are unsupported by evidence, ii. 477 ff.; they are mere human delusion, 480.
- Modat, Prophecies of Eldad and, i. 257.
- Mosheim, ii. 235.
- Mozley, Canon:—necessity of miraculous evidence, i. 2 f., 6 f.; miracles inseparable from Christianity, 9; cannot compel belief, 17; yet internal evidence insufficient, 21 ff.; miraculous evidence checked by conditions, 24; miracles subject to moral approval of doctrine attested, 24; this only limitation not disproof of miracles as evidence, 24; referribleness of miracles to unknown law, or unknown connection with known law, 31 f., with "higher law," 35 f.; is suspension of physical laws by a spiritual being inconceivable? 38 ff.; progressive successions of law, 39 f.; antecedent incredibility, 43 ff.; divine design of Revelation, 46 ff.; belief in "Order of Nature" irrational, 55 ff.; argument of, begins and ends with assumption of Personal Deity, 62 ff.; constant stream of miraculous pretension, 154 ff.; Jewish supernaturalism contemporary with Gospel miracles, 154 f.; claim of speciality in Christian miracles, 155 ff.; either clearly distinguished or not of evidential value, 155 ff.; on statement of Irenæus regarding continuance of miraculous power in Church, 159 ff.; on miracles reported by St. Augustine, 175 f.; his objections unfounded, 176 ff.; absence of verification of miracles, 179; character of later ages of Christianity, 199; is Christianity believed upon miraculous evidence by the educated? 205 f.
- Muratori, Canon of: on Pastor of Hermas, i. 256; Apoc. of Peter, 296 note; ii. 168; account of, 237 ff.; age of MS., 237; conflicting views regarding it,

- 237 f.; original language, 238 f.; on Luke, 239 f., 242; contents, 240 ff.; on Pastor of Hermas, 242 ff.; theories regarding unknown author of, 243 ff.; date of the fragment, 244 ff.; its testimony, 247 f.; account of fourth Gospel, 383 ff.; apology for fourth Gospel, 385 f.; author falsifies, 1 Epistle of John, 385; does he refer to Apostle John? 385 f.
- NAASENI**, ii. 53.
- Narcissus**, miracles of, i. 164 f.
- Natalius** scourged by angels, i. 134 f.
- Nature**, phenomena of, controlled and produced by angels, i. 104 ff., 107 ff., 121 ff., 125, 127 ff., 130 ff.
- Nazarene**, ii. 132 note 3.
- Nazarenes**, Gospel of the, i. 419, 423; ii. 31.
- Neander**, on Gospel of Basilides, ii. 43; on Marcion, 84; on Clementines, 341 f., 354.
- Newman, Dr.**—miracles necessary to prove Revelation, i. 6; on ambiguous miracles, 13; miracles wrought by spirits opposed to God, 13 f.; doubtful origin destroys cogency of argument for miracles, 14, 64; supports ecclesiastical at the expense of Gospel miracles, 18 note 3; a miracle at most token of a superhuman being, 19 note 1; on mutual dependence of doctrine and miracle, 20; on the "Rationalistic" and "Catholic" tempers, 20 note 2; he really makes reason the criterion of miracles, 21; no miracle great in comparison with Divine Incarnation, 27 note 1; miracles reverse laws of nature, 31, 32 note 3; religious excitement and imagination a cause of miracles, 97 f.; no definite age of miracles, 154; absence of distinctive character in Christian miracles, 191.
- Nicephorus**, stichometry of: i. 218, 257, 296 note, 422 f.
- Nicodemus**, Gospel of: i. 293, 324, 325 ff., 334 note 3, 338 f.
- Nuriel**, Angel, i. 108.
- Nyssa**, see Gregory.
- ECOLAMPADIUS**, i. 476.
- Ecumenius**, i. 482.
- Olshausen**, ii. 84, 85, 121 note 1.
- Ophites**, ii. 53, 214, 216, 248 note 2.
- Orelli**, i. 240 ff.
- Origen**, on Angel Michael, i. 102 note, 7 130; on demons, 126 ff.; exorcism, 127; analogy between demons and animals recognized by Moses, 127; angels employed in natural phenomena, 128, 130 f.; eating with demons, 127 f.; sun, moon, and stars endowed with souls, 128 ff.; demons produce famines and other evils, 131; on Phoenix, 138; exorcism in his day, 164; ascribes Epistle to Hebrews to Clemens Rom., 217; Epistle of Barnabas, 232; revelation of Elias quoted by, 1 Cor. ii. 9, 240, 441; reference to Epistle of Barnabas, 250 ff.; on Pastor of Hermas, 256; reference to passage in Epistles of Ignatius, 261; Doctrine of Peter, 272 f., 333, 420; Epistle to Hebrews, 290; birth of Jesus in a cave, 312; omission from Mark that Jesus was called a carpenter, 315; combination of passages similar to quotation in Justin, 350 note 4; variation of quotation similar to Justin's, 356 note 2, 379; variation from Matt. xi. 27, 404; agreement of Gospel of Peter with that of Hebrews, 419; quotation in 1 Cor. ii. 9, 441; on Peter's connection with Gospel of Mark, 450; denounced *Κήρυγμα Πέτρου*, 458; on composition and language of Gospel of Matthew, 471; mentions "Travels of Peter," ii. 4; on Gospel of Basilides, 42 note 4; on Matt. xix. 17, 65; on Valentinus, 75; Dial. de recte in deum fide, not his, 88; on Heracleon, 214, 223, 226; supposed commentary on fourth Gospel by Heracleon, 226 f.; Origen against Celsus, 227 ff.; on date and identity of Celsus, 228 ff.; his uncertainty concerning Celsus, 229 ff.; expectation of further treatise by Celsus, 231 ff.; Celsus the Epicurean, 233; quotations from Heracleon, 382; reply to Celsus on alteration of the Gospel, 383; on Apocalypse, 394.
- Overbeck**, ii. 39 note 3.
- PALEY**—miracles proof of Revelation, i. 4 f.; argument against Hume, 88 f.; refuted, 89 ff.
- Pamphilus**, martyr, of Caesarea, i. 424.
- Pantenus**, i. 471; ii. 191.
- Papias** of Hierapolis, on raising of a dead man, i. 158; regarding Mark, 290, 418 f.; quotes Gospel according to Hebrews, 422; date and history, 444 f.; prefers tradition to written works, 445 f., ii. 321 f.; on Mark's Gospel, i. 444, 446, 448 ff.; statement in preface of his work, 445; identity of Presbyter John, 446 ff.; Mark as the interpreter of Peter, 448 ff.; the

- description of Presbyter John does not apply to our Mark, 455 ff.; how Mark's work disappeared, 459 f.; account of work ascribed to Matthew, 461 ff.; was it derived from Presbyter John? 461 f.; interpretation and application of the account to our Gospel according to Matthew, 462 ff.; were *Λόγια* merely discourses, or, did they include historical narrative? 463 ff.; not applicable to our Gospel, 465 ff.; explanation of his remark regarding interpretation of *Logia*, 473 ff.; did not know a Greek Matthew, 475 f.; fragment of his work preserved, 482 f.; account of death of Judas Iscariot, 482; said to have used Epistles of John and Peter, 483, ii. 323, 471; knew no canonical Gospels, i. 484 f.; does not call Matthew who wrote *Logia* an Apostle, 485 note 1; Canon of Muratori ascribed to him, ii. 243; does not know fourth Gospel, 320 ff.; knew no authoritative Gospels, 322; offers presumptive evidence against fourth Gospel, 322 ff.; no proof he knew 1 Epistle of John or assigned it to Apostle, 323 f.; statements in Latin MS. preface to fourth Gospel, 324 f.; alleged quotation by Presbyters in Irenæus referred to his work, 325 ff., quotation is by Irenæus, and no evidence that the Presbyters are connected with Papias, 326 ff., 331 ff.; Papias asserted Apostolic origin of Apocalypse, 335 f., 392.
- Paraclete, first mentioned in fourth Gospel, ii. 464.
- Parchor, ii. 45.
- Paschal Chronicle, ii. 186, 190, 212.
- Paschal controversy, i. 278; ii. 186 ff., 271, 472 f.
- Pastor of Hermas, *see* Hermas.
- Paul, Apostle: i. 421, 441; Clementines directed against him, ii. 4; Clementines attack him under the name of Simon the Magician, 34 ff., 342, 353 f., 407; Theodas his disciple, 75; Marcion's Epistles of, 80 f., 141 f.; party in the Church, 104; his Gospel, 140; accusations against Apostles, 145 f.; rejected by Encratites, 162; alleged recommendation of apocryphal works, 168 note 5; falsification of his Epistles, 169; Epistles of Paul and Seneca, 169; Acta Pauli et Theclæ, 170; Epistles in Canon of Muratori, 240 f.; Paul a servant of Jesus Christ, 390; evidence regarding John, 405; tradition regarding him and John, 406 note 3, attacked in Apocalypse, 407 f.
- Pauli et Theclæ, Acta, ii. 270.
- Pauline Epistles, Logos doctrine in, ii. 259 f.
- Pauli Prædicatio, i. 322 f.
- Paulus: his treatment of miracles, i. 28; on Marcion, ii. 84.
- Pênemuoé, a fallen angel, i. 104.
- Peratici, ii. 53, 248 note 2.
- Peter, Apocalypse of, i. 235 f.; ii. 168, 241.
- Peter, Apostle, i. 286, 290, 291 note 3, 417 ff., 418 ff., 452 ff.; ii. 1 ff., 3, 6, 34 ff., 44, 104, 347, 352 f.
- Peter, Doctrine of, i. 273, 333, 420 f.
- Peter, Epistle of, first, said to have been used by Papias, i. 483.
- Peter, Gospel according to, i. 288 f., 292, 296, 303 note 5, 417 ff., 419 ff.; ii. 7, 160 f., 167.
- Peter, Preaching of (*Κήρυγμα Πέτρου*), i. 333, 458 f., 461; ii. 2 f., 227, 298 note 1.
- Peter, Travels of (*Περίοδοι Πέτρου*), ii. 2, 4.
- Philastrius, ii. 206, 209, 218, 219.
- Philip, Apostle, story related by daughters of, i. 158; appealed to by Poly-crates in support of 14th Nisan, 468.
- Philip Sidetes, ii. 191 f.
- Philo:—date of, ii. 264 note 5; type of brazen serpent, 253 note 3; Logos as Rock, 257 note 1; Logos over universe, 259 f., 274, 277; Logos before all things, 259, 277, 294; first begotten Son of God, 259 note 3, 274, 290 note 2; Eternal Logos, 265; Logos the bread from heaven, 265; Logos the fountain of wisdom, 266; Logos guides man to Father, 266; Logos as substitute of God, 274; Logos as the image of God, 274, 275, 276, 294; Logos as Priest, 274 f., 289 f.; Logos by whom world was made, 275, 276, 290 note 2; Logos the second God, 276, 290 f.; Logos the interpreter of God, 276; Logos the ambassador of God to men, 277, 294; Logos the power of God, 276; Logos as king; Logos as angel, 291, 293 f., 294; Logos as the beginning, 294; Logos as the east, 294 note 1; Logos the name of God, 294; Logos as man, 294, 295 f.; Logos as Mediator, 294 f.; Logos as Light, 297 note 2.
- Phoenix, i. 137 f.
- Photius, Clemens Rom., reputed author of Acts of the Apostles, i. 217; fragment of Hegesippus, 435; does not mention work on Passover by Apollinaris, ii. 189; on history of Philip Sidetes, 190; fragment of Athenagoras, 192.
- Pierius of Alexandria, ii. 190.

- Pindar, ii. 53.  
 Pius of Rome, ii. 243, 244, 245, 246.  
 Plato, ii. 71, 76, 214, 277 f., 291 note 4.  
 Polycarp, in connection with Paschal controversy, ii. 271, 472 f.; tradition regarding John, 406.  
 Polycarp, Epistle of, i. 274 ff.; account of him, 274 f.; date 275 f.; authenticity discussed, 275 ff.; supposed references to Synoptics, 278 ff.; on Pasover, ii. 189; alleged quotation from 1 Epistle of John, 267 ff., independent of Epistle, 269 ff.  
 Polycrates, ii. 189, 406, 473.  
 Pontus, ii. 140.  
 Porphyry, on Matt. xiii. 35, ii. 11.  
 Possession, demoniacal, i. 114 ff.; in man and animals, 114; cause of disease, 107, 115; universality of belief in, 141 ff.; reality of, asserted by Jesus, 141 ff.; reality asserted in Old Testament, 143 f.; belief in, dispelled, 149 ff.; continuance of, asserted, 158 ff.  
 Pothinus, ii. 200, 201 note 3, 211, 333 note 1.  
 Powell, Professor Baden:—no evidence of a Deity working miracles, i. 74; at present day not a miracle but a narrative of miracles discussed, 207 f.  
 Prayer, "The" Lord's, ii. 13, 126.  
 Presbyters, quoted by Papias and Irenæus, ii. 321 ff.  
 Prepon the Marcionite, ii. 222.  
 Primus, Bishop of Corinth, i. 432.  
 Protavius, St., miracles by relics of, i. 169 ff.  
 Protevangelium, *see* Gospel of James.  
 Proverbs of Solomon, i. 433; doctrine of Logos in, ii. 255, 282 f., 285.  
 Pseudographs, number of, in early Church, i. 232 f., 292 ff., 460 f.; ii. 167 f., 169 f.  
 Ptolemæus: Irenæus on, ii. 60 f.; Hippolytus on, 69 ff.; date of, 205 ff.; Epistle to Flora, 205, 207, 224 f.; alleged quotation from Matthew, 224 f.; duration of ministry of Jesus, 227 note 2; alleged reference to fourth Gospel, 381 f.  
 Pythagoras, ii. 71, 75 f., 214.
- RAGUEL**, Angel, i. 104.  
**Raphael**, Angel: charm for exorcising demons, i. 102 f.; angel of healing, 102, 104, 130; presents prayers of saints to God, 102; angel of spirits of men, 104; over earth, 108.  
 Reuss, on passage Epistle of Barnabas, i. 255; on Clementines, ii. 4; character of Tertullian, 90.  
 Revelation, Divine, only such by virtue of telling something undiscoverable by reason, and requires miraculous evidence, i. 1 ff., ii. 477 ff.; Veda claims to be, i. 2; religion of Zoroaster claims to be, 2; Mahomet proclaims, 2; design and details of the, 46 ff.; design of, contradicted by experience, 49 ff., ii. 480; result of inquiry into the reality of, ii. 477 ff.; we gain more than we lose by abandoning theory of, 489 f.; if we know less than we supposed we are not compelled to believe what is unworthy, 490; the argument that it is necessary for man is purely imaginary, 491 f.  
**Ritschl**, on Marcion's Gospel, ii. 85, 86, 96, 101, 102, 129.  
**Romans**, Epistle to the, i. 256; ii. 62, 66 note 3, 70, 71 note 1.  
**Routh**, ii. 319, 335, note.  
**Ruchiel**, Angel, i. 108.  
**Rufinus**, i. 434, 465 note 2; ii. 2, 3, 4.
- SAINTS**, Bollandist Collection, i. 187.  
**Samaël**, Angel of Death over Gentiles, i. 108.  
**Samaria**, five nations and gods of, typified by husbands of Samaritan woman, John iv. 5 ff.; ii. 422 ff.  
**Samniel**, Angel, i. 108.  
**Sandalfon**, Angel, i. 108.  
**Saraqûel**, Angel, i. 104.  
**Saroel**, Angel, i. 108.  
**Satan**, Angel of Death, i. 108.  
**Schafiriri**, Angel, i. 112.  
**Schamir**, aided Solomon in building the Temple, i. 118.  
**Schleiermacher**, explained away miracles, i. 27 f.; explanation of Papias' remark regarding interpretation of the Logia, 473; Marcion's Gospel, ii. 83.  
**Schliemann**, ii. 351 note 6.  
**Schmidt**, J. E. C., ii. 83.  
**Schneckenburger**, on Gospel of Basilides, ii. 43.  
**Schneidewin**, ii. 71.  
**Schoettgen**, Academia Celesti, i. 114 note 3; Jewish practice of Magic, 115.  
**Scholten**, on Justin's reference to Acta Pilati, i. 327 f.; type of brazen serpent in Epistles of Barnabas, ii. 253 note 3; on alleged quotation from 1 Epistle of John in Epistle of Polycarp, 269.  
**Schultz**, ii. 83.  
**Schwiegler**, on origin Gospel of Hebrews and Matthew, i. 425; on Justin's use of Gospel of Hebrews, 427 note 3; on Marcion's Gospel, ii. 85; nameless-

- ness of Marcion's Gospel evidence of originality, 140 f.
- Semisch, on Justin's memoirs, i. 311, 328 f.
- Semler, ii. 82.
- Septuagint version of Bible, i. 101, 109, 336, 337, 441; ii. 10, 255, 280, 281 f., 284, 286, 304, 305f., 338 note 1, 423.
- Serapion, Bishop of Antioch, on Gospel according to Peter, i. 419; ii. 160 f., 167.
- Shibta, an evil spirit, i. 113, 115 note 2.
- Sibylline Books, i. 323; ii. 163.
- Sibylists, Christians called, ii. 168, 236.
- Sichem, i. 284; ii. 421 f.
- Siloam, ii. 419.
- Simon the Magician, his part in the Clementines, ii. 3, 12, 14, 34 ff.
- Sinaiticus, Codex, i. 235 f., 237, 243, 269, 256, 296 note, 351 notes 3, 4, 352 note 1, 353 note 2, 439; ii. 11, 18, 25 note 3, 163, 268 note 1, 300 note 2, 307, 308, 350 note 4.
- Socrates, Historian, ii. 191.
- Solomon, a great magician, i. 117 ff.; taught wisdom by demons, 118; composed powerful charms and forms of exorcism, 118.
- Sopater executed for sorcery, i. 148.
- Sophia, ii. 69 f., 231 ff., 285 ff., 350 f., 415.
- Sorcery, i. 115 ff.; universality of belief in, 145 ff.; St. Athanasius and St. Cyprian accused of, 147.
- Soter, Bishop of Rome, i. 295, 432; ii. 163, 164, 171.
- Spencer, Mr. Herbert; on the evanescence of evil, i. 50 note 1.
- Spinosa: even existence of God cannot be inferred from miracles, i. 15, 76.
- Spruchsammlung, i. 243, 252, 266; ii. 465.
- Stag, superstition regarding, i. 133.
- Stars believed to be living entities, i. 105 f., 128 ff.
- Stephanus, H., ii. 39 note 3.
- Stichometry of Nicephorus, derived from Syrian catalogue, i. 218; Epistle of Clement of Rome, 218; Eldad and Modat, 257; Gospel of Hebrews, 422 f., 426.
- Storr, ii. 84.
- Stoughton, Dr., on assumptions, i. 62 note 1.
- Succubi, i. 135; 136 note 1.
- Sychar, ii. 421 f.
- Symmachus, ii. 305.
- TATTAM, Dr., Syriac MSS., i. 259.
- Tatian, on demon, i. 123 f.; on demoniacal origin of disease, 124; Diatessaron called Gospel of Hebrews, 421 f.; account of him, ii. 148 f.; Oration to the Greeks, 148 f.; no quotations from Synoptics, 149; alleged reference to parable in Matthew, 149 ff.; to Luke, 150 f.; theories regarding his Diatessaron, 153 ff., called Diapente, 153, called Gospel of Hebrews, 153, 155, Theodoret's account of Diatessaron, 155 f.; difficulty of distinguishing it, 158; its peculiarities shared by other uncanonical Gospels, 159 f.; later history, 161 f.; sect of Encratites rejected Paul, and used apocryphal Gospels, 162 f.; alleged use of fourth Gospel, 374 f.; his Logos doctrine, 374 ff.
- Tertullian; miracles without prophecy cannot prove Revelation, i. 13, note 1; on Book of Enoch, 103 f.; on demons, 124 ff.; demoniacal origin of disease, 124 ff.; Cosmical theories, 125; on Phoenix, 138; change of sex of Hyena, 138; superstition regarding stag, 138; on volcanoes, 139; continuance of miraculous gifts, 161 ff.; account of miracles, 162 ff.; passage in Marcion's Gospel, 229; Epistle to Hebrews ascribed to Barnabas, 233; descent through Mary, 303 note 6; variation of Marcion's Gospel from Luke x. 22, 410; on connection of Peter with Mark's Gospel, 449 f.; on Valentinus, ii. 74 f.; source of his work on Valentinians, 75; views regarding Marcion not trustworthy, 83; his style of controversy and character, 89f.; charge against Marcion of mutilating Luke, 90ff.; Marcion's alleged aim, 92f.; the course which Tertullian intends to pursue in refuting him, 92 f.; had he Marcion's Gospel before him? 99 ff.; he had not Luke, 100; reproaches Marcion for erasing from Luke passages not in the Gospel, 100f.; on Marcion's Antithesis, 105; compares Marcionites to the cuttle-fish, 106 note 3; his account of Marcion's object, 107 ff.; undertakes to refute Marcion out of his own Gospel, 109 f.; calls Marcion's Gospel "Evangelium Ponticum," 140, 372 f., no author's name affixed, 141; on Marcion's deductions from Epistle to Galatians, 145; on martyrdom of Zacharias, 203; on Axionism, 223.
- Testament, Old and New, origin of name, ii. 174 ff.; earliest designation of, 177 f.
- Theodas, ii. 175, 225.
- Theodoret quotes Xenophanes, i. 77 note; found Gospel of Hebrews circulating, 422 f.; on Tatian's Diatessaron, ii. 153 f., 155 f., 159 ff.; does not mention any work on the Passover by Apollinaris, 189.

- Theodotion's version O. T., ii. 212, 213 note 1, 305.
- Theophilus, Luke's Gospel a private document for use of, i. 152 note 1.
- Theophilus of Antioch:—Greek poets inspired by demons, i. 122; serpent and pains of childbirth proof of truth of Fall in Genesis, 122 note 12; exorcism, 159; Canon Westcott on, ii. 192; on Apocalypse, 393; date of Ep. ad Autol., 474 note 1; first who mentions John in connection with passage from Gospel, 474.
- Theophylact, i. 482.
- Thomas, Gospel according to, i. 292, 315.
- Timotheus of Alexandria, i. 269.
- Tischendorf, on date of Epistle of Clement of Rome, i. 220; Clement does not refer to our Gospels, 223; probably oral tradition source of words of Jesus, 230 note 1; on Epistle of Barnabas, 250 ff., ii. 163; on Pastor of Hermas, i. 257; Epistles of Ignatius, 269 ff.; Protevangelium of James, 302 f., 305, ii. 202 f.; quotation from Protevangelium by Justin, i. 305, 312; on Gospel of Nicodemus, 326 ff.; quotations of Justin asserted to be from Matthew, 342 ff.; on supposed quotations by Justin of Mark and Luke, 384 ff.; on Hegesippus, 442 f.; on books referred to by Papias, 445 note 2; argument for identity of works described by Papias with our Gospels, 460 f.; on interpretation of word *λόγια*, 463 ff., 465 note 2; on original language of our Gospel according to Matthew, 468; on applicability of account of Papias to it, 468 ff.; on disparagement of Papias, 469 f.; uncritical spirit of Fathers, 472; on Clementines, ii. 9 note 1; on work of Basilides on the Gospel, 42, 44, 46; alleged quotations by Basilides from Gospel, 48 ff., not by Basilides, 48, 50; on alleged quotations of Gospels by Valentinus, 56 ff.; falsification of Hippolytus, 56 ff.; falsification of Irenæus, 57 ff.; his argument, 59 f.; alleged quotation by Valentinus in work of Hippolytus, 60 f.; admits uncertainty of source of quotations of Hippolytus, 68; Tatian does not quote Synoptics, 149; date of Tatian's Diatessaron, 153 f.; asserts it harmony of our Gospels, 154; expressions of Dionysius claimed as references to Gospels, 164 f.; does not cite Melito, 172; claims fragment of Apollinaris as evidence for our Gospels, 187; on Athenagoras, 192 f.; on martyrdom of Zacharias in Epistle of Viëne and Lyons, 202 f.; alleged quotations of Gospels by Ptolemæus, 205; date of Ptolemæus, 205 ff.; date of Heraclion, 213 ff.; meaning of *γνώριμος*, 214, 217 f.; Epiphanius on Cerdo, 214, 216; date of Celsus, 228 ff.; on Epistle of Barnabas as evidence for fourth Gospel, 251 ff.; on use of fourth Gospel in Ignatian Epistles, 260 ff.; alleged reference in Epistle of Polycarp to 1 Epistle of John, 267 ff.; on Justin as evidence for the fourth Gospel, 272 ff.; does not claim Hegesippus as witness for fourth Gospel, 316; his argument that Papias is not a witness against fourth Gospel, 322 f.; argument regarding silence of Eusebius, 322 f.; attempt to make Papias witness for it, 323 f.; extraordinary argument from reference to Papias in Latin MS., 324 f.; alleged connection of Papias with Presbyters referred to by Irenæus, 325 ff., alleged quotation not by Presbyters but by Irenæus, 326 ff.; alleged references in Clementines to fourth Gospel, 336 ff.; alleged references to fourth Gospel in Epistle to Diognetus, 354 ff.; alleged reference by Basilides, 371; alleged references by Tatian, 374 ff.; date of Theophilus ad Autolye., 474 note 1.
- Tobit, Book of, Jewish superstitions in the, i. 102.
- Trench, Archbishop:—Miracles cannot command obedience absolutely, i. 15 f.; office of miracles, 16 ff.; Satanic miracles, 15 ff.; theory of reminiscence, 16 note 1; analysis of miracles, 30 ff.; ingenious way of overcoming difficulty of miracles, 53 f.; exemption from physical law a lost prerogative of our race, 53 note 1; demoniacal possession, 141 ff.; on belief of Jesus in reality of demoniacal possession, 142 f.; are there demoniacs now? 144; on withdrawal of miraculous power, 157 f.
- Twelve, Gospel according to the, i. 293.
- UHLHORN, ii. 351 note 1.
- Uriel, Angel, i. 104.
- Usher, Archbishop, i. 263.
- VALENTINUS, date and history of, ii. 55 f., 206 ff.; alleged references to Gospels, 56 ff.; Irenæus does not refer to him but to later followers, 59 ff.; letter of, quoted by Clement of Alexandria, 62 f.; alleged quotations in work of

- Hippolytus, 66 ff.; Eastern and Italian schools, 69 ff.; quotations not made by Valentinus, 70 ff.; results regarding alleged quotations, 73 f.; Tertullian on, 74 f.; his alleged use of N. T., 74 ff.; professed to have traditions from Apostles, 75; rejects Gospels, 76 ff.; the Gospel of Truth, 77 f.; his followers, Ptolemæus and Heracleon, 205 ff.; alleged reference to fourth Gospel, 56 f., 68 f., 371 f.
- Vaticanus, Codex, i. 243, 353 note 2, 439; ii. 350 note 4.
- Veda, considered divinely inspired, i. 2.
- Victor of Capua, ii. 153, 161.
- Vienne and Lyons, Epistle of, date and circumstances, ii. 200 f.; 210 f.; references to Zacharias, 201; Irenæus, bearer of, 210 f.; alleged reference to fourth Gospel, 380 f.
- Volcanoes, openings into Hell, i. 139; account by Gregory the Great, 139 note 2.
- Volkmar:—date of Book of Judith, i. 222; author of Clementines used same Gospel as Justin, ii. 7 note 5; on quotations of Hippolytus, 53; on Marcion's Gospel, 86 f.; author of Dial. de recte in deum fide on Marcion, 88 f.; on procedure of Tertullian against Marcion, 92 f., 95 f.; arguments *a silentio*, 95, 96 note 2; incompleteness and doubtful trustworthiness of Epiphanius and Tertullian against Marcion, 96 ff.; their contradictions, 98 f.; on insufficiency of data for reconstruction of text of Marcion's Gospel, and settlement of the discussion, 102; on passages in Marcion's Gospel, 117 notes 3 and 5, 118, 119 note 2, 120 note 2, 121 note 2, 128 notes 4, 5, 7, 129 f., 135 note 2; date of Ptolemæus and Heracleon, 222 note 2; on date of Celsus, 228, 232; on language of Canon of Muratori, 238 note 3; on alleged quotation from 1 Epistle of John in Epistle of Polycarp, 269; admits probable use of fourth Gospel by Clementines, 336 note 2.
- Vulgate, ii. 10 note 4.
- WASELS, i. 127, 138 note 7.
- Weizsäcker, on Epistle of Barnabas, i. 243; on quotation in work of Hippolytus ascribed to Valentinus, ii. 68 f.
- Westcott, Canon: miracles inseparable from Christianity, i. 9 f.; assumption of Personal God cannot be proved, 64 note 2; to speak of God as Infinite and Personal a contradiction, 69, note 3; on a quotation of Justin's, 334 note 4; apologetic criticism by, 360 note 1; on coincidence between quotation of Justin and Clementines, 377 note; on Justin's quotations from the "Memoirs," 387 ff.; on Apocrypha of Hegesippus, 435 note 1; supposed reference of Hegesippus to Luke, 438; on the uncritical character of first two centuries, 451 note 1; his silence regarding original language of work attributed to Matthew, 469 note 2; on Clementines, ii. 9 note 1; on supposed quotation from Mark in Clementines, 26 f.; Paul attacked as "the enemy" in Clementines, 35, note 1; on Basilides, 42; statement regarding Glaucias to whom Basilides appealed, 44 f.; his explanation of use of uncanonical works by Basilides, 45 f.; assertion that Basilides admitted historic truth of Gospels, 47 f.; no reference to N. T. in fragments of Isidorus, 48; alleged quotations of our Gospels by Basilides, 50 ff.; uncertainty regarding writings used by Hippolytus, 52 ff.; silence regarding doubt whether Hippolytus quotes Basilides, 54; on the formula employed in the supposed quotations, 55; does not refer to quotations of Valentinus alleged by Tischendorf, 62; extraordinary statement regarding Valentinus, 62 ff.; alleged references of Valentinus to Matthew, 62 ff.; alleged quotation by Valentinus from Gospels in work of Hippolytus, 66 ff.; silence regarding uncertain system of quotation of Hippolytus, 69 f.; does not state facts, 71; assertion regarding Valentinus and New Testament Canon, 74 ff.; not clear that Marcion himself altered his Gospel, 137 f., 373; some supposed alterations, various readings, 138; on text of Marcion's Epistles of Paul, 142; on passage in Tertullian on Marcion's treatment of Gospels, 146; alleged references of Tatian to Matthew, 149 ff., 151 f.; on Tatian's Diatessarion, 156 f.; the incorrectness of his assertions, 157 f.; Tatian's Diatessarion said to be first recognition of a four-fold Gospel, 160; later history of Diatessarion involved in confusion, 161; on "Scriptures of the Lord" referred to by Dionysius of Corinth, 165 ff.; incorrectness of his deductions from words of Dionysius, 168 ff.; alleged reference of Dionysius to Matthew and the Apocalypse, 170; and to a New Testament Canon, 170 f.; on works read in Churches, 171; asserts that Melito of Sardis speaks

of a collected New Testament, 172 ff.; extraordinary nature of this assertion, 173 ff.; he follows and exaggerates Lardner, 173 note 2; value of Melito's evidence for New Testament Canon, 178 ff.; on Syriac fragment of Oration, 181; fragment on Faith, 181 ff.; silence as to doubtful character, 183; claims fragment ascribed to Apollinaris as evidence for our Gospels, 187; on alleged quotations of Athenagoras, 192 f.; on Ptolemæus and Iheracleon, 205 note 1, 206 213 note 3, 226 note 7, 227 note 2; Ptolemæus on duration of ministry of Jesus, 227 note 2; date of Celsus, 233 note 2; on Canon of Muratori, 239 note 1; Clement of Rome as evidence for fourth Gospel, 251 note 1; alleged allusions in Pastor of Hermas to fourth Gospel, 253 ff., 260 note 3; alleged Johannine influence traceable in Ignatian Epistles, 262 f.; on evidence of Justin for fourth Gospel, 272; claims Hege-sippus as witness for fourth Gospel, 316 f.; alleged quotation by Presbyters in Irenæus from work of Papias, 323 note 4; assertion that Papias knew fourth Gospel, 334 note 9; Papias maintained divine inspiration of Apocalypse, 335 note; alleged references in Clementines to fourth Gospel, 336 ff.; alleged references to fourth Gospel in Epistle to Diognetus,

355 ff.; alleged reference to fourth Gospel by Basilides, 371; alleged references by Tatian, 374 ff.; alleged reference to fourth Gospel by Athenagoras, 379 f.; passage in Canon of Muratori, 384 note 1; contrast in form and spirit between fourth Gospel and Synoptics, 449.

Wette, De, on quotations of Justin compared with our Synoptics, i. 345 ff., 352, 387; on evangelical quotations of Clementines, ii. 6 f., 18 ff.; on Marcion's Gospel, 84, 129; on Athenagoras, 198 note 1; date of Irenæus, 213 note 2; Apocalypse and fourth Gospel cannot have been written by same author, 391; mistaken reminiscences in fourth Gospel, 448 notes 3, 4.

Wisdom of Sirach (Ecclesiasticus), ii. 282, 283.

Wisdom of Solomon, Brazen Serpent, ii. 253 note 3; Logos doctrine in, 282, 283, 285.

Witchcraft, universality of belief in, i. 145 ff.; belief in it dispelled, 149 ff.

XENOPHANES of Colophon, on Anthropomorphic Divinity, i. 76 f.

ZACHARIAS, ii. 201 ff., 475.

Zeller, ii. 7 note 5, 39 note 2.

Zoroaster, religion of, claims to have been Divine Revelation, i. 2.

THE END.

7.



